

# The Revisionist

## Journal for Critical Historical Inquiry

Volume 1

2003



### The Revisionist • Journal for Critical Historical Inquiry

Publisher: Castle Hill Publishers, PO Box 257768, Chicago IL 60625, USA; [chp@vho.org](mailto:chp@vho.org)  
PO Box 118, Hastings, TN34 3ZQ, UK

Established: in Fall 2002, first edition in February 2003

Chief Editor: Germar Rudolf; [tr@vho.org](mailto:tr@vho.org)

Foreign Language Editor: Jürgen Graf

News & Civil Rights Editor: Dr. Fredrick Töben; [news@vho.org](mailto:news@vho.org)

Reviews: [reviews@vho.org](mailto:reviews@vho.org)

Copy Editor: Perry Huntoon; [proof@vho.org](mailto:proof@vho.org)

Customer Care, Subscriptions, Orders: [chporder@vho.org](mailto:chporder@vho.org); for details see page after tables of contents.

Fax: USA: ++1(413) 778-5749; UK: ++44(8701) 387263 (faxes to both numbers reach us immediately by email)

Internet: <http://www.vho.org/tr>

Advertisements: price list from Jan. 1, 2003; please ask us for our Media Data ([www.vho.org/tr/MediaData.pdf](http://www.vho.org/tr/MediaData.pdf)).

ISSN: 1542-376X

# Contents · Number 1 · February 2003

<b>The Dawning of a New Era</b> .....	<b>2</b>
By Germar Rudolf	
<b>Open Air Incinerations in Auschwitz: Rumor or Reality?</b>	
Ground Water in the Area of the POW camp Birkenau, by Dipl.-Ing. Michael Gärtner, Dipl.-Ing. Werner Rademacher .....	3
“Cremation Pits” and Ground Water Levels at Birkenau, by Carlo Mattogno .....	13
<b>Auschwitz: The Dwindling Death Toll</b>	
How Many Deaths at Auschwitz?, by Dr. Robert Faurisson .....	18
Cautious Mainstream Revisionism, by Germar Rudolf.....	23
Auschwitz: Fritjof Meyer’s New Revisions, by Carlo Mattogno.....	30
<b>Poison Gas <i>Über Alles</i></b> .....	<b>37</b>
By Friedrich Paul Berg	
<b>Certainty about Werner Heisenberg</b> .....	<b>47</b>
By Dr. Gerhard Sommer	
<b>The Hole in the Door</b> .....	<b>52</b>
By Hans Pedersen	
<b>WW II: Whose War was it?</b> .....	<b>56</b>
By Prof. Emil Schlee	
<b>New Aspects of Andrei Vlassov</b> .....	<b>63</b>
By Wolfgang Strauss	
<b>Was the Me262 the First Airplane to Break the Sound Barrier?</b> .....	<b>69</b>
By André Chelain	
<b>The Unknown Famine Holocaust</b> .....	<b>71</b>
By Wolfgang Pfitzner	
<b>The Moon Landing: Fact or Fiction</b> .....	<b>75</b>
By Germar Rudolf	
<b>Swing Dancing “Verboten”</b> .....	<b>81</b>
By Eberhard Wardin	
<b>A Look Back at Revisionism</b> .....	<b>83</b>
By Ernst Manon	
<b>Book Reviews</b>	
Hitler’s Jewish Soldiers, by Jörg Berger .....	97
The Russians in Berlin in 1945, by Ernst Gauss .....	98
Van Pelt’s Plea against Sound Reasoning, by Robert H. Countess, Ph.D. ....	99
World War I Atrocity Propaganda and the Holocaust, by Paul Grubach.....	104
Why the USA Wages War in the Gulf Region, by Robert H. Countess, Ph.D. ....	109
Jewish Co-Responsibility for Jewish Persecution in 1941, by Germar Rudolf.....	111
<b>Research News</b>	
How the United States Started the Vietnam War, by Wolfgang Pfitzner.....	114
From the Records of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, by Germar Rudolf .....	115
<b>In Brief</b> .....	<b>118</b>

# Contents · Number 2 · May 2003

<b>The Elephant(s) in the Room</b> .....	122
By Bradley R. Smith	
<b>On The Brink of World War Three</b> .....	124
By Germar Rudolf	
<b>Climatology—Science or Ideology?</b> .....	131
By Oswald Nettesheim	
Critical Remarks concerning Greenhouse-Revisionism.....	135
By Germar Rudolf	
<b>All Men Are Equal—But Are They Really?</b> .....	139
By Paul Grubach	
<b>Polish Population Losses during World War Two</b> .....	151
By Dr. Otward Müller	
<b>The Expulsion of Germans from Japan, 1947-1948</b> .....	156
By Charles Burdick, PhD	
<b>Holocaust Movie <i>Shoah</i> Exposed as Propaganda</b>	
About the Shoa-Interview with the alleged Treblinka SS-Man Franz Suchomel, by Jean-Francois Beaulieu .....	166
Rudolf Vrba exposes himself as a liar, by Ernst Bruun .....	169
Abraham Bomba, Barber of Treblinka, by Bradley R. Smith .....	170
<b>The ‘Discovery’ of ‘Bunker 1’ at Birkenau: Swindles, Old and New</b> .....	176
By Carlo Mattogno	
<b>Ernst Zündel: His Struggle for Germany</b> .....	183
By Dr. Ingrid Rimland	
<b>Bing goes Hayward’s Ghost</b> .....	197
By Dr. Fredrick Töben	
<b>Discovering Absurdistan</b> .....	203
By Germar Rudolf	
<b>Censorship of the Internet</b> .....	220
By Germar Rudolf	
<b>Book Reviews</b>	
The Israeli Masada Myth Exposed, by Robert H. Countess, Ph.D. ....	222
Revisionism: The Most Dangerous Topic, by Bruno Chapsky .....	225
A Provocative History of the Aryan Race, by Robert H. Countess, Ph.D. ....	227
On Third Reich Flying Saucers, German Physics, and the Perpetuum Mobile.....	229
<b>Research News</b>	
The Sinking of the Battleship Bismarck, by Wolfgang Pfitzner .....	234
From the Records of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, Part 2, by Germar Rudolf.....	235
<b>Letters to the Editor</b> .....	239
<b>In Brief</b> .....	240

# Contents · Number 3 · August 2003

<b>George Bush versus Revisionism</b> .....	244
By Richard A. Widmann	
<b>Revisionist Notebook</b> .....	245
By Bradley Smith	
<b>9/11: Terror Attack or Government Fraud?</b>	
Ghost Riders in the Sky · An Alternative 9-11 Scenario, by Prof. Dr. Alexander K. Dewdney .....	248
Cell Phone Experiments in Airliners, by Germar Rudolf .....	271
Stand Down · Was 9/11 Lack of Air Defense Deliberate?, by Mark Elsis .....	272
<b>The War on Iraq: Conceived in Israel</b> .....	285
By Stephen J. Sniegoski	
<b>The Revisionist Method Applied to the History of World War III</b> .....	299
By Robert Faurisson	
<b>Why the United States Reject the International Criminal Court</b> .....	301
By Dr. Dieter Bartling	
<b>How Israel Murders Peace</b>	
Israeli Bulldozer Driver Murders American Peace Activist, by Nigel Parry and Arjan El Fassed .....	308
Eulogy to Rachel, by Colonel Maguire .....	310
How German and American Money is Spent in Israel, by German Rudolf .....	311
<b>Foreign Workers in the Third Reich</b> .....	312
By OSTR Hans-Jürgen Witzsch	
<b>Partisan War and Reprisal Killings</b> .....	321
By Dipl.-Chem. Germar Rudolf and Sibylle Schröder	
<b>The “Gassing” of Gypsies in Auschwitz on August 2, 1944</b> .....	330
By Carlo Mattogno	
<b>A Case Study of Holocaust Revisionism and the Mass Media</b> .....	332
By Paul Grubach	
<b>Against the Revisionists, Argumentation <i>ad hominem</i></b> .....	336
By Dr. Robert Faurisson	
<b>Book Reviews</b>	
Battlefield Patriotism, by Scott L. Smith .....	339
“Genocide” by Shovel and Sewing Machine, by Scott L. Smith .....	340
Gestapo USA, by Germar Rudolf .....	342
Indelible Shadows: Film and the Holocaust, by Francis Dixon .....	343
Raul Hilberg’s Incurable Autism, by Jürgen Graf .....	344
Book Notices, by Francis Dixon .....	351
<b>Research News</b>	
From the Records of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, Part 3, by Germar Rudolf .....	352
<b>Letters to the Editor</b> .....	358
<b>In Brief</b> .....	359

# Contents · Number 4 · November 2003

<b>Revisionist Notebook</b> .....	364
By Bradley Smith	
<b>Revisionism in Russia</b> .....	366
By Wolfgang Strauss	
<b>Hundred Years of War against Germany</b> .....	373
By Steffen Werner	
<b>The Dachau Horror-Tale Exposed</b> .....	385
By Baurat h.c. Dipl.-Ing. Walter Lüftl	
<b>The General in the Ice-Block</b> .....	386
By Baurat h.c. Dipl.-Ing. Walter Lüftl	
<b>The Four Million Figure of Auschwitz</b> .....	387
By Carlo Mattogno	
<b>What Was Kulmhof/Chelmno?</b> .....	400
By Ingrid Weckert	
<b>Sir Henry Strakosch “a Jew”?</b> .....	412
By Prof. Dr. Arthur R. Butz	
<b>Delusional Worlds</b> .....	415
By Ernst Manon	
<b>Groupthink</b> .....	422
By Germar Rudolf	
<b>In Memoriam Jean-Claude Pressac</b>	
Jean-Claude Pressac and Revisionism, by Jürgen Graf.....	426
My Memories of Jean-Claude Pressac, by Carlo Mattogno .....	432
<b>The New Zealand Saga Continues</b> .....	435
By Germar Rudolf	
<b>The Fate of Joel Hayward in New Zealand Hands: from Holocaust Historian to Holocaust?</b> .....	439
By Thomas A. Fudge	
<b>Censorship in East and West – the Zündel Ad Campaign</b> .....	449
By Dr. Ingrid Rimland	
Thanksgiving in Jail: Canadian Show Trial against Ernst Zündel Continues, by Paul Fromm .....	453
<b>False Memory Syndrome</b>	
False Witnesses, by David Irving.....	456
Dr. Elizabeth Loftus, Controversial Expert on Human Memory, by Caroline Song.....	456
My Critique of Dr. Loftus’ Behavior, by Robert H. Countess, PhD .....	459
False Memory Everywhere – Except in Modern History, by Germar Rudolf.....	460
Memories of a War that Never Happened, by Andrea Schneider .....	462
False Memories in Disneyland, by Ronald Reeves .....	463
Forced Confessions: Why Innocent Defendants Admit their Guilt, by Manfred Köhler .....	465
<b>Research News</b>	
Intelligence: Genetically Inherited or Learned Behavior?, by Andrea Schneider.....	467
From the Records of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, Part 4, by Germar Rudolf.....	468
<b>Book Reviews</b>	
Bulldozing the Façade of Israel As Victim, by Francis Dixon.....	472
Conspiracy – the Umpteenth, by John Weir.....	473
The Blind Spots of Mainstream ‘Holocaust Research’, by Germar Rudolf.....	474
Jewish Supremacism, by Germar Rudolf.....	475
Book Notices, by Francis Dixon .....	476
<b>Letter to the Editor</b> .....	477
<b>In Brief</b> .....	478

# GET A CURRENT TRIAL COPY NOW!

Yes, I want a **FREE** trial copy of **The Revisionist** (Only one copy for each new customer!)

## SUBSCRIBE NOW!

Yes, I want to **subscribe** to **The Revisionist (TR)**. The subscription starts with the next issue published after I subscribed. I will receive a renewal notice each time my subscription expires.

(Please check the subscription type you prefer. When sending in this slip, you can include payment by check/money order made out to Castle Hill Publishers, or you can wait until we send you an invoice with further instructions on how to pay.):

Ship to: Subscription	United States		Canada Air/Overseas Ground		Overseas Air	
	1 yr	3 yrs	1 yr	3yrs	1 yr	3yrs
Support:	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 100.-	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 270.-	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 125.-	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 337.50	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 140.-	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 378.-
Normal:	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 55.-	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 150.-	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 68.75	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 187.50	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 77.-	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 210.-
Student <sup>†</sup> :	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 38.-	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 96.-	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 47.50	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 127.50	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 53.20	<input type="checkbox"/> \$ 142.80

Prices in US-Dollars, including shipping; <sup>†</sup> Proof required. Please send in a photocopy of your student ID.

Name

Address

Town, State/Province, ZIP/Postal Code

Country, if not USA

Date

Signature

**Send your order to:**

**Castle Hill Publishers**

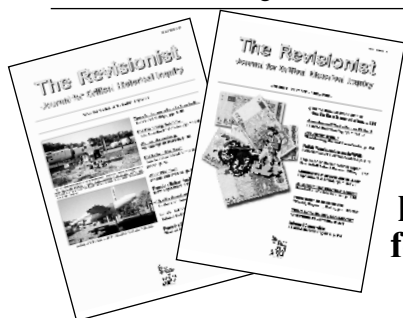
USA: PO Box 257768, Chicago, IL 60625

Fax: ++1 (413) 778-5749

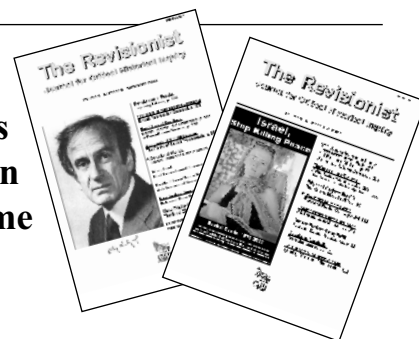
UK: PO Box 118, Hastings, TN34 3ZQ

Fax: ++44 (8701) 38 72 63

Email: [chporder@vho.org](mailto:chporder@vho.org)



**Did you miss earlier issues of *The Revisionist*? There is no need to worry. All issues are still available, and we will keep them in print. You can order them from us at any time for just \$/€15.- or £10.- per copy.**



**Visit us online at [www.vho.org/tr](http://www.vho.org/tr)**

If you do not want to cut the cover of this issue of *The Revisionist*, simply photocopy this page and fill out the copy.

# The Revisionist

## Journal for Critical Historical Inquiry

Volume 1 • Number 1 • February 2003



*Space and Rocket Museum in Huntsville, Alabama: in the background a real, complete Saturn V rocket disassembled in its stages. In the foreground: a mockup of the Apollo moon lander on an area of re-created moon landscape.*



*Mockup of a German WWII V1 Rocket in Huntsville, Alabama*

**Open Air Incinerations in Auschwitz:**  
Rumor or Reality?, pp. 3-17

**The Dwindling Death Toll:**  
Less Auschwitz Victims, pp. 18-37

**Werner Heisenberg:**  
An Attempt at Murder, p. 47

**The Hole in the Door:**  
How a Girl Fooled the Academic World,  
p. 52

**World War Two:**  
Whose war was it?, p. 56

**Freedom fighter Andrei Vlassov:**  
New Aspects of a Hero, p. 63

**India's Unknown Hunger Holocaust:**  
Britain's Politics of Famine, p. 71

◀ **Apollo Moon Landings:**  
History or Hoax?, p. 75

**From the Court Files:**  
Start of the Auschwitz Trial, p. 115

# The Revisionist • Journal for Critical Historical Inquiry

Publisher: Castle Hill Publishers, PO Box 257768, Chicago IL 60625, USA; [chp@vho.org](mailto:chp@vho.org)  
PO Box 118, Hastings, TN34 3ZQ, UK

Established: in Fall 2002, first edition in February 2003

Chief Editor: Germar Rudolf; [tr@vho.org](mailto:tr@vho.org)

Foreign Language Editor: Jürgen Graf

News & Civil Rights Editor: Dr. Fredrick Töben; [news@vho.org](mailto:news@vho.org)

Reviews: [reviews@vho.org](mailto:reviews@vho.org)

Copy Editor: Andrew Fuetterer; [proof@vho.org](mailto:proof@vho.org)

Customer Care, Subscriptions, Orders: [chporder@vho.org](mailto:chporder@vho.org)

Fax: USA: ++1(413) 778-5749; UK: ++44(8701) 387263 (faxes to both numbers reach us immediately by email)

Internet: <http://www.vho.org/tr>

Advertisements: price list from Jan. 1, 2003; please ask us for our Media Data ([www.vho.org/tr/MediaData.pdf](http://www.vho.org/tr/MediaData.pdf)).

ISSN: 1542-376X

Publication Dates: quarterly: February, May, August, November; each issue currently has some 120 pages, perfect bound.

Subscriptions (including shipping and handling):

- Normal: \$55 (3 years: \$150).
- Students: \$38 (3 years: \$96) (please send photocopy of ID).
- Supporter: \$100 (3 years: \$270).
- Free: donators with a yearly donation volume  $\geq$ \$55 receive *The Revisionist* for free for one year, but are then asked to convert this into a normal subscription.

Single Issues: \$15\*

Trial Issues: free. Just ask us for one!\*\*

Promotion Copies: We can send you free promotion copies as well as promotional material for *The Revisionist* on request. Please get in touch with us.

Shipping: *The Revisionist* is currently printed in, and shipped from, the UK; all subscription prices include airmail delivery worldwide. Single issues come with a shipping fee.\*

Payment terms: 60 days net.

- cash: preferably US\$; we can also accept € and GB£.
- checks: make payable to Castle Hill Publishers
  - in US\$ only if drawn on a Canadian or U.S. bank!

- in GB£ only if drawn on a British bank!
- in € only if drawn on a bank within the European Currency Union.

– online with credit card: [www.vho.org/chp](http://www.vho.org/chp).

– transfer: please contact us for our bank accounts in Germany, the UK, and the U.S.A.

Cancellation: 3 months before the end of your current subscription, otherwise the subscription will renew automatically for another (3) year(s).

Copyrights: Reprint of published articles only with written permission. All rights reserved.

Royalties: We pay scholars suffering persecution a royalty for contributions published in our periodical. This seems to be the most appropriate way to help them.

Support: Should you consider our work valuable, we cordially ask you to support us according to your possibilities, be it by subscribing to our periodical, by donating subscriptions to others, by hiring new (potential) subscribers, by volunteering for our editorial efforts (proof-reading, translations, marketing), or even by donating funds. Any financial surplus will flow 100% into researching important historical topics.

## Requirements for the Publication of Articles in *The Revisionist*

### Requirements of Content:

Topics: History, especially modern history; also freedom of speech and freedom of science. If possible, new and hitherto unpublished reports, overviews, and research papers;

Style: Systematic structure; objective; backing up of factual statements with references; separation of opinion from factual statements.

External Requirements: For understandable reasons, we will also publish articles written under a pen name, which will, of course, be treated as highly confidential. Contributions sent in anonymously, which are also welcome, can only be published if their content is ready for print.

There is no restriction regarding the length of contributions. However, contributions which exceed 10 pages of our journal (some 50,000 characters or 9,000 words), may be split in several parts and published in consecutive issues. In such cases, the structuring of articles should allow such a partition.

Articles of two pages and more should include illustrations to break up the text (covers of works dealt with, document facsimiles, portraits of personalities and authors, pictures of historical events, maps, etc.).

Procedure: Except for articles sent in anonymously, proofs of all

articles considered for publications will be sent to the authors; no right for publication arises from this. The editors reserve their right to determine in which issue such articles will be published. Royalties are paid only in case the author(s) suffer under social and/or legal persecution for expressing her/his opinions. Authors receive only one proof copy. If expressively wished, we can send up to five proof copies.

Data: We prefer to receive contributions per email. We can process various data carriers (PC, 3.5"/1.44MB, and ZIP/100 or 250 MB, CD ROM). The file formats of all major type-setting and DTP programs can be read; for reasons of portability, file formats of \*.rtf (Rich Text Format), \*.html (HyperTextMarkupLanguage, *i.e.*, Internet files) and MS-Word files are preferred. Please do not send manuscripts by fax, as this renders optical character recognition almost impossible. Images can be sent in all usual data formats (\*.gif, \*.jpg, \*.png, \*.tif...) and also as hard copies.

3.5" floppy disks as well as unsolicited manuscripts will not be sent back; solicited manuscript as well as image hard copy only if expressively desired.

*Should you agree to these conditions,  
we are looking forward to receiving your papers.*

\* plus a shipping fee of \$1.- for each started \$12.50 of your entire order, if your order is not paid in advance. / \*\* Only one copy for each new customer



# Contents

<b>The Dawning of a New Era .....</b>	<b>2</b>
<i>By Germar Rudolf</i>	
<b>Open Air Incinerations in Auschwitz: Rumor or Reality?</b>	
<i>Ground Water in the Area of the POW camp Birkenau, by Dipl.-Ing. Michael Gärtner, Dipl.-Ing. Werner Rademacher .....</i>	
<i>“Cremation Pits” and Ground Water Levels at Birkenau, by Carlo Mattogno.....</i>	
<b>Auschwitz: The Dwindling Death Toll</b>	
<i>How Many Deaths at Auschwitz?, by Dr. Robert Faurisson.....</i>	
<i>Cautious Mainstream Revisionism, by Germar Rudolf.....</i>	
<i>Auschwitz: Fritjof Meyer’s New Revisions, by Carlo Mattogno.....</i>	
<b>Poison Gas Über Alles .....</b>	<b>37</b>
<i>By Friedrich Paul Berg</i>	
<b>Certainty about Werner Heisenberg .....</b>	<b>47</b>
<i>By Dr. Gerhard Sommer</i>	
<b>The Hole in the Door.....</b>	<b>52</b>
<i>By Hans Pedersen</i>	
<b>WW II: Whose War was it? .....</b>	<b>56</b>
<i>By Prof. Emil Schlee</i>	
<b>New Aspects of Andrei Vlassov.....</b>	<b>63</b>
<i>By Wolfgang Strauss</i>	
<b>Was the Me262 the First Airplane to Break the Sound Barrier? .....</b>	<b>69</b>
<i>By André Chelain</i>	
<b>The Unknown Famine Holocaust .....</b>	<b>71</b>
<i>By Wolfgang Pfitzner</i>	
<b>The Moon Landing: Fact or Fiction .....</b>	<b>75</b>
<i>By Germar Rudolf</i>	
<b>Swing Dancing “Verboten” .....</b>	<b>81</b>
<i>By Eberhard Wardin</i>	
<b>A Look Back at Revisionism .....</b>	<b>83</b>
<i>By Ernst Manon</i>	
<b>Book Reviews</b>	
<i>Hitler’s Jewish Soldiers, by Jörg Berger .....</i>	
<i>The Russians in Berlin in 1945, by Ernst Gauss .....</i>	
<i>Van Pelt’s Plea against Sound Reasoning, by Robert H. Countess, Ph.D. ....</i>	
<i>World War I Atrocity Propaganda and the Holocaust, by Paul Grubach .....</i>	
<i>Why the USA Wages War in the Gulf Region, by Robert H. Countess, Ph.D.....</i>	
<i>Jewish Co-Responsibility for Jewish Persecution in 1941, by Germar Rudolf.....</i>	
<b>Research News</b>	
<i>How the United States Started the Vietnam War, by Wolfgang Pfitzner.....</i>	
<i>From the Records of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, by Germar Rudolf.....</i>	
<b>In Brief .....</b>	<b>118</b>

# The Dawning of a New Era

By Germar Rudolf

In 1996, I had to leave my home country Germany, where publications like the one you are holding in your hand are often subject to confiscation and where its authors and publishers are prosecuted, fined, and sometimes even thrown in jail for harboring dissenting historical views, particularly when ‘Topic No. 1’ is touched, the ‘Holocaust.’

I had run afoul of these German censorship laws and of the ensuing book burning which has been increasingly raging in Germany since the German reunification in 1990. Any reader interested in why Germany issued an international arrest warrant against the publisher of this periodical can find a comprehensive answer in a new book: *The Rudolf Report. Expert Report on Chemical and Technical Aspects of the ‘Gas Chambers’ of Auschwitz* (see the ad on the back cover of this issue).

After the famous *Leuchter Report*, which made many claims about the alleged gas chambers of Auschwitz, was torn apart by hostile critics, my own expert report—packed with scientific evidence supporting many of Leuchter’s claims—was hailed as an important relief by the ‘revisionist community.’ As a result, persecution at all levels of German society was unleashed against me. I hit the proverbial establishment brick wall. The only way out of it, so I thought, was to go into exile where I could continue my struggle for scientific knowledge and exactitude, and where I intended to restore my honor. I wanted to prove that I was right.

Hence, in 1997, I started to publish a German language periodical with focus on historical topics that are heavily censored in Germany, be it by social pressure only or even by legal means. It was a daring leap for me, since I knew that sooner or later I would have to face the fury of the German authorities, who would move all levers to get me extradited. I also thought that trying to sell a periodical that is deemed ‘illegal’ by the German authorities might fail due to anxieties of both my potential customers and those in Germany I needed to promote my products. After all, they expose themselves to harassments or outright persecution by German authorities when buying/selling/distributing/advertising my controversial scientific material.

I was correct in expecting that the German authorities would seek my extradition. It has come so far that the German government now considers me one of the biggest threats to their constitution, although all I do is to merely publish historical facts and interpretations, of which the articles presented in this issue are representative samples. How insecure must a government be if it considers harmless articles like those printed in this issue as the most severe threat to its existence?

Over the last ten years, I gained some experience in dealing with persecuting authorities, so I can assure you that all attempts to throw me into a German dungeon for years on end have failed so far and will keep on failing.

My fears about the business risks involved in publishing dissenting scientific material, however, was misplaced. My

German periodical *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* (quarterly for free historical research) is now in its 7<sup>th</sup> year of publication. It has a fairly stable number of subscribers and receives growing attention from all sides, even from the establishment which has realized that the exact and convincing arguments published in my journals, books, and brochures will not go away by ignoring, badmouthing, threatening, or insulting me. They have to deal with the arguments.

I have achieved this performance record under the most difficult circumstances, *i.e.*, producing high quality books and periodicals even though most of the time I had to work from underground and sometimes even while ‘on the run.’ Although the financial support I received was marginal compared to all other individuals and organizations active in this same field, I was encouraged by an increasing number of scholars from all over the world not only to publish English language books (which I do under the imprint *Theses and Dissertations Press*), but also to start an English periodical featuring articles on controversial historical topics which are ignored by ‘establishment’ publishers.

The background of their reasoning is that for almost ten years now, the existing English language periodicals featuring revisionism basically ignored the research and publishing activities going on abroad, and for various reasons, they also alienated many revisionist writers and researchers. As a result, the English speaking world, *i.e.*, almost the entire world, had no way of finding out about the tremendous scientific progress made by revisionism during those years. Most revisionists have now concluded that after years of trying, without success, the old periodicals cannot be reformed, and so, a new journal needed to be established. Dr. Robert H. Countess, for instance, who is featured in this issue, recently felt that revisionism in the English world is “imploding”, and Prof. Arthur R. Butz called the current activities in this field “comatose.” It took friends and supporters four years to convince me to do something about it, that is, to do the second big leap of my history as a publisher. The result is in your hands.

Right now, the publishing company *Castle Hill Publishers* is a very small operation. That might change over the next years if this endeavor is successful. But for now, I do depend on—and am tremendously grateful for—the assistance I receive from uncounted volunteers from all over the world. They translate, coordinate research, write and edit articles, review books and journals, and help to operate the world’s largest revisionist website that hosts *The Revisionist* and thousands of other revisionist books and articles ([www.vho.org](http://www.vho.org)).

Hence, *The Revisionist* is in fact ‘our’ journal. It is made by and with the help of people like you and me, and it features worthwhile articles without applying as strict an editorial censorship as is the case with other periodicals. With a joint effort, we can and will get revisionism back afloat!

I hope that you enjoy reading this first issue of *The Revisionist* and that you will help us promote this new and exciting journal. □

# Open Air Incinerations in Auschwitz: Rumor or Reality?

## Two Studies on the Ground Water Level in Auschwitz and Its Consequences in History

Many former inmates as well as guards of the former National Socialist concentration camp Auschwitz-Birkenau claim that hundreds of thousands of corpses of murdered inmates were burned in ditches some 6 to 10 ft. deep. However, almost every book about Auschwitz points out that the entire grounds in and around the camp were swampy in those days. Since the 1970s, Holocaust revisionists have therefore claimed that the incineration of corpses in deep ditches would have been impossible due to the high groundwater table in this swampy area, which would have quickly filled any deep ditch. After this argument spread widely with the so-called Leuchter Report in 1988,<sup>1</sup> it was argued that the groundwater level during the operation of the camp was significantly lowered with the help of a sophisticated system of drainage ditches, thus allowing the open-air incineration of corpses in deep ditches as attested to by various witnesses.<sup>2</sup> In May 2002, the controversy around Auschwitz focused even more on these open-air incinerations, since a German mainstream journalist argued that most of the victims of the claimed mass murders of Auschwitz were supposedly disposed of using these open-air incineration ditches.<sup>3</sup> Until recently, the effects of the groundwater, and the questions arising from this matter, have not been investigated. Due to the availability of much-improved source materials after the end of the Cold War, this matter can now be investigated. The following two studies have thoroughly examined the existing primary documentary sources dealing with the groundwater table in Auschwitz during World War II. As a result, the correctness of eyewitness accounts claiming incinerations in deep ditches must be called into question. The documents do not allow for any different interpretation: in the Birkenau area, the groundwater table was about 0.30 to 1.20 m beneath the surface.

## Ground Water in the Area of the POW camp Birkenau

By Dipl.-Ing. Michael Gärtner, Dipl.-Ing. Werner Rademacher

### 1. Preliminary Remarks about the Birkenau Camp

The camp Auschwitz-Birkenau, which is today generally referred to as “concentration and extermination camp,” was originally designated as a “prisoner of war camp” at the end of 1941 by the German authorities.<sup>4</sup> The construction sector B1a was finished in March 1942 and was occupied mostly by

Soviet prisoners of war until August 1942. The designation of the camp remained the same, though it subsequently had more the character of a concentration camp, meaning that it was mainly filled with criminal and political prisoners, including Jews, rather than prisoners of war. The camp also bore the name “KL Auschwitz II.” “KL” was the official German abbreviation for concentration camp.

A drawing of ours showing the camp’s state of construction in April/May 1942 is shown in Illustration 1. This drawing as well as many others are included in a study of ours about the history of the Auschwitz camp currently in preparation.<sup>5</sup> In the literature, maps of the Birkenau camp are very often false, since in almost all cases the final state of construction of late 1944 is shown, even if this map is used to refer to events that took place in earlier years. This leads to wrong assumptions and conclusions about events of the camp’s history.

### 2. What Events Are Reported?

#### 2.1. BUNKER 1

According to witness testimony there was an old farmhouse to the north of the Birkenau camp which as of May 1942 was allegedly used as a gas chamber for the killing of human beings, cf. Illustration 3. In its vicinity, the accounts state, there were mass graves which later were allegedly also used to burn corpses.<sup>6</sup> It must be noted that there are no indications of where

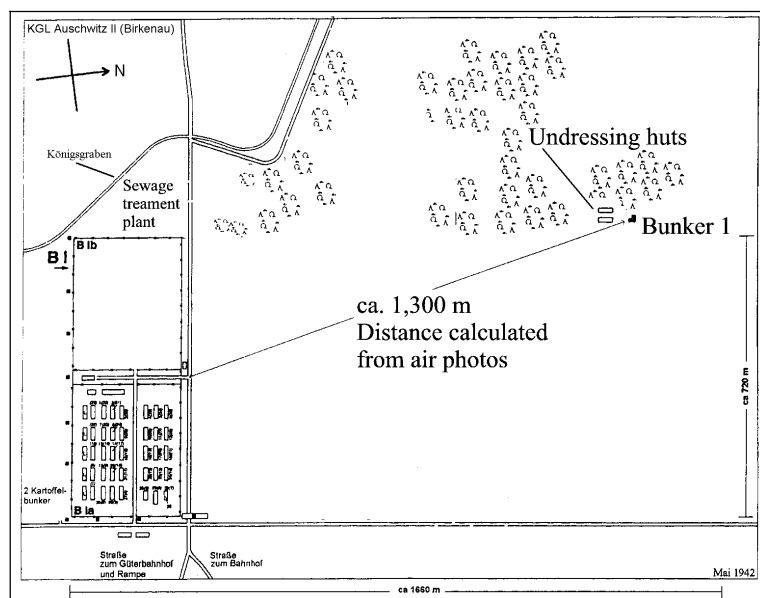


Illustration 1: POW camp Birkenau in May 1942: alleged location of Bunker 1.

this Bunker 1 allegedly stood.<sup>7</sup> The witness Benroubi testified:<sup>8</sup>

*“They [the Sonderkommando men] put them [the corpses] in front of graves about 20m long, 3m wide and 2.50m. There were about ten graves ready to receive the martyrs. Parallel to these open graves there were some that had been covered with earth and these extended over about 300 meters [...]”*

Witness Buki stated:<sup>9</sup>

*“We took the trolleys to a grave about 40 meters long and I think about 6 meters wide [240 m<sup>2</sup>], which was about 100 meters away from the house.”*

Witness Garbarz said:<sup>10</sup>

*“We saw big rectangles traced on the ground twenty or thirty meters wide by fifty or 60 meters long. In one of these rectangles the ground was stained red.”*

The witness indicates that he understood the rectangles to be grave plots. Later on he adds, regarding the depth of the pit, that it was approximately 1.5 m deep.<sup>10</sup>

There is no documentary evidence to corroborate these claims. Even J.-C. Pressac questions some of these witness statements, which furthermore are quite contradictory with respect to the number and size of the pits as well.<sup>11</sup>

## 2.2. BUNKER 2

Regarding this house, located to the northwest of the camp, witnesses also tell of gassings and of incinerations in pits from June 30, 1942 until spring of 1943 (Illustration 3). This “Bunker” was allegedly brought back into operation in May/June 1944.<sup>12</sup> In this area, foundations of former buildings used for unknown purposes can indeed be made out today, and they are also recorded on a Polish map of this region.<sup>13</sup>

Regarding the pits, the witness Dragon states, for 1942:<sup>14</sup>

*“On the other side of the cottage there were four pits 30 meters long, 7 meters wide and 3 meters deep.”*

The witness Dr. Nyiszli states for 1944 (which we shall come back to in 2.2.4):<sup>15</sup>

*“The pyre was a ditch 50 yards long, six yards wide and three yards deep [...]”*

A second Soviet sketch dated March 3, 1945, shows a burning pit of 30 m<sup>2</sup>, see Illustration 2.<sup>16</sup> Again the discrepancies regarding size are considerable. There are also no corroborative documents.

## 2.3. BURIAL AND LATER CREMATION OF TYPHUS VICTIMS

Various witnesses tell of the burial of victims of the first typhus epidemic, and of the burning of these bodies after their exhumation between September 21, 1942 and November 30, 1942 (Illustration 3).<sup>17</sup> The files of the Russian State Archive of War in Moscow<sup>18</sup> report in detail about the first epidemic, which had been introduced from outside by civilian labor personnel.<sup>19</sup> It began on July 1, 1942.

Crematorium I, which at this time was the only one available, was not of sufficient capacity to cremate all the victims, which were therefore buried in Birkenau. Other casualties had already been buried in the same area earlier. The numbers given vary from 50,000 to 107,000. The “body toxins” resulting from the decomposition process threatened to poison the groundwater, which was used for the drinking water supply for the entire area. Hence, the corpses had to be exhumed again. They were then cremated, first on funeral pyres, later in pits. Thus go the reports. No publication that we know of makes any mention of the number of pits.

## 2.4. BURNING PITS AT CREMATORIUM V

Witnesses tell of burning pits in the area north of Crematorium V between the building and the ditch in front of the fence, in May to June 1944 (Illustration 3). Since the crematoria were out of service due to damage, a situation arose “[...] that open-air incineration ditches had to be rapidly dug [...]”<sup>20</sup> Pressac also mentions “five small incineration ditches” near Crematorium V. These, he says, became necessary because Crematorium IV had been closed since May 1943 and Crematorium V could not be adequately repaired.<sup>21</sup> As witnesses to these pits, Pressac quotes Dragon:<sup>22</sup>

*“[...] Jews were burned in five ditches dug behind Crematorium V.”*

as well as the witness Tauber:<sup>22</sup>

*“It was realized that the ditches incinerated the corpses better, [than the furnaces] once the ditches entered service”*

The witness F. Müller, whom Pressac accuses of errors and lies,<sup>22</sup> reports:<sup>23</sup>

*“[...] work on digging five pits behind Crematorium V was soon [...] begun.”*

*“The two pits that had been dug were 40 to 50 m long, about 8 m wide and 2 m deep.”*

There then follows a detailed description of the “[...] drainage channel for the human fat [...]” in the pits. On page 211, F. Müller continues:

*“In the back yard of the Crematorium, Moll ordered three more burning pits excavated, so that he had five at his disposal there now.”*

The measures of these alleged pits result from these statements: total area = 5 pits of each 40 m or 50 m × 8 m = 1,600

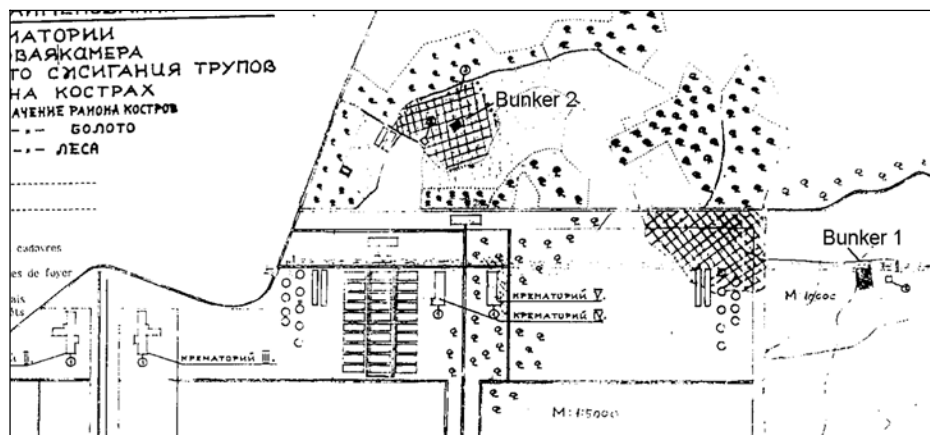


Illustration 2: POW camp Birkenau; Soviet sketch of the alleged location of Bunker 1 and 2

or 2,000 m<sup>2</sup> and a total volume of excavated earth (2 m deep) of 3,200 or 4,000 m<sup>3</sup>. This earth had to be disposed somehow, leaving visible traces, but nothing of this is ever mentioned. Further, F. Müller mentions a concrete surface of 60 × 15 m = 900m<sup>2</sup>, where bones that had not burned up were allegedly crushed. Of course, the Allied air photos taken in 1944 show no traces of this concrete surface, any more than they show the pits themselves, their excavation, or the access roads for the transport of bodies and fuel.<sup>24</sup>

The fire in the burning pits could generate heat of several 100°C, even 1000°C. The question is: how close can a person not wearing protective clothing approach to such a blaze? According to the eyewitness testimony, a team of laborers worked there without any protective gear. Any fireman could comment on this.

Pressac's 'Document 8'<sup>25</sup> also contradicts the eyewitness testimony. This cost estimate for Crematorium II, reviewed on May 26, 1944, shows clearly that the oven pit for the cremation ovens for Crematorium V was built as a waterproof tub and that during the excavation of this pit the groundwater of the immediate vicinity was artificially frozen to prevent it from filling up the construction pit.<sup>26</sup> The cross-section diagram of this building, No. 1678,<sup>27</sup> shows that the upper edge of the base of the tub lay about one meter below ground level. Crematorium V did not have a cellar underneath. This proves that this oven pit stood in the groundwater!

But if this oven pit had to be protected against the groundwater, this proves that no burning pits as described in the foregoing could have been possible at this location.

It must also be remembered that the grounds of the camp sloped downwards in a northerly direction, as the Polish ordinance survey maps, scale 1:25,000, prove (Illustration 6).

One section of a work authored by the late Dr. Jan Sehn, former Auschwitz inmate and director of the Auschwitz Museum, needs to be mentioned here, since it has caused some irritation:<sup>28</sup>

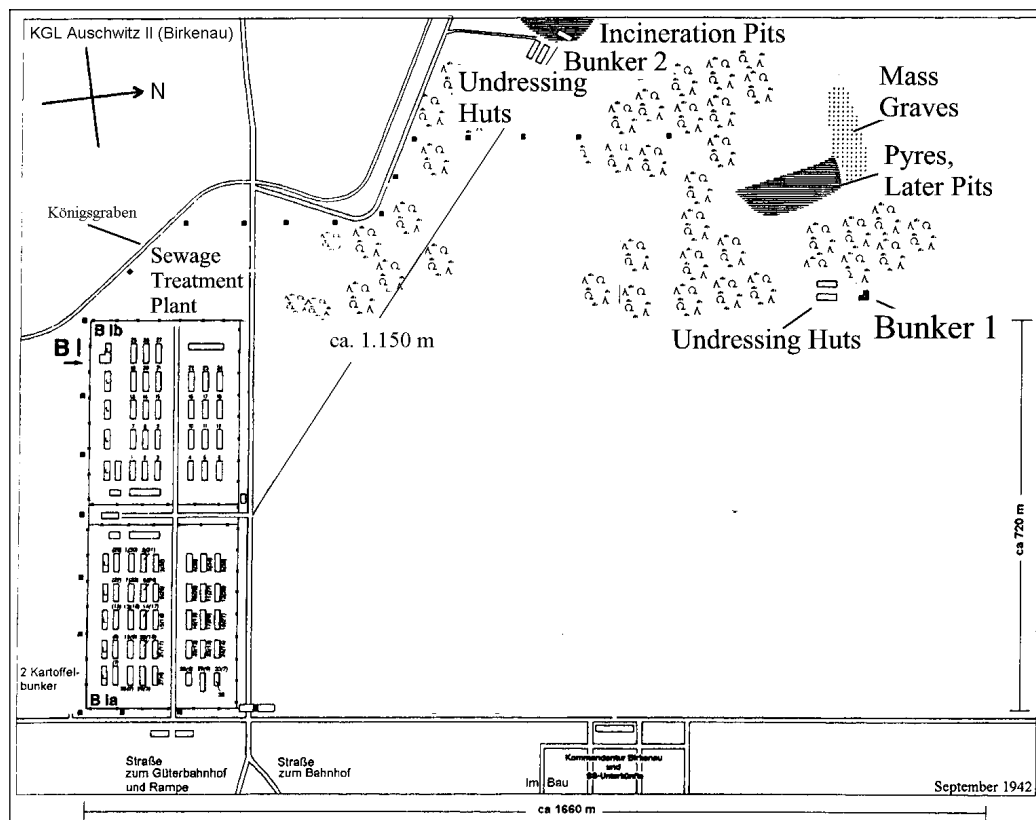
*“At the bottom of the pit, thick wooden logs were piled up, followed by increasingly small branches and twigs. Corpses were thrown on top of this base. After that, the SS men supervising this work poured petrol into all four corners of the pit, lit a rubber comb and threw it onto the spots moistened by petrol.”*

Every boy scout in the world knows that there is no way one can light a fire in a pit this way. Yet this statement was never criticized. There is apparently not a single former boy scout among the world's historians! Such examples could be quoted continuously for pages on end. But this is not the purpose of this paper. Such examples could only emphasize why we pose questions like: how could it happen that such witness statements passed unchallenged for so long? And why does there not exist any research into the reasons for the many errors made by these witnesses?

### 3. Which Doubts Evolved, and What Triggered Them?

One reason for our initial doubts is certainly the contradictions between certain eyewitness accounts. Another is the obvious incompatibilities with the laws of nature. But more important, the first book of J.-C. Pressac made us rethink our

hitherto held beliefs. Pressac was the first to publish documentary proof for—or better against—what had been claimed by eye witnesses only, until then. Unfortunately, Pressac's important book is hardly known, and it is unlikely that the historians have read it thoroughly, if at all. If they had, they would know his massive critique of mainstream historiography and the eyewitnesses. The historians did not investigate, they “believed.” Did they do so out of fear? It is also unavoidable to accuse the historians of not having included scholars of other fields in their research, like engineers and architects. They acted wrongly and arrogantly! Or did they fear becoming victims of persecution and—in Europe—even of prosecution? Especially German



**Illustration 3:** State of construction of the POW camp Birkenau in September 1942, including alleged Bunkers 1 and 2 and mass graves/burning pits.

historians know that wrong opinions in these matters are prosecuted by public attorneys!

#### 4. General Remarks on Documents and Physical Evidence

Whereas most eyewitness statements date to shortly after the war, documentary and physical evidence have become available in abundance only since the 1990s. Many documents and sketches regarding the matter of the groundwater in Birkenau have become known only since the opening of the Moscow archives. And since there are obvious contradictions between the witness statements on the one hand and the documentary and physical evidence on the other hand, some historians have tried to adjust either the witness statements or the meaning of documents and physical evidence by "interpreting" them. However, any attempt to interpret documents and physical evidence in a way that would confirm the eyewitness testimony perforce must fail, for physical and scientific facts are not open to arbitrary interpretation.

For persons who lived through those times, the insistence on erroneous testimony is a very human phenomenon. For this reason one should not level accusations at persons who suffered injustices, even if they did make false statements – per-

haps unintentionally; those who should be blamed are the ones who sensationalize these statements. The Berlin daily paper *Die Welt* of February 7, 1997, ran an interesting article on this topic, titled "Wenn die Erinnerung eines Zeugen trügt" (When a witness's memory errs).<sup>29</sup> This article confirmed the long-established forensic guideline that "physical evidence takes precedence over witness evidence."

#### 5. Documents and Other Evidence on Ground Water

We have used the following knowledge and materials for our analyses:

##### 5.1. MAPS

These are old maps from the Austro-Hungarian monarchy (still available for purchase today), scale = 1:200,000, dating from 1889, 1905, and 1915. Nothing could show more readily why the area around Auschwitz is so waterlogged. A large number of ponds, fed by the groundwater, stretches like a string of pearls along the Vistula and Sola rivers. This abundance of water, together with the abundance of coal in this area, was decisive for the decision to erect a coal gasification and liquification plant of the German chemical corporation

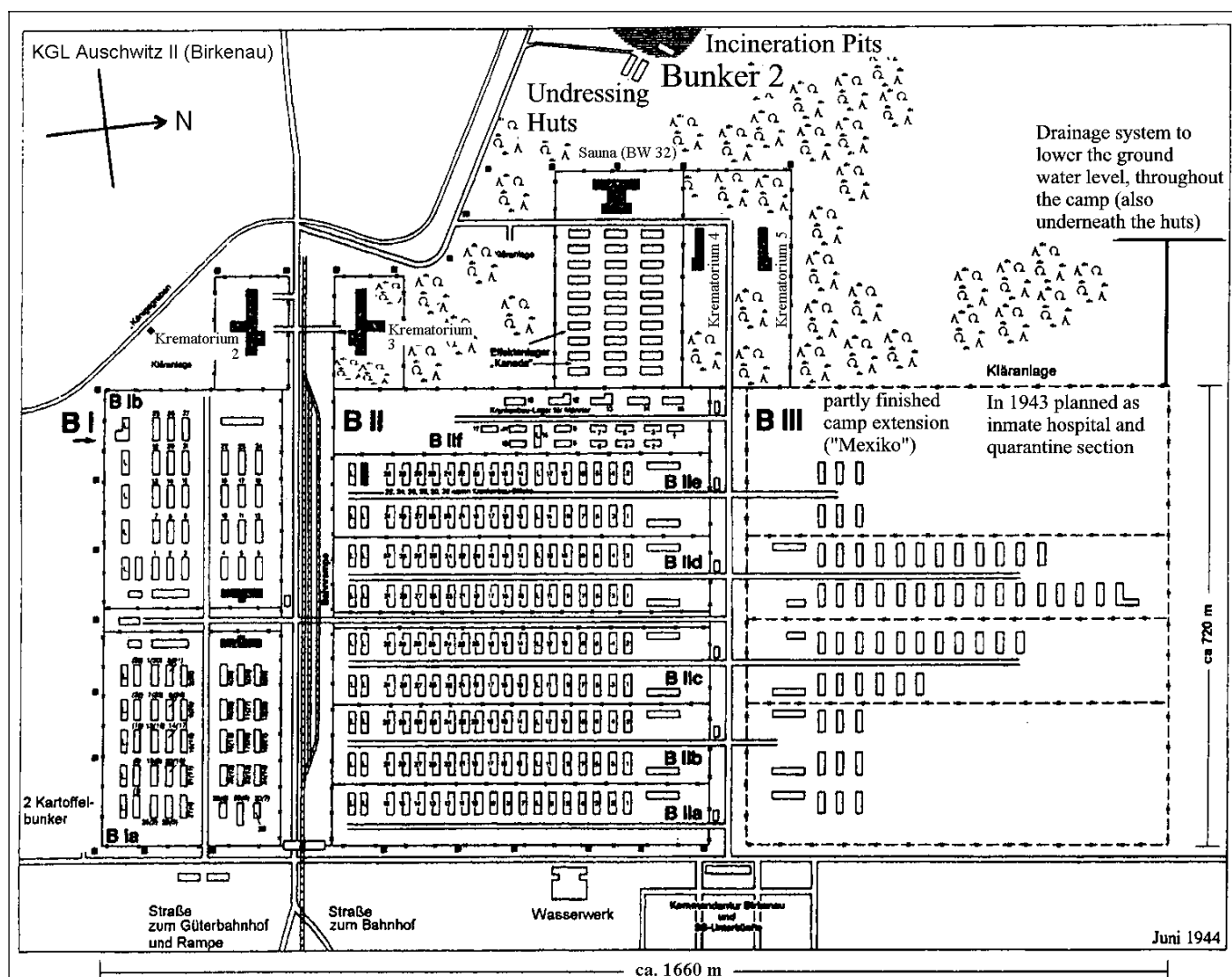


Illustration 4: POW camp Birkenau in June 1944, including the alleged Bunker 2 and incineration pits.

I.G. Farbenindustrie A.G. in this area. During the trial against the responsible officers of this corporation after the war, the witness O. Ambros listed the requirements for this huge factory:<sup>30</sup> one million tons of coal, and 15,000 m<sup>3</sup> of water per hour.

We also consulted a Polish map, scale 1:25,000, dating from 1986 (Illustration 6). Both camps are shown on the maps, as is the industrial plant of the German chemical corporation I.G. Farbenindustrie A.G. The advantage of the scale of these maps is that they show the drainage ditches and even the smallest bodies of water. From the direction of their flow, especially north of the camp, they show how the ground drops off towards the Vistula. The course of ditches corresponds to the planning shown in the “Melioration, Teil III” of August 15, 1942.<sup>31</sup>

### 5.2. AMERICAN AIR PHOTOS

These photos were taken between end of 1943 and end of 1944 during reconnaissance flights as part of the Allied bombing campaign against industrial targets in the German industrial area of Upper Silesia. Some of them have been known since 1979, and those of interest here have been thoroughly interpreted by the Canadian air photo expert John C. Ball.<sup>10</sup>

### 5.3. FILES OF THE VARIOUS BUILDING ADMINISTRATIONS

The documents used were primarily files from the “Zentralbauleitung der Waffen-SS und Polizei, Auschwitz” (Central Building Administration of the Waffen-SS and Police, Auschwitz), insofar as they have been published or could be obtained. Tens of thousands more exist which we have not yet been able to access, basically due to our limited financial possibilities. For this reason, we must expect that we shall have to revise our findings in matters of detail in the future.

### 5.4. KNOWLEDGE OF A CO-WORKER FROM OUR TEAM

He has performed an on-site examination of the terrain and has taken a series of slides; we are of course aware that the conditions prevailing today are comparable to those of 1942 only to a limited degree.

## 6. Documents Regarding the Area’s Abundance of Water

We have in our possession a four-page report dated October 29, 1941, based on the study of a professor from the University of Breslau. It points out the groundwater flows “accompanying the Vistula, Przemsza and Sola Rivers.”<sup>32</sup>

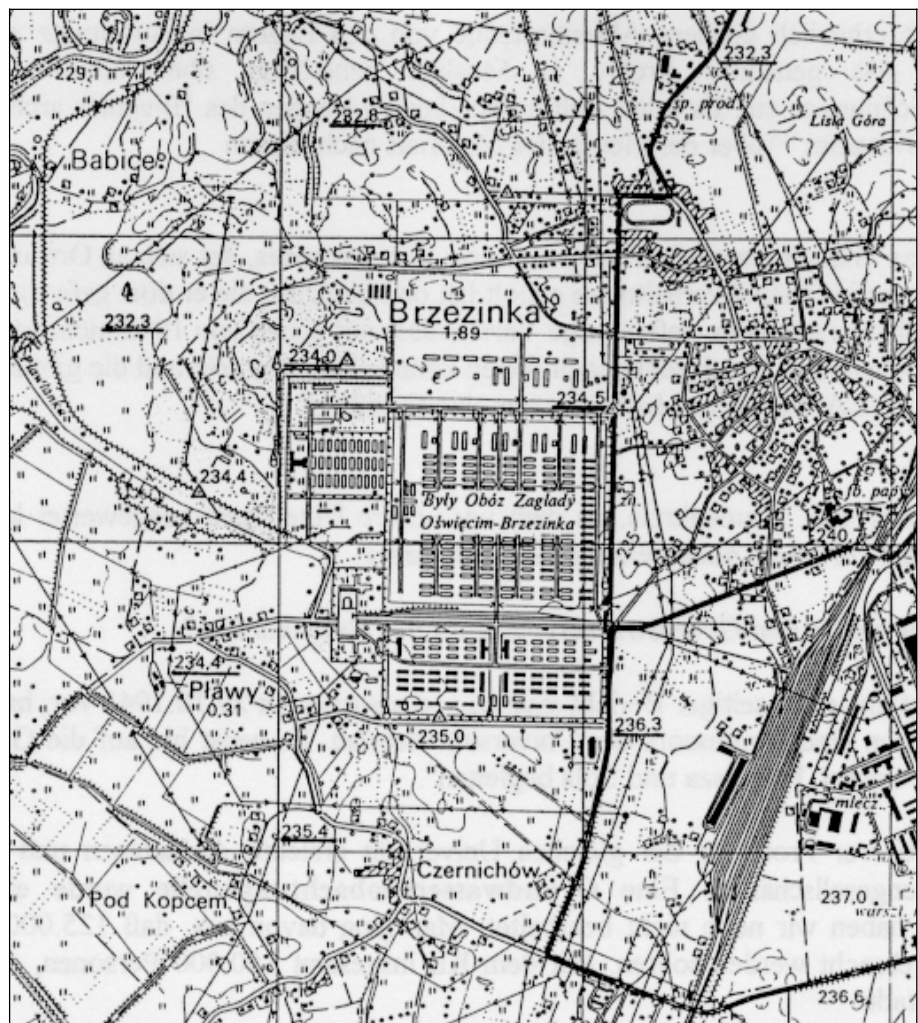
Another professor of the same university photographed and mapped the area’s flora. Additionally, a groundwater observation station was erected. We have not yet analyzed these files.

Since one study determined that the groundwater was “not even fit to rinse one’s mouth,” reference is made to the dams as a source of drinking water. However, mineral water was distributed. The report proves that the authorities proceeded very carefully and professionally.<sup>33</sup>

The Austrian map of 1905, scale = 1:200,000, clearly shows the string of ponds parallel to the Vistula and the Sola, fed stemming from the west Beskides, a mountain range south of Auschwitz.

The excellent Polish maps clarify the circumstances and indicate that the ponds probably formed as a result of the exploitation of gravel deposits and that their water table corresponds to the groundwater level.

Pressac documents this pond landscape with a “plan of the sphere of interest of the concentration camp Auschwitz.”<sup>34</sup> It confirms that most of those ponds are the result of gravel mining. An activity report of April 19, 1941, mentions “Added drawings of new ponds in the plan of the sphere of interest.”<sup>35</sup> An independent surveyor’s office was doing this



**Illustration 5:** Detail of a Polish map of, scale 1:25,000. Elevations used in this paper are underlined.

work. The voluminous files of this department have not yet been analyzed and will certainly give new insights, not only about the topic discussed here.

## 7. Which Materials Document the Level of the Ground Water?

Every publication of significance about these camps points out that the terrain is swampy. Logically, the only terrain that can be swampy is one where the groundwater level is very high or, as in this case, almost flush with the ground. Pressac confirms this fact with the following words:<sup>36</sup>

*“The nature of the land at Birkenau, where the groundwater is almost at surface level, [...]”*

An Allied air photo from 1944 shows,<sup>37</sup> to the north of the Birkenau camp, a 2.5-kilometer-long strip of land running west to east, where a herringbone-pattern system of drainage ditches is visible, approximately 1.25 kilometers wide and expanded in sections to reach right to the Vistula.<sup>38</sup> The photo shows that the drainage work in the western regions was done only shortly before the air photo was taken.

In the camp itself as well, drainage was performed between the drainage ditches that had been dug around the individual camp sectors.<sup>39</sup> The entire ditch system is clearly shown on the Polish map, scale 1:25,000 (Illustration 6).

### 7.1. TEXT REFERENCES TO THE GROUND WATER LEVEL IN BIRKENAU

From a building description of October 30, 1941:<sup>40</sup>

*“The groundwater table varies between depths of 0.30 and 1.20 m.”* (emphasis added)

In a letter dated October 17, 1942, regarding Crematorium II:<sup>41</sup>

*“[...] the building reaches more than 2 m into the groundwater [...]”* (emphasis added)

In a letter dated March 17, 1943, regarding the large delousing facility (BW 32, “Large Disinfestation Facility,” i.e. the so-called “Central Sauna”), with reference to structural engineering:<sup>42</sup>

*“[...] highest ground water level may be taken as 0.30 m below the surface.”*

In another letter dated June 4, 1943, regarding the same building:<sup>43</sup>

*“[...] heating pits are relatively deep, and so insulation from the groundwater, which is about 20 cm below the surface, is necessary [...]”* (emphasis added)

### 7.2. PLAN INDICATION

On the plan of the disinfestation facility (BW 32), No. 2159 of March 8, 1943, the cross-section clearly shows a line labeled “groundwater table.”<sup>44</sup>

### 7.3. BUILDINGS WITH TUB FOUNDATIONS

Another sign is the planning and construction of buildings with tub foundations. Buildings are built with this kind of foundation when their basements stand in the groundwater, i.e. if they need to be waterproof. The basement becomes a pontoon, as it were, whose own weight, together with the weight of the superstructure, prevents it from bobbing up. The buildings are constructed in double-shell fashion. A waterproof layer separates the two shells. During the construction phase, the groundwater level is either lowered with sump pumps or held back by icing-up the construction site. All the basement parts and basement pits in Birkenau are constructed as tub foundations.

It is important to note that the buildings with tub foundations listed in the following are spread over the entire camp, from north to south as well as from east to west. This indicates that the groundwater situation was similar in all parts of the camp.

1. Crematorium II	BW 30
2. Crematorium III	BW 30a
3. Crematorium IV	BW 30b
4. Crematorium V	BW 30c
5. Disinfestation Facility	BW 32
6. Water Treatment Plant	BW35

Due to their small surface area and depth, the subsoil at Crematoria IV and V was iced up.<sup>45</sup> The excavation pits of the

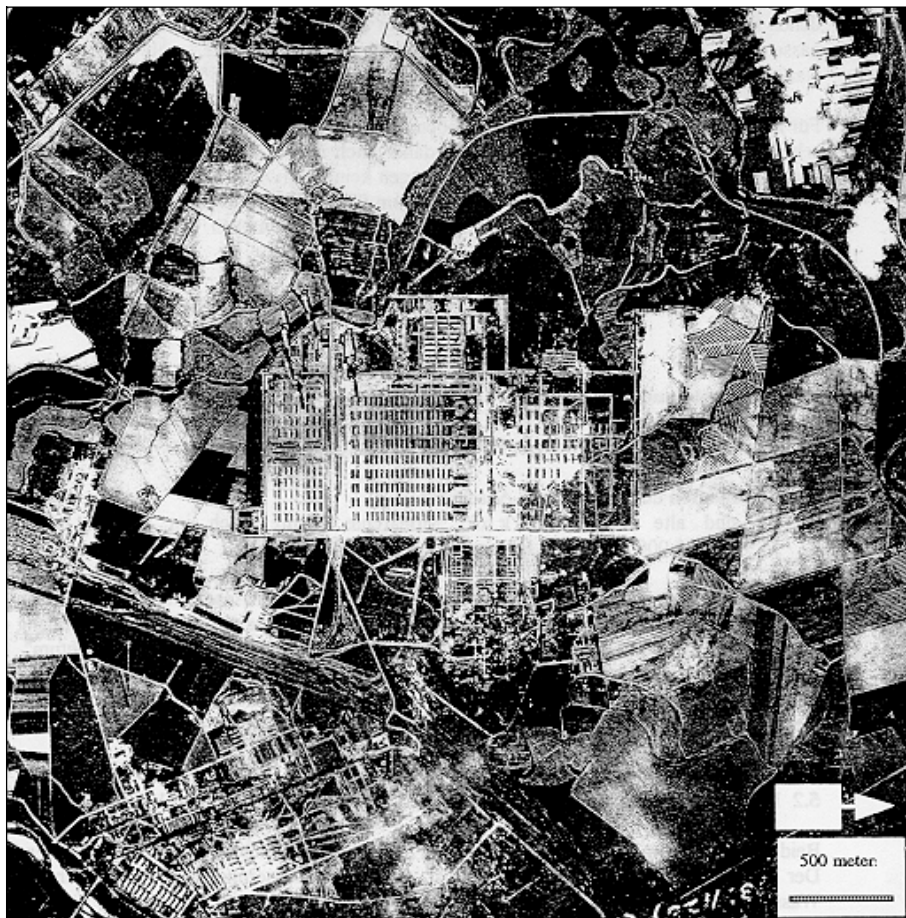
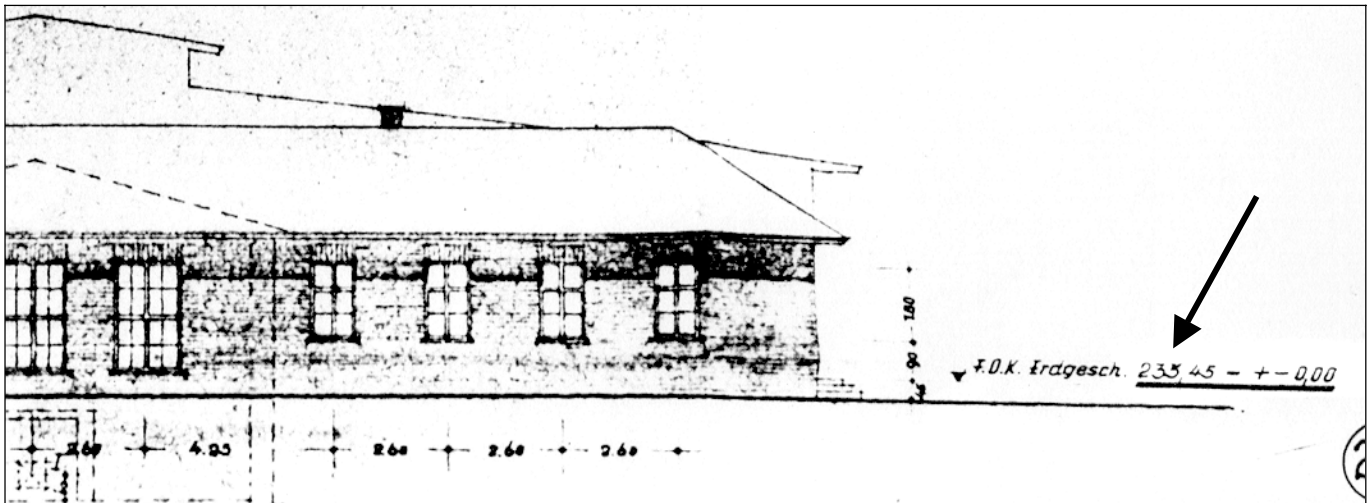


Illustration 6: Air Photo of POW camp Birkenau form Sept. 13, 1944.<sup>37</sup>





**Illustration 7:** Enlargement of the detail from the building plan for the “water treatment facility of the POW camp.” Auschwitz-Birkenau, TCIDK 502-2-148. The elevation of the construction site above sea level is clearly marked (arrow).

other buildings were kept clear of groundwater via sunken wells equipped with pumps.<sup>46</sup>

#### 7.4. WITNESS STATEMENTS REGARDING THE GROUND WATER IN BIRKENAU

In the books with which we are familiar, one witness reports about groundwater in the aforementioned pits. This is Filip Müller in his book *Sonderbehandlung*.<sup>23</sup> Müller was a member of a Sonderkommando. On page 36 he writes about a pit into which groundwater had seeped, and about a test to see how high it was:

*“Then we were told to throw the bodies into the pit. [...] We took hold of the dead by their hands and feet and threw them full pitch as far towards the center of the pit as possible. When they hit the water’s surface it splashed to all sides. Then they sank like millstones to the flat bottom, and the water closed over them.”*

#### 8. Data Regarding the Terrain around Birkenau

For the terrain all around the camps, elevation data was—surprisingly enough—already available based on sea level, albeit with zero level referring to the Adriatic Sea. This elevation, measured at the time of the Austrian monarchy, is 0.38 m below the Atlantic sea level standard used otherwise in Europe.

Such elevations can be found, e.g., in the detailed maps of the railway facilities, including the connecting railroad tracks. It would go beyond the scope of this study to include them here, but it should be mentioned that we have them in our possession and have analyzed them.<sup>47</sup>

The table below lists the building plans known to us with the elevation of their terrain above sea level. These are points of reference for our further observations.

The Polish map referred to earlier contains several reference points with elevation given which enable us to calculate the gradient of the camp’s area in percentages. In Illustration 6 an excerpt of this map is shown with the elevation figures used underlined. The heights above sea level and, the distances and orientations given were also calculated from this map.

At the camp’s southern border, the area declines from its southeast corner to the southwest corner from 236.3 m to 234.4 m, which corresponds to a gradient of 0.138% over a distance of 1,380 m.

Along the camp road between camp sections II and III, the area declines in a similar way from 234.5 m at the east to 232.3 m in the west, *i.e.*, 0.141% over 1,560 m.

The gradient changes slightly some 300 m north of the camp, inclining from 232.3 in the east to 232.8 m in the west, *i.e.*, 0.046% over 1,080 m.

Along the eastern border of the camp, the area declines from 236.3 in the south to 232.3 m in the north, *i.e.*, 0.182% over 2,200 m. Some 1,500 m more to the north, we find the river Vistula at a height of 227.3 m.

Along the western border of the camp, parallel to the line mentioned before, the area declines from 235.4 m in the south to 232.8 m in the north, *i.e.*, 0.112% over 2,310 m. Some 1,375 m north of the camp, we again reach the Vistula, this time at 228.0 m over sea level.

In his first book, Pressac has reproduced a German map of

the camp, in which every single barrack of camp section II is annotated in handwriting with its individual elevation over sea level.<sup>49</sup> The purpose of this is not clear. However, these data enabled us to draw detailed elevation lines for the camp. They start at the southeast corner of the camp at 235.5 m and end at the

Buildings of the POW camp Birkenau, with elevation				
Building	Plan	Elevation*	Date	Source
1. Crematorium II	Huta 109/13a	235.366	Sept. 21, 1943	p. 323
2. Crematorium III	Huta 109/14a	235.366	Sept. 23, 1943	p. 325
3. Guard Building	ZBL 835	235.93	Nov. 5, 1941	RGVA, <sup>48</sup> see Ill. 7
4. Settling Basin BA III	ZBL 2534	233.71	June 15, 1943	p. 169
5. Water Treatment Plant	ZBL 2364	235.45	May 15, 1943	RGVA 502-2-148, see Ill. 8

\* m above sea level; \*\* page numbers refer to J.-C. Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 2).

northwest corner at 234.5 m. They confirm both direction and amount of the gradient as established with the Polish map: the area declines 0.139% over 740 m. The direction is roughly north-northwest.

Of course, we have made additional corroborating analyses which lead to the same results. It must therefore be concluded that the camp area was and still is almost level. This is also confirmed by the elevation lines in the Polish map as well as by photos of the area.

Further calculations could be done, for instance by using wartime files on drilling drinking water wells in this area, but we have not had the opportunity to do this. D. Czech reports in her book on research of a Prof. Dr. Ing. Zunker, Breslau, on water and pond conditions for the purpose of using the area for cattle breeding and fish farming.<sup>50</sup> This research was apparently the basis for the aforementioned construction description from Oct. 30, 1941 (chapter 7.1.), and the well drilling works referred to in the "Construction report for November 1941".<sup>51</sup>

But since we have sufficiently exact data for several essential points of the area in question, we can now draw conclusions about the groundwater situation in Birkenau.

## 9. Summary of Preliminary Examinations and Conclusions

The primary basis for our assessment is an "Explanatory report for the preliminary design of the new construction of the POW camp of the Waffen-SS, Auschwitz O/S", dated October 30, 1941.<sup>40</sup> The soil at the construction site is described as follows:

*"Soil consistency is poor. The humus soil is followed by loam and shale [a fossil-rich, grayish blue, plastic marine clay from the Tertiary period], in which gravel and sand particles of minor size are embedded. The groundwater level varies between 0.30 and 1.20 m. Parts of the terrain are boggy."* (emphasis added)

For structural engineering calculations pertaining to the basement parts, therefore, it was necessary to proceed on the assumption of a groundwater table of 30 cm. This in and of itself shows that pits 1.5 to 3.0 m deep would perforce have collected groundwater. However, there is further evidence. All facts mentioned fit the above description perfectly. The data regarding the level and direction of flow of the groundwater as well as the content of the documents quoted agree with the other observations. We shall present further evidence with respect to two locations of burning pits as described by eyewitness testimony.

### 9.1. PITS NORTH OF CREMATORIUM V, BW 30C

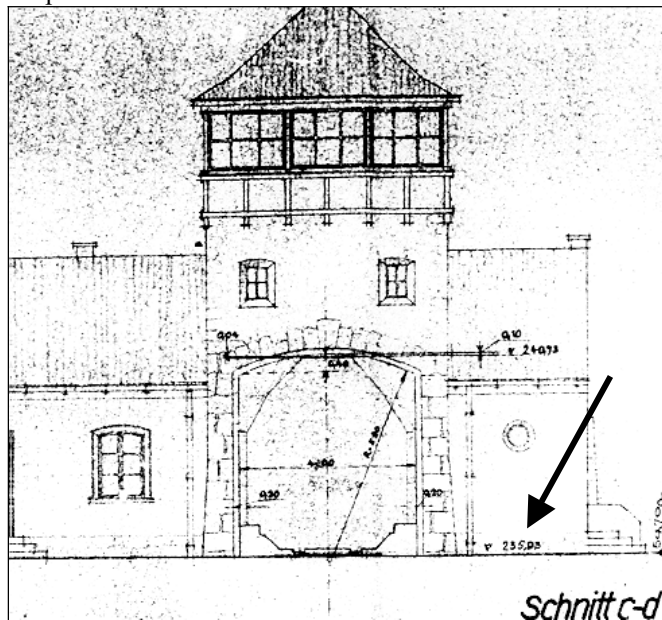
1. It has been shown that the oven pit, whose upper edge was positioned approximately 1.00 m below ground level, was constructed in tub style. It has also been shown that during the construction of the building the pit was kept free of groundwater by means of icing-up.
2. Documents prove that at the location of the Large Delousing Facility (BW 32) the groundwater table was 20 cm below ground level. This building is situated approximately 270 m away from Crematorium V. Assuming a 3‰ slope of the groundwater table, and disregarding the proven slope of the terrain, the groundwater could have

been at most 1.01 m below ground level. We have deliberately postulated a worst case, since it is already sufficient proof in and of itself. However, by the same logic, the groundwater cannot have been that far beneath the surface; if it had been, then on the one hand the terrain would not have been boggy, and on the other hand, ameliorative drainage would have been superfluous. Witnesses give the depth of the pits as 2 m.

3. Four air photos specified reveal none of the five pits attested to by witnesses.
4. These five pits allegedly covered a surface area of at least 1,600 m<sup>2</sup>. The material excavated from them would have required approximately the same area. The concrete slab took up 900 m<sup>2</sup>. Without even taking into account that there would also have to have been room among all these items for the labor commando to go about its work, the requisite area of approximately 4,100 m<sup>2</sup> did not exist between the building and the ditch by the fence. This area actually comprises only 2,000 m<sup>2</sup>.
5. According to eyewitness testimony, the pond next to Crematorium IV, which is still there today, was already there in those days, fed by the groundwater. This is further proof of the high groundwater table.<sup>52</sup>
6. We shall dispense with recounting other impossible, alleged events that violate the laws of nature. Anyone with an education will have no trouble recognizing them.

### 9.2. PITS NEAR BUNKER 2

1. Just as for 2.6.1, the distance of the pits west of BW32 is approximately 320 m. Again disregarding the slope of the land, the groundwater table would be 1.16 m below ground level here. The witnesses placed the depth of the pits at 3.0 m.



**Illustration 8:** Detail enlargement of the building plan of the main police station of the POW camp Auschwitz-Birkenau. The elevation of the construction site above sea level is clearly marked (arrow). This plan was obtained from the Moscow Central Archives, and without an archival reference number, which we are endeavoring to obtain.

2. In conclusion it must also be pointed out that work on stage III of the ameliorative drainage had not yet begun in 1942. This is proven by a document dated November 25, 1942, which stated:<sup>53</sup>

*"[...] that in all probability it will not yet be possible to begin thorough drainage of this terrain at full-scale in 1943. [...]"*

Hence, the measures could not have had their full effect. Proof for this is provided also by air photos from Sept. 13, 1944.<sup>37</sup>

There are a number of further documents that provide proof of the fact here at issue; we shall dispense with detailing them, since they do not add any new information.

## 10. Conclusion

Burning pits of the depth alleged by witnesses were not possible in Birkenau.

## 11. Opposing Expert Statements

For all our statements, we have tried to locate opposing views of experts in our field in order to address them appropriately. However, we neither found any opposing views from experts, nor any technically correct work by non-experts that would be worth considering. We therefore ask experts from the other side to address the issues discussed here.

J.-C. Pressac may pardon us for not accepting him either as a technician or as an engineer. The "technical explanations" in his books are devoid of any basis, as indicated not only by the examples shown above. However, we are still grateful for his books, since they caused our own involvement in these matters. Without his books with their document reproductions in abundance, there would not be a common basis for a discussion.

## 12. Researching the Reasons

Pressac's generally neglected first book, which can be found only in major libraries, is filled with justified criticism, as we mentioned before, and we can agree with a lot of what he has to say, as well as with those of his contentions that we can confirm. From the multitude of his critical remarks, only a few shall be quoted, in order to understand the problem we are dealing with here:

*"The witnesses state the contrary, and for them it is the truth."* (p. 16, 3<sup>rd</sup> col.)

*"Five hundred (in actual fact 800) meters further on (from Bunker 2) there was another cottage designated Bunker I. [...], able to contain altogether 200 naked persons. (manifest exaggeration by the witness, practically the rule among all the early accounts)."* (p. 161, 1<sup>st</sup> col.)

*"The interior of the cottage was[sic] divided into four parts by partition walls [...], one of which could contain 1 200 naked people, the second 700 the third 400 and fourth 200 to 250.*

*(Making a total of 2,500 to 2,550 people, which represents a density of 28 people per square meter over an area of 90 m<sup>2</sup>. This is physically impossible and S. Dragan's estimate of 2,500/2,550 is clearly wrong. I do not think that this witness was intentionally misleading, but*

*he was following the tendency to exaggerate which seems to have been the general rule at the time of the liberation and which is what gave rise to the figure of 4 million victims for K.L. Auschwitz, a figure now [1989] considered to be pure propaganda. It should be divided by four to get close to reality.)"* (p. 171, 3<sup>rd</sup> col.)

*"[...] was four black columns of smoke, belched forth 24 hours a day by the Krematorien. This picture, of course, cannot be taken entirely at face value, because two of the Krematorien were out of service and aerial photographs taken during this period show no trace of smoke. An argument has grown up over the discrepancy between the memory of survivors and the indisputable evidence of the aerial photos."* (p. 253, 1<sup>st</sup> col.)

*"This study already demonstrates the complete bankrupt of the traditional history (and hence also of the methods and criticisms of the revisionists), a history based for the most part on testimonies [not any longer! note added], assembled according to the mood of the moment, truncated to fit an arbitrary truth [...]"* (p. 264, 3<sup>rd</sup> col.)

Only those who have studied Pressac's books and perused it repeatedly after having gathered new information can see that Pressac had tried with all due restraint to correct false statements and to relegate the eyewitness testimony to its former status, and rightly so. From a perspective which is almost revisionist in nature, he recognized that an inversion of this principle had to lead to false conclusions. Perhaps he even foresaw the possible consequences if these details become known to a wider audience. But how bad must the situation really be if even warnings from friendly sources, such as J.-C. Pressac, go unheard?

Our circle of researches includes individuals who experienced World War II. Those who have been herded together under conditions similar or worse than those that prevailed in the German concentration camps, *i.e.* the POW camps of the Allies after the war, have some understanding for erring inmates and their overreactions. We also have made it a principle to conclude that very frequently there is some truth to most rumors. This might be apply to the so-called Bunkers. To report the truth behind these eyewitness reports will be a topic for future publications.

Finally, we may close this article with the remark that persons residing in Germany who published sentences like those we quoted from J.-C. Pressac above would be prosecuted and sentenced for "Stirring up the people" and "Incitement to hatred." His or her books would be confiscated and, as with so many others before, destroyed!<sup>54</sup> What is a democracy worth without freedom of speech?

## Explanation of Terms Used

### DRAINAGE SYSTEMS

Drainage systems lower the groundwater level of the drained area. This is done either by open ditches or closed pipelines, depending on the groundwater level.

### (A)MELIORATION

Amelioration is the improvement of groundwater conditions, mainly for farming purposes. The recommended average

level of groundwater for various types of agricultural use is:

- for lawn 50 cm to 80 cm,
- for pastures 60 cm to 70 cm,
- for crops 100 cm to 125 cm,
- for yards 120 cm.

#### WITNESS

In this paper we used the term “witness.” However, we do have to stress that we do not know whether the testimonies we quoted were given in front of a court of law or are simply statements of certain individuals. The Auschwitz Museum contains a great number of such statements, as is well known. The evaluation certainly depends to a certain degree on this.

Against all common practice, the pharmacist J.-C. Pressac, from whose book<sup>2</sup> we quoted these statements, does not give any sources for these statements so that we are unable to check them. All we do know is that these statements certainly did not originate from experts.

We therefore can only ask you to assess these statements for yourself and to find out whether or not they were given during a trial.

The authors, September 1997

#### PUBLISHERS NOTE

Half a year after the original German version of this article was released in print, in late 1998, the publisher was notified by the Public Prosecutor of Munich, District I, that this journal issue was confiscated and subject to destruction and that a criminal case for “stirring up the people” and “incitement to Hatred” had been opened against both the publisher and the two authors. Among the reasons cited by the prosecutor was this article.<sup>55</sup>

#### Notes

This is a slightly abbreviated translation of the original German version: “Grundwasser im Gelände des KGL Birkenau (Auschwitz)”, *Vierteljahrshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* (hitherto *VffG*) 2(1) (1998), pp. 2-12; online: [vho.org/VffG/1998/1/GaeRad1.html](http://vho.org/VffG/1998/1/GaeRad1.html)

<sup>1</sup> Frederick A. Leuchter, *An Engineering Report on the Alleged Execution Gas Chambers at Auschwitz, Birkenau and Majdanek, Poland*, Samisdat Publishers Ltd., Toronto 1988.

<sup>2</sup> The drainage plan of the Birkenau camp was first published by J.-C. Pressac, *Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gaschambers*, Beate-Klarsfeld-Foundation, New York 1989, p. 209.

<sup>3</sup> Fritjof Meyer, “Die Zahl der Opfer von Auschwitz. Neue Erkenntnisse durch neue Archivfunde” (Number of Auschwitz Victims: New Insights from Recent Archival Discoveries), *Osteuropa*, 52(5) (2002), pp. 631-641; cf. the two contributions in this issue by G. Rudolf and C. Mattogno dealing with Meyer’s article.

<sup>4</sup> See the blueprints for the initial camp layout of Oct. 10, 1941, reprinted in J.-C. Pressac, *Die Krematorien von Auschwitz. Die Technik des Massenmordes*, Piper, Munich 1994, p. 185.

<sup>5</sup> It will appear as part of a comprehensive revisionist history of Auschwitz in both German and English, published by Castle Hill Publishers and Theses and Dissertations Press, respectively, probably not before end of 2004.

<sup>6</sup> Jean-Claude Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 2), pp. 161-171.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 165, Pressac warns against regarding the settling basin of the sewage treatment plant begun in Section B III as “incineration ditches”, an error which, according to him, has already occurred in the subject literature. Compare his skepticism with regard to a Russian camp sketch of March 3, 1945, *ibid.*, p.179.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 162.

<sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 163.

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 164. We shall dispense with a discussion of the area requirements of these pits and the materials excavated from them, and of the fact that no traces of such are visible on the air photos; cf. J.C. Ball and A.

Neumaier, in: E. Gauss (ed.), *Dissecting the Holocaust*, Theses & Dissertations Press, Capshaw, AL, 2000, p. 271-284 and 467-495, resp.

<sup>11</sup> Jean-Claude Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 161, 164.

<sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 171-182.

<sup>13</sup> Sheet 531.44 TYCHY - BOJSZOWY, scale 1:25.000.

<sup>14</sup> Jean-Claude Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 171.

<sup>15</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 177.

<sup>16</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 180.

<sup>17</sup> Cf. D. Czech, *Kalendarium der Ereignisse im Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau 1939-1945*, Rowohlt, Reinbek 1989, pp. 305 and 346.

<sup>18</sup> Rossiskii Gosudarstvennii Vojennii Archiv, henceforth RGVA. This is the former Center for the Keeping of Historical Documentary Collections (Tsentr Chranenija Istoriko-Dokumentalnich Kollektii).

<sup>19</sup> RGVA 502-1-332.

<sup>20</sup> Jean-Claude Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 253.

<sup>21</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 420f.

<sup>22</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 380.

<sup>23</sup> Filip Müller, *Sonderbehandlung. Drei Jahre in den Krematorien und Gaskammern von Auschwitz*, Steinhausen GmbH, Munich 1979, p. 207.

<sup>24</sup> See J.C. Ball, *op. cit.* (note 10) for more.

<sup>25</sup> Jean-Claude Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 387.

<sup>26</sup> In this process, the ground water is literally frozen, usually using nitrogen, until the foundation is finished.

<sup>27</sup> J.-C. Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 393.

<sup>28</sup> Dr. Jan Sehn, *Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau*, Wydawnictwo Prawnicze, Warsaw 1957, p. 173.

<sup>29</sup> Klaus Wilhelm, “Wenn die Erinnerung eines Zeugen trägt,” *Die Welt*, Feb. 7, 1997, p. 9.

<sup>30</sup> Quoted acc. to Udo Walendy, *Auschwitz im IG-Farben-Prozeß*, Verlag für Volkstum und Zeitgeschichtsforschung, Vlotho 1981, p. 163.

<sup>31</sup> RGVA 502-1-319.

<sup>32</sup> RGVA 502-1-149-109/112. Further files we have not yet received seem to indicate intensive research in this area.

<sup>33</sup> Cf. also the reference in Czech, *op. cit.* (note 17), for March 7, 1941, p. 80, to the studies by one Prof. Dr. Zunker regarding the water conditions.

<sup>34</sup> J.-C. Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 4), Doc. 19.

<sup>35</sup> RGVA 502-1-214-60.

<sup>36</sup> J.-C. Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 269.

<sup>37</sup> National Archives Air Photo Library, 13.9.1944, Ref. No. RG 373 Can B 8413, exp. 3V1.

<sup>38</sup> Re. drainage technology, cf. any engineering handbook, e.g. *Hütte. Des Ingenieurs Taschenbuch*, Vol. III, W. Ernst & Sohn, Berlin 1951, pp. 1082ff.

<sup>39</sup> Building description dated Oct. 28, 1942, discovered in Historický ústav Armady Ceske republiky, Prague; unfortunately the materials archived there have not yet been given registration numbers when we received copies from it several years ago. Plans specified 114,000 m of so-called suction pipes 5 cm in diameter, as well as collectors (8,000 m of 6.5 cm dia. and 4,000 m of 8 cm dia.). Two ditches carried the drainage water from the camp to the Vistula river; the southern one via the “Königsgraben.” The material excavated from the ditches, some 110,000 m<sup>3</sup>, was laid down directly in the camp area so as to partly alleviate the problem. Re. method of implementation, cf. RGVA 502-1-233-22 and 502-1-26-194, 502-1-319.

<sup>40</sup> RGVA 502-1-233.

<sup>41</sup> RGVA 502-1-313.

<sup>42</sup> RGVA 502-1-336-46.

<sup>43</sup> RGVA 502-1-336/107.

<sup>44</sup> J.-C. Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 73.

<sup>45</sup> RGVA 501-2-54-11.

<sup>46</sup> RGVA 502-1-150.

<sup>47</sup> RGVA 502-1-186.

<sup>48</sup> Unfortunately the Central Archives in Moscow forgot to mark this plan with an archival reference number.

<sup>49</sup> J.-C. Pressac, *op. cit.* (Note 2), p. 195

<sup>50</sup> Czech, *op. cit.* (note 17), p. 80, with date March 7, 1941.

<sup>51</sup> RGVA 502-1-214-9/11.

<sup>52</sup> According to the witness statements, the ashes of at least some of the murdered people were sunk in this pond, a claim which has yet to be investigated.

<sup>53</sup> RGVA 502-1-19-141.

<sup>54</sup> About censorship in Germany, see online at [www.vho.org/censor/D.html#GB](http://www.vho.org/censor/D.html#GB)

<sup>55</sup> StA Munich I, Ref. 112 Js 11282/98.

# “Cremation Pits” and Ground Water Levels at Birkenau

By Carlo Mattogno

The article “Grundwasser im Gelände des KGL Kriegsgefangenenlager Birkenau” (“Groundwater Levels at Birkenau Prisoner of War Camp”) by Michael Gärtner and Werner Rademacher,<sup>1</sup> published in German for the first time in 1998 and reproduced in this edition, attempts to show that the existence of “cremation pits” in the courtyard of Crematorium V and the area around the so-called “Bunker 2,” as described by several eyewitnesses, was a technical impossibility due to the high groundwater levels at Birkenau.

Newly discovered documents now permit a more in-depth treatment of this important contention. Analysis of these documents is preceded here by a few comments of a more general nature.

Numerous documents from the Zentralbauleitung (Central Building Administration) of Auschwitz-Birkenau written between 1941 and 1944 refer to very high water tables at Birkenau, but we must first determine exactly what is meant, in concrete terms, by the references involved.

An “Explanatory Report on the Preliminary Design for the New Construction of the Waffen-SS Prisoner of War Camp, Auschwitz O/S,” dated October 30, 1941, states as follows, under the headline “Building Land”:<sup>2</sup>

*“The soil characteristics are poor. Underneath the humus soil are loam and chalky clay, with imbedded gravel and subterranean sand banks of lesser dimensions. The groundwater level fluctuates between 0.30 and 1.20 m. The terrain is marshy at the present time.”*

A “Construction Order for the Expansion of the Waffen-SS Prisoner of War Camp in Auschwitz O/S. Construction of 25 Barracks Buildings for Personal Effects,” dated March 4, 1944, states as follows, under the heading “Building Land”:<sup>3</sup>

*“The soil characteristics are poor. Underneath 25 cm-thick layer of humus, loam appears, with imbedded gravel and subterranean sand banks of lesser dimensions. The groundwater level fluctuates between 0.30 and 1.20 m. The terrain is marshy at the present time.”*

Taken literally, this appears to indicate that the groundwater level at Birkenau had not dropped even a single centimeter in almost two and a half years, despite the fact that “sewerage system and water treatment” work (“Bauwerk 18) began on October 21, 1941, and was 60% finished on December 13, 1943.<sup>4</sup> However, it was not the drainage system which needed to be finished, but rather the waste water treatment system. Drainage excavation ditches E, F, and H of Bauab-

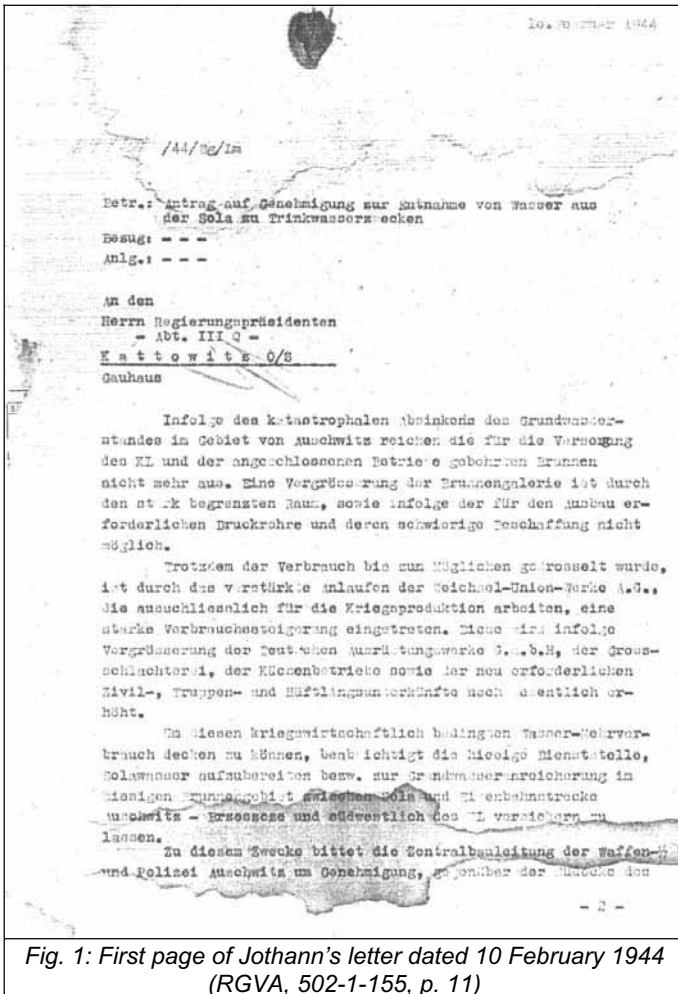


Fig. 1: First page of Jothann's letter dated 10 February 1944 (RGVA, 502-1-155, p. 11)

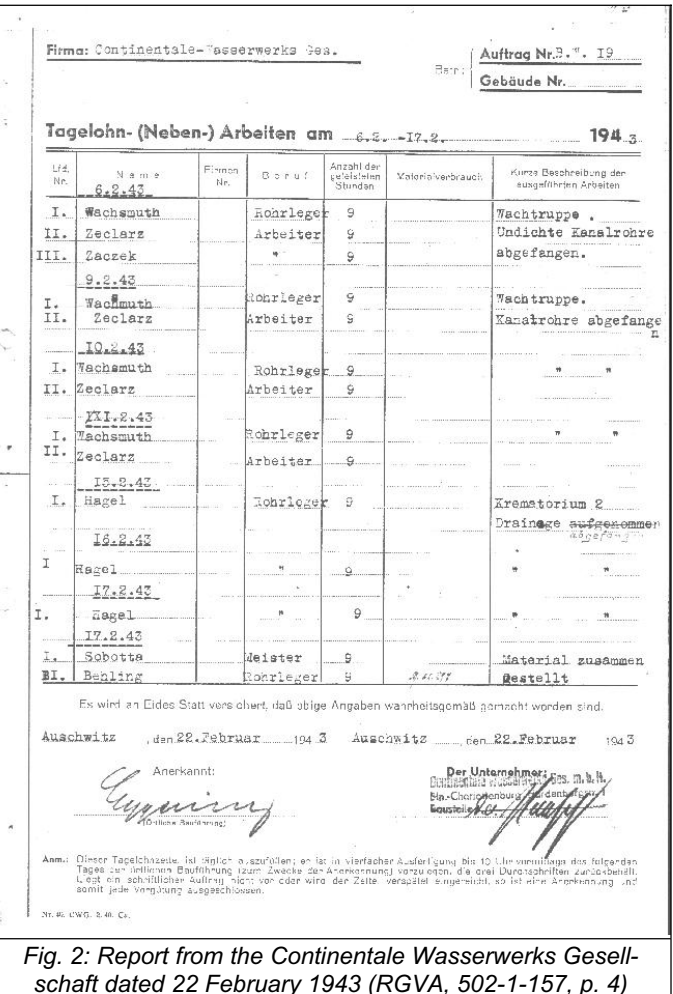


Fig. 2: Report from the Continental Wasserwerks Gesellschaft dated 22 February 1943 (RGVA, 502-1-157, p. 4)



Fig. 3: Excavation work for the foundation of the Central Sauna in May 1943.

schnitt (Building Sector) III were almost entirely finished by September 1943.<sup>5</sup> This appears to suggest that the latter work was undertaken *after* the much more urgently needed work had been carried out on Building Sectors I and II.

Furthermore, a “catastrophic” fall in the groundwater table in the area around Auschwitz had already been noted in February 1944. This is evident from a letter from the head of the Central Building Administration Jothann “to the Regierungspräsidenten – Division IIIQ – Kattowitz” dated February 10, 1944, which begins as follows:<sup>6</sup>

*“As a result of the catastrophic fall in the groundwater level in the area around Auschwitz, the wells sunk to supply the concentration camp and related operations are no longer sufficient.”* (See Fig.1)

Although the above refers to Auschwitz Main Camp (concentration camp)—rather than the Birkenau Camp, located some distance away, in the immediate vicinity of the Sola and Vistula rivers<sup>7</sup>—this letter suggests that groundwater levels at Birkenau itself, less than one month later, on March 4, 1944, might also have been perceptibly lower than in October 1941. The references to the groundwater table in the documents prepared between 1943 and 1944 might not be based on actual investigations. They may well be purely bureaucratic in nature, reflecting, in reality, the situation of October 1941. In practice, the data under the heading “Building Land” might simply have been transferred from one document to another.

A series of hitherto undiscovered documents now permits a far more precise picture of the situation in 1943 to be formed. These documents consist of eleven reports from the Continentale Wasserwerks Gesellschaft relating to drainage work carried out at Birkenau between February 6 and August 7, 1943. The first three of these documents are accounting reports on extra work performed between 6 - 17 February<sup>8</sup> (see Fig. 2), 18 February - 20 March,<sup>9</sup> and 22 - 31 March 1943.<sup>10</sup>

The remaining eight documents are lists of pumping hours worked at Birkenau, using hand pumps, between 21 and 27 March,<sup>11</sup> 28 March - 3 April,<sup>12</sup> 4 - 10 April,<sup>13</sup> 11 - 18 April,<sup>14</sup> 18 April - 8 May,<sup>15</sup> 28 June - 10 July,<sup>16</sup> 12 - 24 July<sup>17</sup> and 26 July - 7 August<sup>18</sup> 1943.

This work was performed for building structure (BW) 19, which was, of course, not related to the sewerage and water purification work at that time—these tasks were the responsibility of BW 18—but rather to the camp water supply installation. Excluding the possibility of error—the occurrence of which appears rather improbable—this anomaly might be explained by administrative habit. A total of 1,931.5 pump hours were worked; for the most part, this work was performed in Construction Sector (BA) II, during which, in particular, 251 pump hours were listed for drainage of the excavation work for Crematorium II and 269 pump hours

for the drainage of the excavation work of Crematorium III. These two crematoria possessed a semi-subterranean cellar, the floor of which was approximately 2 meters below ground. Underneath the floor a 50 cm cellar foundation of concrete (Sohle) was laid, to act as a balance against the pressure exerted by underground water.<sup>19</sup>

It follows that groundwater levels may have fallen during this period of time, but certainly not below 2 to 2.5 meters.

How are we to explain the fact that a photograph of the excavation work on the Central Sauna taken in May 1943<sup>20</sup> shows



Fig. 4: Allied air photo of Birkenau camp north of Crematorium V. The mass graves are circled.



Fig. 5: Drainage ditch running north of Crematorium V<sup>25</sup>



Fig. 6: Draining ditch in another sector of Birkenau Camp. The exact location can only be identified with difficulty.<sup>26</sup>

a pit more than 4.3 meters deep, completely dry on the bottom<sup>21</sup> (see Fig. 3<sup>22</sup>)? The answer to this question is provided by the abovementioned reports: the excavation work which preceded the construction of the Central Sauna was certainly undertaken with the help of drainage pumps, and, it may be assumed, motor-driven pumps, since the reports contain no reference to construction works using hand-operated pumps at the Central Sauna.

Other documents confirm that the groundwater level during this time period was considerably higher than the above mentioned 4.3 meters. A report dated May 9, 1943, relating to the measures taken by Kammler, then head of the Central Building Administration, during his Auschwitz visit of May 7 of that year, states as follows<sup>23</sup>:

*“The [SS garrison doctor] objected to the pit system stating that pollution of the groundwater was to be expected due to the high water level [...]”*

In a later report on the topic of “Latrines in Construction Sector III” dated July 19, 1943, Bischoff reported:<sup>24</sup>

*“It must also be assumed with 99% certainty that the water is not filtered through the poor subsoil, and since Construction Sector III is located between the Sola and the Vistula, it is fairly certain that the flow of groundwater from this Construction Sector (in totally marshy terrain) also runs through the concentration camp, endangering the camp water supply through contamination of the groundwater. The installation of field latrines must, therefore, absolutely be rejected on hygienic grounds, in addition to which the terrain is already completely marshy, as already stated.”*

It is not improbable that the rise in the water table in Construction Sector II, which made pumping necessary in 1943, was caused by the flow of groundwater from Construction Sector III.

At the end of 1942, when the so-called “Bunker 2,” with its alleged homicidal gas chambers, is according to common sources supposed to have entered into operation, work on Building 18, *i.e.*, the drainage system, was only 40% finished. Accordingly, the high groundwater levels were even higher at that time. Outside the camp terrain, the situation reflected the situation described in the report dated October 30, 1941, *i.e.*, the groundwater level still fluctuated between 0.30 and 1.20 m. It is therefore clear that the alleged “cremation

pits” at “Bunker 1” could not have been more than one meter deep.

The factual background to these mistaken eyewitness reports consists of mass graves excavated during the first half of 1942, when the small crematorium in the Main Camp was no longer able to cremate the bodies of the epidemic victims. The high groundwater level also provides a tentative explanation for the extraordinary length and width of these mass graves, to compensate for their lack of depth. Two of the air photos taken in 1944, in fact, show traces of four pits outside Birkenau Camp (approximately 160 meters north of Crematorium V, see Fig. 4). These pits are approximately 10 meters wide; two of them are approximately 100 meters long, while the other two are approximately 130 meters long<sup>27</sup>.

By the early summer of 1944, the groundwater level, which had fallen at the beginning of the year, had risen again. This is evident in a telegram from Jothanns to Kammler dated June 2, 1944. Jothann stated that he had refused approval, on hygienic grounds, for the use of 14 barracks located in Construction Sector III of Birkenau Camp, adding:<sup>28</sup>

*“The barracks are only partly covered, the terrain is marshy, and not leveled in any way. There is a danger of pollution of the groundwater and the creation of other hotbeds of epidemics.”*

For this reason, any two pits, two to three meters deep, dug in the north courtyard of Crematoriums V, would certainly have struck water at the bottom. The groundwater level was even higher in the area near the so-called “Bunker 2,” located outside the grounds of the camp, rendering the excavation of pits of this depth absolutely impossible.

In March of 1945, the groundwater level was relatively low once again, as may be seen from Figures 5 and 6; by that time, however, six or more months had passed since the time period in question here: these photographs therefore depict a groundwater level different from that which existed during the summer of 1944.

#### Abbreviations

APMO: Archiwum Panstwowego Muzeum Oświęcim-Breżinka (Archives of the Auschwitz State Museum).

GARF: Gosudarstvennii Arkhiv Rossiskoi Federatsii (State Archives of the Russian Federation, Moscow).

NA: National Archives, Washington

RGVA: Rossiskii Gosudarstvennii Vojennii Arkhiv (Russian State Military Archives, formerly the TCIDK, Tsentr Khranenija Istoriko-Dokumentalnoi Kollektzii, Center for the Archiving of Historical-Documentary Collections), Moscow.

### Notes

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(4) (2002), pp. 421-428; translated by Carlo W. Porter.

- <sup>1</sup> *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung*, 2(1) (1998) pp. 2-12.
- <sup>2</sup> *Erläuterungsbericht zum Vorentwurf für den Neubau des Kriegsgefangenenlagers der Waffen-SS, Auschwitz O/S*. RGVA, 502-1-233, p. 14.
- <sup>3</sup> *Bauantrag zum Ausbau des Kriegsgefangenenlagers der Waffen-SS in Auschwitz O/S. Errichtung von 25 Stck. Effektenbaracken*. RGVA, 502-1-230, p. 95a.
- <sup>4</sup> RGVA, 502-1-320, p. 67.
- <sup>5</sup> RGVA, 502-1-27, p. 7.
- <sup>6</sup> RGVA, 502-1-155, p. 11.
- <sup>7</sup> Because of the swampy nature of the area around Birkenau, it would have been impossible to drill for drinking water.
- <sup>8</sup> Continentale Wasserwerks Ges., *Tagelohn- (Neben-) Arbeiten am 6.2. – 17.2. 1943*, dated February 22, 1943. RGVA, 502-1-157, p. 4.
- <sup>9</sup> *Tagelohn- (Neben-) Arbeiten am 18.2. – 20.3. 1943*, dated March 22, 1943. RGVA, 502-1-157, p. 5.
- <sup>10</sup> *Tagelohn- (Neben-) Arbeiten am 22.3. – 31.3. 1943*, dated April 5, 1943. RGVA, 502-1-157, p. 6.

- <sup>11</sup> *Aufstellung über die in der Woche vom 21.3. – 27.3. 43 im Kgl geleisteten Pumpenstunden mittels Handpumpen*, dated April 1, 1943. RGVA, 502-1-157, p. 54.
- <sup>12</sup> List from April 5, 1943. RGVA, 502-1-157, p. 53.
- <sup>13</sup> List from April 15, 1943. RGVA, 502-1-157, p. 52.
- <sup>14</sup> List from April 17, 1943. RGVA, 502-1-157, p. 51.
- <sup>15</sup> List from May 10, 1943. RGVA, 502-1-157, p. 50.
- <sup>16</sup> List from July 12, 1943. RGVA, 502-1-157, p. 44.
- <sup>17</sup> List from July 26, 1943. RGVA, 502-1-157, p. 43.
- <sup>18</sup> List from August 9, 1943. RGVA, 502-1-157, p. 42.
- <sup>19</sup> Letter by the head of Zentralbauleitung (SS-Hauptsturmführer Bischoff) to Huta firm of October 14, 1942. RGVA, 502-1-313, p. 112.
- <sup>20</sup> Construction of the Zentralsauna started April 30, 1943. RGVA, 502-1-320, p. 7.
- <sup>21</sup> “Nach den endgültigen Angaben der Heizungsfirma muß die Heizkellersohle von -3,70 auf -4,30 m vertieft werden.” (Acc. to the final data given by the heating firm, the floor of the heating basement must be lowered down from -3.70 to -4.30 m) Letter by Bischoff of March 24, 1943. RGVA, 502-2-336, p. 19. This remark refers to the two hot air disinfection ovens installed in the basement of the Zentralsauna by the Topf firm.
- <sup>22</sup> APMO, Negative No. 20995/465.
- <sup>23</sup> RGVA, 502-1-233, p. 36.
- <sup>24</sup> RGVA, 502-1-83, p. 111-112.
- <sup>25</sup> APMO, Microfilm N. 909.
- <sup>26</sup> GARF, 7021-128-244, p. 28.
- <sup>27</sup> NA, Mission: 60 PRS/462 60 SQ. Can: D 1508. Exposures 3055 and 3056.
- <sup>28</sup> RGVA, 502-1-83, p. 2.

Advertisement

# Break His Bones

The Private Life of a  
Holocaust Revisionist



Bradley R. Smith

**W**hat happens when a man with a conscience takes the hype and taboo that surround the Holocaust seriously—and then goes public with his doubts and questions?

**Bradley Smith's *Break His Bones* is an examination of the inner and outer consequences for the author of his growing doubt about many of the Holocaust stories. As *Break His Bones* makes plain, the broken friendships, financial straits, and threat of personal harm that crop up throughout the book are no match for Smith's intellectual rigor and sense of obligation to inform others.**

**Revisionist readers, and supporters of other taboo causes, will prize *Break His Bones* for telling what it's like, in the face of a thousand difficulties, to work publicly as a revisionist activist. Smith's adventures, and misadventures, on one tour in Pennsylvania and Massachusetts are the stuff of a matchless (and cautionary) tale available nowhere else. The author's impressions of the human qualities of an array of revisionists from David McCalden and Tom Marcellus to Mark Weber and Ted O'Keefe make *Break His Bones* rare reading.**

**Break His Bones: The Private Life of a Holocaust Revisionist.**  
320 pages, 112,000 words. Soft cover. \$19.- (U.S.)

**BUY ONLINE: [www.breakhisbones.com](http://www.breakhisbones.com)**

**Or CALL: 1-800-247-6553**





## Auschwitz: The Dwindling Death Toll

It was not until 1989, that is 44 years after the liberation of the POW and concentration camp complex known as Auschwitz, that an international dispute started about the actual number of victims who had died in this camp complex. For 44 years, the Polish authorities and with them most of the world's mass media had been claiming that some four million inmates had perished there, but in 1989 they suddenly changed their minds and reduced this figure drastically. As a consequence, the memorial plates on display in the camp Auschwitz-Birkenau, which had propagated the four million figure in many languages, were removed in 1990. Following this dispute, an investigative commission was formed to come up with a more acceptable number of victims.<sup>1</sup> When this commission published its results in summer of 1990, it was widely distributed by the international media.<sup>2</sup> The most astounding admission came perhaps from a prominent Polish journalist, who stated that the old, exaggerated figure was an "anti-fascist lie."<sup>3</sup> New memorial plates were installed in Auschwitz in 1995, claiming an alleged "final" victim count of 1.5 million.

However, this "final" verdict did not end the controversy about the actual death toll at Auschwitz. In 1993 and 1994, the French pharmacist Jean-Claude Pressac, at the time promoted by the international media as *the* expert on technical questions surrounding Auschwitz, reduced this figure twice, first down to 800,000, then down to 700,000.<sup>4</sup> The next reduction, down to some 550,000, by Fritjof Meyer, a leading journalist of Germany's biggest news magazine, the left-wing *Der Spiegel*, followed in May 2002. Meyer's article appeared in the German geopolitical magazine *Osteuropa*, which is published by the German Society for Eastern Europe under the directorship of Prof. Rita Süßmuth, who was once the president of the German parliament.

Since this periodical has a very small circulation, the article went largely unnoticed. Only a few organs of the German mainstream media took notice of it, so for example Sven Felix Kellerhoff in the daily newspaper *Die Welt*,

who wrote on August 28, 2002: “[...] the Holocaust deniers and Auschwitz relativizers have a new chief witness.” He criticized the “flimsy evidence” on which Meyer based his calculations and charged that Meyer had selectively ignored evidence that did *not* fit his argument. Ironically Kellerhoff laid the ultimate blame not on Meyer, but on Meyer’s adversaries, the Holocaust revisionists: “It is characteristic of Holocaust deniers that they choose their evidence selectively, considering only those arguments which support their viewpoint.” Such turnabout criticism of revisionists has a funny ring to it. Kellerhoff then describes Meyer as “an honorable man” whose article “in and of itself was well intended,” but who now receives “approval from the wrong side”, *i.e.*, from “diehards and neo-Nazis.” Other than that, Meyer’s article was discussed only in small German right-wing publications. The following articles will address the problem of the Auschwitz death toll. As an introduction, the first paper by Prof. Faurisson gives an overview of all major figures that were publicly promoted since the end of World War II. The next two papers critically review Meyer’s article, and they refute Kellerhoff’s accusation: It is not the revisionists who practice selective consideration of evidence and accept only what fits into their world view.

## How Many Deaths at Auschwitz?

*By Dr. Robert Faurisson*

### Editor’s Remark

When it comes to arguing about the correct number of victims of the concentration camp Auschwitz, many people often rely on usually unreliable newspaper articles written by journalists who have scarcely any competence in the matter. For this reason, Prof. Dr. Faurisson compiled a list of Auschwitz casualty estimates on December 12, 1995, which does not depend on any newspaper articles, but on publications and public statements of individuals who are generally considered to have some kind of authority in this field, be it as historians or as witnesses.<sup>5</sup> This list has been updated by adding the most recent figure, which was published in May 2002. However, this list, which relies on “expert” statements, does nothing to help reduce the confusion—which does not put these experts’ competence in a good light.

The Editor

### Introductory Remarks

Among the historians who maintain the thesis according to which Auschwitz would have been an extermination camp, the main studies bearing on the number of the deaths in that camp are those of the Frenchman Georges Wellers, published in 1983<sup>6</sup> and 1990,<sup>7</sup> and those of the Pole Franciszek Piper, published in 1991,<sup>8</sup> 1992,<sup>9</sup> and 1994,<sup>10</sup> respectively.

Of these five studies, the most interesting are, for G. Wellers, that of 1983<sup>6</sup> and, for F. Piper, that of 1992.<sup>9</sup> The two authors proceed to the reminder—painful for them—of the “errors” committed in the past as to the number of the Auschwitz deaths. Regarding this, I recommend reading G. Wellers, *op. cit.* (note 6), 1983, pp. 138-139 and F. Piper, *op. cit.* (note 9), 1992, pp. 5-16. Nothing shows better than those pages to what extent, on nevertheless so grave a topic as this, the number of the deaths, the worst fancies were indulged in.

NUMBER OF VICTIMS	SOURCE
9,000,000	persons according to the documentary film <i>Nuit et Brouillard</i> ( <i>Night and Fog</i> , title used in the English-speaking world) (1955), whose historical advisers were the historian Henri Michel and the woman historian Olga Wormser-Migot <sup>11</sup>
8,000,000	persons according to the French War Crime Research Office and the French War Crime Information Service) (1945) <sup>12</sup>
7,000,000	persons according to Raphaël Feigelson (1945) <sup>13</sup>
6,000,000	Jews according to Tibère Kremer, writer of a foreword for Miklos Nyiszli (1951) <sup>14</sup>
5,000,000 to 5,500,000	persons according to Bernard Czardybon (1945), according to confessions attributed to some SS members and according to the newspaper <i>Le Monde</i> (1978), which added: “of whom 90% of Jews.” <sup>15</sup>
4,500,000	persons according to Henryk Mandelbaum (1945) <sup>16</sup>
4,000,000	persons according to a Soviet document of which the Nuremberg tribunal took “judicial notice.” This figure was inscribed nineteen times, with a commentary in as many different languages, on the Auschwitz-Birkenau monument. It was repeated by a sizable number of persons, including the Polish historian Franciszek Piper. It was to be declared false in 1990 and replaced, on the monument, in 1995, by the figure of 1,500,000 with the concurrence of the same F. Piper for whom this figure is a maximum, while the minimum figure is of 1,100,000. According to Miriam Novitch (1967), of the 4,000,000 dead, 2,700,000 were Jewish. According to Rabbi Moshe Weiss (1991), more than 4,000,000 persons died at Auschwitz, of whom 3,000,000 were Jews. <sup>17</sup>

NUMBER OF VICTIMS	SOURCE
3,500,000	persons according to the <i>Dictionnaire de la langue française</i> , published by Hachette (1991). According to Claude Lanzmann (1980), there were 3,500,000 gassed of whom 95% of Jews as well as many other deaths. <sup>18</sup>
3,000,000	persons until December 1st, 1943, according to a confession extorted from Rudolf Höß, ex-commander of Auschwitz <sup>19</sup>
3,000,000	Jews gassed according to David Susskind (1986) and according to <i>Heritage</i> , the most important Californian Jewish weekly (1993) <sup>20</sup>
2,500,000	persons according to Rudolf Vrba at the Eichmann trial (1961) <sup>21</sup>
2,000,000 (?) to 4,000,000 (?)	according to the historian Yehuda Bauer (1982) <sup>22</sup>
2,000,000 to 3,000,000	Jews killed as well as thousands of non-Jews according to a confession attributed to an SS non-com, Pery Broad <sup>23</sup>
2,000,000 to 2,500,000	persons killed according to a confession attributed to an SS physician, Dr. Friedrich Entress (1945) <sup>24</sup>
2,000,000	persons according to the historian Léon Poliakov (1951); according to the historian Georges Wellers (1973) and according to the woman historian Lucy Davidowicz (1975) <sup>25</sup>
1,600,000	persons according to the historian Yehuda Bauer (1989), of whom 1,352,980 Jews <sup>26</sup> (the latter figure is from Georges Wellers, 1983)
1,500,000	persons this figure, chosen by Lech Walesa, replaced, in 1995, on the Birkenau monument, that of 4,000,000 which had been withdrawn in 1990 <sup>27</sup>
1,471,595	persons of whom 1,352,980 Jews, according to the historian Georges Wellers (1983) <sup>28</sup>
1,250,000	persons or so, of whom 1,000,000 Jews killed and more than 250,000 non-Jews dead, according to the historian Raul Hilberg <sup>29</sup>
1,100,000 to 1,500,000	persons according to the historians Yisrael Gutman, Michael Berenbaum, and Franciszek Piper (1994). <sup>30</sup>
1,000,000	persons according to Jean-Claude Pressac (1989) and according to the <i>Dictionnaire des noms propres</i> , published by Hachette (1992) <sup>31</sup>
800,000 to 900,000	persons according to the historian Gerald Reitlinger (1953) <sup>32</sup>
775,000 to 800,000	persons according to Jean-Claude Pressac (1993), of whom 630,000 were gassed Jews <sup>33</sup>
630,000 to 710,000	persons according to Jean-Claude Pressac (1994), of whom from 470,000 to 550,000 were gassed Jews <sup>34</sup>
510,000	persons according to Fritjof Meyer (2002), of whom 356,000 were gassed Jews <sup>35</sup>

To my knowledge, the latter appraisal (510,000) is the lowest that those who believe in the physical extermination of the Jews have ever provided. It is sometimes said that in 1946/1947, the Polish judicial authorities admitted the figure of 300,000 deaths.<sup>36</sup> That is an error. Those authorities estimated the total of the dead at 300,000 persons registered on their arrival, but, to that figure, they added the figure of 3,000,000 to 4,000,000 unregistered persons.<sup>37</sup> For more than forty years, the Soviet, Polish, and Federal Republic of Germany authorities showed themselves very discreet on the existence of death registers (*Sterbebücher*) which had been kept during the war by the Auschwitz camp authorities. Under the pressure of the revisionists, at the two Zündel trials (Toronto, 1985 and 1988) in particular, those authorities at long last made revelations on those registers. They admit to having retrieved registers, but for the period from July 27, 1941 to December 31, 1943. Since the camp was opened May 20, 1940 and as the Germans evacuated it January 18, 1945, that period represents a little more than half the duration of the camp's existence under their authority. The registers retrieved are, it appears, in the number of 46 and would include 69,000 names (and not 74,000, as has been stated by certain journalists).<sup>38</sup> The supporters of the official version of the "Holocaust" have experienced some discomfort facing the necessity, imposed

by the revisionists, to revise downwards, in such proportions, the number of the Auschwitz deaths. How can it be explained that at the Nuremberg trial (1945-1946), such a deception had swiftly been taken "judicial notice" of, thanks to Section 21 of that Tribunal's Charter? How can it be explained that so many of this world's great, including Pope John Paul II, have been invited to come and bow in front of such quackery, in official ceremonies? How can it be explained that in 1990, France equipped itself with an anti-revisionist law section forbidding any disputing of the "crimes against humanity" as described and evaluated by the Nuremberg tribunal? And then, how can the figure of 5,000,000 to 6,000,000 Jews dead during the whole war be protected from any revision, if it was necessary to revise so drastically the figure of the deaths of Auschwitz?

Today, some Jews explain that the Poles, and they alone, could have invented the Auschwitz 4,000,000 lie. Actuated by anti-Semitism and nationalistic pride simultaneously, the Poles would have added to nearly 1,500,000 Jewish deaths about 2,500,000 Polish or other deaths!<sup>40</sup>

This explanation is but a contrivance. The truth is that, by the war's end, not only Jewish communists, but also the judicial authorities of Poland, were repeating that the majority of the Auschwitz deaths were Jewish. At Cracow, in 1946-1947, about the case of Rudolf Höß, the investigating magistrate as

well as the prosecution had concluded that, besides a few hundred thousand “recorded” deaths, there had been at Auschwitz either 4,000,000 or at least 2,500,000 deaths, “most of them Jewish”.<sup>37</sup>

Besides, it should be noticed from the above list of various estimates that Jews themselves often gave numbers about their co-religionists’ deaths at Auschwitz which are higher than 1,500,000. They have therefore no right to blame their own exaggerations on non-Jews.

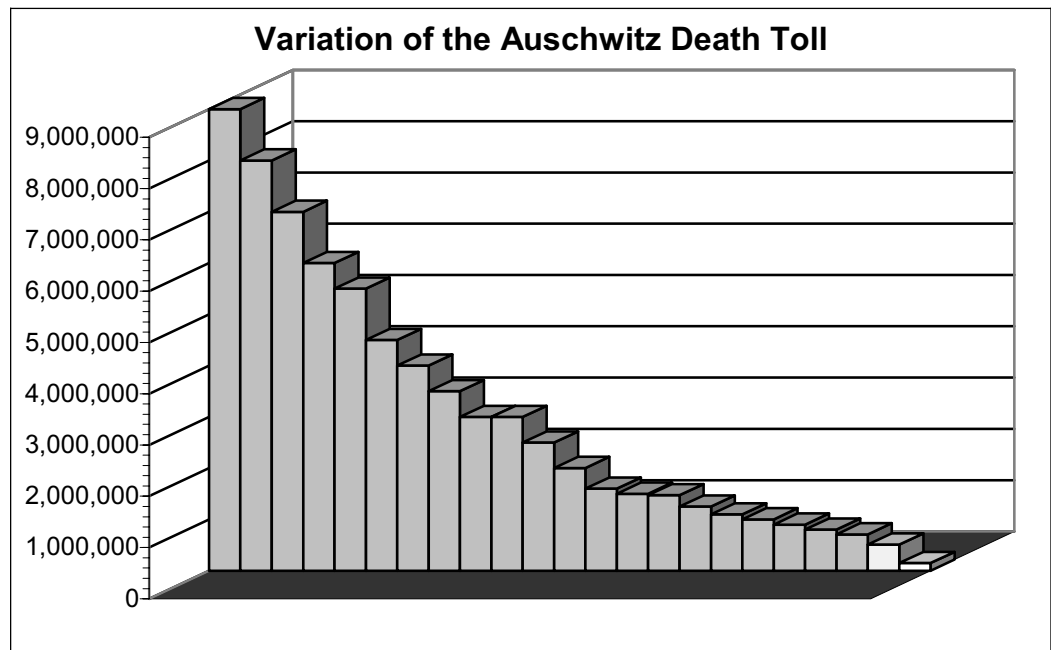
During the winter of 1963-1964, a specific monument was built in memory of the “millions of Jews, martyrs and fighters” exterminated in that camp; the inscription was in Polish, in Yiddish and in Hebrew.<sup>41</sup> Let us add finally that, for the historians of the “Holo-

caust,” most of the Auschwitz Jews would have been *killed* by means of an insecticide: Zyklon B.

For Arthur R. Butz and for other revisionists, the total number of the Auschwitz deaths must have risen to some 150,000, of whom about 100,000 Jews.<sup>42</sup> Most of the Jews were not *killed* but *died*, above all because of the typhus epidemics. The revisionists point out that, if the Germans had had at their disposal greater quantities of the Zyklon B insecticide, precisely in order to fight those epidemics, fewer people would have died in Auschwitz not only among the Jews, the Poles, the Russians, and other detainees, but also among the German physicians, guards, and other officials.

### Summary and Conclusion

According to the view of the official historians (*i.e.*, those who are protected by laws of the French Republic and other European nations and by the power of the media), the Auschwitz death toll varies between 9,000,000 (the number given in *Nuit et Brouillard* (*Night and Fog*), a movie which has been compulsory teaching material for higher education in France since 1955) and 510,000 (this is the number estimated by a “leading editor” of Germany’s largest news magazine, *Der Spiegel*, in the periodical *Osteuropa* in May 2002). According to these historians, those individuals have allegedly fallen victim to a policy of physical extermination. Revisionist authors, however, maintain that the number of victims is around 150,000, mainly caused by various epidemics, in particular typhus. Under the influence of revisionist authors, the court historians have started to make corrections



**Various numbers of victims of the Auschwitz concentration camp as claimed by official authorities and historians:**

*Second column from the right: the lowest estimate so far, by Fritjof Meyer. Right-most column: maximum figure according to revisionist opinion (ca. 150,000). You have the free choice! At most one of these figures can be correct, but all the rest may potentially incite to hatred, and uttering them can lead to criminal prosecution in many European countries. But most important, it is considered highly offensive, if not outright illegal in those countries to make such compilations in the first place!*<sup>39</sup>

of such a drastic nature that it is incomprehensible how France or any other European nation can dictate this number by law. The two official inscriptions on the memorial at Auschwitz-Birkenau, which followed each other—the first until 1990, the second since 1995—are of great instructive value, though certainly without intention: They remind us that there should not be an officially decreed truth, neither in history nor elsewhere.

### Nota Bene

This study constitutes but a sketch of the answers given or imposed to the question: “How many deaths at Auschwitz?” It would be easy to provide thousands of other references. The work’s difficulty consists, however, in that, according to the case, the evaluations can bear on very ill-assorted categories: in one case, the number of the “killed,” of the “gassed,” of the “Jews” is evaluated, while, in another case, “deaths,” “victims” are talked about and the “Jews” are not distinguished from the “non-Jews”. Sometimes, too, the evaluations are only about a limited period. As far as I am concerned, I have avoided any numerical extrapolation from a figure given for a short period of the Auschwitz camp’s life.

### Notes

- © 18.12.1995; first published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 3(3) (1999), pp. 268-272; updated in late 2002.
- <sup>1</sup> Cf. for this “Commission try to defuse Auschwitz controversy,” *The Canadian Jewish News*, Oct. 3, 1990, p. 5.
  - <sup>2</sup> Daily press of July 18, 1990, *e.g.*: Krzysztof Leski, Ohad Gozani, “Poland reduces Auschwitz death toll estimate to 1 million,” *London Daily*

- Telegraph*, July 18, 1990; UPI, "Poland lowers Auschwitz toll," *Toronto Sun*, July 18, 1990. In Germany, it was the leftwing radical daily newspaper *die tageszeitung* which published the lowest new victim figure on July 18, 1990: 960,000.
- <sup>3</sup> "Ich empfinde Verlegenheit." Der polnische Publizist Ernest Skalski über die neue Auschwitz-Diskussion in Warschau" ("I feel embarrassed": Polish author Ernest Skalski on the new Auschwitz discussion in Warsaw), *Der Spiegel* no. 30 (1990), p. 111.
- <sup>4</sup> See the article below, in particular notes 33 and 34.
- <sup>5</sup> Among the historians who maintain the thesis according to which Auschwitz would have been an extermination camp, the main studies bearing on the number of the deaths in that camp are those of the Frenchman Georges Wellers published in 1983 and 1990 and those of the Pole Franciszek Piper published in 1991, 1992, and 1994, respectively: Georges Wellers, "Essai de détermination du nombre des morts au camp d'Auschwitz" (Attempt at determining the number of the deaths at the Auschwitz camp), *Le Monde juif*, October-December 1983, pp. 17-159; "A propos du nombre de morts au camp d'Auschwitz" (About the number of deaths at the Auschwitz camp), *Le Monde juif*, October-December 1990, pp. 187-195; Franciszek Piper, "Estimating the Number of Deportees to and Victims of the Auschwitz-Birkenau Camp," *Yad Vashem Studies*, XXI (1991), pp. 40-103. The latter study, corrected and enlarged, was published as a brochure in the English language printed in Poland: *Auschwitz/How Many Perished/Jews, Poles, Gypsies...*, printed in Poland by Poligrafia ITS, 30-306, Krakow, 1992, 68 p. One can also consult: "The Number of Victims," in Yisrael Gutman, Michael Berenbaum (ed.), *Anatomy of the Auschwitz Death Camp*, published in association with the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum, Bloomington and Indianapolis, Indiana University Press, 1994, pp. 61-80. Of these five studies, the most interesting are, for G. Wellers, that of 1983 and, for F. Piper, that of 1992. The two authors proceed to the reminder—painful for them—of the "errors" committed in the past as to the number of the Auschwitz deaths. Regarding this, I recommend reading G. Wellers, *op. cit.*, 1983, pp. 138-139 and F. Piper, *op. cit.*, 1992, pp. 5-16. Nothing shows better than those pages to what extent, on nevertheless so grave a topic as this, the number of the deaths, the worst fancies were indulged in.
- <sup>6</sup> Georges Wellers, "Essai de détermination du nombre des morts au camps d'Auschwitz" (Attempt at determining the number of the deaths at the Auschwitz camp), *Le Monde juif*, October-December 1983, pp. 17-159.
- <sup>7</sup> Georges Wellers, "A propos du nombre de morts au camp d'Auschwitz" (About the number of deaths at the Auschwitz camp), *Le Monde juif*, October-December 1990, pp. 187-195.
- <sup>8</sup> Franciszek Piper, "Estimating the Number of Deportees to and Victims of the Auschwitz-Birkenau Camp," *Yad Vashem Studies*, XXI (1991), pp. 40-103.
- <sup>9</sup> The latter study, corrected and enlarged, was published as a brochure in the English language printed in Poland: Franciszek Piper, *Auschwitz/How Many Perished/Jews, Poles, Gypsies...*, printed in Poland by Poligrafia ITS, 30-306, Krakow, 1992, 68 p.
- <sup>10</sup> Franciszek Piper, "The Number of Victims," in Yisrael Gutman, Michael Berenbaum (ed.), *Anatomy of the Auschwitz Death Camp*, published in association with the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum, Bloomington and Indianapolis, Indiana University Press, 1994, pp. 61-80.
- <sup>11</sup> *Nuit et Brouillard*, a 32 minute film in black and white untiringly spread in all of France's colleges and other secondary schools as well as on French television over the last forty years. Director: Alain Resnais. Historical advisors: Henri Michel (Chairman of the World War II History Committee) and Olga Wormser-Migot. Text: Jean Cayrol. 1956 Jean Vigo Award. In that film, it is said that "nothing distinguished the gas [singular] chamber from an ordinary block." The concrete ceiling of the "gas chamber" is shown in it "ploughed up by the fingernails" and it is added about this: "even the concrete was getting torn up." It is asserted there that, with the bodies, "manufacturing soap is intended." "As to the skin" of the bodies, the image shows us that the Germans were tanning it. Those stories of scratched concrete, of human soap and of skin tanned by the Germans are on the order of the myth. With the camera lingering on the Birkenau landscape, the commentator says: "Nine million dead are haunting this landscape." This sentence is uttered towards the end of the film.
- <sup>12</sup> Jacques Billiet, Director of the War Crime Information Service, *Documents pour servir à l'histoire de la guerre / Camps de concentration* (Documents to be used for the war's history/Concentration camps), Office français d'édition, 1945, p. 7 (J. Billiet himself) as well as p. 196 (Series of reports of the War Crime Search Office; these same reports evaluate at 26,000,000 the number of prisoners of war as well as of the political detainees having died in all the camps of Germany and of the occupied territories, p. 197). This work was written by Eugene Aronceanu.
- <sup>13</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 196.
- <sup>14</sup> "6,000,000 innocents went through the chimneys of the ovens of Auschwitz because one of their close or remote forerunners was of the Israelite religion," writes Tibère Kremer in his preface to a text attributed to Dr. Miklos Nyiszli, "SS Obersturmführer Docteur Mengele / Journal d'un médecin déporté au crématorium d'Auschwitz" (SS Obersturmführer Docteur Mengele / Diary of a physician deported to the crematorium of Auschwitz), *Les Temps modernes*, March 1951, p. 1655.
- <sup>15</sup> Bernard Czardybon at the Cracow R. Höß trial, according to F. Piper, *op. cit.*, (note 9), pp. 7f. For the confessions attributed to some SS, *ibid.*, p. 8. "Auschwitz, where perished more than five million men, women and children, of whom 90% of Jews" in "Manifestation du souvenir à Paris devant le mémorial du martyr juif inconnu" (Remembrance demonstration at Paris in front of the unknown Jewish martyr's memorial), *Le Monde*, April 20, 1978.
- <sup>16</sup> Henryk Mandelbaum at the Cracow R. Höß trial, according to F. Piper, *op. cit.*, (note 9), p. 7.
- <sup>17</sup> From 1945 to 1990, it is this figure of 4,000,000 that was enforced as if by law. It emanated from a Soviet document dated May 6, 1945. The document was taken "judicial notice" of by the Nuremberg Tribunal, thanks to Section 21 of that Tribunal's Charter. It appears at pages 241-261 of volume 39 of the official proceedings and documents of the *Procès des grands criminels de guerre devant le tribunal militaire international, Nuremberg 14 novembre 1945-1er octobre 1946*, published, for the French version, at Nuremberg, Germany, from 1947 to 1949; that is to say *TMI XXXIX*, pp. 241-261; official English edition: official proceedings and documents of the *Trial of the Major War Criminals before The International Military Tribunal, Nuremberg, 14 November 1945 - 1 October 1946: IMT XXXIX*, pp. 241-261. The Russian original was translated into German and it was that translation in German which was reproduced in the French edition. The summation, in French, placed at the top of the document, states among other things: "More than 4,000,000 million human beings brought from the countries occupied by Germany were killed in the [Auschwitz extermination] camp, most gassed as early as on arrival." (p. 241). In fact, the document itself states, in German: "No fewer than 4,000,000" (p. 261). On p. 241 of *IMT*, XXXIX official English edition: "Over 4 million people from the countries occupied by Germany were killed in Auschwitz, in most cases by gas immediately after their arrival." For the considerable number of persons who reiterated on their own that figure of 4,000,000 or of about 4,000,000, one can, to start with, refer to the names of the former detainees Shlomo Dragon, Henry Tauber, Erwin Olszowka, of the investigating magistrate Jan Sehn, of the prosecution attorney Pechalski, of the Professor-Engineer Roman Dawidowski, of the judges of the of the Supreme National Tribunal of Poland, of prosecution attorneys of American military tribunals, of all kinds of authors or historians and of people in charge of the Auschwitz State Museum such as Kazimierz Smolen, Danuta Czech, and Franciszek Piper (according to F. Piper, *op. cit.*, (note 9), pp. 7-8, 12-14). Miriam Novitch: "Of the 4,000,000 victims of Auschwitz, 2,700,000 were Jews and 1,300,000 were non-Jews", in: *La Vérité sur Treblinka* (The Truth on Treblinka), Israel, Beth Lohamet, 1967, p. 39. Rabbi Dr. Moshe Weiss, Former Vice President Mizrachi-Hapoel Hamizrachi: "More than 4,000,000 people perished [in Auschwitz]; almost 3,000,000 of them were Jews," in: "Yom HaShoah-Holocaust Remembrance", *The Jewish Press*, April 5, 1991.
- <sup>18</sup> Willy nilly, the lawyers of the defendants of the Nuremberg trial often took the same side as the prosecution. Thus was it, for instance, that Dr. Gustav Steinbauer, lawyer of Arthur Seyss-Inquart, declared July 19, 1946 before the tribunal: "Auschwitz engulfed, alone, 3,500,000 human beings, men, women and children" (*TMI*, XIX, p. 55; Auschwitz alone has swallowed up 3 1/2 million people - men, women and children. *IMT*, XIX, p. 48). "Auschwitz: [...] a great extermination camp where perished about 3,500,000 Jews and Poles between 1940 and 1945," *Dictionnaire de la langue française*, Hachette, 1991, 1430 pp. The following year, the Hachette publishing house reduced that figure to 1,000,000 (see note 31). "It is not possible to give to the thousand the exact number of those who perished in the Birkenau gas chambers (the most serious valuations hover around 3,500,000), but by extermination must be meant essentially the

- Jewish people's. Ninety-five percent of Birkenau's gassed were Jews [...]. Many [other detainees] still lost their life [...]" (Preface of Claude Lanzmann to Filip Müller, *Trois ans dans une chambre à gaz d'Auschwitz* (Three years in an Auschwitz gas chamber), Pygmalion/Gérard Watelet, 1980, p. 12.
- <sup>19</sup> On April 5, 1946, Rudolf Höß, the first of the three successive commanders of Auschwitz, signed in his Nuremberg jail, for the American Lieutenant-Colonel Smith W. Brookhart, Jr., an affidavit in English where he stated: "I commanded Auschwitz until 1 December, 1943, and estimate that at least 2,500,000 victims were executed and exterminated there by gassing and burning, and at least another half million succumbed to starvation and disease, making a total dead of about 3,000,000" (doc. PS-3868). Ten days later, the American associate trial counsel, Colonel John Harlan Amen, read to him before the tribunal excerpts from document PS-3868, including the above excerpt, and asked him: "Is all that true, Witness?" R. Höß answered: "Ja, es stimmt" (Yes, it is accurate) (*TMI*, XI, p. 426, *IMT*, XI, p. 415: Yes, it is). R. Höß had been tortured. It was necessary to wait until 1983 to obtain, from one of his torturers (Jews belonging to the British Military Security) very mouth, the circumstances and the detail of the tortures: Rupert Butler, *Legions of Death*, London, Arrow Books, 1983, acknowledgements page and pp. 234-238. On this point and on the manipulations and trickeries which the texts attributed to R. Höß received from the American prosecution as well as on related revelations, see R. Faurisson, "Comment les Britanniques ont obtenu les aveux de Rudolf Höß, commandant d'Auschwitz", *Annales d'histoire révisionniste*, spring 1987, pp. 137-152 or "How the British Obtained the Confessions of Rudolf Höß," *The Journal of Historical Review*, Winter 1986-1987, pp. 389-403. Until these last few years, R. Höß was held by the majority of the historians of the 'Holocaust' for the no. 1 witness of the Auschwitz crimes (homicidal gassings and number of the victims). In 1993, one of those historians, the American professor Christopher Browning, requested by a Jewish British journalist to give his opinion on R. Faurisson's article, finally answered: "Höß was always a very weak and confused witness." The same professor was not hesitant to conclude: "The revisionists use him all the time for this reason, in order to try and discredit the memory of Auschwitz as a whole" (Christopher Hitchens, "Whose History Is It?", *Vanity Fair*, December 1993, p. 117). R. Höß gave many other estimations than that of 3,000,000 deaths until December 1st, 1943.
- <sup>20</sup> "When you quote the figure of 1,500,000 Jews, there again you falsify figures. It was 3,000,000 Jews that were exterminated at Auschwitz-Birkenau," David Susskind, president of the Brussels Jewish secular community center, letter published in *Le Nouvel Observateur*, May 30, 1986, p. 29. In an editorial on the matter of the Auschwitz Carmelites, *Heritage*, the Californian largest Jewish weekly, asserts: "[...] huge quantities of poisonous Zyklon B pellets [...] ended the lives of some Three Million Jews at Auschwitz" (June 7, 1993). The assertion proves the indifference of that Jewish weekly's writers to the fact that, for the previous three years, the world press, as a whole, had been reporting that such a figure was an enormous exaggeration.
- <sup>21</sup> "Consequently, on the basis of my calculations the final death roll in Concentration Camp Auschwitz was 2,500,000": this is what Rudolf Vrba stated under oath on July 16, 1961, at Israel's embassy in London for the Eichmann trial at Jerusalem. R. Vrba had the cheek to add that this figure catches up that given by R. Höß at the Nuremberg trial, while the latter had reckoned the number of the deaths at 3,000,000 until December 1st, 1943, without providing an evaluation for the following fourteen months. R. Vrba added: "Thus my estimations of the death roll in Auschwitz, and the estimations of the death roll made by Rudolf Höß, though made independently of each other and using different methods, were nevertheless in good agreement": Rudolf Vrba and Alan Bestic, *I cannot Forgive*, New York, Bantam, 1964, pp. 269-272.
- <sup>22</sup> It is likely that, for the historian Yehuda Bauer, the total of the dead of Auschwitz is of 2,000,000 to 4,000,000, given that he wrote, in 1982, about the sole gassed ones: "Between April 1942 and November 1944, in addition to the Soviet POWs, the gas extinguished the lives of probably up to 2,000 gypsies [in 1944], a few hundred more Soviet POWs, and between 1,500,000 and 3,500,000 Jews" *A History of the Holocaust*, New York, Franklin Watts, 1982, p. 215. In 1989, that is to say seven years later, Y. Bauer evaluated the total of the dead (gassed or not gassed) at 1,600,000 of whom 1,352,980 Jews (see note 26).
- <sup>23</sup> The SS sergeant Pery Broad, member of the Political Section (called "Gestapo") of the camp, is supposed to have written: "2,000,000 to 3,000,000 were put to death [at Auschwitz]! Besides thousands of Poles, Russians, Czechs, Yugoslavs, etc." ("Erinnerungen von Broad", *KL Auschwitz in den Augen der SS*, Verlag des Staatlichen Auschwitz-Museums, 1973, p. 141.
- <sup>24</sup> "An SS physician, Friedrich Entress, who served as the camp doctor in 1942-1943, stated that, in his view, 2,000,000 to 2,500,000 people were killed in Auschwitz", F. Piper, *op. cit.*, (note 9), p. 8.
- <sup>25</sup> "Out of prudence, we are therefore going to settle for the figure of 2,000,000 [deaths at Auschwitz]," Léon Poliakov, *Bréviaire de la haine*, Calmann-Lévy, 1974 [1951], p. 496 (in English: *Harvest of Hate*). "[...] the exact number of the Jews assassinated in the gas chambers on alighting from the trains shall never be known. The prudent estimate is of the order of 2,000,000..." (Georges Wellers, *L'Étoile jaune à l'heure de Vichy / De Drancy à Auschwitz*, Fayard, 1973, p. 290; since this estimation bears only on the number (1) of the Jews, (2) gassed, (3) on their arrival, it is probable that for the author the total number of the persons dead at any moment and for any reason is well beyond the figure of 2,000,000; ten years later, this total number was evaluated by the same author at fewer than 1,500,000 persons (see note 28). For Lucy Dawidowicz, the figure of 2,000,000 seems to be that of the Jews gassed: *The War against the Jews / 1933-1945*, New York, Holt, 1975, pp. 149-149.
- <sup>26</sup> "There were never four million victims in Auschwitz [...]. The total number of people who died there [...] was in the neighborhood of 1,600,000 [...]. The figure for Jews murdered by gassing is 1,323,000, with 29,980 dying in the camp," Yehuda Bauer, "Auschwitz and the Poles / Fighting the distortions," *The Jerusalem Post*, September 22, 1989, p. 6. The author says that he is here taking into account the estimations of G. Wellers in 1983 but he transformed the total of 1,471, 595 (G. Wellers' figure) into ... 1,600,000! For his own estimation in 1982, see note 22.
- <sup>27</sup> Until April 3, 1990, the commemorative plates of Auschwitz-Birkenau were bearing: "Here, from 1940 to 1945, 4 million men, women and children were tortured and assassinated by the Hitlerite genocides." The new text, developed after years of tergiversations, is the following: "May this place where the Nazis assassinated 1,500,000 men, women and children, a majority of them Jews from diverse European countries, be forever for mankind a cry of despair and of warning," Luc Rosenzweig, "Auschwitz, la Pologne et le génocide" (Auschwitz, Poland and the genocide), *Le Monde*, January 27, 1995, p. 1.
- <sup>28</sup> G. Wellers, *op. cit.*, (note 6). To be compared with the same author's evaluation in 1973 (see note 25).
- <sup>29</sup> "Auschwitz [...] Number [of Jews] Killed: 1,000,000 [...]. The number of non-Jews who died in Auschwitz may be estimated on the basis of registrations and transfers at more than 250,000. Most were Poles," Raul Hilberg, *The Destruction of the European Jews*, New York, Holmes and Meier, 1985, p. 895. For R. Hilberg, it seems that the Jews are always "killed" while the non-Jews are simply "dead."
- <sup>30</sup> "At least 1,500,000 people were murdered at Auschwitz-Birkenau" (p. 11). "At least 1,100,000 persons were killed or died in the camp. But if this number is regarded as a minimum estimate, what figure can we accept as a hypothetical ceiling? [...] about 1,350,000 [Jews], with the total number of Auschwitz victims reaching about 1,500,000" (pp. 71f.). The sentence from page 11 appears on a map inserted in a chapter signed by Yisrael Gutman, "Auschwitz—An Overview." The sentences from pages 71f. appear in a chapter signed by Franciszek Piper, "The Number of Victims" Yisrael Gutman, Michael Berenbaum (ed.), *Anatomy of the Auschwitz Death Camp*, *op. cit.*, (note 10). Previously, for F. Piper, the number of the Auschwitz deaths was of 4,000,000 (see note 17).
- <sup>31</sup> "The figure of 4,000,000 victims is now regarded as 'emotional' and should really [be] more in the order of 1,000,000," Jean-Claude Pressac, *Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers*, New York, Beate Klarsfeld Foundation, 1989, p. 264. "Auschwitz [...] where perished about 1,000,000 Jews and Poles between 1940 and 1945," *Le Dictionnaire des noms propres*, Hachette, 1992. For J.-C. Pressac's evaluation in 1993, see note 31 and, for his evaluation in 1994, see note 34. For the evaluation of a dictionary published by Hachette in 1991, see note 18.
- <sup>32</sup> "The stark and inescapable fact that 800,000 to 900,000 human beings perished in Auschwitz, its gas chambers and its camps," Gerald Reitlinger, *The Final Solution*, London, Sphere Books, 1971 [1953], p. 500.
- <sup>33</sup> "Total of the deaths: 775,000 (but this figure can be attended with gaps. This is why the global figure of 800,000 victims should be retained currently," Jean-Claude Pressac, *Les Crématoires d'Auschwitz / La Machinerie du meurtre de masse*, éditions du CNRS, 1993, p. 148. For J.-C. Pressac's evaluation in 1989, see note 31 and, for his evaluation in 1994,

see note 34.

<sup>34</sup> “Total of the deaths: 631,000-711,000; [...] the number of the victims is evaluated at 630,000 to 710,000”; translation in German of the work referred to just above: *Die Krematorien von Auschwitz / Die Technik des Massenmordes*, Munich, Piper, 1994, p. 202. For J.-C. Pressac’s evaluation in 1989, see note 31 and, for his evaluation in 1994, see note 34.

<sup>35</sup> “Not too far away from this [Pressac’s latest figures] is the result of this study with presumed 510,000 deaths, 356,000 of which were probably murdered in the gas,” Fritjof Meyer, “Die Zahl der Opfer von Auschwitz. Neue Erkenntnisse durch neue Archivalfunde” (Number of Auschwitz Victims: New Insights from Recent Archival Discoveries), *Osteuropa*, 52(5) (2002), pp. 631-441, here p. 640.

<sup>36</sup> This figure is mentioned in the German news reel *Welt im Film*, no. 137, Jan. 8, 1948. It incorrectly quotes the verdict of the Polish trial against several SS men who worked at the Auschwitz camp during the war. Where the verdict mentions 300,000 registered victims plus three to four million unregistered victims, the film footage mentions 300,000 victims in general.

<sup>37</sup> See F. Piper, *op. cit.* (note 9), pp. 12f.

<sup>38</sup> Staatliches Museum Auschwitz-Birkenau (ed.), *Sterbebücher von Auschwitz / Death Books from Auschwitz / Księgi zgonow z Auschwitz*, 3 Vols., Saur, Munich 1995.

<sup>39</sup> Data taken from the table of this article.

<sup>40</sup> In 1983, G. Wellers was ascribing this lie or this error of spectacular dimensions neither to the Poles, nor to the Russians, nor to the Communists. He was writing: “Depuis quelques années, ayant compris les difficultés de ce problème, et ayant retrouvé la lucidité du jugement, on évite d’avancer des chiffres, mais on sait que 4,000,000 de morts à Auschwitz est un chiffre exagéré, dû au traumatisme, au choc naturel, inévitable qui dominait le psychisme des survivants pendant les premières années après la fin de la guerre, après la fin de leur cauchemar,” G. Wellers, *op. cit.*,

(note 6). pp. 138f.). G. Wellers was therefore questioning the “survivors,” while forgetting to remind us of his own 1973 “prudent estimation” (see note 25). In 1989, Yehuda Bauer accused the “official Polish propagandists”; he said that “some Poles disseminate the wrong figures [...] in order to create a national myth”; he denounced “the Poles’ concept of themselves as the crucified nation, the real sufferers of Europe”:

“Auschwitz and the Poles / Fighting the Distortions,” *The Jerusalem Post*, September 22, 1989, p. 6. “The figure propagated by the Communist regime was that 2,000,000 Jews and 2,000,000 non-Jews, mainly Poles, were killed;” Ben Helfgott, Chairman of Yad Vashem Charitable Trust, London, *The Independent*, 3 August 1990. “The communists tried to ‘de-Judaize’ Auschwitz [...] said Lerman who is also a member of the International Council of the State Museum of Auschwitz”; “The Polish communists’ false Auschwitz story,” *The Philadelphia Inquirer*, March 29, 1992, pp. A1, 10. Luc Rosenzweig implicates “the National-Communist Vulgate”; “Auschwitz, la Pologne et le génocide,” *Le Monde*, January 27, 1995, p. 1.

<sup>41</sup> “In memory of the millions of Jews martyrs and fighters exterminated at the Auschwitz-Birkenau camp by the Hitlerian race murderers, 1940-1945.” That inscription appeared on a monument built, according to J.-C. Pressac, during the winter of 1963-1964 and subsequently(?) removed (J.-C. Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 31), pp. 262-263.

<sup>42</sup> “I feel reasonably secure in placing the total in the range 100,000-150,000, probably closer to the former [...]. The number of Jewish deaths of natural causes at Auschwitz seems less than 100,000,” Arthur R. Butz’s review of *Why Did the Heavens Not Darken? The “Final Solution” in History*, by Arno J. Mayer, *The Journal of Historical Review*, Fall 1989, pp. 369-370; see also “Some Thoughts on Pressac’s Opus / A Response to a Major Critique of Holocaust Revisionism,” *ibid.*, May/June 1993, p. 26.

## Cautious Mainstream Revisionism

By Germar Rudolf

### 1. Political and Psychological Observations

*“Number of Auschwitz Victims: New Insights from Recent Archival Discoveries”*

This is the title of an article by Fritjof Meyer which appeared in the German periodical *Osteuropa* in May of 2002.<sup>1</sup> According to the article, Meyer, born in 1932, is a “Diploma DHP, Diploma Political Scientist, and Diploma Economist.” The question arises, of course, why the “leading editor of *Der Spiegel*,” Germany’s biggest news magazine, did not have his article published in *Der Spiegel*, or at least a short summary.

In this section, I will consider Meyer’s article from political and psychological points of view. After that, I will analyze several of his statements, which will support the conclusions I have reached in this section.

In his introduction, Meyer writes:

*“In 1945, the Soviet investigatory commission counted four million victims in the NS labor and extermination camps of Auschwitz-Birkenau. This, however, was wartime propaganda. Under coercion, Camp Commandant Höß named a figure of three million, which he later denied. Until now, one could only estimate the number of victims of this unique mass murder. The first historian of the Holocaust, Gerald Reitlinger, suspected one million, but the most recent research estimated several hundred*

*thousand fewer. Two new pieces of evidence on cremation capacity now back up existing documents concerning deportations into the camp. Hence, the dimension of this collapse of civilization has attained a conceivable dimension and provides a convincing Menetekel [Daniel’s “Handwriting on the Wall”] for the following generations.”* (p. 631)

In the last sentence, Meyer writes as a political scientist who declares that Auschwitz must be an admonition to all Germans, if not all humans, because of the collapse of civilization—a term not defined by Meyer—that allegedly took place there. Was it a collapse of civilization that Auschwitz had choirs, orchestras, kindergartens, a dental clinic, huge kitchens, microwave delousing stations,<sup>2</sup> a hospital, a swimming pool<sup>3</sup> and soccer fields? Let me quote from page 7 of the *Jerusalem Post* for January 25th, 1995 (I trust the *Jerusalem Post* will not be accused of anti-Semitism):

*“Jewish children’s choir at Auschwitz-Birkenau:*

*‘I was a member of that choir. [...] I [...] remember my first engagement with culture, with history, and with music—in the camp. [...]*

*‘In March 1944, I was severely ill with diphtheria and was sent to the camp hospital barracks. My mother had asked to be transferred to stay with me in the hospital.*

[...] *Nurses, doctors, and patients survived. [...] One of the youth leaders of our group... asked to establish an education centre for children. He was given permission, and in a short time the education centre became the spiritual and social centre for the family camp. It was the soul of the camp.*

*Musical and theatrical performances, including a children's opera, were held at the centre. There were discussions of various ideologies—Zionism, Socialism, Czech nationalism. [...] There was a conductor named Imre. [...] who] organized the children's choir. Rehearsals were held in a huge lavatory barracks."*

Of course, Mr. Meyer refers to something else, *i.e.* the industrial mass murder of innocent human beings. That they are in a grotesque, if not insurmountable contradiction to the well-established and proven facts mentioned above, is not acknowledged by Meyer. For him, facts which do not fit into his image have "a purely propagandistic character."<sup>4</sup>

All that is needed to find out where the real geographic location of a collapse of civilization was is to consider the history of the camps of "automatic arrest," or of the vast open meadows on the Rhine where the Western Allies imprisoned hundreds of thousands of Germans without shelter; or else of Hiroshima, Nagasaki, Dresden, Nemmersdorf, or of countless other locations of Allied holocausts. And this collapse of civilization was not committed by Germans, but was inflicted upon Germans (and their allies).

I also do not understand why the alleged murder and cremation of half a million people is more conceivable and convincing than the alleged murder and cremation of several millions. The average person can not comprehend the mass murder of even ten people.

Subsequently, Meyer praises Jan Van Pelt, the Jewish Dutch professor of architectural history, for his "breakthrough." Needless to say, he neglects to mention that Van Pelt is *not* an architect, and that he *lacks* expert knowledge of the subjects he dealt with. This is what Meyer writes in regard of Van Pelt's appearance as "expert witness" during David Irving's defamation suit against Deborah Lipstadt:<sup>5</sup>

*"Irving, a proven successful researcher who increasingly adopted the same confused views as those National Socialists he converses with, lost the trial, and deservedly so, because he insisted upon the nonsensical position that there were no homicidal gas chambers in Auschwitz-Birkenau."* (p 631)

I agree with Meyer that the views Irving presented to the London High Court were to a remarkable degree confused. I do not, however, understand how Irving's lack of competence in this field can be shunted onto his revisionist colleagues—apart from the fact that Meyer has

abandoned all pretense of objectivity when he labels Irving's revisionist colleagues, including myself, National Socialists, which, in the common understanding of the term, is almost equal to calling somebody a devil incarnate. Additionally, he offers no reasons why our opinions are "nonsensical."

Such presumptuousness and collective slander can be found otherwise only in Meyer's footnotes, the context of which clearly indicates Meyer's bias:

<sup>45</sup> [...] *Apologists for National Socialism ('revisionists') doubt that this building (gas bunker) existed at all: Jürgen Graf: Auschwitz, Würenlos 1994, p. 236" (p. 632)*

<sup>19</sup> *Carlo Mattogno/Franco Deana: The crematory ovens of Auschwitz, in the otherwise unbearable pamphlet by Ernst Gauss (ed.): Grundlagen zur Zeitgeschichte, [English: Dissecting the Holocaust] Tübingen, 1994, p. 310. Since historiography, for understandable but inadmissible reasons, has not accepted Auschwitz as an object for research, propaganda naturally invaded the unoccupied field. Propaganda of Soviet origin still controls public opinion, as in the number of four million at Auschwitz or over 400,000 murdered Hungarian deportees, or mass gassings in the crematorium cellars. On the other hand, 'revisionists' have very industriously gathered details; but they missed the points presented in this study. Their assorted 'lost and found' bits caused the respectable philosopher of history Ernst Nolte as well as David Irving to become confused. Otherwise, historians have ignored them as a cause for thought or even as a challenge. The judge Ernst Stäglich ('Der Auschwitz-Mythos'), who is a barely disguised anti-Semite, was the first one to cast authentic doubt on several passages of the confessions of Höß which were written in prison. Not only history, but also the seeking of truth must occasionally avail itself of distasteful tools. Two well researched but tardy and still not completely satisfying refutations of the 'revisionists' have recently appeared: John C. Zimmerman: Holocaust Denial, Lanham, 2000; and Richard J. Evans: Der Geschichtsfälscher, [Forger of History] Frankfurt a.M., 2001." (p. 635)*



*Inscription on the Auschwitz-Birkenau memorial until April 3, 1990, propagating the "anti-fascist" number of four million victims in 19 languages.*



Again, skeptics and dissenters are depicted as devils by Meyer. He can no longer avoid confronting revisionist works, however, for he relies on revisionist sources to support his observations on the operation times of the Auschwitz/Birkenauer crematories, as we see in footnote 19. Caught in a dilemma, the protector of political morality must have asked himself: How can I avoid lending credibility to revisionists? The answer was simple: declare all the other articles in *Dissecting the Holocaust* to be “unbearable,” “pamphlet”-like, and “unworthy.” The only exception is the article by Matogno and Deana. Meyer feels no need to prove or to document anything he says; his pronouncements are all *ex cathedra*.

How can one explain such behavior? There are two possibilities. Perhaps he takes himself seriously. In that case he is politically blind, an extremist who denies other scientists their due respect and dignity. After all, Meyer belongs to those journalists who, in their majority, applaud when we “unbearable,” satanic, “unworthy” creatures are thrown into prisons. Or, on the other hand, he might simply be aware of “whose song he must sing,” and cover his posterior by acting accordingly. With his partial revisionism (=partial denial), he too runs the risk of becoming a victim of the Court of Public Decency if he is not careful. If Meyer had needed different arguments for a different subject, such as the difficulty of committing mass murder with diesel exhaust for example, he probably would have quoted the article by Fritz Berg in the same anthology. In that case he would have had to label all the others as unbearable, pamphlet-like, unworthy, etc.

Meyer is correct when he remarks that historiography which is recognized as such by him has not accepted Auschwitz as a subject of research. I wish, however, he would have specified why he thinks this is “understandable!” I expect that we disagree already regarding the criteria for determining whether or not historiography has accepted a certain topic as a subject for research. For this reason I would like to introduce something really basic here: a definition of “research.” Research is that activity of the human spirit which critically compares appearance and reality, without uncritically accepting the former as being identical with the latter. Real research occurs only when results are uncertain at the outset, every result is a possibility, and all results are open to public criticism. Mr. Meyer is well aware that such an open-minded investigative research of the Holocaust is not possible in many countries of Europe, for certain results are punishable by law. He also knows that in nearly every country where the subject can legally be researched, it is still socially and economically ruinous to present unorthodox views. We can also safely assume that Meyer’s article caused him quite some trouble, and we can also assume that he knows what would happen if he had leaned too far out of the window.

In other words, for political reasons it is simply not possible for historiography to present “Holocaust” as a subject for research and investigation. It is significant that Meyer himself belongs to those who support this political “Verbot” of research: He ostracizes and slanders all those who differ with him on essential points, going so far as to deny their dignity as human beings. Either he is unfamiliar with the basic rules

for scientific research, or, more probably, he is simply indifferent to science and the scientific method.

Regarding the existence or non-existence of a building, often referred to as a “gassing bunker,” it would have been appropriate for Meyer to mention in his footnote 5 that Graf’s statement in his 1994 book is no longer supported by him today and that other revisionists never agreed with him on this.<sup>6</sup> Meyer’s “Apologists for National Socialism (‘revisionists’)” doubt” is therefore not only polemic, but also wrong in its generalization. The real argument is not over the existence of the(se) building(s) but about their purpose.

But now, after so much scolding, it is time to praise Mr. Meyer a bit. He is the first not only to quote a revisionist source, but, at least partially, to agree with it (he quotes Matogno again in his footnote 32, p. 637.) He acknowledges that revisionists have “very industriously gathered details,” even though equating our work with that of Soviet propagandists like Ilya Ehrenburg. Has Meyer noticed that Ehrenburg contributed not a single detail to historical research, and that revisionists do not advocate mass murder or a resort to institutionalized torture like the NKVD or SMERSH in their “investigations?” Really Mr. Meyer, can’t you see that there is a qualitative difference between revisionist research and Soviet propaganda?

Meyer’s acknowledgement that revisionists have knowledge about many details implies another acknowledgement: he is familiar with the general body of revisionist literature. We can assume that Meyer has been accumulating revisionist publications for years, or at least monitoring them. This prompts me to examine more closely some of Meyer’s factual statements.

## 2. Meyer’s Methodical Deficiencies

At the very outset, Meyer makes the following statement:

*“A key document containing information about the capacity of the crematories at Auschwitz/Birkenau has recently been found. Additionally, a statement of camp commandant Höß about the time periods of their operation has surfaced.”* (p. 631)

The idea of a key document gets our attention right away, giving us hope of some new insight or discovery of a general nature. A little further on, Meyer continues:

*“[...] according to this document, a letter has been found in File 241 of the archives of the crematory company Topf & Söhne from Karl Prüfer, who was the chief engineer in charge of construction in Auschwitz. The letter is dated September 8, 1942, which is nine weeks after Bischoff’s message [June 28, 1943, sic!] and after completion of the crematories, i.e., after the first operational results. According to Prüfer, each of the two Crematories I and II cremated 800 bodies daily, each of the smaller Crematories III and IV cremated 400 daily, altogether 2400.”* (p. 634)

In order to support his contention that “the cremation time was one and one half hours<sup>13</sup> for each oven chamber,” Meyer also quotes the following source:

<sup>13</sup>*Auschwitz escapee Alfred Wetzler in WRB Report dated Nov. 25, 1944, Franklin Delano Roosevelt Library,*

*New York, page 12. Another version is printed in: Sander Szenes/Frank Baron: Von Ungarn nach Auschwitz, Münster, 1994, p. 126; Tauber in: Pressac, Technique (Fn.3), page 483. See also the statements of engineers Prüfer, Schultze and Sander concerning Topf and Sons, made on March 5 and 7, 1946 by Captain Shatunovsky and Major Morudshenko of the Smersh Department, 8th Army, concerning the question of hourly capacity, Central Archive of the KGB of the USSR, Documents 17/9, 19)*

Meyer continues with Höß's testimony concerning the time a cremation oven could be used uninterruptedly:

*"Van Pelt provides still more surprising information with publication of a statement of Höß made during cross examination in Cracow Court in 1947: 'After eight or ten hours, the crematories could no longer be used... It was impossible to keep them in constant operation.' "* (pp. 635f.)

I am not going to deal here with the question of whether Meyer's statements are correct or not, since Carlo Mattogno deals with them in the following article in this issue of *The Revisionist*. However, I would like to make some remarks concerning Meyer's methodology.

To begin with, let me respond to the problem of the "key document." Meyer uses it to bolster his contention that another "key document," which is often quoted by researchers on the cremation capacity at Auschwitz, contains false and exaggerated figures.<sup>7</sup> He quotes J. C. Pressac, who calls the newest document an "internal propaganda lie of the SS" on account of its exaggerated figures of crematory capacity.<sup>8</sup> The question is, however, how Meyer can know for sure that Prüfer's letter is not just another propaganda lie told by the chief engineer of Topf & Son?

I am also surprised about Meyer's attempt to establish the actual capacities of the various crematories, which is unfortu-

nately too typical for those who Robert Faurisson called "paper historians." Why does Meyer rely on statements made by Auschwitz prisoners and testimony obtained through interrogation by Soviet torturers? Why doesn't he consult professional cremation experts, or at least visit the nearby crematorium at Hamburg? Since Meyer extensively quoted the work by Mattogno and Deana in other regards, why not quote it with regard to the capacities in question?

This reminds me of something that happened in 1993, while I was completing my doctorate at the Max Planck Institute for Solid State Research. On January 20, I was participating in a seminar headed by my PhD supervisor, Prof. Dr. Dr. h.c. Hans Georg von Schnering, a colorful professor who was well known for his exacting standards. At that day, a certain Dr. Harald Hillebrecht was giving a lecture on laboratory measurements he had carried out. He mentioned a value of a certain compound's physical property which seemed so improbable to my supervisor that he interrupted to ask where he could have gotten such a figure. When the lecturer answered that it was "word of mouth," from one of his colleagues, Prof. von Schnering fairly exploded with disdain.<sup>9</sup>

*"'Word of mouth!' You can't use that! When it comes to 'word of mouth,' everybody has his own little shithouse formulations."*

Meyer's procedure can be easily compared with this. Indeed, it is even worse, since Meyer does not resort to the voluntarily made remarks of an expert to establish technical data, but he uses statements of people who were either no experts on cremation technology at all (the witnesses Höß, Wetzler, Tauber, Schultze), and/or who testified under duress (Höß, Sander, Prüfer, Schultze). This is not a method that deserves to be called "scientific." It is also no defense for Meyer to argue that Carlo Mattogno has quoted these NKVD-compiled testimonies of the Topf engineers as well.<sup>4</sup> Of course, it is permissible to quote statements made by experts, even if they

were made under questionable circumstances, but only in order to underline other results that were gained with reliable scientific methods, which is what Mattogno does. It is, however, unacceptable to use such isolated statements as reliable evidence for anything.

But this is not the extent of Meyer's methodological deficiencies. At the beginning of his article he writes:

*"That the existing evidence, i.e., documents pertaining to the refitting of these buildings, which were not originally designed to be gassing cellars (for example, insertion shafts and devices for measuring gas), as well as the well-known witness accounts, rather indicates that*



*Pope John Paul II at the old memorial, praying for at least three million victims too many during his June 7, 1979, visit to Auschwitz-Birkenau.*

attempts were made in March and April of 1943 to use the mortuary cellars for mass murder in the early summer of 1943, cannot be discussed here.

“Apparently, the tests were not successful, both because the ventilation was counterproductive<sup>3</sup> and because the expected masses of victims did not arrive during the ensuing eleven months. The actually committed genocide probably took mainly place in the two converted farm-houses outside of the camp.” (p. 632)

Apparently Meyer believes that the documents and witnesses suggest that there were only attempts to convert the basement morgues of the crematoria into “gas chambers.” He contends that the real location of horror was elsewhere. As usual, he supplies no evidence for his contention. In an email response to an early version of this article, Meyer very generally refers to “those ‘criminal traces’ of Pressac,” but he must have missed that these “criminal traces” do not at all prove what he and Pressac claim they do.<sup>10</sup> In fact, in the above quotation Meyer contradicts such key Auschwitz witnesses as Henryk Tauber, Miklos Nyiszli, and Filip Müller. He can not use ignorance as an excuse, since he quotes from Jürgen Graf’s book on leading Auschwitz witnesses. Meyer is openly contradicting the “body of evidence” (insofar as one can take the witnesses seriously – but that is a different matter.)

Only after I asked him by email did Meyer claim that his claims would be supported “by observations of the important witness Henryk Tauber,” but he does not mention, which of Tauber’s observations he refers to.<sup>4</sup> As a matter of fact, Tauber explicitly states that the gas chamber of crematorium II was in full operation in summer and fall of 1943.<sup>11</sup> Tauber also reports of uninterrupted extermination activities right into the fall of 1944, and of course about the usual four million victims.<sup>12</sup> There is nothing in Tauber’s statement that would indicate that homicidal gassings in the crematoria had been abandoned after initial experiments.

That Tauber makes technically impossible claims—up to eight corpses in one oven chamber, flames belching out of the chimneys, self-burning corpses, female corpses used to ignite other corpses, accumulation of boiling human fat—, is a different matter and proves nothing else but that this witness is simply a vulgar liar when it comes to the alleged mass extermination. If considered in an isolated way, such testimonies cannot prove anything, not even whatever thesis put forward by Meyer.

About the other two witnesses, Meyer has made some quite remarkable statements, since he considers Miklos Nyiszli’s book with its “extreme statements” to have been “obviously edited” and Filip Müller’s report nothing but a “novel”—which, in Meyer’s view, does not reduce the credibility of this witness’s

testified court testimony (IMT, Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial).<sup>4</sup> But why did he not publish such far-reaching statements in his article, rather than hiding them in an email which he forbade me from publishing?

Meyer really cannot plead lack of knowledge when it comes to eyewitness accounts, since he himself quoted Jürgen Graf’s book on the most important Auschwitz witnesses, and in his email to me he listed the names of many witnesses he relies upon (again without reference),<sup>13</sup> which indicates that he knows what he is writing about. But why did he not quote his evidence where it was necessary, that is, in his article? It is of no help to anybody to hide them in private lists that he forbids to be published.

### 3. Meyer’s Factual Deficiencies

I have already addressed Meyer’s naïve acceptance of Tauber’s absurdities, which do *not* support Meyer’s claims. Meyer makes another error in his footnote 3 when introducing an argument which allegedly supports the failure of the conversion of the morgues into gas chambers:

<sup>3</sup> “These openings were made at ground level whereas the Zyklon gas rose upward, toward the ventilation shafts; Jean-Claude Pressac in: *Beate Klarsfeld Foundation (ed.): Auschwitz—Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers, New York, 1989. p. 288f.*” (p. 632)

Here one person incompetent in the exact sciences and in technology is plagiarizing another! Since 1993 I have pointed out over and over again that the difference in density between air and gaseous cyanide is negligible—apparently in vain. But even if Meyer’s argument were true, it is too weak to establish that those places once designated as having been “the absolute center” of the “geography of atrocities,” as Prof. Van Pelt so lyrically phrases it, has been relegated to the trash pile. Considering the gigantic security problems which would have arisen from an assembly-line style of murder with hydrogen cyanide, does Meyer really believe the SS would have been discouraged by the question of whether cyanide-laden air should be blown out from above or below? But it does not stop there. Meyer continues:



U.S. President Gerald T. Ford laying down a wreath to commemorate at least three million victims too much at the Auschwitz-Birkenau memorial.

*"The actual genocide most likely took place primarily in the two converted farmhouses outside the camp. The foundations of the first house, the so-called 'White House,' have recently been discovered."*<sup>5</sup>

Can anyone explain why the alleged bunker for mass murder would be more suitable than the basement morgues of Crematoriums II and III with their allegedly poor ventilation, when the alleged bunkers had *no ventilation* apparatus at all?

In his reply, Meyer maintains that Bunker I had a ventilation system according to former camp commander Aumeier.<sup>4</sup> If the revisionist thesis that the(se) farmhouse(s) was/were indeed delousing facilities is correct,<sup>14</sup> such a ventilation system would have been mandatory indeed. Meyer also knows that most witnesses on these houses state that there was no ventilation system. What Meyer does here is to selectively pick one witness account and ignore all the rest, simply because it fits into his thesis. He cannot, of course, come up with anything more substantial, such as a document indicating that there was a ventilation system in these farmhouses. However, this still does not prove Meyer's thesis that the original plan to use the morgues of the crematoriums was abandoned in favor of the farmhouses due to an inefficient ventilation system.

Objectively seen, however, Meyer may not be totally wrong here. As a matter of fact, the ventilation systems of the crematorium morgues were planned to ventilate the morgues, but not homicidal mass gassing cellars or delousing chambers. The reason for this, however, was not the wrong direction of ventilation, but the simple fact that the performance of this ventilation system would not have been adequate.<sup>15</sup> Due to the dangerous nature of hydrogen cyanide, it is also quite likely that it would have been used in buildings outside of the camp's immediate vicinity, for example in those farmhouses.<sup>16</sup> This would have been the proper way of arguing, whether one were talking about homicidal gassings or delousing gassing.

In his footnote 5, as already mentioned above, Mr. Meyer hopes to prove the existence of the so-called bunkers. And what scientific evidence does he offer as proof?

*"Corriere della Sera, 11/20/2001. – Le Monde, 11/20/2001, – dpa [German Press Agency] 11/19/2001."*

One could have added the German tabloid *Bild* of Nov. 11, 2001, which carried the same story. Methodically seen, it is more than questionable to rely on daily newspapers in the first place, because journalists frequently report superficially and unreliably. Imagine what we would have to accept as true if we believed everything in the tabloid papers!

However, the newspaper articles cited do not mention anything about recently found foundations of what Meyer calls "Bunker I," but rather an existing residential building which a researcher from the Contemporary Jewish Center for Documentation in Milan claims to have identified as the former Bunker I—wrongly so, as Carlo Mattogno has shown in a detailed study.<sup>17</sup> Apparently Meyer has confused something here. Pictures of the foundations of a former building outside of the Birkenau camp with an unknown history were published by J.-C. Pressac in 1989. However, these are the remnants of Bunker II, not Bunker I, at least according to Pres-

sac.<sup>18</sup> We must therefore conclude that there are still no material traces of Bunker I, which does not, of course, prove that such a building with an unknown purpose did not exist.

This is aside from the fact that Meyer is again disseminating shithouse science, this time from the German Press Agency. Carlo Mattogno proved efficiently and scientifically that the GPA {DPA?} report consisted of outdated and warmed-over hoaxes.<sup>19</sup>

It is also significant that Meyer's article does not mention open-air burnings of bodies in deep ditches, which are prominent in eyewitness testimony. These allegedly took place in deep ditches near the bunkers which Meyer prizes so highly. Meyer merely mentions in passing:

*"According to Höß around 107,000 bodies were exhumed from mass graves around the end of November 1942 and burned on pyres."<sup>21</sup> Pressac disputes this number, counting only 50,000.<sup>22</sup> Still unexplained is the location of remains of victims of the very large number of gassings which took place during the winter of 1942/43, that is, up until the time the crematoriums went into operation. Until now this has not even been recognized as a problem. We are justified in assuming that around 57,000 of the 100,000 unregistered victims who arrived between December 1942 and March 1943 were burned in the open. Höß included them in his testimony.*

*Less those victims of the Hungary operation whose bodies were burned on pyres [...]" (p. 636)*

Meyer is right: The question of where the victims of these alleged mass murders could have been cremated during "Operation Hungary" (and before the crematoriums were completed) has heretofore not been recognized as a problem. He too fails to recognize the real problem, however. The simple fact is that witnesses claimed the bodies were burned in deep pits, and this is a physical impossibility because of the high water table around Birkenau.<sup>20</sup> Furthermore, John Ball, on the basis of numerous Allied aerial photographs, proved in 1992 that no large-scale burnings took place at the time, either on pyres or in pits.<sup>21</sup> Meyer's transfer of the site of the alleged mass murders to the so-called bunker(s) increases the scope of the alleged problem. He contributes nothing toward solving the problem—he merely disguises it. Once again he presents a problem in a way which contradicts his own sources: He changes *deep ditches* into above ground *pyres*.

Also, concerning the hotly debated question of alleged openings for the insertion of Zyklon B in the ceiling of Cellar Morgue I of Crematoriums II and III, which might or might not have ever existed, Meyer makes another assertion which is as dogmatic as it is unfounded:

*"Then, both Irving and Van Pelt sank their teeth into the question whether or not the openings made in the ceiling for the insertion of Zyklon B during conversion of the morgue are still visible today (they still are, which Van Pelt did not yet know.)" (p. 633)*

This question, central to the dispute, is of a material nature and is solvable by objective means. It should have been one of the main questions to be addressed in his article, if only he were interested in facts. But no, Meyer takes refuge behind an assertion in parentheses. No wonder his point is com-

pletely mistaken.<sup>22</sup> If it were any different, one could have expected arguments.

#### 4. The Numbers of Victims

In his short 1998 article on the evolution of Auschwitz victim numbers, Thomas Ryder predicted the continuing lowering of these numbers in the near future.<sup>23</sup> He may have been overly optimistic about the rapidity with which the numbers would decline, but he was certainly correct about the tendency.

Meyer's latest contribution to the numbers game states:

*"These considerations lead us to the conclusion that half a million people were murdered in Auschwitz, including 356,000 who were gassed."<sup>37</sup>*

After a short reference to the fact that the number of four million originated with Soviet propaganda, Meyer gives details of the statements made by Auschwitz Commandant Rudolf Höß. Regarding his treatment by his British captors he reports:

*"After three days of torture and sleep deprivation,<sup>41</sup> flogged after every answer, naked and forcibly alcoholized,<sup>42</sup> the first interrogation came about under 'shocking evidence,' as Höß reported later: 'I have no idea what is in that confession, even though I signed it. The alcohol and the whip were too much for me.'<sup>43</sup> At 2:30am he signed the following statements in a strained and irregular hand:*

*I estimate that cca (sic) 3,000,000 persons died at Auschwitz proper. I assume by estimation that around 2,500,000 of these were gassed.<sup>44</sup>"* (p. 639.)

Meyer goes into detail about the various and well-documented tortures which Höß underwent, and shows that the numbers which he gave could not possibly be correct. It would have been appropriate for Meyer to acknowledge the researchers who first reported on Höß's tortures and on the impossibility in his confession. Courtesy between scientific researchers demands no less. The fact that one dislikes A. R. Butz, W. Stäglich, and R. Faurisson does not give anybody the right to trample on academic custom and courtesy.<sup>24</sup>

In keeping the style of his article, Meyer ends with a political statement:

*"This result does not relativize the barbarity, but rather verifies it—an even more stringent warning against renewed collapse of civilization."*

However, Meyer did not succeed in verifying the barbarity of the National Socialists here. As far as Auschwitz is concerned, he succeeded only in confirming the barbarity of the official historians, who trample on the most basic fundamental rules of scientific research. This is yet another offense against civilization which must be rectified.

#### 5. Conclusions

In his contribution, Meyer has reduced the numbers of victims of Auschwitz once more; has more or less abandoned



*Inscription on the same monument in 1995*

*"May this place where the Nazis murdered a million and a half men, women and children, a majority of them Jews from diverse European countries, be forever a cry of despair and of warning for mankind. Auschwitz-Birkenau 1940-1945"*

the crematories of Auschwitz-Birkenau as locations of mass murder; for the first time, a revisionist source has been quoted and at least partly acknowledged as being correct; furthermore, he has publicly accepted as correct the fact that former Auschwitz commandant Höß was tortured, and he doubts the veracity of Höß' statements. In his private writings, he also admitted that the highly praised books of two authors frequently referred to as "key witnesses," Miklos Nyiszli and Filip Müller, have been edited or are nothing but novels, and he has once again characterized Mattogno's work as acceptable. We may therefore hope for the future. "It moves," after all!

Considering, however, the massive methodical as well as factual deficiencies of his article, it seems droll for Meyer to accuse us revisionists, in his footnote 19, of having "missed the points presented in this [his] study [...]."<sup>25</sup>

#### Notes

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(4) (2002), pp. 371-378; translated by James M. Damon.

<sup>1</sup> Fritjof Meyer, "Die Zahl der Opfer von Auschwitz. Neue Erkenntnisse durch neue Archivreise" (Number of Auschwitz Victims: New Insights from Recent Archival Discoveries), *Osteuropa*, 52(5) (2002), pp. 631-441.

<sup>2</sup> Jürgen Nowak, "Kurzwellen-Entlausungsanlagen in Auschwitz", *VffG* 2(2) (1998), pp. 87-105; Hans Lamker, "Die Kurzwellen-Entlausungsanlagen in Auschwitz, Teil 2," *VffG* 2(4) (1998), pp. 261-273.

<sup>3</sup> Robert Faurisson, "Das Schwimmbad im Stammlager Auschwitz," *VffG* 5(3) (2001), pp. 254f

<sup>4</sup> Email by F. Meyer to G. Rudolf, Nov. 8, 2002:

"[...] Ihrer Zeitschrift, die einen rein propagandistischen Charakter trägt [...]"

<sup>5</sup> Cf. *VffG* 4(1) (2000), pp. 2-50.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. R. Kammerer, A. Solms, *Das Rudolf Gutachten*, Cromwell Press, London 1993, p. 32; G. Rudolf, *Das Rudolf Gutachten*, Castle Hill Publishers, Hastings 2001, pp. 97f.

<sup>7</sup> Manfred Gerner, "Schlüsseldokument' ist Fälschung", *VffG*, 2(3) (1998), pp. 166-174; cf. also C. Mattogno, " 'Schlüsseldokument' - eine alterna-

- tive Interpretation*,” *VffG*, 4(1) (2000), pp. 51-56.
- <sup>8</sup> J.-C. Pressac, *Die Krematorien von Auschwitz. Die Technik des Massenmordes*, Piper, Munich 1994, p. 103.
- <sup>9</sup> January 20, 1993, at 9:48 am in Room 4D2 of Max Planck Institute in Stuttgart, Germany
- <sup>10</sup> Summarized: G. Rudolf, *The Rudolf Report*, Theses and Dissertations Press, Chicago 2003, with further references.
- <sup>11</sup> “At the end of 1943, the gas chamber was divided in two [...]”; “These fittings [Bänke, Kleiderhaken, falsche Duschköpfe] were not installed until autumn 1943,” J.-C. Pressac, *Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers*, The Beate Klarsfeld Foundation, New York 1989, p. 484.
- <sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 500f.
- <sup>13</sup> “Brüder Dragon, Feinsilber, Langfuss, Lewental, Buki, Benroubi, Brüder Gabarz, Tabeau, Lettich, Nyiszli, Gulba, Wisorka, Wohlfahrt, Puchala, Bila, Wolken, Plastura, Porebski, Paisikovic, Eisenschmidt, Rozin, Schellekes, Hejblum; SS: Höb, Aumeier, Kremer, Münch, Broad, Böck, Höblinger, Lorenz, Hradil, Kaduk.” Jürgen Graf plans to deal with the testimonies offered as evidence by Meyer at a later date..
- <sup>14</sup> *TCIDK* 520-1-24-77, 30.11.42; 520-1-24-33, 3.12.42; 520-1-332-46a, 9.1.43; 520-1-26-66, 9.4.43; 502-1-238-10, 30.9.43.
- <sup>15</sup> C. Mattogno, *Auschwitz: Das Ende einer Legende*, in: Herbert Verbeke (ed.), *Auschwitz: Nackte Fakten. Eine Erwiderung an Jean-Claude Pressac*, Vrij Historisch Onderzoek, Berchem 1995, pp. 133-135.
- <sup>16</sup> Mentioned for the first time by H.J. Nowak, “Kurzwellen-Entlausungsanlagen in Auschwitz,” *VffG* 2(2) (1998), pp. 87-105.
- <sup>17</sup> Carlo Mattogno, “Die ‘Entdeckung’ des ‘Bunkers 1’ von Birkenau: alte und neue Betrügereien,” *VffG* 6(2) (2002), pp. 139-145; this article will be published in English the next issue of *The Revisionist*.
- <sup>18</sup> *Op. cit.* (note 11), p. 176.
- <sup>19</sup> Carlo Mattogno, “Die ‘Entdeckung’ des ‘Bunkers’ von Birkenau: alte und neue Betrügereien,” *VffG* 6(2) (2002), pp. 139-145.
- <sup>20</sup> See the two contributions by Michael Gärtner/Werner Rademacher, and Carlo Mattogno in this issue.
- <sup>21</sup> J. Ball, *Air Photo Evidence, Auschwitz, Treblinka, Majdanek, Sobibor, Bergen Belsen, Belzec, Babi Yar, Katyn Forest*, Ball Resource Service Ltd., Delta, B.C., Canada 1992 (online: www.air-photo.com).
- <sup>22</sup> Cf. my expert report, *op. cit.* (note 10); more recently: C. Mattogno, “Keine Löcher, keine Gaskammer(n),” *VffG* 6(3) (2002), pp. 284-304; this article will appear in English in one of the upcoming issues of *The Revisionist*.
- <sup>23</sup> “Die Formel der Wahrheit,” *VffG* 2(3) (1998), pp. 204f.
- <sup>24</sup> Although Meyer mentions Stäglich’s skepticism regarding Höb’s testimony—he erroneously calls him Ernst Stäglich—and the title of his book, he fails to mention the usual referential data (location, year, page). Butz and Faurisson aren’t mentioned at all.
- <sup>25</sup> After reading the initial version of this article, Meyer even stated he understood why I was so angry, since the German right-wing weekly *Nationalzeitung* had “declared my study to be the ‘truth,’ thus inflicting a defeat upon the revisionists,” *op. cit.* (note 4). LOL.

## Auschwitz: Fritjof Meyer’s New Revisions

By Carlo Mattogno

### 1. The Background

In 1993, Jean-Claude Pressac published his second study on Auschwitz,<sup>1</sup> which provided even more grist to revisionist mills than did his first study.<sup>2</sup>

For this reason, Pressac’s second book was devastated by Franciszek Piper, head of the history department of Auschwitz Museum, in a long and vicious review.<sup>3</sup> Piper’s critique was a kind of ritualistic excommunication of Pressac by the official historiography. As a result, the American and European Holocaust lobbies placed the French researcher under their ban, which continues to this day. It was no coincidence that in the Irving-Lipstadt defamation trial, the defense did not choose Pressac to defend the orthodox version of homicidal exterminations at Auschwitz. Instead they chose Robert Jan Van Pelt, who was much inferior to Pressac in historical knowledge, methodology and critical ability.

One of the greatest sins committed by Pressac in his research was that he involuntarily destroyed the fragile evidentiary basis which devotees of the Holocaust story had laboriously cobbled together in decades of tedious effort. The official historiography had until then supported (and to an extent continues to support) the view that in the summer of 1941, Auschwitz Commandant Rudolf Höb received orders from Himmler to exterminate all the Jews of Europe in his camp. According to this story, Auschwitz was converted to an “extermination camp” with crematories designed and constructed at Birkenau to carry out the alleged policy of extermination. Pressac, however, definitively proved just the opposite: that the crematories were planned and constructed as ordinary sanitary installations. On the basis of highly questionable

“criminal traces” he then declared that, around the end of November 1942, they had been converted into extermination facilities.

Another unforgivable sin of Pressac consisted of relegating eyewitness testimony to a lower grade of importance than documentary evidence, even though he himself often failed to live up to the principle. Worst of all, he accepted the scientific methodology of the revisionists.

In 1994, I concluded my review of the second Pressac book with the following remarks:<sup>4</sup>

*“In an article in Le Monde which appeared on 21<sup>st</sup> February 1979, 34 French historical researchers published a statement which ended with the following words:*

*“It is impermissible to ask whether such mass murder was technically possible. Mass murder was technically possible because it happened, and it is the obligatory starting point for every historical investigation of the subject...”*

*Jean-Claude Pressac did not abide by this directive. He wanted to deal scientifically with the questions of crematory ovens and alleged gas chambers in Auschwitz and Birkenau, even though he was utterly incompetent to undertake such a study.*

*He felt obliged to embrace the methodological principle of the revisionists, according to which, in case of contradiction between eyewitnesses and forensic science, the latter must be given precedence. In compliance with this principle, he correlated the numbers of ‘poison gas victims’ with the capacity of the cremation ovens, although he greatly overstated the capacity. By doing this, he caused a crack in orthodox historiography. Forensic sci-*

ence clearly demonstrates the physical impossibility of mass homicidal exterminations at Auschwitz and Birkenau; if Pressac wants to pursue scientific arguments he must accept scientific conclusions, for better or worse. Otherwise, he has no choice except to furl his sails and join the French historians in declaring that it is impermissible to inquire about whether such mass murders were scientifically possible.”

Faced with this dilemma, Holocaust historians have reacted in different ways. Some, such as Van Pelt, have sounded the retreat and entrenched themselves in the twilight morass of eyewitness accounts, where the light of science can not shine.<sup>5</sup> Others, such as John C. Zimmermann, violate science and historiography by responding to revisionist arguments with bald-faced lies.<sup>6</sup> Now a real wizard has joined the fray: He accepts the scientific framework of revisionist arguments and puts Pressac in the shade by simply tossing overboard the “criminal traces” with which the French historian attempted to prove homicidal gassings in the Birkenau crematories.

## 2. The Revisions of Fritjof Meyer

In May 2002, Fritjof Meyer, former chief editor of the Hamburg news magazine *Der Spiegel*, published a rather startling article with the title “Die Zahl der Opfer von Auschwitz. Neue Erkenntnisse durch neue Archivalfunde” (The Number of Auschwitz Victims: New Revelations through New Archival Discoveries).<sup>7</sup> Meyer defends the thesis of homicidal gassings but deviates from his predecessors in two important points. In the first place, he moves the center of the alleged mass murders from the crematories to the so-called “Bunkers” of Birkenau. In the second place, he lowers the number of Auschwitz victims to 510,000. This contrasts greatly with 1,100,000 (the number presently postulated by official historiography)<sup>8</sup> and 711,000 to 631,000 (the numbers postulated by Pressac).<sup>9</sup>

Meyer maintains that “The actual genocide probably took

place in the two converted farmhouses outside the camp” (p. 632). Since in his view 510,000 persons were killed in the camp, of whom 356,000 were gassed, it is clear that he thinks the alleged mass murders took place almost entirely in the Birkenau “Bunkers.”

Meyer touches on several important themes, including the basic question of whether the Birkenau crematories could have been used as instruments to commit the alleged mass murders. He also deals with the number of persons deported to Auschwitz as well as, of course, the total number of victims.

## 3. The Two Foundations of Meyer’s Revisions

In the following I shall analyze primarily the twin foundations of Meyer’s thesis, which he summarizes as follows:

*“Existing documents concerning camp deliveries provide new evidence about the capacity of the crematories.”* (p. 631)

He continues:

*“A key document giving information about the capacity of the crematories at Auschwitz and Birkenau has recently been found, along with a statement of camp commandant Höß concerning their useful life. In conjunction with information about persons sent to the camp, which has long been available but largely ignored, the new evidence allows us to more accurately determine the number of persons murdered at Auschwitz. We now know there were half a million victims of genocide.”* (p. 631)

Meyer gives credit for his “breakthrough” to Robert Jan Van Pelt. But as we shall soon see, Van Pelt deserves no credit at all.

Since the basis of both of his theses have to do with crematories, Meyer quotes the familiar letter written by Bischoff on June 28, 1943. It states that in Crematories II and III, “working round the clock,” 1,440 “persons” could be cremated daily. In Crematories IV and V, the daily number was 768.<sup>10</sup>

He adds the following:

*“With his arguments, Irving was completely unable to support his doubts about the accuracy of the document, which in this case were thoroughly justified. Van Pelt’s rebuttal was more graphic, although not necessarily convincing. Seven years earlier, the French expert Jean-Claude Pressac had labeled the writing ‘an internal propaganda lie of the SS.’ ”* (p. 634)

Regarding the historical and scientific analysis of this document, I refer the reader to my article “Key Document: An Alternative Interpretation.” It dealt with the doubts about the authenticity of this letter, which was written by the Central Building Administration of Auschwitz. Dated June 28, 1943, it deals with the subject of capacity of the crematories.<sup>11</sup>



Ernst Zündel in 1990 in front of the removed old memorial plates at Auschwitz-Birkenau

#### 4. The First Main Point of Meyer's Thesis

Meyer continues:

*"In the report which he prepared for the Irving/Lipstadt trial, Van Pelt supplied two new bits of information which were nothing less than sensational. Along with material which was already present but had hardly been considered, the new information allows us to precisely calculate the total number of Auschwitz victims. Van Pelt practically hid this new information in his 570-page work, hardly interpreting it, and he did not introduce it at the trial. It is outside his area of expertise, although it does not support Irving in any way. Van Pelt is the first to quote a document which, to the best of my knowledge, has escaped consideration until now. The document raises questions about Bischoff letter of June 28, 1943, by reducing Bischoff's figures by half.*

*It says that a letter from head engineer Kurt Prüfer, who was employed in Auschwitz construction, was found in the archives of crematory firm Topf & Sons (now Erfurter Malt and Warehouse) in File 241. It is dated Sep. 8, 1943, that is, nine weeks after Bischoff's letter, and after completion of the crematoria. Among other things, it deals with the results of initial operation of the crematory. According to Prüfer, each of Crematories I and II could cremate 800 bodies daily, while each of the smaller Crematories III and IV could cremate 400, for a total of 2400." (p. 634)*

Actually, Van Pelt has simply expropriated a discovery of Pressac's. I am not exaggerating when I report that this "newly discovered" document was in fact discovered by Pressac seven years earlier, in 1995. He stumbled across it while researching the archives of EMS (Erfurter Mälzerei und Speicherbau.) In an article which appeared in 1998, Pressac summarized its contents as follows:<sup>12</sup>

*"The question of capacity of the crematories at Auschwitz-Birkenau is answered in an internal memo written by Prüfer on Sep. 8, 1942, and bearing the heading 'Reichsführer SS, Berlin-Lichterfelde-West, Krematorium Auschwitz: Confidential and Secret!' The memo states that the three double-muffle ovens of Crematory I could cremate 250 bodies daily, the four triple-muffle ovens of Crematory II 800 daily; those of Crematory III likewise 800; the two four-muffle ovens of Crematory IV 400 daily; and those of Crematory V likewise 400. Theoretically this gives a total capacity of 2,650 bodies per day, which was never realized. This memo, written by the best known German cremation specialist of the time, shows that the total cremation capacity of 4,756 bodies per day, as stated by Auschwitz Central Building Administration in a report for Berlin dated June 28, 1943, is greatly exaggerated."*

Thus this "sensational" document dates from September 8, 1942, not September 1943. This means it was written at a time when the crematories at Birkenau did not yet exist and thus cannot be considered an indicator of initial operational efficiency.

Pressac has not yet published this document, so I must rely on his evaluation and summarization. For a more detailed

treatment of the technical problems raised in this article, please refer to my two-volume work on the subject.<sup>13</sup>

As I have emphasized above, the Birkenauer crematories had not yet been constructed as of September 8, 1942. On or about August 23, the first triple-muffle oven had gone into operation in the crematory at Buchenwald; it was practically identical with the Birkenau model. There is no evidence to suggest that Prüfer knew anything about the capacity of this setup. On the other hand, we know that the average mortality at Buchenwald during the period August 23 to September 8 was around 10 deaths per day.<sup>14</sup> Thus, the alleged cremation of 800 bodies in 5 ovens, 160 bodies per day in a triple-muffle oven, could not possibly have taken place; it is just an extrapolation. However, this latter hypothesis is likewise technically unsupported. Even the Ignis Machine Works models in the crematory at Theresienstadt<sup>15</sup> needed around 35 minutes per cremation,<sup>16</sup> which corresponds to a theoretical maximal capacity of 41 bodies per oven per day and 123 bodies total for three ovens. Furthermore they burned oil rather than coke, which greatly increased efficiency. They also used an excellent, much improved system for introducing combustion air, which they had taken over from Volckmann-Ludwig Ovens. The Topf Oven System was downright primitive in comparison. Finally, the Ignis ovens utilized a huge muffle. This made possible an extremely efficient cremation system whose performance simply could not be achieved by the Topf ovens. Under these circumstances, it is impossible that a triple-muffle Birkenau oven, which necessarily worked at a lower temperature, could accomplish 53 cremations per muffle per day (160÷3). A capacity of 50 cremations (400÷8) per day using the eight-muffle ovens is likewise impossible.

From all this we conclude that Prüfer's memo of September 8, 1942 does not reflect reliable data, but rather wishful thinking.

Did Prüfer really believe he could build a coke-fired cremation oven that would cremate a body in less than half an hour on average? I doubt it, for the simple reason that Prüfer was very competent in the field of cremation. In his first proposal regarding the future Crematory II, Prüfer had in mind a triple-muffle oven such as did not yet exist, which could reduce to ashes two bodies within half an hour.<sup>17</sup> Obviously he was envisioning a kind of oven which was radically different from anything in existence, something patterned on an installation for large-scale cremation. However, the ovens which were subsequently built were all designed to cremate one body per muffle.

In the memo of Sep. 8, 1942, the capacity attributed to Crematory I is likewise enormously exaggerated. In the previous year, Prüfer himself had stated to the SS Department for New Construction at Mauthausen Concentration Camp that the double-muffle oven could cremate a maximum of 144 bodies in 24 hours:<sup>18</sup>

*"Our Herr Prüfer has already informed you that two bodies per hour can be cremated in the proposed oven."*

Thus Prüfer was fraudulently attributing to the double-muffle ovens of Auschwitz the same capacity as the muffles of the oven at Gusen, a satellite camp of Mauthausen. According to a letter from the Topf firm to the SS Department for New



Construction at Mauthausen,<sup>19</sup> this oven "...in approximately 10 hours, can cremate 30 to 36 bodies."<sup>20</sup> This was made possible by an efficient forced-draught installation as well as a special muffle grate. Even the resistance movement at Auschwitz Camp, which consistently supplied fantastically exaggerated numbers of exterminations, was content to report a capacity of 200 bodies daily for Crematory I.<sup>21</sup>

A letter dated July 10, 1942 from Bischoff to Stutthof Concentration Camp states that the five triple-muffle ovens of the future Crematory II were designed for an anticipated camp population of 30,000. This indicates that Prüfer had already abandoned his earlier idea of cremating two bodies simultaneously in a single muffle. In order to play along a potential customer for his firm, however, Bischoff stuck to the overly optimistic assumption of a cremation time of 30 minutes per body. This is the reason why he wrote: "According to Topf & Söhne of Erfurt, each cremation takes around a half hour." Practical experiments with these ovens soon exposed Prüfer's wishful thinking. After the war he stated that the ovens of Crematory II (and Crematory III as well, since they were exact copies) were able to cremate only one body per muffle per hour. My sources for this are the interrogations of Engineer Prüfer as carried out by Soviet authorities of the counterespionage organization SMERSH between 1946 and 1948 and published by Gerald Fleming.<sup>22</sup>

In the session of March 5, 1946, the Soviet interrogator wanted to know:<sup>23</sup>

*"How many bodies were cremated per hour at Auschwitz?"*

Prüfer responded:

*"In a crematory with 5 ovens and 15 muffles, fifteen bodies were cremated."*

This means an average cremation time of one hour per body per muffle and indicates that the theoretical maximum capacity of Crematory IV (and each of the ovens of Crematory V as well) in a 24-hour period was 192 bodies—half the number given by Prüfer on 8 Sep., 1942.

At his interrogation on March 19, 1946 Prüfer elaborated as follows:<sup>24</sup>

*"I have mentioned the enormous load to which the over-taxed ovens were subjected. I told Chief Engineer Sander I was worried about whether the ovens could withstand the excessive load. In my presence, two bodies were placed in one muffle, instead of a single body, and the ovens were unable to handle the load"* (my emphasis)

Thus the simultaneous cremation of two bodies in one muffle was impossible. I am speaking of course of rational economical cremation, in which the muffles will not be damaged and the time requirement as well as consumption of coke are not doubled.

We note that the above-mentioned document alone suffices to contradict the assertion that the crematories of Birkenau could have been used for criminal purposes. It shows that there was precisely one muffle for every 2,000 prisoners; that is to say, the 46 muffles of the Birkenau Crematory were designed for 92,000 prisoners. According to future plans of the SS, however, the camp was to receive 140,000 inmates. Therefore 70 muffles would have been necessary,<sup>25</sup> and the

number of available muffles was in fact inadequate for the planned camp expansion. How could the crematories, in addition to processing the normal load of bodies of prisoners who died of natural causes, have possibly processed the victims of mass murder?

Meyer resorts to all kinds of reckless calculating tricks to answer that question. At first he maintains that the length of cremation lasted "one and a half hours" (p. 634). This was accurate for civilian ovens during the thirties, but not for the ovens of Birkenau, for which the average cremation time was one hour, as we have seen. The time mentioned by Prüfer in his interrogation corresponds exactly to practical results of several experiments which I carried out in my studies of cremation.<sup>26</sup>

Starting with this interval, Meyer reckoned that, with hypothetical round-the-clock operation, each oven could cremate 16 bodies per day (1,440 minutes ÷ 90 minutes per body = 16). He calculated that, in the 15 ovens of Crematories II and III, the daily cremation of 16 bodies x 15 muffles = 240 cremations. In conjunction with this he made the startling assumption that each muffle could be loaded with three bodies at a time. This raised the total number of bodies (3x240) to 720 per day. For Crematories IV and V he calculated a capacity of 48 x 8 = 384 cremations per day.

Without doubt Meyer's second hypothesis (the simultaneous cremation of three bodies in a single muffle) contradicts both the technological possibilities of the time<sup>27</sup> and Prüfer's testimony.

## 5. The Second Basis of Meyer's Thesis

The second basis for Meyer's thesis is a declaration attributed to Rudolf Höß, which he relates as follows:

*"Van Pelt provided a second surprise with the revelation of a statement made by Höß during cross examination before the Krakau court in 1947: 'After eight or ten hours, the crematories were no longer available for further use. It was impossible to keep them in continuous operation.' Using a mean average of nine hours of daily operation,<sup>[28]</sup> each muffle yields, with three bodies per muffle, 18 cremations per day. In Crematories I and II inclusive 270 each, which makes 540 total; in Crematories III and IV 144 each, 288 together. The grand total is 828 per day."* (p. 635)

The alleged statement by Rudolf Höß could be the result of a misunderstanding or a mistake in translation. I say this because, during the hearing on March 11, 1947, the former commandant of Auschwitz gave a completely irrelevant answer to a question about the capacities of the crematories. Specifically he stated that Crematories II and III could cremate "...in a period of 24 hours (na przestrzeni 24 godzin), not more than 2,000 persons each".<sup>29</sup> Technically seen, this statement by Höß is absolutely impossible. We know that the coke-burning Topf double-muffle oven at Gusen cremated 677 corpses between October 31 and November 12, 1941, and was in operation an average of 18 hours per day. The length of the Birkenau ovens' daily operation was limited by the necessity of cleaning the combustion grates. The removal of coke cinders<sup>30</sup> was possible only when the oven was not

burning, and required about a four-hour pause in operation (for cooling, cleaning and reheating.) Therefore, the maximum operation time was on average 20 hours per day.<sup>31</sup> Thus we get for Crematoriums II and III a daily capacity of 300, and 160 bodies for Crematoriums IV and V.

In the article which I wrote in conjunction with Engineer Franco Deana "The Crematorium Ovens of Auschwitz-Birkenau,"<sup>32</sup> I calculated, in consideration of the numerous operational lapses and breakdowns of the crematoriums, that Crematoriums II and III together were in operation 971 days, Crematoriums IV and V altogether 359 days.<sup>33</sup> In his Footnote 19, Meyer accepts and includes them in his arguments as follows:

*"The conclusion is simple: on these 971 days of operation in I and II 262,170 bodies were cremated; in III and IV in 359 days 51,696; altogether 313,866 dead who were cremated in Birkenau."* (p. 636)

With this, Meyer multiplies the days of crematorium operation by the highest possible number of cremations:  $971 \times 270 = 262,170$  cremations in Crematoriums II and III;  $359 \times 144 = 51,696$  in Crematoriums IV and V.

With these exercises in calculation Meyer commits an incredible error of logic. He is postulating not a purely theoretical maximum of cremations, but rather an actual number, as though the crematoriums had been operated full blast every day with a full load, never hindered by malfunctions and breakdowns! Here we must make clear that by "days of operation" of the crematoriums is meant simply every day on which the crematoriums were technically functional. It does not mean that they were in constant operation. Here Meyer is committing a double fallacy: First he makes the assumption that the crematoriums were in actual operation every day they were functional; second, he assumes that they were operated at full capacity as well.

Meyer's unfortunate inability to think logically leads him to massively overestimate the actual number of cremated bodies. For the year 1943, we are able to compare the numbers which he alleges, with the accurately documented numbers.

Beginning with March 15, when large scale cremations in Crematorium II began, until October 25, 1943, a total of 607 tons of coke and 96 cubic meters of firewood were delivered to all the crematoriums of Auschwitz-Birkenau. Since the heat value of the firewood corresponds to 21.5 tons of coke, we can simplify and speak of an additional 628.5 tons of coke. During this period Crematorium II was in operation for 110 days, Crematorium III for 123 days, Crematorium IV 50 days, and Crematorium V 82 days.<sup>34</sup> In addition, Crematorium I in the original camp continued in operation until July 17, 1943, thus, 125 days. To cremate a moderately emaciated corpse, the double-muffle oven needed around 25 kilograms of coke; the triple-muffle oven around 19 kilos, and the eight-muffle, 14 kilos.<sup>35</sup> If we take into consideration the mean average of all these figures, as well as the length of time the crematoriums were in operation, we arrive at an average coke consumption of around 20 kilos per cremation. With the 628.5 tons of coke delivered to the crematoriums, one arrives at a theoretical maximum of 31,400 bodies ( $628,500 \div 20$ ). I say "theoretical maximum" because a very considerable part of the coke was

consumed in preheating the ovens, rather than for actual cremation.

Using his basis for calculations, however, Meyer estimated that the following numbers of cremations took place during the period in question:

- Crematoriums II and III:  $233 \times 270 = 62,910$
- Crematoriums IV and V:  $132 \times 144 = 19,008$
- Crematorium I:  $125 \times 108^{36} = 13,500$

This gives a total of 95,418 cremations, which is more than three times the theoretical maximum.

According to the death books of Auschwitz, around 16,000 prisoners died between March 15 and October 25, 1943 (the number of continuing registrations extends from around 15,000 on March 15 to 31,000 on October 25.) According to this, each cremation (including warming the oven) required around 39 kilos of coke per body ( $628,500 \div 16$ ).

In Danuta Czech's *Kalendarium*, however, it is alleged that around 118,000 people were gassed in this same period. If this were true, a total of around 134,000 corpses would have been on hand.<sup>37</sup> Each corpse would have been cremated by around 4.7 kilos of coke, which would be radically impossible under the laws of thermodynamics.<sup>38</sup> The cremation of 16,000 persons who died of natural causes corresponds easily to the documented consumption of coke, but the cremation of 118,000 victims of poison gas could not have been possible under any conditions. This is proof that there were no deaths from poison gas.

This leads to another example of the crass absurdity of Meyer's structure of argumentation. In July of 1943, Crematorium II was in operation from the eighteenth until the thirty-first of the month, but Crematorium III was in operation the whole month; together they were in operation a total of 45 days. According to Meyer's calculations they could have cremated 12,150 bodies ( $45 \times 270$ )—and therefore did cremate that number. According to the death books, however, 2,000 people died that month. Danuta Czech mentions in her *Kalendarium* a single gassing of 440 French Jews, on July 20. If one proceeds from the hypothesis that the gasings actually took place, the number of bodies would have risen to around 2,400, or a fifth of the number derived from Meyer's calculations.

Meyer ignores still another significant argument, which I develop in *Dissecting the Holocaust*. That is the maximum service life of the fire resistant masonry in the Birkenau ovens, which, as I have shown, amounted to around 3,000 firings per muffle. Given 46 muffles, this gives a maximum number of 138,000 cremations.<sup>39</sup> After reaching this number, it would have been absolutely necessary for Building Maintenance to replace the firebrick. However, in the correspondence between the Topf company, which constructed the crematoriums, and Central Building Maintenance there is no mention whatsoever of such an extensive undertaking.<sup>40</sup> This provides still more evidence that the theoretically highest number of cremations in the Birkenau cremation ovens is around 138,000 rather than 314,000.

## 6. The Number of Victims

Let us now consider the method Meyer used to calculate the total number of Auschwitz victims.

He begins with a figure of 313,866 bodies cremated in Birkenau (which he rounds off to 314,000), then adds 50,000 cremated under open skies prior to November 1942. Then he adds another 57,000 for the period from December 1942 until March 1943, as well as 12,000 cremated in the base camp. These produce a grand total of 433,000 cremated bodies. In order to reach his final goal of 510,000 bodies, Meyer still needs 77,000 bodies. He recruits them from among the Hungarian Jews.<sup>41</sup> These dead bodies, he writes, were all cremated in the open air.

Of his total of 510,000 corpses, he tells us, 326,000 were incinerated in crematories (314,000 in Crematories II–V and 12,000 in Crematory I.) The remaining 184,000 bodies were cremated under open skies.

He believes that 356,000 prisoners were gassed, while another 154,000 died of “natural causes.” Meyer arrives at his “gassed” figure by taking the 315,000 unregistered deportees and adding the 40,564 who, according to Danuta Czech, were gassed “in October of 1944 alone” (see p. 638). The latter, he says, were incinerated in the crematories. However, since he accepts my figures for the crematory operational days, and Crematories II, III, and V were all functional in October, he would have to take the theoretical maximum number for that month of 21,204 (Crematories II and III:  $31 \times 270 \times 2 = 16,740$  bodies; Crematory V:  $144 \times 31 = 4,464$  bodies, altogether 21,204.) But why does Meyer accept the figure of 40,564 cremations in October 1944?

### 7. The Number of Cremated Bodies

As we have seen, Meyer maintains that around 314,000 people were converted to ashes in the Birkenau crematories. Let us now analyze this figure.

We have already pointed out that the numbers suggested by Meyer for the period March 15 to October 25, 1943, as well as October 1944, are infinitely exaggerated. For the first period his calculations produced 95,418 cremations, while the theoretical maximum number was 31,400. For the second period he suggests 40,564, even though his own system of calculating produces a theoretical maximum of 21,204. For these eight months we are dealing with a total of  $95,418 + 40,564 - (31,400 + 21,204) = 83,378$  postulated bodies which were cremated!

Between November 1943 and September 1944, according to Czech's *Kalendarium*, 95,000 people were gassed and cremated, not including the Hungarian Jews and those from Lodz. Concerning the first batch Meyer writes that they were cremated under the open sky, while he makes no mention of the second batch. According to his logic their bodies must have been cremated in the open, as well. Furthermore, if we deduct the individual figures of cremated bodies from the grand total, we get  $(314,000 - (31,400 + 21,204 + 95,000)) =$  around 166,400, too many to have been cremated. Who could these have been?

According to the estimates of F. Piper, around 80,000 registered prisoners died in Auschwitz in 1943,<sup>42</sup> and around 30,000 in 1944–45.<sup>43</sup> As for 1943, we have already calculated, on the basis of coke deliveries, that a maximum of around 31,400 bodies could have been cremated for the pe-

riod from the beginning of operation of Crematory II until the end of October. This leaves the months of November and December, in which, if we extrapolate the number proposed by F. Piper, approximately 13,500 prisoners died, bringing the maximum number of dead and cremated to a total of around 44,500. Even in this case, however, there are still  $(166,400 - 44,500 =)$  121,900 postulated bodies cremated. This is more than a third of all the cremations that took place during the existence of the camp, according to Meyer

### 8. Irreconcilable Contradictions

Fritjof Meyer's thesis contains contradictions which are even more glaring than those we have mentioned so far. He assumes a number of 510,000 dead, of whom 356,000 are presumed to have been gassed. In addition he alleges that the alleged mass murders occurred “for the most part” in the “Bunkers” of Birkenau. Since he rejects the theory of mass gassings in the Birkenau crematories, however, and since the story of the “gas vans” on which it depended has been rejected by even orthodox historiography as propaganda of the immediate postwar period, it is obvious that the alleged 356,000 gassing victims met their death in the so-called “Bunkers.” As far as method is concerned, Meyer's thesis is a black hole of logic, and nothing else.

As we have already noted, he is in fact defending the proposition that all gassings took place in the “Bunkers.”

*“It is not possible here to discuss the point that the existing evidence, i.e., documents pertaining to the refitting of these buildings, which were not originally designed to be gassing cellars (for example, insertion shafts and devices for measuring gas) as well as the well-known witness accounts, rather indicates that attempts were made in March and April of 1943 to use the mortuary cellars for mass murder in the early summer of 1943.*

*Apparently, the tests were not successful, both because the ventilation was counterproductive<sup>3(2)</sup> and because the expected masses of victims did not arrive during the ensuing eleven months. The actual commission of the genocide probably took place mainly in the two converted farmhouses outside of the camp. The foundations of the first of these houses, the ‘White House,’ or ‘Bunker I’ has recently been discovered.”* (p. 632)

With the above statement, Meyer is challenging the traditional theory of homicidal gas chambers in the Birkenau Crematories. He says he is relying on “existing evidence” but he does not specify a single item.

It is all too clear what has moved Meyer to this incisive revision: It is the evidence provided by revisionist researchers, whose conclusiveness he cannot and will not acknowledge. Meyer disputes the gassings, despite the fact that Jean-Claude Pressac collected dozens of documents from which he extracted around forty “criminal traces.” These are best described as “arguable” but there is no doubt that the documents themselves point to cellar morgues. Pressac and other exterminationists assumed they were homicidal gas chambers as well. Thus Meyer transfers the location of the alleged mass murders to the “Bunkers,” although not a single document indicates that they were used by the Central Building Ad-

ministration of Auschwitz for anything, not even as ordinary houses—not to mention mass murder!

Meyer quotes a “Construction Contract of the Building Administration to WVHA in Berlin” which deals with the “re-modeling of an existing house for special purposes” (no blueprints are available). The costs ran to “14,242 Reichmarks each” (his note #7). As I have explained elsewhere, however, this document has absolutely nothing to do with the alleged “Bunkers.”<sup>44</sup> This is because the construction contract appeared in a “Cost Proposal for Refurbishing of the Auschwitz Prisoner of War Camp of the Waffen-SS” dated October 1, 1943. The reason why Meyer hesitates to mention the date is all too obvious.<sup>45</sup> Furthermore, this document contains nothing more than reference to a “house for special purposes.” It mentions one house but not two houses, so Meyer’s statement that “both houses are mentioned” is false and misleading. Furthermore this house is mentioned in the “Preliminary Report on Enlargement of the Waffen-SS POW Camp in Auschwitz” dated September 30, 1943. It is listed in Construction Zone III rather than among the outlying buildings, however. It was not outside the camp, like the so-called “Bunkers,” but rather inside, along with Houses 903–914. All these houses were located in the area of Construction Zone III. They were taken over by *Zentralbauleitung* (Central Building Administration) and numbered as housing units, as is shown in Plan Nr. 1733 dated October 5, 1942. The house was used as “Temporary Sauna and Hygiene Station for the Troops.” In a letter from Bischoff to Kammler dated January 9, 1943, he mentions the following:<sup>46</sup>

*“A disinfection device manufactured by Werner and a heater of the forced-air type manufactured by Hochheim, along with a Sauna of the same type, have been provisionally installed for the troops in the existing building in Birkenau. They have been in operation since December 1942.”*

If Mayer disputes the existence of homicidal gas chambers in the crematories, for which the Exterminationists have produced dozens of consistently misinterpreted documents, how can he then speak of homicidal gas chambers in the “Bunkers” for whose existence there is no documentary evidence whatsoever?

By disputing homicidal gassings in the crematories, Meyer is also questioning the credibility of numerous eyewitness accounts. Why then believe the less numerous accounts of gassings in the “Bunkers”?

The whole thing is all the more foolish because the story of the “Bunkers” and their homicidal function is founded entirely on eyewitness accounts. To accept the “Bunker” eyewitness accounts while dismissing the crematory eyewitness accounts of homicidal gassings is just one more logical *salto mortale* on Meyer’s part.

In spite of everything, we have to credit Fritjof Meyer with considerable moral courage. His article, to an even greater degree than Pressac’s, proves that a serious technical debate with the Auschwitz problem represents a fall over the precipice for orthodox Holocaust historiography. Sooner or later, after the x<sup>th</sup> reduction of number of victims and the x<sup>th</sup> concession to revisionists, orthodox historians must arrive at the

same conclusion at which revisionist historiography arrived years ago.

## Notes

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(4) (2002), pp. 378-385; translated by James M. Damon

- <sup>1</sup> *Die Krematorien von Auschwitz: Die Technik des Massenmordes*, Piper, Munich-Zürich 1994.
- <sup>2</sup> *Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers*, The Beate Klarsfeld Foundation, New York 1989.
- <sup>3</sup> *Zeszyty oświęcimskie*, 1995, pp. 309-329.
- <sup>4</sup> *Auschwitz: Das Ende einer Legende*, in: Herbert Verbeke (ed.), *Auschwitz: Nackte Fakten. Eine Erwiderung an Jean-Claude Pressac*, Vrij Historisch Onderzoek, Berchem 1995, p. 162.
- <sup>5</sup> Just as Judge Gray wrote in his verdict following the Irving-Lipstadt trial (11 April 2000, Point 7.125), Van Pelt assures us that the amount of coke required to cremate a body is “no more than 3.5 kilograms.” Proportionally, that is the same as saying that Schumacher’s Ferrari F2002 can go 1600 kilometers per hour!
- <sup>6</sup> See my article “Supplementary Response to John C. Zimmermann on his ‘Body Disposal at Auschwitz’ ” at: [www.russgranata.com/Risposta-new-eng.html](http://www.russgranata.com/Risposta-new-eng.html).
- <sup>7</sup> *Osteuropa. Zeitschrift für Gegenwartsfragen des Ostens*, No. 5, May 2002, pp. 631-641. The article is available online at [www.vho.org/D/Beitraege/FritjofMeyerOsteuropa.html](http://www.vho.org/D/Beitraege/FritjofMeyerOsteuropa.html).
- <sup>8</sup> F. Piper, *Die Zahl der Opfer von Auschwitz*, Verlag Staatliches Museum in Auschwitz, 1993, p. 202.
- <sup>9</sup> *Die Krematorien von Auschwitz*, *op. cit.* (note 1), p. 202.
- <sup>10</sup> RGVA (Rossiiskii Gosudarstvenni Voienni Archiv), formerly TCIDK (Tsentralnii Istoriko-dokumentalnic Kollektii), Moskau, 502-1-83, p. 269.
- <sup>11</sup> *VjffG*, 4(1) (2000), pp. 51-56.
- <sup>12</sup> Jean-Claude Pressac, *Enquête sur les chambres à gaz*, in: *Les Collections de l’Histoire*, Supplement to the magazine *L’Histoire*, No. 3, October 1998, p. 41.
- <sup>13</sup> *I forn crematori di Auschwitz. Studio storico-tecnico in collaborazione del dott. ing. Franco Deana*; Anticipated publishing date with Edizioni di Ar, Padua, is early 2003.
- <sup>14</sup> 335 prisoners died at Buchenwald between 3 and 30 August 1942; 203 died between 31 August and 27 September. *Konzentrationslager Buchenwald. Bericht des internationalen Lagerkomitees Buchenwald*. Weimar, without year, p. 85.
- <sup>15</sup> There are numerous lists of cremations which give the corresponding time required to complete each procedure. See also *I forn crematori di Auschwitz*, *op. cit.* (note 13), Vol. I, 2<sup>nd</sup> part, chapter XI.
- <sup>16</sup> The Ignis-Hüttenbau muffles were 2.6 meters long, as compared to 2 meters for the Topf ovens. Cadavers were encased in a lightweight coffin of unfinished boards and shoved into the muffle. After about 35 minutes the cadaver, dehydrated and disintegrating, was shoved further back in the muffle, where the most important part of cremation took place. Meanwhile another cadaver was placed in the front part of the muffle. In this system two cadavers were always in the muffle, one undergoing dehydration in the front and one undergoing actual cremation in the rear. Introduction of the second cadaver was considered the end of cremation of the first, even though it lasted another 20 or 30 minutes in the oven.
- <sup>17</sup> *Erläuterungsbericht zum Vorentwurf für den Neubau eines Kriegsgefangenenlagers der Waffen-SS Auschwitz O/S*, October 30, 1941. RGVA, 502-1-233, p. 20.
- <sup>18</sup> Letter from the Topf firm addressed to SS Department of New Construction (SS-Neubauleitung) at Mauthausen Concentration Camp, dated November 1, 1941. German Federal Archives, Koblenz, NS4/MA 54.
- <sup>19</sup> Staatsarchiv Weimar, LK 4651.
- <sup>20</sup> This corresponds to a cremation period of 33 to 40 minutes per oven. The grates of the Gusen ovens had eight square openings measuring 30x25 centimeters. After about 35 minutes the remains of the dehydrated disintegrating cadaver fell through these openings into the ash receptacle below, where the principal cremation took place. Meanwhile another cadaver was placed in the muffle, which was now empty. In this system, two cadavers were always in the muffle. The heat was intensified by a bellows, which made possible replenishing the consumed coke every hour on each grate. In the triple-muffle oven, the bars of the muffle openings were 21 centimeters in diameter, just as in civilian ovens. The ca-

- daver remains fell into the ash receptacle only during an advanced stage of the cremation process. It took place after approximately one hour.
- <sup>21</sup> *Obóz koncentracyjny Oświęcim w świetle akt Delagatury Rządu na Kraj*, In: *Zeszyty oświęcimskie*, special edition I, 1968, p. 42. On 4 March 1943, resistance fighters attributed to the “new crematorium” (Krema II) the fantastic daily capacity of 3,000 cadavers! Same as above, pp. 93f.
- <sup>22</sup> *Hitler and the Final Solution*, University of California Press, 1994.
- <sup>23</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 200.
- <sup>24</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 207.
- <sup>25</sup> Map of the POW camp dated October 6, 1942. *Vojenský Historický Archiv*, Prag, Fond OT 31 (2)/2.
- <sup>26</sup> *I forni crematori di Auschwitz*, *op. cit.* (note 13), Vol. I, sec. part, chapter VIII.
- <sup>27</sup> *Ibid.*, chapter IX, 2. At that time, the only other existing facilities in which multiple cadavers per muffle were burned were ovens for animal cremation. In these extremely efficient devices, constructed by the Kori firm in Berlin, 300 kilograms of flesh could be cremated within 13.5 hours using 300 kilograms of fossil fuel. This would correspond to simultaneous cremation of 12 cadavers weighing 75 kilograms each, in a period of 67 minutes and using 25 kilograms of fuel. Thus if simultaneous cremation of 3 cadavers per muffle had been possible in the Birkenau ovens, they would have lasted three times as long and required three times as much fuel as single muffle cremation and would not have been the least bit more economical.
- <sup>28</sup> Since Bischoff’s letter dated 28 June 1943 mentions “24 hour utilization” in describing crematory capacity, this document would have to be a falsification, according to Meyer’s theory.
- <sup>29</sup> Archiwum Głównej Komisji Badania Zbrodni Przeciwko Narodowi Polskiemu/Instytutu Pamięci Narodowej, Warsaw, NTN, 105, p. 99.
- <sup>30</sup> By this is meant the incombustible remains of the coke, which melt in the high temperatures. They then drip through the fuel, are cooled by incoming air and coalesce on the grill. Here they form a deposit which clogs the spaces through which air flows.
- <sup>31</sup> *I forni crematori di Birkenau*, *op. cit.* (note 13), Vol. I, second part, chapter IX, 1.
- <sup>32</sup> In: Ernst Gauss, *Dissecting the Holocaust*, Theses and Dissertations Press, Capshaw, AL 2000.
- <sup>33</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 403.
- <sup>34</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 402. For Crematories II and III, deduct the 67 days between 26 October and 31 December from the operational days given (respectively 177 and 190).
- <sup>35</sup> *I forni crematori di Auschwitz*, *op. cit.* (note 13), Vol. I, second part, chapter X. Coke consumption was determined on the basis of actual coke consumption at the camp in Gusen.
- <sup>36</sup> According to Meyer’s hypothesis, 18 cadavers per muffle per day = 108 cadavers per day in 6 muffles.
- <sup>37</sup> No witnesses or historians have alleged that there were open-air cremations during this period.
- <sup>38</sup> According to him, cremation of three cadavers required 14.1 kilograms of coke. In reality, a triple-muffle oven operating at 800 degrees Centigrade required around 17 kilograms just to compensate for loss of heat from conduction and radiation.
- <sup>39</sup> I discuss John C. Zimmermann’s counterarguments, which were based on ignorance and deceit, in my article against him. Cf. note 6.
- <sup>40</sup> In addition to the absence of documents related hereto, the list of invoices which the Topf firm submitted for work and deliveries in and around Auschwitz proves that this work never took place.
- <sup>41</sup> Meyer is assuming here that 180,000 Hungarian Jews were deported to Auschwitz, of whom 100,000 to 110,000 were transferred to other camps and 70,000 – 80,000 were gassed (page 638).
- <sup>42</sup> This number is actually greatly exaggerated.
- <sup>43</sup> F. Piper, *op. cit.* (note 8), p. 164.
- <sup>44</sup> Carlo Mattogno, „*Sonderbehandlung*” *ad Auschwitz. Genesi e significato*, Edizioni di Ar, 2001, pp. 77f.
- <sup>45</sup> The document also mentions construction projects which were already completed, but F. Meyer, whose only familiarity with it was through R. J. Van Pelt, is unaware of this.
- <sup>46</sup> RGVA, 502-1-332, p. 46a.

## Poison Gas *Über Alles*

By Friedrich Paul Berg

Twenty years ago I had the good fortune to spend many hours with Austin J. App, who was one of the first Holocaust revisionists and an American of German descent. Almost as soon as the war had ended, he had begun to speak out and write against the anti-German atrocity claims. He admitted to me decades later during our long talk around 1980 and with great frankness that he had had little to go on in the way of strong evidence or arguments against the horror stories that were filling the newspapers, books and media outlets of that time. What drove him, however, was—and these were his exact words to me—“his faith in the inherent goodness and decency of the German people.” I was moved by those words and recognized that the same kind of faith had driven me and many others who I knew. The inherent decency of the Germans has a serious downside which has, I believe, made them especially vulnerable to the propaganda. For the ordinary decent Germans, how could the stories not be true when there were all those trials and eyewitnesses and confessions and so on? In any event, my faith in Germany is shaken by what one

sees there today. Years of Americanization and re-education and terror have had their effect. The moral breakdown and loss of self-pride of the Germans which had not been achieved by the enormous destruction and defeat of two world wars were finally achieved by the holocaust propaganda campaign of which the Nuremberg Trials were only a small part. A major reason for why the propaganda campaign succeeded is precisely because the Germans are a moral people. Americans by contrast would have been far more tenacious because they are surrounded by the kinds of corruption and accommodating to corruption which Germans found almost unimaginable.

Within the revisionist message there is an implied, unstated message, which shocks most listeners and should therefore be recognized and dealt with by revisionists. When a revisionist says the Holocaust story is a hoax or substantially false he or she is, in effect, also saying there is something seriously wrong with America. This wonderful, greatest of all countries with boundless freedoms and what to many seems like a bril-

liant, totally free press where all ideas are thoroughly thrashed out in the open so that the country as a whole continues on the path to near perfection could not possibly have made such an enormous, collective error. The revisionists must be wrong on that basis alone. We may as well spit it out for all to hear: there is a lot that is seriously wrong with this country. When people like Tom Brokaw write best-selling books about America's wartime generation being "the greatest generation," they are criminally insane.

Twenty-five years ago Arthur Butz referred to the Jewish extermination claims as a hoax in order, as he explained, to suggest that those claims constituted something "cheap and vulgar." I share that view and would add that the Holocaust story is also obscene and racist and downright crazy. The mass gassings were carried out supposedly with either Diesel engine exhaust or cyanide. Although mass gassings with either diesel exhaust or cyanide are certainly possible—a critical examination of the details shows the claims to be either totally impossible or so absurd that they are unbelievable. But one must be cautious with one's technical analysis and arguments. It does no good to insist that impossibly large fans would have been required to ventilate a pile of corpses, or to insist that one could not possibly have used cyanide for murder because of the proximity to crematory ovens or to insist on any number of other quickie arguments that have no real merit. One fools hardly anyone except the faithful and sooner or later their faith is thoroughly shaken as well, as the truth emerges. Prosecutors who are brought against us are well armed against the quickie, false arguments. The point is that the Germans certainly could have committed mass gassings with technology that was readily available to them throughout German-occupied Europe, even within the concentration camps. The terrible problem for the exterminationists is however in the details—which are generally technical in nature. The devil for them is in the technical details.

### The Abundance of Survivors

The Holocaust story is a hoax because no one was murdered by the "Nazis" in gas chambers or gas vans, and because the total number of Jews who could have possibly died in German-occupied territory is minuscule compared to what is alleged. Just a few years ago, Steven Spielberg proudly announced to the world in an Academy Award acceptance speech that "there are 350,000 survivors of the Holocaust alive today."<sup>1</sup> Other sources, including Israeli sources, have in recent years given even higher numbers.<sup>2</sup> All such numbers more than fifty years after the war would be impossible if there had been any kind of physical extermination of the Jewish people under German control. It never happened!

### The Killers

Most of the alleged three million gassings were supposedly carried out with Diesel exhaust, which is technically absurd since Diesel exhaust contains hardly any carbon monoxide. This is well-known to anyone who owns a Diesel-driven car or truck from their own state vehicle inspection results (just check the auto emission inspection procedures for diesel cars or trucks in any state.) Zyklon-B was only used by the "Nazis" to keep people alive using well-designed gas chambers rather than the makeshift, Rube Goldberg-like<sup>3</sup> confabulations alleged for mass murder at Auschwitz for example. Although the U.S. Army War Crimes Branch assigned doctors such as Dr. Charles P. Larson to perform autopsies on many of the thousands of dead found in Germany's concentration camps at the end of the war, those doctors never found any forensic evidence of deaths from poison or poison gas. No such evidence was ever presented at the Nuremberg trials where precisely such evidence would have been expected. The killer had been disease, especially typhus, brought on primarily as an indirect but inevitable result of Allied bombing.<sup>4</sup>

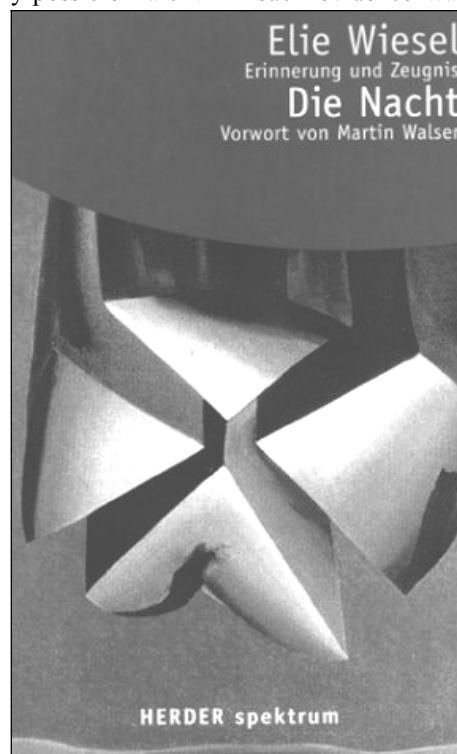
### The Choices

In the book for which Elie Wiesel is most famous, namely *Night*,<sup>5</sup> which is recommended reading in public schools across this country, Wiesel paints an horrendous picture of life in Auschwitz from April 1944 to January 1945, when he was there. Although many hundreds of thousands of Jews were supposedly gassed there during this time, Wiesel makes no mention of gasings or gas chambers anywhere in his book, as Jürgen Graf and Robert Faurel have pointed out to us.<sup>6</sup> He does however claim to have seen flames from the chimneys and Dr. Mengele wearing a monocle. Both claims are clearly lies.

When the Russians were about to overrun Auschwitz in January 1945, both Elie and his father "chose" to go west with the retreating "Nazis" and SS rather than be "liberated" by America's greatest ally. They could have told the whole world about Auschwitz within days—but, both Elie and his father as well as countless thousands of other Jews chose instead to trek west with the "Nazis" on foot at night in the middle of one of the coldest winters and continue working for the defense of the Reich thereafter. In effect, they chose to collaborate.

Some of Wiesel's exact words in *Night* are:<sup>7</sup>

*"The choice was in our hands. For once we could decide our fate for ourselves. We could both stay in the hospital, where I could, thanks to my doctor, get him [the father] entered as a patient or nurse. Or else we could follow the others. 'Well, what shall we do, father?' He was silent. 'Let's be evacuated with the others,' I told him."*



Elie's tale in this regard is corroborated by other "survivor" accounts including that of Primo Levi. In Levi's book *Survival in Auschwitz*, we have his words for January 17, 1945:

*"It was not a question of reasoning: I would probably also have followed the instinct of the flock if I had not felt so weak: fear is supremely contagious, and its immediate reaction is to make one try to run away."*

But he's talking here about running away with the "Nazis"—and not "Nazis" who were mere rank and file party members but supposedly the worst of the worst. He's talking here about running away with the same "Nazis" and SS who had supposedly carried out the greatest imaginable mass murders of Jews and others in the entire history of the universe. He's talking about running away with the people who supposedly did the actual killings of thousands daily for several years. But, according to his own words he would probably have gone with them nonetheless, except that he was not feeling good that day; he was feeling weak. The "fear" that he overcame was clearly fear of the Russians and not the 'Nazis;' there is no mention of fear of what the "Nazis" and SS might do when the evacuees entered the forest or sometime later.

The choices that were made here in January 1945 are enormously important. In the entire history of Jewish suffering at the hands of gentiles what moment in time could possibly be more dramatic than this precious moment when Jews could choose between, on the one hand, liberation by the Soviets with the chance to tell the whole world about the evil "Nazis" and to help bring about their defeat—and the other choice of going with the "Nazi" mass murderers and continuing working for them and to help preserve their evil regime. In the vast majority of cases, they chose to go with the "Nazis".

The momentous choice brings Shakespeare's Hamlet to mind: *"To remain, or not to remain; that is the question": to remain and be liberated by Soviet troops and risk their slings and rifles in order to tell the whole world about the outrageous "Nazis"—or, take arms and feet against a sea of cold and darkness in order to collaborate with the very same outrageous "Nazis."* Oh what heartache—ay there's the rub! Thus conscience does make cowards of us all.

So what was the final score—here a drum roll seems fitting in the background as Vanna White comes onto the stage with the sealed envelope and the answer to the great riddle. The envelope is torn open and the choice is—drum roll again—according to Levi himself 800 choose to remain in Auschwitz, but 20,000 choose to go and collaborate with the "Nazi" mass murderers. Wow! Such a surprise—already!

We see the same deliberate pro-"Nazi" collaboration in the "survivors" from Schindler's List. In their well-known story, as the Russians were about to overrun Plaszow just thirty miles down the road to the east from Auschwitz in November 1944, Schindler and more than a thousand Jews chose to go west with the retreating "Nazis" rather than hang back and be "liberated" by the Soviets. Some even spent the next several weeks at Auschwitz—and none were gassed, not even in the movie. The hoax has certainly had its day. If there had been any kind of extermination of Jews at all Auschwitz, all of the Jews in Cracow and Plaszow would have known about it as well. All of the Jews who went west in effect also denied the

Holocaust albeit only with their hands and feet. The Jews themselves were the first true Holocaust deniers, and it is about time they get all the credit they deserve.

The rather simple analysis of Holocaust survivor tales I have given here is an easy to understand refutation of the hoax in general. I urge all readers to reexamine the survivor accounts for themselves—but critically and systematically. The Internet, with search engines like Google, allows anyone to analyze literally thousands of survivor accounts in seconds for major flaws of the type I have discussed. Just search for keywords like "evacuation" or combinations of words like "holocaust survivor Auschwitz."

One last piece of literature for this discussion is the highly acclaimed book *Sophie's Choice* by William Styron. What does Styron have to say about Sophie or any other Auschwitz survivor going west in January 1945? The book is a novel, but it is an historical novel by a great writer and intellect—or so we are told—and where we might find an explanation or insight for Elie's kind of choice. But there is really nothing there. The important choice Sophie made in the book was between her two children: which one should be killed in the gas chamber and which one should live? Certainly that would have been a heart-wrenching choice and worthy of a great novel—but as to the later choice to go west with the "Nazi" mass murderers, even the murderers of one of those same precious children, there was nothing except for the following:

*"The Russians were coming and the SS wanted the children destroyed. Most of them were Polish; the Jewish children were already dead. They thought of burning them alive in a pit, or shooting them, but they decided to do something that wouldn't show too many marks and evidence. So in the freezing cold they marched the children down to the river and made them take off their clothes and soak them in the water as if they were washing them, and then made them put on these wet clothes again. Then they marched them back to the area in front of the barracks where they had been living and had a roll call. Standing in their wet clothes. The roll call lasted for many, many hours while the children stood wet and freezing and night came. All of the children died of being exposed that day. They died of exposure and pneumonia, very fast."*

If anything like that had actually happened, it would have been all the more reason to stay in Auschwitz and wait for the Soviets to arrive rather than go west with the "Nazis" and the SS. I dare say there is absolutely no serious corroboration of Styron's tale of the freezing children. Although Styron does not tell us, Sophie apparently chose to trek west with the Nazi murderers as well.

### **An Implied Message**

There is an implied but unstated message in Holocaust revisionism which we should address because that message is so shocking that it is actually a major hurdle for our work in general and, therefore, we should deal with it. When we say the Holocaust story is not true, I believe we are, in effect, also saying that there is something seriously wrong with America. Most Americans firmly believe that America is still

far and away the most wonderful, most nearly perfect society in every possible way that the world has ever seen. If the Holocaust is not true, then there must be something seriously wrong here because the accepted story is almost universally embraced by the media, press, and institutions generally. Since America is so wonderful, the revisionists must therefore be wrong—or so the pseudologic goes.

### The Real Holocaust

Japanese and German women and children were murdered by the U.S. by the most excruciatingly horrible means imaginable—by roasting them alive. If the “Nazis” had murdered people in gas chambers, although criminal it would nonetheless have been humane and painless and even civilized compared to what Americans actually did even when, in the very last months of the war, there was no real danger to the U.S.. To this day in America, there is still no sense of shame or apology. Please do not be taken in by the false argument that it was the Germans who started the bombing of civilian targets and therefore have nothing to complain about. It was the British who began the deliberate bombing of civilian targets already in May of 1940, to which Germany, after much restraint, only responded in kind in September of 1940. The Japanese bombing of Pearl Harbor was clearly aimed only at military targets without any consultation with the women and children of Hiroshima or Nagasaki or Tokyo or any other Japanese city.

### Biography

As many of you know, I am an engineer by profession. I received a degree in mining engineering from Columbia University in 1965. I never worked as a mining engineer as such but rather as a mechanical engineer, first for a number of consulting design engineering companies and later as a technical writer and even as an environmental specialist for a government agency at a major New York airport. For a time I had designed poultry processing plants and slaughterhouses. That experience had prompted Keith Stimely to introduce me to an IHR audience in 1983 as a person who had actually worked on the Final Solution to the chicken problem.

### The AIDS Disaster

Keith Stimely was a great editor who is unfortunately no longer with us. He died of AIDS, which is well worth mentioning here because in this terrible worldwide epidemic we actually see one of the horrible consequences of Holocaust propaganda. The logical countermeasures such as quarantine of carriers and other restrictive controls have been known and used effectively for centuries for many diseases from plague to measles, but ever since WW2 they have also been so closely associated with the supposedly fiendish work of “Nazi” doctors that public health officials and doctors dare



*Holocaust victims of Allied mass murderers*

not recommend any of these controls. They fear for their careers and reputations as tens of millions die. This cowardly behavior will certainly contribute enormously to the AIDS disaster—but the key is the Holocaust hoax and its power to intimidate.

We all know how hard it is to break through with our views. The establishment has an aura of respectability that is hard to shake—but it is an aura that it certainly does not deserve at all.

Even if the Holocaust story were true and even if we revisionists were completely wrong, the crimes by the Allies in World War 2, especially the United States, are still far worse. The United States murdered well over a million totally innocent civilians, mostly women and children, by deliberately roasting them to death. If the “Nazis” had ever committed mass murder of millions of innocent people in gas chambers—as horrific and criminal as that would truly be, it would still have been relatively humane, and painless and even civilized compared to the mass murder by incineration that the

U.S. inflicted deliberately upon well over a million civilians. That the numbers of innocent people murdered in America’s incendiary and nuclear attacks is less than the mythical six million attributed to the “Nazi” was certainly not for lack of trying on the part of Americans nor from any lack of popular support—even to this day. Those crimes were as cowardly as they were evil. They actually grew in ferocity as the war approached its inevitable end and long after there was any danger to the United States.

The truly horrible scenes at Bergen-Belsen and Dachau and elsewhere in Germany at the end of World War 2 are falsely and routinely presented as if they were typical of conditions in Germany’s wartime concentration camps; they were not typical at all—far from it. On the contrary, they were a direct,



*This grandmother of Malawi has to provide for her nine grandchildren, since their parents had died of AIDS. Meanwhile, some 10% of all children in Africa are half or full orphans, many of them are HIV positive.<sup>8</sup>*



albeit unintended result of American and British bombing of German civilian targets. The real wartime mass murderers were the Americans.

The fire-bombing of entire German cities was generally a specialty of the British but those attacks would not have been possible without American financing beginning with Lend-Lease in March of 1941. From that point on, the entire British war effort was subject to control from the U.S. and that continued even long after World War 2 as Eisenhower demonstrated in 1956 when he brought the entire British, French, Israeli invasion of Egypt to a speedy halt when he simply threatened to call on the British to pay off American government bonds that had been issued during the war to finance Britain's war effort. The deliberate, terror bombing of civilians was begun by the British in World War 2 in May, June and July of 1940 and not by the Germans lest anyone is uninformed about that fact—furthermore, lest one think it was inevitable that all sides would take up this practice, we have the example of the French military leaders who refused to go along with the British and actually denounced this kind of mass murder from the skies. The German air response only began in August of 1940.

### **Cigarettes**

I find it useful in some of my verbal confrontations to ask someone questions which I recommend to all of you for your own missionary work. I ask the true Holocaust believer whether they believe the Germans murdered millions of innocent people in gas chambers and what do they think about that—after they finish their usually quite pious answer, I ask them how they feel about roasting people to death. They are usually a bit stunned by the question and so the answers vary—but then I remind them that roasting people to death was just what nice, happy-go-lucky all-Americans were actually doing with almost unanimous support from their fellow, happy-go-lucky Americans. Here the responses often turn quite ugly and I have to explain that the women and children and old men of Hiroshima and Nagasaki and Tokyo and every other Japanese city were not responsible for or even aware of the planning of the attack on Pearl Harbor—and that the attack on Pearl Harbor was only upon military installations and not on civilians. Before Americans condemn anyone else in the world for crimes of any sort—whether it be Saddam Hussein or Hit-

ler—they should look at themselves in the mirror. With the World Trade Center bombing in 2001, Americans got a small taste of their own medicine!

The counter-argument to some of what I have said is that it really doesn't matter how you murder people—murder is murder, regardless of whether it is done with poison gas or with flames. At this point, I recommend a simple “cigarette experiment” and here I can also begin to get into my more technical arguments. I suggest that the true Holocaust believer smoke a cigarette by taking a few long, deep breaths. In those deep breaths the CO concentration may be as high as 3% which, if they continue to inhale much longer, should kill them rather quickly—in about a minute or so. But, the whole experience may not be all that agonizing. Dr. Kervorkian admitted that he preferred death by CO for his euthanasia patients over lethal injection and over death from any other gas.<sup>9</sup> It caused the least amount of stress on the patient was the way he put it. Usually, the true believer is surprised but willing to admit that death from cigarette smoke may not be that unpleasant. I then suggest they try the other end of the cigarette; place the burning end of the cigarette on their lip or on any other part of their body. At that point the argument is over. It does make a difference how one murders people.

### **Bergen-Belsen and the Horrific Photographs**

The picture from Bergen-Belsen which appears with this text was taken after the SS had turned the camp over to the British by mutual agreement. It is typical of many pictures that were used to condemn the SS as an organization and many individual members of the SS—often to death. It is also used in



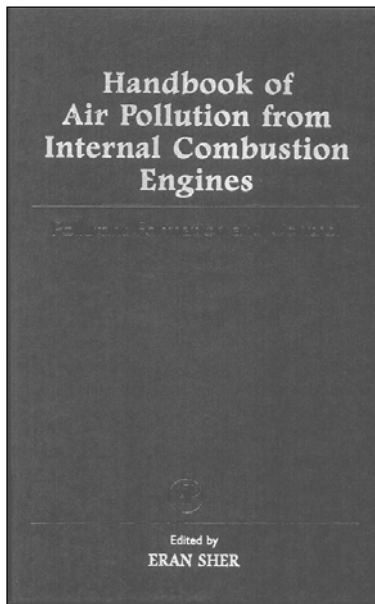
*Mass grave of typhus victims in the camp Bergen Belsen at war's end.*

the endless racist hate campaign to condemn Germans and Germany in general even to this very day. The medical reality is quite different because none of the victims in any of these photos died in gas chambers but from disease. I once had a terrible argument with a Czech émigré doctor of some renown about this subject which I brought to an end by challenging him to let me go to his favorite, major hospital anywhere in America—but, with the authority to line up all of the patients according to how near they were to dying. And then, after they were all lined up—have them take the tops off their pajamas so that I could photograph them. The Czech doctor understood my point instantly—and, needless to say, he could not accept my challenge. If we do not die quickly, we die slowly—often from cancer or AIDS. In such cases, we do not look any better than the victims of Belsen or anywhere else as we meet our ends—that is a fact of life which we should recognize before we condemn anyone. In January of 2001 I was severely ill with cancer. In two weeks I lost more than 25 pounds and did not look much better than the poor souls in this picture.

The following pictures are of innocent German civilians who were murdered in the British firebombing attack on Hamburg in 1943. They did not die from disease. Are these photos any less horrible than any Holocaust-type pictures?

It was not cigarette smoke that the “Nazis” are accused of having used for mass murder for most of their gassings—but Diesel exhaust. Diesel exhaust does smell quite terrible at times—but that has nothing whatever to do with the presence or absence of carbon monoxide, which is totally odorless. But, the smell alone has given rise to the widely held, false belief that diesel exhaust must also be highly toxic—and that the Diesel holocaust claims are plausible. The fact is that it is far from easy to kill people with diesel exhaust—it is so difficult in fact that I regard the claims as absurd, especially when one considers the alternative technology that was available with the gasoline engine—and furthermore, with an additional form of technology which the Germans had readily available at that time but which is no longer widespread. That additional technology was the producer gas technology which is enormously important to unraveling the entire hoax. I have never claimed that it is impossible to commit mass murder with Diesel exhaust or Zyklon-B—although there have been a number of people who have tried to get me to say precisely that.

The title of my chapter in *Dissecting the Holocaust* is I believe an excellent title—it only took fifteen years to formulate it: “Diesel Gas Chambers: Ideal for Torture—Absurd for Murder.”<sup>10</sup> I might have expanded on the subtitle by adding “... and Unbelievable.” It is impossible for me to believe that the “Nazis”, otherwise so clever and technically sophisticated, would have ever been so stupid as to use Diesel exhaust to even try to murder anyone.



## Eran Sher

Let us see what experts on Diesels and diesel emissions are saying today. A major engineering textbook from 1998, which should contain just about everything one would need to know about diesel emissions, is entitled: *Handbook of Air Pollution from Internal Combustion Engines*—subtitle: *Pollutant Formation and Control*. The book is more than 550 pages and is co-authored by a dozen of the world’s leading experts on emissions from internal combustion engines. It should an excellent source of information on how one might kill people with Diesel exhaust. But in this entire book, which is typical of all other books one can find, there is only one sentence which is relevant to our subject—and here it is from page 288:<sup>11</sup>

*“Although carbon monoxide (CO) emissions are regulated, they will not be considered here, as the diesel engine combustion process by definition inhibits the production of CO.”*

In other words, the entire subject of toxic effects from carbon monoxide in diesel exhaust, including long-term effects, is just not worth bothering with. What is ironic is that the editor of this major work on engine emissions and pollution is an Israeli professor of engineering. His name is Eran Sher and he is in the Department of Mechanical Engineering at Ben-Gurion University in Israel. Someone should reach out to him and ask if he actually believes the “Nazis” murdered people with Diesel exhaust—and whether he had ever considered testifying as an expert witness in the trial of John Demjanjuk.<sup>12</sup>

Surely, if Eran Sher and the Israelis really believe it happened in “Nazi” Germany, then it might happen again. Surely, we should all be concerned that Saddam Hussein might someday use some of his tens of thousands of diesel trucks to perpetrate another Holocaust. Surely, the United Nations arms inspectors who are so concerned about weapons of mass destruction in Iraq will miss the boat if they fail to report on Saddam’s diesels.

## Diesel History

One can judge the murderous possibilities of a diesel gas chamber arrangement by studying industrial accidents involving diesel engines—especially in underground mines which can often become totally enclosed spaces from the inevitable accidents which occur there. Gasoline engines have generally been outlawed for underground applications because of their toxic exhaust but the history of diesels underground is quite different.

Diesel engines were first used underground in coal mines in 1928 in Germany, in the Saar, and quite safely from all I have seen in the excellent German literature on this subject—especially in the German mining journal *Glückauf*.<sup>13</sup> In Britain, Diesels were first used underground in 1939 more than ten years later in Yorkshire—but over the following decades,

thousands more were used throughout Britain. For an industry where heavy machinery is used in the most difficult and unnatural circumstances imaginable—and where the industrial accident rate has always been among the highest anywhere, one expects many fatal accidents—but the British safety record with Diesels was a stunning surprise to many mining professionals, especially in the USA.<sup>14</sup>

The safety record was spelled out in June of 1974 when Mr. S. Gilbert of the British National Coal Board wrote the following in a major British technical journal about the British experience going back 35 years to 1939:<sup>15</sup>

*“Although it is accepted that there are potential hazards arising from the emission of noxious gases in the exhaust gases of diesel engines, the degree to which these are controlled in British coal mines has proved to be very effective.. An examination of ALL safety records has revealed that no person has suffered any harmful effects either temporarily or permanently as a direct result of breathing any toxic gas emitted from any vehicle powered by a diesel engine.”*

Does this prove that Diesels cannot be used to commit mass murder? Of course not—but, it is good reason to believe that killing people with diesel exhaust is far from easy—and yet, because of the smell, there is the widely held belief that just the opposite must be true. That false belief has been used in Holocaust propaganda as early as 1943.

One more quote from the technical literature summarizes much of what can be found there. This is from an American essay by a Mr. Dennis S. Lachtman—Director for Health Engineering for the EIMCO Mining Machinery company. In the *Mining Congress Journal* for January of 1981 on page 40, we have his four-page essay entitled “Diesel Exhaust—Health Effects.” One section of his essay is entitled: “NO significant human hazard seen in over 20 studies”:<sup>16</sup>

*“A number of studies evaluating human response to exposure of diesel have included experience among diesel bus workers, diesel railroad workers, and metal and non-metal miners working with diesel production equipment and underground. There are more than 20 human health studies involving working populations exposed to diesel exhaust emissions. As can be seen from a careful review of these studies, NO SIGNIFICANT health hazards have been associated with exposures to diesel exhaust emissions.*

*More recently, the National Institute for Occupational Safety and Health (NIOSH) has reported on epidemiological studies it has performed in underground mines. One of these studies included an MSHA<sup>[17]</sup> and NIOSH joint study of the relationship between the underground environments in 22 metal and non-metal mines looking at the health of more than 5000 miners. This comprehensive study focuses on the health effects of both silica dust and other substances including those found in Diesel exhaust. [...] The researchers reported that the data showed an absence of harmful effects from diesel exhaust.”*

In other words, there was not even one fatality or even one injury from Diesel exhaust. No doubt there must be some occasional deaths somewhere in the world—but they are few

and far between—and that should give everyone a good idea as to how relatively harmless diesel exhaust truly is—and how absurd the holocaust story is. If the holocaust by diesel allegation is to be believed—there should be strong, overwhelming, and clear evidence—but the best the exterminationists have ever found is the Gerstein statement which is absurd and unbelievable for countless reasons aside from the diesel claim.<sup>18</sup>

Every year, many thousands of deaths occur worldwide due to carbon monoxide poisoning from gasoline engines. Suicides in cars from gasoline engine exhaust are common also and are well documented in public health reports. The most common death from carbon monoxide occurs, however, when people simply run their car or truck engines to keep warm in winter—or cool in summer by means of an automotive air conditioner. Approximately a thousand accidental deaths occur in this way every year in the U.S. alone even though the cars in the U.S. are routinely equipped with catalytic converters and emission control devices—but not with Diesel engines. There are no known Diesel suicides either.

Every night across the world, tens of thousands of truck drivers sleep inside their truck cabs with their Diesel engines running throughout the night—to keep warm in winter or cool in summer. Although there are always some exhaust leaks into a van compartment of a truck, there is no evidence that I have ever found of a single trucker dying or even being injured in such circumstances from Diesel exhaust. It never happens.

Diesel exhaust is inherently safe—and that is a major reason why the Holocaust story is a hoax.

### **Internal Speed Governor**

In some of my previous essays, I stressed the fact that relatively high CO emission rates are related primarily to high fuel/air ratios. One might think that all one has to do to get high fuel/air ratios is to press the fuel pedal to the floor—without any load being coupled to the engine. What happens then is quite interesting. Without any load, the engine speed will rapidly increase and the fuel/air ratio will indeed go to the maximum—but within a few seconds also, the engine speed will reach the maximum safe engine speed set by the manufacturer. Long before that speed is reached, however, an internal speed governor in the fuel injection pump assembly will cut back on the fuel—and quite severely—to make certain that the maximum safe speed or “redline” speed is never exceeded. After a few seconds, the actual fuel/air ratio at high speed idle stabilizes to nearly the same fuel/air ratio as at low speed idle.

Even though the driver might want the fuel/air ratio to remain at high levels, the speed governor will override his demand as expressed through the fuel pedal. There are only two realistic ways to get the engine to run at high fuel/air ratios for more than just a few seconds: either by coupling some kind of load such as a pump or generator or some other kind of device to the engine to force the engine to work against some heavy resistance, or by reducing the air intake of the engine to a minimum, hence almost suffocating the engine. Otherwise

the engine will race—and the governor will cut the fuel/air ratio.

As a practical matter, coupling a loading device to an engine in a truck or tank is far from easy—and thoroughly impractical. Nothing like that is even remotely suggested in any of the anecdotes in the Holocaust accounts.

Reducing the air intake, however, is quite easy, but experiments of British researchers during the 1950s have shown that the resulting maximum carbon monoxide concentration is still so low that it took more than three hours to kill all animals exposed to these exhaust gases.<sup>19</sup>

### Combined Effects of Carbon Monoxide and Reduced Oxygen

One objection to my 1984 essay was that I had not properly considered the combined effects of carbon monoxide and reduced oxygen. If one uses a multiplier to determine an effective carbon monoxide level, one will see that there is no significant difference due to reduced oxygen until one gets the engine running under heavy loads, which is exactly what I claimed in 1984.

The effective carbon monoxide level is determined by dividing the concentration of oxygen in normal air—which is 21%—by the reduced oxygen concentration. Until one has reduced the oxygen level to about 8-10% (heavy engine load), the symptoms in any intended victims are not significantly different from those at a normal oxygen concentration. Serious symptoms only begin when oxygen is reduced to below 8% and that only occurs when the diesel engine is running against a heavy load.<sup>20</sup>

### Exhaust Gas Recirculation for Mass Murder

A diesel gas chamber might have worked by recirculating the exhaust gas from a diesel engine. This is actually a well-known problem with diesel exhaust going back to at least the 1920s in Germany. The idea is that the diesel engine air intake for the engine is connected directly to the same enclosed space to which the engine discharges its exhaust. The exhaust goes around and around through the engine and the enclosed space—and eventually so much oxygen is consumed by combustion and so much carbon monoxide is produced that together these changes kill anyone within the enclosed space. But the engine eventually shuts itself down when there is no longer enough oxygen to sustain combustion and then ceases producing anymore carbon monoxide also.<sup>21</sup>

One should remember that nearly all of the carbon monoxide which is recirculated will be consumed in the engine if sufficient oxygen is available—and so, any additive increase in carbon monoxide levels, which one might at first expect, will in fact not occur at all. Carbon monoxide gas is an excellent fuel and actually burns far more easily than diesel fuel or even gasoline. If the CO level is initially only 0.05% after the first pass through the engine, one might—wrongly—expect it to double to 0.10% after second pass and then on to 0.15% after the third pass and so on and on. In reality, however, the carbon monoxide concentration in the exhaust gas basically depends on the oxygen concentration in the air only. Hence, there is not likely to be any significant change in the CO concentration until much later, when the oxygen level has been so reduced that complete combustion is no longer possible and the engine shuts down.

Recirculating exhaust gases basically has the same, but extremely delayed effect as reducing the air intake of the engine. Whereas the oxygen content decreases only slowly when applying exhaust gas recirculation, it is immediately minimized when restricting the engine's air intake. Therefore, an attempt of murder with exhaust gas recirculation would take even longer than the minimum of over three hours as established in the above mentioned experiments with air intake restriction. Finally, a combination of both methods, *i.e.*, restricting the air intake *and* recirculating the exhaust gases, would eventually suffocate the engine.

The important question is whether any deaths can occur before the engine actually shuts itself down. There is no mention in the Gerstein statement or anywhere else of the engine shutting down during the half hour needed to kill the 700-800 Jews trapped inside—there is only mention of Mr. Heckenholt needing more than two hours to get it started. And so, it seems about as reasonable as anything else one can conclude from the Gerstein statement that the engine must have been operating throughout this period without any serious operating problem from lack of oxygen or for any other reason. In other words, even the recirculation argument fails to fit any of the Diesel gas chamber scenarios from Gerstein or anyone else.

### The Gas Vans

When I first saw this picture in 1983, my last doubt about the revisionist position ended. This picture represents a kind of epiphany for me—because the existence of vehicles like this



Top: Saurer Diesel, an emission-friendly Vehicle

Left: Generator gas bus

totally undermines the Holocaust story for two important reasons. First of all, this type of vehicle makes the use of diesel exhaust as a source of lethal concentrations of carbon monoxide even more absurd than it would otherwise be—and second of all, it helps to explain and undermine the allegation that the “Nazis” used gas vans to murder some of their victims.

This vehicle was a real gas van, which used poison gas as its fuel. That poisonous fuel was primarily carbon monoxide and was generated on the vehicle as well.

There were, however, accidental gassings arising from the use of a different kind of gas van which is enormously important to unraveling the Holocaust gassing legend. Those “vans” were the producer gas wagons commonly used throughout all of Europe during this era—not just German-occupied Europe. Well over half a million of these vans or gas wagons had been built and used for transportation of almost everything by the end of the war and even for *many* years after the war.<sup>22</sup> They were ubiquitous.

When the war ended the use of these vehicles declined—but only gradually. In the early 1950’s in West Germany, at least 20,000 were still in use and their safe operation was still of great concern to medical professionals.<sup>23</sup>

### The Soviet Origin of the Gas Van Story

The earliest reference to mass murder in gas vans that I have ever found is in July of 1943, when *Pravda* reported on the show trials of a number of German prisoners who had supposedly murdered Soviet citizens in Krasnodar with diesel powered vans. English translations of the *Pravda* stories appeared in *The Trial* in Britain through Hutchinson & Co., and Foreign Languages Publishing House we have the following text:

*“In the autumn of 1942, the Germans began to use specially equipped automobiles which the population called ‘murder vans,’ for the purpose of doing away with Soviet citizens.*

*These ‘murder vans’ were covered five-ton or seven-ton gray-painted motor trucks, driven by Diesel engines.”*

For a later trial in Kharkov in December of 1943 we have in a publication called *The People’s Verdict* the following information on page 43:<sup>24</sup>

*“The vans are lined inside with galvanized iron and have airtight folding doors at the back. The floor is equipped with a wooden grating under which passes a pipe with apertures. The pipe is connected to the exhaust pipe of the engine. The exhaust gases of the Diesel engine, containing highly concentrated carbon monoxide, enter the body of the van, causing rapid poisoning and asphyxiation of the people locked up in the van.”*

Of course, diesel exhaust never contains “highly concentrated carbon monoxide.”

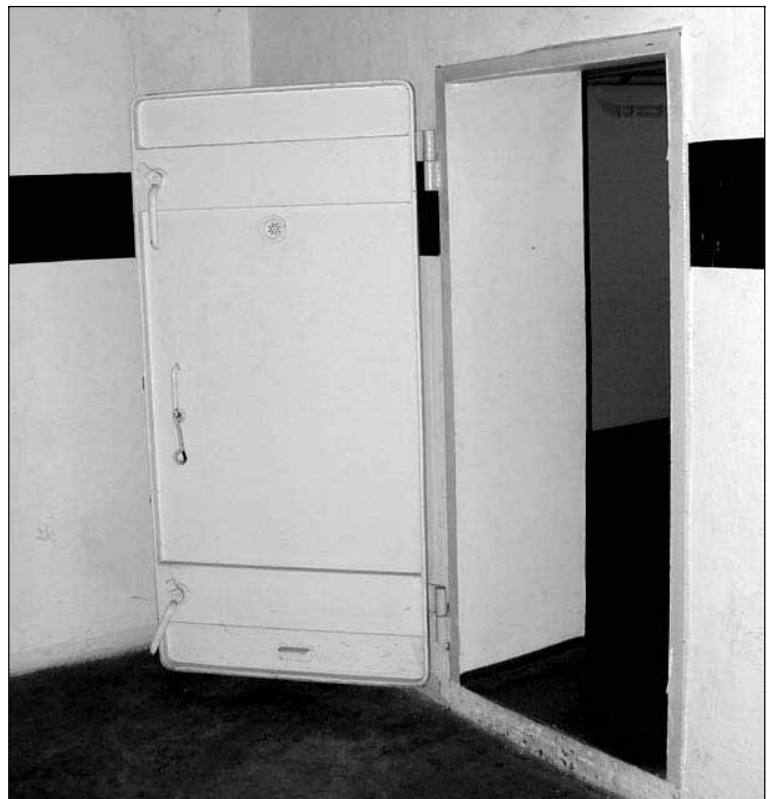
In a later publication entitled: “Soviet War Documents” from December 1943 and published by the Soviet Embassy in Washington, DC, we have a description of the gas van on page 172 which claims the

engine was a “Sauer” engine and that the body of the van was constructed in Berlin. There is no Sauer engine manufacturer but there is a famous company called “Saurer.” The connection that is made here to a company called “Sauer” is significant because it reappears in the infamous fake letter from Becker to Rauff in Nuremberg File PS-501.<sup>25</sup> By their common errors one can often recognize the work of a forger. There is never any mention anywhere of the engines having been gasoline engines although that would have certainly made sense technically—nor is there any mention of producer gas wagons which would have made all the sense in the world.

### Accidental Gassings in Gas Vans

Although there is no credible evidence of any deliberate gassings with gas vans, there were no doubt many fatal accidents. These accidents arose almost inevitably from the nature of the producer gas vans, which made and used poison gas in highly concentrated form to drive the vehicles. Fatal accidents were inevitable from the earliest uses of these vehicles—and no doubt increased with increasing use of this technology. However, this author has found no actual record of such accidents in the German wartime literature to date. The dangers involved are however clearly spelled out in the German literature, which includes the various safety guidelines which were required reading of all drivers and operators of these dangerous vehicles.

It is in the post-war literature of Scandinavia that one can find the most startling detailed information as to the many medical problems arising from producer vehicles.<sup>26</sup>



German air raid shelter door of World War II

### Bomb Shelter Doors and Baskets for Zyklon B

Many photographs and illustrations from Germany's wartime civil defense literature show that the Germans used well-designed, steel, gas-tight doors with peepholes for their bomb shelters. All German bomb shelters had to be gas-tight and that also meant annual testing with a blower and pressure gauge.

The important point I want to make is that each bomb shelter could with hardly any modification have also served as a highly effective gas chamber. All that one needed to do to kill any group of intended victims was to lock them in and cut off any fresh air from either the supply or exhaust air ductwork. That this was easy enough to do is proven by the fact that it occurred often enough during actual bombing attacks when the air supply was affected either through structural failure or when the outside air was poisonous as well. If anyone had wanted to introduce a poison gas such as cyanide, all that would have been needed would have been to slightly alter some of the sheetmetal supply ductwork with a hinged cover section so that a basket of Zyklon-B could be dropped-in—and, then as supply air passed through, preferably warmed air, the cyanide would be driven from the granules and into the bomb shelter.

German Zyklon B delousing chambers of World War II were based on these principles. The standard, 10-cubic-meter delousing chambers could have been used to kill prisoners just as easily and safely as American execution gas chambers, one or a few prisoners at a time. The only important feature they lacked was a big window to allow witnesses to see what was going on.

Zyklon B granules will hold onto the liquid hydrogen cyanide within the granules rather tenaciously—until the cyanide is forced out of the granules by a blast of warm air passing through the granules. That's the way the delousing chambers worked—and everyone working with them understood that. If the air passing through the granules was too cool or not moving fast enough, that would adversely effect the rate at which the cyanide would escape from the granules into the chamber—and that in turn would slow the entire delousing process down rather dramatically and reduce the effectiveness of the delousing process. Baskets were necessary to hold the Zyklon granules while still allowing warm air from a blower or forced air duct to pass through the basket and granules.

By contrast, the story we are given about Zyklon B for mass murder in Auschwitz is absurd. According to some Holocaust tales, the poison gas product Zyklon B was allegedly simply poured out onto the floor of the gas chambers. A somewhat more complicated version exists regarding the morgues of crematoria II and III of Auschwitz-Birkenau, which were allegedly converted into homicidal gas chambers. In those locations, wire mesh baskets full of Zyklon B were allegedly lowered through holes chiseled through the reinforced concrete ceiling into introduction columns which were supposedly also made of wire mesh. This was supposedly done to allow recovery of the Zyklon B granules after the cyanide gas had escaped and killed the people trapped inside the alleged homicidal gas chambers. Without any real forced ventilation

through the granules, it would have taken hours before all hydrogen cyanide would have evaporated.

The alleged homicidal gas chambers were supposedly equipped with a room ventilation system, as is to be expected for morgues. Only minor modifications to the ventilation shafts outside of the alleged gas chamber would have solved the problem, but nothing even remotely close to what would have been needed is described anywhere in the Holocaust literature.

### Functioning Mass Homicidal Gas Chambers

The Zyklon B railroad delousing tunnels which were operated in many places of German-occupied Europe would have actually been perfect for mass murder but, ironically, they have never been implicated anywhere in the Holocaust claims. Even more important is the fact that the railroad delousing tunnels already existed in key locations, such as Budapest and other major cities throughout Eastern Europe. What one really needed was already in place, but rather than having used any of that superbly designed available technology, the "Nazis", who were supposed to have been so fiendishly clever in so many other respects, used some basement cellars with little holes in the ceilings instead, in Auschwitz, far away from Budapest. It is just too cuckoo to be believed. It never happened!

### Conclusion

I will conclude by giving an answer to a question that was put to me just recently by a journalist. What is driving you and other revisionists? The answer is the evidence—it is as simple as that. It is the evidence that drives us. If one looks at the Holocaust story with some healthy curiosity and some perfectly normal skepticism, the evidence cries out for conclusions that are totally different from what we are required to believe. But instead of truly coming to grips with our past, true *Vergangenheitsbewältigung* and recognizing who the bad guys really were, we may be entering a new kind of Dark Age where repression and terror far more subtle than anything Orwell imagined become normal. Big Brother is preaching democracy, freedom, and tolerance as he practices the exact opposite. We are clever creatures indeed—but, if we continue to blindly believe in the hoax which is so central to the madness around us, then we are retarded as a species—and a menace to ourselves as well.

### Notes

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(4) (2002), pp. 436-446.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. e.g.: <http://fcit.coedu.usf.edu/holocaust/people/survivor.htm>

<sup>2</sup> Cf. in the regard G. Rudolf, "Statistische Erhebungen zu 'Holocaust'-Überlebenden", *VffG* 2(3) (1998), pp. 223f.; *VffG* 1(2) (1997), pp. 69f.

<sup>3</sup> Rube Goldberg was a well-known Jewish American newspaper cartoonist after World War II, who made a specialty of cartoons showing bizarre mechanical contraptions, generally with many pulleys, belts and strings to achieve mundane tasks such as breaking eggs in a frying pan shortly after a chicken laid them. The often hilarious, mechanical arrangements were superficially plausible but thoroughly impractical in reality and readers recognized the inherent absurdity of Goldberg's complex arrangements.

<sup>4</sup> Vgl. z. B.: "Typhus Causes a Truce," *The Journal of the American Medical Association* (19.5.1945), p. 220.

<sup>5</sup> Munich/EBlingen 1962.

- <sup>6</sup> Cf. the table compiled by J. Graf at the end of R. Faurisson, “Witnesses to the Gas Chambers of Auschwitz,” in: E. Gauss (ed.), *Dissecting the Holocaust*, Theses & Dissertations Press, Capshaw, AL, 2000, p. 145.
- <sup>7</sup> E. Wiesel, *Night*, Bantam paperback edition, 1960, p. 78
- <sup>8</sup> <http://www.avert.org/pictures/>
- <sup>9</sup> Dr. Jack Kervorkian is an American doctor who became well-known in the 1990s for assisting more than 130 people to commit suicide. In 1999 he was imprisoned for second-degree murder. See: <http://www.finalexit.org/drkframe.html>. Although Kervorkian developed a suicide machine he called “Mercitron” which some patients used to inject themselves—first with saline solution, then sedative thiopental, and finally potassium chloride with a timer—in actual practice, Kervorkian generally used and preferred canisters of carbon monoxide. See: George J. Annas, “Physician-assisted Suicide—Michigan’s Temporary Solution,” *New England Journal of Medicine*, Vol. 328, no. 21, pp. 1573-76, May 27, 1993. See also: Jack Kervorkian, *Prescription Medicide*, Prometheus Books, New York 1991. On pages 59-60 he argues that CO should have been used for executions of criminals over cyanide.
- <sup>10</sup> E. Gauss (ed.), *op. cit.* (note 6), pp. 435-465.
- <sup>11</sup> Eran Sher (ed.), *Handbook of Air Pollution from Internal Combustion Engines: Pollution Formation and Control*, Boston, San Diego, New York, London, Sydney, Tokyo, Toronto: Academic Press, 1998, p. 288.
- <sup>12</sup> See for this Arnulf Neumaier, “The Treblinka Holocaust”, in E. Gauss (ed.), *op. cit.* (note 6), pp. 467-495; cf. also Yoram Sheftel, *The Demjanjuk Affair. The Rise and Fall of the Show Trial*, Victor Gollancz, London 1994.
- <sup>13</sup> H.H. Müller-Neuglück, H. Werkmeister, “Grubensicherheit der Diesellokomotiven”, *Glückauf*, Aug. 23, 1930, p. 1145.
- <sup>14</sup> S.O. Ogden, “The War over Diesels,” *Coal Mining & Processing*, June 1978, p. 102. See also Frank E Scott, “Diesel Underground: Overcoming a Bad Image,” *Coal Mining & Processing*, August 1982, p. 45.
- <sup>15</sup> S. Gilbert, “The Use of Diesel Engines Underground in British Coal Mines”, *The Mining Engineer* (GB), June 1974, p. 403.
- <sup>16</sup> Dennis S. Lachtman, “Diesel Exhaust—Health Effects,” *Mining Congress Journal*, January 1981, p. 40.
- <sup>17</sup> Mine Safety & Health Administration.
- <sup>18</sup> Cf. André Chelain, *La Thèse de Nantes et l’affaire Roques*, Ogmios Diffusion, Paris 1989.
- <sup>19</sup> R.E. Pattle, H. Stretch, F. Burgess, K. Sinclair, J.A.G. Edginton, *Brit. J.Industr. Med.* 14 (1957) pp. 47-55; I referred to this possibility and to this source in 1994 for the first time: F.P. Berg, “Die Diesel-Gaskammern: Mythos im Mythos,” in Ernst Gauss (ed.), *Grundlagen zur Zeitgeschichte*, Grabert, Tübingen 1994, pp. 321-345.
- <sup>20</sup> Cf. for this my first reflections in “Holocaust: Dieselmotorabgase töten langsam,” *VffG*, 1(3) (1997), pp. 134-137.
- <sup>21</sup> W.F. Marshall, R.W. Hum “Hazard from Engines Rebreathing Exhaust in Confined Space,” U.S. Department of the Interior, Bureau of Mines, Report of Investigations 7757, 1973, pp. 7-10.
- <sup>22</sup> E. Eckermann, *Alte Technik mit Zukunft: Die Entwicklung des Imbert-Generators*, Oldenbourg, Munich 1986.
- <sup>23</sup> E. W. Baader, *Gewerbekrankheiten*, Munich/Berlin 1954, pp. 178-184.
- <sup>24</sup> *The People’s Verdict*, Hutchinson & Co., London 1944.
- <sup>25</sup> Nürnberg Dokument PS-501; cf. I. Weckert, “The Gas Vans: A Critical Assessment of the Evidence,” in E. Gauss (ed.), *op. cit.* (note 6), pp. 217-243.
- <sup>26</sup> Poisonings by generator gas were so common in Sweden that two special clinics were erected to treat the victims: Aage Grut, *Chronic Carbon Monoxide Poisoning*, Ejnar Munksgaard, Copenhagen 1949, p. 69. See also; Leo Noro, “Über die durch Motorabgase verursachten Kohlenoxydvergiftungen bei der Mannschaft von Panzerformationen,” *Acta Medica Scandinavica*, CXXI(IV) (1945); K. v. Bagh, “Neurologisch-psychiatrische Gesichtspunkte zur Diagnostik und Behandlung der chronischen Generatorgasvergiftungen,” *Annales Medicinæ Internæ Fenniae*, Vol. 35, 1946.

## Certainty about Werner Heisenberg

### About U.S. Plans to Murder the German Nuclear Physicist Werner Heisenberg

By Dr. Gerhard Sommer

There have been much speculation about the desire and the capability of the German Reich to build and use the atom bomb, just as, there has been similar speculation over whether or not Hitler ever planned to use poison gas, and, if not, why not. Historical research has established that Hitler was evidently the only national leader of the Second World War who—doubtless because of his personal experiences in the First World War—adamantly opposed the use of weapons of mass destruction and the waging of any kind of inhumane warfare against civilians. Undisputed is—and will likely continue to be—the fact that in the Second World War at least—only the Allies can be seriously shown to have used weapons of mass destruction for the mass murder of innocent civilians, a fact which the gas propaganda aimed at Hitler was obviously meant to obfuscate. Thus, it was not a German atomic bomb, but America’s “Jewish” bomb, that shocked the world with total destruction, What has also gone unnoticed, until now, is that for the American espionage services apparently any means to prevent even the mere possibility of the development of a German atom bomb during World War II were justified (parallels to the current conflict with Iraq are no coincidence). In the following, it will be shown how former “friends” and “colleagues” of Werner Heisenberg helped in an abortive plan to murder him in order to prevent the German bomb. The question that arises, of course, is whether Heisenberg was the only object of such U.S. murder plans.

*Uncertainty* (in the sense of “unclear”) is the title of an American author’s biography of physicist Werner Heisenberg—with reference to the epoch-making discovery of the “Unschärferelation,” the uncertainty principle (David C. Cassidy, *Uncertainty: The Life and Science of Werner Heisenberg*, W.H. Freeman, New York 1992).

Now, the uncertainty has come to an end with a book by another American, even if several decades need pass before it become certainty in the awareness of the newspaper reader or even the educated physicist. The book deals with nothing less than a U.S. wartime effort to murder Werner Heisenberg. There is no uncertainty about the identities of the authors of

the plan: they were “colleagues,” even “friends,” of Heisenberg, who had never done, or even intended, them any harm. Among were certain of his former students and assistants, allegedly admirers of Heisenberg’s genius. Among them were physicists whose names occur too frequently in the history of physics to be dismissed as unimportant.

Thomas Powers (*Heisenberg’s War: The Secret History of the German Bomb*, Knopf, New York 1993) has published the kidnapping and murder plans in a substantial biography based on recently released British and American secret service files. He has not treated them, however, in the same way that murder plans devised by National Socialists or Fascists are usually presented today. Rather, Powers has fragmented the plans to kill Heisenberg into tiny pieces, and scattered them across many sections of his book—as is customary when slipping historical taboos past the censors; as is customary when the fascism of the anti-fascists cannot be named for what is. To be sure, the murderously inclined gentlemen’s club that devised the all-contaminating nuclear bomb was spared taking responsibility for either its role in the attempted murder of its colleague, or for the mass murders of Hiroshima and Nagasaki, and has minimized its involvement in both. Not infrequently Powers shows his understanding of this. Yet, in normal criminal cases, mitigating circumstances are not normally taken into consideration during the investigative phase. While Powers has not suppressed the evidence of attempted murder in his book, he has concealed it, insofar as the true instigators and perpetrators are concerned, inside a huge pile of negligible information. One must look for this evidence as for the proverbial needle in the haystack. But he who seeks will find.

Powers spells out the plain facts clearly enough: From December 1943 on, the American Office of Strategic Services (OSS) pursued a plan to abduct Heisenberg during a visit Switzerland, and it assigned to a certain Colonel Eifler the task of forming a special unit for this purpose. The main problem at the outset was that it was not exactly known where Heisenberg was residing. As a result of an indiscretion by the German nuclear physicist Wolfgang Gentner in con-

versations with the Zurich physicist Scherrer, who was an informant of the OSS, it was eventually learned that Heisenberg lived in Hechingen. It was next decided to relieve Eifler. Powers assumes that his superiors had lost confidence in his ability to conduct the operation in secrecy:

*“Small surprise here; there was no hiding Eifler’s gung-ho, brutally direct approach to whatever he undertook.”* (Powers, p. 313)

Eifler’s replacement was given a different order in August 1944: Morris Berg, a former major league baseball player, was to murder Heisenberg during a physics colloquium organized by Scherrer in Zurich. This reactivated a suggestion which had been made in October 1942, when Heisenberg traveled to his “friend” Scherrer in Zurich for the first time. On the following two pages, I forego any commentary. I only combine widely scattered parts from Powers’s hidden presentation so as to present a straightforward account in readable form. Page numbers in the following text are according to the original English edition; the sources referred to by Powers are not given.

*“[...] in the last week of October 1942, probably on the 26th or 27th, Bethe was contacted by an agitated Weisskopf, who had just received a letter from Pauli at Princeton. [With two pieces of information ...] The second [piece of information] was Wentzel’s news that Heisenberg would be visiting Zurich to give a lecture at the university in December [1942], only a little over a month away. Bethe and Weisskopf agreed the Allies were thus given a chance to cripple the German bomb program with a single bold stroke—the kidnapping of Heisenberg on neutral ground.”* (p. 190)

*“[... Weisskopf and Bethe] were far from warlike men, but this was war. They were certain Heisenberg was working on a German bomb; they had a bright idea, and they submitted it in haste to the one man they knew with an open channel to the authorities—Robert Oppenheimer. The channel was indeed open. Oppenheimer replied the following day, thanking Weisskopf for his ‘interesting letter,’ saying he already knew the central facts and had passed them on to ‘the proper authorities,’ but had ‘taken the liberty of forwarding your letter’ as well.”* (p. 192)

*“Back in Cambridge by the end of the first week of November, Bethe sought out Samuel Goudsmit, the Dutch-born University of Michigan physicist who had been working on radar there for several months. Goudsmit had no official knowledge of the American bomb project, but like most physicists—especially those with European backgrounds—he knew from friends that something was in the works. Bethe described the news from Pauli’s letter and Goudsmit immediately agreed the chance to lay hands on Heisenberg in Zurich should not be wasted.”* (p. 193; Goudsmit immediately wrote a letter



Werner Heisenberg, \* Dec. 5, 1901, † Feb. 1, 1976



about this to the British Secret Service circles, who also actually received it.)

*"The American bomb program was not taken over by the U.S. Army until June 1942, and General Leslie Groves, put in command in September, concerned himself mainly with questions of internal security for nearly a year before giving one of his aides the job of gathering intelligence on the Germans [i.e., a possible German program for atomic bombs]." (p. 155)*

*"[... Groves received] alarmed memos of project scientists, and Groves concluded they would never 'stick to their knitting' until he convinced them the Germans were getting the full attention of a serious intelligence effort. But placating the scientists was not Groves's only motive for doing something about the Germans." (p. 216f.)*

*"To Furman [the new head of his own secret defense organization] Groves spelled out the two halves of his problem: little or no information about the Germans, and constant agitation by scientists furious at the military for failing to take the German danger seriously. The job Groves had in mind for Furman would address both halves through an effort to gather information about the Germans with the aid of the worried scientists themselves; later on there might be some special projects for Furman to handle." (p. 218)*

*"The bombing of German cities was routine, but the choice of [the Berlin suburb] Dahlem as target was not. In one of his many historical notes written after the war, Leslie Groves refers to 'the bombing of the Dahlem sector in Berlin which we undertook at my request to drive German scientists out of their comfortable quarters.' Groves's success, however, was not quite complete" (p. 338f.)*

*"Bethe and Weisskopf both say [during an interview with the author] they were not present when the proposal to kill leading German scientists was made to Groves, but both agree it was quite in character with other coldblooded decisions Oppenheimer made during the war years.*

*[...] What Oppenheimer, Weisskopf, Bethe, Morrison and especially Samuel Goudsmit knew about the attempt to go after Heisenberg seems to have had an important effect*



**Physicists in an extermination frenzy:** from left: Niels Bohr, Robert Oppenheimer, Richard Feynman, Enrico Fermi (<http://sage.me.utexas.edu/~uer/manhattan/people.html>)

*on the way they treated him after the war. In particular, they would all-and Niels Bohr as well-find it hard to accept as a fact that Heisenberg had completely lacked anything like their own determination to build the world's first atomic bomb." (p. 258f.)*

*"Since December 1943 Groves had been pursuing the proposal to organize the kidnapping of Heisenberg. The OSS had agreed to undertake the job, and had assigned it to Colonel Carl Eifler, who began immediately to recruit a team for the task. But of course no operation could proceed without one basic fact-where Heisenberg might be found." (p. 287)*

*"It was Wolfgang Gentner, all unknowing, who found Heisenberg for the Americans." (p. 288)*

*"Eifler was left in no doubt that Heisenberg's survival was not the mission's highest priority.*

*'Okay,' he said, 'I've got him into Switzerland, we're ready to take him out now but I'm about to be arrested by the Swiss police-what do I do now?'*

*Buxton said, 'You deny the enemy his brain.'*

*'The only way to do that,' Eifler said, 'is to kill him. So I kill him, and the Swiss police arrest me-what happens then?'*

*'Then,' said Buxton, 'we've never heard, of you.'" (p. 266)*

*"[...] on June 23 [... Donovan] informed Eifler that the Heisenberg kidnapping had been scrubbed by the Manhattan Engineer District. Of course Donovan did not identify the MED by name, and he offered the barest explanation for the change in orders: the project was no longer necessary, the race for a new type of bomb was over-'We've cracked the atom,' he said." (p. 312)*

*"But the attempt to kidnap or assassinate Heisenberg was not dropped, as we shall see. A new effort was organized over the summer of 1944, and shortly after Furman left Rome for London, Berg was picked for a steadily growing role in the renewed effort." (p. 313)*

*"Berg was Jewish, but it was not Nazi anti-Semitism that angered him; it was book-burning." (p. 296)*

*"But Berg was not idle in London while he waited for the plan to go forward. During long walks in the country he*

*continued his private tutorial in atomic physics with his Princeton friend, Bob Robertson, and he received many cables and pouch letters, including one from [the OSS agent] Loofbourow in Zurich, who reported that Heisenberg and Max von Laue met every Wednesday with the Swiss scientist Walther Dallenbach at his research institute in Bissingen. Loofbourow also reported that the way to Scherrer's heart would be a present of 100 grams of heavy water for experiments with his institute's cyclotron." (p. 390)*

*"On December 10, Berg crossed*

the Channel for Paris, where he saw Tony Calvert [a member of the security staff of the Manhattan-Project] and Sam Goudsmit. Goudsmit gave Berg a small container of heavy water—a present for Paul Scherrer. A week later Berg left for Switzerland.” (p. 392)

“Berg was a lifelong scribbler of notes, and when he died he left behind much paper. Among it were many raw notes on the episode in Zurich. At least twice he seems to have set out to write a history of his wartime work for the OSS; each ended after a furious bout of scribbling. Twice also Berg told friends what he had been sent to Switzerland to do, and among his many handwritten notes is a brief, fragmentary account of the conversations in Paris. It was Tony Calvert who told him that the OSS—the great Donovan grapevine—had just learned of Heisenberg’s impending arrival in Zurich, subject of the Bern cable sent to Goudsmit on November 28. Berg wrote: ‘—gun in my pocket.’

Then on the next line: ‘nothing spelled out but Heisenberg must be rendered hors de combat.’ The French phrase translates literally as ‘out of the battle.’ There is a very narrow range of ways in which a gun may be used to take an opponent out of the battle.” (p. 392)

“At least twice during the eight or nine days in Zurich Heisenberg brushed by an agent of the OSS [Morris Berg] armed with a pistol and authority to kill him. It was Scherrer who had invited Heisenberg to Zurich, who kept the OSS informed, and who arranged for the OSS agent to be present.” (p. 395)

“Scherrer himself left no memoir of his role in the war; he destroyed most of his papers after he retired from the ETH (Eidgenössische Technische Hochschule, Zurich University), and he apparently never discussed the war years with friends. Many of his students, at any rate, knew nothing of his extensive contacts with the OSS over a period of nearly two years, and his old friend Wolfgang Pauli sometimes complained in later years of Scherrer’s silence about the war. The only substantial surviving evidence of what Scherrer felt about these matters is to be found in OSS cables reporting his views, and in notes which Morris Berg made at the time of his conversations with him.” (p. 396)

“With the OSS officer Leo Martinuzzi as companion, Berg arrived at the University of Zurich on Rämistrasse in good time for the seminar on theoretical physics scheduled to begin at 4:15 on December 18. There was no security of any kind; anyone was free to join the small group gathered for Heisenberg’s talk” (p. 397)

“Berg scribbled a kind of running account. He caught Heisenberg’s eye. ‘H. likes my interest in his lecture,’ Berg wrote.” (p. 398)

“Berg wrote, ‘As I listen, I am uncertain—see: Heisenberg’s uncertainty principle—what to do to H... discussing math[ematics] while Rome burns—if they knew what I’m thinking.’ [...] Berg did nothing.” (p. 399)

“Berg went further when he described the episode to his friend Earl Brodie three or four years after the war. [...] As Brodie remembers it:

He said they wanted to get Heisenberg out of Germany and into Switzerland to give a lecture. Berg was sent to shoot him and he didn’t do it. He’d been drilled in physics, to listen for certain things. If anything Heisenberg said convinced Berg the Germans were close to a bomb then his job was to shoot him—right there in the auditorium. It probably would have cost Berg his life—there would have been no way to escape.” (p. 393)

The all too convenient excuse of the Allied physicists—especially those who “originated from Europe”—that they raced to produce the first atomic bomb in America out of their naked fear of a German atomic bomb, runs through the history of the bombs that fell on Hiroshima and Nagasaki like a ritual. Over the past half century years, nobody has really looked more closely at these scientists’ motives. Powers repeats their assertion again and again as well. On the other hand, Powers’s book offers for the first time facts which appear to render such excuses untenable. General Groves, for example, was informed on January 5, 1944, by formal letter from the British that the German atomic bomb was a pure phantasm:

“All the evidence available to us leads us to the conclusion that the Germans are not in fact carrying out large-scale work on any aspect of TA (Tube Alloys) [the British code word for atomic bomb]. We believe that after an initial serious examination of the project, the German work is now confined to academic and small-scale research, much of which is being published in current issues of their scientific journals.” (Powers, p. 284f.)

These assessments of the situation, which by the way proved to be quite correct, were, for reasons not yet released for in-



Leo Szilard, here together with Albert Einstein, the intellectual grandfather of the atomic bomb and promoter of its use against Germany, assisted the implementation of the “Manhattan Project” to build the US atom bomb. Together with Enrico Fermi, Szilard succeeded with the first chain reaction. Both physicists had left Germany because of hostility toward Jews.

vestigation by critical authors, politely shrugged off by General Groves as irrelevant. The reader has to draw his own conclusions. The reason lay probably in the sentiment quoted above: in order to make the scientists “stick to their knitting”—at least those who worked on the bomb for reasons other than vengeance. After all, one cannot depend on all Jews having complementary feelings to anti-Semitism.

Thomas Powers does not seem to belong to those authors who don't know what they are writing about. He belongs to those who do know—but don't say what they think. He did at least not dare to blindly repeat everything. Power's final assessment of Oppenheimer, one of the great executioners of mankind, is worth to be quoted here unabridged:

*“When Oppenheimer [after the first atom bomb test on July 16, 1945] returned to the base camp and stepped down from the jeep his look, his stance, his walk spoke triumph to his friend I. I. Rabi. Rabi himself had declined to work on the bomb; he hated the thought that this was the culmination of three centuries of physics. But he consented to hold the overworked Oppenheimer's hand, to brace him when he flagged, to witness his triumph at Alamogordo. ‘His walk was like High Noon,’ said Rabi. ‘I think it's the best I could describe it—this kind of strut. He'd done it.’*

*The elation survived even Hiroshima. Among those at Los Alamos on August 6 when the public address system announced the use of one of the lab's “units” on Japan was the young physicist Sam Cohen. He remembers vividly the whistling, cheering and foot-stomping in an auditorium that night when Oppenheimer entered at the rear—not from the wings, his custom—and made his way forward up the central aisle through the crowd. On the stage Oppenheimer pumped his clasped hands above his head in the classic self-congratulation of the prizefighter. When at last he could speak, there was no shadow of regret in his words and he did not hesitate to play to the crowd. What Cohen remembers is unambiguous triumph:*

*It was too early to determine what the results of the bombing might have been, but he was sure that the Japanese didn't like it. More cheering. He was proud, and he showed it, of what he had accomplished. Even more cheering. And his only regret was that we hadn't developed the bomb in time to have used it against the Germans. This practically raised the roof.”* (Powers, p. 461f.)

A couple of years ago, when I was researching the *New York Times* for something completely different, I saw the following entry in the year's index: “‘German refugees' role in Atomic Bomb creation discussed.” It was a series of four articles which explained the atomic bomb for laymen. The author of the series was William L. Laurence, one of the star journalists at that time of this thoroughly circumscribed paper, as Karl Kraus would have said. Part 3, published on September 28, 1945—seven weeks after Hiroshima had been turned into a radioactive field of rubble—bore the title: “Atom Bomb Based on Einstein Theory.” The name of the discoverer of nuclear fission, Otto Hahn, does not appear anywhere in the whole series. Part 4, published the following day, bears the title: “Atomic

Factories Incredible Sight” and describes in hymnal lines the creators of the bomb and how it was created:

*“The design and construction of the bombs called for the concentration of the most powerful ‘beam’ of collective intelligence ever brought to bear upon any single project. Some of the outstanding minds in this group came to us as exiles from Nazi and Fascist fury.”*

The rest I would like to reproduce completely, because I understand fascist “kitsch” just as well as Mr. Laurence:

*“Hidden in the mesas and canyons of New Mexico, peaked by the mountains of the majestic Sangre de Cristo, which appear like mountains of fire during sunrise and sunset, this place, Los Alamos, is the ‘most Mars-like’ on of all places in the ‘atom land of Mars.’ With every step one finds incredible things here, a new species of man, the Mesa-Man, lays the foundation of the civilization of the future.”* (retranslated)

Two years after reading this in the *New York Times*, I noticed that Mr. Laurence was the only journalist who was allowed to observe the first atom bomb test with his own eyes. The man who guided Laurence through the top secret precincts of Los Alamos and who assisted him writing this, was the future Einstein and Nobel Prize laureate Richard P. Feynman. In 1985, he still had a remarkable *Weltanschauung*:

*“The Germans had Hitler and the possibility of developing an atomic bomb was obvious, and the possibility that they would develop it before we did was very much of a fright. So I decided to go [...to Los Alamos].”* (p. 108)

*“We were recruited, by the way, by Oppenheimer and other people [...] he was a wonderful man.”* (p. 110)

*“I ended up as a group leader under Bethe with four guys under me..”* (p. 112)

*“I was an underling at the beginning. Later I became a group leader. And I met some very great men. It is one of the great experiences of my life to have met all these wonderful physicists.”* (p. 132)

*“Then there was John Von Neumann, the great mathematician. We used to go for walks on Sunday. We'd walk in the canyons, often with Bethe and Bob Bacher. It was a great pleasure. And Von Neumann gave me an interesting idea: that you don't have to be responsible for the world that you're in. So I have developed a very powerful sense of social irresponsibility as a result of Von Neumann's advice. It's made me a very happy man ever since. But it was Von Neumann who put the seed in that grew into my active irresponsibility!”* (p. 132; all quotations from: Richard P. Feynman, *Surely You're Joking, Mr. Feynman*, W.W. Norton, New York 1985).

Even then, I pondered whether these “Mesa-Men,” who allegedly laid “the foundation of the civilization of the future,” were not simply Judeo-Nazis who—as Israel Shahak has repeatedly emphasized—grow like weeds, especially in America. And after reading Thomas Powers' book—the title of which would more appropriately be: “The War of Heisenberg's Colleagues. The Secret History of the Mesaic Nuclear Bomb”—I am absolutely certain of this.

---

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 3(2) (1999), pp. 182-186; translated by Fabian Eschen.

# The Hole in the Door

By Hans Pedersen

## Introduction

It is important for understanding political and religious phenomena to realize that abnormal behavior is transmittable. At the turn of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, the German neurologist Kraepelin described a condition which he called “induced insanity”;<sup>1</sup> whereby a psychotic person, called the *inductor*, can cause a similar sickness in otherwise normal persons. The disease always includes more than one person: the *inductor* and one or more *induced*. The development of the psychosis within the *inductor* depends on the feedback from the *induced* persons. The *inductor* is dominant, and the *induced* follow him/her like a dog follows his master. Their behavior only returns to normal when their contact with the *inductor* is interrupted.

A variation of Kraepelin’s “induced madness” will be described in the following and includes two disease descriptions: 1) The disease of the *inductor*, which—after the first described case—can be named Rachel-Hertz-Syndrome, and 2) the disease on the side of the *induced*. For this I suggest the name “Acquired Behavior Deficiency Syndrome”—abbreviated *ABDS*—in order to emphasize the similarity with AIDS.

This condition can be distinguished from neuroses, psychoses and psychotic conditions as a form of stand-alone disease. Whole epidemics can develop. Causes for the disease are not viruses or bacteria, but ideas and imaginations. Similar to AIDS (Acquired Immune Deficiency Syndrome), however, is the initial condition for the development of the disease: a blocking of defense mechanisms, here the higher neurological functions of the brain.

The similarity between *ABDS* and AIDS is that in both cases the distinction between “foreign” and “own” is warped in such a way that outsiders—viruses or non-members of the group—can attain control. If a degenerated cell is not recognized as such, cancer develops. When AIDS has blocked the immunization, parasites like viruses and bacteria can destroy the body. This also has a parallel with *ABDS*.

## Rachel-Hertz-Syndrome

Rachel-Hertz-Syndrome consists of a pathological impulse by the sick person to gain attention and devotion, by employing knowingly deceitful means.<sup>2</sup> He or she knows, that s/he must hide these means from other persons. In contrast to this, the urge to commit the deception is unconscious and not subject to the will. But the reaction of people in the environment can suppress or enhance the pathological behavior; things can reach such an extent that the sick person dominates his or her environment totally.

Contrary to the syndrome described by Kraepelin, the *inductor* here is *not* affected by the same disease which he caused in his victims; s/he does not have the same insane imaginations which s/he evoked in the *induced*. The inductor blocks the mental defense mechanism of the victim. By imposing a taboo, s/he eliminates the victim’s capability to look at

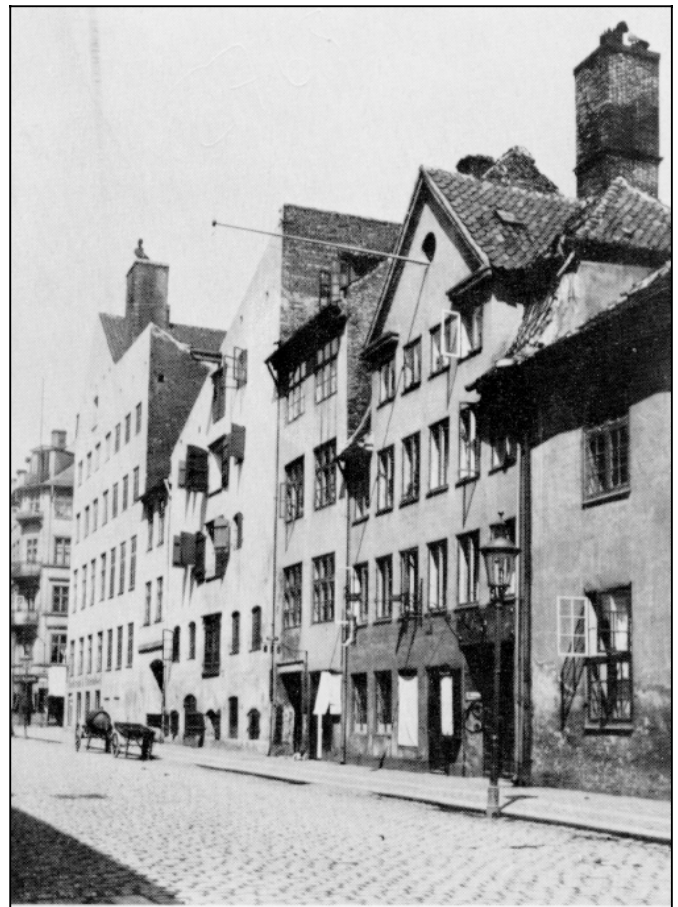
him/herself critically and to use his/her capacity to reason.

The *inductor* causes an emotional blockage which blocks the *induced*’s rational questioning about his or her own behavior; by so doing, the *inductor*, whose actions may otherwise appear utterly embarrassing and ridiculous to unaffected, healthy individuals, becomes able to exploit the victim.

In this way, paranoid perceptions develop regarding certain contemporary eras. For the thorough understanding of this disease, the case which gave this disease its name shall be described in the following. It happened almost 180 years ago, which guarantees that there will be only a minute danger that it will cause the above described emotional blockages among readers perhaps already induced.

The disease was first described in Denmark regarding a Jewish girl named Juliane *Rachel Hertz* who became known as the “Sewing Needle Virgin”.<sup>3</sup> Characteristic of the disease is the uninhibited use of constant deception by a person who attempts to bring herself to the center of attention in order to gain support from the people around her.

Rachel Hertz exhibited symptoms which at least initially allowed for suspicions as to whether this was a type of hys-



Address: Fredericiagade Nr. 26 in Copenhagen, the House of the “Sewing Needle Virgin”  
(Picture Archive City-Museum Copenhagen)

teria—in psychiatry a condition where the patient *unknowingly* shows neurological symptoms. It can be difficult for the doctor to distinguish between hysteria and conscious deceit, since the patient’s specific acts of deception can be very convincing. Most of the time the patient has helpers for his deceitful actions.

In the case of the “needle-virgin,” the deceptions were mainly aimed at a Danish medical doctor, J.D. Herholdt, professor of internal medicine and chief physician of the Royal Frederiks Hospital in Kopenhagen from 1819 to 1825. The behavior of the patient was therefore characterized by physical symptoms and self-inflicted injuries.

Rachel Hertz had a Jewish family background. In 1750, her mother’s father emigrated from Portugal to Denmark. In 1752, he married Rebekka Wessely. Their daughter Esperance Warburg married Levin Hertz, who had been born in Berlin about 1756.

All the individuals named were of Jewish origin. Rachel Hertz was the fourth of six children. The family was among to the wealthiest in Kopenhagen and had no problems in paying for Rachel’s three and a half years of hospitalization and her care afterwards.

Rachel Hertz was gifted and had a lively imagination. She had a tendency to irritate others and to make herself look fa-

vorable. In the years from 1808 to 1811 she exhibited hysterical symptoms of screaming and of attacks of madness and cramps. Prof. Herholdt was the family doctor. It was not until 1819, at age 26, that Rachel started her acts of deception which later gave her the name “needle-virgin.” Herholdt was called because the patient experienced severe pain in the abdomen, had vomited, and was whimpering.

Below the navel Herholdt found a large hard and painful knot. He made an incision and removed a narrow and hard foreign substance, which turned out to be a needle. Rachel explained that she had swallowed the needle, which then traveled on its own to the spot where Herholdt found it. People around Rachel, including Prof. Herholdt, at first did not doubt this explanation, although Rachel was exposed later. During the following seven years, Herholdt had to remove several hundred needles.

In 1820, Rachel’s mother suffered apoplexy (stroke) with paralysis of her left side. In the meantime, Rachel developed a “paralysis” of her arms as well as legs, but by New Year 1820 only the “paralysis” of the right arm remained.

In the spring of 1821, Rachel showed symptoms she had evinced before 1811: she could not urinate and had to be catheterized. This was done by Herholdt twice a day. The quantity of urine, however, which was released through the catheter from the bladder exceeded by far the quantity of fluid which Rachel took in. In 1822, Rachel was hospitalized in the Royal Frederiks Hospital where Herholdt had become chief physician. After admission she became mute and communicated from then on by writing with her left hand.

### Exposure

In 1825, Herholdt completed his work at the Royal Frederiks Hospital, and Rachel came under the care of the shoemaker family Kuhn. Her hosts had the suspicion that she was faking and therefore drilled a hole through the door of her room in order to observe Rachel. It turned out that Rachel, during moments when she felt unobserved, sat up in her bed, moved the “paralyzed” arm, and walked about in her room. She combed her hair with her right hand and wrote messages on communications on the blackboard for Herholdt. She also inserted liquids and air through the catheter into her bladder.

Herholdt was informed about this and observed Rachel through the hole in the door. A few days after Rachel had been told that she had been exposed, her body functions were back to normal. Criminal proceedings were considered against her, but Queen Marie Sophie Frederikke intervened on her behalf.

After the exposure, it became clear that Rachel must have had accomplices who had helped her. Furthermore, it turned out that Rachel had always been aware of the fact that she was deceiving the people around her.

The “symptoms” which Rachel developed were partly inspired by the apoplexy of her mother, which had resulted in real paralysis, and partly were selected for those who she wanted to impress. When a medical authority like Herholdt recognized the symptoms as real, then the people around also accepted them as real. Little is known about her helpers, who must have known about the fraud.



Professor J. D. Herholdt (1764-1836), Victim and Hero  
(Medical-historic Museum, Kopenhagen)

If no one had reacted to Rachel Hertz's deceit, and had she not been the object of interest of prominent persons, the disease possibly would not have broken out in the first place. High level persons paid regular visits: Prof. Justizrat Weedemann from Kiel, His Excellency Geheimer Konferenzrat W.J.A. von Moltke, Bishop Dr. Theol. C.D. Kofoed, the secretary of the Russian embassy, Louis de Bioloier, as well as Prof. Dr. H. Chr. Ørstedt (discoverer of electromagnetism), to name only the most prominent.

Rachel was not diagnosed as being psychologically abnormal. She was not "insane" according to the medical science of that time. From a medical point of view, her case was interesting, and Herholdt introduced the patient to the highest social circles. Rachel was gifted and even translated medical-historical works for Herholdt from Latin into Danish. Assignment to this work doubtlessly gave Rachel some ideas about the "symptoms" and provided her with the theoretical knowledge which was necessary in order to deceive a medical doctor for years. Herholdt's thorough and persevering examinations, on the other hand, contributed to perpetuate her interest in the matter.

The case also shows that the *inductor* gets his or her ideas for the acts of deception from his or her environment and adapts them to the expectations of the target person(s).

Without the possibility of deception, *i.e.*, when the patient's social contacts are aware of this phenomenon, the sick person can lead a perfectly normal life and integrate into society.

On May 8, 1829, Rachel Herz gave birth to a daughter, Juliane Krüger. According to the church book of the Trinitatus parish in Kopenhagen, the father was one Krüger, an office manager. From that time onward, Rachel lived completely outside the Jewish community, and in 1834, she moved with her daughter to the Forester House Svendstedille on the Danish island Seeland. She died in 1841, after finally coming to lead a completely normal life. On Seeland, Rachel Hertz was treated affectionately and with understanding by her landlords. However, because of their attitude—they were of course familiar with her history—Rachel Hertz no longer had any opportunity for her deceptions. (Today, certain circles would denounce this attitude as "anti-Semitism.")

The "needle virgin" is the first well-documented example of this form of mental disease in the history of medicine. This condition is not characterized by physical symptoms but by the tendency and capability to deceive those in the environment. It is not fraud in the general penal sense but a behavioral malfunction which has to be considered 'endogenous.' Which means that it comes from within; it has a genetic origin. In order to achieve an emotional gain, the sick person—the *inductor*—must influence and deceive other people. In doing this, s/he utilizes innate trigger mechanisms of the victim which are not pathological, but are instrumental for the integration and assumption of social roles within society. This includes helping other members of the community in case of weakness or sickness, offering protection, showing compassion, and providing comfort. By simulating an afflicted person, which triggers certain mechanisms within the victim—the *induced*—the *inductor* causes a "false alarm" and thus brings about reactions which are inappropriate to the

actual situation. This condition in itself cannot be viewed as pathological. In a similar fashion, every baby tries to "drill" others, especially its mother. If the mother is overly responsive and reacts with disproportionate devotion, the development of a tyrant is preprogrammed.

The behavior becomes pathological when the *inductor* prevents his/her victim from acting rationally by developing new symptoms, for instance by going berserk, screaming, having attacks of hysteria, and by inducing guilt feelings. When every attempt of the victim to judge his/her part rationally is "punished" with such violent reactions from the *inductor*, the victim finally stops resisting at all. Instead of thinking rationally, the victim allows him/herself to be controlled through guilt complexes. Only if the victim is confronted with the truth in the presence of others, will s/he dare to think rationally again.

Neurotic persons can totally terrorize their environment, because most people cannot stand the emotional stress produced when a neurotic person does not get his or her will. The *inductor* of ABDS does not suffer from neurosis alone, as is shown by the quite painful self-mutilations of Rachel Hertz. This proves that it is independent of symptom. The urge to deceive is the core of the disease, and self mutilation can be one means to this end. In contrast to the often severe self-mutilations of schizophrenic persons, those of *inductors* are usually less dangerous and are committed for their usefulness. The self-mutilations of *ABDS inductors* have a parallel in "pseudo-tetamen suicidi," attempted suicide with ineffective means. Patients with this diagnosis attempt to commit suicide not in order to kill themselves, but to alarm those in their environment. The attempt is intentionally carried out so as not to succeed.

The practical diagnosis of Rachel Hertz syndrome also includes traits of related clinical syndromes including neurotic, psychotic, psychopathic, and hysteric components. But it has to be emphasized that the *inductor* him/herself does *not* believe in the insane delusions which s/he causes in his/her victims. It is, in fact, possible that s/he suffers from other delusions, but s/he is aware of the deceptions, and behaves quite rationally and carefully in order to prevent their revelation. In those cases where there are accomplices, the *inductor* most likely bribes them.

The *inductor* acts compulsively, and even the danger of being exposed cannot deter him/her from his/her activities. Curing him/her is only possible if there is no longer any opportunity to deceive.

### **Syndrome of Acquired Behavior Defects (ABDS)**

In most cases, the victim gets entangled in a web of emotional involvements and blockings which s/he cannot untangle alone. The victim's delusions have a different origin than do psychogenic delusions. Though both delusions cause enormous emotional stress, ABDS does not limit the ability for normal and rational behavior in other areas of life. The *ABDS* psychosis exists only when confronted with the *inductor* (and other, equally induced victims).

Kraepelin's syndrome of "induced madness" is also known in older psychiatric theory by the French designation "folie à

deux” or “folie à trois” (madness of two/three). The diagnosis of “induced psychosis” means that, as already mentioned, both the *inductor* and the *induced* jointly accept the *same* delusions, but that the *induced* operates pathologically. Generally, individuals outside of the normal population fall victim to it.

Herein lies the difference between induced madness and *ABDS*, where the *inductor* abuses *normal* people. Here, the *induced* are not individuals outside the normal population, as the case of Prof. Herholdt indicates. Herholdt distinguished himself only positively: he certainly had an intelligence above average and was a very social person.

Another difference between Kraepelin’s “induced madness” and the case of Rachel Hertz is—as has already been determined—that she as the *inductor* has *no* delusions. It is Herholdt whose picture of the situation is formed by delusions. His judgment of the condition of the patient is wrong and irrational. Of course, not every wrong diagnosis by a doctor can be described as a delusion. In the case of Rachel Hertz, the justification for this is based on Herholdt’s intellectual blockage regarding his capabilities to rationally analyze the clinical findings. Already the difference in quantity between Hertz’s consumed and excreted liquid should have made Prof. Herholdt think.

Only after Herholdt looked through the hole in the door did it occur to him that he had been made a fool of. He did not even consider whether Rachel herself had introduced the needles and other objects underneath her skin. The pathological nature of Rachel’s behavior becomes clear when one considers the pain that this must have caused.

Herholdt can be excused to some extent if one considers the poor anatomical and physiological knowledge of the medical doctors at that time. But Herholdt must also have had an emotional desire for an extraordinary doctor/patient relationship in order to participate in this hoax without becoming aware of it. The intensive and time consuming treatment of Rachel Hertz indicates a deep emotional involvement. Prior to the exposure, however, Herholdt was at no time aware that it was a deception.

One also has to consider that the physicians of that time did not expect such behavior from any patient. Even today’s physicians can get in trouble and let themselves be tricked by approaching a patient too uncritically. In the case of Rachel Hertz it was sober non-experts who became suspicious and found irrefutable proof of the hoax. When Herholdt looked through the hole in the door, he described his impression as follows:

*“Oh man! I thought, what are you? Does a madness really exist that is not based on the aberration of the mind? I walked away quietly and felt hurt.”*

The reactions after Rachel’s exposure were condemnation and disgust. Even the medical world—as Herholdt’s reaction indicates—had difficulty in imagining that a person who could perform difficult intellectual work—for example, translating from Latin—could be “insane,” but at the same time might not show any sign of mental malfunction.

While looking through the hole in the door, Herholdt realized—as did the surgeon Prof. C.C. Withusen—that Rachel’s

behavior was the expression of a pathological condition of the mind. He was cured of his own delusions within seconds. The emotional bond with the patient, which was a prerequisite for maintaining the physician’s “induced” condition, was broken and replaced by a normal doctor/patient relationship. In this case, the physician had been the patient.

A sudden contact with a non-induced individual or an accidental exposure of the *inductor* can cause a “miraculous cure” by immediate cessation of the emotional blockade.

Of course, not only physicians can fall victim to this form of psychosis.

The condition of *ABDS* was thus far unknown in the psychiatric literature; at least it did not get any attention.

There exists in the English-language medical literature a related concept called “Holocaust Survivor Syndrome (HSS).<sup>4</sup> This is a disease with massive induced delusions, which occurs almost exclusively among Jewish individuals. Other groups of people, who were affected by war, internment, or catastrophes, do not usually show these pathological reactions.

Jews afflicted with HSS exchange their real experiences for those from circulated clichés—in fact independently of whether they were in camps or not.

Some of them testify about persecution which they did not experience, and relate stories which are conspicuous merely due to their inner contradictions, their fantastic constructions, and their technical-scientific impossibilities.

The intent of deception is obvious but becomes secondary because another form of psychosis is superimposed, namely that of “being persecuted”. The claim of “being persecuted” probably originates from a compensation mechanism which serves to render inner tensions, resulting from a contradiction between high ambition and the inability to realize it, bearable. The same disharmony can be observed in the USA in the intermixing of blacks and whites, leading to considerable criminal and psychiatric problems.<sup>5</sup>

Characteristic of the *HSS* is a mutual induction whereby the difference between *inductor* and *induced* ceases to exist. All *inductors* are at the same time *induced*. Additionally, a substantial number of inductors or induced do not belong to normal, but to highly pathological personality types. The effects can be devastating. The group of people affected by *HSS* can finally cause *ABDS* within normal non-Jews.

### **Epidemiology**

The epidemiological risks of *ABDS* are considerably higher than the risks of the Kraepelin-Psychosis; an entire population can be effected by *ABDS*. The delusions can be induced in the majority of a population without the victims being sick or abnormal. What we are dealing with here is a blockage of the normal neurological mechanism at a higher level. Popularly put: this is a “mental AIDS.” This parallel is valid also in a broader sense. The disease is incurable as long as emotional contact exists between the carrier of the pathogen and the victim. But in case of *ABDS*, this emotional contact to the virus carrier can easily be removed, in contrast to the (currently) permanent infection of the human body by the HIV virus.

The importance of any case of ABDS is limited as long as only a single sick person triggers delusions in the individuals in his immediate environment. In the case of Rachel Hertz, a closely limited circle suffered from *ABDS*. Recent history, however, indicates that broad sections of a population can be kept in a condition of delusion. This is achieved by an influential group of inductors using emotional reactions and social taboos which block the victim's capabilities to react rationally. In such cases, it is not obvious to the victims that those imposing the taboo are sick *inductors*.

The possible damage can be immeasurable when a group of sick but cunning deceptors causes delusions in order to profit from their victims, *i.e.*, when they deliberately shut down the defense mechanisms of a society. In the case discussed here, nearly all the journalists, judges, and even university scholars of an entire society act in accord with delusions induced in them, and Nobel Prizes are awarded to the *inductors* because of their deceptions.

Once the group of *inductors* has reinforced its totalitarian domination of a society, nobody dares to see that "the emperor has no clothes." Even healthy individuals will be disabled: through induced policemen who persecute the non-induced, through induced employers who dismiss him and destroy his existence, through induced judges who sentence him and put him in jail, through induced media who harass him and call for measures against him... Then the paranoid illusions can spread worldwide. None of the induced individuals recognizes the abstruseness to which it leads. Physicians who recognize the condition as pathological will be banished as "unworthy," for example, by revoking their license to practice. The only cure against this collective delusion is to look "through the hole in the door."

When a new era comes, physicians will be surprised to what extent the world population of the 20<sup>th</sup> and early 21<sup>st</sup> century, beyond all borders and up to the highest social levels, was seized by a form of *ABDS*, while the few unaffected individuals were socially ostracized and persecuted.

One may still be ostracized or even incarcerated when one looks "through the hole in the door"—but it is the only way to health, freedom, and truth.

We recommend using as a "hole": Ernst Gauss (ed.), *Dissecting the Holocaust. The Growing Critique of 'Truth' and 'Memory'*, 2<sup>nd</sup> edition, Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago 2003; see <http://vho.org/GB/Books/dth> and advertisement on the inside of the back cover of this issue.

## Notes

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 1(2) (1997), pp. 79-83; translated by Fabian Eschen.

<sup>1</sup> Emil Kraepelin, *Psychatrie*, Leipzig 1899.

<sup>2</sup> Hans Pedersen, Postbox 99, DK-6340 Kruså, unpublished.

<sup>3</sup> All the information in this article on the Herz case was taken from: J.D. Herholdt, *Auszüge aus den über die Krankheit der Rachel Hertz während der Jahre 1807-1826 geführten Tagebücher*, Kopenhagen 1826. Under "Vorerinnerung" we read: "I wish that the content of this writing would cause thoughtful physicians and philosophers [...] to examine the invisible bond which links our body to our mental nature. [...] the manifold hardship which this sick woman caused me. [...] May her sad example be a warning deterrent to all other erring people, [...] not to resist the voice of truth!"

A more recent survey of this case appeared by Henrik Dam, "Synålejomfruen," *Medicinsk Forum* (Landemærket 25, DK-1119 Kopenhagen), 39. Vol., no. 3, 1986, pp. 84-92, from which the pictures of this article were taken.

<sup>4</sup> In this regard, the Polish Historical Society reported on a conference of Polish and Ukrainian physicians in the Polish Consulate of New York on Jan. 1, 1993, *Press release*, Jan. 25, 1993, 91 Strawberry Hill Ave., Stamford, CT 06902, USA.

<sup>5</sup> Dept. of Justice, *FBI Report*, Vol. 25, no. 2, 1954, quoted acc. to H.E. Garrett, *Race and Psychology, The Mankind Quarterly*, Vol. 1, No. 1, 1960.

## WW II: Whose War was it?

By Prof. Emil Schlee

The period from the beginning of the First to the end of the Second World War is increasingly called what it actually was: the Third Thirty Years War (1914-1945) for the destruction of Germany, which from the end of the nineteenth century had been growing into a scientific and economic superpower. This fact, however, is hidden behind a veil of continuing war propaganda from the media, the historians, and the politicians. The reason for the propaganda is that the entire postwar order hangs on hiding the truth. Historical accuracy, however, demands a correction of the historiography of both world wars: Germany did not unleash either.

### 1. Is Germany's guilt for two world wars an illusion?

The victorious powers in both world wars against Germany understood and labeled both world wars a "Thirty Years War," not without reason (Winston Churchill, Herbert Gladwyn, John Major, Alfred M. de Zayas, Charles de Gaulle). Lord Gladwyn even called the two world wars the "third Thirty Years War." In order to fend off embarrassing questions, the Allies had an easy response to the question in the headline of this article: without historiographical substantia-

tion and against better knowledge, they imposed the responsibility for both wars on the vanquished. Article 231 of the "peace dictate" of Versailles reads as follows:<sup>2</sup>

*"The allied and associated governments declare and Germany acknowledges that Germany and her allies are responsible for all losses and all damages which the allies and associated governments and their dependants have suffered as a result of the war forced upon them by the attack of Germany and its allies."*



By treating the question of responsibility for the war thus, morality, trust, and justice were destroyed as the basis for peaceful coexistence and policy between the nations. Because this era was, by declaration, the era of a “Thirty Years War,” the French scientist Jacques Bainville, known for his anti-German attitude, could declare in 1920 in his best selling book *Les conséquences de la paix* (The consequences of the peace):

*“It can be said that the peace treaty of Versailles organized the eternal war.”*<sup>3</sup>

In accordance with the demands for “unconditional surrender” as agreed upon in Casablanca in 1943, the victorious powers did not even attempt to enter into peace negotiations during or at the end of World War II, but let the German Wehrmacht first surrender, then disarmed it, subsequently simply arresting the German *Dönitz*-government, and finally and illegally seizing power in Germany according to the “Berlin Declaration” of June 5, 1945. Moreover, they did not forget to state:<sup>4</sup>

*“The German forces on land, water, and in the air are totally beaten and have surrendered unconditionally, and Germany, who is responsible for the war, is no longer able to defy the will of the victorious powers. Thus the unconditional surrender of Germany took place.”*

At this point it can simply be noted: The German Reich did not surrender in 1945. No documentary evidence exists for this. To the contrary: in the declaration of Monheim of July 5, 1945, the last head of state of the German Reich Admiral Karl *Dönitz*, who had been arrested by the Allies, protested against the illegal seizure of power by the Allies.<sup>5</sup> The sole responsibility for starting the war, which was assigned arbitrarily to the Germans by the victorious powers at the end of both world wars, is historically without proof, not justifiable by international law, and therefore politically untenable. Only one year after the termination of the Reinsurance Treaty between Germany and Russia in 1890, France and Russia signed a security treaty, and by 1892 a military alliance had been forged between France and Russia, which resulted in a twenty-

<b>From Local Conflict to World War</b>		
<b>Crucial Turning Point of Foreign Policy After Bismarck's Departure 1890</b>		
1882 Secret Three-Power Treaty with military alliance between Germany, Austria-Hungary and Italy in case of a French attack against Italy or Germany	Declaration of War 1914-1918	
1887 Renewal of the Three-Power Treaty (further renewals 1891, 1902 and 1912)	Date	Country
1887 Secret neutrality agreement between Germany and Russia (limited for three years) in case of war; excluded are a Russian war of attack against Austria-Hungary and a German war against France (Re-Insurance Treaty). In a very secret add-on protocol the Russian interest for access to the Black Sea is recognized.	AUSTRIA-HUNGARY	
1890 Re-Insurance Treaty not renewed by Germany. Decisive turning point of foreign policy.	July 28, 1914	Serbia
1891 Treaty between France and Russia about mutual agreement in case of imminent danger of war.	Aug. 6, 1914	Russia
1892 French-Russian military alliance: In case one of the treaty partners would be attacked by a third power alliance under participation of Germany, the other is obligated to the fight against Germany with all forces.	GERMANY	
1904 French-British colonial treaty: Termination of all quarrels overseas. General political agreement (entente cordial).	Aug. 1, 1914	Russia
1907 British-Russian treaty about Persia, termination of colonial quarrels.	Aug. 2, 1914	Luxemburg
1908 Enforcing of the British and Russian entente (under inclusion of France's 'Three Power Alliance')	Aug. 3, 1914	France
1912 French-Russian navy convention, cooperation of sea-forces in case of war.	Aug. 4, 1914	Belgium
1912 Agreement about taking over the protection of the French North Sea coast by Great Britain in case of war.	Mar. 9, 1916	Portugal
<b>Encirclement completed, condition for war readiness is reached.</b>	Aug. 28, 1916	Romania
<b>The Automatism of the Mobilization 1914</b>	GREAT BRITAIN	
July 25 15:00 Serbia orders mobilization.	Aug. 4, 1914	Germany
21:00 Austria's partial mobilization against Serbia.	Aug. 12, 1914	Austria-Hungary
July 26 03:26 Russia orders period for war preparation.	Nov. 5, 1914	Turkey
July 29 Afternoon Great Britain declares state of threatening war danger.	Oct. 15, 1915	Bulgaria
Evening Russia orders partial mobilization against Austria-Hungary.	SERBIA	
July 30 18:00 Russia orders total mobilization. France orders mobilization of the border guard; Germany orders 'security' for the fleet.	Aug. 6, 1914	Germany
July 31 Moming Austria-Hungary orders border protection against Russia	Nov. 7, 1914	Turkey
12:23 Austria-Hungary orders total mobilization	MONTENEGRO	
13:00 Germany orders deployment of border protection (threatening war danger).	Aug. 7, 1914	Austria-Hungary
19:00 Belgium orders mobilization.	Aug. 11, 1914	Germany
August 1 16:30 France orders mobilization.	FRANCE	
17:00 Germany orders mobilization.	Aug. 11, 1914	Austria-Hungary
18:00 Border transgression by Russian cavalry.	Nov. 6, 1914	Turkey
August 2 02:25 Great Britain orders mobilization of the fleet (practice mobilization since mid-July).	Oct. 16, 1915	Bulgaria
August 4 16:00 Beginning of hostilities in the west.	JAPAN	
August 5 Moming Great Britain orders mobilization of the army.	Aug. 23, 1914	Germany
	RUSSIA	
	Nov. 2, 1914	Turkey
	Oct. 20, 1915	Bulgaria
	ITALY	
	May 23, 1915	Austria-Hungary
	Aug. 20, 1915	Turkey
	Oct. 19, 1915	Bulgaria
	Aug. 20, 1916	Germany
	BULGARIA	
	Oct. 14, 1915	Serbia
	Sept. 1, 1916	Romania
	ROMANIA	
	Aug. 27, 1916	Austria-Hungary
	TURKEY	
	Aug. 30, 1916	Romania
	GREECE	
	Nov. 25, 1916	Germany
	USA	
	Apr. 6, 1917	Germany
	Dec. 7, 1917	Austria-Hungary
	CHINA	
	Aug. 14, 1917	Germany
	Aug. 14, 1917	Austria-Hungary

year-long lead-up to the First World War. With time, more nations joined this alliance, leading to the encirclement of Germany. Since the end of hostilities in 1945, there has been no international peace treaty with Germany, a treaty which, as should be general knowledge, can only be signed by the German Reich, which is still with power to do so. Hence, the so-called “Two-plus-Four Agreement” of 1991 signed by the four Allied powers and the two German postwar satellite states, cannot be considered anything even close to a peace treaty. Thus one could just as well speak of a hundred-year war against Germany (1891-1991).

The following critical remark comes from a book entitled *Teufelszeug von A bis Z* (Devil’s Stuff from A to Z) by Carl-August Moser.<sup>6</sup>

*“Because the peace treaty after the First World War was the reason for the second, in order to avoid a third there was no treaty at all !”*

On the question of the responsibility for the war, the victorious powers’ conduct toward the German nation and the German people at Versailles, Nuremberg or elsewhere is best described in a sentence by Marie von Ebner-Eschenbach: “The justice of the stronger is the greatest injustice.”<sup>7</sup> From the outset, the dragon’s seed of Versailles<sup>8</sup> and vengeful justice of Nuremberg<sup>9</sup> were a challenge to the cultivated and civilized nations asking for correction.

Delving into the problem of responsibility for the wars, one sees can see why Hugo Wellems titled his book *The Century of the Lie*,<sup>10</sup> and what Winfried Martini wanted to make clear to the re-educated reader with his book title *The Victor Writes History*.<sup>11</sup> What *Lord Buckmaster* (Lord Chancellor, 1915/16) says about the treaty of Versailles is only the “tip of the iceberg”.<sup>12</sup>

*“To get any nation to lay down its weapons based on certain conditions, and then, when it is defenseless, to impose different conditions, is a dishonorable act which can never be erased.”*

Senator *Robert T. Taft* (1889-1953) made a similar statement in October 1946 at a university in Ohio. Shortly after the judgments of October 1946 were announced, this respected jurist and honorable Republican spoke of the legal monstrosities and historic falsifications of the Nuremberg International Military Tribunals:<sup>13</sup>

*“I believe that the majority of the Americans will be very alarmed because of the war trials just coming to an end in Germany, and now beginning in Japan. They violate the fundamental principal of the American legal system, which requires that an individual cannot be sentenced with reference to a law which was enacted only after the incriminated deed was committed. The trial of the vanquished by the victors cannot be impartial, however the forms of its jurisdiction may be disguised. About the sentences floats the spirit of vengeance. [...] In these trials we assumed the Russians’ understanding of this type of trial. We risk to have discredited the concept of justice in Europe for years to come.”*

U.S. President *Ronald Reagan* stated the real truth when he said at Bitburg (Eifel) on May 5, 1985:

*“A feeling of guilt was unjustly forced upon the Germans.”*

## War from 1800 to 1940

The following nations participated in 287 Wars:

Great Britain	in 80 wars = 28 Percent
France	in 75 wars = 26 Percent
Spain	in 66 wars = 23 Percent
Russia	in 63 wars = 22 Percent
Austria-Hungary	in 55 wars = 19 Percent
Turkey	in 43 wars = 15 Percent
Poland	in 32 wars = 11 Percent
Sweden	in 26 wars = 9 Percent
Netherlands	in 23 wars = 8 Percent
Germany with Prussia	in 23 wars = 8 Percent
Denmark	in 20 wars = 7 Percent

Quincy Wright, *A Study of War*, Vol. 1, 1960, p. 221

## Entrance into World War II

Allied Forces	Germany	Italy	Japan
Abyssinia	Dec. 1, '42	Dec. 1, '42	Dec. 1, '42
Egypt	Feb. 26, '45	-	Dec. 9, '41
Australia	Sept. 3, '39	Jan. 3, '42	Dec. 8, '41
Belgium <sup>1)</sup>	May 10, '40	Jan. 3, '42	Dec. 10, '41
Bolivia	Apr. 7, '43	Apr. 7, '43	Apr. 7, '43
Brazil	Aug. 22, '42	Aug. 22, '42	June 06, '45
Bulgaria <sup>2)</sup>	Sept. 8, '44	-	-
China (Kuomintang)	Dec. 9, '41	Dec. 9, '41	July 07, '37 <sup>1)</sup>
Costa Rica	Dec. 11, '41	Dec. 11, '41	Dec. 8, '41
Denmark	Apr. 9, '40	-	-
Dominican Republic	Dec. 11, '41	-	Dec. 9, '41
Finland <sup>2)</sup>	Mar. 3, '45	-	-
France <sup>1)</sup>	Sept. 3, '39	June 10, '40	Dec. 10, '41
Greece	Apr. 6, '41	Oct. 28, '40	June 03, '45
Great Britain	Sept. 3, '39	June 10, '40	Dec. 8, '41
Guatemala	Dec. 11, '41	Dec. 11, '41	Dec. 10, '41
Honduras	Dec. 12, '41	Dec. 12, '41	Dec. 9, '41
India (British)	Sept. 3, '39	June 12, '40	Dec. 10, '41
Iraq <sup>2)</sup>	Jan. 16, '43	Jan. 16, '43	Jan. 16, '43
Iran <sup>2)</sup>	Sept. 9, '43	-	Mar. 1, '45
Italia <sup>2)</sup>	Oct. 13, '43	-	July 14, '45
Yugoslavia <sup>1)</sup>	Apr. 6, '41	Apr. 6, '41	Jan. 3, '42 <sup>4)</sup>
Canada	Sept. 10, '39	June 11, '40	Dec. 8, '41
Cuba	Dec. 11, '41	Dec. 11, '41	Dec. 9, '41
Liberia	Jan. 27, '44	-	Jan. 27, '44
Luxemburg <sup>1)</sup>	May 10, '40	Jan. 3, '42 <sup>4)</sup>	Jan. 3, '42 <sup>4)</sup>
Mexico	May 22, '42	May 22, '42	May 22, '42
New Zealand	Sept. 3, '39	June 11, '40	Dec. 10, '41
Nicaragua	Dec. 11, '41	Dec. 11, '41	Dec. 8, '41
Netherlands <sup>1)</sup>	May 10, '40	Jan. 3, 42 <sup>4)</sup>	Dec. 10, '41
Dutch India	-	-	Dec. 8, '41
Norway <sup>1)</sup>	Apr. 9, '40	Jan. 3, 42 <sup>4)</sup>	Jan. 3, 42 <sup>4)</sup>
Panama	Dec. 10, '41	Dec. 10, '41	Dec. 9, '41
Peru	Feb. 12, '45	-	Feb. 12, '45
Poland <sup>1)</sup>	Sept. 1, '39	Jan. 3, 42 <sup>4)</sup>	Jan. 3, 42 <sup>4)</sup>
Romania <sup>2)</sup>	Aug. 26, '44	-	-
San Salvador	Dec. 12, '41	Jan. 3, 42 <sup>4)</sup>	Dec. 9, '41
Soviet Union	June 22, '41	June 22, '41	Aug. 8, '45
South African Union	Sept. 6, '39	June 12, '40	Dec. 10, '41
Syria <sup>2)</sup>	Feb. 26, '45	-	Feb. 26, '45
Czechoslovakia <sup>1)</sup>	Mar. 15, '39	Dec. 17, '41	Dec. 17, '41
Hungary <sup>2)</sup>	Dec. 31, '44	-	-
USA	Dec. 11, '41	Dec. 11, '41	Dec. 7, '41
Turkey	Mar. 1, '45	-	Mar. 1, '45

1) Government in exile; 2) Axis power which joined the Allies during the war; 3) Beginning of the Chinese-Japanese war; 4) 26-power declaration directed against the Axis powers in Washington on January 3, 1942

Thus setting straight the question of responsibility for the two world wars is now overdue. Let us therefore move from *The Century of the Lie* to the century of truth!

## 2. Germans are addicted to self-accusation

The inaccuracy with which the victorious powers of both world wars decreed Germany's war guilt has been convincingly proven through an abundance of documents, facts, witnesses, and testimonies as well as a large amount of expert literature from all over the world. One must therefore wonder why the leading officials of the Federal German authorities, who can easily be recognized by their false arguments, still seem to live in the fairy-tale world of early enemy propaganda. If German Federal Chancellor Gerhard Schröder had read only a few of the 21 books listed in the table below, he would not have revealed his own ignorance during a conference for security policy in February 1999 in Munich. During this meeting of international "insiders," he stated that Germany must bear the burden of responsibility for both world wars.<sup>14</sup>

It does not seem to interest the representatives of the German people, their government officials, or the Federal Republic of Germany's historians whether the American historian Harry E. Barnes established in his thoroughly researched book *The Genesis of the World War* (New York 1929):<sup>15</sup>

*"Of all powers involved in the war, Germany was the only one which is not guilty at all for the outbreak of the war [of 1914]";*

whether a joint declaration drafted during a German-British conference of historians in 1955 in Bamberg on the subject "Germany and England 1904-1914" stated:<sup>16</sup>

*"In 1914, the German policy did not aim at the unleashing of a European war";*

whether in 1928, the American historian S. B. Fay came to the conclusion that:<sup>17</sup>

*"Germany did not instigate a European war, it did not want it. The best historical researchers of all countries generally acknowledge that the Versailles verdict of Germany's guilt is no longer tenable or defensible";*

or whether the *Deutsch-Amerikaner* (The German American, Chicago)<sup>18</sup> introduced the basic theses of the book by R. F. Keeling, *Cruel Harvest—The Expensive Attempt to Exterminate the German People* (Chicago 1947) in November 1973 with the following words:<sup>19</sup>

*"For a long time have honorable historians rejected the fable that Germany is solely or originally responsible for World War I. And even for the outbreak of World War II, Germany's enemies have to carry the burden of a large part of responsibility."*

Nor does it seem to interest representatives of the Germans that Winston Churchill declared to the British people by radio in November 1939:<sup>20</sup>

*"This war is a British war, and its goal is the destruction of Germany!"*

Around Christmas 1970, on occasion of the preparation of the so-called German East Treaties with Poland and the Soviet Union, the German historian Emil Maier-Dorn prepared a compilation of a thousand statements by politicians, military,

and historians of the victorious powers. In their statements, they expressed their desire for war and their subsequent satisfaction over the escalation of a local conflict into a world war. Maier-Dorn mailed this compilation to each German member of parliament and requested that they notify him of errors or falsifications, but the entire parliament stayed mute.<sup>21</sup>

Seen from an international perspective, such behavior by responsible officials of the German people after the Second World War is completely perverse. It caused American historian Prof. H.E. Barnes, who visited Germany in the spring of 1964, just after publishing his book *The Question of German War Guilt* in Tübingen, to express the following surprise:<sup>22</sup>

*"In my time [before WWII] the German people and its scholars searched for the facts of the origins of the war of 1914, which exonerated them from the sole responsibility for the outbreak of the World War I, but in 1964, they were still intentionally attempting to suppress all facts capable of liberating them from the sole responsibility for 1939. Viewed in connection with German guilt feelings, the situation in 1964 presents a case of incomprehensible addiction to self-accusation that is unparalleled in history.*

*I for one don't know of another historical example whereby a people shows this lunatic addiction to burden itself with the dark shadows of political crimes that it did not commit—except for the crime of imposing the responsibility of the second world war on itself. In the years 1926/27, the German government and the German public actively and enthusiastically supported research into the truth of 1914. In 1964, however, those who searched for the truth about 1939 were vilified and even exposed to persecution as political criminals. The German press, of course, made no mention of this fundamental fact."*

In his book H.E. Barnes also praised the fundamental research results of Prof. Dr. L. Hoggan:<sup>23</sup>

*"He has, for all time, destroyed the myth of Germany's sole guilt for the outbreak of the war in 1939. This myth, on which all post-war German policy is based, will never again be revived successfully in the domain of learning, never mind how long West German policy can avoid its consequences."*

This federal German myth that Germany must bear the burden of responsibility for both world wars of the twentieth century contradicts the current findings and knowledge of national and international scholarly research. In 1963, this caused the British attorney and historian F.J.P. Veale to make the following attempt to explain:<sup>24</sup>

*"The question of the responsibility for the outbreak of the second world war is of unique importance. It is not an academic problem. It is not a question of finding the truth for some event of the past. Its clarification will unavoidably influence the future on a massive scale. The main points of this question were much too important and their importance reached too far to leave its answering solely up to historiography. To the politicians, it was clear that practicality requires under all circumstances to uphold the interpretation which had been accepted for a quarter century."*



sociologist Raymond Aron and the German-American historian Fritz Stern jointly in West Berlin in 1979. It did not become a German, but rather an American century. For the aspiring Germany, it became the *Century of the Lie* (H. Wellems). Envy and hate perfidiously triggered two unnecessary world wars. The victors decreed Germany's war guilt. These were the two lies of the century. International historiography has refuted them both long ago. Why is the truth kept hidden? Let us now begin the century of enlightenment and truth.

Those who belong to the generation that shares the "mercy of late birth" usually do not know that they are also the victims of "re-education." One focus of the "re-education" of Germans is also their de-nationalization and the instilling of belief in the war guilt. The victors' historical perception and the "moral" content of their war propaganda were meant to be implanted in the minds of the vanquished. When the history books have been rewritten in this fashion; when cinemas, theaters, churches, labor unions, and all media perform their mission of teaching; and the new generation believes, then the process of re-education has been successful. In May 1945, the ruthless application envisioned for the atrocity propaganda was explained to Prof. Friedrich Grimm by a high Allied official as follows:<sup>28</sup>

*"We will continue with this horror propaganda, increase it, until no one will accept a good word from the Germans [...] and until the Germans themselves will have become so confused that they do not know anymore what they are doing!"*

Consider whether you have become confused, and then struggle for the truth.

In November 1999, the writer Heinz Mahneke submitted a petition to the German Parliament requesting the forming of a "commission consisting of selected historians and scientists" investigating "dubious historical post-war allegations." The applicant was thinking among others of the following:

- 1) Research on the causes of the war, and on the responsibility for it.
  - 2) Coming to terms with all inhumanities of the last war, including the cruelties which befell the German people during expulsion, mass rapes, and territorial annexation.
  - 3) Coming to terms with the question of guilt for the terror bombing of German civilians.
  - 4) Investigation of the question of forced labor, including the German slave workers abroad.
  - 5) The entire complex of questions regarding anti-Semitism.
- At the beginning of the twenty-first century, the German people, as the nation's sovereign power should cooperate more intensively with its representatives and with state officials, and demand more information of them.

For, according to Prof. H.H. von Arnim:

*"the basic evil of [Germany's] democracy lies in the fact that it is not a democracy!"*

Let's take a good look at this!

## Notes

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 4(2) (2000), pp. 179-185; translated by Fabian Eschen.

- <sup>1</sup> Cf.: Lord Gladwyn, H.: *Plädoyer für Europa*, Köln 1967, p. 29 & 32.
- <sup>2</sup> Cf.: Martini, W.: *Der Sieger schreibt die Geschichte*, Munich 1991, p. 35; Lentin, A.: *Die Drachensaat von Versailles. Die Schuld der "Friedensmacher"*, Leoni 1994. - Ebray, A.: *Der unsaubere Frieden. Versailles – Der zweite Akt des Vernichtungskrieges gegen Deutschland im 20. Jahrhundert*, Viöl 1996 (first edition: 1925).
- <sup>3</sup> Bainville, J.: *Les conséquences de la paix*, Paris 1920, p. 57.
- <sup>4</sup> Grabert, W.: *Jalta-Potsdam und die Dokumente zur Zerstörung Europas*, Tübingen 1985, p. 44f.
- <sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 54f.
- <sup>6</sup> Moser, C.-A.: *Teufelszeug von A bis Z. Wörter und Worte der Zeitkritik*, Berg <sup>3</sup>1986, p. 159 (keyword: „Geschichtslücke“).
- <sup>7</sup> Quoted in: Peltzer, K.: *Das treffende Zitat, Gedankengut aus drei Jahrtausenden und fünf Kontinenten*. p. Aufl. Thun 1974, p. 551: aus *Aphorismen*, Berlin 1880.
- <sup>8</sup> Lentin, A.: *Die Drachensaat von Versailles*, Leoni 1984.
- <sup>9</sup> Saunders, H.A.: *Forum der Rache, Deutsche Generale vor alliierten Siegertribunalen 1945-1948*, Leoni 1986.
- <sup>10</sup> Wellems, H.: *Das Jahrhundert der Lüge. Von der Reichsgründung bis Potsdam 1871-1945*, Kiel <sup>2</sup>1999.
- <sup>11</sup> Martini, W.: *Der Sieger schreibt die Geschichte. Anmerkungen zur Zeitgeschichte*, Munich 1991.
- <sup>12</sup> Quoted and retranslated from: Grenfell, R.: *Bedingungsloser Haß? Die deutsche Kriegsschuld und Europas Zukunft*, Tübingen 1954, p. 78 (date of statement: 1922); Engl.: *Unconditional hatred. German war guilt and the future of Europe*. Devin-Adair, New York 1953.
- <sup>13</sup> Quoted in: Bardèche, M.: *Nürnberg oder die Falschmünzer*, Viöl 1992, p. 25f.
- <sup>14</sup> Cf.: Stürmer, M.: *Schröders lockere Lektion über eine Chefsache*, in: *Welt am Sonntag*, Feb. 21, 1999, p. 35.
- <sup>15</sup> A. A. Knopf, New York, London 1929; quoted and retranslated acc. to: Maier-Dorn, E.: *Alleinkriegsschuld. 1200 Antworten auf 400 Fragen*. Großaitingen 1970, p. 118.
- <sup>16</sup> *Ibid.*, in the report mentioned: p. 11, Chap. IX.
- <sup>17</sup> Quoted in: Lutz, H.: *Verbrechervolk im Herzen Europas?* Tübingen 1958, p. 26.
- <sup>18</sup> Official periodical of the German-American National Congress, an umbrella organization of 300 German-American associations.
- <sup>19</sup> Quoted in: Richthofen, B. v.: *Kriegsschuld 1939-1941. Der Schuldanteil der anderen*. Kiel 1981, p. 11f.
- <sup>20</sup> Quoted in: Bernhardt, H.: *Deutschland im Kreuzfeuer großer Mächte. 1000 aufschlußreiche Zitate als Jahrhundertzeugen*, Preuß. Oldendorf 1988, p. 274.
- <sup>21</sup> Quoted in *ibid.*, p. 357.
- <sup>22</sup> Barnes, H. E.: *Die deutsche Kriegsschuldfrage*, Tübingen 1964, p. 124; Engl.: *Revisionism and brainwashing*, 1963; more recent in: *The Barnes Trilogy*, IHR/HRP, Torrance/ London 1979.
- <sup>23</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 125.
- <sup>24</sup> Veale, F.J.P.: *Schuld und Sühne*, Munich 1963. Quoted. acc. to: Richthofen, B. v.: *op. cit.* (note 19), pp. 31, 64; Engl.: *Crimes discreetly veiled* IHR, Torrance, CA, 1979.
- <sup>25</sup> Eschenburg, Th.: *Zur politischen Praxis in der Bundesrepublik. Kritische Betrachtungen 1957-1961*, Bd. I, Munich 1961, p. 162ff.
- <sup>26</sup> Richthofen, B. v.: *op. cit.* (note 19), p. 7f.
- <sup>27</sup> Quoted acc. to Diwald, H.: *Geschichte der Deutschen*, Propyläen, Frankfurt, 1978, p. 98.
- <sup>28</sup> Grimm, F. W.: *Politische Justiz, die Krankheit unserer Zeit*, Scheur, Bonn 1953, p. 146ff.; similar in Grimm: *Mit offenem Visier*, Druffel, Leoni 1961, p. 248f.

## Hitler's, Churchill's, Roosevelt's, or Stalin's War?

Many of the following books, which are decisive for a thorough understanding of WWII, never appeared in English

1. *Kunert, Dirk: Hitlers* kalter Krieg – Moskau, London, Washington, Berlin: Geheimdiplomatie, Krisen und Kriegshysterie 1938/39, Kiel 1989. (Hitler's Cold War – Moscow, London, Washington, Berlin: Secret diplomacy, crisis and war hysteria 1938/1939)
2. *Klüver, Max: War es Hitlers* Krieg? Die 'Irrtümer' der Geschichtsschreibung über Deutschlands Außenpolitik 1937-1939, Leoni 1984. (Was it Hitler's War? The 'errors' of historiography about Germany's foreign policy 1937-1939)
3. *Klüver, Max: Es war nicht Hitlers* Krieg. Neues aus dem britischen Staatsarchiv, Essen 1993. (It was not Hitler's War. News from the British State Archive)
4. *Berber, Friedrich: Deutschland – England 1933-1939. Die Dokumente des deutschen Friedenswillens.* Veröffentlichungen des Deutschen Instituts für Außenpolitische Forschung, Vol. VIII., 106 Documents, Essen 1940. (Germany – England 1933-1939. Documents for the German desire for peace)
5. *Ribbentrop, Annelies von: Deutsch-Englische Geheimverbindungen.* Britische Dokumente der Jahre 1938/1939 im Lichte der Kriegsschuldfrage, Wuppertal 1967. (German-English Secret Connections. British documents of the years 1938/1939 regarding the question of responsibility for the war)
6. *Gellermann, Günther W.: Geheime Wege zum Frieden mit England.* Ausgewählte Initiativen zur Beendigung des Krieges 1940/43, Bonn 1995. (Secret Paths to Peace with England. Selected initiatives to the termination of the war 1940/43)
7. *Hesse, Fritz: Vorspiel zum Kriege. England*berichte und Erlebnisse eines Tatzeugen 1935-45, Leoni 1979. (Prelude to War. England reports and experiences of a witness 1935-45; cf. Hitler and the English, London 1954)
8. *Klüver, Max: Die Kriegstreiber. Englands* Politik gegen Deutschland 1937-1939, Berg 1997. (The War Mongers. England's policy towards Germany 1937-1939)
9. *Nicoll, Peter H.: Britain's* blunder; an objective study of the Second World War, its cause, conduct and consequence, London 1949
10. *Irving, David: Churchill's* War, Focal Point, London 1987
11. *Grohler, Olaf: Selbstmörderische Allianz. Deutsch-russische* Militärbeziehungen 1920-1941, Berlin 1992. (Suicide Alliance. German-Russian military relations 1920-1941)
12. *Becker, Fritz: Im Kampf um Europa. Stalins* Schachzüge gg. Deutschland u. d. Westen. Graz-Stuttgart 1991. (In the Fight for Europe. Stalin's chess moves against Germany and the West.)
13. *Thadden, Adolf von: Stalins* Falle. Er wollte den Krieg, Rosenheim 1996. (Stalin's Trap. He wanted war)
14. *Topitsch, Ernst: Stalins* Krieg. Moskaus Griff nach der Weltherrschaft. Strategie und Scheitern, Herford 1993. (Stalin's War. A radical new theory of the origins of the second world war. London/New York 1987)
15. *Hoffmann, Joachim: Stalins* Vernichtungskrieg 1941-1945, Munich <sup>5</sup>1999. (Stalin's War of Extermination 1941-1945, Capshaw 2001)
16. *Becker, Fritz: Stalins* Blutspur durch Europa. Partner des Westens 1933-45, Kiel 1995. (Stalin's Trace of Blood through Europe. Partner of the West 1933-45)
17. *Kunert, Dirk: Ein Weltkrieg wird programmiert. Hitler, Roosevelt, Stalin:* Die Vorgeschichte des 2. Weltkrieges nach Primärquellen, Kiel 1984. (A World War is Programmed. Hitler, Roosevelt, Stalin: The pre-history of the 2<sup>nd</sup> world war according to primary sources)
18. *Dall, Curtis B.: FDR,* my exploited father-in-law, Tulsa, OK, 1967
19. *Colby, Benjamin:* 'Twas a famous victory. New Rochelle, NY, 1975,
20. *Bavendamm, Dirk: Roosevelts* Krieg 1937-45 und das Rätsel von Pearl Harbor, München-Berlin 1993. (Roosevelt's War 1937-45 and the Puzzle of Pearl Harbor)
21. *Fish, Hamilton: FDR:* the other side of the coin: how we were tricked into World War II, New York 1976 / Tragic deception: *FDR* and America's involvement in World War II, Old Greenwich, CT, 1983
22. *David L. Hoggan: The Forced* War. When peaceful revision failed, Costa Mesa 1989

# New Aspects of Andrei Vlassov

## The Russian Army of Liberation (ROA): Corrective Revision by Russian Historians

By Wolfgang Strauss

On a spring day in East Prussia in 1945 an officer of the Red Army observed a mounted sergeant flaying a young Russian captive with a long leather knout. The captive was exhausted, half naked and completely covered in blood. Every time the whip cut into his flesh, the young man raised his bound hands and hoarsely addressed the officer in cultivated Russian: "Captain, Sir." *Crack!* "Captain, Sir." *Crack! Crack!* The captain, who was also a cultivated man, appeared impassive. He made no attempt to save the doomed youth, however. He knew that he would be arrested on the spot if he intervened and he knew that his gold epaulettes would not protect him. The flayed youngster was not Alexander Solzhenitsyn's first encounter with captured Vlassov soldiers, but it seems to have been the most gripping. On another occasion he was watching as three captured *Vlassovtsis* were being escorted to the rear. When a Soviet tank came thundering past, one of the three suddenly threw himself under its treads.

When the Red Army began its offensive against Königsberg, Stalin's orders were unmistakably simple yet inconceivably brutal: "Everything is allowed!" The soldiers of the Red Army were officially encouraged to pillage, rape, and massacre. Simple soldiers were allowed ten pounds weight of plun-

der, generals several boxcars full. By terrorizing the civilian population the Russians caused them to panic and clog the roads behind the German lines, further hampering movement of the German army.

Solzhenitsyn instructed his men to maintain discipline, spare civilians, and observe the ten pound limit as he read Marshall Rokossovsky's orders of the day to his battery of artillery:

*"Tomorrow morning at five o'clock begins our final offensive. All Germany lies before us! One final blow and our enemy will collapse. Our army will be crowned with immortal victory!"*

He did not repeat Stalin's order to rape and slaughter, but every member of the Red Army was aware of it. The terrible exhortation "Everything is allowed!" had no need of confirmation by an insignificant officer such as himself.

All East Prussia was soon in flames. In *Nights in East Prussia*, written in a slave labor camp later in 1945 and published in Germany in 1974, Solzhenitsyn describes the brutality of this volcanic eruption of rape and slaughter. *Nights* is a depiction of stark terror in verse form, filled with vivid and horrifying images of cows bellowing in their blazing stables while the bodies of their owners char in the flames of their houses. Donald M. Thomas, Solzhenitsyn's English biographer, has attempted a prose reconstruction which releases the horror from its lyric form. What remains is the protocol of an orgy of blood. Its title is simply *Solzhenitsyn*.

He describes the fate of an old peasant woman in an isolated farmhouse. A merry group of Red Army soldiers tell her, "Cook us some eggs, Mother!" which she hurriedly does. They thank her, eat the eggs and shoot her down, then murder her bedridden husband. The grandson of the elderly couple is able to escape by jumping out of a window. "Halt! Click your heels together!" they laugh while shooting at the fleeing child.

According to Solzhenitsyn, the women who were shot were fortunate. He recalls one woman lying on a blood-soaked mattress next to the body of her young daughter. The woman is battered and mutilated but still alive. How many soldiers have raped her? A platoon? An entire company? The woman begs the Russians to shoot her. The author does not tell us whether she gets her wish, although he cannot bring himself to release her from her torment. His entire book is filled with such ghastly and haunting depictions. In another passage he describes the Red Army as "human hordes gone berserk." Donald Thomas asks: Were they really human? (*Solzhenitsyn*, page 156.)

Solzhenitsyn recalled that on January 26 his unit suddenly found itself isolated and cut off by the enemy. On this occasion, however, they were surrounded by their own countrymen: Vlassov's soldiers were attacking with desperate bravery. On page 252, volume 1 of *The Gulag Archipelago* (Paris edition) Solzhenitsyn writes:



Title page of "The Russian Army of Liberation," AST Publishing House, Moscow 1998, Text by S. Drobaiasko, Illustrations by A. Karashtshuk.

*"I was watching when, in the early dawn, they suddenly sprang up from the snow where they had gathered in their camouflage coats. With a great 'Hurra!' they suddenly attacked the positions of the 152mm section with hand grenades, putting the heavy guns out of commission before they could fire a shot. Pursued by their flares, our last little group of survivors fled for three kilometers across the snow covered fields, all the way to a footbridge across the narrow river."*

Even as early as 1945, Solzhenitsyn felt admiration for his countrymen in Wehrmacht uniform with the St. George cross on their arm, who fought so heroically. He created a human and literary monument to them in his epic story of the Gulag, written twenty years after the War. After another twenty years had passed, he completed the Vlassov epic with a radical revision of the history of the "Great Patriotic War," for which he won the Nobel Prize in literature. He did more than demolish the Stalinist interpretation of World War II as a "good war," however. He was also the first Soviet combat officer to make the transition from military tribute to political rehabilitation of the *Vlassovtsis*. In his essay "The Russian Question at the End of the Twentieth Century," which appeared in the renowned Russian literary magazine *Noviy mir* In July 1994, Solzhenitsyn wrote:

*"As for the attempt on the German side to form Russian volunteer units, and the belated formation of the Vlassov army, I have already covered that in the Gulag Archipelago.*

*[...] It is indicative of their valor and devotion that at the end of the winter of 1944-45, when it was obvious to everyone that Hitler had lost the war, in those last few months, tens of thousands of Russians volunteered for that Russian army of liberation. This was the real voice of the Russian people. The story of the Russian Liberation Army has been slandered by ideologues as well as the nations of the West, which could not imagine that the Russians desired liberation for themselves. Nevertheless it represents a heroic and manly page in Russian history. We still believe in its continuation and future today."* (Page 120 of Piper's German translation, Munich, 1994)

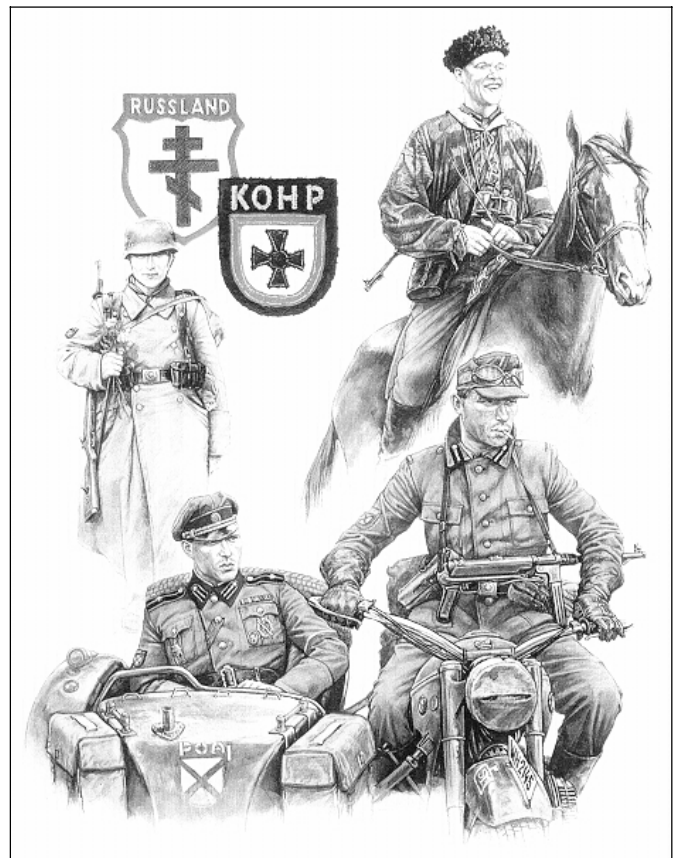
Solzhenitsyn defends General Vlassov against accusations of high treason with the historically based argument that in the history of the Russian Empire there have been times when domestic repression was a greater danger than the external usurper. "The enemy within was too dangerous, too deeply rooted," he writes. In order to overthrow the internal enemy, it was necessary to form an alliance with an external force. In order to overthrow Stalin, Vlassov was forced to form an alliance with Germany.

When these revelations appeared in the leading Russian forum of the intelligentsia in July of 1994, the publisher received sharp criticism as well as enthusiastic agreement. The criticism came primarily from the old, hard-line Stalinist historiography, which dictated that a renaissance of Vlassov style idealism should not and would not be tolerated. Now, five years later, the situation has changed dramatically. The counterrevolutionaries are in retreat and Stalin's Great Patriotic War is no longer dogma for the young generation of his-

torians. Vlassov and his Liberation Army have become the icons of a nationalistic young intelligentsia which has an anti-Bolshevik as well as anti-liberal view of the world.

The most recent evidence for this comes from the military historians S. Drobyasko and A. Karashtshuk, the authors of the lavishly illustrated *Vtoraja Mirowaja woina 1939-1945: Russkaya Osvoboditelnaya Armija* (The Russian Liberation Army in World War II), published late in 1998 by the renowned Moscow military publishing house AST.

There are several reasons for the rapid advance of revisionism in Russia. In the first place, "Stalinist-Antifascist Political Correctness" has been effectively neutralized. In the second place, the formerly secret Soviet archives have been opened to international historians. In the third place, the influence of revisionist literature from the West has had a profound influence. In the fourth place, the process of de-ideologizing historiography is continuing apace in Russia, as everywhere. In addition, there is no entrenched tradition of anti-nationalism in Russia comparable to that which now wields such powerful influence in Germany. As a result, Russia is relatively free of the historical and political censorship oppressing Germany. And finally, the Russian media provide no forum for Russians infected with the self-incrimination



*Uniform insignia of the armed forces of the Committee for the Liberation of the Russian Peoples (KONR). Underneath: A soldier of the Infantry Regiment of the First ROA Division in 1945. Next to that: Cavalry of the Intelligence Branch of the 1st ROA Division. Beneath that: A First Lieutenant on the Staff of the First ROA Division.*



malaise, as do the German media. The printing of the pro-Vlassov book in 1998 is perhaps the most striking symbol of the irreversible advance of historical revisionism in Russia.

It is obvious that in view of this extensive documentary work on the Russian Liberation Army (ROA), Germany's wartime Eastern policy must also be considered in a different light. After all, the development and deployment of the ROA were possible only with the support of the Wehrmacht.

In the introduction, one reads:

*"For fifty years, Soviet publications about World War II ignored the fundamental fact that more than a million of our countrymen fought on the German side."*

It says that these official publications slandered the Vlassov soldiers as "traitors" and hid the fact that

*"[...] they too were patriots who passionately undertook the noble attempt to liberate our country from its inner enemy, which in their opinion was much more vicious and dangerous than the external opponent."*

The introduction states that from the beginning, German front line troops made every effort to win both prisoners and civilians over to the war against Bolshevism. According to Drob-

jasko the Wehrmacht was interested primarily in volunteers with clear political convictions—both men and women who saw themselves as victims of Bolshevik terror, collectivization, and the "Great Cleansing." In addition to personal reasons, national reasons were also important. From these developed an explosive complex of motivations to seek vengeance. After June 22, 1941 there were a great many reasons for Soviet citizens who had been robbed and humiliated to change over to the side of the Germans. The Wehrmacht realized this and began early to mobilize an armed opposition. They began organizing an ideological mass movement designed to overthrow the Stalinist regime. Its goal was to incite revolutionary upheaval within the Soviet Union.

Drobjasko writes that the Germans soon realized that such a mass movement required a political center in the form of a counter-government in exile. This counter-government in turn required a charismatic leader at the head of the future national government of Russia. The man chosen for this role was Lt. General Andreij Vlassov, Commander of the 2nd Assault Army, who had been captured on July 12, 1942 after the defeat of his encircled troops. As early as September of that



Upper left: Sergeant, 1<sup>st</sup> ROA Division, wearing German and Russian medals

Upper right: A soldier of the ROA Tank Destroyer Unit

Lower left: Lieutenant in the ROA Eastern Battalion. Lower right: ROA Rifleman, 1945

Left: Soldier of the ROA Guard Brigade)

Upper right: Commander of the Rifle Battalion of the ROA Guard Brigade, Captain Graf Lambsdorff

Below: Noncoms and trainees of the Dabendorf Propaganda School. Far right: an ROA propagandist



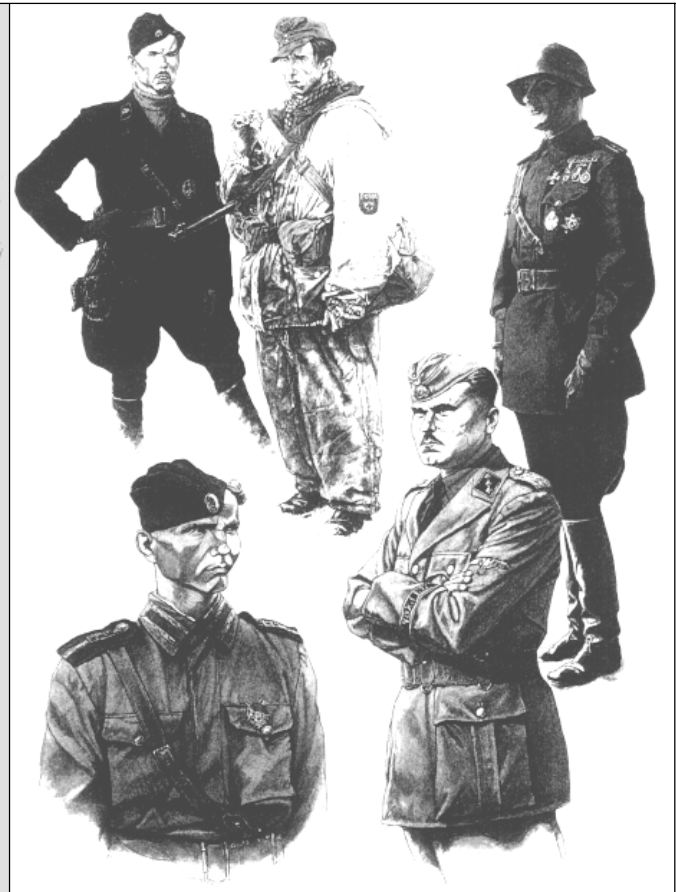
In addition to the ROA, there existed additional units of Slavic volunteers, such as the 1<sup>st</sup> National Russian Army (RNA), the volunteer regiment "Warjag"

In the course of the war, most of these units joined with Vlassov's forces.

Left: Private Lance Corporal and machine gunner in the Russian guard

Right: Lieutenant of Artillery in a guard regiment.

Middle: Major General Holmston-Smyslowskij, Commander of the 1<sup>st</sup> Russian National Army in 1945



Above left: Tank driver of the Russian Peoples Liberation Army (RONA)

Above, middle: A soldier of the RONA Storm Brigade  
Above right: Colonel Sacharow, Deputy Commander of the Russian National Peoples Army (RNNA)

Lower left: A first lieutenant of the RNNA, 1942

Lower right: Standard bearer of the 1<sup>st</sup> Russian National Brigade, 1943

year, Vlassov agreed to a proposal of the German Army Staff to create an army composed of Russian prisoners of war, which would fight against the Stalinist dictatorship. Vlassov signed the Declaration of the Russian Committee of Smolensk "...to all the soldiers and commanders of the Red Army, the Russian people and all peoples of the Soviet Union."

(The depiction of these events is based on a nearly literal translation of the Drobiasko text in *The Russian Liberation Army in World War II*.)

Drobjasko explains that it was a very long march from the initial propaganda campaign with its buzzwords of a Russian Liberation Army to the realization of the political and military missions named in the Smolensk appeal. The reasons for the delay, he tells us, were the crassly differing and often diametrically opposed views of Third Reich leaders regarding their Eastern policy. Until the turning point in the fall of 1944, the ROA consisted almost solely of individual Russian units in the Wehrmacht. It was not until the catastrophic military situation on the Eastern Front had become clear to all, that the decision was finally made to create a politically

autonomous Russian central command and organize powerful Russian combat units under Russian commanders.

Drobjasko writes:

*"The founding congress of the Committee for the Liberation of the Russian Peoples (KONR) took place in Prague on November 14, 1944. In this Committee all the Russian anti-Soviet forces on German territory joined together. This included immigrants, national committees and East European military units, all united in the goal of fighting for a free new Russia which would be free of Bolshevik exploiters. [...] At the Prague Congress it was decided to organize all the combat forces of the KONR under the command of General Vlassov. Regarding the activities of these combat forces, the ROA was given the status of army of an allied nation, subordinate to the Wehrmacht only in operational decisions."*

The principal aims of the Russian liberation movement as proclaimed in Prague were the same as had been announced in Vlassov's appeals of September 1942: the overthrow of Stalin and his clique, the extermination of Bolshevism, the

conclusion of an honorable peace with Germany, the creation of a new Russia without Bolsheviks or capitalists, and friendship with Germany and the other nations of Europe. Again, the Red Army and all other Russians were urged to defect to the Russian Liberation Army which was allied with Germany.

Drobyasko's terminology and argumentation clearly and consistently show his revisionist position. Throughout his book, the terms "Russian Liberation Movement" and "Russian Liberation Army" appear without limiting, relativizing, or otherwise discriminating quotation marks. In his introduction he emphasizes his objective attempts to depict the history of the Vlassov army without prejudice and without polemic. He is interested only in discovering why millions of Russians voluntarily chose to take part in a nationalist and socialist war of liberation on the side of the Wehrmacht. Drobyasko is solely interested in finding the answer to this question. From his analysis it is clear that his sympathies lie with the ROA.

As a historical investigator, Drobyasko observes no taboos. He describes Hitler's decisions following the Prague congress objectively and in great detail. Hitler approved the appointment of Vlassov as commander in chief of all volunteer Russian units on January 28, 1945. This authorized Vlassov to create and appoint the officers corps of the ROA according to his own judgment. And that was not the limit of his authority. General of Cavalry Ernst Köstring, in his capacity as Inspector General of German forces, transferred control of two complete divisions to the Russian commander on February 10. After passing in review, all the officers, noncommissioned officers, and soldiers swore an oath to fight against Bolshevism "to the last drop of blood, for the sake of the Russian people." Hitler's name was not mentioned in their oath.

Two assault brigades of the ROA, "Rossiya" and "Weichsel," received their baptism of fire near Küstrin and Frankfurt/Oder in early May during the battle of the Oder. Under the command of Colonel Galkin they were successful in smashing the Soviet bridgeheads on the west bank of the Oder. Himmler congratulated Vlassov personally on his success. After the 15<sup>th</sup> Cossack Cavalry had been attached to the combat forces of the KONR, Vlassov commanded more than 100,000 men.



Above: Lt. Gen. Vlassov with Russian volunteers in Army Group North, May 1943.

Right: Lt. Gen. Shilenkov (on the right) and Colonel Sakharov, a close collaborator of Vlassov, during the formation of the ROA in August 1942.



Left: Col. Sakharov, Major Gen. Bunyachenko and Lt. Gen. Vlassov (left to right) in a collection camp of the ROA in Bohemia, May 4, 1945.

The die has been cast: they will break through to the West. Only a handful survived the final act of the tragedy. Handed over to the Soviets by the Americans, Vlassov dies on a Soviet gallows in 1946.



Drobyasko describes the ROA's heavy weapons in detail: heavy artillery, anti-aircraft artillery, as well as the training schools for officers and noncoms, the training camps, even press relations (there was no German censorship). Colonel Meandrov served as commander of the officers' school. When he was captured in August of 1941, interrogating officer Herre of the German General Staff asked his opinion about whether Soviet resistance would soon collapse. Meandrov, Chief of Staff of an entire Soviet corps, replied:

*"I have the highest regard for the Wehrmacht. Nevertheless the German army will not be able to defeat the Soviet Union unless they are able to mobilize the Russian people against Stalin."*

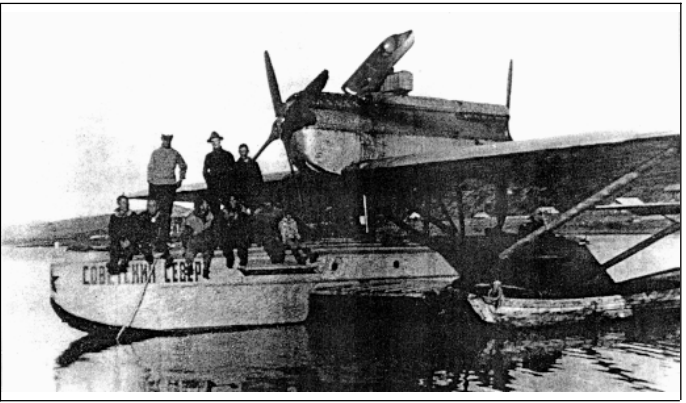
Mobilize the Russians against Stalin! At the end of 1944 it was already too late. There was no longer any question of which side had superior manpower and materiel. On December 19, 1944 Göring agreed to the formation of an air force for the ROA. This was the *Voyenno-vosdushnikh sil*, or VVS. On February 4 it was placed under the command of Vlassov, who named Maj. Gen. Malitsev to head it. The 1<sup>st</sup> Airplane Regiment consisted of six squadrons (Me 109, Ju 88, He 111, Do 17) and one parachute battalion: 5,000 men altogether.

Most of the ROA commanders had served in the Red Army as staff officers or high-ranking troop commanders, some among the very highest. Included were the highly decorated front commanders Turkyl, Baidak, Bunyachenko, Shilenkov, all former members of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union. In the early stages of the war they had defected to the side of the conqueror for political and ideological reasons. This was because the external enemy, Germany, offered the only possibility of vanquishing the internal enemy, the greater enemy. An alliance between the Wehrmacht and a Russian army of national liberation offered hope of national salvation. Such was the dream during the stormy summer of 1941, as Guderian's and Hoth's tanks were rolling toward Moscow. The reality was that it was March 1945 before the *Vlassovtsis* received their first tanks and attack guns under the white blue and red flag of Peter's Russia, three tragic years after the Battle of Moscow.

At the beginning of 1945 Major General Trukhin, a former teacher at the Academy of the Soviet General Staff, served as



Junkers built the first all metal, trimotor bomber of the Red Air Force, shown here at a Russian airport in 1926.



Dornier Flying Boats were flying over the Soviet Arctic and the Northwest Passage in the 20s and 30s.

chief of the general staff and deputy commander of the Russian National Armed Forces. According to Drobyasko, he was a first-class war strategist. What course would the war have taken if an East European liberation army had been created, not in November 1944, but two years earlier, in the fall of 1942, when Vlassov called for his people to join in a war of national liberation on the side of the Wehrmacht? The Russian revisionist Drobyasko does not present this portentous question in so many words, but his study supports the conclusion that Stalin would have been the loser.

This view is shared by author and former editor of the Deutsche Welle Botho Kirsch, a renowned German Slavist and expert on Russia. "History must be rewritten," he declared at a presentation of the Society for Defense and Security Policy (*Gesellschaft für Wehr- und Sicherheitspolitik*, GWS) in Gießen in February, 1999.

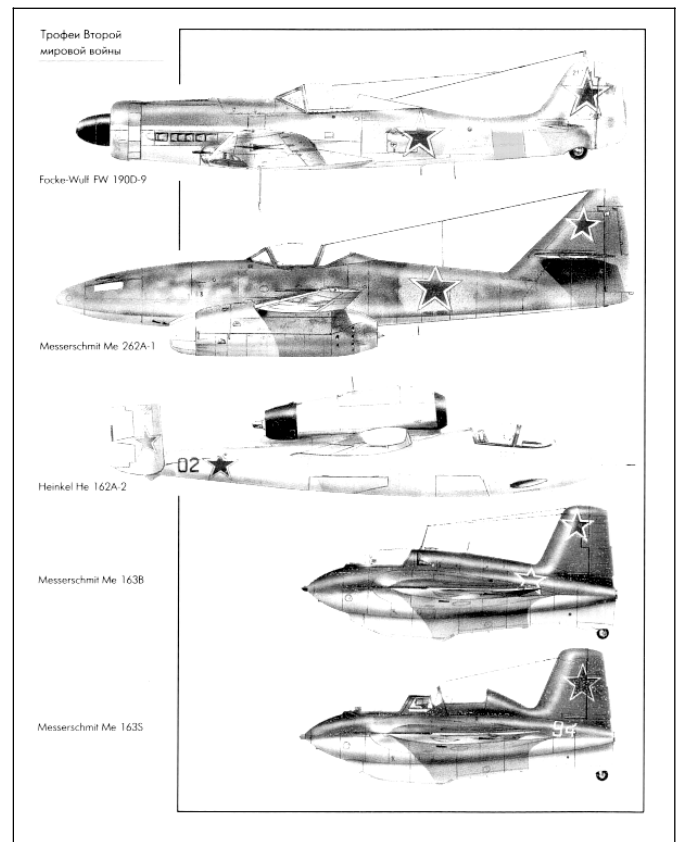
*"Historical truth is clearing its path. [...] Young Russian historians have proven with Soviet documents that Stalin was planning to attack Germany as early as 1938."*

This is the gist of Botho Kirsch's speech as reported in the *Gießener Allgemeine Zeitung*, February 4, 1999. Russian revisionists report that Stalin was extremely anxious about the possibility that the Wehrmacht might smash the gathering Soviet assault before he could finish preparations for the coming war, which is precisely what happened on June 22, 1941. We now know that purges in the commanding staffs of the Red Army, combined with the unwillingness of the terrorized soldiers and officers to sacrifice themselves for the hated Communist Party, had brought Stalin's regime to the verge of total collapse in the first months of the war. In a short time three and a half million members of the Red Army surrendered or defected "just to get something to eat," reports the historian Kirsch. Today Russian authors confirm that the Russians who lived under German occupation were better off than those under Soviet rule. In the end, as Kirsch points out, the political and psychological blindness of the German leadership, combined with massive aid from America and England, were decisive for the defeat of Germany.

Today even the German media realize that the fate of the Soviet Empire was balanced on the razor's edge in the summer and fall of 1941. A large part of the repressed population welcomed the Germans as liberators, and the advance of the foreign troops as salvation. This was particularly true in

White Russia, the Ukraine, and the Baltic nations, as well as western parts of central Russia. The most recent illustration of this phenomenon is provided by the motion picture *Unternehmen Barbarossa Juni 1941* (Operation Barbarossa) which was broadcast February 28, 1999 by the ZDF (Second German Public Television.)

This film, directed by Stefan Brauburger, is anything but objective, which is of course in keeping with the intention of the producer. The film ends with numerous interviews with German veterans of the campaign. Their recollections all support the views of German and Russian revisionists. Millions of Slavs, Balts, Turkmens, Caucasians, Christians, and Muslims were hoping after June 22 for "Salvation" by the



World War II Trophies under the Red Star, from top to bottom: Focke Wulf 190, Messerschmitt Me 262, Heinkel He 162, Me 163B, Me 163S.

Germans—a campaign to liberate them. “Better Hitler than Stalin!” was the watchword for millions of Soviet citizens in the summer of 1941, according to the eyewitnesses.

None of those hoping for salvation by the Germans could have foreseen the consequences of Hitler’s Eastern policy.

In 1942, Hitler was simply not interested in Vlassov’s proposal—not until the military catastrophe in the summer of 1944, *i.e.*, the destruction of his entire Central Army Group. He did not consider playing the Russian card until January 28, 1945 when he sanctioned an alliance with the ROA. All German hopes for a political and military turning point sank in the mud between the Vistula and Oder in the decisive battles of the spring of 1945. And yet, as Solzhenitsyn records, the struggle for freedom and desire for independence had not yet died among those repressed by Stalin’s rule. Staring death in the face, Estonians, Latvians, Lithuanians, White Russians, Ukrainians, and Russians continued fighting for the survival of their countries.

Today, Russian historical revisionism embraces every aspect of German-Russian relations since 1917, both in war and peace. *The German Influence on the History of the Soviet Air Force* is the title of the most recent publication of the revisionist publishing house RITS AVIANTIK in Moscow. Compiled by Dimitriy Sobolyev in cooperation with the German researcher Gerhard Wissmann and British specialist Steven Ransom, it contains 128 pages with numerous documentary photographs. The book describes German-Soviet collaboration in aeronautical research between 1921 and 1930 (the first trimotor, all metal bomber was developed and built by Junkers in the Soviet Union) as well as the continuing development of the most advanced German rocket and jet airplanes (Me 262, Me 163, He 162, Ju 287). Photographs of German aircraft production teams in Odessa taken in 1946 as well as of the research facilities at Podberesie and Savelova, which were unknown in the West, appear here for the first

time, supplement this chapter of history. Sobolyev makes it clear that the modernization of the Soviet air force during the period 1945-1953 was due primarily to hijacked German developmental teams.

We eagerly await the next disclosures by the Russian revisionists. Not all the formerly secret archives have been “cracked” yet!

#### For Further Reading

- Fritz Arlt, *Polen-, Ukrainer-, Juden-Politik*, Askania (Wissenschaftlicher Buchdienst Herbert Taeye), Lindhorst 1995
- S. Drobyasko, *The Russian Liberation Army* (Russian), Moscow 1998
- Erwin Erich Dwinger, *Die 12 Gespräche 1939–1945*, Verlbert und Kettwig, 1966
- Gregory Klimow, *Berliner Kreml*, Cologne/Berlin 1953
- Heinrich Jordis von Lohausen, *Reiten für Rußland: Gespräche im Sattel*, Graz 1998
- Ernst Nolte, *Der europäische Bürgerkrieg 1919–1945*, Munich 1997
- Dimitriy Sobolyev, *The German Influence on the History of the Soviet Air Force* (Russian), Moscow 1996
- Alexander Solzhenitsyn, *Die russische Frage am Ende des 20. Jahrhunderts*, Munich 1994
- Alexander Solzhenitsyn, *Ostpreußische Nächte*, Darmstadt 1976
- Alexander Solzhenitsyn, *Der Archipel GULag*, Paris 1975
- Donald M. Thomas, *Solzhenitsyn*, Berlin 1998
- Jürgen Thorwald, *Wen sie verderben wollen: Bericht des großen Verrats*, Stuttgart 1952

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 3(3) (1999), pp. 250-256. Translated by James M. Damon

## Was the Me262 the First Airplane to Break the Sound Barrier?

By André Chelain

Was the German jet interceptor Messerschmidt 262 the first airplane in the world to break the sound barrier? The answer to this question is shaking up the aeronautical world, because it could easily knock several shining heroes of the US Air Force from their pedestals.

As far as official historians are concerned, Charles Yeager was the first pilot to achieve the great feat of supersonic flight, on board a Bell X-1 in 1947. In the future, the historians may have to revise their teachings, however. Luftwaffe veterans are claiming that they broke the sound barrier in 1944.

The Americans are uncommonly proud of their pilots, whom they praise to high heaven whenever they set new records or

do anything exceptional. In American military legend, breaking the sound barrier was as great a feat as the first space flights.

Historical revision is going to be painful for them, especially as it pertains to those Air Force pilots who were involved in the binge of record-breaking in the late ‘40s and early ‘50s, before the age of space exploration. Idolized and made into national heroes, they are spectacularly touted by Tom Wolfe in his dazzling film *The Right Stuff*.

And indeed, theirs was no small accomplishment. In October 1947 Chuck Yeager, at an altitude of 8,750 meters, ignited the rockets of his Bell X-1, which had been carried to that height beneath a B-29. He described the sensation as a feel-

ing that his lungs were “as flat as pancakes.” Within minutes the young flier had become the darling, blue-eyed boy of American journalism; and thanks to the immense power of the American media his story was broadcast around the globe.

### Give the Germans the Credit They Deserve

Sooner or later, historians will have to acknowledge German discoveries and inventions made during the Third Reich, which American pretense and cover-ups have denied for half a century. It was German public health officials who initiated campaigns against tobacco smoking and cancer, German scientists and engineers who made the pioneering breakthroughs in modern air and space travel. In 1945 the results of their work were expropriated and taken to the USA, where they were placed at the disposal of the American military machine. A similar fate befell French experts who were involved in the development of nuclear weapons. They were kept in the USA against their will, and, when they returned to France after World War II, were not allowed to take their personal records with them.

### The Vanquished Speak Out

Nowadays in Germany, however, voices are being heard which cast doubt on the official version according to which Chuck Yeager was the first to break the sound barrier. Anglo- American historians will be forced to take cognizance of their arguments. After more than half a century of silence in which they endured war, defeat, and captivity, German pilots and engineers are determined to set the record straight and regain for the Luftwaffe the credit and recognition it deserves. In the final months of the war, completion of the Luftwaffe’s program to develop jet interceptors, in particular the Me 262, brought its designers and pilots some unpleasant surprises. Nobody had realized the real potential of this superb airplane, which was indeed the tiger shark of the air. The pilots were the first to realize that it had achieved the speed of sound. The Germans are now claiming that the sound barrier was broken by an Me 262 during aerial combat against allied aircraft, when it went into a power dive. Former Luftwaffe pilot Hans Guido Mutke, now eighty years old, is certain that he surpassed Mach 1, which is the speed of sound. He was a member of a new Me 262 squadron which the Luftwaffe hastily put together in hopes of creating a turning point in the air and thereby changing the course of the war.

### Shaken by a Giant

On April 9, 1945 Mutke was flying at an altitude of 12,000 meters when he received a distress call from a comrade who was being attacked by a British Spitfire. In response, he immediately put his jet fighter into a power dive. Here is his description of what happened then:

*“The airspeed indicator was stuck in the red danger zone, which is over 1100 km/hr.*

*I noticed that rivets began popping out of the tops of the wings.*

*The airplane began vibrating and shaking wildly, banging my head against the sides of the cockpit.*

*After diving about three miles I again regained control and was able to return to base.*

*On the runway the mechanics were very surprised by the appearance of the airplane, which looked as though it had been shaken by the hand of a giant.”*

Reports prepared by American test pilots in 1946, which have been preserved in military archives in Dayton, Ohio, describe in detail the performance of the German jet fighter and support the claims of the German pilots. The Me 262 did indeed have the capacity to achieve Mach 1. Additional arguments to confirm this have been submitted by Professor of Aeronautics Karl Doetsch, now ninety years old. In 1944 he was assigned the task of discovering why several Me 262s had mysteriously crashed or disintegrated in the air. In the

course of several experiments Prof. Doetsch soon established that difficulties set in at around Mach .85. He concluded that pilots who unknowingly broke the sound barrier were likely to lose control of their aircraft and crash.

### The Speed of Sound

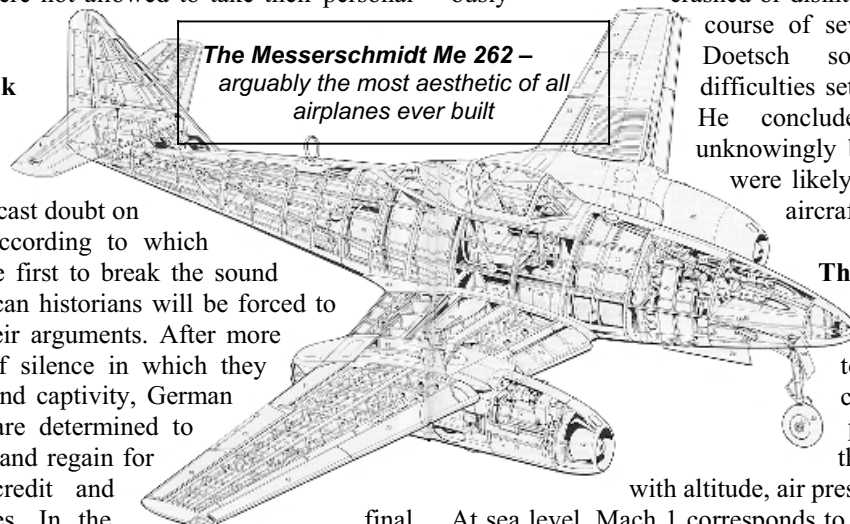
After more than half a century it is difficult to confirm or deny the claims of the German pilots, especially since the speed of sound varies

with altitude, air pressure and temperature.

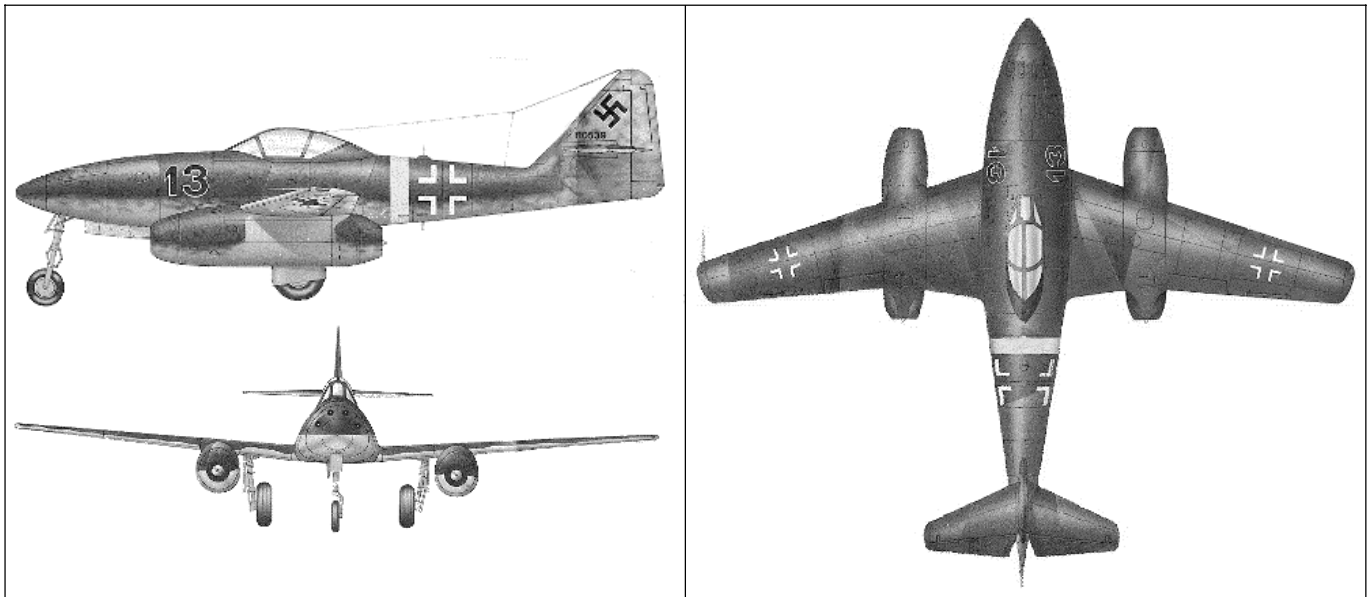
At sea level, Mach 1 corresponds to a speed of 1,193 km/hr, but this decreases with increasing altitude. At 12,000 meters it is 1,063 km/hr. Therefore it is difficult to determine whether an airplane has exceeded the speed of sound without bulky measuring devices. Chuck Yeager’s record will probably stand for a long time to come, because it was scientifically measured, documented, and authenticated. Hans Mutke’s record, on the other hand, was made in the heat of combat. He has nothing to support it except terrifying memories of losing control of his airplane. An air speed of 1,100 km/hr at an altitude of 8,000 meters surpasses the speed of sound. If Mutke began his power dive at an altitude of 12,000 meters and leveled off at 8,750 meters, his Messerschmidt met these conditions. An airspeed of 1,100 km/hr at an altitude of 8,000 m clearly surpasses the speed of sound.

### How the Past Was Obscured by Terror

In the climate of intellectual terror which has reigned in Germany for the last thirty years it has been impossible to acknowledge German achievements made between 1933 and 1945. The irrational nature of this totalitarian attitude is evident from a large number of examples. The swastika, symbol



*The Messerschmidt Me 262 –  
arguably the most aesthetic of all  
airplanes ever built*



*The Me 262, a one-man airplane, exhibited the ultimate design and performance of its day. It was powered by two Junker "Jumo" jet turbines, each having 900 kilograms of thrust, giving it a speed of 870 km/hr. Armament consisted of four 30mm cannon with 360 rounds of ammunition.*

of National Socialism, may not be publicly displayed. This is an essentially religious measure which has no historical parallel. Pioneering measures of the National Socialist leadership in introducing policies to protect the environment are likewise denied. Göring's legislation to forbid the vivisection and butchering of live animals; legislation prescribing humane hunting practices; measures against the abuse of tobacco; prophylactic measures against cancer; and laws for the

peaceful use of nuclear energy are all historical facts which have been repressed. The official historians continue to sweep under the rug everything which would contribute to a multifaceted or differentiated view of Hitler's government.

This article originally appeared in the magazine *L'Autre Histoire*, III(18), July 2001, S. 36f. (La Licorne bleue, 3 bis rue Jules Vallès, F-75011 Paris); translated into English by James M. Damon.

## The Unknown Famine Holocaust

About the Causes of Mass Starvation in Britain's Colony of India 1942-1945

*By Wolfgang Pfitzner*

Much is known about the hunger-holocaust in the Ukraine which was triggered by Stalin in the early thirties, to which about seven million people fell victim. It is rather less known that Britain enforced a similar policy in Ireland, followed for centuries in order to break the will to independence of the Irish. Almost completely unknown are the consequences which British occupation policy had on the nutritional situation in India. Although the Indian subcontinent had always suffered from relatively severe famines, they were never as devastating as under British occupation.

### Introduction

Hunger has been a steady companion of Indian history. In the Middle Ages, India suffered many famines, resulting mostly from periods of drought. A much more drastic deterioration of India's situation, however, came about with the beginning of the British colonial rule. The Indian M. Alamgir elaborated about this:<sup>1</sup>

*"During colonial times, India suffered more frequently, more severely, and at larger extents under famines than at pre-colonial times. [...] It is important to note that hunger and death occurred even when there was a uni-*

*form administrative structure and a far superior traffic system than at the time of pre-British India under the moguls. In addition to usual climatic factors it turns out that the bad situation got even worse as a result of price manipulations by food merchants, inactivity of the government as well as export of food even at times of shortages, accompanied by a gradual deterioration of the income as well as the employment situations of the agricultural workers and small farmers."*

The most appalling hunger catastrophe of all took place in Bengal, the grain center of India at that time, in 1770, when

approximately one third of the total population died because of a drought—10 million people! The British East India Company, which had occupied the country five years earlier, was completely unprepared for this situation. But it did not even once attempt to introduce any measures of aid worth mentioning. The responsible British colonialists evidently were interested only in maximizing their profit through trade and the export of food, which, though not causing the famine, certainly made it drastically worse.<sup>2</sup>

Until the end of British rule in 1947, some thirty more famines occurred,<sup>3</sup> some sources even mentioning about forty, depending on how a famine is defined.<sup>4</sup> Consequently, India's former corn center, Bengal, was transformed, within only two centuries, into the poorhouse of Asia.

There are many reasons for this catastrophic colonial policy during the 182 years of the British raj, to which many more millions of Indians fell victim than would have died under normal circumstances. In the beginning was the dismantling of the traditional Indian social system, in which the local rulers and landowners (in Hindu *zamindāri*) took care of their subjects in times of need, often supplying food rations necessary for survival. The British replaced this paternal social system with something that was decried later as Manchester capitalism: landowners had to pay a fixed tax to the colonial power. The questions of rent and lease income were left to the "free market." Delinquent taxpayers were simply disowned; leasers and renters who did not meet their obligations were evicted. In many cases, the paternal *zamindār* were transformed into greedy capitalists. The consequence was the destruction of the living foundations of many small farmers

and agricultural workers. The rich became richer and more ruthless, the poor poorer and more helpless.<sup>5</sup> According to the ideology of Manchester capitalism, interventions by the authorities into the economy were generally avoided. Despite frequent famines, effective interventions in the market—for example through price control, subsidies, social relief measures, or government financed or supported food purchases and transports—did not take place.<sup>6</sup>

The situation worsened, especially after the turn of the twentieth century, due to accelerated population growth, which led to an increased number of penniless farmers, as well as to the rise of farmers, rents to up to fifty percent of the value of the harvest.<sup>7</sup>

### The Causes of the Last Indian Colonial Tragedy

The last big famine in Bengal under British occupation occurred between 1942 and 1945 (Brahmaputra-Ganges-Delta, today partly India, partly Bangladesh). Besides the unfavorable social conditions already described, additional factors triggered the catastrophe. The Indian Amartya Sen, who received the Nobel Prize for Economics in 1998, took the eccentric view that this famine was man-made because there was essentially no food shortage,<sup>8</sup> which earned him strong opposition, to put it mildly.<sup>9</sup> The discussion resulting from Sen's warped theory strengthened the theory that food shortages are the primary cause of famines.<sup>10</sup>

The literature listed the following individual causes for this catastrophe, during which about four to five million people lost their lives:<sup>11</sup>

1. Since 1940, all proposed constitutional reforms were deferred in order to place India fully into the service of the war efforts against Germany. Consequently, the Congress Party, India's largest national party (led by M. Gandhi) withdrew its cooperation with the government, which led to considerable internal political tensions. Due to the strained situation, violent conflicts arose repeatedly between the colonial authorities and independence fighters. Because the Gulf of Bengal was viewed as a possible location for a Japanese invasion, a strong independence movement there was unacceptable to the British, who therefore executed a military police action in October 1942 during which 193 camps and buildings of the Congress Party were destroyed and countless persons arrested. Between August 1942 and February 1943, 43 persons were shot by the British occupation police. Additionally, British troops were involved in an unknown number of rapes and thefts of food supplies, among other things.
2. In May 1942, the British colony of Burma, which had until then exported food to India, fell into Japanese hands.
3. In summer 1941, Great Britain lost control over the Gulf of Bengal for about one year, which led to the collapse of all non-military sea traffic. Export of Bengal's principal export product, jute, via the sea route became impossible, as did the import of food.
4. Bengal was overcrowded with refugees as well as with retreating soldiers from various British colonies which had been occupied by the Japanese. In March 1942 alone,

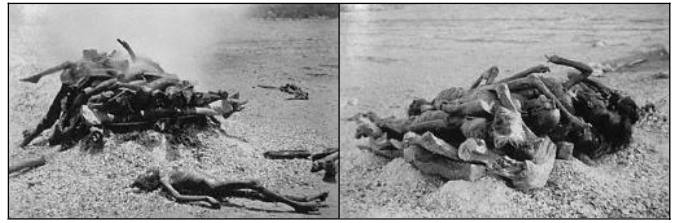


Bengal (Eastern India, today's Bangladesh) was one of the earliest regions conquered by Great Britain in India—and today it continues to bear the heaviest burden of the consequences of British rule.



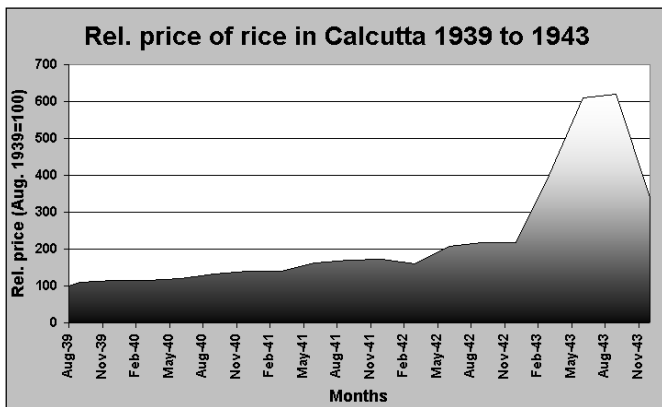
around 2,000 to 3,000 British soldiers and civilians arrived in Calcutta and Chittagong every day, and in the month of May, a total of 300,000 was ascertained. Because these people could not all be accommodated in the cities, preliminary camps were built for them in the countryside before they could be transported to the interior. In the meantime, thousands of them died of malaria and cholera. As a result of massive food purchases by the government, food prices in the countryside skyrocketed.

5. Expecting a Japanese landing in the Gulf of Bengal, the British occupation authorities enacted the so-called "Boat-Denial Scheme," leading to the confiscation of all boats and ships in the Gulf of Bengal which could carry more than 10 persons. This resulted in the confiscation of no fewer than 66,500 boats. Consequently, the inland navigation system collapsed completely. Fishing became practically impossible, and many rice and jute farmers could no longer ship their goods. Subsequently the economy collapsed completely, especially in the lower Ganges-Delta.
6. The confiscations of land for military fortifications and constructions (airplane landing places, military and refugee camps) led to the expulsion of about 150,000 to 180,000 people from the land, rendering them homeless for all practical purposes.
7. Food deliveries to Bengal from other parts of the country were prohibited by the government, on the one hand in order to weaken the independence movement, on the other hand in order to make food artificially scarce. This was an especially cruel policy introduced in 1942 under the title "Rice Denial Scheme." The purpose of it was to deny an efficient food supply to the Japanese in the event of an invasion. As part of this policy, the government authorized merchants to purchase rice at any price and to sell it to the government for storage.
8. The government's blank check for rice dealers triggered inflation. As a result, some merchants did not deliver food to the government, but hoarded it, in hopes of higher profit margins when selling it later. This led to further food shortages on the market and to further price increases.
9. Out of military considerations the government emphasized that the food supply for soldiers, government employees, and workers in the defense industry had to be maintained under all circumstances. In addition to this in-



*Victims of the British Hunger-Holocaust 1942-1945 in Bengal during their Cremation.*

- flationary thrust, the massive military activities in Bengal that were basically financed by the nonstop printing of the rupee led to a general inflation which hit the impoverished population in the countryside especially hard.<sup>12</sup>
10. On October 16, 1942, a hurricane caused a five-meter-high wave to flood the entire lower Ganges delta. It destroyed the winter harvest, salted a gigantic area of land, and killed about 14,500 people and 10 percent of the cattle. Wood for the cremation of the bodies was not available, so decaying corpses caused the contamination of drinking water and finally the outbreak of cholera and other infectious diseases.
11. As part of the aid measures introduced after the flood in fall-winter 1942-1943, the government returned only one third of the food that had been previously withdrawn from Bengal. Further food supplies from other parts of India were purchased only during the following spring, when the famine in Bengal was at its height. This led to another general increase in food prices.
12. The government never considered enforced price controls of basic food supplies.
13. The capability of the Indian transport system to transport large quantities of food to Bengal was hindered by the absolute priority given to military transports.
14. Even though British law in India provided that emergency laws were to be applied in case of famines, the famine in Bengal was never officially recognized as such, an emergency was not declared, and therefore no drastic counter measures were taken for its amelioration. It was not until October 1943 that the British government took notice of the emergency situation, but it still refused to introduce any of the supportive measures that would have been necessary.



### The British Responsibility

The statistical data for Bengal in the years 1942-1944 reveal that food availability was the lowest in at least fifteen years, and probably 11% lower than in 1941.<sup>13</sup> This food scarcity caused by war and catastrophic flood might not have sufficed to trigger so huge famine as to send four million people to their deaths from starvation, among them about one third of the entire landless population. It was in fact a combination of several factors that triggered the catastrophe, for which primarily the British occupation authorities have to take responsibility, namely:

- a) British Manchester-Capitalism destroyed traditional social support systems and caused the impoverishment of broad sections of the population.
- b) Suppression of the Indian independence movement and the

lack of will of the British to help the suffering Indian rebels.

- c) A military policy ruthlessly executed on the backs of the socially weak sectors of the population, which partly resembled Stalin's policy of "scorched earth."
- d) Unwillingness and incompetence of the colonial masters to acknowledge the famine catastrophe and to introduce proper countermeasures, especially food imports.

### A European Parallel

The catastrophes which were caused by British imperialism are not limited to the Indian subcontinent. In many respects, the history of Ireland's suffering resembles that of India, although the Irish certainly suffered far longer and more terribly under the British than did the Indians. James Mullin wrote of this in the newspaper *The Irish People*:<sup>14</sup>

"[...] *It seems that the British colonial civil servants in India brought on a similar famine, as they did in Ireland a century earlier.* [...]"

Moreover, an extraordinary characteristic of this horrible list of genocides and worldwide mass murders, triggered by British imperialism (through war, epidemics, and famines), is the total absence of any public awareness in Britain. An analysis of writings on British history shows for example, that the Irish famine of the years 1845–1847 is usually covered by a few lines at most. And it can hardly surprise that the famine in Bengal is not mentioned at all, Mullin points out.

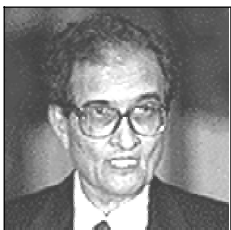
Even though India imported about 1.8 million tons of grain before the war, Britain made sure that India had an export surplus of rice at record levels in the tax year 1942–43.

*"The bad situation in Bengal was discussed in the British Parliament during a meeting at which only 10% of all members participated.*

*Repeated requests for food imports to India (400 million people) lead to the delivery of approximately half a million tons of cereal in the years 1943 and 1944. In contrast to this was the net import to Great Britain (50 million people) of 10 million tons in the second half of the year 1943 alone."*

Churchill repeatedly denied all food exports to India, in spite of the fact that about 2.4 million Indians served in British units during the Second World War.

The Nobel Prize winner Amartya Sen lived through the famine in Bengal as a nine-year-old boy. He reported how, incredibly, many starving, dying people appeared suddenly from nowhere. In Prof. Sen's view, it is always autocratic systems which are affected by starvation catastrophes, never democracies, because they have to pay more attention to the basic needs of the people. Considering, however, that democracy hasn't prevented India, Bangladesh, and other Third



*Prof. Dr. Amartya Sen, Nobel Prize winner for Economics in 1998, dedicated most of his work to the fight against hunger in the Third World. His contribution to our understanding of famine is highly controversial, as it suggests measures which are highly counterproductive. Hence, his work is little appreciated in India.*

World countries from suffering severe famines, Sen's view certainly is too simplistic.

In colonial India and Ireland, the British ruled autocratically. They had absolute power, which often corrupts absolutely, as is well known. But corrupt governments have little interest in halting a famine, whatever the reason for its occurrence. In Ireland as well as in India, food could have been made available, if not by redistribution, then by massive imports or by a change from repressive policies, but there was no moral incentive to such changes. All in all, British colonial policy was aimed at exploiting its colonies as far as the people living in them would tolerate without major rebellion.

### Opposite Attention

In recent years, the young German historian Christian Gerlach has become known for his examination of the food policy of the Third Reich during the Second World War. In two monographs he claims that the Third Reich, based on experiences gained during the First World War, did everything to ensure that the German population would not suffer from hunger during the war. To this purpose, the food resources of occupied territories were used to cover German needs, by conscious neglect of the nutritional needs of the local population. According to Gerlach, this was especially true for eastern territories which were under temporary German occupation during the Russian campaign. Consequently, Gerlach's two books addressing this topic, which were published by the communist publisher Jan Philipp Reemtsma, have telling titles: *Krieg, Ernährung, Völkermord* (War, Nutrition and Genocide) and *Kalkulierte Morde: Die Deutsche Wirtschafts- und Vernichtungspolitik in Weißrußland 1941 bis 1944* (Calculated Murders: The German Economic and Extermination Policy in White Russia 1941 to 1944).<sup>15</sup> Gerlach is certainly correct in so far as the government of the Reich placed a higher priority on the nutrition of the fighting troops and its own people than on the nourishment of essentially non-participating population groups in occupied areas. In this respect the policy of Great Britain resembles that of Germany at this time, both forced by purely war-related issues. There is, however, a fine difference: while the nutritional situation in the German occupied zones of the Soviet Union was disastrous in some areas, *not* due to *German* measures, but because of *Stalin's* policy of "scorched earth" during the Soviet retreat—a fact to which Gerlach hardly considers—the corresponding scarcity and inflation in India was essentially the consequence of *British* policy.

Unfortunately it also has to be stated here that, as always, actual or alleged German atrocities receive one-sided and often distorted attention in the public mind, whereas balanced descriptions and comparative studies of similar events which occurred elsewhere in the world are generally avoided. That could put in doubt the alleged uniqueness of the German "evilness," and this is, as is generally known, politically incorrect and thus undesirable.

### Notes

First published in German in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 3(3) (1999), pp. 274–278. Translated by Fabian Eschen.

- <sup>1</sup> Mohiuddin Alamgir, *Bangladesh*, Bangladesh Institute of Development Studies, Dacca 1978, pp. 48ff.
- <sup>2</sup> Mohiuddin Alamgir, *Famine in South Asia*, Oleschlager, Gunn & Han, Cambridge 1980, p. 59; retranslated from German.
- <sup>3</sup> C. Walford, "The Gamines of the World: Past and Present," in: *Journal of the Statistical Society*, 41(3) (1978), pp. 436-442.
- <sup>4</sup> A. Loveday, *The History and Economics of Indian Famines*, Bell & Sons, London 1914, pp. 135ff.
- <sup>5</sup> Cf. for this Paul R. Greenough, *Prosperity and Misery in Modern Bengal*, Oxford University Press, New York/Oxford 1982, pp. 42-61.
- <sup>6</sup> Regarding the disastrous effects of applying the pure theory of the free market in India cf. S. Ambrajan, *Classical Political Economy and British Policy in India*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge 1978, regarding various famines especially pp. 59-100.
- <sup>7</sup> Cf. Paul R. Greenough, *op. cit.* (note 5), pp. 61-70.
- <sup>8</sup> Amartya Sen, *Poverty and Famines*, Oxford Univ. Press, New York/Oxford 1981, re. Bengal cf. pp. 52-85.
- <sup>9</sup> Cf. Peter Bowbrick, *How Sen's Theory Can Cause Famines*, Quality Economics, Nottingham 1997; P. Bowbrick, *A Refutation of Professor*

- Sen's Theory of Famines*. Institute of Agricultural Economics, Oxford. 1986.
- <sup>10</sup> For this, see the letter to the editor by Peter Bowbrick, "Tatsachen, Theorie und der Nobelpreis," *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 4(3&4) (2000), S. 449-452; Engl.: "Fact, theory and the Nobel Prize," online: [www.vho.org/VffG/1999/3/Bowbrick.html](http://www.vho.org/VffG/1999/3/Bowbrick.html).
- <sup>11</sup> Best summarized by Paul R. Greenough, *op. cit.* (note 5), pp. 86-138, with more references there.
- <sup>12</sup> Cf. for this Sugata Bos, "Starvation amidst Plenty: The Making of Famine in Bengal, Honan and Tonkin, 1942-1945," in: *Modern Asia Studies* 24(4) (1990), pp. 699-727, here pp. 715ff.
- <sup>13</sup> O. Goswami, O., "The Bengal Famine of 1943: Re-examining the Data" *The Indian Economic and Social History Review*, Vol. 27, no. 4, 1990.
- <sup>14</sup> "British greed, grain exports and callous indifference. The 1943 famine in Bengal, India", *The Irish People* (NY), Nov. 14, 1998, all following quotes from this. The quotes had to be retranslated since this newspaper's online access was recently restricted to subscribers, see <http://www.inac.org/irishpeople>.
- <sup>15</sup> Hamburger Edition, Hamburg 1998 and 1999.

# The Moon Landing: Fact or Fiction

## Analyzing the Mounting Controversy

By Germar Rudolf

I was barely four years old when, in the summer of 1969, the first men landed on the moon in the culmination of the Apollo Moon Project. I can recollect my elders' excitement in my vicinity as they sat in front of their television sets. Since five subsequent landings were to follow in the years to come, the fact that men landed on the moon seemed absolutely normal to me, the child. When further landings were cancelled in the mid-seventies, I began to wonder why. Political Science in school taught me a few years later that the gigantic lunar landing project was abandoned due to mounting criticism of its immense cost and of its sheer uselessness.

Over the years, a growing number of people in the United States began to argue that the entire NASA Moon Project was a hoax. Man never set foot on the moon; all evidence was either falsified or intentionally misinterpreted. The moon landings were nothing more than a massive conspiracy on the part of the US government along with thousands of scientists, for the sole purpose of bolstering up blemished American self-confidence following the Sputnik-shock. The government was set on proving at all costs that economy and science in the USA were capable of achieving technological feats the Russians wouldn't even dream of thinking about. The following discussion deals with these conspiracy plots and invites critical analysis.

### 1. Mistrust of the authorities

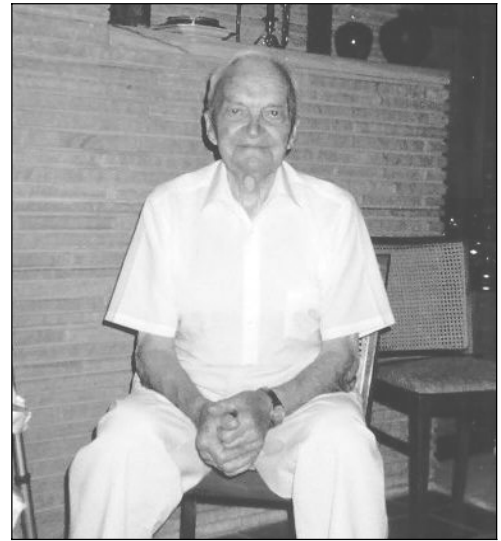
Contrary to Germany, where the majority of the populace trusts its authorities on principle, the people of the United States are quite critical and mistrustful, at times paranoid, of their government and all its functionaries. There is practically no area of public life or of the historical past which is not subject to analysis by more or less obstreperous groups purporting or insinuating conspiracies against the people. One must not forget that the majority of Americans are descended from immigrants who left their native lands because of their distaste for the government or for the political or social structure. In fact the United States owes its existence to a revolution against the authorities of the time, the United Kingdom. Skepticism about the technical feasibility of a manned flight to the moon is older than the Apollo Lunar Project. That America would realize such a program from scratch, an America not even capable of constructing a dependable missile system at the end of the fifties, seemed highly improb-

able. The lunar landing project itself was nothing more than a child of the Cold War. Had the United States not indulged in a technical competition with the Soviet Union, there would have been no such ambitious and, at first glance, seemingly ridiculous project. What sense did it make flying 380,000 kilometers (240,000 miles) just to land on some rock, kicking up dust?

It is no secret to most Americans today that their own government resorted to callous tricks in its struggle against the Soviets during the Cold War. One of the most traumatic events at that time was no doubt the assassination of John F. Kennedy, which the majority of Americans believe was orchestrated by their "system."

Another factor contributing to contemporary America's skepticism as to the credibility of the lunar landing was that nearly all the leading technicians and scientists of the Apollo Program were of German origin, brought to America by "Operation Paperclip" after the Second World War. In Ameri-

Dr. Walter Hüsseremann was born on March 2, 1914 in Künzelsau (Hohenlohe/Germany). He studied technical engineering in Stuttgart, where he finished his degree. Compulsory military service brought him to the missile-testing site in Peenemünde from October 1939 until the end of 1942. He then wrote his dissertation, which he completed in the autumn of 1944, about an analogous device to test the navigation system of both V2 rockets and submarines. In the wake of "Operation Paperclip" he was brought to the USA as member of Wernher von Braun's team, where, as Director of the Astrionics Laboratory of the Marshall Space Flight Center, he was responsible for the development of the entire electrical system of the Saturn V lunar rocket. Gernar Rudolf interviewed him in early August 2002.



Q: In the modern USA, the controversy over the moon landing is increasing daily. A growing number of skeptics insinuate that the whole deal was a hoax inspired by the Cold War. How do you respond to such allegations?

A: Well, I was present at all debriefings, making a detailed report every time. There was such a multitude of public employees that I cannot comprehend how such a hoax would be feasible. This is too preposterous even to discuss seriously.

Q: I understand that this seems ridiculous to a veteran witness, but those skeptics not present at the time will not be pacified by such an answer. On the contrary: for them, it is just another piece of supporting evidence.

A: Well, today's NASA personnel will know how to deal with it.

Q: For instance, one argument of the moon skeptics is that films that show the lunar Rover driving simply seem to have been made in slow motion on earth.

A: The Rover would not have been able to drive on earth. The laminated tires were constructed in such a way that they functioned as springs or shock absorbers. They were much too weak for earth gravitation. Such a vehicle would have had, more or less, four flat tires on earth. You can still at marvel those tires in the museum, where the lunar Rover must be supported by a stand, otherwise it would collapse.

Q: However, this is no proof that such a car with such tires ever drove on the moon.

A: Oh, come on now! Listen, we were surprised about what the astronauts reported on their experience with the vehicle on the lunar surface. It seems that they had to take great care so that the device would not overturn in curves, because of its meager weight and tenacity on the moon.

Q: Another seemingly convincing argument for the laymen is the impossibility of bringing people through the Van Allen belt alive, albeit in a sound condition.

A: The radiation of the Van Allen belt is generally overestimated. A large percentage of it does not even get inside of a rocket. Furthermore, in the last forty years of expeditions into space, the highly sensitive electronic equipment has always passed through the Belt. Without taking damage, you understand.

cans' perception, particularly that of the contemporary, "politically correct" younger generation, these German engineers and technicians were "Nazis" and "war criminals."

This fact alone neither increased trust in the moral integrity of the U.S. Government, nor the credibility of the entire Apollo project.

## 2. Skeptics gain public attention

On Thursday, February 15, 2001 (replay on March 19<sup>th</sup>), the American news network Fox TV transmitted a program entitled "Conspiracy Theory: Did We Land on the Moon?" Michael Pileggi, better known for his part in the *X-Files*, moderated the piece. For the duration of one hour, several persons appeared to allege in interviews that the NASA Apollo lunar landings at the end of the sixties and beginning of the seventies were a fraud. Bill Kaysing, who claimed to possess every possible proof of the hoax, including pictures from the astronauts, technical details, physical evidence, even declarations from the astronauts themselves, received particular attention.

The report came to the conclusion that the entire Apollo landing program was faked in the desert of Nevada—naturally in the renowned "Area 51," a testing site of the American Air Force which, since the Second World War, has been at the core of UFO conspiracy theories.

Fox TV is not simply any television program; it's one of the most successful and largest news networks of the United States. This shows the magnitude of public acceptance which these theories have achieved, namely that the six Apollo Moon landings from 1969 until 1973 didn't take place at all. If the establishment has ridiculed or ignored these skeptics in the past, today their growing momentum has created a change of opinion. Astronomers, astronauts, NASA experts and missile engineers are now forced, rather than simply to belittle the arguments of the skeptics, to respond openly, to take them seriously, and to refute them.<sup>1</sup>

The greater part of the controversy between the two camps can be found on the Internet, where a growing number side either with the supporters or the opponents. The author of this

article had his first contact with allegations of a lunar landing hoax when Jürgen Graf asked him to consider a manuscript set for translation. Since I lived in Huntsville, Alabama, at that time—also known as *Rocket City* or *Wernher von Braun City*—nothing would have seemed easier than to scrutinize the arguments of these conspiracy theoreticians. Did not the German missile team with Wernher von Braun work right here in Huntsville? Was this not home of all NASA experimental sites and didn't veterans of the missile project live here as well? Isn't America's largest space and missile museum located here too? A visit to this museum was not futile because it led to the discovery of a book dealing with the arguments for the lunar landing conspiracy.<sup>2</sup> Meanwhile, a video clip on the subject exists as well.<sup>3</sup>

### 3. Interesting Parallels

One of the first scientists to engage himself with moon landing doubters was Michael Shermer in his book *Why People Believe Weird Things*.<sup>4</sup> The same book also takes on Holocaust revisionists in three of its chapters. It can come as no surprise that Shermer, who is well known to readers of the *VffG*,<sup>5</sup> rebukes revisionism as well as forged moon landings as “lunatic” ideas. According to Shermer, the hidden cause for Holocaust revisionism and for moon landing skepticism lies in ideological fanaticism and ignorance of what he calls the “convergence of evidence.”

As far as I'm concerned, the only thing Holocaust revisionism and moon landing skepticism have in common is the fact that the majority (still) shake their heads in disbelief and regard them as crazy ideas. This is where all parallels end. Not one moon landing skeptic has ever been socially isolated or prosecuted, nor has one of the major television networks granted revisionism an hour-long debut of their arguments without contradiction.

Whereas it is the established side in the moon landing controversy that insists on the superiority of technical arguments, this situation is reversed when it comes to revisionism: here, the official side either ignores or refuses to acknowledge technical evidence, using legal and even illegal means to thwart it. Furthermore, anybody seeking or offering evidence supporting revisionism is ostracized and persecuted. That's why a comparison between revisionism and lunar landing criticism is far fetched; it's like comparing black and white.



*Mockup of a German WWII V1 Rocket at the Space and Rocket Museum in Huntsville, AL. There is probably no other place on earth where German engineering is more adored and honored than here.*

### 4. Theses and Antitheses

**Thesis:** One of the most popular and easily refuted arguments against moon landings is the correct observation that all photos taken by the Apollo astronauts fail to show the stars, even though the universe is totally black due to lack of a lunar atmosphere. This would prove that the background is not the universe but a studio forgery.

**Antithesis:** All pictures taken by the astronauts on the moon were shot during the daytime, in glaring sunlight. Because there is no atmosphere on the moon, sunlight is reflected here more intensely than on earth. Therefore, the astronaut's cameras had to be adjusted so that the objects photographed would not be totally overexposed. The aperture was at a minimum, the exposure time extremely short. There was not enough time for the dim light of the stars to leave a trace on the film. Should anybody take a photo on earth in the dark of night using the same camera settings as the astronauts, the results would be the same: no stars.

**Thesis:** The descent engine from the lunar module should have removed all dust and debris in and around the landing site, creating a crater. However all pictures show no such crater, indicating that the module didn't land on its own, but was put in place by a crane.

**Antithesis:** At the very beginning of the planning phase, American scientists were indeed concerned that the propulsion from the lunar module might provoke a dust storm on the moon.<sup>6</sup> This concern, however, proved groundless. For the sake of clarity, a few calculations are necessary.

The lunar module of the Apollo Missions had a mass of about 14.5 tons.<sup>7</sup> Because the moon's gravitational pull equals one-sixth of the earth's, a mass of 14.5 tons has a weight on the moon the equivalent of 2.4 tons on the earth's surface. Thus, to guarantee a soft landing on the moon's surface, the module must develop a thrust corresponding to the weight of 2.4 tons on earth ( $2,400 \text{ kp} = 23,500 \text{ N}$ ). The diameter of the lunar module's nozzle was 137 cm,<sup>8</sup> corresponding to an area of  $1.47 \text{ m}^2$ . Thus, the pressure from the exhaust gases correlates to  $160 \text{ g per cm}^2$  (circa  $1.6 \text{ N/cm}^2$ ), corresponding to roughly 16% of the atmospheric pressure on the earth's surface ( $1 \text{ bar} = 100,000 \text{ N/m}^2 = 10 \text{ N/cm}^2$ ). This pressure is at most very weak.

Furthermore, one must consider that there is a vacuum on the moon's surface; gases from the propulsion would expand very rapidly in all directions. Hence, when the exhaust gas contacted the lunar surface, its pressure was well under ten percent of the atmospheric pressure on earth. This would suffice to blow up dust, but not to create a large crater from which all dust and debris would have been removed.

**Thesis:** Right next to the lunar module, one can see the imprint of the astronaut's boots in the dust, further evidence that dust was not blown away by the descent engine, as one would expect from an actual lunar landing. The lunar module itself should have been covered with the dust it whirled up.

**Antithesis:** Reference is made to the antithesis of the previous question, which proves that the thrust of the lunar nozzle is overestimated. One must note that whirling up dust on the moon has a completely different effect than on earth. While dust on earth would be carried through the atmosphere to set-

tle in some remote area, dust on the moon strictly adheres to Newton's law of gravity: it falls back to the surface in form of a parabolic curve. There is no whirling up of dust, as we know it on earth. Because of the relatively low exhaust gas pressure of the module's nozzle, the disturbed dust would actually fall back to the surface in the immediate vicinity of the nozzle. It is indeed plausible that the layer of dust close to the nozzle was indeed thicker than before the landing.

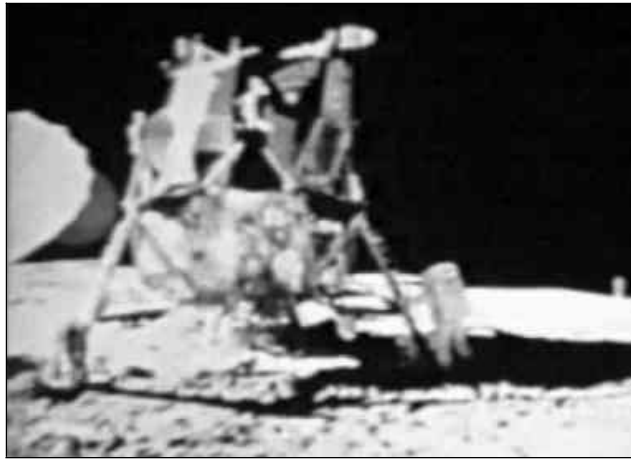


Fig. 1: Photo of the moon: fact or fiction?

Thus, there can be little doubt that pictures of the module must portray imprints from the astronaut's boots.

**Thesis:** Another argument also refers to the pictures taken by the astronauts on the moon. If, as suggested, these photos originated from the moon, with no atmosphere to disperse the sunlight, why don't all objects cast a completely black shadow? If the sun is the only source of light, all shadows ought to be black.

**Antithesis:** Of course, the sun is not the only source of light on the moon! The lunar surface itself reflects an abundant amount of sunlight, as we can see on earth. As one notices on the photos taken by the astronauts on the moon, sunlight is reflected from the moon's surface, so the surface of the moon is itself a source of intense light which illuminates all shadows of all objects on the moon. Ian Goddard has proven these effects on his website in a convincing demonstration, see Fig. 1 to 3.

**Thesis:** Another argument refers to the shadows of the Apollo pictures. If the sun was the only light source, all shadows ought to have been parallel to each other. However, one can clearly see that not all of them are, which indicates falsification.

**Antithesis:** This argument is apparently void of all rational thought. Had there been more than one source, then the objects would have had to throw more than one shadow. This does not seem to be the case here. Another possibility would be that the source is relatively close to its object, so that shadows tend to disperse into the distance. This is not always the case. The problem lies in the lack of understanding about perspective and the projection of three-dimension-

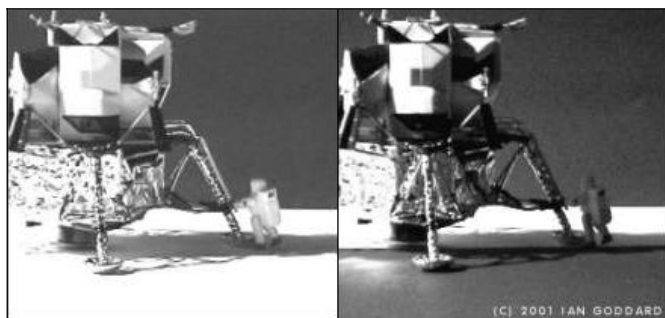


Fig. 2 & 3: Ian Goddard's moon landing model with astronaut figurine on gray (left), on black (right) background.<sup>9</sup>

nal objects on two-dimensional planes. Distortions are unavoidable. Shadows of objects will only appear parallel if the areas upon which the shadows are thrown are themselves even, and if these shadows are seen from a great distance, thereby minimizing distortions of perspective. See Figure 4 and 5.

**Thesis:** A few Apollo moon shots depict different foregrounds with identical backgrounds. NASA explains that the photos were taken at differ-

ent sites. Then the background should appear in a different perspective, which is not the case here. This shows that the photographs were not taken in front of a natural background, but in front of a static studio background. (Compare figs. 6 & 7).

**Antithesis:** On earth, we are used to seeing mountain ranges disappear in the haze the farther away we get from them. A large part of human stereoscopic perception relies on this effect. That is why distant objects seem particularly close on a clear day, in contrast to a misty day. The moon has no atmosphere. To the human eye, a distant mountain range, actually kilometers away, seems therefore quite close. The skeptics have all succumbed to this optical illusion, because the mountain range in question is so distant that any perspective alterations are hard to recognize with the naked eye. Superimposing the two pictures would prove a slight deviation.<sup>10</sup> A film sequence of an Apollo moon landing illustrates the difficulties in judging distances and sizes of lunar objects. A piece of rock a few meters large at a distance "grew" to the size of a large boulder while closing in with the rover.<sup>11</sup>

**Thesis:** An Apollo 16 film sequence shows one astronaut on a hill, and another shows two astronauts on the same hill. When the film was published, NASA stated that the two hills were four kilometers apart. It's obvious that the two hills are identical and that NASA was lying.

**Antithesis:** The two sequences were actually taken three minutes apart at the same place. When the film was broadcasted, NASA simply made a mistake, as affirmed by Eric Jones, publisher of NASA's editorial: *Apollo Lunar Surface Journal*.<sup>12</sup>

**Thesis:** Because the astronauts moved about in the lunar module, thus continuously altering its center of gravity, it was impossible to steer, let alone land, the module on the moon.

**Antithesis:** Steering an object propelled by thrust, whether ascending or descending, is the equivalent of balancing a rod on one's fingertips. (Helicopter pilots are very familiar with this phenomenon). The thrust must always be trimmed, even if there is no alteration in the center of gravity. An unmanned missile also undergoes continuous gravitational changes due to its continuous fuel consumption. The missiles' success over the last few decades contradicts this argument com-

pletely. Mobile astronauts (in a module) might aggravate the problem a bit, but balancing this is no problem, and is accomplished by a simple adjustment via the nozzles.

**Thesis:** A camera piloted by remote control, left behind on the lunar surface, filmed the end of the lunar mission. This sequence does not show exhaust gases from the nozzle of the module, therefore the film must be a fake.

**Antithesis:** It is important to note that the motor of the lunar module was far smaller than those motors we're used to seeing during the dramatic Apollo and Space Shuttle blastoffs here on earth. In contrast to rockets that take off from earth, the lunar module was powered by type of fuel that produced no visible flame, smoke, or vapor.<sup>14</sup> Furthermore, the gases from the nozzle expanded so quickly that any flame in vacuum gets dispersed so quickly that it never achieves the brightness or density it has on earth.

**Thesis:** Doubling the projection speed of a film showing astronauts driving their lunar rover gives the sequence an earth-bound character. Thus, these films must be fraudulent.

**Antithesis:** The films of the driving lunar Rover prove that the pictures were indeed taken on the moon and no place

**Pow! To the moon, Aldrin!**

BEVERLY HILLS, Calif. — Detectives are investigating a complaint that retired astronaut Edwin "Buzz" Aldrin punched a man in the face after being asked to swear on a Bible that he'd been to the moon.



**Aldrin**

"Buzz Aldrin was forced to protect himself and his stepdaughter when he was aggressively confronted outside a Beverly Hills hotel," publicist Robert O'Brien said.

Authorities were investigating a report by Bart Sibrel, 37, who said the former Apollo 11 astronaut attacked him Monday at the Luxe Hotel. Aldrin, 72, had left the

hotel when police arrived around 4:30 p.m. and was not interviewed.

Sibrel, of Nashville, said he doesn't believe Aldrin or anyone else has walked on the moon. He said he was trying to confront Aldrin about his 1969 lunar mission when he was punched.

Aldrin had just finished an interview with a Japanese television production crew, and the confrontation was videotaped.

Sibrel said he'd confronted Aldrin twice before and was surprised that Aldrin reacted the way he did this third time.

"I was very surprised that he hit me," Sibrel said. "He has a good punch. It was quick too. I didn't see it coming."

Aldrin's publicist said the videotape shows Sibrel blocking the way as Aldrin and his stepdaughter were leaving the hotel.

*Astronaut Edwin Aldrin was harassed so relentlessly by moon conspiracy buffs that he lost his self-control and attacked one of them. America is a land of religious fanaticism and poor general education which leads to the cancerous proliferation of pseudo-scientific theories, like the holocaust cult, creationism, and moon landing skepticism. (Huntsville Times, September 9, 2002, D5).*

else. One need only regard the characteristic behavior of the dust that was whirled up by the rover's laminated tires. Had this happened in an atmosphere, dust would have been whirled up, just as every vehicle on earth that drives through a dusty area produces a large dust cloud in its wake.. Lunar dust, however, returns to the ground in a perfect parabolic curve, as did the dust whirled up by the moon rover. In order to falsify these photos over a large area, NASA would have had to build huge vacuum compounds. Such compounds have never existed, either yesterday or today. Therefore counter-argument not only refutes the objection of the "moon landing deniers" (I couldn't resist), but it actually provides proof positive that the moon landings took place.

**Thesis:** When the astronauts raised the American flag, it waved. This is because the photos were taken on earth; the flag came in contact with an air stream. Flags don't flutter in a vacuum. Further copies show a folding flag, evidence that there was wind in the studios.

**Antithesis:** Flags do flutter in a vacuum, especially after a flagpole is positioned, which was the case here as the astronaut planted it. Since there is no



Fig. 5 (right) Model of converging shadows due to uneven area.<sup>9</sup>  
 Fig. 4 (left) Apollo photo with non-parallel shadows.<sup>13</sup>

friction in a vacuum to slow down the swaying, or waving, of a flag, a banner that been disturbed would have continued moving even longer than in a tranquil atmosphere. Just because a banner folds up does not prove that it's moving; a folded or a hanging curtain doesn't prove that there has been a draft either.

It is customary in America to portray a banner

fluttering in the wind. Therefore, the astronauts would plant the flag so that it would produce folds, showing a picture dear to Americans. If it is claimed that the flag was stirred by wind, then one must ask why the extremely light dust wasn't moved too. That the dust was not moved proves that the photographs were made in a tranquil area.<sup>15</sup>

**Thesis:** The lenses of the astronauts' cameras had optical cross wires. Some photos portray objects apparently in front of these wires, which is impossible if the wires were actually etched into the camera's lens. These photos must be forgeries (see fig. 8 & 9).

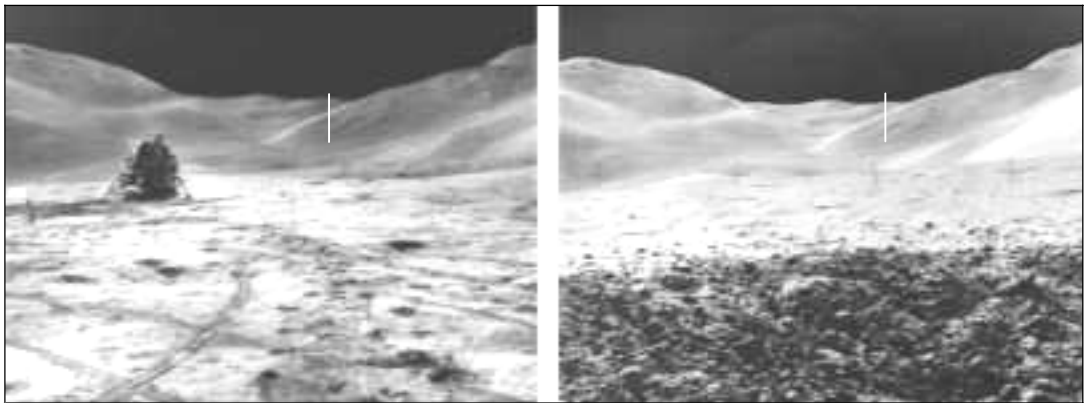


Abb. 6 & 7: The same background, but different foregrounds: at the left with the moon lander, at the right without it. However, if carefully analyzed, it turns out that the background is not identical, but has shifted slightly due to a different perspective (see position of a hilltop).<sup>9</sup>

**Antithesis:** This argument implies that NASA added the cross wires onto the photos after their development in a more or less sloppy manner. Because cameras with cross wires have existed for a long time, one would be inclined to question why NASA didn't use such a camera in one of its alleged forgery studios instead of resorting to sloppy retouching. In actual fact, the areas where the cross wires seem to be missing are those where local overexposure had taken place, where glaring objects irradiated slight, dark objects in their immediate vicinity. This effect is fundamental knowledge in photography. See also Figure 10.

**Thesis:** One of the most frequent arguments against moon landings is that radiation from the Van Allen Belt and beyond in space would have killed the astronauts within a few minutes.

**Antithesis:** The Van Allen Belt is a region surrounding earth whose magnetic field routes the electrically charged particles (electrons and protons) of the solar wind. A fraction of the solar wind can enter the earth only at the poles, causing the so-called Northern lights (*aurora borealis*). An unprotected human being would indeed be killed by radiation within the Van Allen belt, should he be exposed for a given length of time. The Apollo rockets, however, passed through the Van Allen belt within one hour. Additionally, only a comparatively small percentage of the solar wind's radioactive particles encountered are able to penetrate the rocket's metal hull at all.<sup>16</sup> If the particle radiation

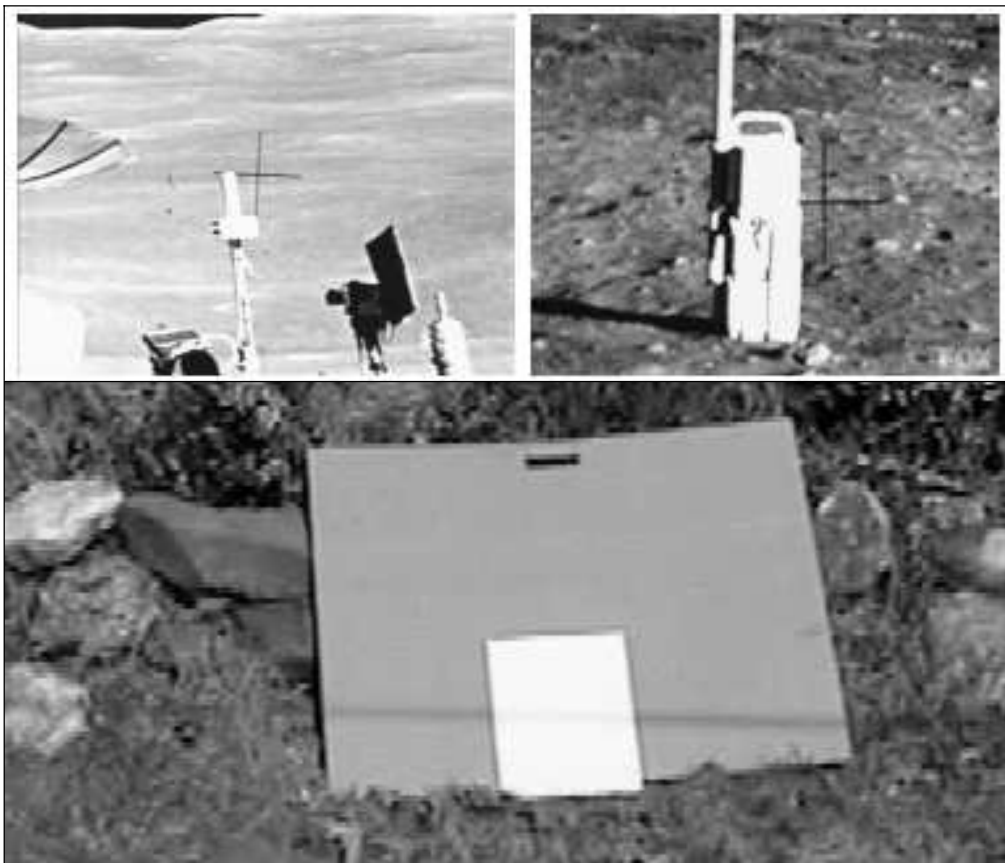


Abb. 8-10: Irradiation effect of glaring objects: Top: optical cross wires on the Apollo camera lenses disappear when overlaid by glaring white objects. Bottom: Shadow of a laundry line disappears on a white sheet of paper.<sup>9</sup>



of the solar wind did indeed have so lethal an effect, even after passing through steel of several millimeters, then one would have to assume that any kind of sensitive electronic equipment on board of any rocket would also have been destroyed by the Van Allen belt. However, none of the many American, Russian, European, Japanese, or Chinese missions to the moon, to other planets, to comets, or into deeper space has ever failed due to damage to the highly sensitive electronic equipment on board caused by the Van Allen Belt.

## 5. Conclusions

The arguments advanced by skeptics of the moon landings are based entirely on an ignorance of technical and scientific facts and can be refuted quite easily. It is a pleasure to note that experts and amateur astronomers do not refrain from answering these arguments, but accept rather the challenge eagerly and discuss it publicly, and in most cases with the objectivity that this matter deserves.

Although I myself had an intensive discussion with a leading German rocket engineer, Wernher von Braun's right hand (see inset), I have refrained from using him as witness, because a scientist must not employ such weak proof at all. Should a few retired gentlemen reminiscing on their past be the only proof for the fact of the lunar landing missions, NASA's case would be weak indeed.

Research of scientific literature on astronomy will yield greater results. I found, for example, a fairly recent article which demonstrates how an exact measurement of the distance between moon and earth can be made:<sup>17</sup> three of the six Apollo missions to the moon left a laser mirror there exactly for this purpose as well as for the measurement of moonquakes and other irregular movements of the moon's surface. How are scientists able to make such laser measurements today, if Apollo missions did not land on the moon?

## Notes

First published in German in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(4) (2002), pp. 449-455. Translated by Dr. Harald Hortig.

- <sup>1</sup> Recently, NASA went through a real PR disaster when it cancelled an author contract it had signed with an expert to refute all arguments against the moon landing. The author was so upset about this that he stated that the arrogant NASA deserved the skepticism it encounters: *Süddeutsche Zeitung*, Nov. 12, 2002, [www.sueddeutsche.de/index.php?url=/wissenschaft/mehrwissen/56965&datei=index.php](http://www.sueddeutsche.de/index.php?url=/wissenschaft/mehrwissen/56965&datei=index.php)
- <sup>2</sup> Philip C. Plait, *Bad Astronomy: Misconceptions and Misuses Revealed, from Astrology to the Moon Landing "Hoax,"* 288 p., John Wiley & Sons; see also an interview with the author, *USA Today*, Feb. 16, 2001.
- <sup>3</sup> Aron Ranen, *Moonhoax: Did we go? A documentary film;* [www.moonhoax.com](http://www.moonhoax.com)
- <sup>4</sup> Freeman, New York 1997.
- <sup>5</sup> Cf. his article "Versuche der Widerlegung revisionistischer Thesen," in *VffG* 3(2) (1999), pp. 173-175.
- <sup>6</sup> Cf. [www.astronautix.com/craft/lmdlsion.htm](http://www.astronautix.com/craft/lmdlsion.htm)
- <sup>7</sup> [www.astronautix.com/articles/apoaries.htm](http://www.astronautix.com/articles/apoaries.htm)
- <sup>8</sup> [www.friends-partners.org/mwade/craft/lmdlsion.htm](http://www.friends-partners.org/mwade/craft/lmdlsion.htm)
- <sup>9</sup> [www.badastronomy.com/bad/tv/iangoddard/moon01.htm](http://www.badastronomy.com/bad/tv/iangoddard/moon01.htm)
- <sup>10</sup> [www.hypnoide.com/moon](http://www.hypnoide.com/moon)
- <sup>11</sup> [www.hq.nasa.gov/office/pao/History/alsj/a16/a16v.1673855.ram](http://www.hq.nasa.gov/office/pao/History/alsj/a16/a16v.1673855.ram)
- <sup>12</sup> Cf. [www.hq.nasa.gov/alsj/a16/a16.sta4.html](http://www.hq.nasa.gov/alsj/a16/a16.sta4.html); [www.hq.nasa.gov/alsj/a16/a16v.1444638.ram](http://www.hq.nasa.gov/alsj/a16/a16v.1444638.ram); [www.hq.nasa.gov/alsj/a16/a16v.1445240.ram](http://www.hq.nasa.gov/alsj/a16/a16v.1445240.ram)
- <sup>13</sup> [www.apollo-hoax.co.uk/strangeshadows.html](http://www.apollo-hoax.co.uk/strangeshadows.html)
- <sup>14</sup> Hydrazine and di-nitrogen-tetroxide react forming nitrogen and hydrogen; [www.abc.net.au/science/moon/rocket.htm](http://www.abc.net.au/science/moon/rocket.htm)
- <sup>15</sup> [www.hq.nasa.gov/alsj/a11/as11-40-5874.jpg](http://www.hq.nasa.gov/alsj/a11/as11-40-5874.jpg); [spaceflight.nasa.gov/mars/reference/flag/flag.html](http://spaceflight.nasa.gov/mars/reference/flag/flag.html)
- <sup>16</sup> Particle radiation penetrates only a few micrometers into solid materials; regarding the radiation the astronauts were exposed to, cf. <http://spider.ipac.caltech.edu/staff/waw/mad/mad19.html>; <http://lsda.jsc.nasa.gov/books/apollo/S2ch3.htm>
- <sup>17</sup> E. Samain *et al.*, "Millimetric Lunar Laser Ranging at OCA," *Astron. Astrophys. Suppl. Ser.* 130, pp. 235-244; [www.edpsciences.com/articles/astro/full/1998/11/ds1427/ds1427.html](http://www.edpsciences.com/articles/astro/full/1998/11/ds1427/ds1427.html)

# Swing Dancing "Verboten"

By Eberhard Wardin

Fifty years after the end of the Second World War, the fabrication of historical legends and the concealment of facts are assuming grotesque proportions, even where harmless amusements are concerned. The propaganda image of the German must be inflated to mammoth proportions to shore up the myth of German guilt; Germans generally are depicted as cultural barbarians.

One searches in vain today for any mention of the extensive variety of both light and serious entertainment available in Berlin almost until the end of the war. American films (for example, *Police Car 88*<sup>1</sup>) were shown in cinemas all over Germany between 1935 and 1938. *The Broadway Melody of 1938*, starring Judy Garland, Eleanor Powell, Robert Taylor, and comic dancer Buddy Ebsen, was the biggest film hit in Germany, running in every cinema in Germany for weeks at

a time, ahead of the most popular German film, *Der Sterne Schein ist mein und Dein* (The stars' twinkle is mine and yours).

German dance bands played German, American, and British song hits, even "swinging" German dance tunes, such as "Küß mich, bitte, bitte küß mich" (Kiss me, please, kiss me), or "Das Fräulein Gerda." Clarinetist Erhard Bauschke played swing at the Moka Efti in the Friedrichstrasse, Berlin, complete with tie and tails. The Parish-Mills jazz standard "Organ Grinder Swing" was particularly popular (the original lyrics—"Who's that coming down the street? With that good old organ grinder's beat," etc., being rendered into German as "Hofkonzert im Hinterhaus, Alle schau'n zum Fenster raus," etc.). Later afternoon dance tunes included not only the well-known Guy Lombardo hit "Penny Serenade" (the original

lyrics—"Once I strayed 'neath the window of a lovely señorita"—rendered into German as "Ich stand einst unterm Fenster einer Señorita"), not to mention the subsequent popularity of the "Lambeth-Walk" (a British dance tune and dance popularized in America by Arthur Murray in 1938, taken from the London play "Me and My Girl"; the dance is described as a "walking dance done in a jaunty, swaggering, strutting, knee slapping style"); nobody thought anything of it. John Abriani's Italian orchestra played "Musik für Mizzi" in the Blumengarten Oberschöneweide, while Tullio Mobiglia's Italian orchestra was quite popular in a number of Berlin bars.

Jean Omer's Belgian 15-piece orchestra with lady vocalist was still playing at the Delphi Palast as late as 1943; Jomny Rambell played the well-known big-band jazz standard "Moten Swing" (written by Kansas City musician Bennie Moten, whose big band was taken over by Count Basie), at the Efti., both in Berlin. Somewhat later, at the Delphi, also in Berlin, trumpet player Günter Herzog—enjoying a deferment from military service, even at that time—appeared with a 15-piece orchestra, described in neon lights on the roof as "a new star in the Delphi," the entire roof of the Delphi being designed to resemble a starry sky.

Kurt Widmann, an excellent trombonist, could still be heard with his orchestra in the Red Room of Imperator (a multi-story Berlin café and restaurant with dance hall) in 1943, playing a repertoire consisting entirely of swing. At least twelve top orchestras were already playing in Berlin as early as 1936, in Berlin's most expensive hotels (such as the Adlon, Eden, and Esplanade) as well as in less expensive dance halls (for example, Bernhard Etté or Walter Lemke's German-American dance orchestra, or Pat Bonen and his Orchestra, on the first floor of the Hochhaus am Alexanderplatz, which was still standing in 1999).

The house orchestra at the Delphi, conducted by band leader Heinz Wehner, repeatedly played at other hotels as well. Trumpeter Kurt Hohenberger and his Orchestra appeared at the Quartier Latin and the Femina; Barnabas von Gezy played at the Hotel Esplanade for many years. As late as late 1943, melodious recorded versions of "Deep Purple" and "I Promise You" were released on the Brunswick label, featuring Danish vocalist Fin Olsen. In Berlin, Brunswick recordings of English clarinetist Harry Roy were widely sold; particularly popular song hits included "Tulip Time" (an Andrews Sisters hit) and "Stop Beatin' 'Round the Mulberry Bush" (a smash hit chiefly associated with the Count Basie big band), and "Boo-Hoo" (a Carmen Lombardo hit resurrected by Little Richard in the 1950s). The orchestra of the English-language radio station in Sottens, Switzerland, played swing every evening, with listeners all over Germany. British pianists Ivor Moreton and Dave Kay played hits like "A Tisket, A Tasket" (an Ella Fitzgerald hit). A particularly popular new release in Germany itself was "Bei Dir war es immer so schön," recorded with only trumpet and piano. Another extremely popular tune was the sentimental Harry Warren-Al Dubin Broadway standard "September in the Rain," recordings of "Amapola" by "Rumba King" Xavier Cugat (also a big Jimmy Dorsey hit) were available in a record store and music

shop located near the Jerusalemer Kirche, Berlin. I personally bought these records while on furlough from the Russian front. One of the most popular hits was the Jimmy Dorsey hit "Sweet and Lovely," known in Germany as "Wen ich liebe." Dancing was permitted in Berlin as late as 1942, and was prohibited in 1943 as a result of the danger of air raids and as a gesture of respect for German soldiers fighting on the Eastern Front; the same danger made the prohibition superfluous. Dance music continued to be played for listening, however; many of the listeners were soldiers on furlough. Overzealous Party officials naturally objected to overly grotesque or distorted "primitive" dance styles, especially when accompanied by gestures indicating opposition to the regime: a "political show" featuring jazz numbers in Hamburg. A jazz number known as "Two Left Feet," by Fun Candrix, was particularly disliked by overzealous Party officials, but the music itself was not prohibited.

The London Philharmonic Orchestra, conducted by Sir Thomas Beecham, as well as Radio London's great dance orchestra, featuring guitarist Eddy Peabody, played at the Berlin Wintergarten in 1938 with great success. Swing achieved its height of popularity in Berlin during guest appearances of orchestras conducted by Teddy Stauffer, Fud Candrix, or Ernst van't Hoff (said to have played the "best swing in Europe," with "a slow drag") at the Wilmersdorf in Berlin as late as August 1944, as well as in the Cafe Leon on the Lehniner Platz (Berlin). Despite the horrendous losses through air raids, despite the collapse of the Heeresgruppe Mitte (Central Army Group), Hans Warner Kleve's 16-man orchestra still played dance music ("it was a very lively atmosphere"). Kleve said later:

*"Every dance band had American tunes in its repertoire, people requested these tunes, and the bands played them. Nobody thought anything of it!"*

The Cafe Leon was used as the stage for small-scale artistic productions for the Jüdischen Kulturbund (Jewish Cultural Association) between 1935 and 1937, probably for an exclusively Jewish audience. Franz Thon, subsequently the leader of a "big band" on NDR [radio], Hamburg, "played 'private gigs' for an exclusively Jewish audience there in approximately 1937"!

German dance orchestras even accompanied German troops to remote areas of distant occupied territories, playing swing for the Russian civilian population as soon as the combat situation permitted it, for example, in the City Theater of Bryansk. A similar event from my own experience was held in a building at the Potshinok airport, with a smaller band (featuring songs like "Wind weht weit übers Meer," and others) to entertain pilots from Kampfgeschwader General Wever and Colonel Rudel's Stukageschwader Immelmann as well as Hungarian pilots fighting on the German side. An orchestra conducted by a non-commissioned officer named Kistenmacher also played on the Soldatensender Minsk (Minsk Military Radio); this was in addition to the dance orchestras of numerous other European radio stations, many of them, even in Italy, featuring a group of female vocalists called the Grasmückentrio (The Three Warblers). Lutz Templin's Orchestra—not to mention Charlie and His Orches-

tra—played excellent swing music, transmitted night after night by the Kurzwellsender Berlin (Berlin Short Wave Transmitter) for the soldiers of the Ostheer (Army of the East), of which I was a member. The 35-piece orchestra of a mobile military transmitter containing many former American POWs—musicians who joined voluntarily—was probably unsurpassed, even by the American-British orchestras entertaining the troops. These broadcasts, which were also transmitted to North Africa, were a great annoyance to the Allies. The mobile military transmitter was often electronically located and bombed soon after beginning its broadcasts, after which the broadcasts were interrupted and relocated; the broadcasting then resumed.

Programmes consisting of classical music, piano concerts, and song evenings were, of course, also available to German soldiers all over Europe, but German attitudes towards swing were really quite the opposite of what people today imagine. To musicians, as well as for the most non-musical listeners, swing represented the art of chorus playing and improvisation, constituting the fascination of this style of music! It should be added that the legend of the guilt of the Reichsmusikkammer, represented by the slogan “Swing Dancing ‘Verboten’ ” was nothing more than an advertising slogan for a record company!

The Big Band era, and the wild heyday of the Nat Gonella, Les Brown, and Woody Herman orchestras, is long gone, and with it, the sentimental memory of quiet melodies of German

orchestras on Berlin short-wave transmitters located in radio transmitter huts in the deep snows before Moscow.

Very few people still remember listening to “So wird’s nie wieder sein” or “I’m in the Mood for Love” over field transmitter headphones, played for Germany’s best—our comrades in the infantry—starting after the fading of the credits of the “Belgrader Jungen Wachtpostens” on the “Soldatensender Belgrad” every night at exactly 10 P.M., and closing with “Lili Marleen” at 12 midnight, when the trumpeter for the military radio transmitter in Rome played a softly sentimental rendering of “Arrivederci,” signing off until the broadcasts started crackling again in the ether of the following gray morning.

**Source:** Knud Wolfram, *Tanzdielen und Vergnügungspaläste: Berliner Nachtleben in den dreißiger und vierziger Jahren; von der Friedrichstraße bis Berlin W, vom Moka Efti bis zum Delphi*, Reihe deutsche Vergangenheit, Vol. 78: “Stätten der Geschichte Berlins,” Edition Hentrich, Berlin 1992, pp. 214-216, ISBN 3-89468-0-47-4.

#### Notes

First published in German in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 4(3&4) (2000), pp. 353f. Translated by Carlos W. Porter.

<sup>1</sup> Translator’s note: Original title unknown; a Hollywood B-movie about cops and robbers during the Prohibition era.

## A Look Back at Revisionism

By Ernst Manon

For many years now, revisionist books and journal articles have continued to accumulate. Their scientific depth, their irrefutable evidence, and their rigorous argumentation should have been enough to effect a historiographic revolution. But nothing has happened. The spiraling blackout, together with the increased range of persecution around the world, silences more and more revisionists. Let us for once be realistic: as long as the present global power realities prevail, the breakthrough of historical revisionism cannot be expected to occur. For this, a worldwide political revolution of radical dimension would have to take place, and who, pray tell, would engineer it? The need for radical change internationally is especially true for Germany, where an isolated breakthrough for revisionism could only lead to a foreign policy disaster. It is therefore time to look into the deeper reasons for the revisionism’s failure outside the realm of research. May the following contribution inaugurate a discussion of this problem that has been long overdue.

---

*“The whole process of writing history is one single revision. Not only because new facts and documents become known, but also because even known facts can be newly evaluated and interpreted. No generation looks at events through the same glasses as did another.”*

Thus wrote Chaim Bermant, chief-columnist of the *Jewish Chronicle*, London, who died on January 20, 1998.<sup>1</sup>

The concept “revisionism” exists in various areas, for instance in socialism, in communism, and in Zionism. In each of these ruthlessly contending factions wield the accusation of revisionism against one another as a powerful weapon.

Frequently, such infighting is more vehement than fights against actual ideological opponents. If one follows Peter Plichta, revisions also occur in the sciences, even in mathematics.<sup>2</sup> To use the term revisionism as a reproach is to accuse another of abandoning, if not betraying, doctrinal purity. Science and learning, on the other hand, must be free from ideological constraints, and the accusation of revisionism, no matter in which field, should actually be a compliment.

This is not so, however, for, to cite one example, revisionism is criminalized by the German Bundesamt für Verfassungsschutz (Office for the Protection of the Constitution). Of

course this concerns so-called historical revisionism, in particular regarding the responsibility for the Second World War and the so-called Holocaust.

A realistic look at the development of this problem shows that, in spite of all objective exoneration based on historical and scientific research, things have only gotten worse. They say of us Germans that we can only think straightforwardly, that it is not our way to imitate others' deviousness. We only want to know how it really was (following Leopold von Ranke, the great nineteenth century German historian), and therefore we fight honestly, visor open to the truth, in the naïve conception that in the end the truth will win and will make us free (John 8, 32). But this fight resembles more a tilting against wind mills, or to use a different metaphor, we find ourselves in a situation like that of Michael Kohlhaas.

In 1979, a breakthrough seemed to be imminent in France, objectively speaking. Then followed the infamous declaration of P. Vidal-Naquet, Léon Poliakov, and 32 other "researchers" in *Le Monde*:<sup>3</sup>

*"One may not ask how, technically, such a mass murder was possible. It was technically possible since it took place. Such is the obligatory starting point required for any historical enquiry into this subject. This truth we simply want to bring back into memory: there is not, and there may not be, any debate on the existence of the gas chambers."*

Vidal-Naquet acknowledged later that he cannot testify without hate and without lying.<sup>4</sup> A Swiss court verdict read on February 17, 1995, states, in consonance with this way of thinking:<sup>5</sup>

*"The gas chambers existed, therefore they must also have been technically possible! It is therefore absurd to request evidences."*

It was left to for Gabriel Cohn-Bendit to demand:<sup>6</sup>

*"Freedom of speech, of publication, of meeting and association can not stand the slightest restriction."*

If one really grasps the above quotation from *Le Monde*, one sees that it represents a confirmation of the revisionist position, for not to permit debate on anything means that something then something is amiss. If the opinion of these 34 researchers coincided with the truth, then that would be confirmed sooner or later in open debate, which should therefore really be desired by these researchers. Bertrand Russell already reflected that "caution is called for when all experts are in agreement." But it means secondly that this so-called truth is something mythical, symbolic. This "truth" has not been researched, but brought "back into memory." One may think of the speech of Ezer Weizmann in the German parliament "Erratic and flighty am I when I follow the tracks of my fathers"<sup>7</sup>

*"I was a slave in Egypt [...] With King David I moved into Jerusalem [...] I fought against the Romans [...]"*

Then at the end:

*"Ladies and gentlemen, we are a people of memory and of prayer. We are a people of words and of hope. We did not create empires, did not build castles and palaces. We only added words together. We placed layers of ideas on top of each other, erected houses of memories and dreamed of towers of yearning—that Jerusalem may be rebuilt, and may peace be granted and done quickly in*

*our times, Amen."*

An essayist living in Paris—evidently of Jewish origin—Benjamin Korn, wrote an angry commentary about this. Korn asked, what would have happened if the German chancellor had concluded: "I was a general in the Teutoburger Forest, at the head of the Germanic tribes, etc." He answered that they would have taken him to where all the others who think they are Napoleon or Moses are kept. The madness of both sentences is absolutely identical. But in one case it is called religious inspiration, in the other ordinary madness.<sup>8</sup> This phenomenon is generally known as "pseudologia phantastica." The psychiatrist Anton Delbrück, who coined this term at the end of the last century, stated:<sup>9</sup>

*"Under this we understand the merging of fantasy and reality so intensively that the daydreamer himself is often unable to distinguish between reality and fiction. This condition can transitory, but it may also consolidate itself and dominate thinking over extended periods of time. One peculiarity of this pseudological syndrome is that an assumed role does not only satisfy the fantasy but can also overlap into reality, due to its vividness and subjective presence."*

Heinrich Heine experienced an episode of *pseudologia phantastica* when he was thirteen years old. His preoccupation with the diaries of a great-uncle who had passed away was so intense that he completely identified himself with this great-uncle for almost a year.

If this phenomenon is spread over an entire social group, it becomes clear what effect certain reports, diaries, or also biblical stories can have. Even the German *Jüdische Lexicon* (1927) mentioned

*"the theological-legal dialectics which created worlds out of nothing by endlessly spinning interpretations, explanations, readings-into, according to the rules of a shrewd, sometimes subtly practiced hermeneutic art."*<sup>10</sup> (Emph. added.)

Let us remind ourselves that in 1960, the German historian Martin Broszat testified as a witness during a trial against Erwin Schönborn (afterwards confirmed on oath):<sup>11</sup>

*"The six million is a symbolic number."*

And Daniel J. Goldhagen has said in an interview:<sup>12</sup>

*"The gas chambers are a symbol."*

The director for government relations of the Canadian B'nai B'rith-Lodge, Ian J. Kagedan, said:<sup>13</sup>

*"The Holocaust Dogma of Judaism is the Keystone of the Arch of the New World Order – the Fundamental Principle of the New Age Religion."*

If, for once, we take all these quotations really seriously, then we see that they deal with a myth, a symbol, a (pseudo-)religion, and finally world domination! As important, as forthright, as honorable, as indispensable it has been—and still is—to investigate things objectively, scientifically, research of itself will bring us no farther. One cannot fight a myth by investigating a stone, by analyzing architectural plans or procedures, or by performing statistical calculations.

We should also approach our Subject. No. 1, the Holocaust, from the standpoint of the history of ideas and psycho

(-patho-)logy, even if we feel uncomfortable while so doing, because thinking logically is not always sufficient. Here we are dealing with a “different logic.” For example, by our logic we would be happy to learn that loved ones whom we believed to have died were in fact still alive, that reports of a catastrophe had turned out to be false. We would rightfully distrust anyone unable to be elated by such “good news”—but not so with Subject No. 1. That we are dealing with a “new religion” becomes undoubtedly, conclusively clear when one consults, in the new *Oxford Dictionary of the Jewish Religion*,<sup>14</sup> a separate article on “Holocaust theology.” This entry does not give a definite theory about the so-called Holocaust, rather it lists the most diverse, and often contradictory, Jewish opinions on the question “How could God permit this?” Unlike the Roman Catholic Church, Judaism is not dogmatic.

Prof. Faurisson once wrote that he did not know how to fight a religion. That is the real problem! What binds the members of a religion is myth, not rational truth. The myth is—rationally considered—actually a “lie,” irrational, and from the viewpoint of “depth psychology,” it can become a means with which to transcend human yearning. A myth does not have to be true in a scientific sense, it shall bond, create a meaning, bestow identity on the individual as well as the group. Then it is “true” in the sense of depth psychology.

From the church father Tertullian (about 160 to 220) stems this famous sentence:

*“credo quia absurdum” (I believe, because it is absurd).*

The philosopher Lutz Geldsetzer put the creation of the Christian myth, with slight sarcasm, into verse:<sup>15</sup>

*“Incredible!” says Tertullian / - he was in love with Stoa  
- / ‘a God who dies a criminal, / earns nevertheless fame  
because, / he is a God in human form, therefore I believe  
without reservation. / And that he was resurrected from  
death / one never saw this in our land - , / that is highly  
odd! / And therefore it convinces me.’ / And now what it-  
self was the belief, / Which was clear since Plato: / Only  
belief and opinion are valid for the senses / and that what  
we can gain through them. / But knowingly we look at  
ideas, / which we can see with the inner eye. / [...] The  
Jew Philo did show it, / that behind the sense of the word  
must lie / a deeper ‘sensus mysticus’. / In a book, in the  
Torah, / for Jews it was chronicled. [...]”*

Jürgen Graf wrote in his book *Der Holocaust Schwindel*:<sup>16</sup>

*“The revisionists placed the fuse on the Holocaust-idol  
and it only needs someone to put a match to it. Once the  
fuse is lit, the collapse of the horrible idol is only a ques-  
tion of one or two years. Its collapse will shake the  
world.”*

It would be nice, as far as the idol is concerned. But who wants the latter, which could mean perhaps the Third World War? Prof. Noam Chomsky writes in *The Fateful Triangle: The United States, Israel and the Palestinians*, though in a different connection, that Israel could act like a “furious country,” dangerous to its surroundings, abnormal, even capable of igniting the Gulf or starting a nuclear war. And Jörg Bremer, the Israel correspondent of the *Frankfurter Allge-*

*meine Zeitung*, reports on extremists who believe “one must only bomb the Third Temple.”<sup>17</sup>

It is precisely the trick to make the myth so all pervasive within world culture, to raise it to such gigantic proportions that its dismantling—that is, a loss of face for Israel or of Jewry—would have increasingly catastrophic consequences, since it’s all about a political power play with a (pseudo-) religious background. This gamble is played with primitive as well as sophisticated means, which reminds us of reports from the “Worker’s Paradise.” One should keep in mind the psychological mechanism which Günter Schabowski describes in his ruthless analysis of his own communist engagement:<sup>18</sup>

*“The heretic strengthens the belief of an indoctrinated  
group, he turns it into a fanatic group. Within the com-  
munist movement, the stigmatizing of free thinking in their  
own ranks satisfies the need for spiritual self-protection,  
which is unnaturally strong.”*

In the presently dominant system of the Holocaust religion, the Holocaust revisionist is the heretic. We know that. It is, however, more important to realize that each revisionist comment, each scientifically based research result will influence the follower of the system by strengthening his belief, yes, and by turning him into a fanatic. This sometimes leads to curious results. In a free, 37-page informational brochure of the Bavarian Ministry of the Interior titled *Revisionism* (1996), or the (also free) 275-page brochure *Verfassungsschutzbericht* (Constitutional Protection Report, March 1998), the most important revisionists are actually quite objectively portrayed as to their activities and theses. Included are literal quotations from, for example, the *Leuchter Report*,<sup>19</sup> the *Rudolf Report*<sup>20</sup> or from a Zündel newsletter. From the *Staatsbriefe*<sup>21</sup> the sentence: “Here the scream from German throat: Enough!” Several quotations of “extreme right wing” content from the media of Dr. Gerhard Frey (DVU) are included. The government appears to be certain about the “anti-revisionist” effects.

Timur Kuran describes the phenomenon of “preference falsification,” as he calls it, *i.e.*, when someone says one thing publicly, but another thing privately. The following example is quoted here only to clarify this:<sup>22</sup>

*“At the time of the Spanish inquisition the Maranos [Jews  
converted to Christianity] were inclined to distance them-  
selves from the non-converted Jews. They believed that  
whoever befriended practicing Jews could raise doubts  
about his own pretended conversion to Christianity. Many  
converts even went one step further and participated in  
the persecution of practicing Jews. Characteristically, the  
first Great Inquisitor, as well as his direct successor, was  
of Jewish background. When a convert persecutes a non-  
convert, he may do this out of aversion. But alternatively,  
he can also be motivated by the desire to let his publicly  
chosen preference appear to be genuine, *i.e.*, to signal  
that his conversion is serious.”*

And regarding life under communism, he writes:<sup>23</sup>

*“By falsifying their preferences and participating in the  
disciplining of others who think differently, the citizen  
preserved a system which many found repugnant. In [Vla-  
clav] Havel’s own words, the deciding ‘line of conflict’*

did not run between the party and the people, but 'through every human being,' because everybody was 'in his own way its victim and supporter.'—Havel's observation found an impressive echo on a poster which, after the fall of the Berlin wall, was mounted over the altar in a [...] church: 'I am Cain and Abel.' [...] For decades, therefore, hypocrisy and lies gave the communist system stability. If the phenomenon of preference falsification had not been omnipresent, the communist regime of the Soviet empire would have had to deal with a noticeable opposition, and all its power would not have been sufficient to reject its citizens' demand for political and social reforms."

Under the watchful eye of the *American Civil Liberties Union*, the U.S. authorities permit the American NS-party to distribute audaciously "racist" literature and to even defend its rallies against "upset citizens."<sup>24</sup> The ADL (Anti-Defamation League) initiates "Nazi"-events in America with the theme "Hitler was right!"—and of course also organizes the counter-demonstration.<sup>25</sup> The Simon Wiesenthal Center in Los Angeles offers an archive containing anti-Semitic caricatures and cartoons on the Internet.<sup>26</sup> Gertrud Hardtmann, specialist in neurology and psychiatry, psychoanalyst and professor of pedagogy/social therapy, offers an especially interesting example. She was "viewed and treated by a Jew in a projectively distorted way," to which a friend who happened to be Jewish "drily commented: 'One could thus easily become an anti-Semite,' " a remark which hit her "unconscious emotional feelings on the head," to which she, "for reasons of a *philo-Semitic anti-Semitism*, could not have confessed to." Following Freud's concept, according to which the primary source of anti-Semitism would allegedly be an unconscious contempt for the father transferred onto the Jews, she considers this conscious epiphany as a "piece of obstetrical activity – the birth of herself."<sup>27</sup> In realizing her own "preference falsification, she gratefully accepts a Jewish theory in order to reinterpret this preference falsification into the alleged perfection of her own personality, which she might even apply to others as therapy thereafter.

Henryk M. Broder concluded that Jews can frequently deal with these problems more easily:<sup>28</sup>

*"In my opinion, the best definition of anti-Semitism makes the round as a word game in the United States: 'Anti-Semitism is if you cannot stand the Jews more than is normal.' This joke puts most academic definitions into the realm of fortune telling. It pronounces what matters: anti-Semitism is not a deviating behavior, no exception of the rule; it is the norm of social behavior towards the Jews,*

*the rule. This means that it is not those who do not like Jews who conduct themselves differently from the norm, but those who have nothing against the Jews."*

And Chaim Weizmann claimed that:<sup>29</sup>

*"We hate anti-Semitism as well as philo-Semitism. Both are a disgrace."*

At the same time the following is true:<sup>30</sup>

*"Public anti-Semitism may not exist in Germany, this is part of the unwritten law of the political culture in Germany after Auschwitz. Whoever breaks this taboo, loses office and reputation, at least in the immediate aftermath the respective incident."*

The contradiction of these statements dissolves when one recognizes that this is exactly the way it is planned: *Induced preference falsification with increasing internalization of the conflict line!*—or simply: forced hypocrisy with increasing, self-induced internalization.

The constant pressure toward the "preference falsification," or hypocrisy, leads in the end to a schizoid personality structure which is at the same time an extremely effective way to suppress the masses. Ludek Pachmann, a Czech ex-communist and chess great-master, arrives at this conclusion about his people:<sup>31</sup>

*"For the soul of a nation there is actually something even worse than mass murder and expulsion: It is the condition where a nation is systematically led astray and educated to lie and disregard the law for more than half a century."*

What Kuran calls "preference falsification," Czeslaw Milosz described as "the art of the inner reservation" in his book *Verführtes Denken* (Misled Thinking) with reference to the life in the 'people's democracies':<sup>32</sup>

*"Over there, one can describe relations between individuals hardly any differently than by the word "disguise" or "play-acting"; the only difference is that their stage is not in the theater, but in the street, in the office, in the factory, in the meeting hall, yes even in one's own room. Each spoken word has to be quickly checked in advance for possible consequences. [...] After some time, an individual is so bonded with his role that it is no longer possible to distinguish between the learned and the innate. Even married couples talk among themselves in the jargon of the political meeting. The close bond with the enforced artificial role creates a certain relief, because the tension and the required attention can now be loosened somewhat. One knows that the proper reflexes will be there automatically in the given moment. [...] To say something is white and to think that it is black, to smile within and to show a solemn zeal outwardly; to hate and*



Cartoon, reprinted in *Response, Periodical of the Simon-Wiesenthal-Center*, Vol. 15, No. 2, Summer 1994, p. 10

at the same time to feign proofs of love; to know and to fake ignorance: who deceives the opponent thus—who in turn does not act any differently—learns how to appreciate his own cunning. [...] Up to now, dissembling of such gigantic proportions has not often been observed in human history. [...] If one encounters honesty in a conversational partner, then this is a bad sign. [...] Fifty or one hundred years of education according to such principles could create a human type for whom there is no return. The “new person” is not at all a hypothesis anymore, but on the point of becoming real. [...] Life under a continuous inner tension awakens talents which otherwise slumber hidden in man. One has no idea of the top range of cunning and the psychological brilliance which man is capable of when driven into a corner and having only the choice between cunning or death. Whoever adjusts best to these mental acrobatics will succeed, and so an otherwise little known type of man is formed in modern Europe.”

A certain measure of “make-believe,” also called politeness, is indispensable for getting along smoothly with one another; just think of the hardly avoidable phrase “Sincerely,” which is used even if one does not feel sincere. Who will not tell a life-saving white lie if one has reason to expect that a patient in intensive care may not survive some shocking news? In these cases the “liar is still in control of himself. Things will get bad when the line of conflict (according to Havel) is shifted within, and thus man’s integrity is lost, indeed even his identity.

*“In a time when men live without perspective, from hand to mouth, being a Jew seems to furnish an enviable justification of existence. [...] In the meantime it is he who is rooted, and the philo-Semitic average citizen, the eternally wandering Goy, who experiences himself as a man without qualities, uprooted, homeless.”*

Thus Alain Finkielkraut places the mirror in front of us.<sup>33</sup> And Michael Wolffsohn writes:<sup>34</sup>

*“The majority of Israelis has a completely unbroken relation to the nation and the national state. In Israel, nationalism is a matter of course; in Germany it is intolerable to many, no, to most people.”*

Who dares describe the condition of the nations of the world, which were systematically led astray in this century to lie, to be hypocritical, and to show contempt for law, truth, and self-respect?

To return to historical revisionism, let us look at the situation in the light of Hans Christian Andersen’s fairy tale of the emperor’s new clothes: suppose the emperor’s chancellery distributed information among its citizens which listed those who claimed that the emperor is naked, or who claimed that the tailors, who made the new garments, were swindlers. Even reports about them were prepared, stating the arguments of the heretics. The office even hired actual or alleged heretics, who were allowed to announce their “truths.” At the same time, the so-called ‘emperor-is-naked-lie’ is made a crime. But the chancellery can be certain that the belief in the emperor’s new clothes and the aversion to the non-believers will be internalized and reinforced, because only the worthy can see the new clothes, and nobody likes to be considered

unworthy. Actually everyone knows the truth, but in order not to endanger his own situation, everyone plays the required role, even trying to outdo the other, and at the same time watching for the others for the slightest sign of doubt. The self-deception, as Schabowski describes it, spreads epidemically—until a small child suddenly shouts: “But he has nothing on!” One says to the other: “He has nothing on, a small child says he has nothing on!”—“He has nothing on!” finally shout all citizens—in the fairy tale!

In 1996, a German author in compliance with the system, Markus Tiedemann, published a book with the provocative title *No One Was Gassed in Auschwitz*.<sup>35</sup> The title picture showed a sympathetic Hitler surrounded by children. Imagine the paradox: The revisionist/heretic can be certain of automatic conviction for such a statement. Herr Tiedemann takes the statement as the title of his book in order to rebut it with flimsy arguments. Or in the framework of Andersen’s fable: The emperor’s chancellery issues a paper with the title: *The emperor is naked!* Not, of course, to reveal the truth, but to reinforce the belief of the fanatical adherents!

Prof. Faurisson once quoted in an article “The Adventure of Revisionism” in the *Journal of Historical Review* two psychologically important statements. Céline: “La rage de mentir et de croire s’attrape comme la gale.” (The desire to lie and to believe spreads like the scabies) and La Fontaine: “L’homme est de glace aux vérités. Il est de feu pour les mensonges.” (Man shows truth the cold shoulder and is enthusiastic for the lie).

Ignatius Loyola also knew that believing followers are easier to bind to oneself with falsehood than with the truth. Thus one of his rules of spiritual exercise:<sup>36</sup>

*“That we are certain in every regard, we always have to confirm: that, which appears to be white to our eyes, is black as soon as the hierarchical church decides thus.”*

The Protestant Novalis said about Loyola’s program that no one has ever thought with more common reason about the implementation of a greater idea.<sup>37</sup>

As early as 1494 Sebastian Brant’s *Ship of Fools* notes: “The world wants to be deceived.” Later it was added: “therefore it shall be deceived!”

Untruth and truth are not opponents with equal rights! Unfortunately a social system based on truth won’t pack a punch comparable to that of a system which is based on belief in a lie—until it breaks down as a result of its internal contradictions. Unfortunately, the truth lacks the same social disciplining effect as a lie. Truth is in some measure inflexible, maybe even boring; the lie is flexible, slick; it permits an apparent security within the system of lies; it allows one to take refuge from reality in illusions.

We can therefore say that the above aphorisms by Céline and La Fontaine, as ridiculous as they may seem, describe effectively the ways to exercise and maintain power. They deal with a sort of “depth psychology” which is not taught at the universities. An allegation (a lie), frequently introduced into the world with great assertiveness, finally develops a self-dynamic impetus that resists every rational opposition, especially if the ground for it has been prepared over centuries.

The retired German historian Prof. Christian Meier.<sup>38</sup>

*“For some time now, it is clear that the murder of six million European Jews in always new waves must evoke a lasting horror. This inconceivable crime can be placed nowhere, one cannot live with it in peace. With all attempts to keep it conscious, it must sink within the memory more and more—only to be remembered most sensitively not just once in a while, but again and again, and also by large parts of society.”*

And sometime later, the myth will be anchored so deeply within the soul that the idol in the foreground can be dispensed with.

Let us remember that various smaller idols have already been torn down: the gas chamber at Dachau, the gas chambers in the *Altreich* (i.e., the territory of Germany proper). After the fall of the four million number for Auschwitz, Waclaw Dlugoborski, curator for research questions at the State Museum of Auschwitz said bluntly: “the inflated number of Auschwitz victims” had been a taboo “also for political reasons”.<sup>39</sup> The dismantling of the Katyn lie was treated at midnight in a TV broadcast, and was never heard of again. Thus smaller *Icons of the Left*<sup>40</sup> have been torn down without benefiting us. On the contrary! Additionally, the dismantling of idols and icons has always been performed by system conformists, not by heretics. The latter may have helped to prepare the dismantling, but they cannot claim the successes for themselves. Revision “from above” is usually accepted without murmur. Finally, one must assume, unfortunately, that the German people, and others as well, have become so mentally lethargic that they have never once greeted the fall of the idols with either joy or regret. The psychological damage, however, will last for a long time, and an international court—which, according to Article 11b of the “Convention on the prevention and punishment of genocide” of December 9, 1948, can try the infliction of psychological harm as genocide<sup>41</sup>—would hardly come to our assistance. Or would it? Andersen’s child shouting the truth would have to be heard worldwide: “Everything is completely different!” And who could play such a role to break the taboo? Abbé Pierre, a French monk with a worldwide reputation, who revolted against the Holocaust propaganda for a short period of time, proved not to have the strength of character to play the role to the end.<sup>42</sup> Unfortunately, Andersen does not give a hint to things might continue.

Jürgen Graf refers in his book *Todesursache Zeitgeschichtsforschung* (Cause of Death: Historical Research)<sup>43</sup> to a text by Claude Lanzmann, who is well-known for his nine-hour *Shoah* movie:<sup>44</sup>

*“There was always a Christian jealousy, a jealousy of the Christians for the Jewish suffering.[...] When Auschwitz is something else than an horror of history, when it evades the “banality of evil,” then Christianity trembles in its foundation. Christ is the Son of God who went to the end of the humanly possible, where he had to endure the most horrible sufferings. [...] If Auschwitz is true, then a human suffering exists which cannot be placed on the same level as Christ. [...] In this case, Christ is false, and no salvation will come from him. Fanaticism of suffering! If Auschwitz is far more extreme than the Apocalypse, far*

*more horrible than what John describes in his Apocalypse (because the Apocalypse can be described and even reminds of a large Hollywood-like spectacle, while Auschwitz is inexpressible and indescribable), then the Book of the Apocalypse is false, and the Gospels as well. Auschwitz is the refutation of Christ.”*

Instead of having a drink on this, one may quote George Tabori:<sup>45</sup>

*“The shortest German joke is Auschwitz.”* (The German word for joke is Witz.)

But only he can say this.

A single quotation does not say much, but it adds another piece to a mosaic which will become more and more complete and thus recognizable if we keep on researching. Let us now take a letter which Baruch Lévy wrote to Karl Marx:<sup>46</sup>

*“The Jewish people as a whole wants to be its own Messiah. It wants to obtain domination through the destruction of other races, through abolishing borders, through destruction of the monarchies, which have always been the pillars of individualism, and through erection of a global republic in which the Jews have the privileges of the citizenry. The children of Israel, spread all over the world, wish to install compliant leaders in this new world order, and this will be even more the case after they have successfully brought the working masses under their control. The governments of the various nations which represent the will of the world republics will fall into the hands of the Jews without difficulties through the victory of the proletariat. It will then be possible for the Jewish rulers to abolish private property and to make use of government resources everywhere. Through this the theses of the Talmud will be fulfilled, in which is said that when the time of the Messiah comes, the Jews will have control over the entire world.”*<sup>47</sup>

Marx understood the proletariat as a “messianic class.”<sup>48</sup> A namesake of the letter writer, the Jewish author Bernard-Henri Lévy, wrote in the magazine *Le Point* of December 13, 1997, of a “reversed providence with the Jews as Christ.”<sup>49</sup>

Those who believe that all of this is invalid, considering the alleged breakdown of communism and the alleged *End of Illusions* (François Furet, 1996), may actually succumb to the greatest illusion of all.

*“What influential forces in both [Russian] chambers of parliament and together with the followers of the old-new Prime Minister Chernomyrdin planned to do as remedies for the threatening financial governmental bankruptcy, reminds us largely of ideas which were believed to have been buried once and for all with the fall of communism.”*<sup>50</sup>

Prof. Konrad Löw calls his latest requital of Marxism thoughtfully “Did the End Precede the Beginning?: 150 Years after the *Communist Manifesto*”<sup>51</sup> And Kerstin Holm, journalist for Germany’s most renowned daily newspaper, the *Frankfurter Allgemeine*, in her analysis “Russian Society in Regression” arrives at the surprising conclusion:<sup>52</sup>

*“The Bolshevik spirit of the latest jump forward is unmistakable.”*

This sounds like historical dialectics.



If it was and is possible that the “new religion” could find a strong foothold at least in the Western world—there is now a Holocaust memorial in Moscow, too—then this is evidently so because the new myth of suffering has found eager acceptance in a world which was defined by a Christian myth of suffering for more than one and a half millennia. In this context, the secularization or de-Christianization of the last 200 years has meant no real relief. Even if a certain faith itself disappears, a latent readiness for faith continues to exist and can be filled with new contents at any time. Benjamin Disraeli stated in 1844 that Christianity is Judaism for non-Jews, and Oswald Spengler opines: “Christian theology is the grandmother of Bolshevism.” According to Baruch Lévy, Bolshevism is a means to establish the Jewish people as the Messiah. If we, in addition to this, consider the famous aphorism of Moses Maimonides (1135-1204): “Jesus cleared the path for the Messiah,”<sup>53</sup> then the circle closes, and it becomes clear what is meant when it is said that we must return to our common roots, namely the Jewish ones.

That this is a matter of thinking across millennia—even after all the changes over time and beyond all temporary alliances or antagonisms—may be confirmed by a more recent quotation from a professor of Judaism:<sup>54</sup>

*“It is striking that Israel has no king according to the Torah. [...] But if the prophecies see a kingdom as culmination point of the socio-political development of any ethnic unit, and if it takes fourteen generations after Avrahám to have this prophecy fulfilled for Israel, then the Book seems to provoke a comparison with other nations and apparently wants to show how different Israel is, as if it wanted to say: You need a longer breath, yours is a world history and not an episodic interlude.”*

By so doing, the author assumes of course that the Torah was indeed written 3,000 years ago. When considering the age of human history, however, such a period of time is nothing but a brief interlude.

The trick is simple and clever: One projects a self-fabricated prophecy into a mythical past and deduces claims for the future from it. R. J. Zwi Werblowsky formulated it this way:<sup>55</sup>

*“Yet the Jewish Messianism is more than hope. It is the great paradox of Jewish history: memories of the future.”* (emphasis added)

Arnold Toynbee was of the opinion that Judaism solidified into a fossil after the destruction of the temple. Prof. Radday, however, is convinced that it flourishes and bears rich fruit. The latter we experience daily. Besides, the Torah is supposedly the “Book of World Education.”<sup>56</sup>

After our memories of our own past have been thoroughly ruined, we obviously have nothing left with which to effectively oppose this. We can least expect any defense from the representatives of our people, as the spontaneous, frantic applause for Weizmann’s above quoted speech indicates. Attempts to revive national myths or to investigate Judeo-Christian falsifications of our early history and our national myths are criminalized, similarly to revisionism.

At this point, one could assume that Jews are gifted in thinking in terms of mystic millennia-long lasting epochs. Thus Armand Hammer, a friend of Lenin as well as a confidant of

every American president of his time, believed that he could trace his family tree back to Judas Maccabee. Today we know that many, if not most Jews, did not descend from the biblical people of the Hebrews, as Arthur Koestler proved:<sup>57</sup>

*“Many Polish, Bessarabian, and Ukrainian Jews descended from the Slavs or Tatars who at one time converted to Judaism under the military or political influence of the Khazars. The Khazars ruled over a huge empire at the Dnepr from the 6th to the 10th century, and they themselves were Turanides converted to Judaism.”*

Koestler’s book is out of print and it is said that the author did not voluntarily commit suicide. A book by the German author Soratroi which summarized Koestler’s thesis, is “verboten,” i.e., prohibited in Germany.<sup>58</sup> He who lives truthfully does not need to suppress books. It can, however, be inferred from the ban of a book that pieces of truth can be found in it.

It is certainly more realistic to assume a profound lack of identity, which is compensated by means of a fantastic historical philosophy (*pseudologia phantastica*). In this way, a life with stories turns into a life within stories. Those stories become the exclusive frame of reference for any personal as well as collective orientation. The only alternative to this is the threat of total assimilation with the host nations and thus the end of Jewry.

As described in the flap text of the series *Judentum und Umwelt* (Judaism and Environment):<sup>59</sup>

*“If tensions [...] are missing, and if assimilation dominates in an environment free of problems, counter reactions will emerge within Jewry with the goal of gaining an ethnic and religious profile for the purpose of self-preservation.”*

Avraham Burg, “the man, who taught the Swiss banks how to fear,” lets the cat out of the bag:<sup>60</sup>

*“Let us assume that one day there is peace; then the Jews and Israelis will have to ask themselves: Can we Jews survive without an enemy? Can we survive without a Hitler who defines for us who we are?”*

Michael Wolffsohn takes the same line:<sup>61</sup>

*“What turns non-religious Diaspora Jews into Jews? Nothing. [...] It is part of the tragic absurdity of Jewish existence in the Diaspora that only the Holocaust fills the Jewish nothingness of non-religious Diaspora Jews and is thus the only foundation of Jewish identity for them. The Holocaust memories of the non-religious Jews, i.e., of the majority of all Diaspora Jews, have far reaching consequences for their relationship to Germany: They still perceive the new Germany as the old National Socialist and structurally Jew-murdering country. That is no anti-Germanism or German-hate, but the desperate and understandable search for Jewish identity.”* (emphasis added)

When Prof. Faurisson concluded with reference to the introduction holes for Zyklon B in the so-called gas chambers:

*“No holes—no ‘Holocaust’”;*<sup>62</sup>

one could conclude further:

*“No ‘Holocaust’—no Jews.”*

Grandiose perspectives result when we follow Sonja Margolina’s explanations about this “desperate Jewish search for

identity”.<sup>63</sup>

“The displacement of the bond to the community belongs to the process of the marginalization, is a prerequisite of the formation of identity, which seems never to be completed for the Jews. Therefore those Jews who denied Trotsky his Judaism, do not know that his way of ‘not being Jewish’ was typically Jewish. ‘Being Jewish’ results from a split identity, from the flight from Judaism. Isaac Deutscher wrote: ‘The Jewish defector who succeeds in leaving Judaism stands within Jewish tradition.’ This tradition did not begin with Karl Marx, but with a renegade whose revelations changed the course of the world history. His name was Jesus Christ. Foreign to the orthodox Jews, dangerous to the powerful, he disowned God from the Jews and distributed him (or himself) to all human beings, independent of race or blood. This internationalization of God was repeated by the most recent Jewish defectors in secularized form. In this very specific sense Marx was a modern Christ and Trotsky was his most faithful Apostle. Both, Christ and Marx, wanted to ban the money changers from the temple, and both could not do it. To say it differently, to be a Jew means to unite a split identity and ambivalence in one person without necessar-

ily realizing this. This dichotomy permits avoiding responsibility and feeling oneself the eternal victim and persecuted, in particular if this attitude appears to be legitimated by historical experience.”

“The Jews are [...] the most fateful people on earth: In their repercussions they have twisted mankind to such an extent that even today a Christian can feel anti-Semitic without understanding himself as the final Jewish consequence.”<sup>64</sup> (Emph. added.)

This ambivalence has also produced strange results, which are usually kept secret today: In the late 1930s, the Jewish author Gertrude Stein repeatedly demanded that Hitler should receive the Nobel Prize for peace.<sup>65</sup> In 1933, Arnold Schönberg wrote a letter from his Paris exile to Wilhem Furtwängler, who tried to mediate between the Jews on the one hand and Goebbels and evidently also Hitler on the other. Furtwängler suggested:<sup>66</sup>

“[I]f the German government could decide to step at the head of a movement which could give a historic meaning to the expulsion started by the German government, [...] such a decision would suddenly end all talk against the German culture and deprive its opponents of this valuable propaganda. Such an action of international conciliation



STEIN:  
Detail from  
Pablo Picasso's  
1906 portrait of  
the writer.

METROPOLITAN MUSEUM OF ART

## How Gertrude Stein Sought Nobel Prize for Hitler

By JONATHAN MAHLER  
FORWARD STAFF

NEW YORK — Buried inside a recent issue of a right-wing Israeli magazine is a nugget that may send some left-wing heads spinning — Gertrude Stein, queen of American expatriates in Paris, spearheaded a 1938 campaign urging the Nobel

committee to award its peace prize to Adolf Hitler.

This was disclosed by Gustav Hendrikksen, professor emeritus of Bible studies at Sweden's Uppsala University and a former member of the Nobel committee, in *Nativ*, a political magazine published in Israel. Mr. Hendrikksen's article,

Please turn to Page 4

FOUNDED APRIL 22, 1897

פארװערטס

Volume LXXXVIII

N° 31,065

# FORWARD

National Edition

Published at New York City

February 2, 1996

Page 4

## How Gertrude Stein Sought Nobel for Hitler

Continued from Page 1

“Don’t Blame the Nations,” argues that Israel committed a catastrophic mistake by negotiating with the Palestinians and deals harshly with the Nobel committee’s decision to award the Peace Prize to Prime Minister Rabin, Foreign Minister Peres and the chairman of the Palestine Liberation Organization, Yasser Arafat.

Even though Mr. Hendrikksen doesn’t offer any written proof, his assertions about Stein are adding a new wrinkle to the understanding of this German-Jewish writer and art collector — not to mention the temper of the times in which she lived. Literary historians who have studied Stein’s life and career consider her idiosyncratic and even describe her

phy of Stein — “‘Favored Strangers’: Gertrude Stein and Her Family” — Fay and Stein often discussed “the Führer’s qualities of greatness” in the years before World War II. Hitler later named Fay head of France’s *Bibliothèque Nationale* — the national library that banned books by Jewish authors. After the war, Fay was convicted as a war criminal, but both

*The Nobel committee rejected Stein’s plea, citing Hitler’s attitude toward the Jews.*

ed quite a stir in Israel and that his office has been deluged with calls since its publication this fall. Only a couple of readers, however, made any mention of Gertrude Stein — the great majority were reacting instead to Mr. Hendrikksen’s arch-conservative view of the peace process.

### Contradictory Evidence

Stein’s own view of Hitler’s rise to power was more ambiguous. Despite her ties to Fay, there is evidence she was active in the French Resistance, offering her home as a refuge for travelers during the German occupation. Indeed, a statue in the south of France commemorating the resistance mentions her by name. Moreover, the villain in her novel “Mrs.

would prove the desire of the German people for peace, without preventing it to demand its claims. It would, however, increase the inclination of the nations to concede to a peace-loving Germany its rightful claims. [...] A truly new world picture would develop [...].”

In a proclamation to the Jewish people, *Juda erwache!* (Jewry Awake), published in Zurich 1938, Beri Chaim called Hitler the “most just and most peaceloving of all men” (p. 78). Alain Finkielkraut is alleged to have said in a French TV broadcast:<sup>67</sup>

“Le nazisme a péché par un excès de bien.” (Nazism has sinned through an excess in good.)

And more recently, André Glucksmann came to the conclusion:<sup>68</sup>

“Hitler am I.”

Walther Rathenau confessed in his reflections (Leipzig 1912, p. 238):

“The phenomenon of the soul of the Jewish people is religious madness.”

Approximately at the same time, the New York Jewish psychiatrist, Fr. William Hirsch, wrote:<sup>69</sup>

“It is something tremendously tragic to admit that mankind, for thousands of years, has raised the symptoms of a couple of mentally deranged Jews to its highest ideals. This is a terribly tragic fate. More tragic than anything else that happened to mankind.”

It remains a puzzle how these symptoms were transmitted from the Hebrews to the Khazars. Abba Evan enlightens us about “The Jewish Character of Christian Thinking”:<sup>70</sup>

“Original Christianity stands closer to Judaism than the representatives of both religions want to admit in general. Christian theologians as well as orthodox Jews underestimate the original Jewish-Christian relationship. Christianity changed only slowly into a non-Jewish religion, separated from the Jewish community. [...] Christianity owes Judaism, besides Jesus, the One, the living God, a holy scripture—the Old Testament—which cleared the way for the New Testament, and a view on history which gives life a goal and history a sense. [...] No other people has created a myth of such an impact. [...] Never before had a people pictured the human fate so totally different from nature’s cycle. [...]”

And Martin Buber wrote in his famous work *The Jew and His Judaism*.<sup>71</sup>

“All ideas of great social constructing into the future derive from that fighting belief of Israel. [...] Even the Jewish Karl Marx is only a translator of the Jewish belief in the future and will for the future.”

Today, 100 million victims of Communism say thank you. In their known standard work *Die Unfähigkeit zu trauern* (The Inability to Mourn) Alexander and Margarethe Mitscherlich wrote:<sup>72</sup>

“It cannot be ruled out that during the course of coming decades the extraordinary [number of] victims of the Russian revolution will show to have been worthwhile.”

The Book of *Esther* in the Old Testament (Chap. 3, 12-13) relates the story of Minister Hamán, who informed his king Ahasuerus (Xerxes) about the mischief of the Jews in the

land. He therefore received full power to write letters ordering all princes and administrators to exterminate the Jews of Persia. Prof. Jehuda T. Radday and Prof. Magdalena Schultz interpret the story this way:

“This is the first anti-Jewish pamphlet in the Jewish history and was written by Jews as a parody! One of the means used by Jews to cope with anti-Jewish hatred, which is so incomprehensible to them, is humor, which is used in this instance by ascribing this circular letter to Hamán, the incarnation of anti-Semitism. It includes almost everything that can be found in later similar decrees: Accusation of godlessness, ungratefulness, greed, witchcraft, cruelty, and exploitation of fellow men, as well as the decision to finally solve the Jewish problem.”<sup>73</sup>

“The plan was foiled in the last moment. But even if it had been executed, Hamán would not have escaped with impunity. Ironically this arch enemy of the Jews was then hanged for a crime that he neither planned nor committed: The king suspected that Hamán wanted to rape the queen almost under her husband’s eyes (see Est. 7.-5-10).”—“The humor in the Book Ester is unmistakable.”<sup>74</sup> (Emph. added.)

Hamán and his ten sons were hanged, and the Jews of the land received the right to kill 75,800 Persians. In memory of this splendid story, the Jews celebrate the identity-reinforcing Purim festival, externally seen in analogy to our Carnival. Between Hamán, if he ever existed, and Hitler lie 2,400 years.

As long as we (Germans) don’t have “intellectual air control” over our own country, the Holocaust myth and the myth of German guilt can only be fought, if at all, if they are comprehended as building blocks of the Jewish plan of (self-)redemption, wherein there is a continuity from the Old Testament to Communism, which today finds its continuation in globalism.

“Besides the Christian church and socialist internationalism, a third internationalism of Jewish origin is mentioned, the international high finance. This one, too, replaces the holistic nature of living humanity with an abstraction, the economic value of the individual, numerically expressed in money. [...] A straight line leads from Paul over Marx to Trotsky and his hostile brothers from the empire of the Jewish high finance.”<sup>75</sup>

Truth-loving historians or revisionists find themselves in a situation which resembles that of honest card players playing with cheats: the honest players point out, over and over, the small and large deceptions of the cheats, and appeal to them for honesty. That is, they appeal to a presumed agreement which does not exist, while in our game our opponents legitimize their cheating with their religion. Yet they can rightfully tell us that we, the honest players, have the same basic laws as their religion, the Old Testament, at home in our bookcases and revere it as Holy Writ.

Please read the following sections in this “Holy Scripture”: 1. Moses 27, 29; 2. Moses 15, 3; 4. Moses 14, 8-9; 5. Moses 6, 10-11; 5. Moses 7, 1-7, 16; 5. Moses 12, 29-30; 5. Moses 20, 13-16; Joshua 1, 19; Psalms 2, 89, Psalms 79, 6; Isaiah 33, 10-13; Isaiah 60, 21; Isaiah 63, 6; Isaiah 66, 16; Micah 4, 13.

Otto von Habsburg wrote of "Our Jewish Roots":<sup>76</sup>

*"If Judaism had nothing else produced than the Old Testament, we already would have to pay tribute to them. This book does not only contain basic divine revelations like the creation story, it is also the first school of thought and the starting point of our development."*

Count Nikolous Richard Coudenhove-Kalergi, the founder of the Paneuropean Union, wrote in 1925:<sup>77</sup>

*"A decisive step towards this goal formed Russian Bolshevism, where a small group of communistic intellectual aristocrats governed the land, and consciously broke with plutocratic democracy, which today dominates the rest of the world."*

"Had Coudenhove-Kalergi lived during the time of the Old Testament, they would have called him a Prophet," so Otto von Habsburg, today's President of the Paneuropean Union, in a letter from Pöking of Nov. 9, 1994.<sup>78</sup>

In an essay meant to expose the *Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion* as "a fake record of an alleged secret Jewish meeting," Dr. Herbert Hillel Goldberg writes:

*"The Messiah of the tribe of Judah will indeed rule from the throne of David, when Jerusalem will be the capital of*

*the world: 'At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the LORD; and all the nations shall be gathered unto it, to the name of the LORD, to Jerusalem: neither shall they walk any more after the imagination of their evil heart.' (Jeremiah 3, 17). 'And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the LORD's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it. And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem.' (Isaiah 2, 2-3). What the Highest in his healing plan for the world has provided will come, but not in the way the enemy is representing it."*

So much for the "exposure" of Goldberg, of the "Friends of Zion, Inc." during a tour through Germany and Switzerland in May/June 1994 in Christian churches! The welcoming address on occasion of an "Israel-Conference '98" in Nuremberg (3.-5. April 1998) included the following statement:<sup>79</sup>

*"We are standing at the turning point of a new era! The nations rub themselves sore at this small country and force it into isolation (Zachariah 12,3). During these eschatological events, we Christians are called to give comfort to Israel in love and to prepare the way for the Messiah (Isaiah 40)."*

Not a word that this small nation, at which we rub ourselves sore, has probably the world's largest destructive power in nuclear weapons in relation to the number of its inhabitants.<sup>80</sup>

*"You only have I known of all the families of the earth: therefore I will punish you for all your iniquities."*

This sentence of the Prophet Amos (Chap. 3, 2) "testifies of the majestic self-confidence with which the Prophet is filled, who is at once Yahweh's most faithful servant and passionate patriot. In this relationship to his people lies the deepest root of the faith in the coming Messiah. [...]"<sup>81</sup> (emphasis added)

In Dietrich Eckart's writing *Der Bolschewismus von Moses bis Lenin* (Bolshevism from Moses to Lenin) the last paragraph reads:<sup>82</sup>

*"It is probably so: the Jew can only be understood if it is known what he strives for in the end. Beyond world domination to the destruction of the world. He believes that he has to subjugate all mankind in order to create paradise on earth, as he persuades himself. Only he is capable of this, so he makes himself believe, and it will certainly come to this. But already from the means he is using, one can see that he is secretly driven to something else. While he persuades himself that he improves mankind, he torments it into despair, into insanity, into collapse. If he is not stopped, he will destroy it. He is prepared for this, he is driven to it; even if he vaguely forebodes that he will destroy himself by this as well. He cannot get out, he must do it. To me, this feeling for the absolute dependence of his own existence on the existence of his victim seems to be the main reason for his hatred. To have to destroy someone with all the power, but at the same time to foreshadow that this will lead,*

Volume 460  
No. 46



Wednesday  
26th Jan., 1949

## PARLIAMENTARY DEBATES (HANSARD)

HOUSE OF COMMONS  
OFFICIAL REPORT

950

**Mr. Churchill :** . . . . . but I think the day will come when it will be recognised without doubt, not only on one side of the House but throughout the civilised world, that the strangling of Bolshevism at its birth would have been an untold blessing to the human race.

**Mr. Cocks (Broxtowe):** If that had happened we should have lost the last war.

**Mr. Churchill :** No, it would have prevented the last war.

LONDON  
HIS MAJESTY'S STATIONERY OFFICE  
SIXPENCE NET

without salvation, to his own destruction, that is it: the tragedy of Lucifer.”

The same stance is expressed in early poems by Karl Marx, for example in:<sup>83</sup>

*“Prayer of the Despairing: Has God torn down everything from me, / rolled away in fateful curse and yoke. / His worlds – all – all amiss! / One was left, the revenge I still have, / I will proudly take revenge against myself, / against the creature that sits high up on the throne. / My power be patchwork of weakness alone, / and my good itself not be rewarded! / I will build a throne for myself, / cold and huge shall be its summit. / Superhuman horror be its fortress, / And its marshal be its dark pain! / Who looks up with healthy eyes, / Returns pale as dead and mute, / Touched by the blind breath of death, / May his own fortune dig his trap. / That the lightnings of the Highest bounce / Off the high, iron-made building, / If he breaks my walls, my halls, / Eternity rebuilds them in defiance.”*

Or from

*“Men’s Pride: Then I throw the glove scoffing / A world into its wide face, / And even if the giant lady dwarf topples moaning, / her ruins will not crush my fervor. / God-like may I promenade, / Victorious move through her domain of ruins, / Each word is fire and action, / My chest resemble the Creator’s bosom.”*<sup>84</sup>

Winston Churchill thought, at least during a debate in the House of Commons on January 26, 1949, that:

“I think the day will come when it will be recognized without doubt, not only on one side of the House but throughout the civilized world, that the strangling of Bolshevism at its birth would have been an untold blessing to the human race.”

To the objection that if that had happened, England should have lost the last war, Churchill replied:<sup>85</sup>

“No, it would have prevented the last war.”

Unfortunately we don’t know whether he considered the birth of Bolshevism to have taken place in 1917, in 1848, or at the time of Moses.

According to the Old Testament, Moses was responsible for an early mass murder—not of a foreign people, however, but of the intellectual elite of his own people. In the fourth book of Moses (Numbers), Chapter 16, it is written that “Korah’s gang” rebelled against Moses,

*“and they rose up before Moses, with certain of the children of Israel, two hundred and fifty princes of the assembly, famous in the congregation, men of renown: and they gathered themselves together against Moses and against Aaron, and said unto them, Ye take too much upon you, seeing all the congregation are holy, every one of them, and the LORD is among them: wherefore then lift ye up yourselves above the congregation of the LORD.”*

Instead of showing any respect for this “democratic” request, he announced a divine judgment on the next day:

*“and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed them up, and their houses, and all the men that appertained unto Korah, and all their goods.”*<sup>86</sup>

About the explanation of the priesthood, Nietzsche stated:<sup>87</sup>

*“The famous story at the beginning of the Bible, has it actually been understood—about God’s paralyzing fear of*

*science? ... The beginning of the Bible includes the complete psychology of the priests.—The priest knows only one danger: that is science, the healthy concept of cause and effect.”*

Science, however, is revisionism!

In this story, one may also recognize the basic principle of the Cheka as it was brought to perfection by the Bolsheviks thousands of years later. On September 6, 1919, Maxim Gorky wrote a letter to Lenin:<sup>88</sup>

*“For me, the wealth of a country, the power of a people is measured according to the quantity and quality of its intellectual potential. The revolution makes only sense if it favors growth and development of this potential. Scientists must be treated with the highest measure of consideration and respect. However, by cutting off the head of the people while saving our own skin, we destroy our brain.”*

Lenin answered as follows:<sup>89</sup>

*“It is incorrect to throw the ‘intellectual power’ of the people into the same pot as the ‘power’ of the intellectual bourgeoisie. [...] The intellectual forces of the workers and the peasants grow and become strong through the fight for the overthrow of the bourgeoisie and their helpers, the intellectuals, the lackeys of the capital who think of themselves to be the brain of the nation. In reality they aren’t the brain, they are just dirt.”*

Another example of the Cheka principal was the Katyn massacre, during which the military leadership of Poland was exterminated.

Since the destruction of the temple in the year 70 there have been, according to Rabbi Shmul Himelstein,<sup>90</sup> only two important events for Jewry: the Holocaust and the founding of the State of Israel. Rabbi Benjamin Blech recently gave the following explanation of the connection between the two events: In the third Book of Moses (Leviticus) 25, 10 it is written:

*“And ye shall hallow the fiftieth year, and proclaim liberty throughout all the land unto all the inhabitants thereof: it shall be a jubilee unto you; and ye shall return every man unto his possession, and ye shall return every man unto his family.”*

These words are also engraved on the American liberty bell. The Hebrew expression for “you shall return” (TaShuVU), however, is slightly incorrect. Grammatically seen, one ‘v’ (“vav”) is missing; it should have been: TaShUVU. This missing “va” stands for 6. TaShuVU without the missing letter is interpreted as the promise that the Jewish people finally will return to its homeland. Decoded into numbers, it yields 708 (400+300+2+6). The founding year of the State of Israel (1948) is 5708 according to the Hebrew calendar. The thousands are ignored. Therefore, the prophecy results in the founding year, where a “vav” = 6 (million) is missing. If the prophecy were not grammatically “incorrect,” and thus written with the missing “vav,” it would not contain Israel’s correct founding year, hence the prophecy would be false. However, because God never errs, he spells the prophecy incorrectly—without “vav” = 6—in order to indicate that 6 (million) will be missing. (Else Israel would have to have been

founded in 1954). Thus far Rabbi Benjamin Blech according to the explanations of a “revisionist” book.<sup>91</sup> This book is not allowed to be imported to Germany; in any case the German ambassador in Washington got himself two copies. It is edited by Dr. Robert Brock, the leader of a “Self-determination Committee” for American Negroes (pardon: ‘Afro-Americans’), who also appears occasionally at events of the German rightwing splinter party DVU in Passau, and who has published a book with quotations exonerating Germany, *Freispruch für Deutschland* (Acquittal for Germany),<sup>92</sup> a fact which of course speaks neither against the one nor for the other.

It is generally known that for Jews each letter in the Torah is sacrosanct:<sup>93</sup>

*“A single wrong or illegible letter in the [Torah] roll makes it worthless and must be corrected. If this is discovered during the KHT [Keriát-ha-Torá = lecture from the Torah], it is immediately interrupted, the Torah is rolled up, put aside, and another roll is opened up at the same place—if the Jews there are lucky enough to own a second one!”*

Since for cabbalists the Torah includes 600,000 different possible interpretation (or are there perhaps 6,000,000?), it would not be surprising if the above version is not the only one.<sup>94</sup>

*“All the puzzles of the scripture will be solved within the last sixty seconds before the beginning of Judgment Day, this the Jewish secret teaching guarantees.”*

A new reform of the civil calendar, as has repeatedly been suggested during this or that forum of the United Nations, would be a catastrophe for Jewry, but so far it has been prevented by Jewish authorities and organizations.<sup>95</sup> These examples may indicate how naïve it is to assume that the six-million-myth can be fought with rational arguments.

It is interesting to note that a term more and more intensively applied to what used to be called a “Holocaust victim” is “Holocaust survivor,” as if survivors were also victims. By so doing, a so-called “Holocaust Survivor Syndrome” is created, and this is now already in the second and third generation, *i.e.*, with the children and grand-children of the “real” survivors. The members of the following generations suffer from “survivor guilt,” and “Holocaust survivors” from the areas of the former Soviet Union suffer additionally because their “souls were murdered.” Should the myth of the six million gassed collapse one day, a growing substitute army of “Holocaust survivors” is ready to be the future bearers of victimhood.

The Christian reader may be horrified by some of the explanations made here. In their defense, we can only assume that they do not know their own Holy Scripture. Who knows, for example, that Leviticus 19 contains the following?:

*“This is the ordinance of the law which the LORD hath commanded, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, that they bring thee a red heifer without spot, wherein is no blemish, and upon which never came yoke. And ye shall give her unto Ele-a’zar the priest, that he may bring her forth without the camp, and one shall slay her before his face: and Ele-a’zar the priest shall take of her*

*blood with his finger, and sprinkle of her blood directly before the tabernacle of the congregation seven times. And one shall burn the heifer in his sight; her skin, and her flesh, and her blood, with her dung, shall he burn: [...] And a man that is clean shall gather up the ashes of the heifer, and lay them up without the camp in a clean place, and it shall be kept for the congregation of the children of Israel for a water of separation: it is a purification for sin...[...].”*

At last we are finally there! Just recently, such a red calf was born in Texas.<sup>96</sup> Only the fortified roof of the temple has still to be liberated from the Muslims in order to be able to greet the Messiah from the proper place. That would mean war.

At the turn of the twenty-first century, certain religious Jews and fundamentalist Christians made common cause, because for both the world must first go “through a deep valley,” which means through war and fire, to achieve the redemption by the Messiah.<sup>97</sup> And the poor heifer is threatened with her own Holocaust (sacrifice through total burning).

The Israeli author Rachlevsky frightened his secular compatriots with the bestseller *Donkey of the Messiah*.<sup>98</sup>

תָּשׁוּבוּ  
TaShuVU



## YOU SHALL RETURN

In the days when slavery existed, the Torah decreed that there must come a time when every man goes free. Even those who resold themselves after six years of servitude, and had their ears pierced for voluntary enslavement, could not remain beyond the time of the Jubilee.

וְקִדַּשְׁתֶּם אֶת שְׁנַת הַחֲמִישִׁים שָׁנָה וְקִרְאתֶם דְּרוֹר בְּאָרֶץ  
לְכָל-יֹשְׁבֵיהָ יוֹבֵל הוּא תְּהִינָה לָכֶם

(Ve-kidashtem et shenat ha-hamishim shanah u-keratem deror ba-arez le-khol yoshveha yovel hi tihyeh lakhem)

“And ye shall hallow the fiftieth year and proclaim liberty throughout the land unto all the inhabitants thereof.”

[Leviticus 25:10]

These are the words chosen to be inscribed on the Liberty Bell. It is in the Jubilee year that “ye shall return every man unto his possession and ye shall return every man unto his family.”

The Hebrew word for “ye shall return,” תָּשׁוּבוּ (TaShuVU), seems to be spelled incorrectly. Grammatically it requires another ו (vav). It ought to read תָּשׁוּבוּ (TaShUVU).

Why is it lacking the letter ו (vav), which stands for 6? תָּשׁוּבוּ (without the “vav”) is a prediction to the Jewish people of ultimate return to their national homeland. תָּשׁוּבוּ in numbers adds up to 708: ת (tav) = 400, ש (shin) = 300, ו (vet) = 2, ו (vav) = 6. When we write the year, we ignore the millennia. In 1948 on the secular calendar, we witnessed the miracle of Jewish return to Israel. On the Hebrew calendar it was the year 5708. That was the year predicted by the incomplete word תָּשׁוּבוּ (TaShuVU), you shall return. We did return, lacking 6—an all-important 6 million of our people who perished during the Holocaust.

Yet the fulfillment of the prediction of return in precisely that year implied by the gematria of תָּשׁוּבוּ (TaShuVU) gives us firm hope that the words of the Prophets for Final Redemption will come true as well.

"[He] refers to a typical, traditional Jewish suppression mechanism which runs like a red thread through Jewish history: The memory of disasters caused by periodically returning messianic movements has been repeatedly repressed, and the destructive part played by some rabbis kept secret. [... The Messianists feel strengthened] in their belief that the future of the Jewish people belongs to them alone. For them, this future is primarily connected with the final time of the approaching messiah. According to cabbalistic understanding, the people of Israel will liberate itself from the dominance of the 'unclean mixed people' at the beginning of this time. Those satanic forces, who among others appear as Jewish non-believers, will either be converted by the faithful, or they will simply have to be destroyed. [...] Through increasingly generous public subsidies, Netanyahu's policy led to a literally explosion of the number of Torah students. By orthodox Jews, this is understood as a token from God, as is Israel's tactic of a massively delayed retreat of the Israeli army from the once biblical areas, which is long overdue."

This article also discusses quite openly that according to the Jewish myth of the cabbala, "left" stands for satanic and "right" for the forces of good. According to Scholem, the cabbala calls evil the "left emanation" of God.<sup>99</sup>

A. B. Yehoshua explains the difference between left and right as follows:<sup>100</sup>

"The difference lies in the belief, or in the capability to believe, that man and society do not only have the capability for change, but also the desire for the true Tikkun, in fact despite and beyond the natural and eternal forces which define us, like those of origin and environment. This is the fundamental leftist orientation: the desire to change and the capability to transform. While the Right talks about necessity to be loyal to our ancestors, about the demand of the generations, about the fate which repeats itself, and about national mentalities, the Left talks about freedom from the past, redefinition of the roots, and about the destruction of stereotypes. Zionism always oscillated back and forth between Left and Right, revolution and conservatism." (emphasis added)

Is our (non-Jewish) Left aware of the fact that they actually serve cabbalistic goals, only to risk final destruction as the "Donkey of the Messiah"?

450 years ago, Martin Luther came to the late insight:<sup>101</sup>

"If God does not want to give me a different Messiah than the one the Jews desire and hope for, then I would rather be a pig than a human being. I will give you a good reason. The Jews do not ask more of their Messiah than to be a star and a secular king who kills us Christians and divides the world among the Jews and make them the rulers. [...]"

Prof. Dr. Werner Pfeifenberger, who was heavily persecuted in Germany and Austria for his revisionist views and who was finally driven to suicide, stated the following:<sup>102</sup>

"Besides the three usual brain functions: understanding, rationality, and the will, which together make up man's spirit and serve his life's interests, a fourth category of

thinking evidently slumbers within man which, once started through deliberate re-routing of psychic functions, lets men act against their very own interest for the benefit of a foreign will. The better the mentors of such re-routing succeed in hypnotizing other people with a closed world view, the sooner they can be moved by isms, to sacrifice themselves and others, so that their spiritual mentors don't lack for power and wealth."<sup>103</sup>

Let us hope that Prof. Pfeifenberger did not include revisionism in his list of -isms, because the true revisionist always has to be ready to subject the knowledge gained through "revision to further revisions; by definition, therefore, he does not have a closed world view.

In closing, two quotations from the ingenious Otto Weininger, who was crushed by his Judaism:<sup>104</sup>

"That almost all prominent people were anti-Semites (Tacitus, Pascal, Voltaire, Herder, Goethe, Kant, Jean Paul, Schopenhauer, Grillparzer, Wagner) goes back to the fact, that they, who have so much more in themselves than others, also understand Jewry better than others."

"And perhaps tentatively, the historic meaning and the enormous merit of Judaism is none other than to bring the Aryan always to the awareness of himself, to remind him of himself. The Aryan has to thank the Jew for this: through the Jew he knows what to avoid; he must avoid the possibility of internalizing Judaism."

(To be continued)

## Notes

First published in German in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 3(1) (1999), pp. 27-38. Translated by Fabian Eschen.

<sup>1</sup> *Jewish Chronicle*, May 10, 1996, p. 25.

<sup>2</sup> *Gottes geheime Formel – Die Entschlüsselung des Welträtsels und der Primzahlencode*, Langen Müller, Munich 1995.

<sup>3</sup> *Le Monde*, February 21, 1979.

<sup>4</sup> *Le Nouvel Observateur*, October 23, 1997, p. 57.

<sup>5</sup> Ref: 6S.199/1994/tbr.

<sup>6</sup> In the communist newspaper *La Libération*, March 5, 1979: "La liberté de parole, d'écrit, de réunion, d'association doit être totale et ne supporte pas la moindre restriction."

<sup>7</sup> "Unstet und flüchtig bin ich, wenn ich den Spuren meiner Väter folge," *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, January 17, 1996, p. 6.

<sup>8</sup> *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, May 22, 1998, p. 11.

<sup>9</sup> J. Wilkes and R. Albert, "Der junge Heine. Die Kasuistik einer Pseudologia phantastica," in: *Nervenarzt*, vol. 69, May 1998, pp. 437-439.

<sup>10</sup> "Religion, jüdische," Column 1335.

<sup>11</sup> Before the Frankfurt Jury Court on May 3, 1979; Ref: 50 Js 12 828 / 79 919 Ls.

<sup>12</sup> *Profil*, September 9, 1996, p. 75.

<sup>13</sup> In *Toronto Star*, November 26, 1991.

<sup>14</sup> R. J. Werblowsky, Geoffrey Wigoder (ed.), Oxford University Press, New York, N.Y. 1997.

<sup>15</sup> *Die Philosophenwelt in Versen vorgestellt*, Reclam, Stuttgart 1995, pp. 46, 48:

"'Unglaublich!' sagt' Tertullian / – er war der Stoa zugetan – / 'ein Gott, der als Verbrecher stirbt, / schon dadurch sich den Ruf erwirbt, / er sei ein Gott in Menschsgestalt, drum glaub' ich's ohne Vorbehalt. / Und daß vom Tod er auferstanden / man sah das nie in unsern Landen –, / das ist so höchst absonderlich! / Und darum überzeugt es mich.' / Was nun der Glaube selber war, / das war ja schon seit Platon klar: / Nur Glaub' und Meinung galt den Sinnen / und dem, was wir durch sie gewinnen. / Doch wissend schau'n wir die Ideen, / die wir mit geistgem Auge sehn. / [...] Der Jude Philon hat's gezeigt, / daß hinterm Wortsinn liegen muß / ein tiefer Sensus mysticus. / In einem Buch, in der Tora, / für Juden er verzeichnet war. [...]"

- <sup>16</sup> Guido Burg, Basel 1993, p. 248.
- <sup>17</sup> *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, October 15, 1998, p. 47.
- <sup>18</sup> "Selbstblendung – Über den Realitätsverlust der Funktionärselite", in: *Kursbuch* No. 111, February 1993, p. 122.
- <sup>19</sup> Frederick A. Leuchter, *An Engineering Report on the Alleged Execution Gas Chambers at Auschwitz, Birkenau and Majdanek, Poland*, Samisdat Publishers Ltd., Toronto 1988; Ger.: *Der erste Leuchter Report*, *ibid.*, 1988.
- <sup>20</sup> Germar Rudolf, *The Rudolf Report*, Theses and Dissertations Press, Chicago, IL, 2003; Ger.: *Das Rudolf Gutachten*, Castle Hill Publishers, Hastings 2001.
- <sup>21</sup> German right-wing political magazine, Castel del Monte, Postfach 14 06 28, D-80456 Munich.
- <sup>22</sup> *Leben in Lüge*, Mohr Siebeck, Tübingen 1997, p. 73.
- <sup>23</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 145f.
- <sup>24</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 101.
- <sup>25</sup> Editors of Executive Intelligence Review, *The Ugly Truth About The Anti-defamation League*, Executive Intelligence Review, Washington, D.C., 1992.
- <sup>26</sup> *Response*, Vol. 15, No. 2, Sommer 1994, p. 10.
- <sup>27</sup> In: Wolfgang Benz, (ed.), *AntiSemitismus in Deutschland*, dtv, Munich 1995, p. 193.
- <sup>28</sup> *Der Ewige Antisemit*, Fischer, Frankfurt a.M. 1986, p. 30.
- <sup>29</sup> *Memoiren*, Den Haag 1951, p. 242; *Memoiren: Das Werden des Staates Israel*, Toth, Hamburg 1951.
- <sup>30</sup> Wolfgang Benz (ed.), *op. cit.* (note 27), p. 7.
- <sup>31</sup> Letter to the Editor, *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, August 6, 1998, p. 6.
- <sup>32</sup> Suhrkamp, Frankfurt/Main 1974, pp. 64ff.
- <sup>33</sup> *Der eingebildete Jude*, Fischer-Taschenbuch-Verlag, Frankfurt am Main 1984, p. 107.
- <sup>34</sup> In: *Internationale Politik*, Heft 8/1998, acc. to *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Oct. 29, 1998, p. 45.
- <sup>35</sup> *In Auschwitz wurde niemand vergast*, Verlag an der Ruhr, Mülheim 1996; cf. the review in *VffG* 1(2) (1997), pp. 119-121.
- <sup>36</sup> F. Weinhandl (ed.), *Die geistlichen Übungen*, 1921, pp. 187f.
- <sup>37</sup> *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Oct. 6, 1998, p. L35.
- <sup>38</sup> *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Dec. 27, 1996, p. 23.
- <sup>39</sup> "Sonderweg wider Willen – Polen: Die Enttabuisierung der Vergangenheit," *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, May, 25, 1994, p. N5.
- <sup>40</sup> *Linke Ikonen*, so the title of a book by O. K. Werckmeister, Hanser, Munich 1997.
- <sup>41</sup> *Menschenrechte*, C. H. Beck, Munich, 1992, p. 104.
- <sup>42</sup> Cf. R. Faurisson, "Bilanz der Affäre Garaudy/Abbé Pierre," *VffG* 1(1) (1997), pp. 9-18.
- <sup>43</sup> *Todesursache Zeitgeschichtsforschung*, Verlag Neue Visionen, Würenlos 1995.
- <sup>44</sup> In: *Les Temps modernes*, Dezember 1993, pp. 132f.
- <sup>45</sup> *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Sept. 1, 1998, p. 41.
- <sup>46</sup> Printed in *La Revue de Paris*, June 1, 1928, as well as in Salluste, *Les origines secrètes du bolchevisme*, Éditions Jules Tallandier, Paris 1930, pp. 33f. The original: "Le peuple juif pris collectivement sera lui-même son Messie. Son règne sur l'Univers s'obtiendra pas l'unification des autres races humaines, la suppression des frontières et des monarchies, qui sont le rempart du particularisme, et l'établissement d'une République Universelle qui reconnaîtra partout les droits de citoyens aux Juifs. Dans cette organisation nouvelle de l'Humanité, les fils d'Israël répandus dès maintenant sur toute la surface du globe, tous de même race et de même formation traditionnelle sans former cependant une nationalité distincte, deviendront sans opposition l'élément partout dirigeant, surtout s'ils parviennent à imposer aux masses ouvrières la direction stable de quelques-uns d'entre eux. Les gouvernements des Nations formant la République Universelle passeront tous, sans effort, dans des mains israéliètes, à la faveur de la victoire du prolétariat. La propriété individuelle pourra alors être supprimée par les gouvernants de race judaïque qui administreront partout la fortune publique. Ainsi se réalisera la promesse du Talmud que, lorsque les Temps du Messie seront venus, les Juifs tiendront sous leurs clefs les biens de tous les peuples du monde."
- <sup>47</sup> Retranslated from Ernest F. Elenhurd, *The World Hoax*, quoted acc. to *Deutschland*, vol 7/8-1998, pp. 23f.
- <sup>48</sup> Acc. to Jacob Taubes, *Abendländische Eschatologie*, Francke, Bern 1947, p. 207; new edition: Matthes und Seitz, Munich 1991.
- <sup>49</sup> Acc. to *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Dec. 20, 1997, p. 36.
- <sup>50</sup> *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, April 28, 1998, p. 1.
- <sup>51</sup> Kölner Univ.-Verl., Köln 1998.
- <sup>52</sup> "Die russische Gesellschaft entwickelt sich zurück," *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, June 4, 1998, p. 41.
- <sup>53</sup> P. Lapide, *Rom und die Juden*, Herder, Freiburg 1967, p. 9.
- <sup>54</sup> Yehuda T. Radday, *Auf den Spuren der Parascha*, Diesterweg, Frankfurt Main/Sauerländer, Aarau, vol. 6 "Welterziehung," 1997, p. 41.
- <sup>55</sup> "Anamnesis und Amnesie: b̄er Erinnerung und Vergessen," in: *Magie, Mystik, Messianismus*, Olms, Hildesheim 1997, p. 19.
- <sup>56</sup> Y.T. Radday, *op. cit.* (note 54), pp. 9ff.
- <sup>57</sup> Georges Friedmann, *Das Ende des jüdischen Volkes?*, Rowohlt, Reinbek 1968, p. 209; cf. Arthur Koestler, *Der Dreizehnte Stamm*, Pawlak, Herrsching 1991, and Erwin Soratroi, *Attilas Erben auf Davids Thron*, Grabert, Tübingen 1992.
- <sup>58</sup> With verdict of County Court Tübingen, ref. 4 Gs 445/95.
- <sup>59</sup> Johann Maier (ed.), *Judentum und Umwelt*, Peter Lang, Frankfurt am Main.
- <sup>60</sup> *Die Weltwoche*, Nr. 5/30. January 1997, p. 3.
- <sup>61</sup> In: *Internationale Politik*, Heft 8/1998, acc. to *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Oct. 29, 1998, p. 45.
- <sup>62</sup> *VffG*, 2(3) (1998), p. 226.
- <sup>63</sup> In: *Das Ende der Lügen*, Siedler, Berlin 1992, pp. 100f.
- <sup>64</sup> Friedrich Nietzsche, *Der Antichrist*, Leipzig 1930, Chap. 24.
- <sup>65</sup> *Forward*, Feb. 2, 1996, p. 4.
- <sup>66</sup> *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Aug. 15, 1996, p. 30.
- <sup>67</sup> Acc. to Roger Dommergue de Ménasce, *Auschwitz: le silence de Heidegger ou Points de détails*, publ. by author.
- <sup>68</sup> *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Nov. 3, 1997, p. 45.
- <sup>69</sup> *Religion and Civilisation*, Munich 1910, p. 636; reprint: Faksimile-Verlag, Bremen, undated.
- <sup>70</sup> From: *Dies ist mein Volk*, Droemer, Zürich 1970, pp. 94f.
- <sup>71</sup> *Der Jude und sein Judentum*, Melzer, Köln 1963, p. 547f.
- <sup>72</sup> Piper, Munich 1967, p. 333.
- <sup>73</sup> *Auf den Spuren der Parascha*, *op. cit.* (note 54), Arbeitsmappe 1, 1989.
- <sup>74</sup> *Ibid.*, Arbeitsmappe 2, 1991.
- <sup>75</sup> From: Albrecht Hellmann, "Die Juden in der Weltpolitik," in the Zionist monthly *Der Jude*, 3. year., 1918/19, issue 1, p. 11.
- <sup>76</sup> *Die Reichsidee*, Amalthea, Wien - Munich 1986, p. 250.
- <sup>77</sup> In: *Praktischer Idealismus*, Paneuropa-Verl., Wien 1925.
- <sup>78</sup> Archive of the *Unabhängigen Nachrichten* (Postfach 101706, D-46017 Oberhausen, Germany).
- <sup>79</sup> *Arbeitskreis* "Suchet der Stadt Bestes," Postfach, Nürnberg.
- <sup>80</sup> See Seymour Hersh, *Atomkraft Israel – Das geheime Vernichtungspotential im Nahen Osten*, Droemer Knaur, Munich 1991.
- <sup>81</sup> *Jüdisches Lexikon*, Berlin 1927, column 1329.
- <sup>82</sup> Hoheneichen-Verlag, Munich, 1924.
- <sup>83</sup> "Des Verzweifelnden Gebet: Hat ein Gott mir alles hingerissen, / Fortgewälzt in Schicksalsfluch und Joch. / Seine Welten – alles – alles misen! / Eines blieb, die Rache blieb mir doch. / An mir selber will ich stolz mich rächen, / An dem Wesen, das da oben thront. / Meine Kraft sei Flickwerk nur von Schwächen, / Und mein Gutes selbst sei unbelohnt! / Einen Thron will ich mir auferbauen, / Kalt und riesig soll sein Gipfel sein. / Bollwerk sei ihm übermenschlich Grauen, / Und sein Marschall sei die düst're Pein! / Wer hinaufschaut mit gesundem Auge, / Kehre tottenbleich und stumm zurück, / Angepackt vom blinden Todtshauche, / Grabe selbst die Grube sich sein Glück. / Und des Höchsten Blitze sollen prallen / Von dem hohem, eisernen Gebäu, / Bricht er meine Mauern, meine Hallen, / Trotzend baut die Ewigkeit sie neu."
- <sup>84</sup> "Menschenstolz: Dann werf ich den Handschuh höhrend / Einer Welt in's breite Angesicht, / Und die Riesenzwergin stürze stöhnend, / Meine Gluth erdrückt ihr Trümmer nicht. / Götterähnlich darf ich wandeln, / Siegreich ziehn durch ihr Ruinenreich, / Jedes Wort ist Gluth und Handeln, / Meine Brust dem Schöpferbusen gleich."
- <sup>85</sup> *Werke. Artikel. Literarische Versuche bis März 1843*, Dietz, Berlin 1975. *Parliamentary Debates*, House of Commons, Official Report, vol. 460, No. 46, column 950.
- <sup>86</sup> See also "Platz für die Rotte Korah" in: *Staatsbriefe* 11/1996, pp. 35-37.
- <sup>87</sup> *Der Antichrist*, Kap. 48.
- <sup>88</sup> Quoted in: Arkadi Vaksberg, *Le Mystère Gorki*, Albin Michel, p. 111.



- <sup>89</sup> Quoted acc. to Eva Kosinng, Edel Mirowa-Florin (ed.): *Lenin und Gorki – Eine Freundschaft in Dokumenten*, Berlin - Weimar 1974, pp. 201f.; both quotations from F. Courtois, *Das Schwarzbuch des Kommunismus*, Piper, Munich 1998, p. 805.
- <sup>90</sup> *The Jewish primer: questions and answers on Jewish faith and culture*, Facts on File, New York 1990.
- <sup>91</sup> *The Secrets of Hebrew Words*, Jason Aronson Inc., 1991, pp. 214f.; quoted in Ben Weintraub, *The Holocaust Dogma of Judaism: Keystone of the New World Order—How Prophecy Fulfillment Demands 6 Million*, Cosmo Publ., P.O.Box 15248, Washington, D.C., 20003, 1995, pp. 166f.; see illustration.
- <sup>92</sup> DFZ-Verlag, Munich, which is closely associated to the DVU.
- <sup>93</sup> From: *Auf den Spuren der Parascha*, op. cit. (note 54), p. 18.
- <sup>94</sup> Frank Schirmmacher, *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Oct. 14, 1997, p. L23.
- <sup>95</sup> Acc. to Y. T. Radday: *Israels Isochronie*, in: *Auf den Spuren der Parascha*, op. cit. (note 54), Arbeitsmappe 4, 1994, p. 100.

- <sup>96</sup> *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Oct. 15, 1998, p. 47.
- <sup>97</sup> *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Sept. 21, 1998, p. 14.
- <sup>98</sup> Joseph Croitoru, "Zeitplan für den Messias," in: *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Oct. 26, 1998, p. 52.
- <sup>99</sup> Scholem, *Judaica*, vol. 6, p. 23, und *Encyclopaedia Judaica*, Jerusalem, vol. 10: *Kabbalah*, col. 585.
- <sup>100</sup> In *Tikkun*, vol. 11, no. 1.
- <sup>101</sup> *Von den Juden und ihren Lügen*, in: *Ausgewählte Werke*, supplemental series vol. 3, Chr. Kaiser, Munich 1936, p. 213.
- <sup>102</sup> See for this: Rudi Zornig, "Zum Gedenken an Werner Pfeifenberger," *VffG* 4(2) 2000, pp. 127-130.
- <sup>103</sup> Werner Pfeifenberger, "Internationalismus gegen Nationalismus – eine unendliche Todfeindschaft," in: *Freiheit und Verantwortung, Jahrbuch für politische Erneuerung 1995*, FPÖ, Wien 1995, p. 496.
- <sup>104</sup> From: *Geschlecht und Charakter*, Neuausgabe: Matthes & Seitz, Munich 1980, pp. 406/409.

## Book Reviews

### Hitler's Jewish Soldiers

By Jörg Berger

**Bryan Mark Rigg, *Hitler's Jewish Soldiers: The Untold Story of Nazi Racial Laws and Men of Jewish Descent in the German Military*, University Press of Kansas, ISBN: 0700611789, 528 pp., \$29.95**

On December 2, 1996, *The Daily Telegraph* reported briefly on a research work by the American Bryan M. Rigg ("Jews in Wehrmacht Uniform;" a similar story ran in the *London Times* on Dec. 6, 1996). During the following four years, Rigg deepened this topic considerably during his doctoral dissertation which was published in May 2002.

Bryan Rigg received his doctor title in history at the age of 31 from Cambridge University under Professor Jonathan Steinberg. Today, Rigg is history professor at the American Online Military University.

Rigg's book is primarily based upon approximately 430 interviews with former Wehrmacht soldiers who were at least partially Jewish, i.e., of "mixed-race" according to National Socialist terminology. Rigg's thesis belongs to the category of "history as experienced and reported," which means that it is based upon witnesses' accounts that have been evaluated by the author and brought into the context of the time. Rigg therefore belongs to the type of journalistic authors like John Sack, who in his book *An Eye for an Eye* did not

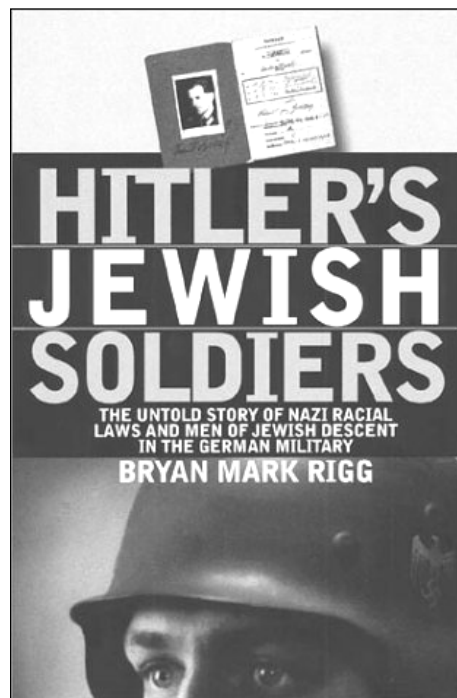
research the history of the extermination camps in postwar Poland based on documentations and secondary literature, but through "oral history," i.e., a series of interviews with victims and perpetrators.

Based on statistical extrapolations, Rigg estimates that during the Second World War at least 100,000 soldiers of mixed Jewish background, as defined by the Nuremberg laws, served in the Wehrmacht. Most of them were descendants of non-Jewish Germans and assimilated or baptized German Jews. Rigg concludes that some of these soldiers served

in order to escape the threat of persecution, others simply because they felt like Germans and acted no differently from other Germans, namely, served their fatherland faithfully.

Due to the aforementioned media articles in late 1996, Rigg's study attracted attention from the outset, enabling him to get in touch with many witnesses, but it also drew an unusual amount of criticism and recognition of his dissertation. The origins of Rigg's thesis, however, go back to the very beginning of his university studies, when he heard during a stay in Germany that a Protestant woman had Jewish ancestors, and when by chance he met an older man who talked about his experiences at the eastern front as a "quarter Jew."

As could be expected, first in line to comment on Rigg's thesis was a parade of Holocaust scholars, whose comments



were reported in the American magazine *Chronicle of Higher Education* (May 3, 2002). (<http://chronicle.com/free/v48/i34/34a01401.htm>). Rigg heard discouraging and critical words from various professors during his research, and also after his thesis was published. One voice is heard in public that positively described Rigg's book is that of Michael Berenbaum, former director of the Holocaust Memorial Museum, as well as Christopher R. Browning, professor of history of the University of North Carolina in Chapel Hill. Other Holocausters judge Rigg's work rather negatively, either because they think the subject is a waste of time ("Who would want to know that 100,000 mixed Jews were Hitler's willing soldiers?"), or because his thesis is allegedly presented in a sensationalistic and distorted way ("This was already known and is totally irrelevant for the judgment of the Holocaust and the Third Reich"), as per David Cesarani, professor for Jewish history in Southampton, England, or Raul Hilberg, professor emeritus of the University of Vermont. Some scholars resent that Rigg tried to gain public attention—and succeeded—when his work was still in an early

stage. But it was his PhD supervisor who started the early press campaign in order to enable Rigg to find additional potential witnesses.

Other scholars, such as Richard J. Evans, history professor at Cambridge, and Omer Bartov, history professor at Brown University, consider the title of Rigg's book inappropriate, because the book does not in most cases deal with Jews, but rather with "mixed Jews" as defined by the "racist NS-ideology," not as defined by the (no less racist) Jewish view. The title of the book, however, was not chosen by Rigg, but by the publisher, for marketing reasons—obviously with success, as it turned out.

Rigg's supervisor was impressed by the effort with which his student collected documents, most of them originating from Hitler's Jewish soldiers themselves. In the meantime, Rigg's collection is located in the German Federal Military Archive.

---

First published in German in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(2) (2002), pp. 223f. Translated by Fabian Eschen.

## The Russians in Berlin in 1945

By Ernst Gauss

**Antony Beevor, *The Fall of Berlin 1945*, Viking Penguin, London/New York, May 2002, 512 pp. hardcover, \$29.95**

With much hullabaloo, the publication of the latest book by the British military historian Anthony Beevor was announced at the beginning of April. For example, "Rapists of the Red Army Exposed" was the headline of a review by Chris Summers, of the British government broadcasting company, on BBC News Online. Two million German women were raped during the advance of the Red Army into Germany toward the end of the Second World War, many of them several times. In Berlin alone, 130,000 women were raped, of whom 1,000 subsequently committed suicide. For the German public, this is hardly new information, nor would it have rated sensational headlines in the media there.

Beevor's book describes the advance of the Red Army into East Germany and the Battle for Berlin primarily from a military viewpoint; thus the cruel swath of looting, extortion, mass murder, forced expulsions, and rape is not Beevor's central focus of interest. Nonetheless, he was shocked by what was turned up in the course of his investigation. Inevitably, anyone familiar with the history of that time must ask himself about the competency of a military historian of the Second World War to whom the events in East and Central Germany at the end of 1944 and beginning of 1945 were not known until the year 2000.

The crux of the book, however, is Beevor's assessment that what happened in Germany at the end of the war is both understandable and excusable. First of all, he takes the view that any man would be susceptible to the temptation to loot

and rape in the extremities of wartime conditions. Second, he deems that, by the end of the war, the Germans had in fact only reaped what they had sown in three and a half years in Russia, for which reason the Soviet military leadership averted its eyes from what was taking place in Germany.

Beevor has thus fallen for the old Stalinist, "anti-fascist" war lies according to which German soldiers in Russia had murdered, looted, extorted, and raped at will. But as a military historian who claims to know the subject about which he writes, Beevor must know that in no sense was this true. Through all the horror of the Eastern campaign, the German soldiers conducted themselves, all in all, in an extraordinarily civilized manner, if one compares them to all other armies in world history. One might compare, for instance, the contribution by Walter Post, "Die Wehrmacht im Zweiten Weltkrieg" (The Wehrmacht in the Second World War), in the anthology edited by Joachim Weber, *Armee im Kreuzfeuer (Army in the Crossfire)*, Universitas, Munich 1997).

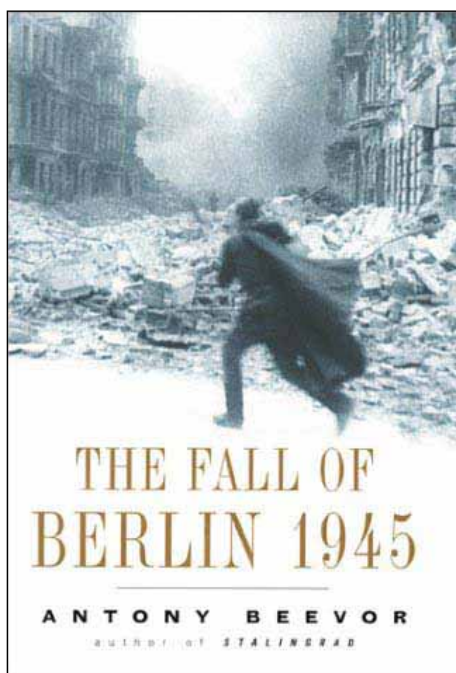
Yet even this degree of eager servility to the prevailing political correctness still wasn't enough for the current Russian ambassador to England, Grigoriy Karasin. The ambassador maintained, in a letter to the editor of the *Daily Telegraph*, that Beevor's statements concerning the horrendous rampages of the Soviet soldiers in Germany are nothing but "lies and allegations" and that moreover, they have been "disproved" by a Russian historian:

*"It is a shame to have to deal at all with this clear case of an insult to my people, who have freed the world from Nazism."*

Yes indeed, let's be grateful to the Devil, who has driven the rascal away! On the other hand, Beevor presents interesting findings that the Soviets not only raped German women during their advance into Germany, but later as well, when hundreds of thousands of women were carried off as slaves and were constantly further abused in imprisonment, many of them in Soviet Army brothels. It also emerges from the Soviet documents examined by Beevor that many of the "repatriated" Russian and Ukrainian women who collaborated with the Germans during German occupation shared the fate of their German sisters in suffering. According to Beevor, the women were commonly degraded by becoming the war booty of Soviet soldiers.

In taking his position vis-a-vis the BBC, Professor Oleg Rzheshesky, director of the Department of Military History at the Russian Academy of Sciences in Moscow, maintained that Beevor's charges were not supported by documents—although he had to admit that he had not read Beevor's book nor examined the sources—and that they were merely based upon the non-credible testimony of German women. Actually, he claimed, the majority of the Soviet soldiers had behaved with good will toward the German population.

The only question is how, despite 55 years of unrelenting propaganda from the peace-loving Soviet Union and the total suppression of critical historiography in Central Germany, its populace can nevertheless still recall the Soviet atrocities so clearly and with such unanimity. Here, a collective memory exists *contrary to* and *despite* the propaganda, not, as in the Holocaust, where a collective memory was created *parallel*



to the propaganda and *by* it. Rzheshesky's thesis of the non-credibility of hundreds of thousands of German witnesses is, therefore, ridiculous.

Professor Richard Overly, historian at King's College in London, believes the Russians have suppressed this episode of their history because they take the view that the retribution which fell upon Germany was only just, in light of the much worse German crimes in Russia. I will not take the trouble to respond to this.

If one compares this book with Joachim Hoffmann's *Stalin's War of Extermination, 1939-1945* (Theses and Dissertations Press, Capshaw, AL, 2002, available for \$40.00 from Castle Hill Publishers), Beevor's book has but one advantage, which is that the Soviet swath of blood through Eastern Europe has been even better documented. Beevor,

however, has not dealt with the context of the conflict, and thus the causes of the outrages by Soviet soldiers at the end of the war. This is also why the book is chiefly discussed outside of Germany, and consequently will be a success: it does not contradict the image of the poor, invaded, raped, plundered, peace-loving Soviet Union, which saved the world from "Nazism." In this regard, Hoffmann's book is, of course, significantly better documented and its argumentation is accordingly more refined. For this reason, the English edition of that book has been given the silent treatment by English-language media.

---

First published in German in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(2) (2002), pp. 223f. Translated by Regina Belsler.

## Van Pelt's Plea against Sound Reasoning

By Robert H. Countess, Ph.D.

**Robert Jan Van Pelt, *The Case for Auschwitz: Evidence from the Irving Trial*, Indiana University Press, Bloomington/Indianapolis, 2002, 464 pp., \$45.-.**

### Introduction

I bought the Van Pelt book because of my interest in the drawings and details of the alleged triple-mesh columns axonometrically reconstructed on pages 194-208, planning to focus on these in order to fabricate an actual model for display and practical analysis. But I found myself reading beyond these vitally important and hypothesized homicidal gassing metal contraptions and I decided to start from the beginning and work through the whole book. I am glad that I did

because reading Van Pelt—the brightest star in the present Holocaust galaxy—has been truly an education and a challenge to Holocaust revisionism. Since this large book appeared only in January, it has not yet been widely read or reported on and I believe that an introduction to it here today may help revisionists ("negationists" in Van Pelt's vocabulary) to avoid certain pitfalls in the future.

*The Case for Auschwitz* is a thoroughly impressive book in its overall appearance, wide margins, typeface, photos, drawings, index, bibliography, binding and, most of all, its content. Van Pelt is to be congratulated for presenting large sections of revisionists' writings even though he, more often than not, distorts them or simply errs in his own theory's fa-

vor. Accusing him of outright dishonesty may even find solid justification. *The Case for Auschwitz* is an overwhelmingly compelling book in terms of its goal and its logical approach.

*The Case for Auschwitz* is a devastating blow to Holocaust revisionism except for one “if” and that “if” is to be placed as follows: *The Case for Auschwitz* is a devastating blow to Holocaust revisionism if the alleged eyewitnesses and their “confessions” are reliable and if they are consistent with the material sciences of physics, chemistry, architecture, hydrology, and construction engineering.

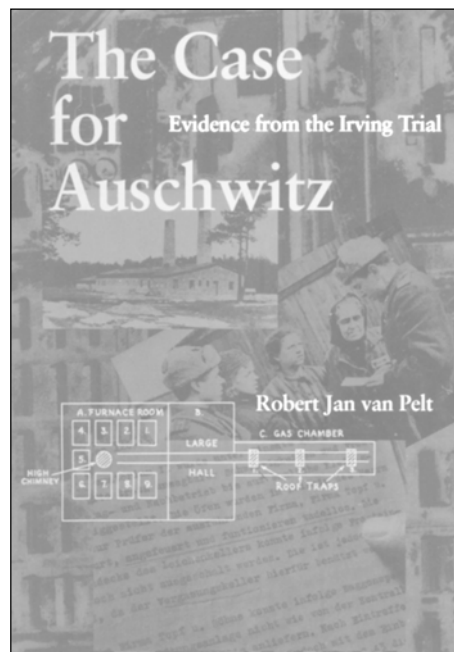
Van Pelt’s book rests on the evidence of alleged eyewitnesses and their “confessions”<sup>1</sup> more than any other type of evidence. And it is Professor Van Pelt’s “will-to-believe” certain alleged eyewitnesses that makes his book so powerfully convincing to the general readership, the media, politicians, judges, attorneys and academicians, and the masses who comprise today’s social consensus. His drawings are excellent and, again, impressively convincing to those listed above. I suggest that in the coming decade that this book will become the most quoted Holocaust volume and most discussions will tend to be settled with an “...as Van Pelt says...” assertion.

### The Game of Tennis

Both players begin with *l’oeuf* (= zero) and move to 15, 30, 40, and then game. Since Van Pelt scores some points in his book against revisionists’ data and arguments, he must be given credit, and contemporary revisionists must “go back to the drawing board,” as it were, and revise any errors they find convincing. But, I believe the final score is somewhere in the neighborhood of Van Pelt 15, the “negationists” game, set, and match.

But he has played the game strongly, worked hard, read widely in the negationists’ writings, even personally met one or two, conducted enormous research and travels on his own, thoughtfully weighed opposition arguments, and applied his best talents to refuting them—all done, of course, for a handsome payment of hundreds of thousands of dollars or Euros and enormous, favorable publicity from the Holocaust industry that created the social consensus and keeps it thriving.

I conclude that Van Pelt shows himself a worthy opponent, ably prepared for most confrontations, as Irving found in the London trial, but Van Pelt will only find himself fully tested if and when he agrees to a full and open debate on his Auschwitz obsession—what I abbreviate as his “A™” (Auschwitz Trade Mark)<sup>2</sup>—with prominent revisionist scholars at a conference or similarly open gathering “with no holds barred.”



### Van Pelt’s Two Hats

No one normally writes a book on the history of Auschwitz or Miami or Paris while wearing his/her hat of *objectivity*, since there is no total detachment from one’s value system possible. *Objectivity* is a goal one may strive for but one that is never reached with complete success by a mere mortal.

Van Pelt may *believe* he writes objectively, but his other hat—a really *all conditioning* hat—is the one that dominates this book. It is, I conclude, his Jewish mystical-religious hat and when he wears it, he displays a radical obsession with Jews and all things Jewish. And I wish that the typeface of *The Case* showed in color, say, yellow, when he wears that hat, and black when he merely supplies data and the words of outside sources. Or, when speaking

in public that he would physically wear a black hat or a yellow hat when moving so effortlessly, as he does, from one stance into the other.

But then, I recommend that I and all of us do that as well.

His second chapter, “Marshalling the Evidence for Auschwitz,” is key to his personal mystical Jewish value system and how it colors the rest of the book. In fact, the early pages of this chapter may well be the most important content of *The Case for Auschwitz* since they demonstrate, I hold, that both his personal and professional life is inextricably bound to his religious philosophy of good and evil, with Auschwitz and “Nazis” as absolute evil and Jews representing ultimate goodness.

Van Pelt makes clear that “evil” (p. 67) looms large in his historiography of the A™ and he states forthrightly that he was troubled to find that “evil” by the “Nazis” did not play its all-encompassing role in architectural studies as he found them in 1985.

### The University of Virginia in Charlottesville

Van Pelt’s honest expression of his mystical feelings can best be expressed in his own words.

*“My journey to Courtroom 73 of the Royal Courts of Justice in London began in 1985 in the dean’s conference room at the architecture school of the University of Virginia. I had recently been appointed as visiting assistant professor of architectural history and attended a faculty meeting to discuss the 750 buildings which students of architectural history were to know for their comprehensive exam. My colleagues offered me an opportunity to review the existing list and suggest alterations. Having earned a doctorate with a dissertation on the cosmic speculations on the Temple of Solomon a year before, I proposed its inclusion in the University of Virginia canon. There were no objections. The Tabernacle of Moses and the Tower of Babel also proved acceptable. Then I nominated Crematorium 2 of Auschwitz. A stunned silence followed, broken*

by one professor's acid observation that obviously I was not serious. When I said I was, another academic suggested that perhaps I ought to consider an alternative career." (p. 66)

One must remember that here was a Dutch Jew—whose doctorate from Leiden in 1984 was in a field known as the *History of Ideas* and not in Architecture—sitting among real architects, and professors of Architecture at that, and he proposes that an ugly but practical, concrete reinforced mortuary-crematorium (and eventual air-raid shelter and poison gas protection shelter, if Samuel Crowell and Carlo Mattogno are correct) be added to a list of significant structures for an examination in the field of Architecture.

One also must remember that I had wrongly assumed—until the London trial—that Van Pelt was a real architect himself, in part due to his being called “Assistant Professor of Architecture in the Architecture School at the University of Waterloo, Canada” (*Anatomy of the Auschwitz Death Camp*, p. xiv) in this 1994 book.<sup>3</sup> My erroneous assumption is hardly of importance, however, but of great importance in assessing the mental furniture of an author is the display of mystic nonsense with which Van Pelt began his Chapter 6 in the latter book, “A Site in Search of a Mission.” (pp. 93-156) He began about the place name Auschwitz:

*“Its name seems unassimilable. Before we have recovered from its harsh and repulsive beginning (Ausch), we are hit by its violent and sarcastic end (witz).”* (p. 93)<sup>4</sup>

How utterly ridiculous! One might as well castigate the Polish name *mutatis mutandis* by separating *Os* from *wiecim* and then hissing after each. Why not play the same game with *Tel* and *A-viv*? Or with my own city of *Hunts* and *ville*? I did not realize in 1994 that I was confronting a mystic so obsessed with a place name locatable on a map with grid coordinates that he could dogmatize that its “...gas chambers changed the whole meaning of architecture.” (*Case*, p. 67) Not only is this mystical, it is absurd to include in a book on serious historiography, although perfectly appropriate for a synagogue talk.

### Van Pelt's “Cabbalistic” Metaphysics of Architecture

Continuing his UVA story wherein he had succeeded in getting three structures for which little, if any, verifiable remains, exist, Van Pelt writes:

*“By the time I arrived in Virginia, I had become increasingly vexed by the way my colleagues circumvented the questions raised by the camps.<sup>[5]</sup> It seemed that most historians were embarrassed by the camps, preferring to consider these places as aberrations that belonged to a footnote. And architectural historians had ignored the camps altogether. Auschwitz did not appear in any architectural history—not even in specialized studies of “Nazi” architecture. This troubled me because I had come to the conclusion that interpretations of history that ignore evil were doomed to remain shallow and ultimately meaningless. I did not underestimate the historiographical pull away from systematic investigations of the presence of evil in history: as I wrote in my dissertation, I had become acutely aware of the extent to which historians possess an artistic bent for building. They assemble isolated*

*pieces of historical evidence into a coherent story that fits the constructive ideology of causal thought. The practice of historiography makes it inevitable that historians are at ease when they describe the constructive efforts of past generations—be it in economics, politics, speculative thought, science, art, or architecture—and that they feel lost when confronted with evil, because in its negative and purely destructive character evil denies meaning and, as such, refuses to fit modes of historical narration that imply in form and causal structure the presence of meaning. Having studied narrations of the destruction of the Temple of Jerusalem, I realized that manifestations of evil in some remoter past can be molded into an aesthetic form. But when the memory of victims has not yet died, this is more difficult.”* (p. 67)

When I read these lines, I realized that Van Pelt's mindset was not fundamentally that of a physical scientist. The science of architecture must be radically physical and materialistic and fixated on exactitude, because the beauty of a structure must follow, not precede, its safety and durability and suitability of purpose.

Van Pelt's obsession with “evil”—and having given no method by which readers or judges or architects might arrive at what Van Pelt's “evil” is—I assessed to be a crippling defect against his ability to research and analyze and write in the modern World characterized by physical proofs and mathematical calculations. Plus, the modern scientific, economic, academic and political world does *not* overtly concern itself with a specialist's religious orientation, especially if he/she inserts a metaphysical principle of “evil” that is clearly beyond the practical observance of, for example, the evil caused by a flood or fire or earthquake or crime.<sup>6</sup>

How bizarre that he labeled Krema II Leichenkeller 1 “the holy of holies” at the London trial, thereby transforming a corpse cellar into a religious sanctuary on the level of the Mosaic Tabernacle wherein the God of all Creation dwelled in some symbolic fashion!

Without trying to sound unkind to Van Pelt, it seems necessary to state that in his case the so-called “Auschwitz disease” is not dysentery but *Holocaustomania*. Robert Jan Van Pelt cannot possibly function normally in a modern, Western university, it seems, without polluting students and colleagues with his own Jewish disease wherein he finds metaphysical “evil” in an ugly but functional reinforced concrete building built to save lives, when he can turn a blind eye to the ugly concrete wall of apartheid that his beloved Prime Minister Sharon is now constructing with U.S. taxpayer dollars to ghettoize the indigenous Palestinians. His sort of mindset may just as well *reify* (= make a thing out of a *non*-thing) the “Loch Ness Monster” and “Big Foot” and UFOs and use one or all to explain destructive weather patterns or the 9-11 catastrophe.

When he asserts that “evil denies meaning,” he also lacks the epistemological self-consciousness of an expert philosopher who would at least inform his readers 1.) what “evil” means; and 2.) what “meaning” is in his own *Weltanschauung*. Van Pelt does neither and, thereby, renders his writing here to be cabbalistic.<sup>7</sup>

Also, if Van Pelt had only studied his fellow Dutchman, Herman Dooyeweerd's *A New Critique of Theoretical Thought*,<sup>8</sup> he would have learned that *meaning* is highly controversial and is a grand *Voraussetzung* (presupposition) of theoretical thought. What we find with Van Pelt is, rather, a feeble effort to smuggle a Jewish mystical understanding of religion into both the fields of history and of architecture.

Van Pelt then writes that

*"My proposal to include Crematorium 2 among the key buildings of architectural history was based on the assumption that its construction was an event of crucial significance in the history of architecture. The gas chambers changed the whole meaning of architecture. [emphasis added] Even before I finished my dissertation, I felt that temple and crematorium were united in a diptych, and that having studied one panel, I should not avert my gaze from the other."* (p. 67)

We can now view Van Pelt's mental framework: the two-tablet (*diptych*) unity here of temple and crematorium comprise his fundamental grasp of architecture as a science and thus the very place name "Auschwitz" now has this evilly hissing sound and the four holes must exist and the four triple-mesh gassing contraptions must have been realities and the eyewitnesses Henryk Tauber and Michael Kula and Shlomo Dragon and Stanislaw Jankowski must have told the truth and the Polish Communist judge Jan Sehn must have been careful and fair and the Pery Broad and Johann Paul Kremer and Rudolf Höß confessions must have been true confessions of reality.

Van Pelt's A™ is not fundamentally a place in Poland or Upper Silesia but rather a metaphysical concept wherein the evil of non-Jews (= anti-Semitism) wars eternally against "the Chosen People," who are good and decent and loving and creative.

And for David Irving to offer major criticisms of the A™ made him "a falsifier of history."<sup>9</sup>

### **The "social consensus" and the Amniotic Fluid**

Here I found Van Pelt to be completely reliable. He writes:

*"When I had accepted the invitation to join the defense team, I had assumed that in the courtroom Irving and I would engage the contentious issue of Auschwitz on a level playing field. I now realized that it would not be so, and that in choosing to challenge a social consensus which he paradoxically shared himself, he would find it almost impossible to convince not only the judge and jury, but even himself, that the evidence could be interpreted substantially differently from the way it had been done. In other words, he would engage the evidence epistemologically divided against himself. The trial was to show that this was indeed the case. Every time that Justice Gray tried to establish Irving's conclusion about the evidence under discussion, he received confused answers that in the end affirmed that the evidence stated that the alleged gas chambers were designed and used as gas chambers. Only by claiming that these had been rooms to gas corpses could Irving reach a compromise between his two sides, the one that had declared war on the consensus and*

*the other that, despite everything, had remained part of it. As I watched him struggle with the paradoxes he had summoned up, I sometimes felt sorry for him. But then, again, I remembered what he had said about Auschwitz—"I don't see any reason to be tasteful about Auschwitz. It's baloney. It's a legend."*<sup>10</sup>

Other than the fact that Irving spoke extravagantly and overly generalized about "Auschwitz"—which is triply a place name and a German camp site and a highly controversial "social consensus" created by people with a vested interest in perpetuating anti-German hatred and a Holocaust industry that has made rich many individuals and organizations and created special academic chairs for mediocre Jewish professors—Irving may have finally become so fed up with the A™ or, as he has styled it, "the Holocaust™," that he allowed himself to vent his spleen—something very human but also something that can come back to haunt one later, this time, in Her Majesty's courtroom.

Van Pelt makes even more clear his accurate assessment of the *social consensus* of the sacred "Six Million" in homicidal gassing chambers when he wrote:

*"[...] because neither judge nor jury would be able to separate themselves from our own culture and judge the inherited account of Auschwitz on the basis of documentary evidence."* (p. 104)

The definite article "the" of "the inherited account" is not an accidental choice of a linguistic particle. Van Pelt's "our own culture" bespeaks the Jewish contextualized nature of WWII history as that of a war that centered on Jews, and of a war against the Jews.<sup>11</sup> Van Pelt and Dawidowicz and Hilberg and Wiesel and Lipstadt and Berenbaum and all the stellar luminaries of the Holo-industry, I submit, really do believe what they write. And they have marvelously succeeded in creating the "social consensus" that influenced Judge Gray at the Irving versus Lipstadt trial of 2000. I have no doubt in my mind that Judge Gray really believed that he ruled correctly and that he was not giving himself over simplistically to a decision that would enhance his future in the British judiciary system.

By analogy, when the Roman Catholic Church insisted that the sun revolved around planet Earth, that Church really believed its best scholars of that era. People, more often than not, act sincerely and base their actions on sincerely held beliefs of their culture at the time.

Hence, as a baby develops within the amniotic fluid of the womb and knows nothing else but that particular physical context, Van Pelt is powerfully accurate about what I call the Holocaustian amniotic fluid of post-WWII social consensus.

Little wonder that most or all newspapers in Canada came out against Ernst Zündel over a twenty-plus-year era: they knew that he was wrong about the Holocaust because they were nurtured in the Holocaustian amniotic fluid.

Thankfully, a baby comes forth at a certain time of final gestation and enters a new and different environment. One aspect of that new environment is Holocaust revisionism and some—not many, as of 2002—change their grasp of WW2 and revise their "social context." I know that I changed mine in the mid to late 1980's. When someone tells me that we re-

visionists are fighting a hopeless cause—"No one will change his/her view" et cetera—I reply that I did, and that many people worldwide have changed.

Galileo's position was considered bizarre in the seventeenth century but today it is de rigueur. It is not the revisionists' primary concern to be part of the mainstream in 2002, but rather to be focused on exactitude in research and writing and speaking—not on politics or propaganda.

### Van Pelt's Alleged Method: Convergence of Evidence

On page 83 of *The Case*, Van Pelt mentions the (notorious, to some of us!) Dr. Michael Shermer, editor of *Skeptic* and co-author of *Denying History: Who Says the Holocaust Never Happened and Why Do They Say It?*<sup>12</sup> This writer, whose field is the history of science, offers "convergence of evidence" as bringing thoughtful readers inescapably to accept the A<sup>TM</sup>, as it were.

For me, I have read both *The Case* and *Denying History* with great care and am not convinced that the evidence converges as these authors conclude. What I see is that there is still an enormous controversy because the problems with what is called "evidence" and its interpretation are not convincingly resolved by experts in the field.

When popular culture states that "All historians agree that the Holocaust happened," we have moved into the realm of polling opinions. In Galileo's day, "All scientists agreed that the sun revolved around the Earth" except for the revisionist Galileo, of course.

Polls do not establish accurate historiography; polls establish what current opinion is, based on projections from a small sample and onto the general public. Useful? Indeed, but not convincing by itself as a method.

Revisionists, of course, agree with "convergence of evidence" as a method, but revisionists also must insist upon divergence of evidence as the other side of the coin. When "confessions" are found to have been tampered with, edited, revised, created, and coerced, such "confessions" diverge from the pursuit of exactitude and must not be accepted, as Van Pelt does, as supporting his A<sup>TM</sup>. I found that what Van Pelt includes in his large book—that is, "confessions"—is quite helpful, but more so, I found that what he omitted by ignorance or nescience or intentionally, to be even more important. This is especially true for Dr. Johann Paul Kremer, the physician who spent September to November 1942.

Van Pelt omitted that Dr. Wilhelm Stäglich placed a footnote revealing that Dr. Kremer had "retracted the statements he made in Poland."<sup>13</sup> Now, if I had not searched the Stäglich book—and Van Pelt is unrelenting in his vicious attack on Judge Stäglich's scholarship—I might have taken the Kremer "confession" as a powerful brick in the A<sup>TM</sup> Holocaust edifice's "convergence of evidence." Kremer may well prove that Van Pelt is grossly dishonest.

### Conclusion

Revisionists may well want to focus some effort on listing Van Pelt's gaffes, a list I have begun. Examples are his naïve (or, dishonest?) acceptance of "confessions" of Rudolf Höß, Pery Broad, Kremer, Filip Mueller, and other notables. An-

other might be his lack of investigation of the psychologist Dr. Gustave Gilbert, who spent much time with Rudolf Höß but did not make written notes until after a session was completed. Still another might be Van Pelt's acceptance of technical data offered by Michael Kula about the triple-mesh metal gassing columns on page 206, with drawings of these on page 208.<sup>14</sup>

These are excellent drawings, but in the absence of *Bauleitung* documents, how can they be taken seriously? Especially if there are not the famous or infamous four holes?

As Faurisson distilled this problem: "No holes? No Holocaust!"; this four-word saying might qualify as its own dip-tych for revisionists!

Another line of pursuit for revisionists is to consider carefully that Van Pelt has scored points here and there against their own works—especially in Irving's. Revisionists must always be willing to admit errors of research data, writing, analysis, and logic.

As I began this lecture by saying that Van Pelt presented a serious challenge to revisionist thinking, let me conclude that he has not convinced me of the accuracy of his A<sup>TM</sup> theory. In fact, let me state this conclusion: If the A<sup>TM</sup> is someday in the future found to be the most convincing interpretation of the experience of some Six Million Jews within German control, this interpretation will not result from the work of a superficial Holocaustian of the Robert Jan Van Pelt ilk.

As a revisionist, I can embrace in good conscience that Germans and Jews, Russians and Arabs, Blacks and Whites, could bring about the deaths of millions of people caught up in the maelstrom of a vast war, but whereas the destruction of Dresden and Hiroshima and Nagasaki and Darmstadt and Hamburg is clear from the convergence of evidence, the purposeful physical extermination of some Six Million Jews (and, as martyrs!) at the hands of Germans—whether SS or Wehrmacht or Einsatzgruppen or civilians—lacks the convergence of evidence that I must require from my historiographic perspective.

### Notes

First published in German in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(3) (2002), pp. 349-354.

<sup>1</sup> I am convinced that one may speak only safely of these by placing quotation marks around *confession* and around *eyewitness*, and this rests upon numerous statements by victims such as Rudolf Höß and Dr. Johann Paul Kremer, who attempted to make retractions afterwards. Van Pelt's possibly dishonesty lies, in part, in his unwillingness to acknowledge fully the influence of torture on them, plus threats and arrests of victims' family members related to obtaining these "confessions."

<sup>2</sup> A<sup>TM</sup> is not to be confused with ATM as in Automatic Teller Machine at a bank.

<sup>3</sup> If I read that Dr. X was assistant professor of physiology in the X University College of Medicine, would I not be justified in assuming that Dr. X was trained in and held the doctorate in physiology?

<sup>4</sup> If the German word "*Auschwitz*" comes from Old High German *au-wiesen*, meaning "meadow," and if both components of the place name show some Slavic influence over the centuries—which is to be expected due to the closeness of Germans and Poles over the era—then there is nothing "unassimilable" or "harsh" or "repulsive" or "violent" or "sarcastic" in this proper noun except for a Jewish mystic's personal hatred for it.

<sup>5</sup> Notice that he does not even employ quotation marks, thus assuming that "the camps" are univocal, that is, of single meaning and understood in his A<sup>TM</sup> framework of Holocaust dogma.

<sup>6</sup> Or even Prime Minister Sharon's "Berlin Wall" in Palestinian territory in June 2002.

<sup>7</sup> Cabbalism was/is a rabbinical gnosticism wherein the esoteric knowledge of a text is restricted to a limited, initiated special group of knowers. In this light, I can well imagine some or most of the University of Virginia professors on that day in that unique meeting wondering if this new assistant professor (the lowest on the ladder of academia!) really belonged in a prestigious school of architecture of the university founded by Thomas Jefferson.

<sup>8</sup> Dooyeweerd was professor of jurisprudence at Amsterdam's Free University during the first half of the twentieth century and is known widely for insisting—out of his own Dutch Calvinistic philosophy—that “Sinn ist das Sein des Seiendes.” [I,73] For Dooyeweerd, “Being” as such is ascribable only to the Triune Christian Deity. All that God created “has” meaning, not “is” meaning, and all meaning derives from the purposeful

and creative work of God. Though most philosophers disagree with Dooyeweerd, at least he made clear his epistemological foundation for readers; Van Pelt has not been forthright in this regard.

<sup>9</sup> *The Case for Auschwitz*, p. 106.

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 104f.

<sup>11</sup> See Lucy Dawidowicz's deliberately chosen title of her *The War against the Jews, 1933-1945*, Holt, Rinehart and Winston, New York, 1975.

<sup>12</sup> With Alex Grobman, University of California Press, Berkeley, 2000. Shermer wrote on the title page of his gift copy to me: “Robert: To the search for a true and meaningful past. I've enjoyed our correspondence,” [signed].

<sup>13</sup> Page 327 n. 166 of the English edition of *The Auschwitz Myth*.

<sup>14</sup> Van Pelt adds about Kula that he was a “Roman Catholic”—as if this might make him more believable.

## World War I Atrocity Propaganda and the Holocaust

By Paul Grubach

Dr. Robert Jan Van Pelt, a professor of architecture at the University of Waterloo (Canada), has undoubtedly written one of the most important anti-Holocaust revisionist tomes ever penned.<sup>1</sup> Revisionist academic Samuel Crowell put his finger on the reasons as to why *The Case for Auschwitz: Evidence from the Irving Trial* is such an important work:<sup>2</sup>

*“First, because this book represents the first serious attempt to discuss the arguments of revisionists, and second, because the arguments, while incomplete, are thorough, handled with civility, and touch upon the writings of a number of [revisionist] authors, including Faurisson, Butz, Stäglich, Rudolf, and even [Crowell]. Indeed, the only significant omission is Carlo Mattogno, perhaps due to the fact that Mattogno’s authoritative analyses of crematoria operation are not easily refuted.”*

During the First World War, false anti-German atrocity propaganda was utilized by the Allied leaders to attain their goals, such as bolstering the morale of the rank and file of the Allied nations.<sup>3</sup>

One of the most notorious pieces of anti-German propaganda was the gruesome account of the “corpse exploitation establishment” operated behind the front lines by a German company. The “evil Germans” supposedly used the corpses of their own fallen soldiers for the manufacture of soap. Professor Van Pelt notes that the author of this piece of lying propaganda was the Chief of Intelligence of the British Army, Brigadier General J.V. Char-

teris. Apparently, one of his aims was to turn the Chinese, who revere the dead, against the Germans.<sup>4</sup>

### U.S. Army Recruitment Poster from World War I

A detailed account of the “corpse exploitation establishment” appeared in the respected British newspaper *The Times* on April 17, 1917. According to the story, trains full of corpses arrived at a large factory. The bodies were attached to hooks connected to an endless chain. The article states:<sup>4</sup>

*“The bodies are transported on this endless chain into a long, narrow compartment, where they pass through a bath which disinfects them. They then go through a drying chamber, and finally are automatically carried into a digester or great cauldron, in which they are dropped by an apparatus which detaches them from the chain. In the digester they remain from six to eight hours, and are treated by steam, which breaks them up while they are slowly stirred by the machinery.”*

The article continues:

*“From this treatment result several products. The fats are broken up into stearin, a form of tallow, and oils, which require to be redistilled before they can be used. The process of distillation is carried out by boiling the oil with carbonate of soda, and some of the by-products resulting from this are used by German soap makers. The oil distillery and refinery lie in the south-eastern corner of the works. The refined oil is sent*



Recruitment poster of the U.S. Army during World War I



out in small casks like those used for petroleum, and is of yellowish brown color.”

The reader should note the meticulous detail! Dr. Van Pelt emphasizes:<sup>4</sup>

“It was a lie, but it was plausible, and it was not possible to completely refute it during the [First World War].”

In the years following the First World War, there was an exposé of these false atrocity stories, and many of these legends were put to rest. Van Pelt claims:<sup>4</sup>

“The overall effect of the relentless exposure of the atrocity stories was a general resentment of the public against those who had roused its passion, inflamed its indignation, exploited its patriotism, and desecrated its highest ideals by government-initiated concealment, subterfuge, fraud, falsehood, and trickery.”

One of Van Pelt’s key arguments in the first part of the book is as follows:<sup>3</sup>

“There is no historical justification for judging and dismissing the accounts of German atrocities during the Second World War within the context of the atrocity propaganda of the First World War: the attitude of the public of 1939-1945 was radically different from that of twenty-five years earlier, and it is clear that any attempt to generate the kind of propaganda symbolized by the notorious [corpse exploitation establishment] would have merely generated mockery.”

The intellectual from the University of Waterloo then concludes:<sup>5</sup>

“The long-term effect of stories that told [...] of human bodies used as raw material for the production of soap was that few were prepared to be fooled once again by such a fabrication.”

In summary, Van Pelt is arguing that people of the Western democracies were very much aware of how they were fooled by anti-German propaganda in WWI, and thus, would not be fooled by it again. Ergo, the Allied powers of WWII had nothing to gain and everything to lose by attempting to use false atrocity stories to attain their ends. Any atrocity claims made by the Allies had to be based upon facts, because the masses retained a skeptical outlook.

In order to bolster his argument, Van Pelt quotes respected sources from the era of the Second World War that were indeed skeptical of “Nazi” atrocity stories precisely for these reasons.<sup>6</sup>

Professor Van Pelt’s whole viewpoint is undermined by the empirical facts. The Soviets, Zionists, Americans and British in the Second World War did use false propaganda claims to further their ends. In fact, some of the Allied atrocity propaganda from the First World War found its mirror image in anti-German atrocity propaganda promoted by Zionist groups and other Allied sources in the Second World War.

In the August 21, 1944 issue of *Time*, there was the “first eyewitness description” of the “Nazi extermination camp” at Majdanek concentration camp in Poland. Professor Van Pelt claims that in spite of the climate of skepticism that surrounded these “Hitler gas chamber” stories, the editors of *Time* believed that they were indeed true. Here is his description of the article:<sup>7</sup>

“The editors of *Time* showed less hesitance to accept facts for what they were. On August 21, they had provided a first hand account of the ‘gigantic murder plant,’ [at Majdanek] largely taken from notes by Russian war correspondent Roman Karmen.”

Dr. Van Pelt committed a sin of omission. He failed to mention the obvious false statements in the article, perhaps knowing full well that to inform the reader of the contents of the entire article would have undermined his entire argument. Let us examine *Time*’s and Karmen’s claims. The article reads:

“In the center of the camp stands a huge stone building with a factory chimney—the world’s biggest crematorium. The Germans attempted to burn it but most of it still stands—a grim monument to the Third Reich.

Groups of 100 people would be brought here to be burned almost alive. They already had been stripped and then chlorinated in special gas chambers adjoining. The gas chambers contained some 250 persons at one time. They were closely packed...so that after they suffocated they remained standing...The human cargoes were dumped into a roaring furnace heated to 1,500 [degrees] Centigrade [...].” (emphasis added)

Further on, “eyewitness” Karmen claims:<sup>8</sup>

“It is difficult to believe it myself but my eyes cannot deceive me. I see the human bones, lime barrels, chlorine pipes and furnace machinery [...].” (emphasis added)

The Holocaust lobby now claims that Majdanek inmates were murdered with Zyklon B/hydrogen cyanide and carbon monoxide, so the allegation that chlorine gas was the killing agent is false.<sup>9</sup> Although the Majdanek camp did have a crematorium, it only had five incineration muffles with a maximum capacity of 100 corpses per day, which is anything else but “the world’s biggest crematorium.”<sup>10</sup>

But even more important, consider *Time*’s and Karmen’s description of how the corpses of the “murdered ones” were put to use:<sup>8</sup>

“The victims’ charred bones and ashes were moved into an adjoining department where an incredible process went on. These human bones were mechanically pulverized, placed inside large tin cans and shipped back to Germany for fertilizing the fields.”

This is false propaganda, as there is not one iota of credible evidence to support it. To be sure, the Holocaust lobby no longer claims that there was a “fertilizer factory/corpse exploitation establishment” at Majdanek, where human remains were processed, canned, and then sent back to Germany to be used as fertilizer. Yet, the reader should note how strikingly similar the story is to the aforementioned “corpse exploitation establishment” story of the First World War that Van Pelt admits to be a lie. In the WWI version the corpses were utilized to make soap; the WWII version claims the bodies were used for fertilizer.

Here we have an excellent example of Soviet-Communist propaganda that was simply accepted as fact and repeated by a very respected American news source. As I noted, Professor Van Pelt failed to mention the false claim about the fertilizer factory at Majdanek, probably because it would have undermined his line of argumentation.

At the risk of sounding redundant, let us repeat and examine Professor Van Pelt's claims:<sup>5</sup>

*"the long-term effect of stories [from the First World War] that told [...] of human bodies used as raw material for the production of soap was that few were prepared to be fooled once again by such a fabrication."*

An important study by revisionist historian Mark Weber proves this claim false.<sup>11</sup> He noted that the wartime rumor that the Germans were manufacturing soap from the corpses of slaughtered Jews was "spread so widely in 1941 and 1942 that by late 1942 German authorities in Poland and Slovakia were expressing official concern about their impact."<sup>12</sup>

Weber further pointed out that although a similar charge during the First World War that the Germans manufactured soap from corpses was exposed as a hoax, "it was nevertheless revived and widely believed during the Second. More important, this accusation was 'proven' at the main Nuremberg trial of 1945-1946, and has been authoritatively endorsed by numerous historians in the decades since."<sup>13</sup>

Weber went on to list Allied and Zionist sources that were promoting the propaganda lie during the Second World War that the Germans were manufacturing soap from the bodies of their victims.

A secret U.S. Army military intelligence report quoted a Polish source that alleged the Germans were operating a "human soap factory" in 1941 in Turek, Poland.<sup>14</sup>

In November of 1942 Rabbi Stephen S. Wise, wartime head of both the World Jewish Congress and the American Jewish Congress, publicly asserted that the Germans were processing Jewish corpses into soap, fats and fertilizer.<sup>15</sup>

In late 1942, an American Jewish Congress publication, *Congress Weekly*, claimed the "Nazis" had two special factories in Germany that processed soap, glue and train oil from the bodies of Jewish deportees from France and Holland.<sup>16</sup>

The highly respected and influential American publication *New Republic* reported in 1943 that the Germans were "using the bodies of their Jewish victims to make soap and fertilizer in a factory at Siedlce."<sup>17</sup>

Finally, the myth the Germans manufactured soap from the bodies of their victims was "authoritatively proven" at the main Nuremberg Trial of 1945-1946. In their final judgment, the Nuremberg Tribunal stated:<sup>18</sup>

*"attempts were made to utilize fat from the bodies of the victims in the commercial manufacture of soap."*

Once again, we quote the key claim of Dr. Van Pelt:<sup>3</sup>

*"There is no historical justification for judging and dismissing the accounts of German atrocities during the Second World War within the context of the atrocity propaganda of the First World War: the attitude of the public of 1939-1945 was radically different from that of twenty-five years earlier, and it is clear that any attempt to generate the kind of propaganda symbolized by the notorious [corpse exploitation establishment] would have merely generated mockery."*

In view of the evidence presented in this article alone (there is more to come), Van Pelt's conclusion must be rejected. The atrocity propaganda of the First World War served as a model for the Allied and Zionist atrocity propaganda of the

Second World War, and the attitude of the public was such that people were conditioned to accept these wartime propaganda lies as "the truth."

It is already wrong to claim that the masses in England, France, the USA, and other Western nations had been informed about the falsehood of WWI atrocity stories in general during the time between both wars. Such an educational campaign might have existed in Germany which had a vested interest in it. The discussion about the falsehood of these WWI atrocities stories in the western Allied nations, however, was restricted to narrowly defined academic circles, and even there, the revelations about "our own" lies were not a popular topic. Important evidence in favor of this interpretation is the fact that between the wars hardly any publication appeared in the Allied nations addressing this topic. A rare example is the frequently quoted book *Falsehood in Wartime* by A. Ponsonby,<sup>19</sup> which, however, appeared only in small print runs published by a small publisher, and according to my knowledge was never a matter of discussion in the mass media.

The masses have a very short memory, and the lone voices that did reject these atrocity stories of the Second World War because they were very similar to the false atrocities stories of the First World War were few, and had little influence.

In the years following WWII, dignitaries, journalists, writers, and influential groups promoted the canard that the Germans manufactured soap from the bodies of their victims.<sup>20</sup> This propaganda did not generate mockery, as Van Pelt would have us believe. Quite the contrary—as historian Weber points out:<sup>21</sup>

*"The 'human soap' story demonstrates anew the tremendous impact that a wartime rumor, no matter how fantastic, can have once it has taken hold, particularly when it is disseminated as a propaganda lie by influential individuals and powerful organizations."*

It was only around the 1980s that the Holocaust lobby finally admitted that the Second World War "Jews-into-soap" story was a myth.<sup>22</sup>

The "mass electrocution" myth further illustrates the fact that Allied and Zionist sources did use wartime propaganda lies in the Second World War to attain their ends.

Belzec was a "Nazi" concentration camp located in Eastern Poland. Holocaust historian Raul Hilberg claimed that the first killing agent used there was either bottled carbon monoxide or hydrogen cyanide. Later, the camp was equipped with Diesel motors, and the Jews were murdered in "gas chambers" that utilized the Diesel exhaust.<sup>23</sup> Although *The Case for Auschwitz* deals mainly with Auschwitz concentration camp, Van Pelt has some very important things to say about Belzec. He writes:<sup>3</sup>

*"Fighting Hitler under the inspired leadership of men such as Churchill and Roosevelt, the Allies had no need for atrocity propaganda... Churchill was able to mobilize a nation without the need to engage in the very kind of all-too-easily dismissible atrocity propaganda that the weak leaders of the First World War found necessary to employ to bolster morale."*

This is false. The Allies did in fact use false, unsubstantiated atrocity stories to attain their ends. At the beginning of 1944, the Allied governments even felt obligated to no longer conceal their secret activities. They requested the churches and media of their countries to publicly assist their campaign to spread anti-German atrocity propaganda in order to distract international attention from the atrocities which they expected to be committed by the Red Army as soon as it invaded eastern and central Europe. By so doing, they even referred to the lies of WWI! The British Ministry of Information, for example, sent a circular to the British Clergy and the BBC on Feb. 29, 1944, stating:<sup>24</sup>

*"We know how the Red Army behaved in Poland in 1920 and in Finland, Estonia, Latvia, Galicia and Bessarabia only recently.*

*We must, therefore, take into account how the Red Army will certainly behave when it overruns Central Europe. [...]*

*Experience has shown that the best distraction is atrocity propaganda directed against the enemy. Unfortunately the public is no longer so susceptible as in the days of the 'Corpse Factory,' and the 'Mutilated Belgian Babies,' and the 'Crucified Canadians.'*

*Your cooperation is therefore earnestly sought to distract public attention from the doings of the Red Army by your wholehearted support of various charges against the Germans and Japanese which have been and will be put into circulation by the Ministry."*

Can it be expressed more clearly? By referring to the propaganda of WWI, which finally was refuted, one can of course claim that the British Ministry of Information intended to say between the lines that this time, only "true" propaganda is to be spread.<sup>25</sup> But if the Ministry wanted to say this, why didn't they write it? After all, this letter went to the clergy, who certainly didn't want to hear anything more eagerly than their government being truthful. But this letter does not contain the word truth. To the contrary: The Ministry regrets(!) that nowadays people cannot be deceived so easily anymore: "Unfortunately[!!!] the public is no longer so susceptible [...]" Hence, one obviously has to read between the lines: "Today one must lie better, louder, more brazenly."

However, if one considers how successful the propaganda of World War II was in making most people believe in atrocity stories like the "corpse factory" in Majdanek or "soap made of Jewish fat," and to sell these stories as the truth right into the late 1980s, then it can easily be recognized that the claim made by the British Ministry of Information that in 1944 the masses were less susceptible for such nonsense than during WWI is simply false.

The letter even admits that the accusations "*have been and will be put into circulation by the Ministry,*" (emphasis added) which means: they have their origin there, not in accounts of witnesses or organizations in the theatre of war. Furthermore, it admits that these propaganda accusations against Germany "have been" put into circulation already for quite a while, *i.e.*, atrocity propaganda didn't start in early 1944. Finally, a huge amount of naïveté is required to believe that allied propaganda did not resort to lies to further their

own goals during this most horrifying and threatening war ever experienced by the Allied powers.

But now back to Belzec. In December of 1942, the Inter-Allied Information Committee (an agency of the governments of Australia, Belgium, Canada, China, Czechoslovakia, Great Britain, Greece, India, Luxembourg, the Netherlands, New Zealand, Norway, the Philippines, Poland, South Africa, Yugoslavia, the Danish Legation in America, the French National Committee, and the United States) issued a statement in London in regard to the alleged fate of Jews in German-held Europe. It was then distributed in New York through the local office of the United Nations Information Committee. The document concluded:<sup>26</sup>

*"The means employed in deporting from the ghetto all those who survive murders and shooting in the street exceeds all imagination. In particular, children, old people and those too weak for work are murdered. Actual data concerning the fate of the deportees is not at hand, but the news is available—irrefutable news—that places of execution have been organized at Chelmo and Belzec, where those who survive shootings are murdered en masse by means of electrocution and gas."*

Here, these Allied sources claimed they had irrefutable evidence that Jews were murdered en masse by electrocution at Belzec. We now know that this is false, as the "mass-electrocution-of-Jews-story" is admitted by Van Pelt and the Holocaust lobby to be a myth.<sup>27</sup>

The Belzec electrocution myth further illustrates another flaw in Van Pelt's methodology and beliefs. As he points out, the *Polish Fortnightly Review*, an English-language newspaper published by the Polish government in exile during WWII, published a July 10, 1942 description of the alleged "electrocution devices" whereby Jews "were murdered en masse at Belzec." It stated:<sup>28</sup>

*"[T]he men go to a barracks on the right, the women to a barracks situated on the left, where they strip, ostensibly in readiness for a bath. After they have undressed both groups go to a third barracks where there is an electrified plate, where the executions are carried out."*

In an attempt to get the reader to believe that these were just "honest errors" and not deliberate propaganda lies, Van Pelt resorts to this rationalization:<sup>28</sup>

*"In the summer of 1942, when the report was written, no one who was part of the execution team had left Belzec alive, and thus the description of the method of killing was based largely on rumor."*

In other words, since no one escaped these alleged mass killings alive to precisely describe the technology of mass murder, false rumors developed as to the exact method of killing. Nevertheless, the central event—the mass killings of Jews—definitely took place.

According to a report that was printed in the February 12, 1944, issue of the *New York Times*, "eyewitnesses did in fact" escape these mass executions, and they lived to "precisely describe" the "actual method of mass murder".<sup>29</sup>

*"A young Polish Jew who escaped from a mass execution in Poland [...] repeated a story [told to him by escapees who allegedly saw the electrocution machinery at Bel-*

zec...] Jews were forced naked onto a metal platform operated as a hydraulic elevator which lowered them into a huge vat filled with water. They were electrocuted by current through the water.”

Dr. Van Pelt can't rationalize this one away. Contrary to what he claims, here we have “eyewitnesses” who “actually escaped a mass electrocution” and lived to tell the story to another escapee of an alleged atrocity, who then in turn gave a “precise description” of the electrocution machinery at Belzec to the world. This shows that pro-Allied media sources in the US were in fact promoting invented atrocity lies.

And there is more. Consider this “eyewitness” account of the “electrocution chambers” at Belzec, which was published in the “authoritative” *The Black Book: The Nazi Crimes against the Jewish People*:<sup>30</sup>

*“The Belzec camp is built underground. It is an electric crematorium. There are two halls in the underground buildings. People were taken out of the railway cars into the first hall. Then they were led naked into the second hall. Here the floor resembled an enormous plate. When the crowd of men stood on it, the floor sank deep into a pool of water. The moment the men sank up to their necks, a powerful electric current of millions of volts was passed through, killing them all at once. The floor then rose again, and a second electric current was passed through the bodies, burning them until nothing was left of the victims save a few ashes.”*

Keep in mind this is based upon an “eyewitness” (or “eyewitnesses”) who “saw these mass electrocutions with his (their) own two eyes.”

In order to “prove” the existence of “gas chambers,” throughout the entire book Van Pelt relies upon a convergence of evidence—an ensemble of evidence that supposedly points to only one conclusion, namely, that the gas chambers existed. Here, I have shown a convergence of evidence—one United Nations report and several eyewitness accounts—that points to the false conclusion that murders by electrocution occurred at Belzec.

Dr. Van Pelt admits that the evidence to “prove” that Jews were murdered en masse with Diesel exhaust at Belzec is sparse at best:<sup>31</sup>

*“The evidence [that Jews were murdered in gas chambers at Belzec] is much less abundant [than the evidence that Jews were murdered in gas chambers at Auschwitz]. There are few eyewitnesses, no confession that can compare to that given by [Auschwitz commandant Rudolf] Höß, no significant remains, and few archival sources.”*

Since the “evidence” used to prove that Jews were murdered en masse by electrocution devices at Belzec is not really qualitatively different from the “evidence” used to “prove” that Jews were murdered in gas chambers at Belzec, and since the “evidence” for mass murder by electrocution leads to a false conclusion, isn't it also possible that the “evidence” for mass killings of Jews in gas chambers at Belzec also leads to a false conclusion?

Holocaust historian Van Pelt claims the “evidence” leads one to the “moral certainty” that Jews were murdered en masse in gas chambers at Belzec.<sup>31</sup> In light of what was pointed out in this essay, this is a false conclusion.

Finally, in his book I can find no reference to the fact that “Nazi” atrocity stories (real and mythical) were used by Zionists during WWII to gain sympathy for the cause of creating a Jewish state in Palestine. At a mass rally in Madison Square Garden in March 1943, the Zionist activist and first president of Israel, Chaim Weizmann, was quoted as saying:<sup>32</sup>

*“Two million Jews have already been exterminated. [...] The democracies have a clear duty before them. [...] Let them negotiate with Germany through the neutral countries concerning the possible release of the Jews in the occupied countries... Let the gates of Palestine be opened to all who can reach the shores of the Jewish homeland [...]”*

As Van Pelt probably realizes but would not dare publicly admit, the seeds of the current Middle East crisis were nourished by the endless repetition of these “Nazi” atrocity stories by pro-Zionist groups and governments. There is a lesson in all of this that we should consider. With war once again looming upon the horizon in the Middle East, we are justified in looking with skepticism upon the “official reasons” given by the US government and mass media that are used to “justify” the current proposed war plans.

## Notes

First published in German in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(3) (2002), pp. 349-354; a copy of this article was sent by the author to Dr. Van Pelt prior to its publication in *The Revisionist*.

<sup>1</sup> Robert Jan Van Pelt, *The Case For Auschwitz: Evidence From The Irving Trial*, Indiana University Press, 2002.

<sup>2</sup> Online: <http://www.codoh.org/revisionist/review/tr12vanpelt.html>

<sup>3</sup> Robert Jan Van Pelt, p. 134.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 130.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 131.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 132f.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 156.

<sup>8</sup> *Time*, August 21, 1944, p. 36. I am indebted to my good friend Terry Dumke for bringing this issue of *Time* to my attention.

<sup>9</sup> Robert Jan Van Pelt, p. 157.

<sup>10</sup> Cf. Jürgen Graf, Carlo Mattogno, *KL Majdanek. Eine historische und technische Studie*, Castle Hill Publishers, Hastings 1998, pp. 95-118; soon available in English by Theses and Dissertations Press.

<sup>11</sup> Mark Weber, “Jewish Soap,” *The Journal of Historical Review*, Summer 1991, pp. 217-227. Online: [www.ihr.org/jhr/v11/v11p217\\_Weber.html](http://www.ihr.org/jhr/v11/v11p217_Weber.html)

<sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 217; Raul Hilberg, *The Destruction of the European Jews* (New York: 1985), pp. 966-967; Walter Laquer, *The Terrible Secret* (Boston: 1980), pp. 54, 82, 145, 219; U.S. State Department document 740.001.16 (from 1943), facsimile in *Encyclopedia Judaica* (New York and Jerusalem: 1971), vol. 13, pp. 759-760; Bernard Wasserstein, *Britain and the Jews of Europe* (London: 1979), p. 169.

<sup>13</sup> Weber, *op. cit.* (note 11), p. 217. Online: [http://www.ihr.org/jhr/v11/v11p217\\_Weber.html](http://www.ihr.org/jhr/v11/v11p217_Weber.html)

<sup>14</sup> Secret U.S. Army military intelligence report No. 50, April 27, 1945. National Archives, National Records Center (Suitland, Maryland), RG 153 (JAG Army), Box 497, Files 19-22, Books I and II, Entry 143.

<sup>15</sup> “Wise Says Hitler Had Ordered 4,000, 000 Million Jews Slain in 1942,” *New York Herald-Tribune* (Associated Press), Nov. 25, 1942, pp. 1, 5; “2 Million Jews Slain by Nazis, Dr. Wise Avers,” *Chicago Daily Tribune*, Nov. 25, 1942.; *New York Times*, Nov. 26, 1942, p. 16.; See also: Raul Hilberg, *The Destruction of the European Jews* (1985), p. 1118.

<sup>16</sup> “The Spirit Will Triumph” (editorial), and “Corpses for Hitler,” p.11, *Congress Weekly* (New York: American Jewish Congress), Dec. 4, 1942.

<sup>17</sup> *New Republic*, Jan. 18, 1943, p. 65.

<sup>18</sup> International Military Tribunal, *Trial of the Major War Criminals before the International Military Tribunal* (IMT “blue series,” Nuremberg: 1947-1949, vol. 1, p. 252. Facsimile reprint in: Carlos Porter, *Made in*

Russia: *The Holocaust* (Historical Review Press, 1988), p. 159.

<sup>19</sup> London/New York 1928; newer in German: *Absichtliche Lügen in Kriegszeiten*, Buchkreis für Gesinnung und Aufbau, Seeheim 1967.

<sup>20</sup> For the list of such people and groups with appropriate documentation, see Weber, pp. 219-222.

<sup>21</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 223.

<sup>22</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 222f.

<sup>23</sup> Raul Hilberg, *The Destruction of the European Jews*: Student Edition Holmes and Meier, 1985, p. 229.

<sup>24</sup> Extract from Edward J. Rozek, *Allied Wartime Diplomacy*, introduced into the first and second Zündel trials, quoted acc. to B. Kulaszka (ed.),

*Did Six Million Really Die?*, Samisdat Publishers, Toronto 1992, p. 155.

<sup>25</sup> <http://www.zundelsite.org/english/dsmrd/dsmrd12browning>.

<sup>26</sup> So Ch. Browning during the second Zündel trial, *ibidem*.

<sup>27</sup> *The New York Times*, December 20, 1942, p. 23.

<sup>28</sup> Robert Jan Van Pelt, p. 145.

<sup>29</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 145.

<sup>30</sup> *The New York Times*, February 12, 1944, p.6.

<sup>31</sup> *The Black Book: The Nazi Crimes Against The Jewish People*, Nexus Press, 1974, p. 313. This edition is a reprint of the 1946 edition.

<sup>32</sup> Robert Jan Van Pelt, p. 5.

*The New York Times*, March 2, 1943, pp. 1, 4.

## Why the USA Wages War in the Gulf Region

By Robert H. Countess, Ph.D.

**Stephen Pelletiere, *Iraq and the International Oil System: Why America Went to War in the Gulf*, Praeger, Westport, CN, 2001, 241 pp. Hardcover, \$72.95.**

Stephen Pelletiere is Professor of National Security Affairs at the U.S. Army War College in Carlisle, PA, and is a specialist in Middle East politics, having worked also for the U.S. CIA some fifteen years prior. He took the Ph.D. from University of California, Berkeley. In December 2001, I saw him on the Fox News “O’Reilly Factor” TV show and immediately observed that his interpretation was quite at variance from popular media and U.S. government spin on Iraq and its President Saddam Hussein. On May 11, 2002, I visited him in his home and discussed briefly his views, then obtained the present book.

### The Pelletiere Thesis

In spite of a quite tedious—but necessary—series of five chapters that the reader must work through, Professor Pelletiere finally arrives at Chapter Six, “Iran-Contra and Iraq: The Media Campaign that Took America to War.”

His thesis is that U.S. Middle East policy fixes itself on Saudi Arabia as the chief supplier of oil and that the U.S. promotes, therefore, a “dual containment” strategy to restrict Iran and Iraq from replacing Saudi Arabia. Both Iran and Iraq have sufficient oil reserves to challenge Saudi leadership. U.S. policy sees such a successful challenge to be destabilizing in the region and thus works to support Saudi Arabia and its royal family, in spite of the Saudi type of social and political totalitarian control of its relatively small population (about seventeen million).

The obvious Saudi non-promotion of “democratic principles” does not appear to concern American presidents, Congress, academia, or media, whereas often one hears that Iran and Iraq are repressive regimes—with “regime” as a clear nega-

tive and, as such, not applied to the Saudi king and his thousands of family sub-rulers and government administrators.

The United States, Pelletiere writes on page 223, refuses

*“to confess to the public that it is acting for purely economic motives—Iraq and Iran must be held down if the oil price is to remain low. [...] As a consequence, Washington is forced to keep up this monumental deception—that the present status, which it is expending enormous resources to perpetuate, is actually movement toward a better condition for all the peoples of the region, including—and especially—those who are being most oppressed by America’s policy, the Iraqis and Iranians.”*

Then he adds that American policy is to repress not only Iran and Iraq—high product consumption countries, whereas

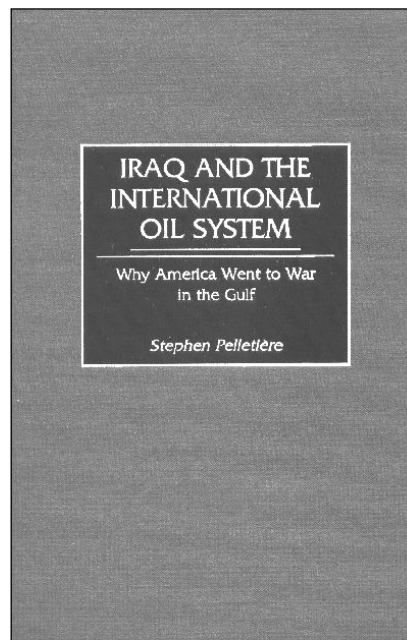
Saudi Arabia is a low product consumption country due to its small population—but also to repress Algeria, Venezuela, Indonesia, and Nigeria—all being high product consumption countries.

The Pelletiere thesis is one of analyzing systems, and he concludes with this vital observation:

*“The international oil system started out as a setup to control a commodity, oil. Over the years and most recently under the direction of the United States, that has metamorphosed into a form of people control. [...] Americans evidently think that they can make Dual Containment work over time. The author [Pelletiere] doesn’t believe it for a minute.”* (p. 224)

A final page focuses on “The African Pipeline Scheme” and describes briefly the 2001 American support for “a \$3.7 billion oil pipeline to run from the Kingdom of Chad to the Cameroons in Africa.”

This Clinton-supported scheme would enable the World Bank to finance a 659-mile pipeline from landlocked central African Chad and allow Exxon-Mobil and Chevron to develop these fields and guarantee these producers a cheap but



dependable means of bringing oil out to the western shore of Africa to waiting tankers.

*“Washington wants to escrow the profits from the oil development that would accrue to the African regimes, stipulating how the money could be spent, supposedly just on worthwhile projects. [...] But a government that does not have control over revenue derived from its chief natural resource is a protectorate!”* (p. 224)

Thus:

*“[W]hat better way for Washington to get its way than this—shift the center of gravity of the oil industry yet one more time, away from the troublesome Persian Gulf to presumably stable Central Africa?”*

Since the governments of Central Africa are about as developed as Middle Eastern lands during the 1930s—when the last major oil center of gravity shift occurred—the Central African governments ought to be easy to manipulate, and this possible shift deserves careful scrutiny by outside observers.

### No Simplistic Conspiracy Theory

Pelletiere does not offer simplistic views of a worldwide conspiracy by “Big Oil” or Israel, but he does offer data that demonstrate an Israeli eagerness to support the repression of Iran and Iraq.

For example, after the conclusion of the Iran-Iraq war, which drained both countries of billions of dollars needed for internal development, Iraq President Saddam Hussein sought to reschedule payments on money borrowed to finance the war—a war that the Kuwaitis refused to fight with him against a common Iranian enemy, but a war whose loss could have had drastic negative consequences for Kuwait. He writes:

*“The scare headlines [in U.S. media], the critical op-ed pieces, the television pundits castigating Iraq’s alleged irresponsibility—all this had the effect of intimidating the banks; in other words, no rescheduling. At this point Saddam, who was under tremendous pressure throughout this whole period, began to show signs of real paranoia.”* (p. 215)

This paranoia must be placed in the context of Israel’s announcement that it would launch a spy satellite that would enable Israel to acquire important, timely intelligence data, with Israeli officials hinting that “Israel would go after Iraq’s weapons plants. In other words, a repeat of Osirik.” Saddam announced that if Israel were to attack Iraq again, he would incinerate half of Israel (p. 229, note 79).

Pelletiere emphasizes that Saddam was perhaps justifiably paranoid after all, since the Reagan administration had agreed to a nine-point program which included that the Iraqi President needed to be overthrown (p. 215). And in response to the American insistence that Saddam was himself responsible for enormous mortality to his own people after the Gulf War, Pelletiere writes:

*“The claim of America’s leaders that this is Saddam’s fault is obscene.”* (p. 223)

President Clinton’s Secretary of State, the Jewess Madeleine Albright, answered a question about Iraqi mortality during the U.S. imposed embargo with the declaration that 500,000

infant deaths were a statistic that Americans were willing to accept (p. 231, note 103).

### The Homicidal Gassing Story

Of particular interest was the Professor’s analysis of the claim by the U.S. government that Saddam Hussein had used poison gas “on his own people.” I made a point in my personal visit to ask about this and he said that at the War College in the early 1990s, a special conference was held to study this claim. Various specialists and some Iraqis were present. The conclusion was that Iraq had indeed used mustard gas on the mass waves of Iranian soldiers, with limited success. On the other hand, the claim of wholesale gassing of Iraqis and Kurds was without substance. The conclusion was that Iraq would not resort to poison gas on its own people unless the government regarded it as the only final resort to defense against attack—a position that would fairly describe most governments’ contingency plans for government survival. Pelletiere writes:

*“The first known and fairly well credited use of gas by the Iraqis was at Haj Umran in 1983. There, the Iranians, with the cooperation of the Barzani Kurds, had invaded the northern Kurdish territories, and the Iraqis, to dislodge them, used gas. The attempt was a fiasco, as the Iraqis dropped the gas on peaks held by the Kurds and the Iranians, only to have it drift down into the valleys, where the Iraqi forces were set up, which disoriented Iraq’s attack.”* (p. 226, note 27)

Then, in the next note:

*“Iraq acknowledged use of gas on July 2, 1988, at which time Aziz said that every nation has the right to choose the means for its defense. ‘Iraq Acknowledges Its Use of Gas, but Says Iran Introduced It in War,’ New York Times (July 1, 1998).”* (dates as given by Pelletiere)

In U.S. media and on radio shows such as Rush Limbaugh, Sean Hannity, and Fox News TV’s *The O’Reilly Factor*,” where I first saw Pelletiere, the usual story is that Saddam Hussein gassed “a hundred thousand of his own people.” On the other hand, when reporters were taken to Halabja, an Iraqi Kurdish city near Baghdad, in March of 1988, where both Iran and Iraq had used gas, the Iranians showed them scores, at most, hundreds, dead, but later, the claims rose toward the 10,000 level—a figure that Pelletiere regards as impossible (p. 206; 227, note 33).

Of enormous significance is Pelletiere’s expert opinion about U.S. policy toward Iraq:

*“Ten years after the end of the Gulf War, the U.S. State Department continues to devise policy toward Iraq as if it were a criminal society, which now we can see it is not. It is time for the United States, in effect, to put up. If it has evidence that Saddam Hussein gassed his own people, then it should present it to the world. If, as the author believes, the famous gassing incident was all a hoax—or perhaps we should say a nonevent—then it should admit it and lift the sanctions, as there is no justification to keep on with this harsh punishment.”* (p. 222)

His endnote to the above paragraph is remarkable for those interested in Holocaust claims from World War Two:

*“The only satisfactory procedure for the United States would be either to say where the 100,000 alleged gassing victims repose (which it should be able to do with all of its satellite and infrared imaging equipment) or to give a convincing explanation of how the Iraqis could have gassed 100,000 people in a two-week period and disposed of them without a trace.”* (p. 230, note 100)

This, I suggest, is the indispensable attitude for an historian of real history. He does not merely accept a government’s propaganda story about “the enemy” but seeks to find physical evidence to back up the claim. In this case, it appears that the U.S. government has no evidence and thus continues to repeat the story endlessly in hope that the naïve public will never ask the hard questions.

In view of the Jewish claims about homicidal gassing chambers in many German POW and detainee camps from 1941–44, U.S. government and Israeli stories about Saddam Hussein gassing people are bound to attract widespread attention and create for a gullible public an idea that Hussein is a present-day Hitler ready to gas Kurds, Iraqis, and, of course, Jews. This story always sells well when promoted by Jewish dominated media and talk show hosts and most of their guests—probably none of whom have read the Pelletiere book but instead will continue to trust pro-Israel “think-tanks” in Washington and elsewhere.

#### **Concluding Remarks**

Professor Pelletiere demonstrates an in-depth grasp of the history of the Arab factions and internecine wars in Iraq, Iran, Saudi Arabia, and Kuwait. His presentation of the development of oil in Pennsylvania from 1859 to the present day is more than adequate, though generally tedious and boring, but this is not his fault. Readers will do well to read the entire book rather than merely beginning with the final chapter which interests, perhaps, most readers. The first five chapters

enable one to understand better the modern oil system wherein profits take precedence over morality and over the proven needs of the countries where oil has been exploited by the producers.

The book’s index is adequate but there is no bibliography, the sources being largely found in the chapter end notes. At \$69.95 the book is terribly expensive but well worth the price for those seeking an expert analysis which is cogently at variance with the media and government spin doctors. I found almost no typographical errors, but I did notice several unusual terms that may send readers to a lexicon: “twigged,” “stinted,” “cadged,” “chariness, and “vetted.” A minor criticism is that Pelletiere regularly uses “Russians” when “Soviets” would have been more appropriate.

As for the U.S. Ambassador to Iraq, April Glaspie, and her important meeting with Saddam Hussein on July 31, 1990, wherein she has been interpreted as having given Iraq “a green light” to invade Kuwait, Pelletiere places this on pages 200-2 in a reasonable context and, as such, he does not give this meeting overly much emphasis.

The Gulf War was an American venture to control oil supplies. On the other hand, Israel had to have been a cheerleader urging on President George Herbert Walker Bush and his coalition to invade and destroy the Iraqi president and his army and special guard units and infrastructure, perhaps displaying an Israeli paranoia, a “the Arabs are always against us” mentality. Hence, one errs in ascribing the Gulf War even largely to Israeli machinations. On the other hand, Pelletiere makes clear that the Iran-Contra scandal of the Reagan administration should have been the “Israeli-Iran-Contra” scandal since Israeli hands were at the beginning and in the middle and at the end—except that the American media, largely in the hands of Jewish owners and promoters, succeeded in keeping Israel’s skullduggery from the public’s view.

## **Jewish Co-Responsibility for Jewish Persecution in 1941**

*By Germar Rudolf*

**Bogdan Musial, “Konterrevolutionäre Elemente sind zu erschießen.”: Die Brutalisierung des deutsch-sowjetischen Krieges im Sommer 1941 (“Counter Revolutionary Elements are to be Shot.”: The Brutalization of the German-Soviet War in the Summer 1941), Propyläen-Verlag, Berlin, 2000, 349 pp., € 20.-.**

Since 1996, a photo exhibition organized by a communist organization located in Hamburg, Germany, which featured alleged war crimes of the German Wehrmacht during World War II, has been shown in many German and Austrian cities.<sup>1</sup> Due to its one-sidedness and distorted, if not outright false, “anti-fascist,” *i.e.*, Stalinist, way of depicting events on the eastern front during WWII, this exhibition has caused mas-

sive criticism by various historians.<sup>2</sup> Politicians and media in Germany, however, most of whom supported this propaganda exhibition, were totally silent about this criticism. This changed only in 1999, after the Polish historian Bogdan Musial had demonstrated that numerous photos of this Wehrmacht exhibition as proof of the crimes of the German army in reality show victims of the Soviet NKVD.<sup>3</sup> Though he was not the first who pointed this out, he was the first one to be heard by the media, because as a Pole he enjoyed the advantage of not being exposed to the immediate suspicion of wanting to whitewash Hitler, a suspicion every German national faces if uttering anything about WWII, the Wehrmacht, or the Third Reich that is not exclusively negative. The broad publicity of Musial’s “discovery” finally led to an investigation

into the veracity of said exhibition. Though this investigation was conducted by “experts” appointed by the organizers of the exhibition, *i.e.*, by persons of a similar left-wing radical ideology, the results were still so devastating that the exhibition was temporarily shut down. It reopened three years later after some minor changes.

The controversy about the anti-fascist propaganda exhibition goes like a red thread also through Musial’s new book reviewed here. Musial turns against the so-called German *Vergangenheitsbewältigung* (coming to terms with the past), which is no longer motivated by moral intentions, but which is today used by (post-)communist and socialist falsifiers of history in order to ostracize their political competition in the political center and on the right. Even though the accusation of political abuse of history is justified, Musial is on slippery ground here, because this accusation, which is basically leveled against almost all German media, exposes him to suspicions of being generally hostile towards their leftist propaganda. In their zeal, the German media ignore that Musial rejection of politically biased historical propaganda is not directed against them, but against all distorters of historical writing. Hence, Musial’s new book with his broadside against political correctness in historiography will undoubtedly lead to him losing his status as a darling of the German media.

The actual subject of his new book is the Soviet policy in the Polish territories that came temporarily under Soviet occupation after the fourth division of Poland between Germany and Russia as a result of the so-called Hitler-Stalin pact in September 1939, as well as the reaction of the local population and of German armed forces during the German occupation after June 1941. Musial describes in detail the cruelties committed by the Soviets, which characteristically consisted of denunciations, arrests, and mass deportations to Siberia; expropriations; and collectivizations. Immediately after the German invasion into the Soviet Union, mass murder of inmates by the police agents of the NKVD were added. Tens of thousands, especially Ukrainian and Polish nationals, fell victim to these Soviet mass murders of inmates who could not be evacuated to the east. In Lublin alone, the capital of East Galicia, at least 4000 men and women were massacred. Furthermore, Soviet units regularly murdered German POWs, most of whom were tortured and terribly mutilated.

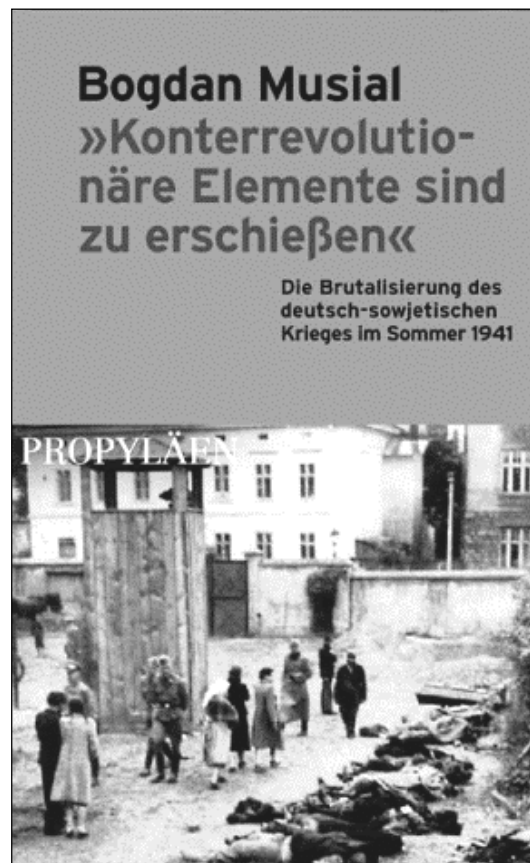
After the retreat of the mass murderers, these crimes were immediately blamed on the Jews, who allegedly participated in leading positions during the Soviet occupation and the NKVD massacres. In the first days of July 1941, pogroms

took place in almost all parts of East Poland, which lasted sometimes for days. Immediately afterwards, execution commandos of the German *Sicherheitspolizei* (Security Police) and the SD (*Sicherheitsdienst*, security service) shot a great number of predominantly Jewish men, who had been accused of participating in the Soviet massacres. According to Musial, at least ten thousand people fell victim to these punishments for the Soviet crimes.

Bogdan Musial thoroughly analyzed the Soviet mass murders during the summer of 1941 and tried to reevaluate their significance within the anti-Jewish policy of the National Socialists. Musial tried to “put himself into the place [...], instead of judging from a superior position.” An important contribution of this study is his inclusion of a multitude of mostly Polish-language witness testimonies, diaries, and similar material which vividly described the atmosphere at that time from the viewpoint of the affected and the victims. Musial also includes testimonies and documentary evidence from recent Polish investigations into Stalinist crimes. These sources allow a deeper understanding of the Soviet occupation between September 1939 and June 1941.

Musial has demonstrated in an excellent way how the Stalinist mass murders and the campaign of revenge and punishment unleashed by the local population, which began during the Soviet retreat, gave an apparent credence to the abstract enemy image “Jewish Bolshevism” and furnished a legitimation to National Socialist propaganda, which Joseph Goebbels exploited exhaustively. Under the keyword “Lemberg” (Lviv), diffused hate feelings of many German soldiers and civilians solidified, namely against the Eastern Jews. Additionally, these reactions made it possible to declare the war against the Soviet Union as a necessary campaign of the West against “bolshevist barbarity.”

Concerning the pogroms, Musial has three theses. First, not unsubstantial parts of the Jewish population of Soviet Poland cooperated with the eastern regime, namely as members of the communist youth organization (Komsomol) as well as employees and collaborators of the NKVD. Therefore, the stereotype of “Jewish bolshevism” had a core of truth which supported the evolving of a conglomerate of anti-Semitism, anti-communism, and desire for revenge long before the arrival of German troops. Therefore, secondly, the escalation of pogroms during the summer of 1941 can only be explained through the NKVD crimes, which seemed to confirm the enemy image of the “Jewish Commune.” Finally, the Soviet mass murders were an essential prerequisite for the “brutalization of the





German-Soviet war,” because Adolf Hitler gave orders to carry out extensive “retaliations” under the impression of the Lublin massacre, so writes Musial. This line of reasoning sees the Soviet crimes as the cause for the escalation of German violent measures and assigns a partial responsibility for this essential part to the Jewish inhabitants of Soviet-occupied Poland.

By so doing, Musial puts his finger in an open wound of established historiography, because ever since the “Holocaust” became self-evident, has been morally reprehensible to assign any kind of co-responsibility to Jews in connection with misfortune inflicted upon them.

Though Musial is correct with his thesis—one may only argue about the extent of the Jewish co-responsibility—his newest book constitutes a form of academic suicide, because with his thesis, he catapulted himself out of the congregation of “socially accepted” historians and made himself vulnerable to the accusation of being an anti-Semite or at least to playing the anti-Semites’ game. To nobody’s surprise, this was exactly the reaction of the German media.

Musial’s book is a detailed study which seamlessly merges with the results of the investigations of Joachim Hoffmann, who meticulously described the terror of Stalin’s Red Army and the German reaction to it. That the German soldiers had to reckon with “barbaric Asiatic fighting methods” as well as an “inhuman treatment of our [German] prisoners,” as it was described in the so-called German *Kommissarbefehl* (Commissar Order) two weeks before the beginning of the German-Soviet war, was obvious for a long time already as a result of the experiences during the revolutionary years in Russia between 1917 and 1921, and at the latest again since the Soviet invasion of Finland and the Soviet occupation of Poland’s eastern territories. Hence, in order to arrive at a conclusion as given in the *Kommissarbefehl*, the German Supreme Command did not have to wait for the actions of the Red Army at the beginning of war in 1941.

It is also undisputed that during the first years of the Soviet Union, Jews were predominant in the leadership of the Soviet Union. To be sure, their percentage gradually declined there over the years and decades, especially under Stalin; however, this initial Jewish dominance repeated itself in practically each region which was occupied by the Soviet Union, be it in Galicia, the Baltics, or later at war’s end in the “liberated” countries of Eastern Europe. Musial submits documentation for Galicia. There as well, the Jewish influence declined over the years, combined with a reduction of terror. It is therefore very well understandable that the people of Galicia and the Baltics considered the German invasion in 1941, which happened only a few years or even only months after establishment of the red, Jewish dominated terror, as an act of liberation from the Jewish-bolshevist yoke. Unfortunately, some individuals took this as an occasion to relieve their understandable anger and hatred by committing crimes against

both guilty and innocent. One may condemn or regret that the German troops and occupational administrations did not always stop these activities, as would have been morally required, or even encouraged them. However, if one can understand the anti-German cleansings in France after the Allied liberation in the year 1944, which were no less cruel—they, too, cannot be justified—one should also understand the anti-Jewish and anti-Soviet cleansings at the beginning of the German campaign. There should not be a double standard when judging both events.

What Musial does not address, however, is the question why it was the Jews who were so dominant during the early years of the Soviet revolution, who had such an important share in erecting a machinery of terrorism which is unparalleled in world history, and why it was always primarily Jews who joined the Soviet revolutionaries and tyrants en masse and offered them their services. One reason for this may be the oppression which many Jews experienced for centuries in many eastern European societies, especially in Poland and Czarist Russia. Many Jews may simply have hoped for an emancipation. Not a few of them even considered the early Soviet Union to be primarily Jewish affair, as they rose from pariahs to rulers, from the ghetto to the top of the government.

A deeper analysis, however, would call for researching the inflexible ideological position of Torah, Talmud, and *Schulchan Aruch*, which defines the principal opposition of orthodox Jewry against their non-Jewish environment. The hostility against non-Jews, as it is demanded by these Jewish law books, is probably the deeper reason for eastern European anti-Judaism, for the subsequent Jewish tyranny of early Soviet domination, as well as for the National Socialist anti-Judaism and anti-Bolshevism that developed as a result of this. But Musial perhaps neither wanted nor could bring himself to such a far-reaching analysis.

## Notes

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(1) (2002), pp. 100f. Translated by Fabian Eschen.

<sup>1</sup> In printed form: Hamburger Institut für Sozialforschung (ed.), *Vernichtungskrieg. Verbrechen der Wehrmacht 1941 bis 1944*, Hamburger Edition, Hamburg 1996; English: Hamburg Institute for Social Research (ed.), *The German Army and Genocide: Crimes against War Prisoners, Jews, and Other Civilians, 1939-1944*, The New Press, New York 1999.

<sup>2</sup> E.g., Rüdiger Proske, *Wider den Mißbrauch der Geschichte deutscher Soldaten zu politischen Zwecken*, Von Hase & Köhler, Mainz 1996; Proske, *Vom Marsch durch die Institutionen zum Krieg gegen die Wehrmacht*, *ibid.*, 1997; Wolf Stoecker, “Fälschung und Agitation. Kritische Bemerkungen zur Ausstellung ‘Vernichtungskrieg, Verbrechen der Wehrmacht 1941 bis 1944.’”, in Joachim F. Weber (ed.), *Armee im Kreuzfeuer*, Universitas, Munich 1997.

<sup>3</sup> Bogdan Musial, “Bilder einer Ausstellung. Kritische Anmerkungen zur Wanderausstellung ‘Vernichtungskrieg. Verbrechen der Wehrmacht 1941-1944’”, *Vierteljahrshefte für Zeitgeschichte*, 47(4) (1999), pp. 563-591.

# Research News

## How the United States Started the Vietnam War

By Wolfgang Pfitzner

On August 4, 1964, network television was interrupted at 11:36 p.m. EDT so President Lyndon B. Johnson could tell the nation that the U.S. warship USS *Maddox* and its sister ship the USS *C. Turner Joy* had been attacked in a place called the Gulf of Tonkin by North Vietnamese PT boats. Two days earlier, according to Johnson, the USS *Maddox*, a destroyer conducting reconnaissance in the gulf, had been attacked by North Vietnamese, Russian-made Svatov gunboats, but this was not seen as a cause for action.

In response to what he described as “open aggression on the open seas,” Johnson ordered U.S. air strikes on North Vietnam. The air strikes opened the door to a war that would become a traumatic experience for the USA. During its course, one million Vietnamese, most of them civilians, and 58,000 American soldiers would die. This war was also the origin of the anti-authority, leftwing flower power and hippie movement which in later years divided most western societies and over the decades led to radical leftwing trends, especially in German society.

Over the years, debate has swirled around whether U.S. ships were actually attacked that night, or whether, as some skeptics suggest, the Johnson administration staged or provoked the event to get congressional authority to act against North Vietnam.

Recently released tapes of White House phone conversations indicate that the attack probably never happened. The tapes, released by the LBJ Library at the University of Texas at Austin, include 51 phone conversations from Aug. 4 and 5, 1964, in which the Tonkin Gulf incident is mentioned.

Although these tapes do not finally clarify what really happened in the Gulf of Tonkin, they do at least indicate that the sailors on board of the US ships involved claimed to believe—or actually did believe—that they had been attacked in this region of conflict. One of the radio messages from the *Maddox* reads:

*“Under attack by three PT boats. Torpedoes in the water. Engaging the enemy with my main battery.”*

Indeed, the destroyers fired 249 5-inch shells, 123 3-inch shells, and four or five depth charges, according to Navy records.

Many of the taped conversations from that night are between Defense Secretary Robert McNamara and Adm. U.S. Grant “Oley” Sharp, commander of the U.S. Navy’s Pacific Fleet.

During these conversations, McNamara was (actually or allegedly) trying to verify what really happened so that he could brief LBJ for his TV bulletin.

Sharp was feeding McNamara “information” from the field while trying to get a strike force in the air to retaliate for the alleged attack even before the president went on television. He obviously tried to confront the nation with a fait accompli. On Aug. 4 about noon, Sharp said:

*“If it’s open season on these boys, which I think it is, we’ll take it from there.”*

Later, in a 1:59 p.m. EDT conversation with Air Force Lt. Gen. David Burchinal of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, Sharp was

elusive, saying:

*“many of the reported contacts and torpedoes fired appear doubtful.”*

He blamed the reports on “overeager sonar-men” and “freak weather effects on radar.”

Burchinal asked:

*“You’re pretty sure there was a torpedo attack?”*

*“No doubt about that, I think,” Sharp replied.*

At 8:39 p.m., with McNamara laying plans for LBJ to go on TV, McNamara asked Sharp why the retaliatory strike had been delayed. Bad weather, Sharp said, and an agitated McNamara replied:

*“The president has to make a statement to the people and I*

*am holding him back from making it.”*

Thirty minutes later, at 9:09, Sharp said the launch still was 50 minutes off.

“Oh my God,” McNamara said. This indicates how eager the secretary of “defense” was to push the country into a war and to confront the nation with a fait accompli.

Shortly after 11 p.m., the counterstrike was under way and LBJ went on the air to tell the American people that the USA would do everything to “in support of freedom and in defense of peace in Southeast Asia.”

But, says James Stockdale, a Navy aviator who responded to the “attacks” on the *Maddox* and the *Turner Joy*, it all was hogwash. Stockdale later was shot down and spent eight years in a North Vietnamese prisoner of war camp. In 1992, he was presidential candidate Ross Perot’s running mate. Stockdale wrote in his 1984 book *In Love and War* (Harper & Row, New York):

*“I had the best seat in the house to watch that event, and our destroyers were just shooting at phantom targets—*

***The costs of the Vietnam War to the USA amounted to some 150 billion dollars. But in the early `70s, instead of ending this military madness, the US government decided instead to shut down the ambitious manned space program initiated by Wernher von Braun, which was increasingly criticized because of its great costs, running into tens of billions of dollars. While the USA is still profiting enormously from the basic research that was necessary to put the space program into operation (micro processors, robotics, light weight materials) today, no profits were ever made out of the Vietnam War, except, perhaps, for drug dealers...***

*there were no PT boats there. There was nothing but black water and American firepower."*

Congress, however, responded to LBJ's call to arms, giving him a veritable blank check to make war.

While the U.S. response, as the tapes seem to bear out, was a mistake rather than a charade, there is ample evidence the United States was a provocateur in 1964, not an innocent bystander. The Johnson administration had approved covert land and sea operations involving U.S. forces earlier in 1964, the so-called Op Plan 34-A.

On Monday, Aug. 3, 1964, the day after the alleged first Tonkin Gulf incident against the USS *Maddox*, Johnson, according to White House tape recordings, said:

*"There have been some covert operations in that [Tonkin Gulf] area that we have been carrying on—blowing up some bridges and things of that kind, roads and so forth. So I imagine [the North Vietnamese] wanted to put a stop to it."*

Later that same day, LBJ, who ironically was about to ask Humphrey to be his running mate in the '64 election, complained to their mutual friend, James Rowe:

*"Our friend Hubert is just destroying himself with his big mouth."*

After an intelligence briefing, the Minnesota liberal Hubert Humphrey had told the media that U.S. boats were running covert operations in the gulf—"exactly what we have been doing," according to LBJ on a tape.

Two months before the Tonkin Gulf incident, Undersecretary of State George Ball, a member of Johnson's inner circle and a member of a committee that oversaw the 34-A operations, had drafted, but not submitted, a congressional resolution endorsing "all measures, including the commitment of force," to defend South Vietnam and Laos, should their governments seek help—in effect, the language in the subsequent Tonkin

Gulf Resolution of the US Congress of early August 1964. In a May 24 meeting, the National Security Council suggested the best time to submit such a resolution was after Congress had passed the landmark 1964 civil rights bill, which occurred in July 1964. Hence, the Tonkin-Resolution passed by Congress in August was anything but a reaction to the alleged Tonkin "incident."

Ball later is supposed to have said, according to McNamara in his 1995 mea culpa *In Retrospect* (Times Books, NY):

*"many of the people who were associated with the war [...] were looking for any excuse to initiate bombing."*

However, another close LBJ aide, William Bundy, according to the same source, said the Tonkin Gulf incident was not engineered.

While the reasons for it were either unclear or false, the Tonkin Gulf Resolution cleared Congress on Aug. 7, 1964—414-0 in the House and 88-2 in the Senate.

Professor Edwin Moise, a Vietnam War expert at Clemson University, claims that the "incident" was not a "put-up job," since the LBJ Library tapes indicate that the Navy was not ready to launch a retaliatory strike on Aug. 4 against North Vietnam. Professor David Crockett, a presidential scholar at Trinity University, calls the incident an accident. He says that the bigger problem was that Congress "rolled over" and gave LBJ a blank check for war without any resistance.

It was therefore nothing but cynicism for LBJ to have painted his Republican competitor Barry Goldwater as a warmonger in the '64 presidential election campaign. During this campaign, LBJ campaigned with the slogan that he would not send American boys to die in Asian wars. But haven't we gotten used to such lies from our presidents?

---

Source: <http://news.mysanantonio.com/story.cfm?xla=saen&xlb=190&xlc=775859&xld=190>

## From the Records of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial

*By Germar Rudolf*

### **How It Began...**

On March 1, 1958, Adolf Rögner, an inmate in Bruchsal Prison in south-west Germany, filed charges with the Stuttgart prosecutor against one Oberscharführer Wilhelm Boger, whom he accused of mistreatment and mass murder of inmates of the Auschwitz concentration camp. In his complaint he pointed out that he was not the only one who could provide witnesses and other evidence:

*"[...] at the same time the International Auschwitz Committee, Vienna X, Weigandhof 5, and the Central Council of German Jews, Düsseldorf-Benrath, certainly have complete evidence on hand, and [unreadable] the Concentration Camp Auschwitz Museum has entire volumes and documents, director is the former Polish concentration camp comrade Franz Pargosch, of the Auschwitz Committee Vienna, the principal officer Hermann Langbein is also a former concentration camp man." (p. 2\*)*

In a note in the trial records dated May 13, 1958, State Attorney Weber, the prosecutor handling the case, characterized the accuser Rögner as a "glory-seeking psychopath." (p. 7) In his "Report on the Interrogation of the Prisoner Adolf Rögner" dated May 6, 1958, court examiner Wasserloos wrote:

*"Report on the Interrogation of the Prisoner Adolf Rögner.*

*Rögner initially gave the impression of a quiet, reasonable man. That impression is quickly dispelled when his repeatedly expressed requests to be shown a photograph of the accused can not be accommodated. To the statement of the undersigned that at this stage of the investigation the provision of a photograph of the accused was not necessary; that, nevertheless, Rögner should try to give the most exact description of the person of the accused, his activities and his criminal behavior, he seemed greatly*

displeased. He reacted to this in a peculiar way: at first he remained stubborn and gave only short, partly incomplete answers; when he was pressed further, he got more and more excited and changed the subject, mentioned unbearable and degrading conditions in the [Bruchsal] prison, reviled the officials, particularly the medical personnel, and accused them of mistreating him. This was allegedly being done to silence him, that is allegedly why they let him waste away. He included the public prosecution in his accusations; it allegedly treated him the same way they did in prison; it allegedly uses Gestapo and concentration camp methods and keeps him from protesting, because it allegedly sympathizes with those about whom he had something to say.

After these excesses, Rögner could be brought back to the subject only with difficulty. He responded grudgingly to the questions posed to him, and threatened numerous times that he would have the methods of officials of the Federal Republic denounced in the appropriate place. In connection with this he said he was a man who had been a member of the KPD (Communist Party of Germany) for a long time and would always be a member of it.

His exact knowledge of particular events and localities, which he was able to describe in the minutest detail, was remarkable. Without hesitation he enumerated the mostly four- and five-digit camp numbers of the fellow inmates

he spoke about. He completed the drawing included with the transcript without having to think about it. This was quite a contrast to his efforts not to give exact dates. In almost all cases he was unable to answer questions to this purpose. His comprehensive and detailed knowledge of the operations of the concentration camp Auschwitz are perhaps partially due to the fact that he had considerable relevant data in his possession with which he occupied himself ceaselessly during his imprisonment—as can be verified by the prison administration. He brought several record packets and numerous photographs to the interrogation which pertained to concentration camp Auschwitz, but which were not inspected in order not to draw out the witness base his statements as much as possible on his own direct knowledge. According to a communication from the prison administration, Rögner carried a number of books on war crimes trials and war crimes experiences with him, which he was no longer allowed to use because his accusations filed against members of the former SS piled up to such a degree that it became apparent that he was probably drawing his facts from his reading, but reported it to the prosecutors as his own knowledge. It was later determined that Rögner maintained a busy correspondence with the International Auschwitz Committee in Vienna. It is not certain that he received material from there regularly. In a recently written letter to the Federal Constitutional Court, Rögner complained that his correspondence with the Auschwitz Committee had been restricted.

The undersigned got the impression from Rögner's behavior that his entire thinking and striving was directed to busying the prosecutor's office as much as possible by means of his real or supposed knowledge. He seemed to find satisfaction in this pursuit. He repeatedly declared he would be the star witness in many future criminal trials. The Federal Criminal Office paid particular attention to him: the chief prosecutor

16 Ja 1273/58

Hohenasperg, den 6.5.1958

Bericht über die Vernehmung des Strafgefangenen

Adolf Rögner

Rögner machte zunächst den Eindruck eines ruhigen, sachlich denkenden Mannes. Das änderte sich jedoch schlagartig, als seiner wiederholt geäußerten Bitte, ihm Lichtbilder des Beschuldigten zu zeigen, nicht entsprochen werden konnte. Auf die Äußerung des Unterzeichneten die Vorlage eines Lichtbildes werde im gegenwärtigen Stadium des Ermittlungsverfahrens noch nicht für erforderlich erachtet; Rögner möge sich stattdessen bemühen, eine möglichst genaue Beschreibung der Person des Beschuldigten, seiner Tätigkeit und seines strafbaren Verhaltens zu geben, zeigte er sich stark gekränkt. Er reagierte darauf in einer eigenartigen Weise: zunächst blieb er verstockt, gab nur kurze, zum Teil unvollständige Antworten; als dann weiter in ihn gedrungen wurde, wechselte er in immer stärker werdender Erregung das Thema, indem er plötzlich von unhaltbaren und menschenunwürdigen Zuständen in den Strafanstalten sprach, die Beamten, insbesondere die Ärzte, beschimpfte und sie bezichtigte, ihn zu mißhandeln. Das geschah, um ihn mundtot zu machen, deshalb lasse man ihn dahinsiechen. In seine Beschuldigungen bezog er auch die Staatsanwaltschaft ein; bei ihr herrsche derselbe Geist wie in den Strafanstalten; sie wende Gestapo- und Kz-Methoden an und lasse ihn nicht zu Worte kommen, weil sie mit den Leuten sympathisiere, über die er eine Menge zu sagen wisse. Nach diesen Exzessen konnte Rögner nur mühsam zum Thema zurückgeführt werden. Er ließ sich grollend auf die an ihn gerichteten Fragen ein, wobei er mehrmals damit drohte, die Behandlungswaise der Behörden in der Bundesrepublik an geeigneter Stelle anzuprangern. In diesem Zusammenhang nannte er sich einen Mann, der seit jeher der KPD angehört habe und ihr auch stets angehören werde.

Bemerkenswert war seine genaue Kenntnis einzelner Vorgänge und Ortslichkeiten, die er mit minutöser Genauigkeit zu beschreiben vermochte. Auf Anhieb nannte er die zumeist vier- und fünfstelligen Lagernummern der von ihm erwähnten Mitgefangenen. Die dem Protokoll beigefügten Skizzen fertigte er, ohne daß er hierzu einer Überlegung bedürfte. Ganz im Gegensatz dazu stehende Bestreben, sich auf keine Zeit festzulegen. Die hierauf bezogenen Fragen beantwortete er in fast allen Fällen negativ. Seine umfangreichen und detaillierten Kenntnisse über die Vorgänge in Konzentrationslager Auschwitz erklären sich möglicherweise aus der Tatsache, daß er wie durch den Anstaltsvorstand in Erfahrung gebracht werden konnte - hierüber erhebliches Material in Händen hat, mit dem er sich während seiner Strafhaft unblühend beschäftigt. Er brachte zur Vernehmung mehrere Aktenbände und zahlreiche Fotografien, die sich auf das Konzentrationslager Auschwitz bezogen, mit, in die jedoch kein Einblick genommen wurde, um die Vernehmung nicht über Gebühr auszuweiten, insbesondere auch um dem Zeugen bei seinen Aussagen möglichst auf das zu verweisen, was er aus eigener Anschauung bekunden kann. Nach Mitteilung der Anstaltsvorstände führte er auch eine Anzahl Bücher über Kriegsverbrecherprozesse und Erlebnisse in den Konzentrationslagern mit sich, die ihm schließlichen nicht länger zur Verfügung

gestellt wurden, weil sich Anzeigen Rögners gegen Angehörige der ehemaligen SS in einem solchen Maße häuften, daß angenommen werden mußte, Rögner beziehe sein Wissen aus seiner Lektüre, gebe es aber dann bei den Strafverfolgungsbehörden als eigene Erkenntnisse an. Wie weiterhin in Erfahrung gebracht wurde, unterhält Rögner einen regen Schriftverkehr mit dem Internationalen Auschwitz-Komitee in Wien. Es konnte allerdings nicht festgestellt werden, ob er von dort regelmäßig Material bezieht. In einem neuerdings verfaßten Schreiben an das Bundesverfassungsgericht beschwerte Rögner sich über die Einschränkung seiner Korrespondenz mit dem Auschwitz-Komitee.

Aus dem Verhalten Rögners gewann der Unterzeichnete den Eindruck, daß sein ganzes Sinnen und Trachten darauf ausgeht, durch sein vermeintliches oder wirkliches Wissen die Strafverfolgungsbehörden zu beschäftigen. Bei diesem Bestreben scheint er Befriedigung zu finden. Er erklärte wiederholt, er sei Kronzeuge in zahlreichen künftigen Strafprozessen. Das Untersuchungsamt sendete ihm besondere Beachtung; der Oberstaatsanwalt von Waldshut bei selbst zu ihm gekommen, um er in kürzester Zeit als Kronzeuge in einem dort anhängigen Verfahren gegen mehrere Angehörige auftreten werde. Insbesondere waren es aber die folgenden Aufklärungen, die die Ansicht des Untersuchers begründeten: Rögner erwiderte auf die Ermahnung, sich der Wahrheit zu befleißigen, er habe diese Ermahnung nicht nötig, daß bei er in diesen Fällen zu den Verurteilungen. Er habe sechs Jahre bei der amerikanischen Militärtribunal erfolgreich als "Identifizierer" gearbeitet. Schließlich sagte er: "Die können mir schon glauben, daß durch meine Aussage schon mehrere Nazi hingerichtet worden ist!"

Die Einstellung des Zeugen, die aus dieser Äußerung erhellt, entspricht durchaus seinem Charakter. Sie ist nicht persönlichkeitsfremd. Die zahllosen Verleumdungen, die vielfachen unsachlichen Anzeigen, mit denen Rögner Vollstreckungs- und Verfolgungsbehörden in letzter Zeit beschäftigt hat, weisen dies deutlich.

Jensen, J. - Rf.

of Waldshut had come to him in person since he was to appear as star witness in a trial there in the near future against several SS members. However, it was especially the following statement that is the foundation for the opinion of the undersigned: Rögner responded to the warning that he should concern himself with the truth, that he had no need of the warning. He was far too experienced in these things. He had worked successfully with the American military police for six years as an 'informant.' He said, word for word: 'You should believe me, it was through my testimony that many Nazis have been executed.'

The disposition of the witness, as shown from these statements, matches his character completely; it is not foreign to his personality. The numerous complaints and the various unsupported charges with which Rögner has busied the enforcement and prosecutorial offices recently show this clearly." (p. 8f.)

On May 9, 1958, the prosecutor in Stuttgart assigned to this case received a letter from the Comité International d'Auschwitz in Vienna, signed by its president, Hermann Langbein, with the offer to provide evidence in the matter of the Boger case. Next to Langbein's leading sentence, "We have been told that you are conducting a case against SS-Oberscharführer Boger." one of the officials involved in the case noted, "Rögner!" (p. 22a). Apparently in Stuttgart it was known that Rögner had informed Langbein of the charges he had filed and of the consequent interrogation by Wasserloos. Langbein himself later admitted this. (*Der Auschwitz-Prozeß*, Europäische Verlagsanstalt, Frankfurt/Main 1965, vol. 1, p. 21f.)

Langbein wrote more letters—on May 29, 1958, July 9, 1958, and July 27, 1958 (pp. 31, 34, 36f)—in which he demanded that Boger first be taken into custody before his committee would name witnesses and provide evidence.

In a letter on May 8, 1958, the prison administration in Bruchsal notified the prosecutor in Stuttgart that a case was underway against Rögner for false testimony and perjury committed during a concentration camp trial in Munich (p. 23).

In a letter on April 9, 1958, the prison administration in Bruchsal wrote the chief prosecutor for district I in Munich about the prisoner Rögner as follows (pp. 24-26):

- a) Rögner had served a term of imprisonment for fraud and attempted fraud;
- b) he had been sentenced to imprisonment during the Third Reich for criminal offenses and had spent part of his term in concentration camps;
- c) he had filed "numerous, ungrounded complaints" against authorities, was "quarrelsome," "Eastern [i.e., Soviet-ed.] oriented" and would emigrate to Poland when released, sees himself as a "star witness in a series of great concentration camp trials";
- d) he resists official rules, constantly demands exceptions for himself, attempts to use his knowledge of concentration camps to alleviate his punishment and pursues "obscure goals."

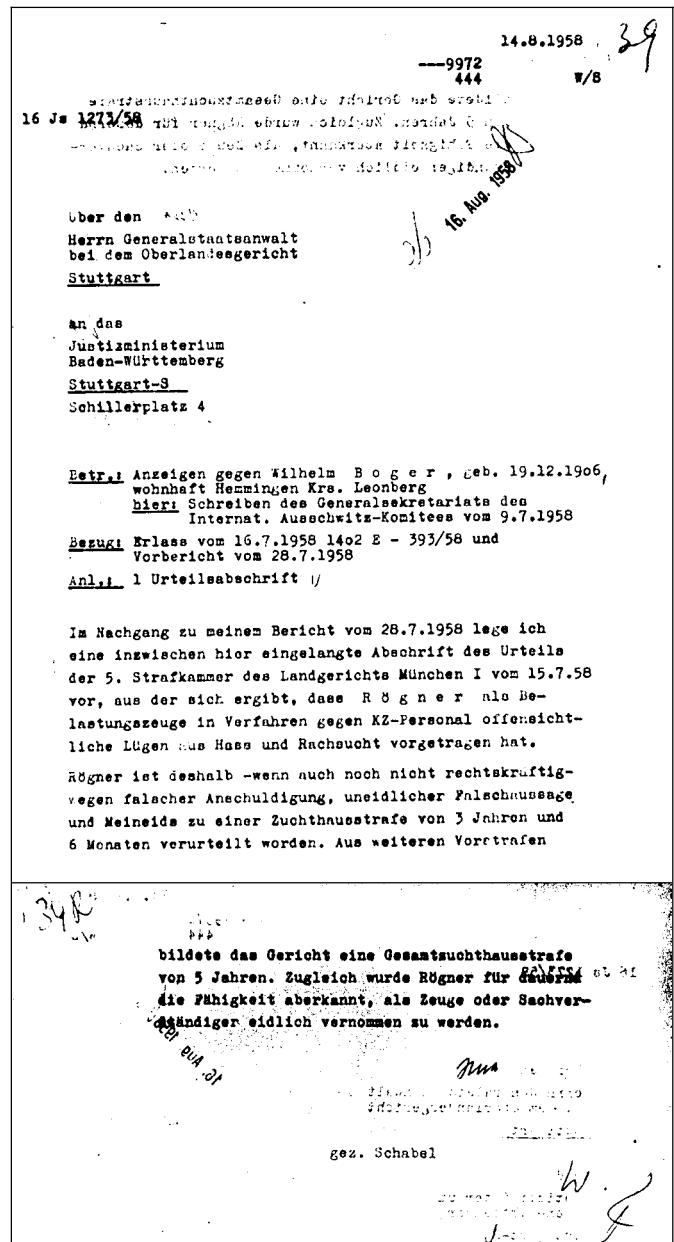
On August 14, 1958, prosecutor Schabel wrote to the Baden-Württemberg Minister of Justice concerning the transcript of the decision of the Land Court Munich: (p. 39)

"[...] which shows that Rögner as the prosecution witness in trials against concentration camp personnel has obviously lied for reasons of hatred and revenge.

Rögner was therefore sentenced to a prison term of 3 years and 6 months—although the sentence is not yet valid. [...] In addition, Rögner's right to testify as a witness or expert in a trial has been revoked permanently."

### About Rögner's testimony

During his interrogation, Rögner answered most questions with "I don't know." He could neither describe the accused Boger nor give details as to dates or other circumstances of the allegedly witnessed crimes or proceedings. His exact information on witnesses and other supposed criminals, including their prisoner numbers, can only be explained by his having been supplied with particulars. He reported on a "selection" at Auschwitz as follows:



Adolf Rögner, perjured liar, vengeful denouncer

“Q.: How did you recognize the Jews?

Ans.: By the white badges they wore on their breasts. First, the smallest children were taken out of the goods cars. They were thrown onto a pile. Then they were taken away in two cargo trucks and gassed. Then they took the bigger children out and separated the boys from the girls. Then the women came out, who were divided into two groups. One group went into the camp, the other was taken to the crematories. Finally, they took the men out, and they were also divided into two groups like the women.” (p. 12)

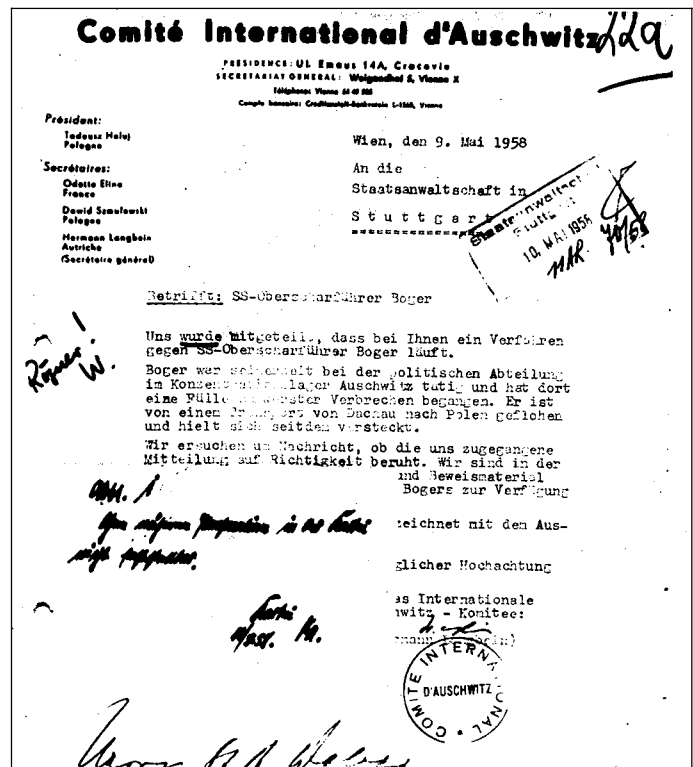
If the newly arrived Jews wore identification, however, it would have been yellow stars, certainly not white badges. Rögner’s description of the selection he claims to have witnessed is pure nonsense as well: the incoming transports were always unloaded en masse—the unloading of certain age groups and sexes would have been a logistic nightmare. All prisoners were sorted at the same time, not one group after the other. “[T]he smallest children [...] were thrown onto a pile”: the world has never seen such humbug! This passage alone shows that professional liar Rögner lied here again!

### Wise Insight

With only the statements of Bernd Naumann in his book *Auschwitz* (Athenäum, Frankfurt/Main 1968) and the self-testimony of Hermann Langbein to work with, Dr. Wilhelm Stäglich wrote in his 1979 *Auschwitz Mythos* (Grabert, Tübingen, p. 297):

“The [...] Auschwitz trial developed from an episode which could almost be called banal: On March 1, 1958, a former Auschwitz prisoner named Adolf Rögner, at that time held in the Bruchsal prison, filed charges against former SS Oberscharführer Wilhelm Boger for alleged crimes against humanity committed in concentration camp Auschwitz. [...] Langbein [...] merely noted that the Auschwitz trial had been ‘initiated due to a fluke.’ [...] there are reasons for believing that certain background influences who for various reasons had a great interest in a continuing and expanding pursuit of so-called Nazi mass crimes had spurred Rögner to file charges.”

Stäglich also discusses passages in Rögner’s charge sheet that he considers indicative that Rögner was used by Langbein’s



Adolf Rögner, “instructed” by the Communist-linked Auschwitz Committee

organization. As to any complaint today that Stäglich had speculated wildly, the records of the interrogation show not only that he was correct, but that the matter was even worse: Rögner was a Communist, a professional denouncer, a glory-seeking psychopath, a perjurer, a swindler, a self-styled “Nazi hunter,” who had been first supplied with literature and information, then encouraged to file charges, by the Auschwitz Committee.

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(3) (2002), pp. 343-346. Translated by Michael Humphrey

\* All page number refer to: Public Prosecution at the District Court Frankfurt (Main), Strafsache beim Schwurgericht Frankfurt (Main) gegen Baer und Andere wegen Mordes, ref. 4 Js 444/59, Vol. I

## In Brief

### Another MA Thesis from New Zealand Attacked

In 1994, Steven Eaton finished his MA thesis in history at the University of Canterbury (NZ) under the supervision of Prof. Vincent Orange. In his study of the International Military Tribunal of Nuremberg, Eaton concluded that the Allies showed no respect for international law, and that the tribunal was an arbitrary demonstration of power. Two years ago, Prof. Orange was attacked for having supervised a Holocaust revisionist MA thesis by Joel S. Hayward, which had been

completed in 1993. In an acknowledgment, Eaton expressed his gratitude to Hayward for having introduced him to the problems of Nuremberg. (*The Press*, NZ, Oct. 24, 2002)

### Canceling a Contract Equals Incitement to Hatred

On March 11, 2001, the Jewish organization “Keren Hayesod” intended to hold a fund raising evening for Israel in the nightclub *Y Julieta* at the Beethovenplatz in Munich. However, three days prior to the event, the owner of the nightclub

Rudolf Fischer, 55, cancelled the contract. He claimed that he did not want any political events taking place in his building. As a result, Fischer was insulted and threatened by the event's Jewish organizers, who also filed a criminal complaint against him for alleged anti-Semitic statements, such as: "I won't open my doors to you Jews." In September 2002, a court sentenced Fischer to pay a fine of €2,500, because the statements he allegedly made could incite to hatred. Fischer denied having made the statements. (*Süddeutsche Zeitung*, Sept. 4, 2002) Contrast the alleged statements with "I won't open my doors to right-wingers." Saying that sort of thing is almost obligatory for every restaurant owner in Germany.

### **Prohibited Guest Book Entries**

Two visitors to the former concentration camp Struthof (Alsace, France) who wrote 'inappropriate' comments in the museum's guest book were arrested by the French police and charged for crimes against humanity (*Dernières Nouvelles d'Alsace*, Sept. 24, 2002)

### **Zyklon Vacuum Cleaner**

When the German electrical equipment companies Bosch and Siemens applied on July 25, 2001, to the U.S. Patent and Trademark Office to register the names "X Zyklon" and "Mixed Zyklon" as trademarks for their vacuum cleaners, they were forced to think again. First, the British sportswear company Umbro protested, because it had already registered the Zyklon name for sport shoes. But then the Jewish lobby learned about the dispute. All of a sudden it was big news at the BBC, which turned it into a pseudo-scandal: How dare German companies consider using the name Zyklon, which is synonymous for German horror? Thus, the Bosch-Siemens household appliance group quickly retracted its application and apologized. (*Spiegel Online*, Sept. 5, 2002)

### **Scandal over Hitler Statue**

Between September and November 2002, a kneeling, life-sized Hitler statue, "He," looking upward and with its hands folded in prayers, caused some excitement at the Boijmans van Beuningen Museum in Rotterdam (Netherlands). The sculpture was made by Italian sculptor Maurizio Cattelan, well known for his provocations. Rotterdam's representative for culture denounced this statue as a provocation for all those Rotterdammers who suffered from "Hitler's bombs" (*AP*, Sept. 5, 2002).

### **Ernest Hemingway Exposed As Mass Murderer**

Because the southwest German town Triberg is briefly mentioned in one of Hemingway's novels, the town used to hold so-called "Hemingway days" annually. But after learning that Hemingway had in his private letters reported in detail on how he brutally murdered 122 defenseless German prisoners of war, an activist from a German patriotic group (Deutschland-Bewegung) distributed a leaflet at this year's "Hemingway days" in Triberg that stated: "Triberg honors a murderer." Because the German public prosecutor refused to open a criminal investigation against this patriot, the town

council of Triberg finally decided to cancel the "Hemingway days" in the future (*Schwarzwälder Bote*, Sept. 29, 2002).

### **Revisionist Book Promotion In Estonia**

In Dec. 2002, the well-known Holocaust revisionist Jürgen Graf presented the Estonian translation of his most popular book, *The Holocaust on the Test Stand*, to some 350 people in Estonia's capital Tallin. For his dissent, Graf had been sentenced in his native Switzerland to fifteen months imprisonment and now lives in exile in eastern Europe. Jewish organizations quickly issued a protest of the lecture. (*JTA*, December 5, 2002)

### **Latvia Unveils Holocaust Memorial**

Latvia has unveiled its first Holocaust memorial in a forest near the capital Riga. During WWII, some 25,000 Jews from Riga's nearby Jewish ghetto are supposed to have been killed there. The memorial was funded by donations from Germany, Israel, Latvia, and the US. (*BBC News*, 11/29/2002, <http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/world/europe/2529275.stm>) Apparently, no traces of the alleged victims have ever been found.

### **Croatians Forced to Take Holocaust Lessons**

Croatia has again been criticized for trying to give a somewhat balanced view on WWII history in its school textbooks by not glorifying the Allies uncritically and by giving the German side its due. As a result, Croatia is now being monitored by four members—from the United States, Israel, France, and Argentina—of an international task force dedicated to propagating Holocaust education. Meanwhile, the Jewish community of Zagreb, which will receive funds from the Claims Conference to brainwash educators, reached an agreement with the Adam Institute in Jerusalem to organize a seminar on the topic. About sixteen instructors are planning to attend the seminar next month. Later, they will organize workshops and brainwash others so that they can teach the subject. (*JTA*, 12/17/2002;

[www.jta.org/page\\_view\\_story.asp?intarticleid=12202&intcategoryid=2](http://www.jta.org/page_view_story.asp?intarticleid=12202&intcategoryid=2))

### **Jewish Groups Seek to Ban Book on Mideast Conflict**

In November 2002, a translation of the Italian novel *Sognando Palestina* (Dream of Palestine) by Randa Ghazi, 15, born in Italy to Egypt parents, was published in France by Flammarion. In his novel, Ghazi describes Arab extremists as well as moderates. Rabbi Abraham Cooper, associate dean of the Simon Wiesenthal Center, and the French anti-racist group LICRA called on the French government to ban the book. (*Reuters*, 12/10/2002)

### **US Faces Uphill Battle to Counter Anti-Arab Prejudice**

It has become more difficult for US authorities to buy air-time on Arab TV stations to screen ads that show Arab-Americans enthusing about their freedoms, job opportunities, and the respect shown by U.S. society to Muslims. This has been especially true since December 2002, when U.S. Attorney-General John Ashcroft ordered that all males over the age of sixteen from Arab countries be required to "voluntarily" present themselves to the INS (Immigration and Naturalization Service) for fingerprinting, photographing,

and questioning. (*Gulf News*, 12/24/2002, <http://www.gulf-news.com/>) This is reminiscent of the U.S. government internment of Germans during WWI and again, together with Italians and Japanese, during WWII.

### **Israeli Company Workers Were Warned of 911 Attack**

The instant messaging service Odigo, located in NY and with offices in Israel, says that two of its workers received messages two hours before the Twin Towers attack on September 11 predicting the attack would happen. The company has been cooperating with Israeli and US law enforcement, including the FBI, in trying to find the original sender of the message predicting the attack. (*Ha'aretz Daily*, 12/12/2002 [www.haaretzdaily.com/hasen/pages/ShArt.jhtml?itemNo=77744&contrassID=h](http://www.haaretzdaily.com/hasen/pages/ShArt.jhtml?itemNo=77744&contrassID=h))

### **Heavy Censorship in Jordan**

As a result of increasing opposition against the official Jordanian policy of suppressing the pro-Palestinian movement, the government of Jordan has suspended its parliament, has banned the Lebanese bimonthly opposition newspaper *al Adab*, and has jailed authors featured by this newspaper, for instance Dr. Hisham Bustani, a human rights activist who is a dentist by profession. After he had written about the use of poison gas by Jordan security forces to suppress pro-Palestinian demonstrations, Dr. Bustani was jailed in the al Jweideh prison on the outskirts of Amman. After his release, he reported on the horrendous conditions in the prisons, where inhuman treatment and torture prevail. For this, Dr. Bustani was again arrested, but released on bail after a few days. (Ibrahim Alloush; [alloush43@hotmail.com](mailto:alloush43@hotmail.com) 12/30/2002)

### **Internet Censorship to Hit USA in 2003?**

Early this year, President Bush's Critical Infrastructure Protection Board will release its report "The National Strategy to Secure Cyberspace." In a direct response to the events of September 11, 2001, it aims to safeguard national computer networks. The nation's largest Internet providers fear that they will be forced to give the authorities access to live feeds of network activity, which would be nothing but a wiretap without a judicial order. Tiffany Olson, deputy chief of staff of the Critical Infrastructure Protection Board, gave as a reason for this planned wiretapping: "We don't have anybody that is able to look at the entire picture [of the Internet]. When something is happening, we don't know it's happening until it's too late." (*New York Times*, 12/20/2002)

### **USA Revives Nuremberg Show Trials**

Considering itself in a state of war (against terrorism), the USA intends to revive the procedural rules it applied during the post-WWII show trials against German and Japanese leaders in 1946. The new war crimes trials are directed against suspected terrorists and anybody who associates with them. These trials will be held under heavy secrecy and will apply streamlined rules of evidence. Secondhand and hearsay evidence will be allowed, contrary to U.S. criminal law. Also, the prosecution will be allowed to withhold certain information for security reasons, or allow only lawyers to see it. Pen-

tagon lawyers are even considering declaring mere membership in an alleged terrorist organization a crime, following the example of the Nuremberg prosecutions, which classified the entire SS as a criminal organization. Al-Qaida may be defined the same way. U.S. authorities are also considering holding the 600 terrorist suspects currently in Guantanamo and hundreds held in or near Afghanistan as "enemy combatants" for an indefinite period of time. (*Miami Herald* [www.thestate.com/mld/thestate/news/local/4817835.htm](http://www.thestate.com/mld/thestate/news/local/4817835.htm))

### **Holocaust Museum Honors Aborigines**

The Australian Jewish Holocaust Museum and Research Centre dedicated two plaques honoring the Aboriginal community. One plaque, placed inside the museum, commemorates the little-known 1938 protest by Aborigines against the persecution of Jews by NS-Germany. In December 1938, the Australian Aborigines' League (AAL) took a resolution to the doors of the German Consulate in Melbourne in the wake of Kristallnacht. Troy Austin, an official with the Aboriginal and Torres Strait Islander Commission (ATSIC), said he would not compare Aboriginal missions with NS concentration camps, but spoke of the 1930s as a period when theories of "social Darwinism and the superiority of the white man" were rampant. (*Australian Jewish News*, 12/27/2002)

### **US Obsessed with WWII and "Nazi Hunting"**

The Office of Special Investigations, the US Department of Justice's section for witch-hunting WWII veterans, has accused the Ukrainian-born NY resident Jaroslaw Bilaniuk, 79, who immigrated to the U.S. in 1949, of having been a guard at the Trawniki labor camp in Poland during World War II. Eli Rosenbaum, Jewish director of the OSI, wants to revoke Bilaniuk's U.S. citizenship and deport him to Ukraine. In May 2002, a similar case was filed against Jakiw Palij, who resides in NY as well.

Since the OSI began its activities in 1979, 71 WWII veterans who served the Axis have been stripped of U.S. citizenship and 57 have been deported. ([www.newsday.com/news/nationworld/nation/ny-nazi1227,0,6187012.story?col](http://www.newsday.com/news/nationworld/nation/ny-nazi1227,0,6187012.story?col))

In 2002, the OSI set a single-year record by seeking to revoke the citizenship of, or deport, ten American citizens accused of collaborating with Axis forces during WWII. Investigators are using recently opened archives in former communist countries and computer databases to witch-hunt the war veterans.

([http://abcnews.go.com/wire/Politics/ap20021226\\_1548.html](http://abcnews.go.com/wire/Politics/ap20021226_1548.html))

### **Mass Grave Found in Belarus**

An unsourced *Chicago Tribune* article of October 31, 2002, p. 5, reports on a mass grave found at Slutsk, Belarus, 60 miles south of Minsk. So far, 50 bodies have been exhumed, but neither the identities of the victims nor of their murderers are known. Local residents believe that the victims might be Jews from Slutsk and prisoners from a nearby concentration camp who were supposedly shot by "Nazi troops." A full excavation of the site is planned for spring 2003. Without giving any particulars, the article claims that up to 12,000 victims could be buried in this grave.

---

Update: Jan. 2, 2003



# The Revisionist

## Journal for Critical Historical Inquiry

---

Volume 1 • Number 2 • May 2003

---



**On the Brink of World War III:**  
How the Euro Triggered a War, p. 124

**Greenhouse Effect – Fact or Fiction?**  
Climate Controversy, pp. 131-138

**Are All Men Equal?**  
The Ideology Behind Race-Denial, p. 139

**Polish Population Losses in WWII:**  
Polonization of German Victims, p. 151

**Expulsion of Germans from Japan:**  
Post-WWII Fate of Former Allies, p. 156

**Lanzmann's Holocaust Movie *Shoa*:**  
Exposure of a Fraud, pp. 166-176

**Auschwitz 'Gas Chamber' Found!?**  
Revelation of a Media Hoax, p. 176

**Persecution of Revisionists:**  
Zündel, Hayward, Eaton, pp. 183-202

**Where is the Country Absurdistan?**  
Civil Rights in Germany, p. 203

**Internet Censorship**  
Blinded Search Engines, p. 220

# The Revisionist • Journal for Critical Historical Inquiry

Publisher: Castle Hill Publishers, PO Box 257768, Chicago IL 60625, USA; [chp@vho.org](mailto:chp@vho.org)  
PO Box 118, Hastings, TN34 3ZQ, UK

Established: in Fall 2002, first edition in February 2003

Chief Editor: Germar Rudolf; [tr@vho.org](mailto:tr@vho.org)

Foreign Language Editor: Jürgen Graf

News & Civil Rights Editor: Dr. Fredrick Töben; [news@vho.org](mailto:news@vho.org)

Reviews: [reviews@vho.org](mailto:reviews@vho.org)

Copy Editor: Andrew Fuetterer; [proof@vho.org](mailto:proof@vho.org)

Customer Care, Subscriptions, Orders: [chporder@vho.org](mailto:chporder@vho.org)

Fax: USA: ++1(413) 778-5749; UK: ++44(8701) 387263 (faxes to both numbers reach us immediately by email)

Internet: <http://www.vho.org/tr>

Advertisements: price list from Jan. 1, 2003; please ask us for our Media Data ([www.vho.org/tr/MediaData.pdf](http://www.vho.org/tr/MediaData.pdf)).

ISSN: 1542-376X

Publication Dates: quarterly: February, May, August, November; each issue currently has some 120 pages, perfect bound.

Subscriptions (including shipping and handling):

- Normal: \$55 (3 years: \$150).
- Students: \$38 (3 years: \$96) (please send photocopy of ID).
- Supporter: \$100 (3 years: \$270).
- Free: donators with a yearly donation volume  $\geq$ \$55 receive *The Revisionist* for free for one year, but are then asked to convert this into a normal subscription.

Single Issues: \$15\*

Trial Issues: free. Just ask us for one!\*\*

Promotion Copies: We can send you free promotion copies as well as promotional material for *The Revisionist* on request. Please get in touch with us.

Shipping: *The Revisionist* is currently printed in, and shipped from, the UK; all subscription prices include airmail delivery worldwide. Single issues come with a shipping fee.\*

Payment terms: 60 days net.

- cash: preferably US\$; we can also accept € and GB£.
- checks: make payable to Castle Hill Publishers
  - in US\$ only if drawn on a Canadian or U.S. bank!

- in GB£ only if drawn on a British bank!
- in € only if drawn on a bank within the European Currency Union.

– online with credit card: [www.vho.org/chp](http://www.vho.org/chp).

– transfer: please contact us for our bank accounts in Germany, the UK, and the U.S.A.

Cancellation: 3 months before the end of your current subscription, otherwise the subscription will renew automatically for another (3) year(s).

Copyrights: Reprint of published articles only with written permission. All rights reserved.

Royalties: We pay scholars suffering persecution a royalty for contributions published in our periodical. This seems to be the most appropriate way to help them.

Support: Should you consider our work valuable, we cordially ask you to support us according to your possibilities, be it by subscribing to our periodical, by donating subscriptions to others, by hiring new (potential) subscribers, by volunteering for our editorial efforts (proof-reading, translations, marketing), or even by donating funds. Any financial surplus will flow 100% into researching important historical topics.

## Requirements for the Publication of Articles in *The Revisionist*

### Requirements of Content:

Topics: History, especially modern history; also freedom of speech and freedom of science. If possible, new and hitherto unpublished reports, overviews, and research papers;

Style: Systematic structure; objective; backing up of factual statements with references; separation of opinion from factual statements.

External Requirements: For understandable reasons, we will also publish articles written under a pen name, which will, of course, be treated as highly confidential. Contributions sent in anonymously, which are also welcome, can only be published if their content is ready for print.

There is no restriction regarding the length of contributions. However, contributions which exceed 10 pages of our journal (some 50,000 characters or 9,000 words), may be split in several parts and published in consecutive issues. In such cases, the structuring of articles should allow such a partition.

Articles of two pages and more should include illustrations to break up the text (covers of works dealt with, document facsimiles, portraits of personalities and authors, pictures of historical events, maps, etc.).

Procedure: Except for articles sent in anonymously, proofs of all

articles considered for publications will be sent to the authors; no right for publication arises from this. The editors reserve their right to determine in which issue such articles will be published. Royalties are paid only in case the author(s) suffer under social and/or legal persecution for expressing her/his opinions. Authors receive only one proof copy. If expressively wished, we can send up to five proof copies.

Data: We prefer to receive contributions per email. We can process various data carriers (PC, 3.5"/1.44MB, and ZIP/100 or 250 MB, CD ROM). The file formats of all major type-setting and DTP programs can be read; for reasons of portability, file formats of \*.rtf (Rich Text Format), \*.html (HyperTextMarkupLanguage, *i.e.*, Internet files) and MS-Word files are preferred. Please do not send manuscripts by fax, as this renders optical character recognition almost impossible. Images can be sent in all usual data formats (\*.gif, \*.jpg, \*.png, \*.tif...) and also as hard copies.

3.5" floppy disks as well as unsolicited manuscripts will not be sent back; solicited manuscript as well as image hard copy only if expressively desired.

*Should you agree to these conditions,  
we are looking forward to receiving your papers.*

\* plus a shipping fee of \$1.- for each started \$12.50 of your entire order, if your order is not paid in advance. / \*\* Only one copy for each new customer

# Contents

<b>The Elephant(s) in the Room</b> .....	<b>122</b>	
<i>By Bradley R. Smith</i>		
<b>On The Brink of World War Three</b> .....	<b>124</b>	
<i>By Germar Rudolf</i>		
<b>Climatology—Science or Ideology?</b> .....	<b>131</b>	
<i>By Oswald Nettesheim</i>		
<i>Critical Remarks concerning Greenhouse-Revisionism</i> .....	<i>135</i>	
<i>By Germar Rudolf</i>		
<b>All Men Are Equal—But Are They Really?</b> .....	<b>139</b>	
<i>By Paul Grubach</i>		
<b>Polish Population Losses during World War Two</b> .....	<b>151</b>	
<i>By Dr. Otward Müller</i>		
<b>The Expulsion of Germans from Japan, 1947-1948</b> .....	<b>156</b>	
<i>By Charles Burdick, PhD</i>		
<b>Holocaust Movie <i>Shoah</i> Exposed as Propaganda</b>		
<i>About the Shoa-Interview with the alleged Treblinka SS-Man Franz Suchomel, by Jean-Francois Beaulieu</i> .....		<i>166</i>
<i>Rudolf Vrba exposes himself as a liar, by Ernst Bruun</i> .....		<i>169</i>
<i>Abraham Bomba, Barber of Treblinka, by Bradley R. Smith</i> .....		<i>170</i>
<b>The ‘Discovery’ of ‘Bunker 1’ at Birkenau: Swindles, Old and New</b> .....	<b>176</b>	
<i>By Carlo Mattogno</i>		
<b>Ernst Zündel: His Struggle for Germany</b> .....	<b>183</b>	
<i>By Dr. Ingrid Rimland</i>		
<b>Bing goes Hayward’s Ghost</b> .....	<b>197</b>	
<i>By Dr. Fredrick Töben</i>		
<b>Discovering Absurdistan</b> .....	<b>203</b>	
<i>By Germar Rudolf</i>		
<b>Censorship of the Internet</b> .....	<b>220</b>	
<i>By Germar Rudolf</i>		
<b>Book Reviews</b>		
<i>The Israeli Masada Myth Exposed, by Robert H. Countess, Ph.D.</i> .....		<i>222</i>
<i>Revisionism: The Most Dangerous Topic, by Bruno Chapsky</i> .....		<i>225</i>
<i>A Provocative History of the Aryan Race, by Robert H. Countess, Ph.D.</i> .....		<i>227</i>
<i>On Third Reich Flying Saucers, German Physics, and the Perpetuum Mobile, by Germar Rudolf</i> .....		<i>229</i>
<b>Research News</b>		
<i>The Sinking of the Battleship Bismarck, by Wolfgang Pfitzner</i> .....		<i>234</i>
<i>From the Records of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, Part 2, by Germar Rudolf</i> .....		<i>235</i>
<b>Letters to the Editor</b> .....	<b>239</b>	
<b>In Brief</b> .....	<b>240</b>	

# The Elephant(s) in the Room

By Bradley R. Smith

Most of us understand that it is unwise to draw a connection between the Israeli/Palestinian tragedy, 9/11, Afghanistan, and the U.S. administration's war against Iraq. The common understanding is that to suggest such a connection publicly, and in many contexts privately, is to risk being condemned as an anti-Semite. This fear is perfectly well founded. You will be. No one wants to be accused of stupidity, or of committing a thought crime either.

"It is the proverbial elephant in the room. Everybody sees it, no one mentions it," as Michael Kinsley has it in *Slate*.<sup>1</sup> The elephant in the room is Israel, and the influence that Israeli and American Zionists represent in the Bush administration. Mr. Bush is the fellow who said on national television that yes, he believes Sharon, the butcher of Beirut—not to go on about it—is a "man of peace." The way that Saddam is "evil," I would suppose. Whatever works.

While Kinsley and a few other journalists are willing to mention the fact that there is, indeed, an Elephant in the War Room, it doesn't occur to them—let's give them the benefit of the doubt that it doesn't occur to them—that the paternity of the beast in question might be of some interest to their readers. Who sired it, for example? Who suckled it until it found its present immensity? Who among us is dedicated to cleaning and feeding this unwieldy and dangerous pet? How has it grown to become the unlikely creature upon which even the values of American culture rest?

That fact is, there is more than one Elephant in the War Room. Behind the one that is visible, yet goes unnoticed, is the Mother of all Elephants-in-the-Room—the mother that protects her calf, encourages him, assures him that no one will ever question what he is doing, and will go on feeding and nurturing him forever until the final catastrophe reveals itself—the flood of war, retaliation, blood, and weapons of mass destruction. Who is she?

Her name is Holocaust. She is the living heart of memory and sentimentality upon which all acts by her overgrown calf are given moral legitimacy. On that very rare occasion when the calf is questioned about his contempt for Arabs, his brutality, or his greed for Palestinian land, he raises his great flop of an ear for his mother's counsel. Without moving from the shadows, she extends her sinuous trunk and through it whispers to her son: "Take the conversation back to the ovens of Auschwitz, my darling. Take it back to Auschwitz, my darling boy."

It isn't that the big lug had forgotten what had always worked so well in the past. Like every bull calf with a powerful parent, he wanted to be reassured. When you have on your conscience what this beast has on its conscience, reassurance is always in order. Of course, he would never forget Auschwitz. Auschwitz was never out of his thoughts. Auschwitz was beautiful. Auschwitz was like a wonderful dream. Rolling logs, taking people for rides to Yad Vashem, grabbing Palestinian land, trampling whoever got in his way, or cheerfully switching his short, ferocious tail among the glasses at cocktail parties in Tel

Aviv and Washington, Auschwitz was always there, the perfect cover. Auschwitz was like a magic blanket, thrown over his huge haunch, assuring him that while he would continue to be seen by everyone, he would continue to be ignored by everyone.

Like the Michael Kinsleys. □

**Mel Gibson** is producing a movie about what we know about the crucifixion of Christ. What we believe we know about it. Rabbi Marvin Hier of the Simon Wiesenthal Center is worried. He appears to be afraid that Gibson, a traditionalist Catholic, might portray with some accuracy the role that Jews played in the execution of Jesus. Further, Hier is worried that Gibson might imply that all Jews everywhere are responsible for the death of Jesus. Still, the rabbi exhibits a civilized restraint.

*"Obviously, no one has seen The Passion and I certainly have no problem with Mel Gibson's right to believe as he sees fit or make any movie he wants to."*

But then there is the matter of Mel's father, Hutton Gibson. The old man (he's 84) is a radical conspiracy theorist who argues that there is a growing tradition of "anti-popes" in the Vatican, that it could be a Masonic plot backed by "the Jews," and rejects the assertion that Al Qaeda hijackers had anything to do with the attacks on the World Trade towers.

I have nothing to say about any of that. However...

In the interview published in the *New York Times Magazine*,<sup>2</sup> Hutton dismissed "historical accounts that six million Jews were exterminated. 'Go ask any undertaker or the guy who operates the crematorium what it takes to get rid of a dead body,' he said. 'It takes one liter of petrol and 20 minutes. Now, six million?'" He went on to assert that "...there were more [Jews] after the war than before."

And "'The entire catastrophe was manufactured,' said Hutton, 'as part of an arrangement between Hitler and 'financiers' to move Jews out of Germany. Hitler 'had this deal where he was supposed to make it rough on them so they would all get out and migrate to Israel because they needed people there to fight the Arabs,' he said."<sup>3</sup>

It's clear then that Mel Gibson has a handful with his father. I'm not saying that the old man is right or wrong about any of it, except that he is in the ballpark about the "six million" nonsense and the cremations. No cigar, but it's a start, especially when you're eighty-four.

When it comes to the old man, Rabbi Marvin Hier has a sudden change of heart about people having "the right to believe as they see fit." When asked about the remarks of Hutton Gibson in the *NYT Magazine* article Rabbi Hier said: "To bigots and anti-Semites, no amount of evidence or scientific proof is ever enough. In their world only hate matters."

Scientific evidence? There we go! That's more like the Rabbi Hier I'm familiar with. This is about the Holocaust! The Gibson's have their true beliefs, and the rabbi has his. No more

civilized chat about the elder Gibson's "right to believe as he sees fit." If he doubts what Rabbi Hier believes is true about gas chambers and cremations, the old man is going down. He's a "hater." To hell with the right to disagree! This is the Holocaust!

For those curious about "scientific" evidence, or lack of it, for gas chambers see: Samuel Crowell, "Technique and Operation of German Anti-Gas Shelters in WWII: A Refutation of J.C. Pressac's Criminal Traces."<sup>4</sup>

That's one problem with believing the sacred stories—any of them. The Holocaust story is merely the sacred story of religious and secular Jews alike, among others. That's why you can't question it—it's sacred. There's no wriggle room inside a sacred story. Inside there, there is only room for the certainty of true belief, and the pleasure that that certainty brings to the true believer. Anything that breaks into that sacred place is a danger to that pleasure. The danger is that what is believed to be certain might be exposed as doubtful, even false. That's where certainty ends, that's where pleasure ends, and where pain and anger begin.

The threat, the fear that true belief has failed him and might fail him again, is the source of the Rabbi's anguish, his anger, and his desperation. Like all modern philo-Semites in America, he has put aside the jawbone of the ass (no pun intended) to wield slander as a destroyer of reputations, create thought criminals, and make taboo any kind of open debate on his own sacred story.

Okay. In the interests of full disclosure—the pun was intended.

For myself, I have no problem with issues of certainty and true belief. I'm uncertain about everything, while I believe in nothing. I do have prejudices. I desire many things. Looking for pleasure in all the wrong places. □

**Regime Change.** War can be a distraction, even when you are not a part of it. The immense drama of the events, the life and death issues for hundreds of thousands, questions of tyranny and liberty. This morning I hear our people beginning to emphasize "liberating the Iraqi people" rather than regime change. I like the change of emphasis. It doesn't take much to make me happy. Regime change can lead to the liberation of a people, or it can lead to something else. In 1948 there was a regime change in Palestine in favor of the Jews of Europe. Who did it liberate?

Regime change in Palestine led to war, the mass transfer of land from Palestinians to Jews, the confiscation of Palestinian real property in favor of Jews, and the creation of hundreds of

thousands of Palestinian refugees. It led to successive wars, the movement to found Jewish settlements on Arab land that does not belong to Jews, the creation of armed Palestinian guerilla groups to fight the "invader", and a growing hostility to Israel, Jews, and the Americans who pay for everything, all over the Arab and then the Muslim worlds.

So there is regime change, and there is regime change. Imagine if there had been a rhetoric about "liberating the Palestinian people" in 1948 rather than the cant about the coming regime change from an Arab one to one organized by Jews. Everything in that part of the world today would be different. We do not know what would have gone on without the Israeli state squatting in the middle of an Arab world, but it would be different. Jews would be living under Arab administrations, where Jews had lived comfortably for centuries, and the U.S. administration might well have had to look elsewhere to find someone to liberate.

Rhetoric about liberating the Palestinian people was not on the table. All the rhetoric was about how the European Jews had been exterminated in gas chambers by Nazis and thus had the right to initiate regime change in Palestine. No matter that that charge of unique monstrosity against the Germans was never proven, but simply taken judicial notice of by the Nuremberg court, on the evidence of "eyewitnesses," many of whom have since been shown to have been fools or liars. You are not supposed to say this. It's taboo. Truth has no role in the world of taboo. Truth is no defense against breaking a taboo.

When the Americans finish with Iraq, or begin the process of being finished with Iraq, the issue of the victimization of Palestinian Arabs by Israeli Jews will still be there, festering. Israeli contempt for the Palestinians, U.S. funding for whatever Israelis want, or want to do, the anger of Arab and Muslim radicals in response, it will all be there then, just as it is now. Can't talk about it. After the Germans exterminated the European Jews, they swarmed (forgetting for the moment that they had just been "exterminated") into Palestine and grabbed the biggest part of it for themselves. The violence they precipitated has never ended. There is no reason to think that it is going to end any time soon. They had the right to take what they wanted. After all, they had just been exterminated.

Can't talk about it. □

#### Notes

- <sup>1</sup> <http://slate.msn.com/id/2073093>
- <sup>2</sup> [www.nytimes.com/2003/03/09/magazine/09GIBSON.html](http://www.nytimes.com/2003/03/09/magazine/09GIBSON.html)
- <sup>3</sup> See [http://abclocal.go.com/kabc/news/030903\\_nw\\_gibson.html](http://abclocal.go.com/kabc/news/030903_nw_gibson.html)
- <sup>4</sup> [www.codoh.com/incon/incompressac.html](http://www.codoh.com/incon/incompressac.html)



*Since 1980, Bradley R. Smith was fascinated by the taboo surrounding the 'Holocaust,' which is protecting this historical issue from a free exchange of ideas even in "open societies." Between 1986 and 1991, Smith developed the Media Project for the Institute for Historical Review. In 1987, he self-published his book Confessions of a Holocaust Revisionist and co-founded the Committee For Open Debate on the Holocaust (CODOH). In 1991, Smith launched his "Campus Project," that is, running advertisements in student papers at colleges and universities around the USA calling for open debate on specific issues regarding the Holocaust story. In 1996, CODOH.com went online, which was the biggest revisionist website for many years. In 1999, Smith founded The Revisionist, which was taken over by Castle Hill Publishers end of 2002. In 2003, he self-published his second book Break His Bones. Smith writes editorials similar to those published here, which he posts on his website BreakHisBones.com.*

# On The Brink of World War Three

Why the USA must wage war, but cannot wage it against the country it ought to

By Germar Rudolf

The reason for most wars is massive economic tensions between competing nations or a huge economic crisis of a single nation that tries to solve it with violence to the outside. After all, war has to be financed, and without the support of big business and the big banks, no major war could ever be fought. So there must be at least the promise of a big financial profit for high finance to make them support it. The reasons for the U.S. war against Iraq are certainly multi-fold, but those given by the U.S. government—humanitarian assistance for the Iraqi people and destruction of phantom-like weapons of mass destruction—can easily be dismissed as something that would certainly not open the wallets of Wall Street. So what economic reason drives the U.S. to destabilize an entire region, pushing the world to the brink of a global conflict? The following will argue that nothing less than a looming collapse of the Dollar and subsequently the danger of a collapse of the USA, as the last super power, is the driving force behind the desperate, but futile, attempt of the U.S. government to try to force the world to recognize its economy and its currency as the central market place on earth.

## 1. A Close Look at the US Economy

I will not deal here with inflation, the growth of the Gross Domestic Product (GDP), unemployment rates, interest rates, or similar parameters, which are all subject to various factors and—unless they show extreme values—do not really reveal anything about the shape of a country's economy. What is decisive in the context of this article, though, are the following factors:

- 1) Public debt in relation to GDP
- 2) Private debt and savings
- 3) Foreign trade balance over an extended period of time

### 1.1. PUBLIC DEBT IN RELATION TO GDP

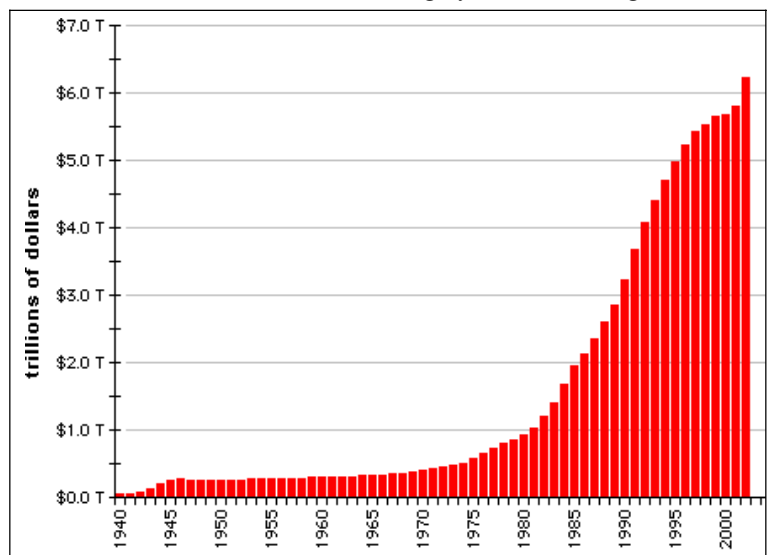
Graph 1 shows the development of U.S. public debt, Graph 2 gives figures corrected for inflation. Graph 3 shows the GDP between 1940 and 2002 corrected for inflation (1996 dollars)

Hence, in 2002, the U.S. had a relative public debt of 60% of the Gross Domestic Product. Historically seen, the situation was much worse at the end of World War Two, when public debt was roughly equal to the GDP, but in the booming years thereafter, this ratio fell to a minimum in 1981 of just 30%. What followed thereafter has become known as "Reaganomics", that is, the governmental spending of huge amounts of money borrowed from the Federal Reserve Bank, which means it was created out of nothing. This tendency was slowed down under Clinton, but accelerated again in 2002 under Bush junior.

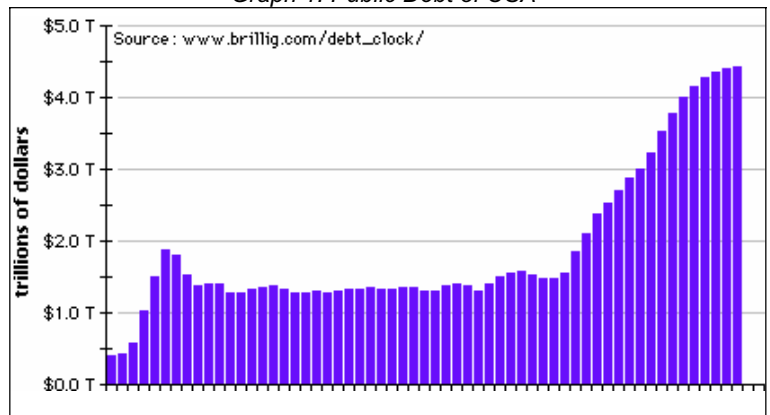
### 1.2. PRIVATE DEBT AND SAVINGS

It is a well-known fact that Americans live on loans and mortgages. This is also reflected in the nation's accumulated private savings and private debts. Until 2000, private savings and investments rose steadily to a maximum of 1.8 trillion dollars. However, since 1998, private savings grew considerably slower than the GDP, and since 2000, private net savings actually decreased, to reach a low of 1.55 trillion dollars by the end of 2002,

with the tendency of further reduction. Graph 4 shows the development of private savings in percent to the GDP. For decades, savings grew almost steadily, but since 1998, U.S. households as well as businesses spend more than they save. A similar trend can be seen in debts. In 2001, the average U.S. businesses had debts that were roughly 6.25 times higher than its



Graph 1: Public Debt of USA<sup>1</sup>



Graph 2: Real Public Debt of USA (based on 1990 dollars)

yearly profits. Overall, the ratio between debt and available yearly income rose steadily from 80% in 1956 to over 170% in 2001, with a sharp increase of this ratio since 1998, see Graph 5.

In total figures, private debts in the U.S. today amount to twice the GDP, or some 20 trillion dollars, compared to a total of private savings of only 1.55 trillion dollars.<sup>4</sup> Some 80% of these debts are covered by real estate, but consumer debts amount to some 2 trillion dollars.

### 1.3. FOREIGN TRADE BALANCE

Having debts is not necessarily a bad thing. It all depends on who owes whom and if it is possible to pay it off. However, a look into the foreign trade balance of the U.S. reveals that the U.S. is not just dealing with Americans owing Americans, but with Americans owing foreigners. Graph 6 shows the accumulated trade balance of the US since 1940. The first year with a massive trade deficit (32 billion dollars) was 1983, which happens to be the same year in which public debt rose considerably for the first time since 1945. Ever since, the U.S. trade deficit has increased dramatically. Today, the U.S. owes almost 3 trillion dollars, or 30% of its GDP, to foreign nationals or nations.

### 1.4. THE CONSEQUENCES

Any company displaying such figures would have long ago gone bankrupt. But the United States of America is still functioning. The reason for this is that the world still has faith in the dollar. Most of the money that flows abroad as a result of the U.S. trade deficit comes back, by foreigners investing their profits mainly in U.S. government bonds, that is, by financing the public debt, which in turn fills the financial holes in the U.S. economy. This can, of course, work only as long as the world does not lose faith in the U.S. dollar and has no alternative to it.

## 2. The Euro, an Alternative to the US-Dollar?

### 2.1. EXCHANGE RATE TO THE DOLLAR

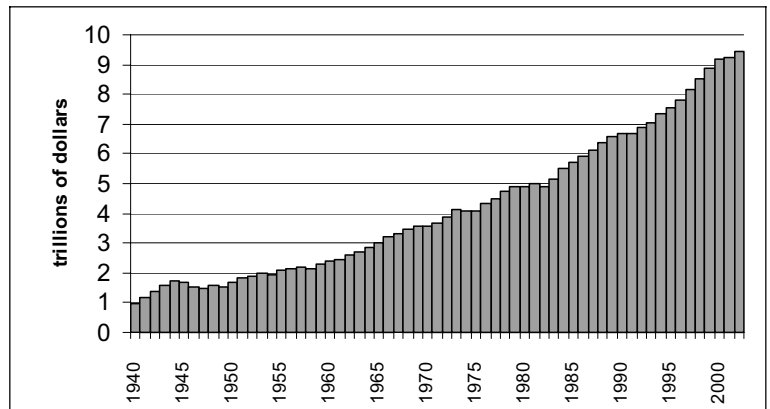
In 1999, the European Currency was introduced in 12 European countries. Since the participating countries are economically and politically very heterogeneous, it was assumed that this currency would not be very successful, but would steadily lose value compared to the US Dollar. Initially, this turned out to be true. The Euro reached its lowest point in late 2000 (1.20 € for 1 \$). However, something decisive happened which made this trend turn around, see further down below, and the Euro started to rise steeply, reaching its highest value on March 11, 2003, with 90 €-cents for 1 \$, see Graph 7.<sup>5</sup>

### 2.2. EUROPE'S ECONOMY COMPARED TO THE US ECONOMY

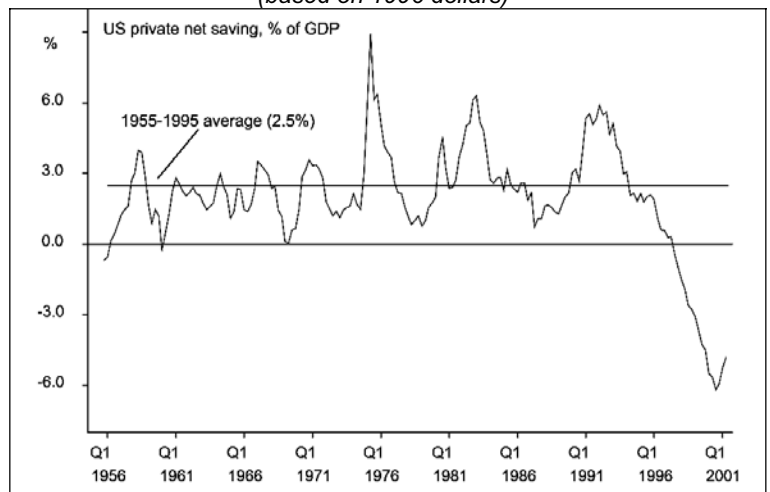
Regarding unemployment, growth and public debt, Europe's economy is certainly not in a better shape than the U.S. economy. Whereas the public debt of the US is at 60% of its GDP, it is on average at 70% in the European countries.<sup>6</sup> But Europe has two advantages: it usually has

a trade surplus—in 2001 of some 25 billion dollars<sup>5</sup>—and private savings and debts are basically balanced.<sup>7</sup> As a result of this, foreign nationals and entire nations owe Europe roughly one trillion dollars.<sup>8</sup>

Particularly interesting is a look into the economy of the economical motor of Europe, Germany. Plagued with all the major issues of basically all European economies—high unemployment, high public debt, low growth—it is still the second biggest exporting nation on earth after the US and has the big-



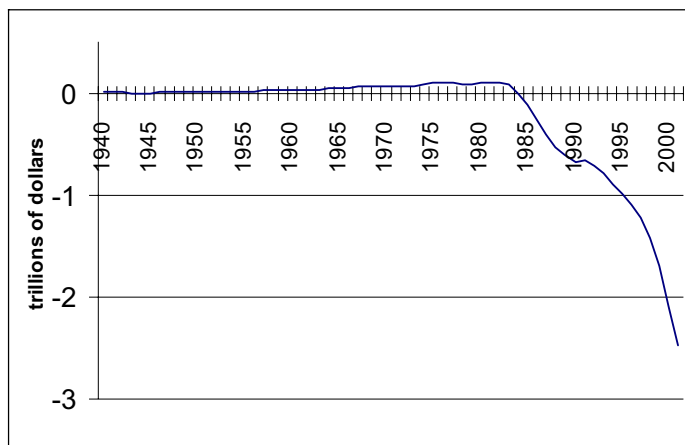
Graph 3: Real Gross Domestic Product of USA (based on 1996 dollars)<sup>2</sup>



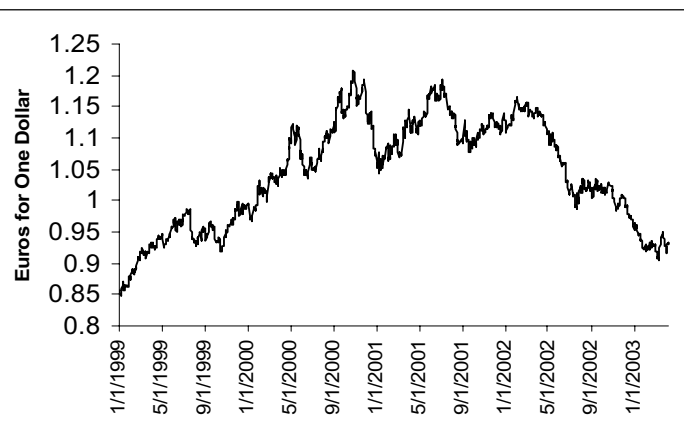
Graph 4: Private Savings in % of the GDP in USA<sup>3</sup>



Graph 5: Ratio of Private Debt to annual available income<sup>3</sup>



Graph 6: Accumulated trade balance of USA<sup>2</sup>



Graph 7: Euro exchange rates for the Dollar<sup>10</sup>

gest foreign trade surplus of all countries in the world, with a stunning 126.3 billion Euros in 2002, which was an increase of 45% compared to 2001 (87.1 Bill. Euros), after it had a fairly constant value of around 50 to 70 billion Euros over the last two decades.<sup>9</sup> Hence, it comes as no surprise that private savings in Germany are very high.

### 2.3. JAPAN IS NO RIVAL ANYMORE

Between 1991 and 2001, Japan's ratio of gross public debt to GDP rose from 61 per cent to 131 per cent, much the highest for any developed country, and it is growing quickly.<sup>11</sup> Total private debts in Japan are almost four times as high as its GDP, which is more than three times the factor of the US private debt. Those ratios in Japan are being made worse every month caused by deflation, which at perhaps 4% annually in Japan (measured in consumer prices) is the most pronounced in the world. The reason for this deflation is the huge overcapacity of Japan's industry.

Deflation aggravated the Great Depression in the U.S. in the 1930s, and this new one, with its current center in Japan can spread. End of April 2003, I accidentally heard a radio commercial in the US, in which Mitsubishi offered cars for negative interest with a slogan like this:

*"Buy a Mitsubishi and get 50 dollars every month for one year!"*

They give consumers money to have them buy their cars!

What if Japan devalued the yen, taking it from 133 to the dollar to 140 or 150? These Mitsubishis would then be even cheaper for U.S. customers.

At the same time Japan faces a debt bomb at home, it is also the world's largest creditor, which means that Japan's savings are invested abroad, a result of decades of huge foreign trade surpluses. If its banks were panicked into calling in overseas loans, because the Japanese decide they have to pay back their private debts, an economic contraction would sweep America and the globe.<sup>12</sup>

In other words: After the economic crisis in East Asia in the late 1990s, Japan is at the brink of a collapse comparable to the Black Friday in the US in 1929. What holds the Japanese economy together is pure fear of the consequences and the hope that world economy will sooner or later pick up again, allowing Japan's over-capacity to be put into operation again.

## 3. The Euro, a Perfect Reason for War

### 3.1. REACTIONS TO THE EURO

What would it mean to the US economy if the Euro would be accepted by the world as an equal competitor of the US Dollar?

In the recently released book *Behind the Invasion of Iraq*, Indian economists have thoroughly analyzed the situation the U.S. finds itself in. I quote:<sup>13</sup>

"In the 1970s, there was no alternative to the dollar. On January 1, 1999, an alternative arose in the form of the Euro, the new currency of the European Union (EU). Of course, investors did not immediately flock to the Euro. The Euro stuttered at birth, falling 30 per cent against the dollar by the end of 2000. In the last year, however, it has picked up sharply, and in recent months has remained at parity with the dollar (*i.e.* about one Euro per dollar).

The Euro has become attractive for three reasons.

First, since the EU is a large imperialist economy, about the same size as the US, it is an attractive and stable investment for foreign investors.

Secondly, since foreign investors' holdings are overwhelmingly in dollars, they wish to diversify and thus reduce the risk of losses in case of a dollar decline: they are increasingly nervous at the size of the US debt mountain and the failure of the US government to tackle this problem.

Thirdly, certain countries smarting under American military domination sense that the rule of the dollar is now vulnerable, and see the switch to the Euro as a way to hit back.

Thus even in November 2000, when the Euro was 30 per cent down against the dollar, Iraq demanded UN approval to be paid in Euros in the UN oil-for-food programme. This despite the fact that the currency markets at the time did not see a rebound for the Euro and despite the fact that Iraq would make the switch at considerable immediate cost, losing 10 cents a barrel to compensate buyers for their currency conversion costs. Iraq also asked that the \$10 billion in its frozen bank account in New York be converted to Euros. The UN, a plaything of the US, resisted the change until Iraq threatened to suspend its oil exports.<sup>14</sup>

Iran, which the US has now labelled, along with Iraq and North Korea, as part of an 'axis of evil', is also contemplating switching to the Euro. The Iran National Oil Company wel-



comed the launch of the Euro in 1998 itself, saying that ‘This money will free us from the rule of the dollar’, and we ‘will adopt it’. The national oil company and other major Iranian companies have made it clear to both their European and Latin American oil partners that they would ‘prefer the Euro’. While Iran continued using the dollar thereafter, there are indications it could follow Iraq’s example. The Iranian government budget for the year to March 2002 was tabulated in dollars, but in December 2001 an oil ministry official said that ‘could change in the future’. *Iran News* (12/29/01) called for a switch to the Euro for both oil and non-oil trade:<sup>15</sup>

*‘The euro could become our currency of choice’ if it made gains on the dollar. Since then the euro has climbed 14 per cent against the dollar.’*

Some in Saudi Arabia have called for switching to the Euro as ‘a more effective punishment [than an oil embargo] for the United States, Israel’s principal source of financial and political support’.<sup>16</sup>

At the Russia-European Union summit in May 2001:<sup>17</sup>

*‘EU leaders [...] made an audacious bid to lure Russia away from its reliance on the greenback [the dollar], calling on Moscow to start accepting euros instead of dollars for its exports, dangling the attractive carrot of a boom in investment and trade.’*

*In a report commissioned by Russia’s Central Bank in July 1999, the Russian Academy of Science said: ‘The introduction of the euro directly bears on the strategic interests of Russia and alters the conditions for its integration into the world economy. In the final analysis, the consequences are to the benefit of our country.’ Olga Butorina from the Academy of Science said whereas EU states accounted for 33 percent of trade turnover in 1998 compared with 8 percent for the United States, 80 percent of foreign trade contracts—mainly for oil, gas and other commodities—were concluded in dollars.... [Switching to the Euro] would increase dramatically the demand for euros in the world,’ she said. ‘For sure, it would be an important strategic shift and the euro would start to compete with the dollar in international trade markets.’*

Another likely candidate for switching to the Euro is Venezuela, whose leader Hugo Chavez the US has been attempting to oust over the last year, without success (at the time of going to press). It is not only the oil economies that would make the switch (for example, North Korea too recently said it would convert its foreign exchange reserves to the Euro); but the shift of the major oil exporters to accepting payment in Euros would indeed have a major, potentially devastating, impact on the dollar.

The more countries that switch to the Euro, the more attractive would be the Euro.” End quote.

### 3.2. THE IMPACT ON THE DOLLAR

What would happen if the Euro became an equal competitor of the US Dollar? The answer to this might be rather easy: with its imperialistic politics especially of the Post-Cold War era, the US has made so many enemies around the world that an acceptance of the Euro as an equal competitor would probably lead to a massive relocation of the world’s monetary values to the

Euro. This means that the US trade and public deficit could no longer be financed with incoming foreign investments and that a lot of older investments would be withdrawn. Hence, the consequence of a successful Euro would be nothing short of a total collapse of the US economy and thus the end of US imperialism, hegemony, yes, the demise of the United States as a super power, at least temporarily.

However, a collapsing United States would have a devastating effect on the entire world economy, leading to a worldwide economic crisis compared to which the crisis that started in 1929 would look like a breeze. After all, it is not only the U.S. economy that is built on sand. It might be the weakest link in the chain, but most industrialized nations are in deep financial trouble as well, caused by massive over-capacity and huge public and private debts.

Normally, one way out of an exploding trade deficit would be the devaluation of the nation’s currency, to make imports more expensive and exports cheaper. Such a solution, however, would mean that the dollar becomes less attractive to foreign investors, again with the Euro as the winning currency. To keep investors in America, interest rates would have to rise, but this would throttle domestic consumption, which is already dangerously low. Hence, the USA finds itself in a no-win situation.

### 3.3. BACKING THE DOLLAR WITH OIL

Even though the US imports huge amounts of oil, it is far less dependent on these imports than other industrial countries in Europe and East Asia, thanks to its own natural oil resources. Being able to control prices and distribution of the Arab oil reserves be means of dictating the currency to be used for payment and by politically and militarily controlling this part of the world would not only stabilize the dollar, but would also put all the other competing industrial countries at the mercy of the USA. If, on the other hand, the Euro would be accepted as a currency in the oil trade, this would certainly mean general economic upheaval for the US. Since the oil exporting countries are also those who pioneer the idea of accepting Euro as payment for their oil—Iraq being the first to actually do it—nothing is more logical than trying to get those oil exporting countries to stick to the dollar, no matter what it costs. At stake is the mere existence of the US as a dominating power. Being able to control the oil market with its currency and with its military power is the only option left to the US. And since all peaceful attempts have failed, war seems to be the only solution left.

However, a war will only increase the world’s hostility toward the US, hence also the inclination of many countries to switch over to the Euro, and it will furthermore increase the domestic economic problems of the US by massively increasing public debt. Hence, war will perhaps delay America’s economical problems to surface for a short period of time, but it will not prevent the coming crisis.

## 4. Other Reasons for War—Real and Imagined

### 4.1. RELIGIOUS FUNDAMENTALISM

In this situation, Israel plays an important strategic role in the Middle East as a country equipped with a huge arsenal of conventional weapons and weapons of mass destruction and the

determination to use them. Israel will serve as a tool—with its own imperialistic and expansionistic agenda—to subjugate the Middle East.

On the other hand, the Jews in Israel and all Zionists around the world know pretty well that a major economic collapse of the US would mean the end of Israel in the long run. Therefore, Israel will be more than ready and happy to assist the US in its imperialistic conquest of any petrol exporting country in the Middle East.

As such, it cannot come to anybody's surprise that many of those individuals in the Bush administration and in the US media who pushed for or promoted the war are Zionist Jews, often euphemistically referred to as "neo-Conservatives," as Chalmers Johnson,<sup>18</sup> Jason Vest,<sup>19</sup> Pat Buchanan,<sup>20</sup> and Congressman James Moran, a pro-Zionist Democrat,<sup>21</sup> and other individuals and organizations<sup>22</sup> have pointed out recently. As a result of his harmless remark, J. Moran is now strongly advised not to run for re-election,<sup>23</sup> which is evidence enough of the real power of the Jewish lobby.<sup>24</sup> Ironically, the leading Israeli newspaper *Haaretz* admitted shortly thereafter that Moran is right:<sup>25</sup>

*"The war in Iraq was conceived by 25 neoconservative intellectuals,<sup>[26]</sup> most of them Jewish, who are pushing President Bush to change the course of history."*

But it should also be mentioned that some of the most ardent opponents of this war are Jews as well: Noach Chomsky<sup>27</sup> and Gore Vidal.<sup>28</sup>

Another contributing factor is Christian fundamentalism in the form of the Southern Baptist Church and the Pentecostals, two protestant denominations which dominate the southern parts of the U.S., the so-called "Bible Belt." A considerable part of the U.S. Republican Party is strongly influenced by these groups, e.g., George W. Bush and Attorney General John Ashcroft are active members in them. Many of these Christians are fervent supporters of the Jewish right to defend and even expand the territory of their "Holy Land" with any means, and they generally have a very hostile, crusade-like attitude toward Islam as being an evil to be fought. These radical Christians do not shy away from risking a major war in the Middle East, because in their eyes this would just be the fulfillment of the New Testament's prophecy of the upcoming Battle of Armageddon and the second coming of Christ.

No need to say that Islamic fundamentalism is contributing to the tensions as well, meaning that not all accusations of civil right infringements leveled against Arab countries are totally unfounded. The problem is that Iraq is the most secular country

of all Arab countries, and that there is no evidence that it ever supported Muslim extremists.

#### 4.2. WEAPONS OF MASS DESTRUCTION

In August 1945, U.S. bombers dropped two atom bombs on Japanese cities. During the Vietnam war, U.S. airplanes poured out thousands of tons of agent orange over thousands of square miles. And just recently, in the wake of the eternal war on terror, the U.S. administration declared publicly that it keeps its option open to use tactical nuclear weapons even against countries which do not have such weapons.

There is neither doubt that Iraq once owned and used weapons of mass destruction in its war against Iran, nor that it received those weapons or the supplies and technology to build them mainly from the United States and her allies. There has

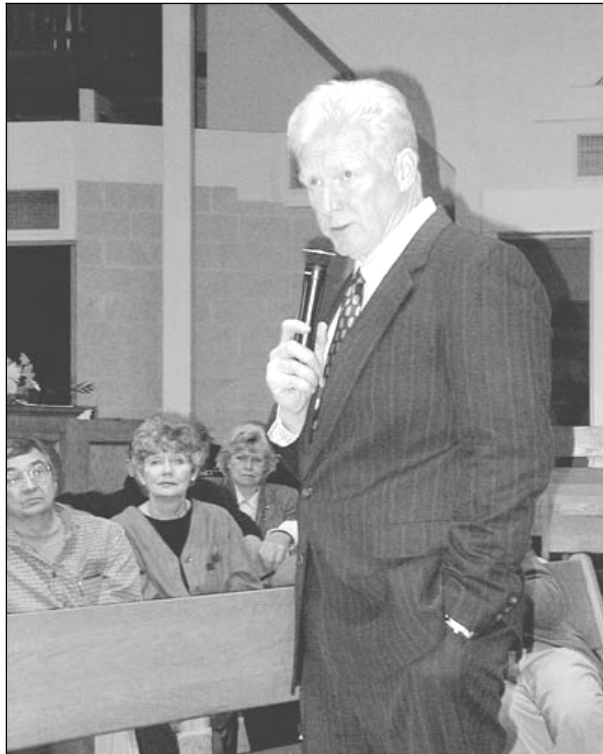
been plenty of speculation, however, whether or not Iraq has weapons of mass destruction *today*. The most stunning revelation about the bogus nature of claims made in this regard by the U.S. administration was broadcasted in early 2003 during the first issue of the political TV magazine *Active Opposition* by the American left-wing opposition TV station *World Link TV*, dispelling the myth that Iraq had any such weapons.<sup>29</sup> Fact is that during the first day of the war, CNN announced that Ariel Sharon, minister president of Israel, had remarked there would be no danger for his country because Iraq had no capabilities to attack Israel, which is revealing enough.

On the other hand, there can not be any doubt that other countries do possess weapons of mass destruction, starting with China, North Korea, Iran, Egypt, Pakistan, India, and many more.

Hence, when it comes to the amount of weapons of mass destruction accumulated, the history of its (ab)use, and the declared will to use it, the United States of America should be the first nation on earth to be declared war against, if any. This is not meant to encourage war against the U.S. I merely want to point out that the argument of having produced, abused, and declared to keep using such weapons can easily be turned around and used against the USA. So the U.S. administration should watch out what arguments they use to justify their wars.

#### 4.3. HUMANITARIAN REASONS

The ruling Baath party in Iraq rose to power after a putsch in 1963, which had been massively supported by the U.S. It was also the U.S. which pushed Hussein into the war with Iran after the Iranian fundamentalist revolution in 1979. As is generally known, the U.S. has repeatedly supported and even in-



*U.S. Rep. James Moran during his criticized speech on the Jewish role in pushing the U.S. into war against Iraq.*

stalled dictatorships all over the world, also by supporting putsches against democratically elected governments. Finally, there is a sheer endless number of non-democratic societies on earth, starting with all Arab nations, some of which are massively supported by the US (like Kuwait, Saudi-Arabia, Algeria, Egypt, Jordan...).

Furthermore, the current humanitarian crisis in Iraq is mainly a result of sanctions imposed on Iraq which, in the opinion of most countries of the world, are unfairly harsh. For example, the current sanctions do not even allow for the delivery of basic chemicals (Chlorine) to treat Iraq's water so that it is potable, to give just one example. Despite many protests by UN representatives, the sanctions are upheld mainly due to U.S. and British pressure. The despicable cynicism of U.S. politics toward the people of Iraq became more than obvious when the then U.S. Secretary of State Madeleine Albright, asked whether the death of 500,000 innocent Iraqi children that occurred between 1991 and 1996 would be worth continuing these cruel politics, cynically answered that she thought it was worth it.<sup>30</sup> In the meantime, some 2,000,000 Iraqis, half of them children, have died in excess of the normal death rate as a result of the imposed sanctions, which, according to Denis Halliday, humanitarian coordinator of the UN in Iraq, is nothing short of genocide.<sup>31</sup>

Of course, fighting a dictator who suppresses his own people is permissible. But who can still remember the lies invented prior to the first war against Iraq, claiming that Iraqi soldiers had ripped babies from incubators and killed them?<sup>32</sup> The whole story was invented, but played a major role in convincing the U.N. Security Council to vote for war. And who remembers the grotesquely exaggerated story about Hussein's army killing hundred thousands of innocent Kurds in the north of his country? It is still repeated today, with great effect but no supportive evidence.<sup>33</sup> It should also be pointed out

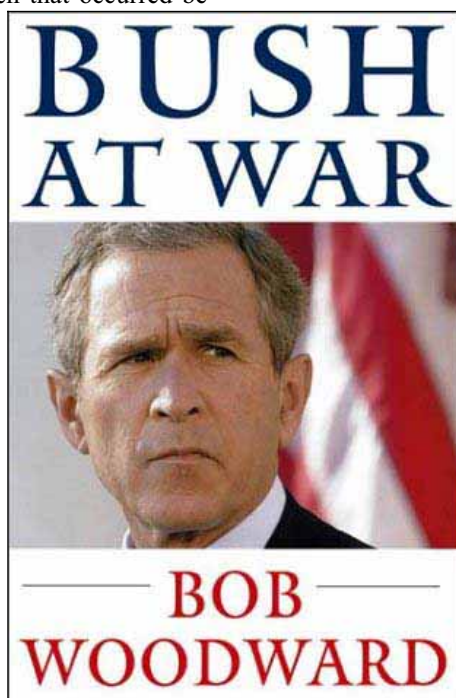
that after the 1999 war against Serbia, the mass atrocities allegedly committed against the Kosovo Albanians turned out to have been massively exaggerated.

Truth is the first casualty of war. That has always been so, and just because the U.S. wages an allegedly just war doesn't change this old wisdom. So we may be up for some surprises about certain humanitarian claims with regards to the second war against Iraq as well.

Still, Saddam Hussein is no angel. But then again, if looking for crimes against indigenous populations by ruling governments, why not turn an eye to Israel that is currently ethnically cleansing its occupied territories from the Palestinians, that is, committing genocide? Or why not ask the questions why the U.S. sat and sits still while tribes in Africa kill each other in the hundreds of thousands? Or just look to Algeria, where the military dictatorship installed with the help of the U.S. is waging a

cruel civil war against its own population with tens and hundreds of deaths daily? Or should we remind the reader of Pinochet, to name only one cruel dictator installed and kept in power by the U.S. for decades?

The truth is that humanitarian arguments are of interest to the U.S. government only when they are in line with their political agenda. Then they are emphasized, exaggerated, or even invented and used as arguments to convince the gullible public which is more than eager to accept humanitarian reasons as a justification to the mass murder called war. But a gigantic military apparatus financed with the help of corporate America and the high finance can hardly be convinced to go to war in order to install a (most likely unstable) democracy in a remote desert country or to (temporarily) enforce human rights. They have power and money on their minds, not civil rights and fair voting systems.



*The long-term strategy for world domination exposed*

#### 4.4. WORLD DOMINATION

And that is where the last reason to go to war against Iraq comes from. On March 5, 2003, *ABC Nightline's* Ted Koppel presented a documentary entitled "The Plan," which revealed how "neo-Conservatives" like Dick Cheney, Donald Rumsfeld, Paul Wolfowitz, Robert Zelic, Richard Perle, and John Bolton, to name only those who are now high up in the Bush administration, have been planning a U.S. world domination since 1997, including the replacement of Hussein in Iraq with a system friendly to the U.S. Their plan with the title "Project for the New American Century," and a letter suggesting such politics, signed by 40 neo-Cons, was sent to Clinton in 1998, but obviously rejected.

In this blueprint for a more aggressive U.S. policy for world domination, it says, the process of transforming U.S. policies shaped by the Clinton administration would likely be a long one, provided there would not be some catastrophic and

catalyzing event, like a new Pearl Harbor. If 9/11 wouldn't have happened, it reads as if it needed to have been created...

According to Bob Woodward,<sup>34</sup> it was only 30 hours after the 9/11 attacks that Rumsfeld asked the President, why shouldn't the US go against Iraq, not just al-Qaeda? At the Pentagon on September 13th, Wolfowitz, for the first time, alluded to that broader goal.

William Kristol, chairman of the Project for the New American Century, explained during this *ABC Nightline* documentary that North Korea and the removal of any other Arab dictatorship might be the next steps, which would also include the instable Saudi Arabian Monarchy—but probably not those dictatorships installed or massively backed by the U.S. in order to avoid hostile regimes, like Egypt, Jordan, or Algeria.

Though it is doubtful that the U.S. will go against North Korea with force—after all, there is no oil in North Korea and

they do have nuclear weapons ready to be used also against the U.S. west coast—the concept of re-colonizing the entire Middle East becomes clearly visible, which brings it all nicely together: Israel/Jewish interests, securing of oil, enforcing the domination of the U.S. dollar, threatening the entire world with intervention in case of lack of compliance, and all of this behind the cover of spreading democracy and fighting terrorism and tyranny.

### 5. On March 18, 2003, World War Three Began

What we witness unfolding in Iraq is nothing more than the very beginning of World War III, of the Anglo-Saxon countries (USA, England, Australia) and Israel against the rest of the world. It is a desperate attempt of the Anglo-Saxon world to postpone the collapse of its world domination, and it is the desperate attempt of Israel to prevent its final demise.

But they can buy only some time. They may be able to subjugate Arabia and to scare the rest of the world away from the Euro, but they cannot prevent the collapse of the US economy in the long run, since this country's economy is rotten to the core. If it does not collapse this year, then perhaps next year. But it won't take very long before it comes crashing down. In other words: Even if the U.S. wins the war in Iraq—and there cannot be any reasonable doubt that they will—it will lose in the long run anyway.<sup>35</sup> And since the world can openly see the massive Jewish assistance in this ugly, bloody, imperialistic game, it spells disaster on them as well.

At the core of it all lies one country's economic superiority and political wit: Germany. Already World War One and World War Two were fought by the Anglo-Saxon countries with the assistance of Zionist lobby groups to crush this most dynamic and successful competitor. This time, Germany was very smart: It has merged itself into a framework of European nations, has given up control over its own currency, and has done nothing that would allow anybody to accuse it of being nationalistic, imperialistic, xenophobic, anti-Semitic, militaristic, or what have you. To the contrary: Germany is fiercely persecuting any individual or group that promotes anything which could and would be interpreted by certain lobby groups as being nationalistic, xenophobic, anti-Semitic, revisionist and so on.<sup>36</sup> But the Euro's Central Bank is in Frankfurt, Germany; its policy was and is shaped according to the successful model of the Deutschmark; and the driving engine behind Europe's economy is without any doubt Germany.

The only way the US has to gain back its currency monopoly would be by destroying the country that is at the heart of the Euro, that is, by waging a Third World War against Germany. But that it cannot do because Germany has been a good girl since 1945, and the nuclear power France is standing at Germany's side, encouraged by Russia and China in the background.

### Notes

- <sup>1</sup> [www.brillig.com/debt\\_clock/](http://www.brillig.com/debt_clock/)
- <sup>2</sup> [www.bea.doc.gov/bea/dn/nipaweb](http://www.bea.doc.gov/bea/dn/nipaweb). If not indicated otherwise, all data regarding the U.S. taken from this website of the U.S. Bureau of Economic Analysis.
- <sup>3</sup> [www.ubs.com/e/globalam\\_uk/research.Referenz1.pdf](http://www.ubs.com/e/globalam_uk/research.Referenz1.pdf)
- <sup>4</sup> See also "Debt and Deflation: Till Debt Do We Part", *The Economist*, 10

- October 2002.
- <sup>5</sup> [http://www.arabbank.com/review/vol4\\_no1/\(35-37\)\\_Some\\_Expected\\_Effects\\_of\\_the\\_Euro.pdf](http://www.arabbank.com/review/vol4_no1/(35-37)_Some_Expected_Effects_of_the_Euro.pdf)
- <sup>6</sup> [www.staatsschuldenausschuss.at/html/inhalt/bericht2001/pdf/kap\\_5.pdf](http://www.staatsschuldenausschuss.at/html/inhalt/bericht2001/pdf/kap_5.pdf)
- <sup>7</sup> I did not find reliable figures for this other than occasional references, but private debts don't seem to be an issue in Europe.
- <sup>8</sup> That was end of 1998; [www.wsws.org/de/1999/jan1999/euro-j23.shtml](http://www.wsws.org/de/1999/jan1999/euro-j23.shtml)
- <sup>9</sup> [www.destatis.de/indicators/d/tkah613.htm](http://www.destatis.de/indicators/d/tkah613.htm);
- [www.ftd.de/pw/de/1014399060152.html?nv=rs](http://www.ftd.de/pw/de/1014399060152.html?nv=rs)
- <sup>10</sup> [www.oanda.com/convert/fxhistory](http://www.oanda.com/convert/fxhistory).
- <sup>11</sup> [www.jubilee2000uk.org/analysis/articles/japan\\_onthe\\_brink.htm](http://www.jubilee2000uk.org/analysis/articles/japan_onthe_brink.htm)
- <sup>12</sup> [www.forbes.com/global/2002/0218/022.html](http://www.forbes.com/global/2002/0218/022.html)
- <sup>13</sup> Edited by the Research Unit for Political Economy, Mumbai, India, March 2003, ISBN 1-58367-093-9. See [www.rupe-india.org/34/pillar.html](http://www.rupe-india.org/34/pillar.html)
- <sup>14</sup> "Iraq: Baghdad Moves to the Euro", *Radio Free Europe*, 11/1/00; "Iraq uses the euro in its trade deals," *Arabic News.com*, 9/7/01; compare [www.gold-eagle.com/editorials\\_00/hickel092900.html](http://www.gold-eagle.com/editorials_00/hickel092900.html);
- [www.tompaine.com/feature.cfm?ID=4110%20](http://www.tompaine.com/feature.cfm?ID=4110%20)
- <sup>15</sup> "Iran sees euro as way to 'free' itself from the US dollar", *Agence France Presse*, 12/31/01.
- <sup>16</sup> "Protest by switching oil trade from dollar to euro", *Oil and Gas International*, 4/15/02.
- <sup>17</sup> *Asia Times*, 5/19/01.
- <sup>18</sup> "Iraqi Wars", extract from his upcoming book *The Sorrows of Empire: How the Americans Lost Their Country*, Metropolitan Books, 2003; <http://www.antiwar.com/orig/johnson1.html>
- <sup>19</sup> "The Men From JINSA and CSP", *The Nation*, Aug 15, 2002; [www.thenation.com/doc.mhtml?i=20020902&c=1&s=vest](http://www.thenation.com/doc.mhtml?i=20020902&c=1&s=vest)
- <sup>20</sup> "Whose War?", *The American Conservative*, March 24, 2003; [www.amconmag.com/03\\_24\\_03/print/coverprint.html](http://www.amconmag.com/03_24_03/print/coverprint.html); compare the fundamentalist Jewish view on this: Ariel Natan Pasko, "This War is for Us", *Israel Nation News*, March 26, 2003; [www.israelnationalnews.com/article.php3?id=2125](http://www.israelnationalnews.com/article.php3?id=2125)
- <sup>21</sup> David Harrison, "Moran: War, Politics and Inevitability", *The Connection Newspaper*, 3/5/03; [www.connectionnewspapers.com/article.asp?article=18374&cat=104](http://www.connectionnewspapers.com/article.asp?article=18374&cat=104); this re
- <sup>22</sup> See James Rosen, "Divisions deep over claims of Jewish influence", *The Sacramento Bee*, Apr- 6, 2003; [www.sacbee.com/24hour/special\\_reports/iraq/bee/story/6408561p-7360864c.html](http://www.sacbee.com/24hour/special_reports/iraq/bee/story/6408561p-7360864c.html); J. Rosen, "Claims that Jewish cabal driving Iraq war stir debate," *ibid.*, [www.sacbee.com/24hour/special\\_reports/iraq/homefront/story/843659p-5926190c.html](http://www.sacbee.com/24hour/special_reports/iraq/homefront/story/843659p-5926190c.html)
- <sup>23</sup> See [www.counterpunch.org/cockburn03152003.html](http://www.counterpunch.org/cockburn03152003.html)
- <sup>24</sup> For that, see Paul Findley, *They dare to speak out*, 3<sup>rd</sup> ed., Lawrence Hill Books, Chicago 2003.
- <sup>25</sup> Ari Shavit, "White man's burden", *Haaretz*, Apr. 7, 2003; [www.haaretzdaily.com/hasen/pages/ShArt.jhtml?itemNo=280279](http://www.haaretzdaily.com/hasen/pages/ShArt.jhtml?itemNo=280279)
- <sup>26</sup> Here are some names of prominent Jews pushing for the war, most of them neo-conservatives: Richard Perle; Paul Wolfowitz; Douglas Feith; Ari Fleischer; Kenneth Adelman; Elliott Abrams; James Schlesinger; William Cohen; Joe Lieberman; Martin Peretz; David Wurms; Norman Podhoretz; Daniel Pipes; Bill Kristol; Mortimer Zuckerman; David Frum; David Brooks; Charles Krauthammer; William Safire; Jonah Goldberg.
- <sup>27</sup> N. Chomsky, *Power and Terror: Post 9-11 Talks and Interviews*, Seven Stories Press, New York 2003.
- <sup>28</sup> G. Vidal, *Dreaming War: Blood for Oil and the Cheney-Bush Junta*, Thunder's Mouth Press, New York 2002; G. Vidal, *Perpetual War for Perpetual Peace*, *ibid.*, 2002.
- <sup>29</sup> See [www.worldlinktv.com](http://www.worldlinktv.com); compare Seymour M. Hersh, "Who Lied To Whom?", *The New Yorker*, March 31, 2003; [www.newyorker.com/fact/content/?030331fa\\_fact1](http://www.newyorker.com/fact/content/?030331fa_fact1)
- <sup>30</sup> CBS, *60 Minutes*, May 12, 1996.
- <sup>31</sup> *Behind the Invasion of Iraq*, *op. cit.* (note 13), p. 46.
- <sup>32</sup> German political TV magazine *Monitor* (ARD) April 8, 1992, 21:00 MET.
- <sup>33</sup> For this, see, e.g., Stephen Pelletiere, *Iraq and the International Oil System. Why American Went to War in the Gulf*, Praeger, Westport, CN, 2001.
- <sup>34</sup> B. Woodward, *Bush At War*, Simon & Schuster, New York 2002.
- <sup>35</sup> To send a chill down your spine, compare Tom Engelhardt's comparison between the development in Iraq and in Vietnam: [www.nationinstitute.org/tomdispatch/index.mhtml?pid=525](http://www.nationinstitute.org/tomdispatch/index.mhtml?pid=525)
- <sup>36</sup> See my contribution "Discovering Absurdistan" in this issue.

# Climatology—Science or Ideology?

By Oswald Nettesheim

In 2001, US President George W. Bush declared that the United States will no longer participate in any negotiations with other United Nations members about the reduction of carbon dioxide emissions, the gas frequently named as the main culprit for the so-called greenhouse effect, that is, the slow but steady increase of the lower atmosphere's temperature.

Around the same time, a scientific controversy erupted with focus in Germany about whether or not carbon dioxide is at all to be blamed for the greenhouse effect, or if there is even something like a greenhouse effect in the first place. The most prominent figure of the dissenters, claiming that there is no greenhouse effect, is a former rather prominent German meteorologist who used to present the most recent weather forecasts in Germany's primary TV news broadcast *heute* (today), Wolfgang Thüne.

The following article presents some of the arguments brought forward by dissenters around W. Thüne, followed by some critical comments and an attempt to make a critical survey of the state of the current discussion.

Most readers will probably not realize that there is a German award for ideology-free scientific research, known as the *Woitschach Prize for Research*. Certain media have mentioned that, in 1999, this prize was awarded to Dr. Wolfgang Thüne, a man who has a Masters degree in meteorology, for his book *Der Treibhaus-Schwindel (The Greenhouse Hoax)*.<sup>1</sup> At first glance, it would appear that the notion of ideology-free science constitutes a pleonasm. However, the sponsors of the prize did indeed have an eye on reality. A look towards the past, into history, will also teach us that science has often been under the influence of ideology, and still is today. This is especially true for historiography,<sup>2</sup> a field in which ideologists frequently appear in the disguise of (self-proclaimed) scientists, or merely employ—somewhat selectively—the results of scientific work. A precarious position is occupied by all those scientists who need financial funding for their work, which they receive only as long as they work in line with the ideas of their sponsors.

What, now, is the matter with the “Greenhouse Hoax”? As everyone knows, the “Greenhouse Effect” is nowadays legal tender in the realm of the leading climate researchers, ecologists, and—last but not least—politicians who are involved in environmental matters and matters of energy. Our dictionaries have incorporated this modern word and define it for example as follows:<sup>3</sup>

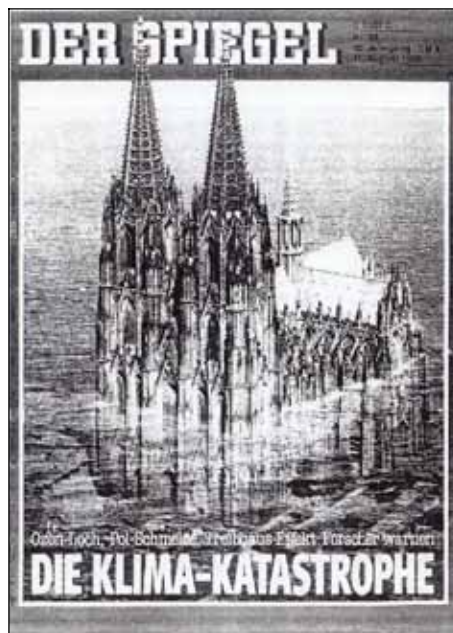
*“Heating of planetary atmospheres by the radiation of sunlight, if heat radiation towards the universe is impeded by trace gases such as carbon dioxide”.*

In his book “*Der Treibhaus-Schwindel (The Greenhouse Hoax)*”, published in March 1998, Dr. Thüne has proved that this effect does not stand up to scientific scrutiny.<sup>4</sup> The only established fact is the purely statistical finding that, from around 1860 onward, the carbon dioxide

(CO<sub>2</sub>) content of the air has gone up *in toto*, from 0.028 to 0.035 percent by volume.<sup>5</sup> One is struck by the observation that the media generally refer to the more spectacular increase of 30% in the CO<sub>2</sub>-content. Statistical data also confirm the increase of the average global temperature by 0.7°C over the same period. Clever “climate experts” have now deduced a nexus between these data, claiming that the man-made (anthropogenic) increase in CO<sub>2</sub> is the cause of the rise in temperature observed.

On the basis of this theory, the *Deutsche Physikalische Gesellschaft e.V.* (German physical society) first addressed the public in 1986 with the warning of an impending “climatic catastrophe”; the “Greenhouse Effect” was born. True to the journalists' creed that only bad news is ‘good’ news, writers were eager to seize upon this doomsday-scenario. The title page of the German weekly *Der Spiegel* at the time even showed Cologne cathedral being covered by the waters released by the polar ice-caps melting as a consequence of the predicted rise in the lower atmosphere's temperature.<sup>6</sup>

Inspired by their belief in a connection between rise in carbon dioxide and increase in temperature, climatologists embarked upon the search for a fitting theory, according to which the so-called trace gases (mainly water vapor, carbon dioxide, methane, ozone, and laughing gas) absorb the radiation emitted by the earth's surface towards space. This phenomenon was named “counter-radiation”, later dubbed “greenhouse effect” by the media, in view of the more impressive nature of this word. Action was concentrated upon carbon dioxide, because it had increased by 30% over the last 140 years, *i.e.*, since the beginning of industrialization. It is taken for granted that the cause of temperature increase is the combustion of fossil fuels for industrial and private processes (generation of power



*Title page of Germany's leading political magazine Der Spiegel, August 11, 1986: Cologne Cathedral submerged by ocean waters.*

and heat, traffic etc.). Thüne's book argues against such a relationship.

Any book on physics tells us that heat radiation consists of electromagnetic waves in a wavelength range between 0.8  $\mu\text{m}$  and 100  $\mu\text{m}$  (infrared radiation). In addition to visible light with its shorter wavelengths (0.45-0.75  $\mu\text{m}$ ), the range between 0.8  $\mu\text{m}$ <sup>7</sup> and 3  $\mu\text{m}$  is still part of solar radiation. The radiation emitted by the earth is in the range between 5  $\mu\text{m}$  and 60  $\mu\text{m}$ . In line with all other electromagnetic waves, heat radiation travels with the speed of light (300 000 km per second). Thermal photography of the earth's surface makes use of the specific radiation from earth, which allows us to identify and interpret differences (due to land structure or land use) in the surface temperature. The range of wavelengths available for such remote observation lies between 7  $\mu\text{m}$  and 13  $\mu\text{m}$  and constitutes a permanently open radiation window, unobstructed by CO<sub>2</sub> gas as claimed by the "greenhouse"-theorists.

As has been stated correctly by the German parliamentary commission "Precaution for Protection of the Earth's Atmosphere", trace gases in the earth's atmosphere absorb infrared emissions emitted from the earth's surface intensively in most wavelength ranges, but only minimally in some, as for example in the range from 7 to 13  $\mu\text{m}$ . It is within this range, however, where we find the greatest portion of radiation emitted by the earth. This range is, therefore, called "open radiation window," because it is here that the least amount of absorption by water vapor and CO<sub>2</sub> takes place. This window allows 70 to 90 % of the radiation from the earth to escape into space. The statement by the commission is thus correct. However, quite unexpectedly, the report continues further on by saying:

*"The greenhouse effect due to CO<sub>2</sub> is caused essentially by its absorption band at 15  $\mu\text{m}$ ."*

It is precisely at this point that opinions diverge, for when one has recourse to "Wien's law of displacement", a wavelength of maximal emission  $\lambda_{\text{max}}$  of 15  $\mu\text{m}$  yields a temperature of minus 73°C of the emitter. With this "counter-radiation" it is, however, impossible to heat the earth's surface with its average "global temperature" of plus 15°C. It should be noted that all major "climate experts" collaborated in the report of this commission.

As everyone knows, a cloudless night sky leads to a strong cooling of the earth's surface, the sun's radiation taken up during the day being returned to the universe during the night as "temperature radiation". Doctor Thüne says in his paper:<sup>8</sup>

*"The CO<sub>2</sub> molecules in particular, with their absorption bands at 2.8  $\mu\text{m}$ , 4.5  $\mu\text{m}$ , and 15  $\mu\text{m}$ , which are as characteristic and as unchangeable as a human fingerprint, have no effect on the daily course of temperature, because they cannot close the "open radiation window" between 7 and 13  $\mu\text{m}$ . This would be valid even if the earth were surrounded by an atmosphere of pure carbon dioxide".*

Fundamentally, according to the Second Law of Thermodynamics, heat will flow only from a hot body to a cold one (in this case the universe). The "greenhouse effect" is thus only an illusion, and it is absurd to designate CO<sub>2</sub> as a "greenhouse gas". Carbon dioxide is neither a glass roof nor does it reflect the heat radiation from earth. Even a greenhouse cools down during the night and must be heated during the winter months. The warming effect consists only in its ability to store the radiation it receives by preventing horizontal and vertical movements of the air. The glass walls do not prevent it from cooling down overnight on account of the radiation it gives off. It is thus unrealistic to attribute to CO<sub>2</sub> the power to cause a "greenhouse effect" and the reduction of CO<sub>2</sub>-emissions, demanded by "climate experts," is without any scientific foundation.

As opposed to this argument, the established climate researchers explain the "greenhouse effect" as follows:

*"Without an atmosphere, the earth's surface would be at an equilibrium temperature of minus 18°C. In reality, the air temperature near the ground is, however, plus 15°C, the difference of 33°C being due to the trace gases [!] with their effect on climate. As an analogy, let us imagine a glass pane placed between the sun and the earth's surface. The glass allows the incident radiation from the sun to pass nearly unimpeded towards the earth, but absorbs part of the radiation emitted from the earth, itself radiating heat in both directions: towards the earth and towards the universe. This increases the radiation balance of the earth's surface, because the additional energy stemming from the glass pane is almost totally absorbed at the surface of the earth and pro-*

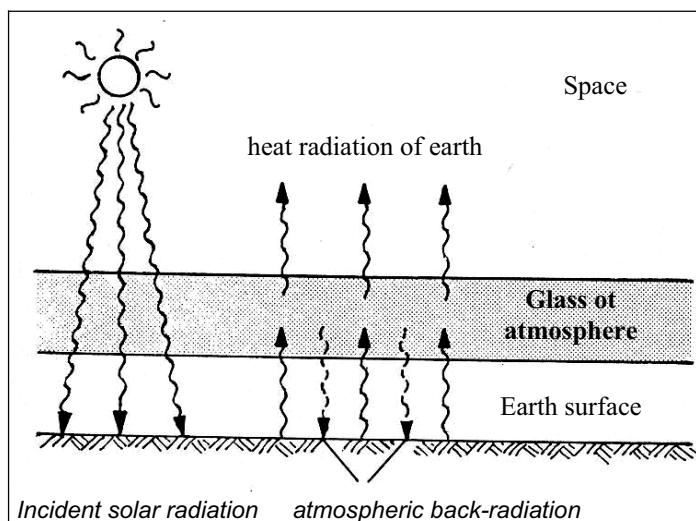


Fig.1: Radiation model of the "greenhouse" theorists

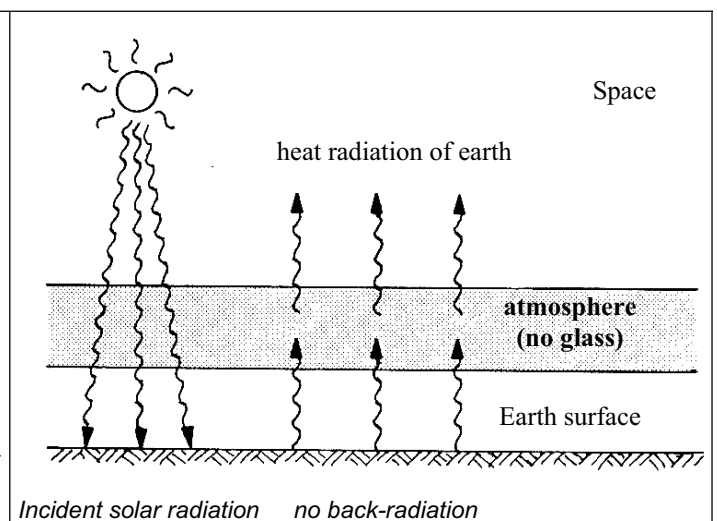


Fig. 2: Radiation model according to Dr. Thüne

okes an increase in the heating up of the surface of the earth”.

Anyone who does not understand or who cannot believe this, can read up on the details in an expert paper.<sup>9</sup>

“Climate” is the average state of the atmosphere and its characteristic weather phenomena of a certain region, measured over a certain period of time. A “global climate” as construed by the “climate researchers” is as artificial a statistical notion as the so-called average world temperature. Both “values” have always been subject to unexplainable variations. Polar ice-core investigations have revealed that between around 860 and 1860, the infamous CO<sub>2</sub>-concentration of the air was actually constant. Strangely enough, though, “climate” throughout that period was not constant at all and showed considerable variations. For instance, between 60 BC and 600 AD we have a temperature dip, followed between 600 and 1310 AD by a higher temperature level, with the temperature in the North Atlantic region rising by 1.2°C. No explanation for this rise has so far been found. In the year 1200 AD, temperatures reached their maximum. Between 1310 and 1860 AD the so-called “Little Ice-Age” occurred. From the middle of the 19th century on, average temperatures have been rising in an irregular fashion. Clever “climate researchers” have been quick to attribute this to the CO<sub>2</sub>-increase caused by modern industrial society.

This “problem” is permanently on the agendas of the well-known conferences on climate change, also called “climate summits”. The following such meetings have been held so far: Rio de Janeiro 1992, Berlin 1995, Kyoto 1997, Buenos Aires 1998, Bonn 1999, Den Haag/Bonn 2000/2001, Marrakech 2001. The objective has been to achieve a worldwide reduction of the emission of “greenhouse gases”, CO<sub>2</sub> in particular. In Kyoto, it was agreed that the industrial nations would reduce CO<sub>2</sub> emissions by 5.2% by 2012, as based on 1990 figures. In Buenos Aires, one could agree only upon an activity plan for the next two years, allowing various flexible mechanisms to fulfill the norms in addition to individual national efforts. The industrialized nations were granted the right to trade in emission rights and emission duties or to be credited for investments aimed at climate protection in other countries. This amounts to a commercialization of the ‘problem,’ including a full-scale trade in ‘indulgences.’ The “Buenos Aires Action Plan”, as voted, contained a mandatory timetable for the clarification of any open questions by the end of 2000. A total of 60 nations had voted for this protocol. The convention was to become effective, however, only when ratified by 55 nations, provided that these states were responsible for at least 55% of all emissions. With 25% of all emissions occurring in the USA, ratification by the US Congress would have been crucial.

If the climate convention of the United Nations were to become a reality, enormous bureaucracies would have to be established at the UN and in every individual country to organize,

coordinate, and regulate matters—a massive effort, to be financed, of course, by the tax-payer or the consumer. Remember Parkinson’s Laws!

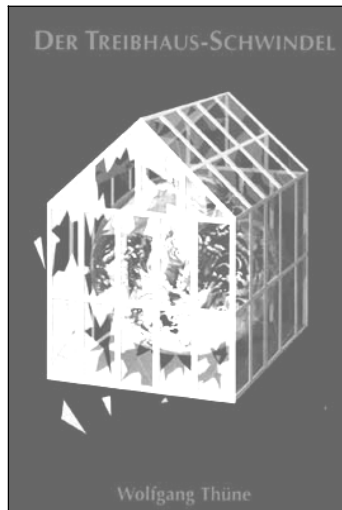
The “international community”, with its adoption of the UN-climate convention at Rio de Janeiro in 1992, has recognized the existence of an additional “greenhouse effect” caused by man (*i.e.* anthropogenic) and having a “self-evident nature”. Since that time, “recalcitrant” individuals who disregard the welfare of mankind as a whole may be labeled quite officially as “liars”. The discussion of the energy policy of the future bears the imprint of Max Horkheimer’s “critical theory” and its postulate of the “social duty of science”. Thus, this branch of science has also been gobbled up by both politicians and ideologists. We are waiting for legal action to be brought to bear against “recalcitrant revisionists” in the area of climatology. Obviously, a new law would need to be added to the Penal Code covering such things as “negation or verbal minimization of the greenhouse effect.”

Surprising and frightening at the same time is the solid front of leading organizations to have adopted the new theory: Max-Planck-Institute for Meteorology (MPI-Met.), German Physical Society (DPG), German Meteorological society (DMG), as well as university institutes for meteorology and geophysics. Apparently, the major incentive seems to be the abundant sources of money that the state is providing for research in this area. Meanwhile, the said effect has been raised to the level of an axiom, for example if we read in relevant publications:

*“It is well known (!) that the greenhouse effect is caused by trace gases, CO<sub>2</sub> in particular, which absorb the heat radiated from the surface of the earth”.*

Invariably, such authors invoke the broad consensus among scientists as “proof” of their theory. Does history not teach us, though, that revisionists who acted up against established teachings and helped new visions to be promoted were in general a minority or even a minority of one? The majority principle as applied in a democracy cannot seriously be used here to prove a point. We note with some alarm and a greater dose of suspicion the hectic activity exhibited by established institutions at the sight of Dr. Thüne’s first publications. Once his book appeared, insults and defamations voiced against the author became widespread. The German Meteorological Society had nothing better to do than to recommend to its member that he leaves the society, his membership record of 30 years notwithstanding.

Aroused by Thüne’s attacks, the camp of established climatologists appears at least to start having second thoughts about the validity of their theory. While it was heretofore accepted dogma that the warming noted since 1860 was anthropogenic in nature, the Max-Planck-Institute Report no. 287 withdrew from such a position quietly—*i.e.* without a major press conference—and almost completely. It stated that the CO<sub>2</sub>-concentration in the atmosphere had been, for all intents and purposes,



Cover of the book *Der Treibhaus-Schwindel (The Greenhouse Hoax)* by Wolfgang Thüne. The “Greenhouse Theory” in shambles.

constant over the last 8000 years, in spite of considerable variations in temperature over this period.<sup>10</sup> One starts hearing doubtful statements such as:<sup>11</sup>

*“It is, however, difficult to live with uncertainty and so a lack of knowledge is often replaced by convictions. The only certainty about this unique global experiment launched by mankind is that its final issue is uncertain.”*

We note the admission of such self-doubts with some satisfaction.

With all this taking place, the German energy suppliers are finding themselves in a bind. If Dr. Thüne’s assumption is correct, namely that the nuclear power plant lobby eagerly seized upon the greenhouse theory in order to instill new life into nuclear energy, the promoters of such a strategy seem not to have taken into account the fact that politicians in Germany nowadays have to reckon with the Greens. Since the Greens, however, are absolutely hostile to nuclear energy, the energy supply industry is now in the defensive on both fronts, nuclear as well as fossil.

With the advancing liberalization of the German energy market and the parallel imposition of the obligation to accept energy transmission via their power grids by foreign third parties, the energy supply firms might have to fall back on trading the cheapest energies available in other European countries, such as electricity from Polish coal or nuclear power from France—certainly not very palatable alternatives for ecologists or established climatologists. We can only recommend to the energy industry who have become, in a way, the prisoners of “climate protectors” to start reviewing seriously and critically the crumbling CO<sub>2</sub>-theory and no longer to ignore the counter-arguments. This could lead to substantial savings in obviously nonsensical ‘ecological’ investments that they now have to make.

Similar recommendations can be made to politicians, who are known to be very biased to ideological constructs. The “Ecotax”, invented by the united Red-and-Green front in Germany, would lose its justification to a large degree, to the tax-payer’s great delight.<sup>12</sup>

Last, but not least, scientists who are now stuck in the blind alley of a dubious theory should face up to an honest dialogue with their opponents. A book entitled *The Greenhouse Hoax* may sound to them like a provocation, but they should realize that this slogan is only an understandable reaction to the myth of an impending “climatic catastrophe” they themselves have launched.

Totally unperturbed by such fundamental considerations, some 5,000 delegates from 166 countries gathered in Bonn in October 1999. The main topic of dispute was the implementation of the decisions arrived at in the Kyoto agreement regarding the reduction of that most important “greenhouse gas”, carbon dioxide. All manner of technicalities were discussed, such as the trade in emission credits (bonuses for CO<sub>2</sub>-sinks in the form of forests and agricultural areas), measurement of the lim-

its imposed, recognition of climate protection measures in developing countries, investments in countries of Eastern Europe reforming their economies, etc. No breakthrough was achieved, however, because positions with respect to the instruments of implementation differed too strongly.

After another climate summit at The Hague in November 2000 landed on the rocks, talks were taken up again at Bonn in July 2001 with 178 nations participating in the effort to come to terms with the Kyoto protocol, *i.e.*, to achieve a worldwide reduction of CO<sub>2</sub>-emissions by 5.2% as compared to 1990 and a participation of at least 55 states responsible for at least 55% of total emissions.

By that time, the USA had announced—to the horror of most of the other participants—their withdrawal from the climate debate.<sup>13,14</sup> Japan, Canada, Australia, and Russia demanded concessions with respect to credits for CO<sub>2</sub>-sinks. Japan viewed the surveillance measures and the exclusion of nuclear projects as unacceptable. In the end, the conference was

on the verge of collapse, and environmental freaks conjured once more the threat of a “climate catastrophe”. In an effort to save the Kyoto protocol by any means, a “limping” compromise was arrived at, but no valid solution was achieved. The result was a global reduction of 1.8% in CO<sub>2</sub>-emissions, instead of the original goal of 5.2 percent.

Environmental activists showed their dissatisfaction with the emasculation of the Kyoto protocol by dragging a lifeboat through the streets of Bonn, carrying the slogan “After Bush the deluge”. This “funeral procession” was led by an activist disguised as George Bush and by an “Uncle Sam” turned into a skeleton with a scythe—the USA were declared Environmental Enemy Number One. Thus, this meeting achieved a mere semblance of success, and specialists opined: “The job is only just starting”.

The next round of the whistle-stopping climate summit took place in October 2001 at Marrakech, Morocco. There, 167 ministers of the environment arrived at a minimum consensus aimed at averting a “global collapse” of climate protection. Meanwhile, CO<sub>2</sub>-emissions worldwide went up, not down, by 8% in the year 2000, a far cry from what was originally envisaged. The meeting agreed on mandatory sanctions against “climate sinners” and on a quantification of forest resources and agricultural areas. This compromise closed the summit.

The latest UN-sponsored function on climate and environmental protection took place from 29 August through 4 September 2002 at Johannesburg (RSA) under the name of “World Summit for Sustainable Development” (WSSD). This mammoth-like meeting attracted 60,000 participants, among whom one counted 100 heads of state or heads of government. It was a “summit of the least common denominator”, the accountants of national interests having attained the upper hand over the visionaries of sustainable development. A celebration to mark the coming into force of the Kyoto protocol had to be cancelled,



Title page of the Book *Acquittal for CO<sub>2</sub>*, by Wolfgang Thüne



because the Russian Duma had not yet ratified the paper. All participating nations managed at least to accept the engagement towards reducing the “greenhouse gases detrimental to climate” such as carbon dioxide. The agreement is to come into force by the end of the year 2002.

In the meantime, violent inundations swept through Germany, Austria, and the Czech Republic, pouring water on the mills of climate ideologists who took it as tantamount to ‘proof’ of a change in climate caused by man. The German federal elections in 2002 allowed the Greens to capitalize on these events and to increase their votes.

On the other hand, voices critical of “climate protection” have become louder recently, particularly in letters to newspaper editors, but also in the form of books on the subject written by independent scientists and journalists who do, thank God, still exist.<sup>15,16</sup> The author mentioned above, Dr. Wolfgang Thüne, came out with a second book in May, 2002, entitled *An Acquittal for CO<sub>2</sub>* and consciously destined to break a taboo and to focus more strongly on reality.<sup>17</sup>

A “mature citizen” looking at these publications beyond the mainstream must wonder why such voices remain generally unheard. The reasons have been outlined above. Let’s face it: panic is a boon for the shapers of opinions and for politicians. In addition, the end of the Cold War called for a new field of activity in which politicians, environmentalists, and researchers might find employment. The “greenhouse effect” has by now become the bread-and-butter of our journalists, and the State finds the hauling-in of an “Eco-levy” easy going. The motto is: “CO<sub>2</sub>—End of the World as a Source of Revenue”.<sup>18</sup> The German federal ministries for economics and for construction have already given way to “climate protection” and have become active in this regard. New regulations for existing heating systems are to reduce “pollution by carbon dioxide”. While it may make sense to increase the efficiency of combustion plants, the reduction of CO<sub>2</sub> is only a side effect and in no way a contribution to the “improvement of our climate”. Aside from energy resources, only our purse reaps a benefit from such actions. The energy industry is now trying to encourage consumers to buy energy-saving appliances with the misleading slogan “climate protection pays off”.

Once the critical citizen has seen through the mad activity in this field and has recognized the vanity of the climate debate, he needs no longer worry about the future of mother earth and can turn to more important matters. In doing so, he is only subject to the whims of the weather with which he knows by ex-

perience how to cope. There is no such thing as “climate,” the notion has been abstracted mathematically from our weather. Anyone claiming to be able to change climate ought logically to be in a position to influence our weather. This, however, is something that man will never achieve, neither by reducing CO<sub>2</sub>-emissions nor by any kind of sophisticated “climate research”. It follows without fail that man will never change climate, and that “climate protection” is sheer illusion.

## Notes

- <sup>1</sup> W. Thüne, “Das Klima im Dilemma”, *Rheinischer Merkur*, May 28, 1999.
- <sup>2</sup> Quotation from Bertold Brecht (1898-1956): “Immer noch schreibt der Sieger die Geschichte des Besiegten.... Aus der Welt geht der Schwächere und zurück bleibt die Lüge.” / The victor still writes the history of the vanquished... The weaker leaves the world, and what remains is the lie.
- <sup>3</sup> *Knaurs Lexikon* 1993.
- <sup>4</sup> W. Thüne, *Der Treibhaus-Schwindel*, Wirtschaftsverlag Discovery Press, Saarbrücken 1999; it can be purchased from the author: Wormser Str. 22, D-55276 Oppenheim, Fax ++49-6133-933 796; www.treibhaus-schwindel.de/.
- <sup>5</sup> CO<sub>2</sub> as a normal part of air; it is a colorless, odorless and chemically almost inert gas. It is indispensable for the growth of plants. They use it to synthesize carbohydrates from it with the help of water and sunlight (assimilation). Carbohydrates, in turn, are indispensable for the nutrition of humans and animals.
- <sup>6</sup> *Der Spiegel*, Aug. 11, 1986: “Die Klimakatastrophe – Polschmelze, Treibhaus-Effekt: Forscher warnen” (Climate catastrophe—polar melting, greenhouse effect: researchers warn)
- <sup>7</sup> One micrometer (µm) is a millionth part of a meter, a thousandth part of a millimeter.
- <sup>8</sup> W. Thüne, “Wettersatelliten widerlegen Treibhaus-These”, (weather satellites refute greenhouse theory) *VDI-Nachrichten*, Nov. 11, 1998:
- <sup>9</sup> Christian-D. Schönwiese/Bernd Dieckmann, *Der Treibhauseffekt. Der Mensch ändert das Klima*, Rowohlt, Reinbeck 1989.
- <sup>10</sup> W. Thüne, “Newtons Gesetze widerlegen den Treibhauseffekt”, (Newton’s laws refute greenhouse effect) *geospektrum*, 5/99, Zeitschrift der Alfred-Wegener-Stiftung (AWS), Berlin.
- <sup>11</sup> Klaus Hasselmann, “Was verstehen wir vom Klima?” (What do we understand about climate?), *VDI-Nachrichten*, June 11, 1999
- <sup>12</sup> W. Thüne, “Klimakatastrophe durch Öko-Steuer” (climate catastrophe by eco-tax), *Brennstoffspiegel*, 11/2000
- <sup>13</sup> W. Thüne, “Bush hat Recht” (Bush is right), *Brennstoffspiegel*, 7/2001
- <sup>14</sup> W. Thüne, “Der ‘natürliche’ Treibhauseffekt” (The ‘natural’ greenhouse effect), *Deutschland in Geschichte und Gegenwart*, issue 2/2001
- <sup>15</sup> Ulrich Berner, *Klimafakten. Der Rückblick – ein Schlüssel für die Zukunft*, Ehlers Verlag.
- <sup>16</sup> Manfred J.W. Müller, *Klimalüge? Wissenschaft – Politik – Zeitgeist*, Energi Verlag.
- <sup>17</sup> W. Thüne, *Freispruch für CO<sub>2</sub>. Wie ein Molekül die Phantasien von Experten gleichschaltet*, edition steinherz, Wiesbaden, 2002.
- <sup>18</sup> Headline of a chapter in the book by Günter Ederer, *Die Sehnsucht nach einer verlogenen Welt*, C. Bertelsmann Verlag 2000.

## Critical Remarks concerning Greenhouse-Revisionism

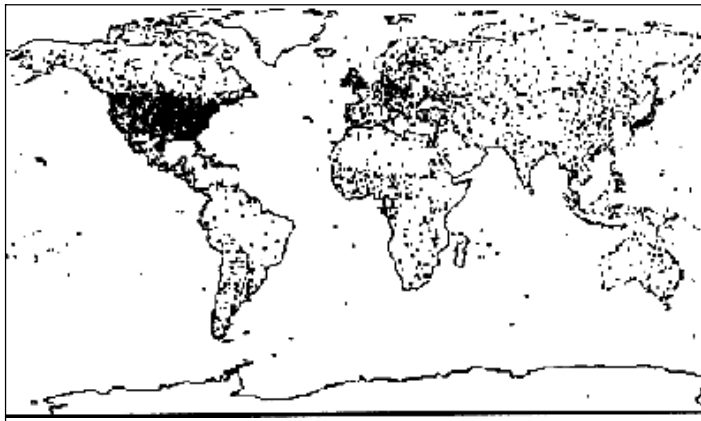
By Germar Rudolf

### Science without Ideology?

What some people polemically call the dictatorship of the ecologists, and the ideology that goes with it, seem to be particularly active in Germany. It is thus not surprising that quite a few personalities of public life are turning against the putrid exaggerations of this philosophy. Any kind of political fanati-

cism calls for a fundamental critique, and so this countercurrent effort is in our opinion a good thing.

For many years now, Wolfgang Thüne, at one time one of the most popular meteorologists of the German TV-channel ZDF, has been indefatigable in his private war against many of his professional colleagues. He is certainly right in his massive

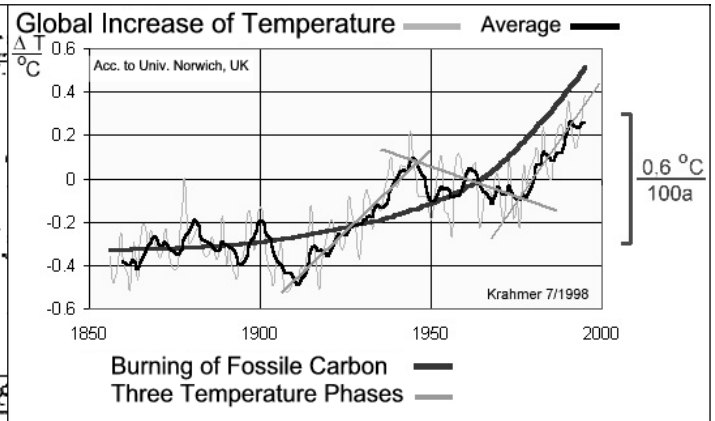


Density of permanent temperature probes on the surface of the earth in 2000. Most probes are located in densely populated and highly industrialized areas where heat generation from human activity increases ambient temperature considerably.<sup>1</sup>

criticism of the hysteria that has sprouted around carbon dioxide, this gas which is not only fundamentally harmless but, moreover, essential for our existence. Germany in particular, with its high population density and its basic lack of natural resources, is vitally dependent upon its industry. Unfortunately, over the last four decades, this industry has increasingly come under attack from various sides, covered with abuse, and indeed been met with truly irrational hate. It is, therefore, entirely justified to suspect political motives behind the hysteria surrounding carbon dioxide and the greenhouse effect. This is not to mean, however, that the arguments which support the thesis of the greenhouse effect are, in themselves, erroneous.

On the other hand, skepticism regarding Dr. Thüne is not without justification, considering the fact that this man did not obtain his doctorate in the field of meteorology, but rather in political science, with a thesis on a person's love for his native area (*Heimat*)—a topic frowned upon today as being overly conservative, if not uncomfortably far right. I fondly remember how Thüne, in his ZDF weather forecasts, had the highs and the lows hover over East Prussia, Pomerania and Silesia, although what pleased me, a child of a father ethnically cleansed from Silesia, may well have irked others. Today, Dr. Thüne is vice-president of the *Association East-Prussia* to which I once indirectly belonged as a member of a student fraternity with roots in Königsberg, the former capital of East Prussia, and in whose youth organization I was briefly active in the nineteen-eighties.<sup>3</sup>

It is no secret that relations between the German refugee organizations with their patriotic-conservative or national orientation, and the Greens, rooted as they are in anarchistic tendencies of the radical left, are somewhat strained, to put it mildly. We can therefore assume with some justification that Dr. Thüne, too, did not approach in a completely non-political way this favorite subject of green propaganda when launching his frontal assault against it. It is thus more than just a little surprising to note that Dr. Thüne has been awarded the *Woitschach* prize for ideology-free science, in the light of the fact that Dr. Thüne's books and other texts are far from being devoid of any polemics, political and otherwise. While he may be quite right in his criticism of the political exploitation of ecological problems, his own science is no longer free from ideology as soon as he himself enters the political arena.



An average increase of 0.6 °C over 100 years in the temperature of the air, detected by a non-representative network. A sound reason for hectic activity?<sup>2</sup>

I do not write this to distance myself from Dr. Thüne's political views—quite the contrary. From his publications and a brief correspondence with him I perceive many similarities in our views. However, I do not indulge in the belief that my own scientific work in a field that is a hotbed of ideologies is at all times totally independent of my own views of the world. It is true, of course, that a scientist, in his search for the truth and in the presentation of his discoveries, must strive to shed any influence of ideology. Moreover, any scientist working in a field that has any political relevance should declare his political convictions for others to be able to judge the conscious or subconscious premises he may start out from. To believe, however, or to demand that a scientist be in a position to attain without fail the golden goal of absolute objectivity is, for all intents and purposes, an illusion. Man, as a *zoon politikon*, is not able to comply with such a request.

Such a skeptical judgment need not even be regarded as a negative one, for are we not all placed between the opposing forces of, on the one hand, an aspiration towards objectivity—which can be held against us as being socially and politically callous—and, on the other hand, a social and political engagement aimed at truth and justice—which can be construed as being ideological infatuation. It is always a matter of point of view. The important thing is to maintain the proper balance, to announce one's colors, and not to affirm oneself as the only true and objective hunter for the truth. Such an affirmation of being the sole holder of the truth, in itself, is already a measure of a possible ideologically motivated fanaticism.

### Scientific battle-lines

It is generally undisputed that the CO<sub>2</sub>-content of the earth's atmosphere has gone up by 30% over the last 50 years. To what extent the average temperature of the earth's surface has increased over the same period is, however, much less well established. The problem is primarily that there exists no network of temperature probes spread out evenly, in the statistical sense, over the whole surface of our planet. Something of that nature came into being only since the earth is surveyed completely with weather satellites, which observe and record such data on a global scale, starting in the early eighties. This period of 20 years, however, is a very short time span if statistically valid

statements are to be made regarding the average temperature of the earth, or rather of its surface. In view of the possible existence of other factors that might cause an increase in temperature—such as other effects attributable to man, or, last but not least, variations in the activity of the sun—it is debatable why carbon dioxide should be declared the main culprit.

Things change slightly, though, when you consider Thüne's thesis regarding the radiation balance of the earth. The basis of his theory is the tenet that the atmosphere cannot radiate energy back to earth. To support his claim he uses the Second Law of Thermodynamics which, according to his interpretation, prevents energy from being radiated by the cold atmosphere towards the warm surface of the earth and thus causing a further warming of the latter. Doctor Thüne's use of the Second Law is, however, erroneous—no law in the world can bar a cold body from radiating towards a warmer one and causing a slight warming. The Second Law of Thermodynamics only states that in a closed system the *net* flow of heat will be from hot bodies to cold ones, with the warm earth thus giving off more heat to the atmosphere and to space than it receives from them in return. It does *not* mean that nothing comes back to earth.<sup>4</sup> The slight back-flow only retards the *net* flow of heat.

Fundamentally, the heat balance around our planet is in a dynamic equilibrium in which the radiation received from the sun is equal to the heat loss to space. In this case, the average temperature (the energy content) of the lower atmosphere depends upon the quality of the insulation, *i.e.*, upon the average time it takes a quantum of energy captured to escape back into the universe. For a planet devoid of an atmosphere, such as the moon, there is no insulation, and the energy is almost completely given off during the night. On the other hand, a planet with an extremely dense atmosphere, such as Venus, retains for a rather long period the energy received and thus attains a fairly high temperature.<sup>5</sup>

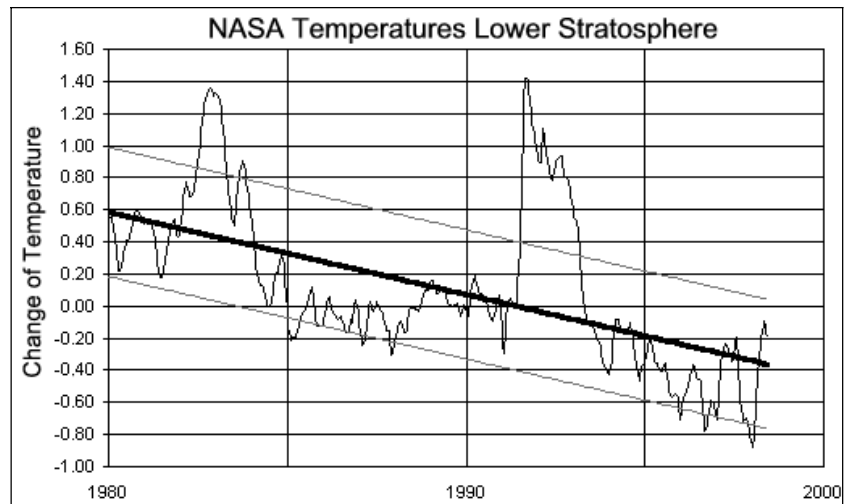
Thus, it becomes quite evident that the equilibrium temperature of the earth is a function of the composition of the atmosphere. This being the case, CO<sub>2</sub> plays however only a minor role among the many other trace gases, such as water vapor, methane, laughing gas, ozone, and chlorofluorocarbons. These gases claim a much greater effect with respect to the heat balance around the earth than does carbon dioxide,<sup>6</sup> because their absorption bands are located in the infrared window of the earth's atmosphere, whereas, as Dr. Thüne correctly noticed, the absorption bands of CO<sub>2</sub> (at 2.8 μm, 4.5 μm, and 15 μm) lie outside of this window, with the exception of the 4.5 μm line. It is a little irritating to note Dr. Thüne's rigorous rejection of the possibility that trace gases in the atmosphere can close a radiation window and can radiate energy back. Even though CO<sub>2</sub> cannot close the infrared window of the earth's atmosphere, a certain spectral range will still be reduced.<sup>7</sup> This effect on

the energy content of the atmosphere may well be overestimated, but it is not zero.<sup>8</sup>

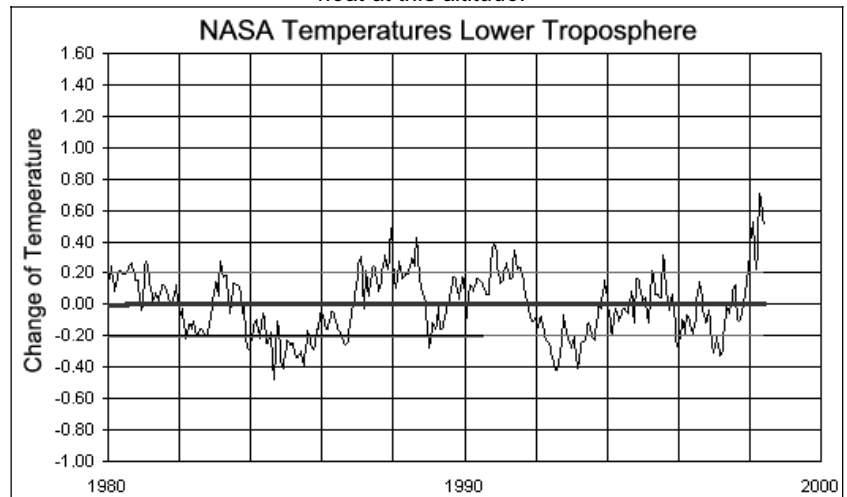
Such an overestimation of the effect of the CO<sub>2</sub> content may also be related to the general belief that doubling the CO<sub>2</sub> content would also lead to a doubling of the insulation potential. This is not true, though, as the intensity of the absorption approaches logarithmically a limiting value of 100%. Hence, a further increase in the CO<sub>2</sub> concentration in the atmosphere will no longer have as strong an effect upon climate as has been the case so far.

### Political Debate

All the hurly-burly surrounding the actual or suspected effect of man's contribution to the increase in trace gases obfuscates the real political scandal of the whole debate. It is neither the unwillingness nor the lack of insight of the industrial nations to reduce these emissions. The scandal starts with the question of which energy sources should be used for the generation of energy.



*Infrared determination by satellite of the average temperature in the lower stratosphere (8 - 30 km, ozone layer). Significant lowering of the temperature due to ozone depletion, causing a lower conversion of incident uv-light into heat at this altitude.<sup>2</sup>*



*Infrared determination by satellite of the average temperature of the lower troposphere (near earth's surface). No significant temperature increase.<sup>2</sup>*

Oil has earned its epithet “black gold” not only because it indeed represents something of a gold mine for certain oil barons, but also because its value for the modern industrial economies can hardly be overstated. Oil has taken over the role that coal played in the early part of the 20th century. What comes to our mind immediately when we think of oil is fuel for our cars and our airplanes or heating oil for our homes. Oil’s greatest value, however, comes from being *the* most important raw material for the chemical and, even more importantly, the pharmaceutical industry for practically all of those chemical products that enable our life to take on the character that we have assigned to it.

Fundamentally, fuels for vehicles or airplanes can be based on other sources. The most promising candidate that comes to mind is hydrogen. With respect to its energy density, it does not quite measure up to the oil-gasoline-kerosene group, but it does have a number of highly convincing advantages:

a. Hydrogen can be produced from water by electrolysis. The only by-product is oxygen which can be released into the atmosphere.

b. The electrical energy necessary for electrolysis can be generated by means of solar cells.

c. Hydrogen can be compressed and liquefied, thus enabling it to be transported via pipelines or large tankers.

d. The basic requirements for the construction and use of solar cells—sand and sun—are abundantly available in the countries which today are producing oil. We can therefore make use of the existing infrastructure built for this purpose.

e. When hydrogen is burnt with air, the only exhaust gas produced is water (aside from minor traces of nitrogen oxides).

Models for converting modern industrial societies to the use of hydrogen have been around for some three decades. The technologies are ready; what is missing is the political will and the economic feasibility.

Meanwhile, we keep on burning vast amounts of black gold, a raw material that is almost irreplaceable for chemical and pharmaceutical industries. If the reader had the choice of heating his home either with hydrogen or by burning all the plastic and textile products of his home as well as all medical supplies it contains, what would he decide to do?

This is the true madness of our present state of affairs. By burning oil we burn the basis of the production of modern plastics, of textiles, of medical products, although we have at our disposal a far better source of energy, if we would only decide to exploit it.

You have three guesses as to why this crime of setting on fire the future of our children and our children’s children goes on unimpeded. Ask the likes of Dick Cheney and George W. Bush; maybe these oil-barons can give you a clue while taking a break from bombarding to death some recalcitrant human beings in order to keep the oil market under control.

Thus, the fundamental scandal about the greenhouse effect is not the uncritical disposition of the meteorologists of this world, but the power of Big Oil with all its downstream industries.<sup>9</sup>

### Basic questions of scientific theory

Even a cursory survey of the internet reveals immediately that the discussion of the greenhouse effect is not a latter-day

taboo. One encounters the author Wolfgang Thüne in many of the major German newspapers and magazines. Books on *Widerlegte Klimatheorien (Climate Theories refuted)*<sup>10</sup> and *Umweltmythen (Environmental Myths)*,<sup>11</sup> written by reputable authors are offered by large publishing houses. Arguments and counter-arguments abound, even in the camps of the experts.<sup>12</sup> It would be far-fetched to compare Thüne’s greenhouse revisionism to the revisionism regarding the Holocaust, because a suppression or a ban does not strike Thüne’s thesis.

Doctor Thüne is not alone in his critical attitude. Others, some of them much more highly qualified, are joining his ranks. The fact that many of them have some sort of a relationship or may even be financed by emission-intensive industries renders them untrustworthy in the eyes of their opponents.<sup>12</sup> This is of course no argument for casting doubts on the greenhouse revisionists, although it does cause one to wonder as to the nature of a science allegedly free from ideology.

The Holocaust brand of revisionism is not supported by worldly or industrial powers, and its promoters reap only disadvantages from their efforts. Aside from scientific or social altruism, Holocaust revisionists cannot claim any motives that might make their actions comprehensible...

### Notes

<sup>1</sup> [www.zum.de/Faecher/Ch/RP/ozon/temperatur1.html](http://www.zum.de/Faecher/Ch/RP/ozon/temperatur1.html)

<sup>2</sup> [www.wuerzburg.de/mm-physik/klima3.html](http://www.wuerzburg.de/mm-physik/klima3.html)

<sup>3</sup> Accordingly, Thüne’s contributions can be found in the *Ostpreußenblatt*, a paper closely associated with the *Association East-Prussia*, e.g.: “Nein zur Ökodiktatur” (No to the economic dictatorship) Nov. 1, 1997; cf. online <http://konservativ.de/umwelt/thuene44.htm>

<sup>4</sup> That would be just as absurd as to claim, regarding diffusion (Fick’s law), that no particles can diffuse from locations of lower concentration to locations of higher concentration. This is contradicting the diffusion process which is purely statistical, *i.e.*, equal into all directions. Only as a statistical average, more particles diffuse from locations with higher concentrations than from locations with lower concentrations.

<sup>5</sup> According to calculations, the temperature on Venus would be around 100°C without greenhouse effect, but it actually is around 450°C; cf. [www.as.yasu.edu/~adhunter/Teaching/Chem500/notes3bw.doc](http://www.as.yasu.edu/~adhunter/Teaching/Chem500/notes3bw.doc)

<sup>6</sup> [www.geo.arizona.edu/geo4xx/geos478/GC2002.GHG.html](http://www.geo.arizona.edu/geo4xx/geos478/GC2002.GHG.html): in comparison to CO<sub>2</sub>, the following factors apply: methane: 24; laughing gas: 300; chlorofluorocarbons: 5,000-10,000.

<sup>7</sup> As is known in spectroscopy, an increase of concentration leads to a broadening of absorption bands. Due to this effect, an increase of CO<sub>2</sub> leads to a slight narrowing of the radiation window.

<sup>8</sup> Compare also the critique by Dipl.-Ing. Peter Dietze, Langensendelbach, <http://krahmer.freepage.de/klima/thuene/kritik01.html>.

<sup>9</sup> My Master thesis focused on a section of the onboard energy supply system of the once planned European space shuttle Hermes, which has been abandoned in the meantime. The system was planned as an oxygen-hydrogen fuel cell. As such, I got in intensive contact with the hydrogen technology as well as with the power of big corporate industries to suppress this technology. Furthermore, during my chemistry studies, which included spectroscopy, I also studied a few semesters of meteorology just for the sake of it, since I had made weather observations a hobby of mine in my youth.

<sup>10</sup> Nigel Calder, *The manic sun. Weather theories confounded*, London. Pilkington. 1997

<sup>11</sup> Dirk Maxeiner, Michael Miersch, *Lexikon der Öko-Irrtümer. Fakten statt Umweltmythen*, Piper, Munich 2000.

<sup>12</sup> Cf. e.g., [www.germanwatch.org/rio/skept.htm](http://www.germanwatch.org/rio/skept.htm). In this, Dr. Thüne is accused of having stubbornly ignored critiques written against him, which is an accusation that I did not check.

# All Men Are Equal—But Are They Really?

## Was There a Jewish-Zionist Agenda Behind the Racial Thought of Stephen Jay Gould?

By Paul Grubach

In 1994, Richard Herrnstein and Charles Murray published their highly controversial book, *The Bell Curve*, in which they claimed that the American Black population has a lower average intelligence quotient than the American White population, and genetic differences between the two groups are to a large extent responsible for this. Of course, this raised a major earthquake in U.S. society and resulted in numerous attacks on the authors, not all of which were scholarly.

Long before *The Bell Curve* was published, world famous paleontologist and evolutionary biologist Stephen Jay Gould attempted to refute the scientific theories of this book by claiming that there are no significant biological differences between human racial groups. Whereas this article does not raise the question of whether or not blacks have, on average, a lower IQ than whites, it does show that Gould's attempt to prove that there are no significant genetic differences between racial groups went well beyond what is scientifically tenable. Author Grubach also shows that Gould was plagued with a heavy ideological bias.

### Introduction

Science assumes a factual reality to exist, and with the proper use of scientific methods one can learn about it.

However, in every society there are social groups whose special task it is to provide an interpretation of the world. These social groups, the culture-bearing strata, sometimes enjoy a monopolistic control over molding a society's world-view. When the values and interests of these cultural elites act as distorting influences upon the acquisition of scientific knowledge, progress becomes impeded.<sup>1</sup>

America is no exception to this sociological process. It too has its culture-bearing strata, intellectual and cultural establishments, and media elite that effectively mold the worldview of the masses. One of the most powerful and influential of these mind-shaping groups is the Jewish political and cultural establishment.<sup>2</sup> In the words of the social scientists, Stanley Rothman and S. Robert Lichter:<sup>3</sup>

*"Americans of Jewish background have become an elite group in American society, with a cultural influence far beyond their numbers."*

As noted film critic Neal Gabler pointed out in his study of the Jewish movie moguls who came to dominate Hollywood:<sup>4</sup>

*"The Hollywood Jews created a cluster of images and ideas—so powerful that, in a sense, they colonized the American imagination. [...] Ultimately, American values came to be defined largely by the movies the Jews made."*

A similar statement could be made for the Jewish intellectu-

als that had, and continue to have, a considerable influence upon the social sciences. They created an ensemble of images, ideas, and 'moral' evaluations—in short, an entire group of different ideologies that reflects and serves Jewish interests and profoundly influences the thinking of American and Western intellectuals. Ernest van den Haag, professor of social philosophy, stated it in these terms:<sup>5</sup>

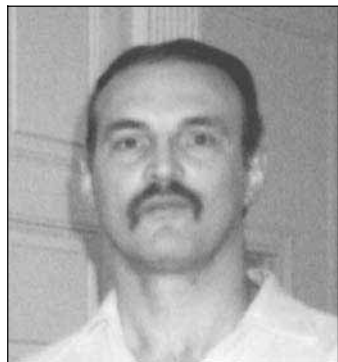
*"The literate American mind has come, in some measure, to think Jewish, to respond Jewishly. It has been taught to, and it was ready to."*

Definite forms of social consciousness derive from the fact that this Jewish elite controls the substances of power in the United States to a significant extent and has the authority to impose its viewpoints upon the American people. Some never think to question these preformed patterns of thought, and thus, remain locked in a dogmatic slumber.

Prominent Jewish intellectual, Harvard biologist, political leftist, and a leading intellectual of the Jewish establishment, Stephen Jay Gould was one of the most acclaimed and widely read scientists of our time. He received innumerable honors and awards and had written many books. In 2001, the Library of Congress named Gould one of America's eighty-three "Living Legends"—people who exemplify the American ideal of creativity, conviction, dedication, and exuberance. In May of 2002, he passed away at the relatively young age of 60.

In a series of books and essays he had proven himself to be one of the most able and dedicated proponents of racial egalitarianism, the theory that all human races are equal or relatively the same with respect to genetic endowment. His famous tome, *The Mismeasure of Man*, first appearing in 1981 with a revised edition in 1996, was widely praised in academia and the mainstream media as a definitive refutation of past and present scientific work on race, brain-size, and intelligence. He spent a good part of his career attacking the alleged biases, ulterior agendas, and foibles of scientists, past and present, who claim there are biologically based mental and behavioral differences between the races.

There is no question that Gould was a gifted writer and able scientist who made contributions to science. His theories on



Paul Grubach holds an Associate Arts degree in liberal arts, and a Bachelor of Science degree in physics, with a concentration in chemistry and minor in history, from John Carroll University (Ohio). He received a scholarship for his work in chemistry, and is a member of the Phi Alpha Theta history honor society.

race, however, are another matter all together.

The psychologists Arthur Jensen and J. Philippe Rushton have already exposed many of the distortions, omissions, and fallacies in Gould's work on racial differences.<sup>7</sup> In a review of the relevant literature, evolutionary psychologist Kevin MacDonald concluded that some of Gould's work is characterized by plain old intellectual dishonesty.<sup>8</sup>

Rushton's exposé is the most devastating, as it opens up the possibility that Gould's errors were not "honest mistakes," but rather the end result of a pattern of intended deception. In spite of all this, Gould's racial ideology is alive and well.

Gould never responded to Rushton's devastating critique and exposé, nor to this writer's knowledge did he ever address Jensen's critique. MacDonald noted that Gould "took no steps to deal with the objections of his critics."<sup>9</sup> According to Gould's own way of thinking, this is unscholarly behavior on his part, for he wrote that ignoring or suppressing counter-arguments is a "conspiracy of silence" and a sign of unscholarly behavior.<sup>10</sup> Thus, a similar judgment would apply to Gould's conspiracy of silence in regard to critiques of his racial theories.

Most likely there was an ulterior reason for his refusal to rebut his critics. If he had publicly responded to Rushton and Jensen, this would have called attention to the errors, omissions, distortions, and shortcomings in his work on racial differences. Ultimately, he would have been drawn into a debate with these maverick psychologists, and he could have ended up on the losing side—and I think he realized this. In addition to his racial theories, a public debate with Rushton and Jensen may have destroyed his credibility and carefully cultivated public image.

Therefore, the best strategy (from Gould's perspective) would have been to simply ignore Rushton's and Jensen's critiques. Gould's work would then still enjoy wide acceptance in the academic community and the mainstream media, because most people would remain unaware that Rushton's and Jensen's work discredited Gould's fallacious views on race. After all, their essays would remain buried in obscure intellectual journals that have a very limited readership, and his credibility and carefully cultivated public image would remain unscathed. By not responding to his critics, Gould ensured that his racial theories would enjoy wide acceptance.

This paper will cover new ground. I will provide a rebuttal to those aspects of his racial theories to which no one else (to my knowledge) has; namely, his theory on the evolution of alleged genetic equality between human races, and his views on the genetics of the Jewish people. Finally, I will focus upon some of the sociopolitical interests that Gould's racial theories reflect and serve.



Steven S. Gould<sup>6</sup>

## Gould's Scientific Arguments Scrutinized

In a chapter from his popular book, "The Flamingo's Smile," Gould summarized his anthropological ideas as to how the alleged biological equality of mankind came about.<sup>11</sup> It suffices to say that his viewpoints are presently accepted by a large segment of the mass media and scientific community.

It is generally agreed that *Australopithecus*, *Homo habilis*, and *Homo erectus*—all members of the human family Hominidae—made their first appearances on the African continent. Then, between 1 million and 2 million years ago, *Homo erectus* emerged out of Africa to populate Eurasia. As a consequence, *Homo erectus* and archaic *Homo sapiens* were broadly

distributed throughout Africa and Asia about a million years ago.<sup>12</sup>

How are these ancient populations related to the different human races of today? Were the descendants of the *Homo erectus* groups that walked out of Africa into the Eurasian world—the Neanderthal of Europe, the Beijing Man of China, the Java man of Indonesia and others—really the ancestors of the modern Africans, Europeans, and Asians? Or were these descendants of the *erectus* populations evolutionary dead ends supplanted by a wave of anatomically modern people arising in Africa less than 200,000 years ago?

Gould subscribed to the "Eve theory" or "replacement hypothesis" in regard to human racial origins. This theory proposes that the descendants of the *Homo erectus* groups that emerged from Africa about a million years ago—the Neanderthals, Beijing Man, and Java Man—were evolutionary dead ends supplanted by a wave of anatomically modern people arising in Africa less than 200,000 years ago. In short, the replacement hypothesis proposes that fully modern humans emerged recently (around 200,000 years ago) from *H. erectus* groups on the African continent, and then migrated into Europe and Asia, replacing the existing *H. erectus* populations (Neanderthals, Beijing Man, and Java Man) in these areas. An African/non-African split is envisaged as occurring 110,000 years ago following a dispersal event in the Middle East, the pathway out of Africa, with a Caucasoid/Mongoloid split occurring 41,000 years ago.<sup>13</sup>

Human equality is a contingent fact of history, Gould claimed. That is to say, evolutionary forces determined that there are only minor and insignificant biological differences between the races. A myriad of different and plausible scenarios for human evolution would have yielded other results. They didn't happen.<sup>14</sup>

The Harvard academic further asserted that human races "are recent, poorly differentiated subpopulations of our modern

species, *Homo sapiens*, separated at most by tens or hundreds of thousands of years, and marked by remarkably small genetic differences.”<sup>15</sup> Later on he added: “*Homo sapiens* is a young species, its division into races even more recent. This historical context has not provided enough time for the evolution of substantial differences.”<sup>16</sup>

In other words, mankind evolved all of its major characteristics (including intelligence) in Africa, and then spread elsewhere through Asia and Europe. Because the division of humanity into separate races had occurred so recently in human evolution, there was not enough time for significant biological differences between the races to evolve. Consequently, the races must be “biologically equal,” or relatively the same.<sup>17</sup>

It must be emphasized that Gould’s theory of the evolution of racial equality is based upon three arguments.

- I. The evolutionary history of man did not provide enough time for significant genetic differences between the races to evolve.
- II. As a result, there are only minimal and insignificant genetic differences between the races.
- III. Finally, it is not possible to adequately classify humans into racial categories.

If there are no racial categories, it is not possible to make racial comparisons and there are no significant, biologically based racial differences. It is important to note that these are currently some of the most important arguments in the arsenal of those who believe that there are no significant genetic differences between the races of man.

Even if, as Gould maintained, human races are of recent separation (*i.e.*, the division of humans into modern racial groups happened only twenty five or a hundred thousand years ago), significant genetic differences could have evolved in this relatively small amount of geological time. Biologist Richard Goldsby noted that in nature, evolution at the racial level can be extremely rapid. Citing a study of racial formation in the house sparrow, he pointed out that from a founding population of sparrows into America in 1852, more than a dozen racial varieties have evolved. All of these races of house sparrows evolved within one hundred generations. In a human population, one hundred generations cover a time span of about 2,000 years. Goldsby concludes:<sup>18</sup>

*“These studies suggest that given a reasonable degree of isolation and selection pressure, relatively short periods may be required for the elaboration of some racial characters in man.”*

Indeed, consider the case of the Bushmen of southern Africa. As the late biologist John R. Baker pointed out in his monumental study of human races, the Bushmen

*“are very different in physical characters—indeed, in certain respects astonishingly different—from both Europeans [Europeans] and Australids [Australian aborigines], and thus show particularly clearly how wrong it is to suggest that there are few differences between races, apart from skin-color.”*<sup>19</sup>

Let us assume that Gould’s claim is correct: namely that human races are separated at most by tens of thousands of years. Then, in this very short span of geological time, evolutionary forces were able to create Bushmen who are very different from the other races of men, thus refuting Gould’s claim that there was not enough time for the races to evolve significant differences between them.

The irony of it all is that Gould’s own theory concerning evolutionary change—“Punctuated Equilibrium”—may very

well account for the evolution of significant genetic differences between the human races in a relatively small amount of evolutionary time. He postulated that a species changes rapidly as it comes into existence (*i.e.*, diverges from the parent species), but quite slowly thereafter. In his own words: “species form rapidly in geological perspective (thousands of years) and tend to remain highly stable for millions of years thereafter.”<sup>20</sup> Why then couldn’t the human races, as they came into existence, have evolved substantial genetic differences between themselves in a small amount of evolutionary time?

Gould himself describes “Punctuated Equilibrium” in these terms:<sup>21</sup>

*“[...] most species are stable for most of their geological lifetimes, often lasting many millions of years—the equilibrium—and that change does not usually occur by imperceptibly gradual alteration of entire species but rather by isolation of small populations and their instantaneous transformation*

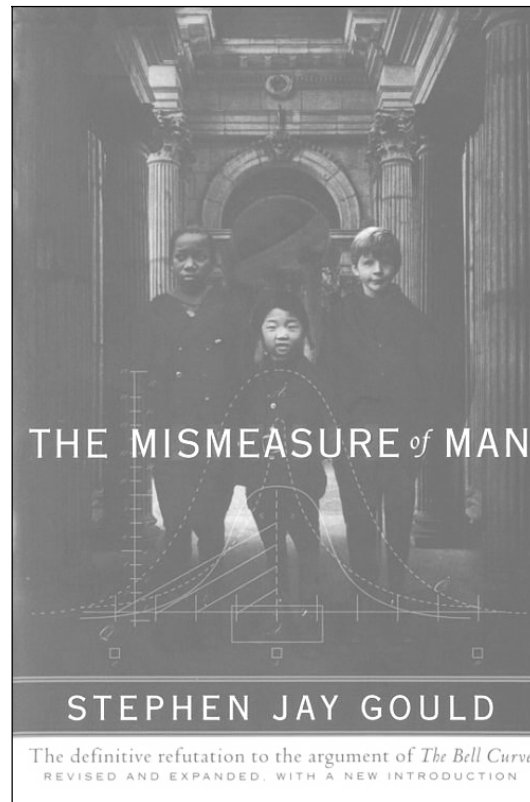
*to new species—the punctuation.”*

He continues:<sup>22</sup>

*“An isolated population may take a thousand years to speciate, and its transformation would therefore appear glacially slow if measured by the irrelevant scale of our personal lives. But a thousand years, appropriately recorded in geological time, is only an unresolvable moment.”*

In short, “Punctuated Equilibrium” theory proposes that species change little over extended periods of geological time (the equilibrium or stasis), but when they do evolve, they change quickly from one state to another; that is, the stasis is punctuated by rapid genetic change.<sup>23</sup>

Two different species that evolved from a parent species are genetically more different from each other than two races of the



*S. J. Gould’s definite failure.*

same species. If, according to Gould, it takes only a thousand years to form a new species that is biologically very different from its parent species, why couldn't human races have formed very rapidly in just a few thousand years that are significantly different from each other in a genetic sense?

In a book Gould edited, it is written the groups that left Africa and spread to other continents were "changing [in a biological sense] along the way according to climate and conditions."<sup>24</sup> Gould's own theory of evolutionary change provides more than enough time for said groups to have evolved significant physical and mental differences between them.

All of this highlights Gould's tendency to adopt arguments that support his biases and to ignore just as plausible arguments that contradict them. He totally ignored the implications of his own view of evolutionary change in regard to the evolution of racial differences, and just accepted the argument that "there was not enough time for significant racial differences to evolve." According to Gould's view of evolutionary change, there would have been more than enough time to form human racial groups that are significantly different from each other.

Let us assume Gould's next claim—modern races are characterized by remarkably small genetic differences—is indeed correct. Very small genetic differences between two racial groups can lead to dramatic, observable, phenotypic results. He would have to admit this, for Gould himself has written:<sup>25</sup>

*"Small underlying [genetic] changes can yield large accumulated effects if introduced early in growth, with cascading consequences thereafter."*

In regard to the differences between humans and chimps, he has written:<sup>25</sup>

*"[...] are we [humans] so different from chimps as we so confidently and arrogantly assert? In appearance, sure. [...] In brain power, undoubtedly. [...] But the underlying biological differences need not be so great. [...] Small [genetic] changes [between humans and chimps] can have cataclysmic effects."*

Consider the example of sickle-cell anemia, a severe hereditary disease that afflicts a large percentage of Black Africans, and a significant percentage of Black Americans, but is virtually absent among American whites. The sickle-cell condition is under the control of a single gene.<sup>26</sup> If a person is homozygous (*i.e.*, has two identical versions of a gene) for this characteristic, he dies in childhood or suffers from chronic anemia. If heterozygous (*i.e.*, has two different versions of the same gene), the person shows signs of anemia only under conditions of stress, but also displays significantly greater resistance to malaria than those lacking the gene. Thus, a small genetic difference, brought about by only one gene between two racial groups leads to significant differences between them in resistance to malaria and susceptibility to anemia.

There are other examples of "one-gene-differences" between ethnic groups that have a dramatic effect. Tay Sachs disease (TSD) is a fatal genetic disorder in children that causes the progressive destruction of the central nervous system. If a child inherits a recessive TSD allele from each parent, he will have TSD. Approximately 85% of the children affected with TSD are Jewish.<sup>27</sup>

Krabbe disease, another genetic disorder in children, occurs in all ethnic groups, but it is most common among the Scandinavian countries. If both parents pass the abnormal, recessive gene for the disease to the child, the latter will develop the disease.<sup>28</sup> Indeed, Gould seems to be aware of the fact that small genetic differences between racial groups can give rise to an array of differences between them. In a book he edited, it is written:<sup>29</sup>

*"One of the more trivial symptoms of these [genetic] changes [between racial groups] is our present-day spectrum of skin colors, estimated to be controlled by a possible five to seven genes, out of a total of about 300,000."*

Why then couldn't certain behavioral differences between the races also be under the influence of a similar, small number of genes?

There is an egregious example of how a genetic difference between two different ethnic groups will have dramatic military consequences. The respected *London Times* reported:<sup>30</sup>

*"Israel is working on a biological weapon that would harm Arabs but not Jews, according to Israeli military and western intelligence sources. The weapon, targetting victims by ethnic origin, is seen as Israel's response to Iraq's threat of chemical and biological attacks."*

The article continues:

*"The intention is to use the ability of viruses and certain bacteria to alter the DNA inside their host's living cell. The scientists are trying to engineer deadly micro-organisms that attack only those bearing the distinctive genes."*

A scientist involved with the Israeli facility that is sponsoring the project was quoted as saying the researchers "have succeeded in pinpointing a particular characteristic in the genetic profile of certain Arab communities, particularly the Iraqi people."

One wonders if Gould would have dared tell the Arab people who are targeted by such a weapon that "genetic differences between you and the Jews are of little consequence."

Two groups, A and B, can share 99.9% of the same human genes and characteristics. They can be virtually identical. Nevertheless, if the 0.1% variation occurs in a characteristic that helps determine success in a certain endeavor, say sprinting, then group A might produce the majority of great sprinters, group B only a small minority.

In an attempt to bolster his argument that the genetic differences between the races are minor and inconsequential, Gould posed this rhetorical question:<sup>31</sup>

*"How much genetic difference exists among races? The answer [...] soon emerged without ambiguity: damned little. [...] Gene] Frequencies vary, often considerably, among groups, but all human races are much of muchness."*

These claims ignored important evidence, and are now known to be outdated. In an attempt to determine how the Jewish people differ from the non-Jewish world, Israeli scientists conducted studies that show that Jews as a group differ significantly from non-Jews in a genetic sense.<sup>32</sup> More recently, another major study found that Jewish communities have, to a considerable extent, retained their biological identity separate from the surrounding Gentile populations, evidence of relatively little intermarriage or conversion into Judaism over the centuries.<sup>33</sup>



The *Sunday Times* of London recently revealed that British police can predict the odds, based upon DNA samples, that a suspect belongs to such ethnic groups as Oriental, Afro-Caribbean, Caucasian, Indo Pakistani or Middle Eastern.<sup>34</sup>

Ergo, the fact of the matter still remaining is that science can distinguish between groups on the basis of their genetic characteristics. This was true even at the time Gould proclaimed, “human races are much of muchness.”

In order to ‘prove’ that genetic differences between the races are of no significance, Gould then fell back on the key egalitarian argument.<sup>36</sup>

“[...] the great preponderance of human [genetic] variation occurs within groups, not in the differences between them. [...] If, God forbid, the holocaust occurs and only the Xhosa people of the southern tip of Africa survived, the human species would still retain 80% of its variation.”

But the 20% variation not present in these Africans may be one of the major reasons as to why they never reached the level of civilization of the Japanese.

The distinguished psychologist J. Philippe Rushton, who has studied human racial differences for over 20 years, nailed down with perfect accuracy the fallacies in these Gouldian arguments. He wrote:<sup>37</sup>

“Sometimes it is claimed by those who argue that race is just a social construct that the human-genome project shows that, because people share roughly 99 percent of their genes in common, there are no races. This is silly. Human genes are 98 percent similar to chimpanzee genes and 90 percent similar to those in mice, which is why these species make good laboratory animals. But no one claims that mice, chimpanzees and humans are nearly the same! That would be laughable. Similarly, although men and

women are genetically 99 percent the same, it is foolish to believe that sex is just a social construct.

Much confusion arises because there are several sets of genetic measures. A much more realistic story comes from looking at the 3.1 billion base pairs that make up the 30,000 genes. People differ in one out of every 1,000 of these base pairs. Each change in a base pair can alter a gene. Technically, base-pair differences are called single nucleotide polymorphisms (SNPs). The 99 percent figure is based on DNA sequences which do not differ between people or even most mammals. These can give the impression that human groups and chimpanzees are almost identical because these genes code for similar internal organs, eyes, hands and so on. Though humans and mice look very different, any anatomy student can tell you that even their internal bone structures are very similar.

The February 23 [2001] issue of *Science* magazine reported that 2.8 million SNPs were already being sold by Celera Genomics to scientists trying to crack the code of human behavior. Base-pair differences are important and SNPs clump together in races. Just one change in the base pair for hemoglobin, for example, causes sickle-cell anemia, from which many blacks suffer. Other base-pair differences affect IQ, aggression and mental illness. The 3.1 billion base pairs provide plenty of room for large racial differences.”

Finally, Gould relied upon a series of questionable arguments in an attempt to discredit the practice of classifying humans into races. They are as follows.<sup>38</sup>

“First, discordance of characters. We might make a reasonable division [of humans into racial categories] on skin color, only to discover that blood groups imply different alliances. When so many good characters exhibit such discordant patterns of variation, no valid criterion can be established for [the] unambiguous definition of [races]. Second, fluidity and gradations. We interbreed wherever we move, breaking down barriers and creating new groups. Shall the Cape Colored, [...] the offspring of unions between Africans and white settlers [...], be designated a new subspecies or simply the living disproof that white and black are very distinct? Third, convergences. Similar characters evolve independently again and again; they confound any attempt to base [racial categories] on definite traits. Most indigenous tropical people, for example, have evolved dark skin.”

Here, he seems to be arguing that since there are no real racial divisions, there can be no real racial differences.

Gould defined “race” as a “population inhabiting a definite geographic subsection of a species range and sufficiently distinct in any set of traits for taxonomic recogni-



J. Philippe Rushton in a cable car on his way up to the “Niederwalddenkmal,” Rudesheim, Germany.<sup>35</sup>

tion.”<sup>39</sup> Even if modern races are not presently confined to definite areas, East Asians/Mongoloids, Europeans/Caucasoids, Africans/Negroids, and Australian aborigines/Australoids did originate and evolve in definite geographic subsections of the range of *Homo sapiens*,<sup>40</sup> and they are in fact distinct in certain sets of traits for taxonomic recognition.<sup>41</sup> For example, the different racial types have developed specializations in parts of their skeletal anatomy that can be used to identify them with relative certainty.<sup>42</sup> Consequently, a trained scientist is able to classify skulls by race.<sup>43</sup> Contrary to Gould, a valid criterion has been established by researchers for an unambiguous definition of different races.

Continuing with his line of argument, Gould adds:<sup>44</sup>

*“We are not well enough divided into distinct geographic groups, and the naming of human subspecies makes little sense.”*

A recent study published in *Science* shows that humankind falls into five continental groups—broadly equivalent to the common conception of races—when a computer is asked to sort DNA data from people from around the world into clusters.<sup>45</sup> This suggests that the races are well enough divided into distinct geographic groups, and they are distinct enough in their genetic constitution for taxonomic recognition.

Once these broad categories are established, the “discordant patterns of variation” among the races which Gould refers to begin to make biological sense. It is the total ensemble of gene frequencies, morphological traits, and geographic and behavioral characteristics that differentiate the races, not just one or two characters which display discordant patterns of variation among the races.<sup>46</sup> Years before Gould put his views in writing, Goldsby made this perfectly clear when he wrote:<sup>47</sup>

*“a race is a breeding population characterized by frequencies of a collection of inherited traits that differ from those of other populations of the same species.”*

And of course, there has been interbreeding between the races. But this in no way undermines the validity of racial classifications. The biologist Baker nailed down the fallacy in Gould’s argument some time before the latter put his views on race in print. He wrote:<sup>48</sup>

*“If every specimen could be identified with certainty as belonging to one population [race] or the other, it would be evident that no gene-flow occurred between the two, and they would therefore be regarded as different species in the genetical sense of the word. [...] It is the fact that [racial] intermediates do occur that defines the race.”*

He added:

*“the existence of intermediates is one of the distinguishing characters of the race: if there are no intermediates, there are no races.”*

As the biologist Goldsby noted:<sup>49</sup>

*“[...] one finds that natural races, unlike the rigidly isolated races of domestic breeds, tend to be separated by intergrading zones rather than by sharp lines of demarcation.”*

Thus, from a scientific standpoint, the Cape Colored which Gould refers to is simply an intermediate between a Caucasoid and Negroid. Whether or not this type is to be designated as a new subspecies or as “living disproof that white and black are

very distinct” is something for future scientific research to determine.

And even if “convergent characters” are sometimes problematic to the racial taxonomist, ongoing scientific research can help alleviate this problem.

There is one more Gouldian proclamation that is worth dealing with. He asserted:<sup>50</sup>

*“Intense studies for more than a decade have detected not a single ‘race gene’—that is, a gene present in all members of one group and none of another.”*

A recent study published in *Science* noted:<sup>51</sup>

*“This overall similarity of human populations is also evident in the geographically widespread nature of most alleles [different variations of a single gene]. Of 4199 alleles present more than once in the sample, 46.7% appeared in all major regions represented: Africa, Europe, the Middle East, Central/South Asia, East Asia, Oceania, and America. Only 7.4% of these 4199 alleles were exclusive to one region; region-specific alleles were usually rare, with a median relative frequency of 1.0% in their region of occurrence.”*

In other words, there are genes specific to particular regions—regions that are broadly equivalent to the common conception of races. Thus, in a sense, these “region-specific” genes are “race genes.”

Like much of Gould’s work on the subject of racial differences, his theory as to why racial equality allegedly evolved is very questionable at best. Some have suggested that his ‘scientific’ theories of race are simply a reflection of his deeply held, leftist political beliefs, or they are simply fashioned to serve a Jewish agenda.<sup>52</sup>

It is important to note that just because Gould’s racial theories reflect and serve a sociopolitical agenda (as we shall soon see), this in no way falsifies those theories. His theories are to be examined for their truth and falsity independent of the motives, agenda, and psychological makeup of Stephen Jay Gould.

The same is true for theories of racial inequality. Even if the scientist who formulates a theory of racial inequality has strong “racialist-nationalist feelings,” his political sympathies in no way falsifies his theories.

As the philosopher of science Karl Popper noted, it doesn’t matter where hypotheses come from, only whether they explain the evidence they are based on, whether they are subject to disproof, and whether they can hold up to attempts to disprove them.<sup>53</sup> The truth or falsity of a scientific theory is independent of the political sympathies of its proponents. On this matter, Gould himself approvingly quoted the socialist Karl Kautsky:<sup>54</sup>

*“That an idea emanates from a particular class, or accords with their interests, of course proves nothing as to its truth or falsity.”*

### **Gould’s Attitude Toward His Jewish Heritage**

Gould attempted to debunk the claim that Jews are a distinct hereditary group. He writes:<sup>55</sup>

*“Jews have been dispersed throughout the world, reviled and despised, expelled and excluded. Many subgroups have been lost by assimilation, others diluted by extensive intermarriage.”*

In short, the Jews are strongly commingled, and therefore do not represent a distinct genealogical group.

This viewpoint ignores data that suggests something quite different. As far back as 1970, the geneticist Theodosius Dobzhansky discussed the evidence that suggested that Jewish groups differ in a genetic sense from non-Jews:<sup>56</sup>

*“The Jews evidently are not a homogenous or unified race. [...] At the same time, the Jews remained genetically distinct from their non-Jewish neighbors and to some extent preserved genetic similarities most likely attributable to a common descent. Mourant stresses particularly the uniformity of the populations of Ashkenazim (Jews of Central and European descent) and Sephardim (Jews of Western Mediterranean descent), despite their centuries long residence among different peoples. In agreement with this, there exist data showing that the incidence of a number of diseases differs considerably in the Jewish and non-Jewish populations sympatric with them. A part of these different disease susceptibilities is almost certainly genetic.”*

In an attempt to determine how the Jewish people differ from the non-Jewish world, Israeli scientists conducted studies (published during Gould’s lifetime) that show that Jews as a group differ significantly from non-Jews in genetic sense.<sup>57</sup> Gould was undoubtedly aware of these studies, as his colleague Jared Diamond discussed them in an article for *Natural History*, a prestigious scientific monthly that both wrote for.<sup>58</sup>

Once again, there may have been a political motive for Gould’s omission of significant data. A prominent Israeli journalist, Aaron Meged, may have revealed Gould’s possible motive. On November 8, 1981, in the Israeli newspaper *Davar*, he noted:<sup>59</sup>

*“In our [Jewish] bitter fight against the race theories of H.S. Chamberlin and the Nazi Alfred Rosenberg, the theories that brought terrible disasters to us, that allocated evil characteristics to all of us as being naturally inherited ones, so that no Jew could escape them, we tended to disregard totally the existence of biological characteristics that are common to all Jews.”*

In other words, like many Jewish intellectuals, Gould may not have wanted Jews to be perceived by non-Jews to be genetically different, as this supposedly brings trouble for the Jewish community.

### Gould’s Ideological Bias

Gould espoused a Marxist interpretation of science. In this view, social science is inclined to promote ideologies that reflect and serve a society’s dominant elements and ruling elites,

reinforcing their position of political, social, and economic power.

Science is embedded in culture, as cultural beliefs and practices influence the fashioning of scientific theories. In this vein Gould has written:<sup>60</sup>

*“Many scientists fail to recognize that all mental activity must occur in social contexts, and that a variety of cultural influences must therefore impact all scientific work.”*

There is certainly some truth to his views, and ironically, Gould’s biased views on racial-ethnic matters are demonstration of his thesis. As we shall see, Gould approached the subject of race with a biased ideological orientation, one that ultimately reflects and serves the interests of the group that he was a part of—the liberal Jewish-Zionist power elite.

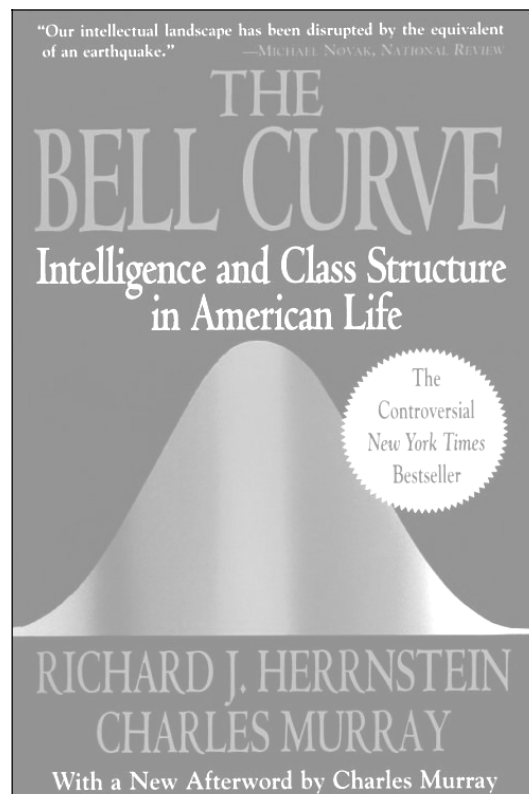
Since Gould hypothesized that the personal psychology and social circumstances of the scientist are important determinants of the latter’s thinking, let us begin with a look at his own psychosocial background.

The Harvard intellectual was raised in a Jewish environment.<sup>61</sup> In a three volume study of the Jewish Question, California Psychology Professor Kevin MacDonald concluded that the Jewish community, in general, has been an alien, non-assimilative, and at times, even hostile element within European and non-Jewish societies. Judaism has been characterized by genetic and cultural separation from others, and an explicit double standard of morality—altruism and cooperation among Jews, but competition with non-Jews.<sup>62</sup>

There is ample evidence from independent sources to corroborate MacDonald’s viewpoint. For example, political scientists Stanley Rothman and S. Robert Lichter found that one of the outstanding psychological characteristics of the Jewish leftist is his feeling of alienation from and his hostility towards Western culture.<sup>63</sup> Since Western civilization is the product of Europeans, it follows that leftist Jews would attack the culture’s biological foundations. By blurring the genetic distinction between races, alienated Jews are able to chip away at the genetic heritage of Westerners.

Gould’s parents retained pride in Jewish history and heritage, although they rejected all theology and religious belief.<sup>64</sup> Commenting upon his childhood, Gould pointed out that he “learned his Marxism from this daddy’s knee,” although he added his political beliefs were “very different from [his] father’s.”<sup>65</sup>

When he visited the Caribbean island of Cracao, he spoke warmly of his visit to the Jewish synagogue, and hinted that Jewish ethnic survival was important to him:<sup>66</sup>



The book that rocked the boat in 1994

*"I felt privileged, and more than a little awestruck to attend the Friday night service and to think that people of my heritage have been saying the same prayers in the same spot for more than 250 years with this New World of constant change."*

Some more legitimate light may be cast on Gould's motivation by an examination of those groups with whom he associated. That Jewish-Zionist interests were indeed important to Gould is suggested by the fact that he was, for a time, on the Editorial Advisory Board of *Patterns of Prejudice*, a publication sponsored by the ardently pro-Zionist and pro-Israel Institute for Jewish Affairs (London) and World Jewish Congress.<sup>67</sup> Although these Zionist groups oppose all forms of alleged non-Jewish "racism," they remain ardent supporters of the apartheid, ethnically segregated Israel.

Towards the end of his life he became a huge supporter of Michael Shermer's *Skeptic* magazine and "Skeptics Society," and he wrote the introduction to Shermer's *Why People Believe Weird Things*.<sup>68</sup> The magazine, organization, and book attempt to debunk Creationism (Christian fundamentalism), Holocaust revisionism, alleged white racism, and even so-called "extreme Afrocentrism" (the latter is often associated with Black American opposition to Zionism). These are four movements the Jewish-Zionist power elite views as dire threats to their interests and power.

Gould presented himself as a humanist who is interested in social justice and racial equality for all mankind, as he was an ardent activist in the Black American civil rights movement, taking part in activities to end segregation between Blacks and Whites.<sup>69</sup>

*"I grew up in a family with a tradition of participation in campaigns for social justice, and I was active, as a student, in the [Black American] civil rights movement at a time of great excitement and success in the early 1960s."*

One should not automatically assume that Gould was motivated *mainly* by a desire to aid Black Americans. Historically, Jews have long been in the forefront of the movement for Black-White racial integration in the U.S. and South Africa. These same Jews, however, are most usually ardent supporters of the racially segregated, apartheid Israel, where Jews lord over and dominate non-Jews. Gould failed to reveal how Jewish involvement in the Black American civil rights movement served Jewish-Zionist interests.

As the late Israeli scholar Dr. Israel Shahak pointed out:<sup>70</sup>

*"The apparent enthusiasm displayed by American rabbis or by the Jewish organizations in the USA during the 1950s and 1960s in support of the Blacks in the South, was motivated only by considerations of Jewish self-interest. [...] Its purpose [...] was to try to capture the Black community politically, in the Jewish case to an unthinking support of Israeli policies in the Middle East."*

Black intellectual Harold Cruse and California psychology professor Kevin MacDonald discussed the self-serving socio-political Jewish agenda behind Jewish involvement in Black-Jewish Civil Rights coalition. As stated before, the Jewish community has been an alien and inassimilable element within European and non-Jewish societies. Judaism has been characterized by genetic and cultural separation from others, and an

explicit double standard of morality—altruism and cooperation among Jews, but competition with non-Jews. Thus, the Jewish Community needs a society that tolerates their long-term policy of non-assimilation and group solidarity.<sup>71</sup>

Cruse and MacDonald observe that Jewish organizations view White nationalism as their greatest potential threat and they have tended to support Black-white integration policies presumably because such policies dilute Euro-American power and lessen the possibility of a cohesive, nationalist Euro-American majority that stands in opposition to the Jewish Community. It is very difficult to develop a cohesive Gentile movement opposed to Jewish interests in a racially integrated society composed of a variety of different and competing ethnic groups, all with divergent interests. In other words, because of their small numbers, Jews best succeed in politics by making coalitions with non-white groups that stand in opposition to gentiles of European descent.

As anthropologist Roselle Tekiner noted:<sup>72</sup>

*"Race has often been a powerful unifying force and an effective ideological spur to nationalist movements. Whether announced biological relationships are real or feigned a belief in blood brotherhood helps to mobilize people toward common goals."*

It is important to note that Gould made persistent efforts to breakdown racial categories, arguing that racial distinctions are "meaningless" and "misleading." He attempted to 'prove' that all ethnic groups are, in a biological sense, the same and equal.

It just so happens that Jews outside of Israel flourish in racially integrated societies in which the surrounding non-Jews have only a weak and feeble sense of their own racial identity. The reasoning goes something like this: 'If there are no racial differences or racial categories among the Gentiles, then there are no racial interests for the white gentile to defend. And if there is no 'white race,' then organized Jewry can never be identified as a threat to the white race, because such an entity does not exist.' One can readily see how thinking like this can reap benefits for the Jewish community, if inculcated into the minds of the Europeans that the Jews view with fear and hostility.

'Tolerant' Gentile populations that have only a weak and feeble sense of their own racial identity are less likely to identify the Jewish Community as an alien element against which they must defend themselves. Gentile populations that have a strong sense of their own racial-cultural-religious identity are more likely to identify certain Jews as 'alien outsiders,' against which they must compete.

One can now see how Gould's racial thought satisfied two goals. It tended to deprive European peoples that are viewed by the Jewish community as a potential dangerous enemy of a powerful ideological weapon—a belief in a racial brotherhood. Yet, simultaneously, Gould's racial thought fostered group solidarity among Jews and other non-white groups, for Gould applauded the social and political unity of "demeaned groups" (read: Jews and their allies).<sup>73</sup> He wrote:

*"The groups so stigmatized [by racial theorizing] may be races, [...] religions, or national origins. Biological determinism [the belief that there are genetic differences between groups, and these differences are significantly re-*

sponsible for group differences in behavior] is a general theory, and particular bearers of current disparagement act as surrogates for all others subject to similar prejudices at different times and places. In this sense, calls for solidarity among demeaned groups should not be dismissed as mere political rhetoric, but rather applauded as proper reactions to common reasons for mistreatment.”

Further evidence supporting the view that Gould’s main concern was with opposition to White Gentiles and bolstering Jewish political power is suggested by his totally different reaction to Israeli and South African apartheid. If Gould was truly interested in ending all forms of apartheid, racial segregation, and inequality, we should expect that he would have spoken out against Israeli racism and apartheid just as vociferously as he did against South African apartheid and racial segregation in the US. But this was not the case. As noted previously, Gould was on the Editorial Board of *Patterns of Prejudice*, a publication sponsored by the pro-Zionist Institute of Jewish Affairs and World Jewish Congress. Although the latter groups rabidly oppose all forms of gentile ‘racism,’ they remain ardent supporters of the racially segregated, apartheid Israel. For the moment, we must digress and discuss the racist nature of Israel and Zionism.

### The Racist Nature of Israel and Zionism

In Israel, Zionism created an Athenian democracy for Jews but second-class citizenship, even feudal servitude for non-Jews. Modern Israel is a racially segregated, apartheid state where Jews lord over non-Jews, especially Palestinian Arabs.<sup>74</sup>

Dr. Oren Yiftachel, an Israeli professor at Ben-Gurion University, pointed out that Israel is not a democracy in the sense in which it is currently understood in the West. Rather, it is an “ethnocracy”—a land controlled and allocated by ethnicity. In his own words:

*“The Israeli regime is ruled by and for one ethnic group in a multi-ethnic reality.”*

Factors that make Israel an “ethnocracy” include the facts that 1) immigration to the Jewish state is restricted to Jews only. Some 2.5 million displaced Palestinians who would like to return are not allowed to migrate to Israel; 2) military service is according to ethnicity; 3) economic control is based on race, religion, and ethnicity; 4) The country’s land regime entails transfer of land ownership in one direction, from Arab to Jewish control, but never back again.<sup>75</sup>

As the Jewish scholars Ian Lustick and Uri Davis have shown, far from working for an integrated society in which

Jews and Arabs functioned as social and political equals, the Jews who founded Israel created a society in which Israeli Jews dominate ‘Israeli’ Arabs, a separate and unequal society in which discrimination is part of the established social order.<sup>76</sup> For example, 93% of Israel’s territory had been (until the Supreme Court decision of March 2000) legally defined as land which can be leased and cultivated only by Jews. Key institutions such as the kibbutz (collectivist Jewish settlements, mainly agricultural) are reserved exclusively for Jews, as Israeli scholar Uri Davis has reminded us in his thorough study, *Israel: an apartheid state*.<sup>77</sup>

Dr Lustick has pointed out that the Israeli military is by and large a segregated institution. Most Muslim Arabs, who constitute the overwhelming majority of Israeli Arab citizens, do not

serve in the armed forces—they are not conscripted nor are they permitted to volunteer for service. This has important social consequences. In Israel, participation in the armed services is a prerequisite to social advancement and mobility. Cut off from the military, they are cut off from access to one of the main avenues of social advancement.<sup>78</sup>

Christians and Muslims cannot marry Jews in Israel, and if they are married elsewhere the marriage is not recognized by the rabbinical court in Israel.<sup>79</sup>

Consider the following facts about Israel, which by contemporary definitions of ‘racism’ make Israel a racist state. The Law of the Right of Return grants any Jew, but no-one else, automatic Israeli citizenship. The Nationality Law discriminates against non-Jews so stringently that many Palestinian residents of Israel (stuck there when Israel captured their land in 1948) were denied citizenship even though their families had lived in Palestine for many generations.<sup>80</sup>

During the 1980s, Gould was active in the anti-apartheid campaign in South Africa. As Franklin Hugh

Adler of the Department of Political Science at Macalester College (Minnesota, USA) points out, Jews were overwhelmingly represented among whites in the anti-apartheid campaign in South Africa, and anti-apartheid activism was (so he argued) deeply rooted in Jewish culture and values.<sup>81</sup> This is only partly correct. It cannot be emphasized enough that Jews have a long history of promoting racial integration, open immigration, multiculturalism and anti-apartheid activism in societies outside Israel where they are a minority.<sup>82</sup> Yet, in Israel most of these same Jewish groups ardently promote and support an apartheid society where there is Jewish ethnic dominance and racial segregation between Jews and non-Jews.



*After years of controversy over The Bell Curve, this 1997 book was a powerful confirmation of genetically caused differences of mental abilities.*

Prominent Jewish writer I.F. Stone acknowledged the hypocritical double standard that plagues contemporary Jewish values:<sup>83</sup>

*“For Israel is creating a kind of moral schizophrenia in world Jewry. In the outside world, the welfare of Jewry depends on the maintenance of secular, non-racial, pluralistic societies. In Israel, Jewry finds itself defending a society in which mixed marriages cannot be legalized, in which non-Jews have a lesser status than Jews, and in which the ideal is racist and exclusionist. Jews might fight elsewhere for their very security and existence against principles and practices they find themselves defending in Israel.”*

Gould bemoaned the fact that he was a visitor to South Africa, a “nation most committed to the myths of inequality.” He gave a series of anti-racist lectures in South Africa—but this writer can find no anti-racist lectures he has ever given to Jews for racism in Israel.<sup>84</sup> Here his Jewish-Zionist prejudices shine through loud and clear. An objective observer would have named Israel along with the former South Africa as a nation devoted to apartheid, the strict separation of ethnic groups. In fact, in spite of Gould’s obvious hatred of South African apartheid, nowhere to this writer’s knowledge did he ever condemn Israeli apartheid. If he was so vociferous in his criticism of apartheid in South Africa and racial segregation in the United States, why was he silent about apartheid and racism in Israel? This double standard says something important about Gould’s real political agenda.

Gould mentioned white Gentile South Africa as “the authors of apartheid and antimiscegenation laws.”<sup>85</sup> From time immemorial, long before there even was an apartheid South Africa, the Jewish religion and Jewish societies promoted strong prohibitions against intermarriage and assimilating/integrating with non-Jews.<sup>86</sup> Jews in Israel are forbidden by religious law, approved by the state, from marrying non-Jews.<sup>87</sup>

This raises another bias of Gould. In numerous essays he had condemned theories of “biological determinism” (the belief that there are genetic differences between groups, and these differences are significantly responsible for group differences in behavior), in part because they were used to justify the restriction of Jewish immigration into various nations.<sup>88</sup>

Yet, when his Jewish colleague Jared Diamond revealed in the magazine that both of them wrote for, *Natural History*, the proposed Israeli policy of restricting immigration into Israel only to those who carry “Jewish genes,” Gould was silent.

In an article that appeared in the prestigious *Natural History*, Diamond discussed the genetic studies on how Jews differ from non-Jews. He made this astounding statement:<sup>89</sup>

*“There are also practical reasons for interest in Jewish genes. The state of Israel has been going to much expense to support immigration and job retraining of Jews who were persecuted minorities in other countries. That immediately poses the problem of defining who is a Jew.”*

The implication here is obvious. The Zionist elite is planning to refuse a person the right to settle in Israel if they do not have “Jewish genes.” With this in mind, consider point #4 of the German National Socialist Party program of May 25, 1920. It reads:<sup>90</sup>

*“None but members of the nationality may be citizens of the state. None but those of German blood, irrespective of religion, may be members of the nationality.”*

In contemporary terms, only those with “German genes” could be citizens of National Socialist Germany. I can’t emphasize enough that this is similar to the type of Israeli policy that Diamond describes—and Gould failed to publicly condemn it, in spite of the fact that he was almost certainly aware of Diamond’s statement.

Diamond and Gould apparently both oppose dividing up human populations into racial categories—except of course populations of Jews and non-Jews. Both apparently gave their silent assent to the proposed Israeli-Zionist policy of defining and classifying Jews and non-Jews on the basis of whether or not they possess “Jewish genes.”

How does one know that Gould’s pronouncements on racial issues ultimately reflect and serve the liberal Jewish-Zionist power elite? His double standard on the issue of racial-ethnic problems certainly suggests this. He was a prominent critic of all of forms of alleged racism, except for one—he was silent about Jewish-Zionist and Israeli racism. He was very vocal about all of those forms of alleged racism that have historically threatened Jewish interests, but he was silent about Jewish-Zionist racism. His “anti-racist” campaign was very selective and discriminatory indeed. It seemed to have been so designed so as to promote racial integration in societies outside of Israel (where Jews are a minority and alien element, and thus, stand to benefit by creating a racially integrated and multicultural society), yet it gave its silent assent to an ethnically segregated society in Israel where Jews lord over and dominate non-Jews.

Jews gain power in societies in which the surrounding gentile populations have a weak and feeble sense of their own racial/cultural identity. They are not perceived as an alien, different, and hostile element. Furthermore, in a racially integrated, multicultural society with numerous different competing ethnic groups with divergent interests, it is very unlikely the surrounding gentiles can ever develop a united and cohesive majority to oppose the very cohesive Jewish community. In societies in which the gentiles have a strong sense of their own racial/cultural identity, Jews are identified as ‘outsiders,’ an alien, unassimilable element. Societies such as these make it very difficult for Jews to gain power and influence.

Hence, a Jewish strategy of breaking down cultural, ethnic, and racial distinctions among non-Jews while encouraging unity among Jews has an understandable goal. Indeed, as Professor MacDonald has so persuasively argued, Gould’s racial thought was a part of a well-established and remarkably successful Jewish intellectual offensive that seeks to advance sectarian Jewish interests by attacking traditional cultural, racial, and religious values of other nations. Jewish power and influence has grown enormously under the auspices of this “intellectual offensive.”<sup>91</sup>

In summary, what lines of evidence suggest that Gould’s biased views on racial matters served liberal Jewish-Zionist interests? First, he condemned racial segregation in the U.S. and the former South Africa, yet he was silent about the racially segregated, apartheid Israel. Second, he was for a time on the Edito-

rial Advisory Committee for *Patterns of Prejudice*, a publication of groups that support the ethnically segregated, apartheid Israel. Third, his racial thought is a part of an overall historic Jewish pattern of attacking traditional racial, cultural, and ethnic categories of other nations in order to promote the welfare of the Jewish community. Fourth, he vehemently condemned all forms of discrimination based upon race, yet he was notoriously silent when his colleague Jared Diamond pointed out that Israel is planning to use studies of Jewish genetics to discriminate against non-Jews on the basis of race. Finally, he omitted evidence that would have identified Jews as genetically distinct from non-Jews.

So Stephen Jay Gould had proclaimed: science is embedded in culture, as cultural beliefs and practices influence the fashioning of scientific theories. In this vein he wrote:<sup>92</sup>

“[...] science must proceed in a social context and must be done by human beings enmeshed in the constraints of their culture, the throes of surrounding politics, and the hopes and dreams of their social and psychological construction. We scientists tend to be minimally aware of these human influences because the mythology of our profession proclaims that changing views are driven by universal reasoning applied to an accumulating arsenal of observations. But all scientific change is a complex and inseparable mixture of increasing knowledge and altered social circumstances.”

Ironically, Gould’s biased views on racial-ethnic matters is a demonstration of his thesis. Gould approached the subject of race with a biased ideological orientation, one which ultimately reflects and serves the interests of the liberal Jewish-Zionist power elite.

Gould has written:<sup>93</sup>

“Racism has often been buttressed by scientists who present a public façade of objectivity to mask their guiding prejudices.”

A similar statement applies to Stephen Jay Gould. Jewish-Zionist interests were buttressed by his public façade of “objectivity” and “a humanitarian concern for the evils of racism.” It certainly appears as though he used calls for “racial equality” as a mask under which he advanced sectarian Jewish-Zionist interests.

A word of caution here. It cannot be said that every Jew is a leftist who subscribes to Gould’s theories. Some prominent Jewish intellectuals, such as Dr. Michael Levin, the author of *Why Race Matters*, and the late Dr. Richard Herrnstein, co-author of *The Bell Curve*, would reject Gould’s racial theories. And they are not the only ones. But the fact of the matter remains that Gould’s racial thought reflects and serves the interests of a predominate element within the Jewish community—the liberal Jewish-Zionist establishment.

Gould is correct on at least one point. He claims that theories of “racial differences” have been used to justify and excuse such evils as slavery and racial domination.<sup>94</sup> But this in no way falsifies these theories. Modern physics, for example, has created nuclear weapons, which in turn have led to the evils of mass destruction. This in no way falsifies Quantum Physics. Of course, it must be remembered that Stalinism embraced an ideology of racial equality very similar to Gould’s—and under its

auspices, millions suffered and died. Likewise, this in itself in no way falsifies Gould’s racial ideology.

The views expressed here are not to be confused with ‘white supremacy,’ which implies that whites should dominate non-whites. The belief that Europeans have the right to preserve their distinct biological-cultural identity is not synonymous with the belief that they should lord over and oppress non-Europeans.

International law says that a race or culture has the collective right to self-preservation and self-determination. Self-preservation literally means the right to preserve for posterity those factors that make a people unique, exclusive, and separate from other peoples. How is Western Civilization to endure if its members are inculcated with a distorted ideology of racial egalitarianism that discourages Westerners from preserving their unique heritage? Let us be wary of distorted ideologies and the power elites that promote them.

And of course, all of this applies equally well to all races, ethnic groups and cultures, including the Jewish community. All of them have the right to collective self-determination and self-preservation. If they value the preservation of their racial/cultural identity, they too should be wary of ideologues like Gould and the distorted racial thought that he promoted.

## Notes

- <sup>1</sup> Karl Mannheim, *Ideology and Utopia* (Harcourt, Brace and World, 1936), p. 10, passim.
- <sup>2</sup> The following list is just a small sample of the works that document the power and influence of Jewish political and cultural establishment. Alexander Bloom, *Prodigal Sons: The New York Intellectuals and Their World* (Oxford University Press, 1986); Neal Gabler, *An Empire of Their Own: How the Jews Invented Hollywood* (Crown Publishers, 1988); Benjamin Ginsberg, *The Fatal Embrace: Jews and the State* (University of Chicago Press, 1993); Ernest van den Haag, *The Jewish Mystique* (Stein and Day, 1969); Paul Findley, *They Dare to Speak Out: People and Institutions Confront the Israeli Lobby* (Lawrence Hill & Co., 1985); Alfred Lilienthal, *The Zionist Connection II: What Price Peace?* (North American, 1982); Charles Silberman, *A Certain People: American Jews and Their Lives Today* (Summit Books, 1985).
- <sup>3</sup> Stanley Rothman and S. Robert Lichter, *Roots of Radicalism: Jews, Christians, and the New Left* (Oxford University Press, 1982), p. 98.
- <sup>4</sup> Gabler, p. 7.
- <sup>5</sup> van den Haag, p. 98.
- <sup>6</sup> [http://www.socialistviewpoint.org/june\\_02/Gould.jpg](http://www.socialistviewpoint.org/june_02/Gould.jpg)
- <sup>7</sup> Arthur R. Jensen, “The Debunking of Scientific Fossils and Straw Persons,” *Contemporary Education Review*, Summer 1982. Online: [www.debunker.com/texts/jensen.html](http://www.debunker.com/texts/jensen.html). J. Philippe Rushton, “Race, Intelligence, and the Brain: The Errors and Omissions of the Revised Edition of S.J. Gould’s *The Mismeasure of Man* (1996),” *Personality and Individual Differences*, Vol. 23, No.1, July 1997, pp. 169-180. Online: [www.lrainc.com/swtaboo/stalkers/jpr\\_gould\\_paid.html](http://www.lrainc.com/swtaboo/stalkers/jpr_gould_paid.html)
- <sup>8</sup> Kevin MacDonald, *The Culture of Critique: An Evolutionary Analysis of Jewish Involvement in Twentieth Century Intellectual and Political Movements* (Praeger Publishers, 1998), pp. 30-38.
- <sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 35.
- <sup>10</sup> S.J. Gould, *The Structure of Evolutionary Theory* (Harvard University Press, 2002), p. 513.
- <sup>11</sup> S.J. Gould, “Human Equality is a Contingent Fact of History,” Chap. 12, *The Flamingo’s Smile: Reflections in Natural History* (Norton, 1985), pp. 185-98.
- <sup>12</sup> Douglas Futuyma, *Evolutionary Biology*, 3<sup>rd</sup> Ed., (Sinauer, 1998), pp. 730-735.
- <sup>13</sup> Christopher Stringer and Robin McKie, *African Exodus: The Origins of Modern Humanity* (Henry Holt, 1996); J. Philippe Rushton, *Race, Evolution, and Behavior: A Life History Perspective*, 3<sup>rd</sup> Ed., (Charles Darwin Research Institute, 2000), p. 219.
- <sup>14</sup> Gould, “Human Equality is Contingent Fact of History,” p. 186.

- <sup>15</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 191.
- <sup>16</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 198.
- <sup>17</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 192, 194-195, 196.
- <sup>18</sup> Richard A. Goldsby, *Race and Races* (Macmillan, 1977), pp. 88-89.
- <sup>19</sup> John R. Baker, *Race*, (Oxford University Press, 1974), p. 303.
- <sup>20</sup> Gould, *The Flamingo's Smile*, pp. 241f.
- <sup>21</sup> S.J. Gould, "Life in a Punctuation," *Natural History*, November 1992, p. 12.
- <sup>22</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 12-14.
- <sup>23</sup> Futuyma, p. 137.
- <sup>24</sup> S.J. Gould, ed., *The Book of Life: An Illustrated History of the Evolution of Life on Earth* (Norton, 1993), p. 249.
- <sup>25</sup> S.J. Gould, "We Are All Monkeys' Uncles," *Natural History*, June 1992, p. 21.
- <sup>26</sup> Edward O. Wilson and Thomas Eisner, *Life on Earth* (Sinauer, 1978), p. 651.
- <sup>27</sup> Karen Bellenir, ed., "Tay-Sachs Disease," Chap. 18, *Genetic Disorders Sourcebook*, Vol. 13, Omnigraphics 1996, pp. 235-237.
- <sup>28</sup> *Ibid.*, "Krabbe Disease," pp. 249-250.
- <sup>29</sup> Gould, S. J. ed., *The Book of Life*, p. 249.
- <sup>30</sup> *Sunday Times of London*, November 15, 1998, p. 1.
- <sup>31</sup> S.J. Gould, "Human Equality is a Contingent Fact of History," p. 196.
- <sup>32</sup> Nechemia Myers, "Genetic Links for Scattered Jews," *Nature*, March 21, 1985, p. 208.
- <sup>33</sup> M.F. Hammer, et al, "Jewish and Middle Eastern non-Jewish populations share a common pool of Y-chromosome biallelic haplotypes," *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, 97 (12), June 6, 2000, pp. 6769-6774. Online available from <http://www.pnas.org>. For a laymen's description of this study, see Nicholas Wade, "Y Chromosome Bears Witness to Story of Jewish Diaspora," *The New York Times*, May 9, 2000.
- <sup>34</sup> Adam Nathan, "Police Use DNA to Find Suspects' Race," *Sunday Times* (Great Britain), February 25, 2001.
- <sup>35</sup> [www.ssc.uwo.ca/psychology/pictures/Rushton\\_2.jpg](http://www.ssc.uwo.ca/psychology/pictures/Rushton_2.jpg)
- <sup>36</sup> Gould, "Human Equality is a Contingent Fact of History," p. 196.
- <sup>37</sup> J. Philippe Rushton, "Is There a Biological Basis For Race and Racial Differences?" *Insight*, May 28, 2001. Online: [http://www.lrainc.com/swtaboo/stalkers/jpr\\_insight.html](http://www.lrainc.com/swtaboo/stalkers/jpr_insight.html)
- <sup>38</sup> Gould, "Human Equality is a Contingent Fact of History," pp. 193-194.
- <sup>39</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 193.
- <sup>40</sup> C.B. Stringer and P. Andrews, "Genetic and Fossil Evidence for the Origin of Modern Humans," *Science*, Vol.239, March 1988, pp. 1263-1268; Stringer and McKie, pp. 53, 178. Also, see the discussion along with appropriate documentation in Rushton, *Race, Evolution and Behavior*, pp. 217-219.
- <sup>41</sup> Baker, *passim*.
- <sup>42</sup> L.S.B. Leakey, *Adam's Ancestors: The Evolution of Man and His Culture*, 4<sup>th</sup> ed., (Harper and Row, 1960), p. 161.
- <sup>43</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 161-166.
- <sup>44</sup> Gould, "Human Equality is a Contingent Fact of History," p. 194.
- <sup>45</sup> Noah H. Rosenburg, et al, "Genetic Structure of Human Populations," *Science*, Vol. 298, December 20, 2002, pp. 2381-2385. For a laymen's description of this study, see Nicholas Wade, "The Palette of Humankind," *The New York Times*, December 24, 2002, p. D3.
- <sup>46</sup> Baker, *passim*; Goldsby, *passim*.
- <sup>47</sup> Goldsby, p. 21.
- <sup>48</sup> Baker, pp. 99-100.
- <sup>49</sup> Goldsby, p. 21.
- <sup>50</sup> Gould, "Human Equality is a Contingent Fact of History," p. 196.
- <sup>51</sup> Rosenberg, et al, pp. 2381-2382.
- <sup>52</sup> Rushton, "Race, Intelligence and the Brain..."; MacDonald, pp. 30-39.
- <sup>53</sup> K.L. Popper, *Conjectures and Refutations: The Growth of Scientific Knowledge* (Basic Books, 1962).
- <sup>54</sup> S.J. Gould, *The Panda's Thumb* (Norton, 1980), p. 68.
- <sup>55</sup> S.J. Gould, *The Mismeasure of Man*, rev. ed., (Norton, 1996), pp. 396-397.
- <sup>56</sup> Theodosius Dobzhansky, *Mankind Evolving: The Evolution of the Human Species* (Bantam Books, 1970), pp. 253-254.
- <sup>57</sup> Meyers.
- <sup>58</sup> Jared Diamond, "Who Are the Jews?," *Natural History*, November 1993, pp. 12-19.
- <sup>59</sup> Roselle Tekiner, "The 'Who is a Jew?' Controversy in Israel: A Product of Political Zionism," Chap. 3, *Anti-Zionism: Analytical Reflections*, Roselle Tekiner, Samir Abed-Rabbo, Norton Mezvinsky, eds., *Anti-Zionism: Analytical Reflections* (Amana Books, 1988), p. 88.
- <sup>60</sup> Gould, *The Structure of Evolutionary Theory*, p. 121.
- <sup>61</sup> MacDonald, p. 31.
- <sup>62</sup> Kevin MacDonald, *A People That Shall Dwell Alone: Judaism as a Group Evolutionary Strategy* (Praeger, 1994); MacDonald, *Separation and Its Discontents: Toward an Evolutionary Theory of Anti-Semitism* (Praeger, 1998); MacDonald, *The Culture of Critique*.
- <sup>63</sup> Rothman and Lichter.
- <sup>64</sup> S.J. Gould, *Rock of Ages: Science and Religion in the Fullness of Life* (Ballantine Publ., 1999), p. 8.
- <sup>65</sup> Gould, *The Structure of Evolutionary Theory*, 1018.
- <sup>66</sup> S.J. Gould, *Dinosaur in a Haystack* (Harmony Books, 1995), p. 347.
- <sup>67</sup> For example, see *Patterns of Prejudice*, Summer 1990.
- <sup>68</sup> Michael Shermer, *Why People Believe Weird Things: PseudoScience, Superstition, and Other Confusions of Our Time* (W.H. Freeman and Company, 1997).
- <sup>69</sup> Gould, *The Mismeasure of Man*, p. 38.
- <sup>70</sup> Israel Shahak, *Jewish History, Jewish Religion: The Weight of Three Thousand Years* (Pluto Press, 1994), p. 103.
- <sup>71</sup> Harold Cruse, "Negroes and Jews: The Two Nationalisms and the Blocked Plurality," in *Bridges and Boundaries: African Americans and American Jews*, J. Salzman, ed., (George Brazillier, 1992); MacDonald, *The Culture of Critique*, pp. 254-258.
- <sup>72</sup> Tekiner, p. 78.
- <sup>73</sup> Gould, *The Mismeasure of Man*, p. 28.
- <sup>74</sup> Louise Cainkar, ed., *Separate and Unequal: The Dynamics of South African and Israeli Rule* (Palestine Human Rights Campaign, 1985); Uri Davis, *Israel: An Apartheid State* (Zed Books, Ltd., 1987); Ian Lustick, *Arabs in the Jewish State: Israel's Control of a National Minority* (University of Texas Press, 1980); Donald Neff, "If It Walks Like a Duck.": The Racism of Zionism," *WASHINGTON REPORT ON MIDDLE EAST AFFAIRS*, November 2001, p. 26; online: <http://www.wrmea.com/archives/november01/0111026.html>
- <sup>75</sup> *Washington Report on Middle East Affairs*, July/August 1999, p. 120.
- <sup>76</sup> Davis, *passim*; Lustick, *passim*.
- <sup>77</sup> Davis, *passim*.
- <sup>78</sup> Lustick, p. 93-94.
- <sup>79</sup> Tekiner, ed., pp. 74, 86-87 (note 21); *Washington Report on Middle East Affairs*, June 1993, p. 75.
- <sup>80</sup> Neff.
- <sup>81</sup> Franklin Hugh Adler, "South African Jews and Apartheid," *Patterns of Prejudice*, Vol. 34, Issue 04, October 1, 2000. Online: <http://www.sagepub.co.uk/journals/details/issue/abstract/ab015362.html>
- <sup>82</sup> MacDonald, *Separation and Its Discontents*, *passim*; MacDonald, *The Culture of Critique*.
- <sup>83</sup> Quoted in Moshe Menuhin, *The Decadence of Judaism in our Time* (Institute for Palestine Studies, 1969), p. 210.
- <sup>84</sup> Gould, "Human Equality is a Contingent Fact of History," p. 186.
- <sup>85</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 194.
- <sup>86</sup> MacDonald, *A People that Shall Dwell Alone*; MacDonald, *Separation and Its Discontents*, *passim*.
- <sup>87</sup> Tekiner, ed., pp. 74, 86-87 (note 21); *Washington Report on Middle East Affairs*, June 1993, p. 75.
- <sup>88</sup> S.J. Gould, *The Lying Stones of Marrakech: Pentultimate Reflections in natural History* (Harmony Books, 2000), pp. 270-278; S.J. Gould, *Hen's Teeth and Horse's Toes*, pp. 291-302.
- <sup>89</sup> Diamond, p. 12.
- <sup>90</sup> See Robert Vexler's *Germany: A Chronology and Fact Book: 1415-1972*, p. 129.
- <sup>91</sup> For a good discussion of these issues, see Peter Harrison, "What Causes Anti-Semitism?: An Important New Look at the Persistent 'Jewish Question'" *The Journal of Historical Review*, May/June 1998, pp. 28-37.
- <sup>92</sup> Gould, ed., *The Book of Life*, p. 7.
- <sup>93</sup> Gould, *The Panda's Thumb*, p. 176.
- <sup>94</sup> Gould, "Human Equality is a Contingent Fact of History," pp. 186-187.



# Polish Population Losses during World War Two

By Dr. Otward Müller

The following claims are continually put forth by Polish personalities: “Six million Poles lost their lives during the Second World War, a fifth of the entire population”; or “Three million Christian Poles [...] were victims of the Nazi terror.” This article shows that statements of this sort are not compatible with the easily accessible population statistics of the pre- and post-war Poles. The conclusion is therefore that these loss figures are extremely exaggerated.

## 1. Introduction

In June 1983, Pope John Paul II visited Poland for the second time. The US press reported the following about this event from the city of Zschenstochau:<sup>1</sup>

*“The Pope was in a somber mood and seemed to be close to tears when he recalled the Polish losses of 6 million people during the Second World War.”*

In his article entitled *Poland’s Enduring Faith*, James Reston wrote:<sup>2</sup>

*“The Pope stood up for the liberty and independence of Poland. He never mentioned the Soviet Union, but he explained that Poland had paid for its freedom and independence with six million of its citizens, who had sacrificed their lives at the various fronts of the war, in prisons and concentration camps.”*

The Pope has already made similar claims on other occasions. The Catholic weekly *The Wanderer* published an article on September 24, 1981, with the title “Pope says price of Poland’s liberty was six million dead.” This RNS report from Castle Gandolfo begins with the following sentence:

*“In remarks apparently directed toward the Soviet Union, Pope John Paul II said that Poland had paid the price for its independence with the blood of six million Poles who had died in the Second World War.”*

During his first visit to his homeland in 1979, the Pope also visited Auschwitz. On June 24, 1979, the weekly *National Catholic Register* published the official English text of the sermon which the Pope gave during a mass in Birkenau. According to this text, he made the following statements:

*“[...] I would like to pause with you over the inscription in Hebrew. This inscription awakens in us the memory of those people whose sons and daughters were intended for mass extermination. [...] No one is permitted to pass by this inscription unmoved. And finally, the last inscription, which is in Polish. Six million Poles, one-fifth of the entire population, lost their lives during the Second World War.”*

The last claim clearly assumes that, in addition to the losses of the Polish Jews, six million Christian Poles died. At the very least, this is the impression which the reader not familiar with the complexity of the population statistics in pre-war Eastern Europe must obtain from this statement by the Pope.

Naturally the Polish Pontiff is not imparting to us anything new. He is merely repeating, in a very effective manner, what the Communist government in Warsaw has claimed since the end of the Second World War. Even critical historians such as the British A.J.P. Taylor appear to credit these numbers. In his book *The Origins of the Second World War*, he writes:<sup>3</sup>

*“Six and a half million Poles were killed.”*

German post-war politicians did not hesitate to accept these kinds of figures as ‘historical facts’ without putting themselves to the trouble of proving such accusations. West German President Gustav Heinemann, for example, stated on the occasion of the 30th anniversary of the outbreak of the Second World War:<sup>4</sup>

*“But Poland had a blood toll of six million. [...] These numbers of the dead include six million Poles.”*

Even encyclopedias cite this figure. Even today, these figures are still propagated, for example in the Church periodical *St. Anthony Messenger* of December 1998. They have already become ‘common knowledge.’<sup>5</sup>

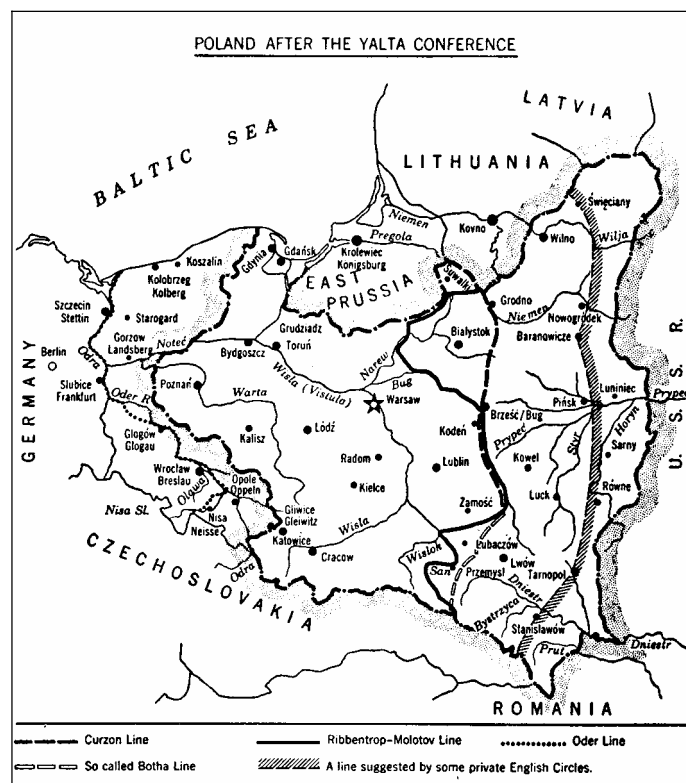
The author of this article is of the conviction that these casualty figures need to be examined for their content of truth. This is necessary because professional historians, especially in Germany, are not dealing with this unpleasant topic. This article, therefore, poses the question:

*Did six million Poles really die during World War Two?*

## 2. Definition of the term “Pole”

First of all, the term “Pole” must be defined. Who is a “Pole”?

Should, for example, a Polish Jew, who lived in Israel after the war—perhaps the former Minister President Menachem



Begin—be counted as a “Pole” who was murdered by the National Socialists? He was, after all, no longer in Poland after the war. Or should a German soldier from Brelau, Danzig, Königsberg, Stettin or Oppeln, who was killed during the war as a member of the Wehrmacht, now be counted as a “Pole” exterminated by the National Socialists, merely because these cities were annexed to Poland after the war? What about the case of a Ukrainian who was declared on the spot to be a Polish citizen after the Polish incursive raids against Russia shortly after the end of the First World War, but who received Soviet nationality in October 1939? Is he a dead “Pole”? These few instances make it clear that the issue to be dealt with here is highly complex. An exhaustive investigation would rightly fill a thick book. To simplify our subject for this relatively short examination, a Pole will be defined as a person who is of “Polish nationality” in the sense of ethnic membership. In other words: this study attempts to record the fate of ethnic, Christian Poles.

The statements cited in the introduction are clearly formulated in such a manner that the average newspaper reader would believe the six-million-loss figure refers to ethnic Christian Poles. Yet, on the other hand, it ought to be recognized that there is a tendency, for example, in Polish propaganda to claim the losses of Polish Jews simultaneously as Polish losses. Thus, one can read in one of the official histories of Poland prepared by the Polish embassy in Washington, D.C., that Poland had endured heavy losses during the war, “including the total destruction of cities like Gdansk, Szczecin and Wroclaw.” The destruction of the German cities of Danzig, Stettin and Breslau are therefore claimed here as “Polish losses.” This is a plain example of the methodology of Polish propaganda. Historical justice, however, requires that Poland does not claim German and Jewish losses as “Polish losses.”

### 3. The Pre-War Population of Poland

Pre-war Poland, with its 37.339 million inhabitants was a state with minorities of many nationalities. Among them were 24.388 million ethnically Poles, mostly Catholics. The remaining 10.951 million consisted of non-Polish nationalities who merely had Polish citizenship. These figures are given by Edward J. Rozek in his book *Allied Wartime Diplomacy—A Pattern of Poland*.<sup>6</sup> At the time of the publication of this book, Dr. Rosek was Assistant Professor of Political Science at the University of Colorado in Boulder. On page 37 of his book, he lists the composition of the non-Polish population for the year 1939, in particular the Eastern portion of pre-war Poland:

Ukrainians	4.529 Million
White Russians	1.123 Million
Polesians	0.822 Million
Russians	0.134 Million
Lithuanians	0.084 Million
Czechs	0.035 Million

In addition, there were also:

Jews	3.000 Million
Germans	1.041 Million

The number of Jews living in Poland in 1939 was taken from the *Jewish Chronicle*.<sup>7</sup>

“Once three million strong, Poland’s Jewish population today has shrunk to a dwindling remnant of 20.000”

Finally, the last figures for the Germans in pre-war Poland were taken from an excellent treatment of the same topic.<sup>8</sup> The question confronting us now is: What happened to these people after the Second World War? The main focus of this investigation is the fate of the 24.388 Christian Poles.

It is an incontestable historical fact that the Ukrainians, White Russians, Polesians, Lithuanians and 30-40% of Poland’s Jews, as well as some millions of ethnic Poles became Soviet citizens after September/October 1939. (The Lithuanians actually first became so in the year 1940.) After that time, these people no longer lived under Polish sovereignty. Their war losses must in reality be attributed to those of the Soviet Union and not to those of Poland, whatever may have happened to these people during the war. Were it otherwise, these losses would surface as doubled in the loss statistics of the World War. However, one would except from this the approximately 4.3 million ethnic Poles living east of the Curzon Line.<sup>6</sup>

The approximately one million Germans (ethnic Germans) became German nationals after September 1939.

### 4. The Post-War Population of Poland

What happened after the war? The Soviet Union kept the territories which they had conquered since 1939. One third of the newly created Polish state had been German soil. The German populace of these eastern provinces of Germany were driven out of their home, in which their forefathers had lived long before the discovery of America by Columbus.

On February 14, 1946, and on December 3, 1950, censuses were conducted in Poland. The results of the first census, however, are worthless for the purposes of this investigation, since the expulsion of the Germans was then still in full swing. In addition, the immigration of the Poles from the areas conquered by the Soviet Union had not yet ended.

According to the census of December 1950, after the greatest ethnic cleansing in history had just about been concluded, living in post-war Poland, which had been created in Yalta, there were:

24.6137 Million Poles, or  
24.533 Million Poles

The first figure is given by Reichling,<sup>9</sup> the second by Barnett.<sup>10</sup> These numbers are slightly less than those given by *Information Please Almanac* for 1949 (p. 50) gave for the year 1947: 24.775 million. The difference may be explained by the fact that in the years 1948-1950 approximately a quarter million Germans were expelled.<sup>11</sup> The ethnic composition of this population is described in *Collier’s Encyclopedia* as follows:<sup>12</sup>

“Although a great number of minorities lived in pre-war Poland, who altogether made up one third of the total population, post-war Poland became a homogeneous country: 98% of the population are ethnic Poles.”

According to Reichling, on December 3, 1950, approximately 1.7 million Germans were still living in Poland, i.e., persons who until 1945 had possessed German nationality. However, this number must be subtracted from the total number, if one wishes to determine how many Christian Poles survived the Second World War.

But what happened to the ethnic Poles who, according to Rozek,<sup>6</sup> were living east of the Curzon Line in 1939, i.e., east

of the post-war border between Poland and the Soviet Union, and therefore in areas annexed by Stalin? Up until June of 1948, the Soviets permitted only about 1.5038 million persons of Polish origin to emigrate to Poland. Even after the end of the war, approximately 2.8 million Poles continued to live in areas of pre-war Poland which since that time had come to belong to the Soviet Union.<sup>12</sup>

During the war, many Poles fled to the West, *i.e.*, to France, England, and to the USA. At least half a million Poles, mostly members of the army of the Polish government-in-exile, who fought on the side of the Western Allies, refused to return to their Communist-ruled fatherland after the end of the war.<sup>12</sup>

Breaking down this segment results in the following list:

Population of Poland in December 1950	24.6137 Mio.
minus Germans remaining	-1.7 Mio.
plus ethnic Poles in the Soviet Union	+2.8 Mio.
plus permanently emigrated ethnic Poles	+0.5 Mio.

Ethnic Poles who survived the Second World War including the natural population growth in the period 1939-1950: 26.2137 Mio.

This post-war census count of 26.2 million ethnic-Christian

Poles must be compared with the corresponding number from the year 1939, *i.e.*, 24.388 million.<sup>6</sup> The conclusion ought to be plain: In the year 1950, the number of ethnic Poles was about 1.826 million greater than before the war. Easily accessible population statistics of the pre- and post-war period clearly show that there is *no proof* that “six million Christian Poles were killed during the war.” Their true numbers lost probably amount to the scale of a few hundred thousand at most.

The result of this statistical examination fully confirms the more general determination made by Barnett in his book *Poland* on page 43:

*“Despite the enormous effect of the Second World War, the structure vis-à-vis age and sex of the population remained rather the same as it was in 1939.”*

The article from the *New York Times* by J. Reston, mentioned in the introduction, ends with the following findings:

*“In spite of all the suffering and death, they [the Poles] are now a million more than before the bloodbath of the last war. Their beautiful children can be seen here in the streets, and they were clearly the addressees of the Pope’s message.”*

In actuality, the number of Christian Poles increased not by a million, but rather jumped from 24.388 in 1939 to 36.3 million in 1982!<sup>13</sup> And this increase of 12 million does not even include those Poles who live in the Soviet Union or who emigrated to the West. Therein lies further proof for the fact that the biological substance of the Polish people survived the Second World War very well indeed—far better than that of Germany. Such a phenomenal population growth—at least for European conditions—would have been impossible if “six million Poles” or even only three million had been “victims of the Nazi terror.”

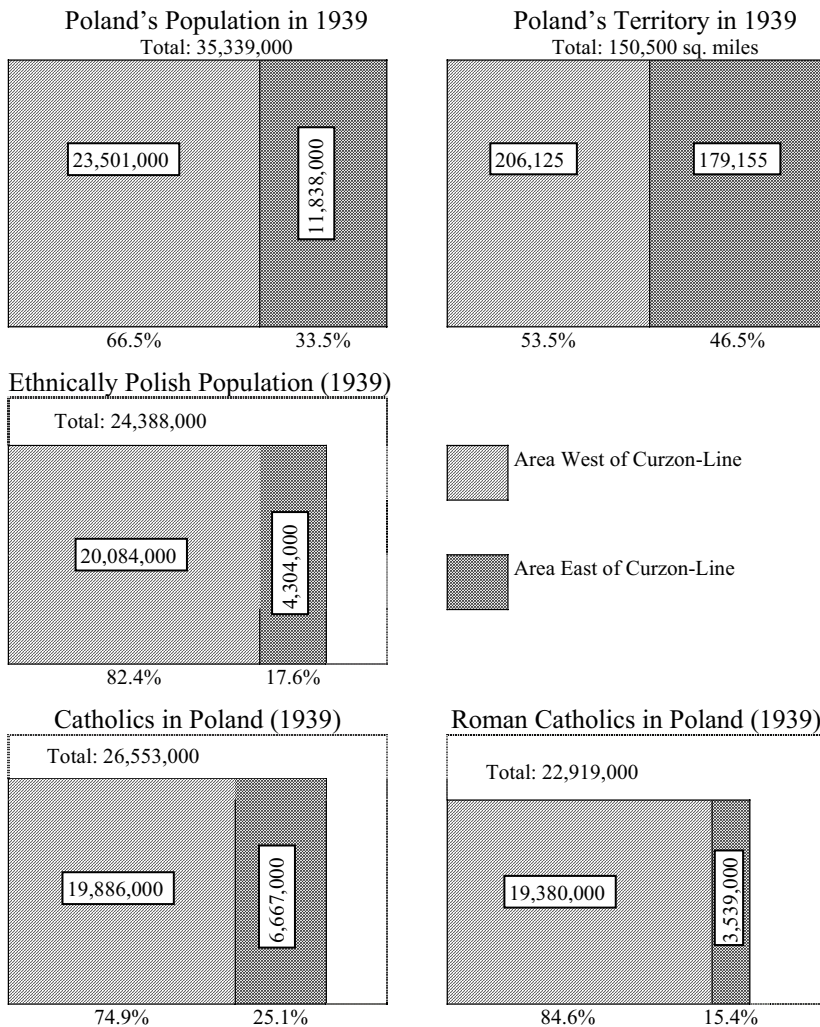
If one now dares to doubt that “six million Poles died,” it will be suggested by, for example, the Polish-American Congress Inc., that one had misunderstood what the Pope was saying, and that “three million Christian Poles as well as 3 million Jews, who were all citizens of Poland, were victims of the Nazi terror.”<sup>14</sup> The fact that today many Jews originally from Poland are living in Israel, America, and Western Europe proves that even the second figure is exaggerated. It is also interesting that Polish losses due to measures taken by the Soviet Union are hardly ever mentioned.

Up to the year 1998, the Polish population climbed to 38.7 million, by the way, without immigration of millions of “asylum-seekers,” “guest workers,” “refugees” etc.<sup>15</sup>

### 5. Natural Population Growth: A further Argument

According to Barnett,<sup>16</sup> the natural rate of growth of the Polish population in the last year of peace was slightly over one per cent. In the year 1983, the rate of increase of the Polish population was about 0.9%.<sup>13</sup>

## Poland and the Curzon-Line\*



\* acc. to E. J. Rozek, *op. cit.* (note. 6)

It is obvious that this rate of increase was smaller during the war but afterwards it climbed again, especially since approximately 694,000 Polish soldiers at least initially were held as prisoners of war by the Germans, and 217,000 by the Soviets.

After the end of the war there was a baby boom in Poland. Therefore, an average one per cent rate of growth appears to be acceptable. Now let us consider the time span between 1939/40 and 1955, i.e. 15 years. Two cases are considered:

CASE A: Relatively small losses

CASE B: An accepted war loss of 3.0 million.

In 1955, the population of Poland amounted to 27.533 million:<sup>10</sup>

Population of Poland 1955	27.554 Mil.
minus Germans remaining	-1.6 Mil.
plus ethnic Poles in the Soviet Union	+2.0 Mil.
plus permanently emigrated ethnic Poles	+0.5 Mil.
<hr/> Total:	<hr/> 28.444 Mil.

CASE A:

Ethnic Poles 1939:<sup>6</sup> N = 24.388 Mil.

1% factor of increase/year

from 1940-1955 (15 years) M = (1.01)<sup>15</sup> = 1.1610

Poles 1955 M × N = 28.314 Mil.

CONCLUSION: The losses of the Poles in the Second World War were relatively small. Their number would even have been about the same had there been no war.

CASE B: Accepting a war loss figure of 3 million

Ethnic Poles 1939:<sup>6</sup> 24.388 Mil.

Alleged extermination of Christian

Poles in the period of 1939-1945 -3.000 Mil.

Poles 1945: P = 21.388 Mil.

1% factor of increase/year

from 1945-1955 (10 years) M = (1.01)<sup>10</sup> = 1.1046

Poles 1955 M × P = 23.626 Mil.

CONCLUSION: If claims by Polish propaganda were correct, that 3 million Christian Poles were killed during the Second World War, the number of Poles in the year 1955, calculated on the basis of pre-war data, should be close to 23.626 million. But in 1955, there were actually 28.444 million, which corresponds to CASE A. From this emerges the following good news: During the Second World War, three million Poles were *not* murdered by the "Nazis" or by anyone else.

In CASE A the number of Poles remaining in the Soviet Union were assumed to be merely 2 million, in order to avoid the objection that I was "exaggerating" the starting number to begin with. As reference for this number, I give the *Encyclopedia Americana*, which states:<sup>17</sup>

*"A large number of Poles—probably more than 2.000 million—did not succeed in crossing over the border to post-war Poland, and were incorporated into the eastern side of the Polish-Soviet border."*

One could also find other sources for this number.

One issue is still open and awaits an answer: why should the Catholic and the Communist Poland exaggerate its losses in this way? The answer to this is simple: the Poles wish to 'justify' their genocide of the German people committed after 1945 in

the Eastern provinces of Germany. They are trying to justify the unjustifiable. In this sad affair, Polish Communists and Catholics, atheists and Christians are of the same feather.

The claim put out by the *Polish-American Review*, that "Poles suffered the greatest losses of human life of all the countries of the Second World War,"<sup>18</sup> is simply *not true*.

## 6. An Interesting Table

Barnett has published a very interesting table entitled "Population of Poland," which is frequently quoted. In this table, the number of the respective populations of the individual Voivod districts of post-war Poland is given. This means that the regions which belonged to Poland between the world wars, but which were conquered by the Soviet Union in 1945, are not given; yet the eastern provinces of Germany annexed by Poland are. This table now compares the population of this region in the year 1931<sup>19</sup> with that in the years 1946, 1950 and 1955. The total population is stated as follows:

1931	1946	Difference
29.892 Mil.	23.625 Mil.	6.267 Mil.

This corresponds to a relative change of -21%, a "fifth of the entire population" or a loss of 6.267 million people. But the number of 1931 contains the districts of Allenstein (Olsztyn, East Prussia), Danzig (Gdansk, West Prussia), Köslin (Koszalin, Pommerania), Stettin (Szczecin, Pommerania), Grünberg (Zielona Gora, Silesia), Breslau (Wroclaw, Silesia) und Oppeln (Opole, Silesia), which were all part of Germany in 1931 with an overwhelming German majority in population (95-100%).

According to Reichling, in 1944, 11 million Germans were living in the region which would later be a part of post-war Poland.<sup>20</sup> After the majority of this population had been killed or brutally expelled by the victors of the Second World War, a process which had no way complete in 1946, these areas naturally had to record an enormous population 'loss.'<sup>21</sup> These facts, however, are nowhere rendered in this table.

The following suspicion thus arises: Is it perhaps possible that the Poles are counting those Germans as "Poles exterminated by the Nazis," whom they killed in the campaign of their genocide in Eastern Germany or hunted out of their homes? This is only a suspicion. After all, how the Poles arrived at their 6- or even 3-million-figure has not been made known up to this point. But wherever the truth may lie: the striking similarity of the 'losses' in this widely used and known table on the one hand and the officially claimed losses on the other hand is at the least surprising and amazing.

## 7. "Polish" Ukrainians

The population of pre-war Poland encompassed many Ukrainians, White Russians, Lithuanians, Russians, and other nationalities. The legitimate question is, therefore, how these people have become 'Poles.' The answer to this is interesting, but unfortunately little known. After 150 years of non-existence as a state, the independent state of Poland was founded anew in 1916 as a monarchy by Germany and Poland. After the defeat of Germany, however, the monarchy fell and was replaced by a military dictatorship, which immediately turned aggressively against its neighbors. Against the conditions of the armistice of November 1918, but with the support of the victorious Western

powers and of the League of Nations, Poland conquered areas in Upper Silesia, West- and East Prussia from Germany whose population had a strong German majority. In so doing, Poland and the supporting League of Nation breached the conditions of the armistice and the recently codified and recognized right of self-determination. Not satisfied with these enormous territorial gains, Poland subsequently turned against the Soviet Union, which at that time was still struggling through its civil war. On April 28, 1920, the young Polish army under the leadership of the Polish dictator Pilsudski invaded the Ukraine. On May 6, 1920, the Polish army reached Kiev. This first war of aggression after the end of the First World War finally ended on March 18, 1921, with the peace treaty of Riga, signed by Poland and the Soviet Union. This determined that the Soviet Union ceded large territories from parts of Lithuania, White Russia, and the Ukraine to Poland. Millions of Ukrainians, White Russians, Lithuanians, and Russians thus became 'Poles.' It was a matter of course that Moscow would not put up for long with this defeat inflicted upon it by the Poles. The Poles then laid the foundation for the later Hitler-Stalin Pact of August 1939.

## 8. Summary and Conclusion

Polish claims that "Six million Poles [...] a fifth of the entire population" were killed during the Second World War or became "victims of Nazi terror," have never been supported by facts by the Polish government. The same is true for the claim that "3 million Christian Poles" died.

The comparison between the pre- and post-war population statistics performed in this study shows that, on the contrary, the losses of the ethnic Christian Poles are relatively small. The 6- or 3-million-figures are exaggerations of propaganda which have spread worldwide, in order to 'justify' Poland's post-war policy of genocide of the German people, *i.e.*, of the expulsion of the Eastern Germans with wholesale mass murder and the annexation of East Germany.

The actual losses are probably in the order of one tenth of the figures claimed.

The population figures used in this investigation can be checked by any interested person in well-stocked university libraries.

Naturally, the Polish government and the representatives of Polish interests have the right to exert their efforts on behalf of

**C. R. Barnett: Table 1. Population of Poland**

	In Thousands				In Percent		
	1931	1946	1950	1955	1931 TO 1946	1946 TO 1950	1950 TO 1955
WOJWODSCHAFT <sup>(a)</sup>							
Warsaw (incl. city)	3,552	2,662	2,809	3,245	-25.1	5.5	15.5
Bydgoszcz	1,566	1,457	1,470	1,597	- 7.0	0.9	8.6
Poznan	2,311	2,086	2,109	2,304	- 9.7	1.1	9.2
Lodz (incl. city)	2,385	2,015	2,047	2,210	-15.5	1.6	8.0
Kielce	1,858	1,702	1,659	1,763	8.4	- 2.6	6.3
Lublin	2,069	1,753	1,640	1,719	-15.3	- 6.5	4.8
Bialystok	1,194	944	952	1,040	-20.9	0.8	9.2
Olsztyn	1,030	442	675	811	-57.1	52.8	20.1
Gdansk	1,065	732	891	1,082	-31.3	21.6	21.4
Koszalin	789	585	514	632	-25.8	-12.1	23.0
Szczecin	941	308	508	661	-67.3	65.1	30.1
Zielona Gora	884	347	560	678	-60.7	61.4	21.1
Wroclaw	2,604	1,769	1,735	1,986	-32.1	- 1.9	14.5
Opole	1,040	792	811	887	-23.8	2.3	9.4
Katowice	2,608	2,363	2,635	3,040	- 9.4	11.5	15.4
Cracow	2,195	2,133	2,147	2,359	- 2.8	0.7	9.9
Rzeszow	1,801	1,535	1,371	1,530	-14.7	-10.7	11.6
<b>Total Population</b>	<b>29,892</b>	<b>23,625</b>	<b>24,533</b>	<b>27,544</b>	<b>-21.0</b>	<b>3.8</b>	<b>12.3</b>

(a) Pre-war borders adjusted to 1950; pre-war borders of the provinces as in the year given.

Source: Acc. to: Mauldin, W. Parker and Akers, Donald S., *The Population of Poland*, p. 122, and from Polska Rzeczypolita Ludowa, Główny Urząd Statystyczny, *Rocznik Statystyczny 1956* (Polish Peoples Republic: Statistical Main Office, Statistical Yearbook 1956). p. 44.

Polish interests. But by so doing, they should not claim Jewish, German, Ukrainian, and White Russian losses as Polish losses.

In view of this result, I propose as conclusion that all casualty figures of the Second World War be checked and scientifically investigated by an international commission of experts from neutral historians and demographers.

## Further Reading

Next to the works listed in the Notes, I recommend as literature for further study:

- Albin Eissner, "Personelle Kriegsverluste des polnischen Volkes," *Außenpolitik (Foreign Policy)*, 14(1) (1963), pp. 44-52
- Stanislaus Sopicki, *Mehr Genauigkeit in den Zahlen!* (More Exactitude in Numbers!), in: *Wiadomosci*, Vol. XXV, No. 1247, Feb. 22, 1970; Ger.: Institut für Osteuropakunde, Universität Mainz, Nov. 27, 1970

## Notes

This article first appeared in volume 8 of the *Ingolstädter Vorträge* as *Veröffentlichung der Zeitgeschichtlichen Forschungsstelle Ingolstadt*, Ingolstadt, 1984 (without tables and maps). This revised version translated from *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 3(2) (1999), pp. 159-164, by Regina Belsler.

<sup>1</sup> *Sunday Times Union*, Albany, N.Y., Combined Wire Service, June 19, 1983, p. A12. Re-translated from German.

<sup>2</sup> *New York Times*, June 19, 1983, p. E19. Re-translated from German.

<sup>3</sup> Premier Books, 1965, p. 292. Re-translated from German.

<sup>4</sup> *The German Tribune*, Sept. 16, 1969, No. 388, p. 4.

<sup>5</sup> E. Dybicz, "Crosses at Auschwitz Appropriate", *St. Anthony Messenger*

- (circulation: 315.000), December 1998, p. 3-4: "In six years of war, Poland lost over six million of its citizens, 22 per cent of its entire population."
- <sup>6</sup> John Wiley & Sons, New York 1958, p. 348.
- <sup>7</sup> London, edition of March 22, 1968, p. 7, re-translated from German. I am aware of the problem of this number, probably excessive by several hundred thousand Jews, but I forgo making any needed corrections here, since this would not basically influence the result of my study; cf. W. N. Sanning, *Die Auflösung des osteuropäischen Judentums* Grabert, Tübingen, p. 16-22; Engl: *The Dissolution of East European Jewry*, Institute for Historical Review, Costa Mesa 1983.
- <sup>8</sup> "Die polnischen Kriegsverluste 1939-1945" (Polish War Losses), *Zeitschrift für Politik* (Cologne) 25(3) (1978), p. 279-296.
- <sup>9</sup> Gerhard Reichling, *Deutsche und Polen – 1945 bis 1970 im Spiegel der polnischen amtlichen Statistik* (Germans and Poles—1945 to 1970 as reflected in official Polish statistics), Kulturstiftung der deutschen Vertriebenen (Cultural Institute of German Expellees), issue 1, Verlag Osmipress, Bonn 1979, p. 21.

- <sup>10</sup> Clifford R. Barnett, *Poland: Its Society, Its Culture, Its People*, Hraf Press, New Haven, Conn., 1958, Table 1
- <sup>11</sup> G. Reichling, *op. cit.* (Note 9), p. 23
- <sup>12</sup> Vol. 19, 1979, p. 181; re-translated from German.
- <sup>13</sup> *Information Please Almanac*, 1983, p. 246.
- <sup>14</sup> *Times Union*, July 17, 1983.
- <sup>15</sup> *The World Almanac*, 1998, p. 810.
- <sup>16</sup> C.R. Barnett, *op. cit.* (note 10), p. 42.
- <sup>17</sup> 13th Edition, 1968, p. 287; re-translated from German.
- <sup>18</sup> Edition of March/April/May 1983; re-translated from German.
- <sup>19</sup> The last official population count in Poland took place in 1931.
- <sup>20</sup> G. Reichling, *op. cit.* (note 9), p. 43.
- <sup>21</sup> Cf. Alfred de Zayas, *The German Expellees: Victims in War and Peace*, St. Martin's Press, New York 1993; Cf. also in German *Anmerkungen zur Vertreibung*, (Notes on the Expulsion) Kohlhammer, Stuttgart 1986.

## The Expulsion of Germans from Japan, 1947-1948

By Charles Burdick, PhD

After the End of World War Two, almost all German property outside of Germany was confiscated: valuables, currencies, real estates, patents, copyrights etc. The value in today's money may have amounted to many trillions of dollars. Most of this property was later auctioned and sold to companies or individuals, the incoming assets kept by the respective governments. Any attempts of German individuals or the West German government to regain confiscated property years after the war failed. A particularly sad chapter in this greatest looting in mankind history is that of Germany's former ally Japan, who willingly aligned itself in the expulsion of German nationals and the plundering of Germany property in Japan, and refused any reconsideration even after it had signed a peace treaty with the USA.

*"There must be eliminated for all time the authority and influence of those who have deceived and misled the people of Japan into embarking on world conquest. [...] The Japanese Government shall remove all obstacles to the revival and strengthening of democratic tendencies among the Japanese people."*<sup>1</sup>

*Vae Victis*<sup>2</sup>

On August 28, 1945, the first elements of the American occupation force started landing on Atsugi airfield in Japan. Instead of the anticipated violent reaction, they encountered a reception committee serving orange juice.<sup>3</sup> The Americans entered a totally different world where they lacked direction, experience, or understanding. Whereas their conquest of Germany had created immediate physical occupation and control of that country, the Japanese surrender created far more uncertainties. Hatred, mistrust, doubt, and outright fear characterized American thought. The policies for Japan would be very different from those employed in Germany.

The major difference came in the original approach to the occupation. At the outset, President Harry Truman appointed General Douglas MacArthur as the Supreme Commander Allied Powers (SCAP), a unique position under the circumstances of an allied war.<sup>4</sup> Despite some planning and multi-national exchanges, the initial phase of the occupation would be dominated by the Americans.<sup>5</sup> The uncertainties between the United States and Russia in Asia, the preponderance of American military power in that war theater, and the actions of the imperious

MacArthur precluded any substantive collaboration.<sup>6</sup> The indefinite, ill-defined arrangements created in July 1945 at the Potsdam Conference remained the basis for American interpretations and, given their dominating physical presence, for their control.

MacArthur seized complete authority immediately and brusquely rebuffed all attempts at sharing any power or responsibility. At the outset he insisted that all contact between foreign governments would pass through his headquarters and that he would employ the Japanese authorities to execute his orders. This indirect approach assured American power from behind the scenes, as did his insistence on English as the language of communication. His instructions appeared as directives, called SCAP Instructions, to the Japanese Government (SCAPIN). These normally terse, forcefully stated orders provided the directions governing all occupation activities.<sup>7</sup> The Americans wasted no time in advancing a policy built on disarmament, demilitarization, and democratization. This approach anticipated a simultaneous revolution and reformation. Removing the military armaments, both human and material, was a mechanical undertaking. Creating a democratic society demanded a longer period for adjustment, education, and direction. The demilitarization issue was the thorniest immediate concern, both because of definition and implementation. Punitive action was the first order of business.

SCAP (MacArthur's headquarters) purged the entire administrative structure of Japanese life. Within a few months, SCAP liquidated economic cartels, dismissed thousands of officials,

and arrested hundreds of people as war criminals.<sup>8</sup> The two cultures collided over every issue, as bureaucracies stumbled over all controls, as conqueror and conquered sought accommodation.

These extraordinary administrative issues provided fertile ground for numerous surprises for everyone. On the one hand, the impact of unconditional surrender, the physical damage of aerial bombing, and the arrival of so many Caucasians provided an obvious shock to the Japanese. On the reverse side, the Americans made the unexpected discovery of some 2,000,000 foreign nationals in the four main islands of Japan. While the vast majority of these people were Asians from Korea, Formosa, the Ryukyu Islands, and China, there were representatives from many lands. Some were United Nations nationals, others were neutral or stateless individuals, and a few were citizens from other enemy countries. Within all of these groups were individuals who had lived their entire lives in Japan without any interest in or concern for politics or ideology. This body did include many pro-Axis individuals who had served as officials or propaganda agents of the defeated powers. There were also members and representatives of religious, business, and cultural groups. There were numerous dependents, many of them barely surviving.

MacArthur's first obligation in this area was the repatriation of prisoners of war and displaced United Nations nationals. His instructions from President Harry Truman on August 29, 1945, had specified the earliest possible return of these individuals. Repatriation would require individual registration with the occupying authorities and certification that the person had not participated in the war against the United Nations.

On October 31, 1945, SCAP delineated the term "United Nations" and listed 49 nations as signatories of the United Nations Declaration, six countries as neutrals and five countries (Bulgaria, Germany, Hungary, Japan, and Rumania) as "enemy nation."<sup>9</sup> The resulting, expedited release of some 110,000 prisoners of war allowed quick attention to repatriating the Asian nationals. This effort, largely voluntary at the beginning, lent itself to rapid movement of these people. The large-scale return of Japanese troops from overseas involved an extensive shipping commitment, which created a surplus of space on the outward trips. As part of this operation SCAP created repatriation centers for the transshipment, detailed instructions for the Japanese authorities, and rules for property transfers. By December 1945, over 650,000 people had left Japan for their original homes.<sup>10</sup>

With the steady progress in returning allied nationals, the next issue was the status and disposition of Axis nationals. The number of Rumanians and Bulgarians was negligible, while there were 463 Italians.<sup>11</sup> The Germans had approximately 2,800 (which included some Austrians). Included in that number were 700 refugees from the Dutch West Indies, 400 naval and merchant marine personnel, 100 individuals trying to return home from the United States and caught by the German invasion of Russia, plus 1,600 long-term residents in Japan.<sup>12</sup> Following the Allied victory in Europe, the Japanese had restricted German civilian movements and loosely interned their official representation.<sup>13</sup> The Americans changed this situation rapidly. They ordered the Japanese to impound all German property and

assets on September 13, seized the official German food stores, and dissolved the German relief organization. The Japanese had orders to supply the destitute Germans, an awesome task given Japan's own shortages and shattered infra-structure.<sup>14</sup> Given the disarray of the Japanese system, the Germans suffered from neglect and their low-priority status.

These restrictions added to their wartime problems of bombing, crowded housing, transportation difficulties, and food shortages. Many had fled to Japanese summer houses for survival. The flimsy construction and social stigma of cowardice discouraged the Japanese from using their own housing. Under the circumstances, the Germans survived as best they could through black market activity, some canned foodstuffs in warehouse storage, the produce of their own gardens, stealing, and begging from the Americans after their arrival. They did keep up their schools, churches, and clubs for morale and unity.<sup>15</sup>

In Washington D.C. the American Joint Chiefs of Staff had not forgotten them. The Potsdam Declaration had a loose directive calling for the elimination of those in authority and influence who had led Japan into aggression. While the rule lacked all specificity, it provided an imperative prescript. At the outset the first issue was the purging of the Japanese officials, people of influence, and those in public positions. This methodical removal of 'evil' provided an emotional outlet for the victors.<sup>16</sup>

That was not sufficient for the distant American military command. They believed that German military, diplomatic, and economic representatives had unduly influenced Japanese aggression. As an international precedent against future totalitarian machinations, they decided to remove the dangerous German influence.

On December 7, 1945, the Joint Chiefs dispatched a long telegram to MacArthur. They reaffirmed earlier instructions concerning the transport of United Nations nationals but added directions for enemy citizens, suggesting that the latter groups should be identified and registered immediately. All property, real and personal, owned or controlled by these people should be placed under strict control. Those individuals who had served as National Socialist agents should be interned for possible trial or repatriation. The term "agent" was the operative word and included a wide range of professional activities: researchers, scientists, administrators, businessmen, etc. They had no choice. Those Germans outside these loose terms could volunteer for return to Germany. In any event, the Japanese authorities would pay the costs and do the work.<sup>17</sup> An immediate follow-up, on December 12, carried orders that objectionable repatriates should be permitted only the minimal personal effects, no foreign currencies, and only minor personal jewelry.<sup>18</sup> These brief, direct instructions brought the German issue to the forefront.

With such forceful thought from Washington, D.C., SCAP's staff seized the opportunity and made the repatriation issue a priority. Using a Japanese memorandum of January 10, 1946, which estimated some 2,700 German nationals in Japan, the staff reported, on January 21, 1946, their own informal total of 2,632 Germans, with 2,409 wishing repatriation to Germany. While the source and reliability for these figures remains a mystery, the determination to rid Japan of these unwanted people was clear. The only reservation was the need for approval

from the authorities in Germany.<sup>19</sup> On January 31, 1946, SCAP ordered the Japanese to prepare a detailed roster of all Germans with names, sexes, addresses, ages, and German relatives' addresses.<sup>20</sup> The report was due March 10, 1946.

In various discussions, both with staff and with the Japanese, the Americans discovered a new figure (811) for Germans seeking repatriation. They found this second figure insufficient and unacceptable. In their opinion, the Joint Chiefs wanted the majority of Germans removed from Japan. In the new interpretation, only those Germans who had permanent Japanese residence before January 1, 1939, and could maintain themselves while contributing to Japan's welfare, might be considered for residence. Only those who could prove both points conclusively would be allowed to stay.<sup>22</sup>

While the Japanese met the assigned deadline, the Americans complained about numerous shortcomings on June 5, 1946. They argued that the Japanese had omitted some 756 individuals, including many known National Socialist enthusiasts.<sup>23</sup> The angry Americans objected also to other errors of fact as well as form. The Japanese would have a correct list by June 20, 1946; there would be no delays.<sup>24</sup>

As the Japanese labored on the corrections and the SCAP staff pursued their preparations, the Joint Chiefs of Staff established categories for determining the objectionability of the Germans. They defined three categories:

"A"—those Germans who had traveled to Germany or to German-controlled territory after September 1, 1939;

"B"—any German who had belonged to any National Socialist organization or helped the German war effort (which included scientific researchers or industrial representatives);



*General Douglas MacArthur greets Mr. John Foster Dulles, Republican Consultant to the State Department, at the Haneda Air Force Base, Tokyo, Japan, June 21, 1950.<sup>21</sup>*

"C"—those non-objectionable individuals not in the first categories.<sup>25</sup>

While these instructions added little genuine guidance to SCAP, they did complete the decision process for repatriation. The combination of activities at such distance divided the responsibility between SCAP and the Joint Chiefs but cemented the purpose. The Germans would leave Japan.

Before SCAP could implement the program, two additional issues slowed the process. Given the fact that the Germans were enemy nationals with differential amounts of property, SCAP had concerns over administering that property. On one hand they had the serious dilemma of responsibility for that property; on the other hand they had legal concerns over ownership of the goods, real estate, patents, etc. On September 13, 1945, they had impounded all enemy assets and property. At the same time, they had required the reporting of these holdings to the Japanese authorities.<sup>26</sup> The reports suggested German holdings of 1,178,900,000 yen.<sup>27</sup> Having frozen and listed the property, SCAP needed help with the final disposition of the assets.

The guidance came from Germany where American occupation authorities had finally adopted a vesting law in November 1945 directing the seizure of property belonging to the National Socialist leaders and party as well as various branches of the government. They did not officially address the issue of overseas Germans until May 18, 1946, when they amended the original law. Under the expanded regulation, SCAP became an agent of the German External Properties Commission. This designation legitimized SCAP's creation of the Office of Civil Property Custodian on March 8, 1946, for control of German and Japanese property. Within that body SCAP created the Enemy Property accounts Section to record, control, and reflect the disposition of all German assets, liabilities, etc.<sup>28</sup> All of these administrative activities and concerns delayed the repatriation issue.

A further complication was the eventual acceptance of the repatriates. SCAP had hoped for a mass transfer in early 1946, but negotiations in Germany proved difficult and protracted. Living conditions in Germany were harsh and the authorities wanted no added difficulties. The critical fuel, food, and housing shortages precluded accepting more refugees before spring 1947.<sup>29</sup> Since many of the returnees had neither close relatives nor domiciles in the homeland and little awareness of local conditions, they would be a problem. A second planned departure for June 1946 fell apart because the four powers in Germany could reach no agreement. Finally, on October 11, 1946, they accepted the return of the objectionable Germans. SCAP now could move these individuals whom they deemed security threats to the Japanese occupation. After more review SCAP determined that there were 1,353 objectionable Germans.<sup>30</sup> The selection criteria depended on the uncertain interpretation of the Joint Chief's categories.

With these matters essentially resolved, SCAP created, on December 1, 1946, a Repatriation Section in Eighth Army. Under Colonel Ernest T. Barco it would organize and execute the actual movement. With the experience gained from transporting Asian nationals to their homeland, his office could proceed quickly. While Japanese authorities would execute the repatria-



tion—collection, processing, movement, customs search, and property custodial duties—Eighth Army personnel would supervise and control the operation. As well, they would be responsible for the warehouses containing confiscated or impounded property and the reception centers for the final transfer to a ship. The availability of shipping remained an uncertain factor but would not delay any preparations.

Barco wasted no time in organizing his assignment. On December 5, 1946, he issued calls in the name of Lieutenant General Robert Eichelberger, Commanding General, Eighth Army to the two Army Corps, I and IX, for assistance. Barco wanted thirteen field grade officers, 117 company grade officers, 139 enlisted men, and 110 interpreters. He listed out the custodial warehouse locations, detailed the general locations of the Germans, and estimated a January 1947 departure date. Finally he called for a two day conference on December 18.<sup>31</sup>

At the meeting he conducted a thorough review of the process, sketched out the specific duties for the Japanese personnel, the command obligations of the senior American officers, the assignments of the small American teams, and the instructions to the repatriates.<sup>32</sup> Clearly he and his small team had worked out the plan in all of its details.

On January 13, 1947, information that the ship *Marine Devil* would reach Yokohama about January 28 galvanized more activity. SCAP assigned missions to the two corps for administrative personnel, including guards and medical technicians, for the voyage to Bremerhaven. Additionally, the Civil Property Custodian would assign seven observers to oversee the property inventories.<sup>33</sup>

A redirecting of the *Marine Devil* forced a sudden change to the *Marine Jumper* which delayed the expected sailing date to February 14. The time change allowed consideration for a brief halt in Shanghai where the Americans wanted to include another group of Germans.<sup>34</sup> Unfortunately the *Marine Jumper* was already loaded with cargo and passengers' baggage which had to be offloaded in favor of reprovisioning for the longer trip to Bremerhaven.

With the delay, Barco completed the administrative needs, and on January 22, 1947, the Eighth Army issued Operational Directive No. 12, which provided fulsome instructions for everyone. For the Americans, the responsibilities meant developing command and control, forming 89 three-man inspection teams with 6 six-man units, establishing collecting warehouses (Kagohara, Kurihama, Tokyo, and Kobe), and providing material support needs.

The Japanese would supply the work personnel needed for the inventory and custodial duties; processing, packing, and shipping moveable items; transporting all repatriates and their personal baggage to Uraga, providing all rations for the movement; satisfying the customs inspections. They would also pay all of the costs.

The Directive also had combined the orders for the deportation of the Germans. The instructions were in English, Japanese, and German. The German translation was more imperious in tone and contained some misunderstandings. It opened with "Orders have been received directing your repatriation." In a military format the directions then provided an approximate departure date, the fact that the Japanese would execute the op-

eration under American supervision, and of the luggage limits (350 pounds per individual or 1,500 pounds per family).

The financial restrictions were just as direct. Irrespective of position, wealth, or possessions each adult could bring two watches, one camera, two necklaces, and two bracelets. Other valuables or bullion were not allowed. In the English version they could take \$50 each; the German translation allowed 750 yen as an alternative. In all events, the money had to be exchanged in Germany for marks. The Germans with property would have an armed Japanese custodian appointed for that property. The custodian would reside on the premises at the direction of the American inspecting team which would facilitate the inventory process. Under all circumstances the custodian would move in and live on the premises, assume custody of all property and guard it. The repatriates could furnish two lists of their holdings: (1) small items of high intrinsic value and (2) moveable property. The teams would verify the accuracy of all statements, decide on the property scheduled for storage, and provide receipts.<sup>35</sup>

Because of the ship's delay the house inspections began on January 30, 1947, but without any specific departure date. On February 6, Eighth Army informed the Japanese authorities that the movement would begin two days later. The announcement gave them 24 hours to inform the repatriates about any final needs and to transfer them to entraining points. Despite the earlier team visits, many Germans had not believed in their forced repatriation. The surprise was unpleasant. In most areas the Japanese picked them up in dirty, open trucks with armed police guards and drove them through the city streets. The normally placid Japanese often cried out "losers" and "good riddance" to them. At the train stations they boarded trains for designated receiving camps. There they answered a roll call and elected group leaders as their representatives to the authorities. Japanese doctors then examined them for contagious diseases and general health. After receiving a medical certificate they could rest. At 6:30 a.m. the following day they boarded trucks again and moved to Uraga Repatriation Center for customs inspection, weighing of all hand baggage, and a body search for hidden valuables.<sup>36</sup>

With completion of these preliminaries, the repatriates climbed into lighters which ferried them out to the *Marine Jumper*. Aboard ship, Colonel Charles Army was in command of thirteen Army officers, five nurses, and 56 enlisted men. This group provided health and security responsibilities. The repatriates would serve as cooks, orderlies, sanitation workers, kitchen police, etc. They would take care of the functional activities, whatever their experience.

An immediate, serious concern was the ship's store which sold small necessities for American currency only. Since the Uraga authorities had impounded all American funds, the Germans had to struggle with their resources. It was a poor beginning. On February 15, the *Marine Jumper* put to sea with 536 adult males, 306 adult females, and 226 children.<sup>37</sup>

From Japan the ship turned for Shanghai. She spent only a short time there, ostensibly to pick up certain war-criminals before turning for Germany.<sup>38</sup> With the addition of a few Chinese-Germans, the *Marine Jumper* departed on February 20 for Bremerhaven.

Aboard ship the Germans settled down for the long voyage. Given their unfortunate lot they accepted their situation stoically. Divided into nine different living areas they lived their fate. They organized musical concerts, skat games, chess tournaments, educational lectures, language courses, and a multitude of activities. They were busy. Each day the Americans made certain that everything was in order (and gave certain privileges for housekeeping accomplishments). The American crew also furnished motion pictures (with ratings!) as well as other forms of ship's entertainment.<sup>39</sup> There were few disturbances because people, whether through fear of the future or shock over their departure, tended to be quiet and reserved. The abundance of food far exceeded the experiences of the Germans, who had more than they could eat. They arrived in Bremerhaven on March 23, 1947.

American troops impounded any funds before moving them to trains for Ludwigsburg (near Stuttgart). Once in camp they went through a lengthy screening process. For the most part the interrogators were searching for hardcore National Socialists. They could not always differentiate the level of party commitment and tended to lump everyone together. For most of the returnees the interrogations and filling out forms concerning political memberships, activities, etc. lasted three weeks. With some exceptions the Americans then dismissed the repatriates to fend for themselves. The combined experience of their arrival in Germany was a difficult one filled with pain, suffering, and uncertainty.<sup>40</sup>

In Japan, SCAP ordered another survey of the remaining nationals. There remained some 800 Germans subject to return. During the earlier review of the first transport various persons had missed repatriation. These individuals were, for the most part, members of religious orders, long-term residents in Japan (who had, for whatever reasons, missed the *Marine Jumper*), individuals with confused citizenship (dual, mixed United Nations, etc.), and the families of Germans evacuated from the Dutch colonies. The latter, now almost half of the remaining Germans, had been hurriedly evacuated to Japan from the former Netherlands colonies in 1942.<sup>41</sup> They had survived as indigents on Japanese charity. Without funds, language, or needed skills they posed a serious humanitarian challenge. They had survived by bartering their few belongings, by employing their



*The Marine Jumper, used to deport "objectionable" Germans from Japan after World War Two*<sup>46</sup>

children as beggars, and by stealing. This group had little choice but to return to Germany, which accorded with SCAP's interest in removing Germans from Japan.<sup>42</sup>

The German diplomats were also still present. They possessed certain privileges because of international law. In addition, the Japanese had allowed them various advantages which SCAP could not violate easily. Nonetheless the Americans wanted them on the next boat home:<sup>43</sup> Before any action could be organized, however, SCAP had to obtain approval in Europe for the reception of the Germans. Living conditions in Germany remained poor and the expanding discordance between the former allies made movement more problematical.<sup>44</sup> As well as this, the issue of the families from the Dutch colonies presented a moral dilemma. They had no property, lived on Japanese charity, and most wanted to return to Germany (the free ticket was a major motivation). Messages between the American occupation authorities moved back and forth, as each struggled to cope with the problem.<sup>45</sup> SCAP had some 140 diplomats and 198 objectionables to transport. The refugee numbers were uncertain.

By July 1947, SCAP had sufficient assurance of acceptance to proceed with the process. They issued instructions to the Japanese authorities which replicated their earlier format. While the orders were less emphatic, they did not reflect the changes recommended in the earlier review of the first transport. The currency regulations now allowed \$50 in any currency other than yen, but all of the other restrictions remained the same. The diplomats could take \$250 and 8,000 pounds of personal effects, but could only count on handling 500 pounds on debarkation in Germany.<sup>47</sup>

Everything went according to the organizational directions, and the repatriates boarded the transport *General Black* on August 19, 1947. The movement commander, Colonel Douglas Pamplin, had eighteen officers, 42 enlisted men, and five nurses for security, control, and health purposes. Given these limited numbers, the repatriates would provide the labor force. The diplomats received the few private accommodations and no duties. Everyone else lived in the compartments. The *General Black* left Yokohama on August 20 for Shanghai. Aboard were 806 passengers. She remained in the Chinese port nine days while loading 514 more Germans and waiting out a typhoon. She departed on 1 September. Colonel Pamplin was anti-German and forbade any exchange between the Americans and Germans. Given the number of children and the unpleasant heat aboard the ship, his rules had little success. The crew allowed them, via trade or gift, to acquire foodstuffs and cigarettes, which the Germans carefully sewed into their clothing. They had heard about the cigarette economy in Germany. The *General Black* docked in Bremerhaven on October 1, 1947.<sup>48</sup>

In Bremerhaven the reception authorities had major difficulties. They found that the "objectionables" had not been separated from the others, that the baggage had not been divided by occupation zones, and that the personal histories arrived two weeks after the ship (regular mail instead of the directed airmail). As a result, the receiving office sent everyone to Ludwigsburg rather than dividing them among other stations. The result was chaos and inconvenience for everyone. There was not enough food, nor were there sufficient blankets or

beds; conditions were very bad. The authorities dispatched a blistering communiqué to SCAP, which could rectify the problem.<sup>49</sup>

Because of illness and bureaucratic error, SCAP still had 28 “objectionable” Germans in Japan. Given the numbers and shipping problems, SCAP made arrangements to fly them to Germany. They feared possible legal problems with any flight over the United States and selected a Pan American route—Tokyo, Calcutta, Istanbul, Frankfurt. Confiscated former German Embassy funds paid for the costs of the Germans and their guards.<sup>50</sup> When these “objectionables” landed in Germany on April 4, 1948, they completed the deportation phase of repatriation. SCAP assumed no responsibility for those Germans remaining in Japan. The issues of the transfer and the impounded, confiscated, stored property, however, remained unresolved.

As soon as the expellees aboard the *Marine Jumper* had found a measure of stability, they sought out the American occupation offices for their property. They encountered a misinformed and disinterested bureaucracy at every turn. Given their poor fiscal status on arrival, their confiscated funds, and their absence from Germany, they could protest but without any success. Many of them rallied behind Johann Lipporte, a fellow repatriate, who spoke excellent English and resided in Ludwigsburg. His efforts to meet the *General Black* in Bremerhaven to obtain the release of the impounded funds and to extract clarity about the repatriates’ property accomplished nothing.<sup>51</sup> The American occupation representatives declared that any promises made in Japan had no authority in Germany. Lipporte organized a letter writing campaign while maintaining active contact with the military claims offices. He also brought the *Ostasiatischer Verein* in Hamburg into the struggle. They achieved little beyond making some officers feel guilty about the legal and human uncertainties.<sup>52</sup>

On March 14, 1948, the American licensed *Japan Times and Advertiser* announced the imminent liquidation sale of German property. The first Tokyo auction included thirty pianos, four automobiles, furniture, curios, clothing, etc. The accredited purchasers were occupation personnel and licensed commercial representatives.<sup>53</sup> The announcement indicated that the sale would be the first of many which would liquidate all salable German property. Lipporte protested the action, presented the property receipts of his associates, and demanded a halt to the action. As a result of his efforts, the Public Welfare Office in Stuttgart asked for clarification, which created some exchange with the various claims authorities in the European Command. In a brusque opinion, the Claim Division rejected any claims for the property. No authority in Japan could have made any promises to the repatriates concerning their property. All impounded effects came under vesting decrees and would be treated accordingly. There was no understanding concerning money conversion.<sup>54</sup> No one would do anything. Clearly the bureaucracy could not, would not question itself. The rebuff forced the petitioners back, via Washington, D.C., to SCAP for redress.

With the planned sale the authorities in Japan began unraveling their already unclear situation. The earlier emotional commitment to remove Germans now confronted the administrative realities of their property. In part the complexities of the

issues and, in part, the uncertain legal ambiguities of the seizure confused everyone. Besides this, SCAP delayed all consideration of the issues until the end of the repatriation process. Thereafter language, trust, methodology, control, etc. demanded an inordinate amount of time. The search for corporate and scientific assets provided challenges in tracing, locating, confirming, and impounding them.<sup>55</sup>

On October 13, 1949, after intense exchange with Washington, D.C., SCAP issued a declaration of property ownership. Any property in Japan owned or controlled before July 1, 1948, by any Germans residing in Germany or any German living outside that country after September 1, 1939, belonged to France, Great Britain, and the United States.<sup>56</sup> SCAP was the trustee for that property with full powers of control and disposal. The Japanese authorities would provide the necessary preservation, maintenance, administration, and accounting for the sale of German assets.<sup>57</sup>

With that clear statement, the liquidation could begin, but the allies could not find any agreement on the process. For the Germans still in Japan, SCAP cut down the local controls and gave them back their personal property. For the repatriates there was no discussion. Finally on February 7, 1950, the authorization for disposal of the German assets arrived at SCAP. As the result of a British proposal, they formed a Tri-Power Advisory Committee (TRIPAC) on March 9, 1950. The acceptance of TRIPAC allowed much progress in the technical issues. It cut through official disclaimers over substantive, procedural, and administrative issues.<sup>58</sup>

As they commenced selling the assets SCAP reviewed the repatriation policies and uncovered various individual inequities. Included in this group were those who had had no, or only nominal, membership in the National Socialist Party, those who had lived most of their lives in Japan and could not earn a livelihood elsewhere; those who were not a security risk; and those who had suffered unduly from the confiscation practices. TRIPAC recognized these problems and treated each one on an “ad hoc” basis. In response SCAP set up the German National Re-classification Committee for redress. Unfortunately, the body had no time for major action; it could act on some pending requests, but not hold up the sales process.<sup>59</sup>

For administrative convenience, TRIPAC proposed that a wide range of moveable property, including personal effects, be sold locally. SCAP moved quickly and established the auction rules. Local experts would set a floor price, with the right to refuse all bids. The basic bidding currency was the dollar. A restrictive resale clause would prevent any resale to German ownership.<sup>60</sup> In studying the issues, TRIPAC discovered the considerable amount of personal property registered to the repatriates. A goodly portion of this property was of a sentimental nature, objects with limited actual value. The cost of storage and liquidation far exceeded any auction proceeds. TRIPAC proposed that the Japanese separate, pack, and ship these items to a German port. SCAP accepted the idea and ordered the Japanese to make the arrangements. The goods should be shipped aboard the German registered *Bogata Maru* and charged against German funds. The ship left with a large consignment on July 17, 1950.<sup>61</sup> The Germans could pick up their property in Bremerhaven and pay the costs.

Thereafter TRIPAC turned its attention to the more pressing issues of selling institutional enterprises, business assets, license agreements, retail shops, film rights, etc. Included here were bullion, precious stones, and bank accounts. Land was a particularly thorny issue since it included residential, farming, and business buildings and properties. The holdings belonged to social clubs and schools as well as individuals and firms. For those properties released, for various reasons, to Germans, the owners received bills for maintenance costs and repair charges. For those already sold by auction, the previous owners received the monies realized from the sale and for all outstanding bills.<sup>62</sup>

Beginning in 1950, SCAP expedited the sales. Over the next months they held over 300 auctions at different sites. When SCAP discovered that they could not sell everything for dollars or sterling, they invited the Japanese public to secondary sales where the yen became acceptable currency.<sup>63</sup>

Despite extensive and widespread protests from the repatriates, ably coordinated by the *Ostasiatischer Verein*, SCAP paid no attention. No matter how the group employed their arguments, *i.e.*, human justice, the changing world, international law, etc., they received no recognition.<sup>64</sup>

The Japanese Peace Treaty, signed in San Francisco on September 8, 1951, made a major adjustment in the issue. With Article 20 Japan agreed to assume responsibility for disposing of German assets as determined by the three allied powers and to take care of the conservation and administration of them.<sup>65</sup> This blank check maintained the former relationship relative to German assets. Everything would continue along the same path, *i.e.*, the Japanese doing the bidding of the victors.

Since SCAP would go out of existence on the Treaty's effective date (April 28, 1952), the headquarters hastened to reorganize these issues. Both TRIPAC and the office of Civil Property Custodian went out of business on May 2, 1952. These functions merged into a Tripartite Commission (TPC) charged with maintaining the rights of the three powers. The new body also absorbed the trustee rights of the earlier organizations.<sup>66</sup> As a result, the Japanese would continue as executors of earlier decisions while assuming greater responsibilities. They accepted legal accountability for a legalistically confused program based on an uncertain interpretation of a victors' meeting at Potsdam concerning foreign nationals.

Concurrently, the Japanese found a new player emerging in the property issue. West Germany's emergence as a fledgling power created new exchanges. On April 5, 1952, the Germans opened a Mission under a charge d'affaires, Heinrich Northe, who immediately set to work. He understood the basic arguments of morality, of a changing world, of the Marshall Plan, of the Japanese peace. His protests helped postpone the auction of two houses in April 1952, but could not halt the auction.<sup>67</sup> The issue was clear, *i.e.*, the allies advertised, the Germans protested, the Japanese auctioned the property. This time, however, they did so with the yen as the only accepted currency.<sup>68</sup>

The German representatives argued in favor of releasing the impounded funds and of reviewing the entire repatriation issue. Because the Japanese continued the auction process, the Germans found difficulty in sorting out the bureaucratic maze. In August 1952, they gained access to the warehouses containing the last remaining sentimental objects. They could not make

headway with their return, with the questions of royalties, patents, etc., or any reconsideration. No one wanted any responsibility for anything. Within the TPC any member could block any transaction, and the Japanese would not act independently.<sup>69</sup> The Germans fully understood that the auctions were, essentially, complete. Their desire was to extend the issue until they could gain access to the records, assure proper control of surviving properties, express moral concerns about earlier decisions, and initiate compensation questions.<sup>70</sup>

At the outset, they had no grasp of the realities. The TPC and the Japanese refused all access to their files. Even the available approximations contained problems, *i.e.*, land values, especially in urban areas, had escalated considerably, the yen's value had changed within a short time (in 1947, 15 to \$1; in 1953, 360 to \$1), accounting practices lumped personal property into simple figures (in 1953, each object was carried with a value of 100 yen or 1.20 marks). The changing times had adjusted the value of patents, businesses, libraries, films, etc. As outsiders, the Germans could not change this process.<sup>71</sup> Rejection precluded consideration, adjustment, or rectification.<sup>72</sup>

In June 1953, they did manage to gain control of the last sentimental items—some furniture, but basically only photo albums, diaries, and personal papers. Doing the paper work, coordinating the customs issues, and locating the owners in Germany took more time. Ultimately, in May 1954, the Embassy could collect the last objects, pack them into 26 crates, and return them on the steamer *Hamburg*. The *Ostasiatischer Verein* had accepted responsibility for forwarding everything properly.<sup>73</sup> While this action terminated the return of small items, it did not conclude the many issues of restitution or rehabilitation. The key issue was the term "objectionable," which had been the justification for the forced repatriation. That clarification was vital to all discussions and encountered generalized responses. The basic defense was that the Counter Intelligence investigations, the relationship of the individuals to the National Socialist Party, and the value of persons to the Japanese war effort combined for the final designation.<sup>74</sup>

Time passed in desultory exchange as the Germans sought access to the records. The authorities, Japanese and the TPC, found varying grounds for refusal—personnel shortages, shifting responsibilities, file transfers, etc. Only the diligence of the *Ostasiatischer Verein* kept the issues alive. While business interests continued their individual efforts, the *Verein* spoke for everyone.<sup>75</sup>

In 1954, some changes in the German-American discussions over similar property seizures in the United States brought a ray of hope. Both countries had an interest in resolution. They encountered the same issues as the representatives in Japan: inadequate accounting, unknown commitments, impractical demands, uneasy legal interpretations. At least the Americans expressed some interest in a potential maximum individual award of \$10,000. The changes in world diplomacy, the German economy, and an uncertain conscience motivated the Americans, who broke ranks with their allies. While these exchanges continued for some time, various misunderstandings, the cost of compensation to individuals damaged by the war, and the uncertain price to the American taxpayer eventually scuttled any

resolution.<sup>76</sup> Domestic concerns in both countries precluded satisfaction.

These efforts did bring limited movement in Japan. In September 1956, the Germans made some headway through the wall of denial and refusal. Mr. Howard Staub, the General Secretary of the TPC (and long-term member of TRIPAC), agreed that the designation “objectionable” had led to many errors. He pointed out that the German National Reclassification Committee had adjudicated the concerns of diplomatic privilege and had changed eight individual cases. The Commission’s insistence on unanimity on all reclassification requests had hampered all restitution.<sup>77</sup>

In Bonn, the German Foreign Office tried to follow up on this information. They adjusted their position to rehabilitating the “objectionables” as a precedent for returning or reimbursing the property, to establishing a fiscal fund (from the auction sales) for repatriates in harsh circumstances, and to blocking further sales. By pressing for a general amnesty or rehabilitation, they hoped to rescue something.<sup>78</sup>

The idea found no echo in Tokyo. A meeting between Embassy representatives and the TPC on March 18, 1957, brought a sharp rejection of the German proposals. The Allies refused all discussion of any changes. The members accepted the possibility of some form of rehabilitation in the future, but totally independent of any past claims or demands. They found that the term “objectionable” was neither politically nor discriminatorily wrong and that it did not impose any travel restrictions. In closing, the allied representatives finished with the fatal observation that they would make their time-consuming recommendations to their home governments.<sup>79</sup> The answer was clear; inaction and obfuscation would continue.

Subsequent efforts for clarification received a common answer that the term “objectionable” was an administrative term and did not reflect on patriotism nor indicate criminal activity. To question the issue would lead to extraordinary legal complications which lacked any factual basis. The TPC remained totally negative to any property questions. Since the liquidation process was complete and the records lost or scattered in different archives, changes were impossible.<sup>80</sup>

To cement their point, the TPC quietly informed the Japanese, and not the Germans, on June 24, 1957, that, after July 1, they would renounce their rights, titles, and claims to undiscovered German assets in Japan. The Japanese informed the Germans, but underscored their fear of potential German recovery demands. They wanted an official German statement renouncing such claims, which was not forthcoming. A meeting with the TPC on September 13 brought no progress.<sup>81</sup>

In February 1958, Staub reported his impending departure (on March 12) and the completion of the TPC’s work. The French, British, and American embassies would take care of any subsequent questions under the TPC imprimatur. There were neither apologists nor suggestions. The Japanese and Germans could address their respective problems between themselves.<sup>82</sup>

The Japanese quickly accepted the idea of halting all seizures and set April 1, 1958, as the terminal date. The departing TPC made no protest.<sup>83</sup> Concurrently, however, a judgment in the Japanese courts brought the entire process to a conclusion.

A German plaintiff had sued the Japanese government for the 1953 auction of his real estate. He had come to Japan in 1929 and acquired several properties which he had lost to seizure shortly before his forced repatriation. He argued that the loss violated international law, that the Potsdam Proclamation and the Japanese Peace Treaty provisions were in disagreement, and that the confiscation was without due process. The Japanese defense maintained that the United States, Great Britain, and France had entered into agreements with the West German government, which obligated the latter not to make claims for requisitioned German overseas assets. These agreements further precluded individual claims. Given those facts, the suit had no merit. The court decided against the plaintiff and charged him all court costs.<sup>84</sup> There could be no more claims against the Japanese or the Allies.

As the Germans tried to pursue other property concerns, they encountered major opposition. The English chairman of the TPC, Cooper Blyth, bluntly told a German representative that all future requests would be denied without comment. His explanation was that the constant change of administrations (SCAP, TRIPAC, TPC, Japanese officers) had destroyed any documentary accuracy. In addition, no one had sufficient personnel for answering individual questions. Finally, arguments over the true value of auctioned items could never be resolved, nor could anyone answer the problems of currency relationships.<sup>85</sup> Blyth’s comments provided the indicated evidence that the wall of refusal and denial remained intact.

On June 30, 1960, the TPC finally closed its doors and gave up its authority. Subsequent questions should be addressed to the member embassies.<sup>86</sup>

The announcement effectively terminated the repatriation issue and the property dislocations. The path had been long and convoluted.<sup>87</sup>

## Notes

Charles Burdick was Professor of History Emeritus at San Jose State University in California. He died in 1998.

<sup>1</sup> United States, Department of State, *Foreign Relations of the United States. The Conference of Berlin (Potsdam Conference) 1945* (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1960) (hereafter FRUS, Vol. II 1475-1476).

<sup>2</sup> Observation by a forced repatriate in 1947.

<sup>3</sup> Merion and Susie Harris, *Sheathing the Sword: The Demilitarization of Japan* (New York: Macmillan, 1987) 23.

<sup>4</sup> In Europe General Dwight Eisenhower served as Commander, Supreme Headquarters, Allied Expeditionary Force (SHEAF). The variance in titles was a serious matter, which provoked much criticism in Japan. John M. Allison, *Ambassador from the Prairie* (Tokyo: Charles Tuttle, 1973), 143.

<sup>5</sup> Hugh Borton, *American Surrender Planning for Postwar Japan* (New York: Columbia University, 1967). An interesting account is Leon V. Sigal, *Fighting to a Finish: The Politics of War Termination in the United States and Japan, 1945* (Ithaca: Cornell University, 1988).

<sup>6</sup> Allied powers created, in December, 1945, two governing bodies: the Far Eastern Commission and the Allied Council for Japan. In conception the diplomats had aspirations for some form of collective governance, an attitude not shared by General MacArthur. Some of the frustration in this struggle over prestige and authority is in Roger Buckley’s *Occupation Diplomacy: Britain, the United States and Japan, 1945-1952* (Cambridge University, 1982) See also George H. Blakeslee, *The Far Eastern Commission: a Study in International Cooperation, 1945 to 1952* (Washington, D.C. Department of State, 1953).

<sup>7</sup> They often employed a distinctive jargon, part harsh military directive and part conciliatory civilian persuasion termed Scapanise by many, Henry E. Wildes, *Typhoon in Tokyo: The Occupation and Its Aftermath* (New York: Macmillan, 1954), 1.

<sup>8</sup> For a discussion of the legal basis for these actions see Nisuke Ando, *Surren-*

- der, *Occupation, and Private Property in International Law: an Evaluation of US Practice in Japan* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1991). Useful studies on the occupation are Richard B. Finn, *Winners in Peace: MacArthur, Yoshida, and Postwar Japan* (Berkeley: University of California, 1992); John M. Maki "United States Initial Post-surrender Policy for Japan," in Han-Kyo Kim, ed., *Essays on Modern Politics and History: Written in Honor of Harold M. Vinnacke* (Athens, Ohio: Ohio University Press, 1969), 30-56. The major study on MacArthur is D. Clayton James, *The Years of MacArthur*, Vol. 3, *Triumph and Disaster, 1945-1964* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1985).
- <sup>9</sup> SCAP Instructions to the Japanese Government (hereinafter SCAPIN) 217: Definition of "United Nations," and "enemy Nations," 31 October 1945. National Archives (hereafter NA, Record Group (hereafter RG) 331, Box 3.
- <sup>10</sup> For a more detailed account of these activities see Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, General Headquarters, Statistics and Reports Section, "History of the Non-Military Activities of the Occupation of Japan," vol. 17, "treatment of Foreign Nationals," 1-15. NA, RG 331, Box 2. Note, also, Eric H. F. Svensson, "The Military Occupation of Japan. The First Years Planning, Policy Formulation, and Reforms" PhD dissertation, University of Denver, 1966), 144-157.
- <sup>11</sup> After some lengthy discussions SCAP allowed the Italian government to send a ship that took all the Italians home in April 1947. "Treatment of Foreign Nationals," 61-62. CINCAFPAC to WARCOS, 2 October 1946. MacArthur Memorial, (hereafter MM), Norfolk, Virginia, RG-9, Radiograms, WD OUT. Edward J. Boone, Jr. was most helpful with these files.
- <sup>12</sup> These figures come from a later report by the German representation in Japan. Ber. Nr. 237/53, 24 März 1953, *Politisches Archiv des Auswärtigen Amtes* (hereafter AA), Tokyo, Bd. 6662. Maria Keipert was very supportive to my research.
- <sup>13</sup> A description by a diplomat is Erwin Wickert, *Mut und Übermut. Geschichten aus Meinem Leben* (Stuttgart: Deutsche Verlags Anstalt, 1992), 436f. See also his *Der fremde Osten: China und Japan gestern und heute* (Stuttgart: Deutsche Verlags Anstalt 1968) 286-334. A daily record is in Paul Werner Ve-mehren, "Kriegstagebuch" Bundesarchiv Militärarchiv. The human suffering was severe. The bombings, crowded housing, transportation difficulties, food shortages made the restriction difficult. Letter from Reiner Jordan, 6 March 1993, letter from Margot Lenigk, 13.4.93. See also Thomas R. H. Havens, *Valley of Darkness: The Japanese People and World War Two* (New York: W.W. Norton, 1978).
- <sup>14</sup> Central Liaison Office to SCAP, 10 January 1946, NA RG, 160, Box 449.
- <sup>15</sup> Letters from Reiner Jordan, 15.3.93, 20.3.93; letter from Margot Lenigk, 15.4.93, letter from Ursula Reinhard, April 1993; Jürgen Lehmann, *Zur Geschichte der deutschen Schule Kobe* (Tokyo: Deutsche Gesellschaft für Natur- und Völkerkunde Ostasiens, 1988, 4-48. See also Helmut Krajewicz "Das Kriegsende in Japan am Fuße des Fujiyama", *Vierteljahresschrift der Vereinigung Deutscher Auslandsbeamten e.v.* (3-4/90), 167-172.
- <sup>16</sup> Hans H. Baerwald, *The Purge of Japanese Leaders under the Occupation* (Berkeley, University of California, 1959) remains a fine treatment. Harris and Harris, *Sheathing the Sword*, chap 5, presents a colorful version.
- <sup>17</sup> Joint Chiefs of Staff to CINCAFOAC, WARX 875m 7 December 1945, NA, RG 319, Box 507.
- <sup>18</sup> Civil Affairs Divisions Operations to CINCAFPAC, WARX 88430, 12 December 1945. NA, RG 319, Box 507.
- <sup>19</sup> Memo for Record (AG), 30 January 1946. NA, RG 260, Box 449: Washington to USFET, 24 January 1946. MM, RG-9: Radiograms W.D.
- <sup>20</sup> SCAPIN 686: Repatriation of German Nationals in Japan, 31 January 1947. NA, RG 331, Box 3. SCAP subsequently published a lengthy compendium of over 800 SCAPINS. Only two of them mentioned the Germans.
- <sup>21</sup> www.trumanlibrary.org/whistlestop/archive/photos/67\_7376.htm
- <sup>22</sup> SCAPIN 769: Repatriation of German Nationals and Nationals who claim Austrian or Czechoslovakian Citizenship now in Japan, 23 February 1946. NA, RG 260, Box 449.
- <sup>23</sup> Much of the research material and emotional fuel for these early efforts came from the Army's Counterintelligence activities in Japan. The 441 CIC Detachment, with over fifty small subordinate units, had the mission to locate the suspect individuals. These units lacked jurisdictional boundaries, careful supervision, or hierarchical rules. They enjoyed great authority and freedom in 1945-1946. See "History of the Counter Intelligence Corps," Vol. XXVIII, "CIC in the Occupation of Japan" (Baltimore: US Army Intelligence Center, 1960). A major source for this study, "Representative History of CIC Activities in the Occupation of Japan (Sep 1 1945 to 1948)" has disappeared from the files. Letter from John Allshouse, Federal Records Center- Kansas City, July 16, 1992. The Counter-Intelligence records are fragmentary and difficult to use. Letter from Jane B. Sealock, US Army Intelligence and Security Command, Fort George G. Meade, MC 30 March 1992.
- <sup>24</sup> SCAPIN, 1000: Repatriation of German Nationals, 5 June 1946. NA, RG 331, Box 3. The Japanese subsequently reported 2,679 Germans with 1191 individuals as head of households containing 1488 family members. The Allied occupation forces in Germany had forwarded extensive lists of the Nazi party members in Japan. These lists, drawn from the captured Nazi records, provided detailed personal information as well as address in Japan. Letter and materials from David Marwell, Berlin Documents Center, 16 April 1993.
- <sup>25</sup> Radio WCL 25844 to SCAP, 5 December 1945, MM, RG-9: Radiograms, W.D.; 10 Information and Historical Service Headquarters Eighth Army, "Special Staff Study of the Repatriation of German Nationals from Japan" (6 June 1947), Center of Military History, Department of the Army, Washington, D.C. This brief study, completed just after the final phase of the repatriation, has valuable material as well as some errors.
- <sup>26</sup> SCAPIN 26: Protection of Allied and Axis Property, 13 September 1945. On October 2, 1945 SCAP relaxed these controls slightly and allowed families to utilize some personal funds for living expenses and tax payments. SCAPIN 87: Authorization No 1, Living Expense Allowances to Axis Nationals Domiciled in Japan, 2 October 1945. NA, RG 331, Box 3.
- <sup>27</sup> Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, General Headquarters, Statistics and Reports Section, "History of the Non-Military Activities of the Occupation of Japan," Monograph 21, "Foreign Property Administration," 106. NA, RG 331, Box 2. Of the total, individuals owned 115,080,000 yen; business firms claimed 286,362,000 yen; official German agencies possessed 764,482,000 yen, and other sources had 13,002,000 yen. Ibid.
- <sup>28</sup> Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, *Vested Assets in Japan. Final Report of Trusteeship* 9n.p., 28 April 1952), part XI. Library of Congress, Washington, D.C. This report is valuable because most of the documentary material is misplaced or destroyed. I am indebted to Marin T. Hanna and her colleagues in the National Archives for their exhaustive search for these files.
- <sup>29</sup> Telegram, Military Government Germany to SCAP Pacific, 11 October 1946. NA, RG 260, Box 141.
- <sup>30</sup> SCAP "Treatment of Foreign Nationals," 52-53; Cable OMGUS to CINCAFPAC, 5 Nov 46. MM, file RG-9: Radiograms, State Department.
- <sup>31</sup> Letter to Commanding Generals I and IX Corps, 5 December 1946. NA, RG 94, Box 2726. Barco had a clear image of the Joint Chiefs of Staff's views because of an extensive exchange between SCAP and that command in October. These messages are in MM, RG-9: Radiograms, WD out.
- <sup>32</sup> Agenda, Reparation Conference, 18 December 1946, with enclosures. NA, RG 94, Box 2726.
- <sup>33</sup> SCAP to CG Eighth Army, 13 January 1947 in Administrative Papers of G-1 Reparation Section, Center of Military History, Department of the Army, Washington, D.C.
- <sup>34</sup> The reparation process in China had begun much earlier but moved slowly. Accounts on the removal are in Klaus Mehnert, *Ein Deutscher in der Welt. Erinnerungen 1906-1981* (Frankfurt am Main: Fischer, 1983), 324-336; Karl H. Abshagen, *Im Lande Arimasen* (Stuttgart: Deutscher Verlag, 1948), 347-374.
- <sup>35</sup> Headquarters, Eighth Army, Operational Directive No. 12, 22 January 1947. NA, RG 94, Box 2726. There was some confusion over mixed marriages. If a Japanese wife elected to stay in Japan she could do so but only with the property she had held before the marriage. Anything acquired after the marriage was subject to the same rules.
- <sup>36</sup> This description comes from the 10<sup>th</sup> Information and Historical Service, "Special Staff Study," and its Annex No. 1, "Interrogation of Repatriated German Nationals" The latter were voluntary responses to a questionnaire issued just before embarkation.
- <sup>37</sup> Ibid. The decline in numbers came from the removal of the sick, unfit and a decision not to include any diplomats- as well as administrative confusion. On the other hand some Germans held in Sugamo prison did find accommodations on the ship. Ibid. See also Friedrich J. Klahn, ed., *Kapn. Kollhabach: Der Blockadebrecher mit der glücklichen Hand* (Biberbach: Koehlers Verlag, 1958), 220-222.
- <sup>38</sup> Since China was an ally the German issue was different than in Japan. Nonetheless, the Chinese, for unclear reasons, did not cooperate in moving the Germans. This unhelpfulness led to a major protest from the U.S. Department of State. The "fiasco" was a major embarrassment to the Allied powers. Washington (Acheson) to SCAP, 10 March 1947. MM, RG-9: Radiograms, State Department.
- <sup>39</sup> "Jumper Journal." The ships mimeographed publication contained information on world events as well as ship's activities. Reiner Jordan shared his file of the publication. Letter from Heinrich Pahl, 15 April 1993; letter from Wilhelm Osterfeld, 28 February 1993.
- <sup>40</sup> See Dietrich Seckel, *Schriften-Verzeichnis. Mit einem autobiographischem Essay. Mein Weg zur Kunst Ostasiens* (Frankfurt a.M.: Hang & Herchen, 1981), 94-96. The completed forms are in NA, RG 338, Boxes 669-674.
- <sup>41</sup> The Dutch and the British took the German males with their evacuation forces to India. This action led to a major disaster on January 20, 1942 when the Japanese bombed the Dutch ship, *van Imhoff*, in the Indian Ocean. The Dutch crew took the few lifeboats and left the Germans to their fate. Subsequently a

- Dutch rescue ship, *Bollongan*, arrived on the scene but refused to pick up any Germans; 411 perished. Those who survived the evacuation traveled to internment camps in Dehra Dun, India. They returned home in 1946. For the tragic reality, see C. Van Heekeren, *Batavia Seint Berlyn* (Den Haag: Bert Bakker, 1967) 159-371, Erich Klappert, *Erlebnisse* (? : Klappert, 1978) 46-50. C. Townen-Bouwisma and Margot Lenigk provided these materials. Letter from Ursula Reinhard, April 1993.
- <sup>42</sup> CINCFE to MOGUS, WAR, 6 August 1947. MM, RG-9: Radiograms, Outgoing. Report by Margot Lenigk, May 25, 1993.
- <sup>43</sup> Wickert, *Mut und Übermut*, 480-482: H.G. Stahmer, *Japans Niederlage-Asiens Sieg: Aufsteig eines Größeren Ostasien* (Bielefeld: Deutscher Heimat Verlag, 1952), 192-195.
- <sup>44</sup> There were extensive discussions concerning the diplomats. Until they reached German soil they enjoyed a special position; once landed in Germany, they lost this protection, i.e., they became responsible for their baggage, valuables, transportation, security, etc. The records concerning the diplomats' repatriation are in a lost file, which makes research virtually impossible. Letter from Joseph Dane Hartgrove, National Archives, March 19 1992.
- <sup>45</sup> MM, RG-9: Radiograms, State Department and RG-9: Radiograms, WD WX have these exchanges. An interesting proposal came from the American President lines, which proposed a commercial transport on their ships; i.e., those Germans able to pay their passage could do so while the American authorities could pay a reduced price for the others. WAR to CHICFE, Berlin, 3 May 47; MM RG-99: Radiograms, WD WX. Since the Japanese were paying the costs, the Americans declined the offer.
- <sup>46</sup> www.veteransearch.homestead.com/files/Liberty\_Ship\_Marine\_Jumper\_1945.jpg
- <sup>47</sup> Telegram SEC STATE to SCAP, 17 June 1947. NA, RG 260, Box 141; SCAPIN 1750: Repatriation of German and Austrian Nationals, 21 July 1947. NA, REG 331, Box 5; Operational Directive No. 51, 21 July 1947. NA, RG 94, Box 2726. The State Department employed the descriptive term, "obnoxious" Germans as opposed to SCAP's "objectionable" Germans.
- <sup>48</sup> Orders to Colonel Douglas Pamplin, n.d., Ibid: CINCFE to WAR, 10 August 1947. MM, RG-9: Radiograms, Outgoing.
- <sup>49</sup> "Destination and Accompanying Documentation of the Refugees aboard the USAT *General Black*," 21 October 1947. NA, RG 260, Box 141; OMGUS to Department of the Army, 30 October 1947. MM, RG-9: Radiograms, Misc. For insight into the corrupt conditions in Ludwigsburg see Wicken, *Mut und Übermut*, 483-486.
- <sup>50</sup> DA to OMGUS, 20 December 1947, NA, RG 260, Box 141. State Department to SCAP, 16 March 1948, State Department to SCAP, 4 April 1948. MM, RG-9: Radiograms, State Department; SCAPIN 1869: Repatriation of German Nationals, 10 March 1948. NA, RG 331, Box 5. For a description of the return flight see Marie Balsler, *Ost- und westliches Gelände: Unser Leben in Ost und West den Enkeln erzählt* (Geissen: Munchowsche Universitätsdruckerei, 1958), 158-161.
- <sup>51</sup> Many of his letters are in Bestand JL 525 12/77-2/18, Staatsarchiv Ludwigsburg (hereafter SL).
- <sup>52</sup> The organization, founded in 1900, devoted itself to helping German interests in East Asia. Expanded to encouraging cultural matters in 1911, it became an influential force by 1914. After the damage inflicted by the loss of the First World War, the leadership developed a different focus: as a facilitator for joint interests and as a representative for business administration. It became more political and published a journal, *Ostasiatische Rundschau*. In 1945 the organization began operations relying on former contacts and the members' energy. They did achieve some moral support. See Chief Claims Division to Budget and Fiscal Director, European Command, "Property Claims of Japanese Repatriates," 3 June 1948. SL 12/77-2/18.
- <sup>53</sup> Office of Military Government, Land Württemberg-Baden, "Property Claims of Japanese Repatriates," 29 Jan (sic) 1948. NA, RG 260, Box 141: "Expellees from the Orient," October 1947. SL JL 525 12/63-1/6.
- <sup>54</sup> Office of Military Government to Office of Military Government for Württemberg-Baden, 8 July 1948. NA, RG 260, Box 141. Headquarters, Claims office team 7728, "Property Claims of Japanese Repatriates," 24 May 1948. SL JL 525 12/63-1/6.
- <sup>55</sup> SCAP, "Foreign Property Administration," 121-124.
- <sup>56</sup> Under the terms of the Potsdam Declaration, the Soviet Union had surrendered all claims to German overseas assets. FRUIS, *The Conference of Berlin*, II, 1486.
- <sup>57</sup> SCAPIN 2051: Notification that the United States, United Kingdom, and France are Owners of Certain Categories of Former German Property in Japan, 13 October 1949, NA, RG 3312, Box 5.
- <sup>58</sup> SCAP, *Vested Assets in Japan*, Part I, 4. The report provides a general account of the German assets. It includes a section listing various individual accounts which held sums down to \$3.00 or another with 1.67 yen.
- <sup>59</sup> Ibid, 4-5.
- <sup>60</sup> TRIPAC Minutes, 31 May 1950; Memos for Information, Nrs. 5,10, 11 as cited in SCAP "Foreign Property Administration," 150.
- <sup>61</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>62</sup> SCAP, *Vested Interests in Japan*, Part II, 13. The American and British governments each purchased two residences for their use. Ibid, Part I, 5.
- <sup>63</sup> Ibid, Part I,3.
- <sup>64</sup> Copies of these papers are in AA, Tokyo, Bd, 6663.
- <sup>65</sup> United States, Department of State, *United States Treaties and Other International Agreements*, Vol. 3, Part 3, 1952 (Washington D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1955), 3188. SCAP did not overlook the issue and spelled out Japan's continuing responsibilities after gaining sovereignty. SCAPIN 2195: Property in Japan Formerly Owned by Certain Persons of German Nationality. 25 January 1952. NA, RG 331, Box 5.
- <sup>66</sup> SCAPIN 2203: Property in Japan Formerly Owned by Certain Persons of German Nationality, 17 April 1952. NA, RG 3312, Box 5. The transfer of pertinent records to the Japanese had already begun. Just the papers for the cases awaiting completion exceeded 100 linear feet! SCAP Check Sheet: Disposition of German Records 3 January 1952; note of Major D.L. Luques, 1 November 1951. NA, RG 331m, Box 7564. There were over 2,000 linear feet of total records.
- <sup>67</sup> The Germans did so from unofficial sources. The Americans had already decided that there were no grounds for considering compensation for the vested German property. They found no reason to provide information on that process. DEPTAR to SCAP, 4 December 1951. NA, RG 331, Box 7564. Northe remained in charge until May 1955 when the first German Ambassador, Hans Kroll, arrived in Tokyo. Hans Kroll, *Lebenserinnerungen eines Botschafters* (Berlin: Kiepenheuer & Witsch, 1967), 293.
- <sup>68</sup> *Vertretung der Bundesrepublik Deutschland, Tokyo, an das Auswärtige Amt, 30 Mai 1952, Tokyo, Bd 6662.*
- <sup>69</sup> *Rechtsabteilung Tokyo, Vermerk, 1 September 1956. AA. Bd 6662.*
- <sup>70</sup> *Botschaft Tokyo Ber. Nr. 515/52, 4 Oktober 1952, AA, Tokyo, Bd. 6662.*
- <sup>71</sup> *Dres. K. Vogt & R. Sonderhoff an Dr. H. Northe, 29 Oktober 1952. AA, Tokyo, Bd. 6662.* A careful explanation of the realities, with useful inclusions, is in a letter to the *Ostasiatischer Verein. An den Ostasiatischen Verein, 10 März 1952, AA, Tokyo, Bd. 6663.*
- <sup>72</sup> The frustration is clear in *Ostasiatischer Verein, Mitteilung Nr. 24/53, 31 März 1953. AA. Tokyo, Bd. 6663.*
- <sup>73</sup> *Bescheinigung, Dr. Jakob, Tokyo, 12 März, 1954, AA, Tokyo, Bd. 6662.*
- <sup>74</sup> An excellent description is in *Botschaft Tokyo Ber. Nr. 710/53 "Lage und Behandlung des deutschen Vermögens in Japan," 11 August 1953. AA, Tokyo, Bd. 6663.*
- <sup>75</sup> The files in AA, Tokyo, Bde. 6663,6665 are filled with their correspondence.
- <sup>76</sup> See Hans Dieter Kreikamp, *Deutsches Vermögen in den Vereinigten Staaten: Die Auseinandersetzung um seine Rückführung als Aspekt der deutsch-amerikanischen Beziehungen, 1952-1962* (Stuttgart: Deutsche Verlags Anstalt, 1979), especially 81-85.
- <sup>77</sup> *Botschaft Tokyo an Auswärtiges Amt. Ber, 1693/56: Politische Einstufung ehemaliger Japan-Deutschen 13. September 1956. AA Tokyo, Bd. 6664.* At the same time the Japanese demonstrated their resistance to returning any German business interests. *Botschaft Tokyo an Auswärtiges Amt Ber. Ches Vermögen in Japan...." 19. Oktober, 1956, AA, Tokyo, Bd. 6665.*
- <sup>78</sup> *Aufzeichnungen, Dr. Schmidt-Dornedden, Ref. 506, Auswärtiges Amt "Deutsches Vermögen in Japan...." 19. Oktober 1956. AA, Tokyo, Bd. 6665.*
- <sup>79</sup> *Aufzeichnung "Besprechung mit Vertretern der amerikanischen, britischen und französischen Botschaft über die Frage der Klassifizierung von Japan-Deutschen und beschlagnahmtes Vermögen in Japan." AA. Tokyo, Bd. 6664.*
- <sup>80</sup> *Botschaft Tokyo an Auswärtiges Amt Ber. Nr. 407/57. Betr. Deutsches Vermögen in Japan.; hier: Rehabilitierung der Japan-Deutschen, 19 März 1957. AA, Tokyo, Bd. 6664.*
- <sup>81</sup> *Botschaft Tokyo Ber. Nr. 1529/57 Betr. Deutsches Vermögen in Japan, 13 Dezember 1957. AA, Tokyo Bd. 6664.*
- <sup>82</sup> *Botschaft Tokyo an AA BR. Nr. 340/58 Betr. Deutsches Vermögen in Japan, 14 Februar 1958, AA, Tokyo, Bd. 6664.*
- <sup>83</sup> *Botschaft Tokyo an AA Ber. Nr. 620/58 Betr, Deutsches Vermögen in Japan, 10. April 1958. AA Tokyo Bd. 6664.*
- <sup>84</sup> Translation of Judgement, rendered 29 March, 1958. AA, Tokyo, Bd. 6664.
- <sup>85</sup> *Botschaft Tokyo an AA Ber. V, 980/58: Deutsches Vermögen in Japan...." 14 Juni 1958. AA, Tokyo, Bd. 6664.*
- <sup>86</sup> Cooper Blyth to Dr. Ernst Jung, June 27, 1960, AA, Tokyo, Bd. 6665.
- <sup>87</sup> As of April, 1952, the Japanese had paid 19,000,000 yen for repatriating the German nationals. They had invested 39,000,000 yen for the investigation, accounting, and reporting of German property. These accounts were incomplete. SCAP, *Vested Interests in Japan*, Part XII,5. As of April 1952 SCAP had transferred 355,265,877 yen to thirteen countries with another 344,734,123 yen scheduled for distribution from German assets. Ibid, Part X,3.

# Holocaust Movie *Shoah* Exposed as Propaganda

The French Jew Claude Lanzmann is regarded as one of the most vehement promoters of the established 'Holocaust' story. He is perhaps best known as the director of the movie *Shoa*, a 9½ hours' marathon of taped interviews of Lanzmann with individuals who claim to have witnessed a broad variety of cruelties during the National Socialist persecution of the Jews. Not only does the sheer quantity of material compiled by Lanzmann have a tremendous psychological effect on many uncritical viewers, but also the highly suggestive techniques used by Lanzmann, which gives many viewers the impression they saw iron-clad proof for the claims made that were actually not delivered. Proud of his deceptive art of persuasion, Lanzmann told the *New York Times*, how one of his movie's viewers went right into his mental trap: "There was one man who wrote to me after seeing the film saying it was the first time he had heard the cry of an infant inside the gas chamber. It was perhaps because his imagination had been put to work." (10/201985, Sect 2, p. H-1). In order to unmask Lanzmann's fraudulent methods, we present the analyses of three key witnesses that were interviewed by Lanzmann. After close examination, each one of them turns out to be untrustworthy, either due to their incredible claims or because the circumstances, Lanzmann's admissions, or his witness's later confession revealed that their interview was orchestrated.

## About the *Shoa*-Interview with the alleged Treblinka SS-Man Franz Suchomel

By Jean-Francois Beaulieu

SS-Unterscharführer Franz Suchomel is an important witness who is said to confirm the reality of mass gassings, in his case regarding the alleged extermination camp Treblinka. Claude Lanzmann, a French Jew and filmmaker, succeeded to get a 850,000\$ subvention from the Israeli government in 1977<sup>1</sup> to produce a holocaust 'documentary' whose aim was mainly to convince skeptics in a period where revisionism had started to be a concern for some people. Subsequently, additional funds were provided by the French government and private sources. The film was finished only in 1985, 8 years later.

In the movie's acknowledgment section, no word is uttered about the fact that it received massive funding from Israel. And what is even more revealing, no word is mentioned either that all the German witnesses that agreed to participate as witnesses in this movie received 3,000 DM, but had to agree not to reveal this fact for 30 years.<sup>2</sup> Thus, the German witnesses 'testified' for money.

The movie *Shoah* is terribly long (9½ hours), something that can partially explain its success. One of the key testimonies used today is that of Franz Suchomel, a former SS guard, born in 1903, who had already spent a few years in jail a decade before. Due to his health condition it is probable that Suchomel died somewhere in the early 80's.

Before discussing Suchomel's testimony in detail, I will briefly review the extermination charges for Treblinka and the reasons that make such a story improbable.

In brief, the story is that between summer 1942 and summer 1943, some 800,000 mainly Polish Jews were deported to the Treblinka camp and vanished without a

trace in the gas chambers over a period of 13 to 14 months. The bulk of them were allegedly killed prior to the spring of 1943 and buried in mass graves from August 1942 onward. In the spring of 1943, the corpses were excavated and burned on open fires in order to remove any trace of the crime, although gassing continued on a smaller scale. Treblinka was supposed to be a 'pure' extermination camp, which is why we wouldn't expect post-war testimonies. However, the story offered is that an uprising took place at the end of the camp's existence (August 1943), *i.e.*, when most of the corpses were already destroyed, and that about 50 regular inmates succeeded to escape, which enabled them later to testify about the crime the Germans had try to cover.<sup>3</sup>

Someone who reads the available Holocaust literature may think that the contradictions and inconsistencies are not exceeding the degree which one would expect from a witness whose memory unavoidably faded after so many years, but the actual

literature is just presenting a sanitized version. Mark Weber and Andrew Allen,<sup>4</sup> Arnulf Neumaier,<sup>5</sup> and in particular Carlo Mattogno and Jürgen Graf<sup>6</sup> have presented a much more exhaustive and balanced review of the early testimonies, which are in fact much more contradictory, inconsistent, and outright impossible than they are usually presented in the mainstream literature.

The technical absurdity of the claim that Diesel exhaust gases were used as a poison gas for mass murder in Treblinka was best explained and refuted by Friedrich Paul Berg<sup>7</sup> and Walter Lüftl.<sup>8</sup>

The already mentioned study by Arnulf Neumaier also exposes in detail the difficulties and absurdities associated with the cre-



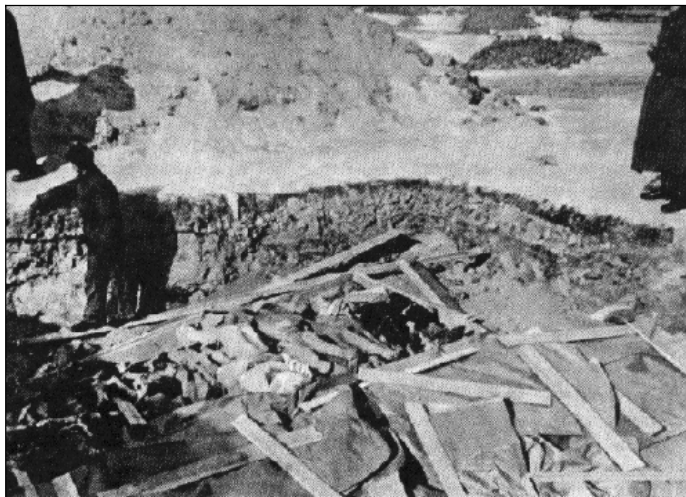
Claude Lanzmann



mation of bodies on open fires and the claimed size of the required mass graves according to the stories told by the ‘survivors.’ I will comment here only the weirdest aspect concerning Herbert Floss, this specialist who allegedly came from Germany to advise camp commander Stangl on the best way to burn corpses ‘economically.’ According to testimonies, the key for a successful incineration almost without or with very little fuel was allegedly to use the corpses of women, who were said to have burned all by themselves, to ignite the corpses of children, elderly people, and men stacked on top of those female corpses. Certified engineer A. Neumaier shows in detail the absurdity and technical impossibility of the mass cremation scenarios described by the witnesses. This fishy story was perhaps invented to circumvent the problem that no records exist at all which would prove the shipment of large quantities of fuel to Treblinka over the years 1942-1943. But I won’t go into details here.

It is well known that many atrocity stories circulated about Treblinka during the alleged event and that both the Polish and the Jewish resistance diffused actively those claims. We know also from the author Yuri Suhl,<sup>9</sup> that in “nearly each ghetto and each camp” there were Jewish cells of resistance, and that “thousands of Jewish fighters were hiding in the Polish forest to harass the Germans,” attacking munitions convoys, German soldiers, etc.<sup>10</sup> Today, some Jewish organizations accuse the Poles for their failure to attack Treblinka during the war, but even the Jewish partisans did neither consider it necessary to attack Treblinka’s weak garrison nor to dynamite the railroad system that was leading to it.

Neither the Polish resistance nor the Jewish resistance tried to take photos of the huge amount of corpses dragged out of the gas chambers or burned in the open during those months. It is claimed that the inner fence was kept covered with tree branches to conceal the activities within, but Treblinka was partly surrounded by trees. Climbing on one of these with a zoom lens was thus possible. The resistance knew that a photo of mass graves or burning pyres, with recognizable features like wire fences, buildings, and SS guards was priceless if they wanted to back their charge. They had one year to do it, but did not do anything. Even the photo album of former camp commander Kurt Franz is useless in this case.



*Alleged mass grave in Treblinka with several corpses: The only forensic “evidence” for the murder of 800,000 humans!<sup>11</sup>*

It is claimed that the communists discovered seven meters high heaps of human ashes and bones covering a large area when they reached the camp, but they didn’t consider it necessary to invite neutral representatives from the Red Cross to back their charge as the Germans did in Katyn. Some isolated human remains were indeed found and photographed, but we shouldn’t be surprised about this considering that hundreds or even thousands of Jews certainly perished during their transport.

Let me now go back to *Shoah*. In the sequence discussed here, we have this man, whether it is Suchomel or not, who gives an interview in his apartment. A map of Treblinka is displayed a few meters away from him and he often uses a stick to point at locations during his description. The interview is conducted in such a way that one could consider Suchomel as a nice guy, human, who was led into a nightmare that he never wished.

Lanzmann explained in the *New York Times*, October 20, 1985, page H-17, how he succeeded to film Suchomel: his female assistant was carrying a bag in which a camera was hidden. A little hole allowed the camera to record those sequences. Occasionally a mini van was brought to the front of the building, where technicians were watching on their monitor the images which are normally retransmitted in real time.

If one places oneself in the shoes of the assistant, it is obviously necessary to be careful since such an interview is a unique chance. Someone who is taking those pictures should certainly bear in the mind that each gesture is important and that the man must not suspect anything. There is no second chance. It must also be expected that the pictures recorded by a camera hidden in a bag will sometimes be blurred and out of focus, which would not always show what is important, since it is almost impossible to aim properly with such a camera. However, if one puts down the bag with the camera, the resulting picture is necessarily inflexible, always showing the same focus.<sup>12</sup>

And indeed: The quality of these sequences is extremely poor, although one can recognize roughly a face in spite of the blurred aspect. In contrast to that, Schalling’s figure is pretty clear when he is interviewed under similar conditions later in the movie (Schalling is another former National Socialist interviewed by Lanzmann, although he is not supposed to have been involved in Treblinka.<sup>13</sup>)

At the beginning of the interview, Suchomel is asking not to reveal his name, so he is not supposed to be aware that a camera is used. However, already the subsequent exchange of words is strange:<sup>14</sup>

*“Lanzmann (interviewer): Are we ready?”*

*Suchomel: Yes. We can begin.”*

If Lanzmann wanted to create the impression that his interview with Suchomel was *not* being taped, why then such a strange question at the very beginning of the interview? Ready for what? Formless chats do not have an official beginning! Since I must assume that most readers have not seen the movie, I will analyze in more detail what happened during this interview. For those who want to check it out, since literal statements are less strong than real images: Suchomel’s interview is located on the second cassette of the *Shoah* series.

During an important portion of the interview, the camera is at the same level as Lanzmann's shoulders. We see it when Lanzmann raise his hand with a cigarette very close to the lens. However, the image is not even shaking lightly during the interview, as one would expect if a person is holding the bag. That the bag is moved around at least once in a while is evident because this interview consists of different camera focuses. At one point, we have a closer picture, where the man (Suchomel?) is looking directly into the camera, fixating it during a long period of time while talking. The question is, of course: why does he look at a totally unimportant bag?

Several times the man who is filmed will take his stick to describe a location on the map. At this moment we have a very close-up view of the map, from 30 or 40 centimeters, and when the camera turns back to the man's face, we know that this was not due to a later enlargement. But before that, when the tip of the stick moves up and down or in diagonal to show some elements on the map, the camera follows carefully the movement from a very short distance to catch the wand. Vertically, horizontally, in diagonal. This happens about 12 minutes after the beginning of the interview and lasts about 12 or 13 seconds. Following the movement of the wand from such a distance to

catch a minor detail is evidently useless and more than risky and revealing for somebody who is trying to hide a camera in a bag. But such a scene happens several times during the interview, each time he uses his stick, the camera is getting very close to the map, following each movement of the stick, even in diagonal. Then it turns back to his face when he goes back to his chair. But it misses the head a little bit for 1 or 2 seconds: a bit too high, too much to the left, from a distance of a few meters. But the camera turns immediately to catch most of his face correctly for the rest of the interview, and this several times. I imagine that some people have a third eye.

The first time that I saw Suchomel's interview I was struck by this, thus I replayed the same scenes perhaps two dozen times, each time with a bag near me. Each time I tried to imagine how I should handle the bag without raising Suchomel's suspicion and how the man in front of me could be blind enough not to discover that something very odd was happening. After 20 or 25 times perhaps I gave up.

Claude Lanzmann seems to be dishonest. Either regarding his claim that the interview was taped with a camera hidden in the bag of his assistant and without the knowledge of the interviewed man, or regarding his claim that the interviewed man was Suchomel—or regarding both claims.

## Peculiarities

**Suchomel's statement has two claims in particular which render the entire testimony very suspicious:**

**1. In one scene he reports—in contrast to all other witnesses—that the Germans had to remove the corpses in Treblinka all by themselves:<sup>15</sup>**

**“No one wanted to clean it out [the rotting heaps of corpses]. The Jews preferred to be shot rather than work there. [...] So Wirth went there himself with a few Germans and had long belts rigged up that were wrapped around the dead torsos to pull them. [...] they themselves helped with the cleanup. Lanzmann: Which Germans did that? Suchomel: Some of our guards who were assigned up there. Lanzmann: The Germans themselves? Suchomel: They had to. Lanzmann: They were in command! Suchomel: They were in command, but they were also commanded. Lanzmann: I think the Jews did it. Suchomel: In that case, the Germans had to lend a hand.”**

**2. And of course, in Suchomel's account as well, those victims led to the smoking and stinking burning pits, where an uninterrupted shooting is going on, noticed nothing unless they actually stood at the very edge of the burning pits; and in Suchomel's story as well, the corpses burned almost without any fuel:<sup>16</sup>**

**“Suchomel: [...] Until they reached the end, they saw nothing. Then they'd see the dead in the pit. They were forced to strip, to sit on a sandbank, and were killed with a shot in the neck. They fell into the pit. There was always a fire in the pit. With rubbish, paper and gasoline, people burn very well.”**

## Notes

- <sup>1</sup> *The Jewish Journal*, New York, June 27, 1986, p. 3, and the *Jewish Telegraph Agency*, June 20, 1986.
- <sup>2</sup> “Ce que je n'ai pas dit dans *Shoah*,” *VSD*, interview by Jean-Pierre Chabrol, July 9, 1987, especially p. 11; this information was first discovered and published by Robert Faurisson, *Journal of Historical Review*, 8(1) (1988), pp. 85-92, here p. 87.
- First published in German in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 4(2) (2000), pp. 168f.
- <sup>3</sup> The most frequently quoted mainstream books on Treblinka are probably: Yitzhak Arad, *Belzec, Sobibor, Treblinka. The Operation Reinhard Death Camps*, Indiana University Press, Bloomington and Indianapolis 1987; Alexander Donat (ed.), *The Death Camp Treblinka*, Holocaust Library, New York 1979.
- <sup>4</sup> Weber, Mark, Andrew Allen, “Treblinka”, in: *Journal of Historical Review*, 12(2) (1992), pp. 133-158.
- <sup>5</sup> “The Treblinka Holocaust”, in: Ernst Gauss (ed.), *Dissecting the Holocaust, The Growing Critique of „Truth” and „Memory”*, Theses & Dissertation Press, Capshaw, AL, 2000, S. 467-495.
- <sup>6</sup> *Treblinka. Vernichtungslager oder Durchgangslager?*, Castle Hill Publishers, Hastings 2002.
- <sup>7</sup> Friedrich P. Berg, “The Diesel Gas Chambers: Ideal for Torture – Absurd for Murder”, in *op. cit.* (note 5), pp. 435-465.
- <sup>8</sup> W. Lüftl, “Sollen Lügen künftig Pflicht sein?”, *Deutschland in Geschichte und Gegenwart* 41(1) (1993), pp. 13f. At the time this paper was written, Walter Lüftl was President of the Austrian Association of Civil Engineers.
- <sup>9</sup> Yuri Suhl, *The story of the Jewish resistance in Nazi Europe, Anthology on Armed Jewish Resistance (1939-1945)*, Vol. 4, 1984, pp. 73ff.
- <sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 75, and Vol. 2, p. 48 and 609.
- <sup>11</sup> From Yitzhak Arad (ed.), *The Pictorial History of the Holocaust*, Macmillan, New York 1990, p. 299, [www.fmv.ulg.ac.be/schmitz/Holocaust/trebln01.html](http://www.fmv.ulg.ac.be/schmitz/Holocaust/trebln01.html).
- <sup>12</sup> With today's technology, almost anything could be remote controlled, but back in the late 70s and early 80s, cameras and remote controls were rather big and clumsy and not easily available!
- <sup>13</sup> Schalling testified about the alleged use of the so-called gas wagons close to the camp Chelmo.
- <sup>14</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 52.
- <sup>15</sup> This was taken from the book Claude Lanzmann, *Shoah: An Oral History of the Holocaust*, Pantheon Books, New York 1985 pp. 56f.
- <sup>16</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 63.

# Rudolf Vrba exposes himself as a liar

By Ernst Bruun

In his book, *Pietà*,<sup>1</sup> Professor Georg Klein, Stockholm,<sup>2</sup> relates a conversation he had with Rudolf Vrba in Vancouver in 1987. Professor Vrba is notorious for being the only one of the hundreds of Auschwitz escapees<sup>3</sup> who wrote a famous report<sup>4</sup> in 1944 and later also a book about the camp.<sup>5</sup> When Klein met Vrba in 1987, they naturally talked also about the film *Shoah*, which Claude Lanzmann had made a few years before.<sup>6</sup> Vrba was one of the survivors interviewed by Lanzmann in his film. During the first Zündel trial in Toronto in 1985, Vrba admitted that when he wrote his book he had “used my licence of poet”.<sup>7</sup> In the book, however, the same Vrba claims that his report on the camp and the figures concerning Jews gassed was the truth and a very accurate account.



Rudolf Vrba before the war<sup>8</sup>

one of those who hauled out dead bodies from the railway trucks at Auschwitz main station, to be carried by lorries to the crematoria two kilometers away (in Birkenau). And he added that all of the first 1,765,000 Jews killed landed on this old platform, two kilometers away from the crematoria. Later, he stated, a new platform was built to receive the one million Hungarian Jews to be “blitzvernichtet.” (lighting-fast exterminated). Anyone who tried to tell the arrivers of the gassing was slain or shot dead.

Beside the gassing (the ‘main product’), Auschwitz also yielded some other products. Vrba said that Krupp and Siemens had plants there. (He did not mention IG Farben.) Aryan prisoners had a certain influence and attained a systematic improvement of the conditions. But the lower

The now published report that he wrote after his escape from Auschwitz is dated “Bari, 20. April 1945,” and titled „Zeugenaussagen von zwei Flüchtlingen aus den Auschwitz-Birkenau-Vernichtungslagern in Oswiecim, Polen” (Witness testimony of two escapees from the extermination camps Auschwitz-Birkenau in Oswiecim, Poland). It is said to be a German translation from a Hungarian original. At the end of the report by Vrba and his comrade there is a table with the heading:

*„A conservative estimate [by the two refugees] about the number of Jews who were exterminated in Birkenau between April 42 and April—according to their nationality.”*

The supposedly conservative sum of all the Jews killed is given as “ca. 1,765,000.” It should be kept in mind that this figure does not include the hundreds of thousands of Jews deported from Hungary after April, 1944. No serious researcher has been able to find evidence for a number of victims higher than a million—including non-Jews and the group of Hungarian Jews. The number of French Jews killed in Auschwitz given by Vrba is 150,000—to be compared with the 75,000 of the detailed name lists of Jews deported from France to all the camps until August 1944 (including survivors).<sup>9</sup>

In the film interview Vrba says that between August 1942 and April 1944, he saw about 200 trains arriving to the camp—which would mean about 200,000 deportees—and that he also knew that within two hours 90% of these people would have been gassed. He claims to have been

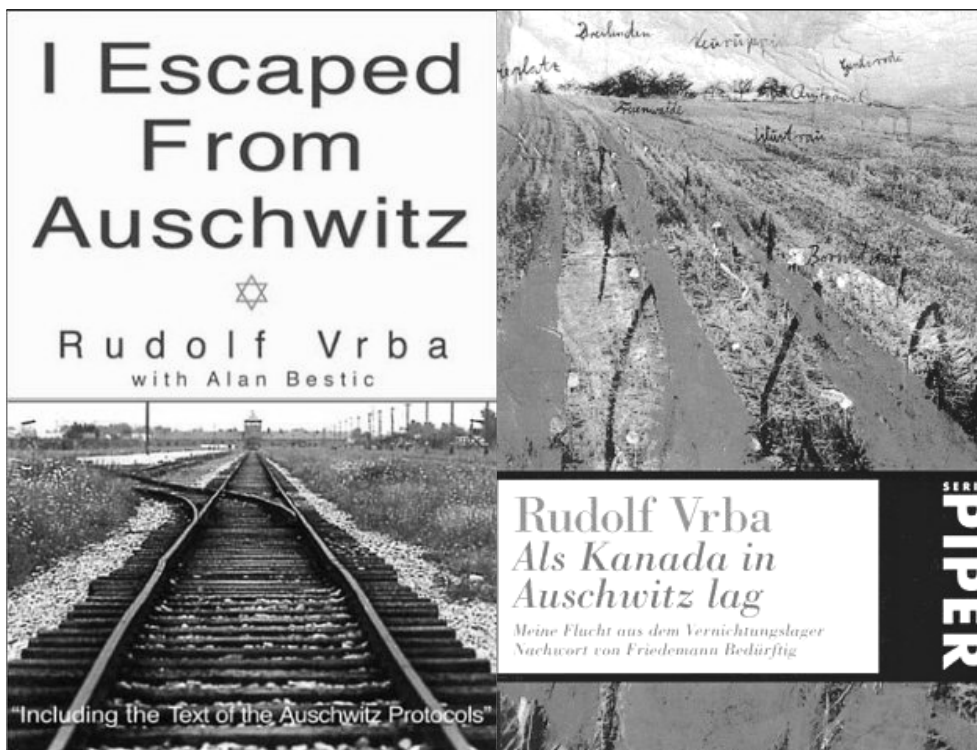
the death rate, the more prisoners were gassed instead in order to keep manpower constant.

Later in the film, Vrba mentions the Jewish families from Theresienstadt who were allowed to keep their hair and their luggage. They were marked “SB [for German *Sonderbehandlung* = special treatment] with a six month quarantine.” He knew that “special treatment” equaled “gassing,” but why the half year respite? The reason for this was something this almost omniscient man did not know. When the six months were at an end, a rumor was spread that the Theresienstadt group was to be sent to the Heydebreck camp. Vrba knew better, of course, and tried to persuade a certain Freddy Hirsch to lead a revolt. Hirsch felt that he was responsible for the welfare of the children and refused to resort to violence. He committed suicide instead. The lorries with the SB-Jews did not turn towards Heydebreck, so Vrba concludes that the whole group was gassed. Since nobody wanted to revolt, Vrba decided to escape, which he did on April 7, 1944. All this he tells us in the film *Shoah*.



Vrba in 2000: The smile of a liar

**Dr. Rudolf Vrba**<sup>10</sup>  
Professor Emeritus  
Department of Pharmacology & Therapeutics  
Faculty of Medicine, University of British Columbia  
2176 Health Sciences Mall  
Vancouver, British Columbia  
Canada V6T 1Z3  
Tel: (604) 822-3852  
Fax: (604) 822-6012  
E-mail: vrba@interchange.ubc.ca



Propaganda Lies

And Vrba's camp experiences naturally became the topic when he met another Holocaust survivor. Klein asked Vrba if his colleagues knew what he had experienced during the War. To begin with, Vrba did not answer the question. Later, however, he mentioned, sardonically smiling, that one of his colleagues had been upset when he unexpectedly had seen Vrba in Lanzmann's film. The colleague had wondered if everything that Vrba said in the film was really true, to which Vrba answered:

*"I do not know. I was just an actor and I recited my text."*

Which was commented by his colleague as follows:

*"Most extraordinary! I did not know that you were an actor. Seeing that, why was it said that the film was made without actors?"*

Hearing this revelation, Klein turned speechless and refrained from asking any more questions. In his book he says

that he will never forget Vrba's sardonic smile. Any informed reader certainly knows that much of what Vrba says in *Shoah* is at variance with well established facts. Vrba is simply a reckless liar, to put it in plain language. But was he perhaps for once telling the truth when he said "I was just an actor and I recited my text"? That would certainly explain his sardonic smile that made such an impression on his credulous colleague.<sup>11</sup>

#### Notes

First published in German in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(4) (2003), pp. 447f.

Stockholm 1989, p. 141.

<sup>2</sup> G. Klein is a Jew who was born in Hungary from where he emigrated to Sweden in 1947. There he studied medicine and became active in cancer research in subsequent years. He is now retired.

<sup>3</sup> Krystof Duni-Wasowicz, *Resistance in the Nazi concentration camps 1933-1945*, Warsaw 1982, p. 213.

<sup>4</sup> Together with Alfred Wetzler; cf. Heiner Lichtenstein, *Warum Auschwitz nicht bombardiert wurde*, Cologne 1980, pp. 133-181.

<sup>5</sup> Rudolf Vrba, *I Cannot Forgive*, London 1963.

<sup>6</sup> Claude Lanzmann, *Shoah*, Paris 1985.

<sup>7</sup> Cf. protocol, Queen versus Zündel, Toronto, Ontario, Canada, starting Jan. 7, 1985, pp. 1244-1643, especially pp. 1447f. and 1636; see online [www.vho.org/aaargh/engl/vrba1.html](http://www.vho.org/aaargh/engl/vrba1.html)

<sup>8</sup> [www.fiba.dircon.co.uk/fibaNEW-2000/text/fiba\\_00\\_kasztner.htm](http://www.fiba.dircon.co.uk/fibaNEW-2000/text/fiba_00_kasztner.htm)

<sup>9</sup> Cf. C.O. Nordling, "Was geschah den 75.000 aus Frankreich deportierten Juden?", *VfGG* 1(4) (1997), pp. 248-251.

<sup>10</sup> <http://www.pharmacology.ubc.ca/vrba/RudolfVrba.html>

<sup>11</sup> Hans Rudolf von der Heide, who translated this article into German, remarked: During the week of September 22, 2002, I saw a large poster in the pedestrian zone of Bad Kissingen (Bavaria) indicating that the cultural office of the City of Bad Kissingen would be featuring Lanzmann's movie *Shoah*. In emphasized fonts, the following could be read on this poster: "Lanzmann: 'I know very well that all witnesses are liars. [...] However, I succeeded to recall into memory of the people the almost forgotten Shoa. [...] Because so far, only a bit more than two percent of the population have watched my movie.'"

## Abraham Bomba, Barber of Treblinka

By Bradley R. Smith

I have seen the complete nine and one half hour documentary, *Shoah*, which purports to be "An Oral History of the Holocaust." It was produced, directed, narrated and is now being promoted by Claude Lanzmann. From the newspapers I gather that Lanzmann is an assimilated French Jew who speaks neither Hebrew nor Yiddish. Born in 1925 in Paris, he is presently 78 years old. He worked as a journalist for many years in association with Jean Paul Sartre and the prestigious French philosophical magazine *Les Temps Modernes* until 1970, when

he turned his attention to making movies. The reputation he gained, first of all due to the movie *Shoah*, enabled him later to become a professor for documentary films.

That is, Claude Lanzmann worked for twenty-five years in the eye of the intellectual storms that swept across France following the end of World War II. As a journalist he certainly learned during those twenty-five years how to conduct professional interviews. He certainly learned, through his associations with Sartre, de Beauvoir, Camus, and those who criticized the

great triad, how to pursue a train of thought, considering the high-powered company he kept. It is a real eye-opener then to watch Lanzmann reveal his intellectual corruption in scene after scene of this shoddy movie, which he claims took ten years to complete.<sup>1</sup>

My favorite interview in *Shoah* is the one with Abraham Bomba, the Barber of Treblinka. Lanzmann has given this scene the title “crying out with truth”. I am not alone in my fondness for Bomba either. Many critics have commented on his performance. They gave him rave reviews. George Will of ABC Television, for example, wrote in the *Washington Post* that Bomba’s narrative was “the most stunning episode in this shattering film.” Some alleged eyewitnesses to gas chamber horrors recount stories that are so lacking in credibility that they can be dismissed out of hand. Others repeat stories that cannot easily be shown to be false but reveal the characters of the talebearers to be so sniveling and shameless that one feels compromised by even listening to them. Bomba is an important character in the Holocaust-survivor-eyewitness scenario in that he embodies much of both of these characteristics.

The lack of credibility starts already with the way this entire scene was filmed. It looks like Bomba is in his barber shop cutting the hair of a customer while imitating the gestures he used to make 40 years earlier when cutting the hair of people who allegedly were about to die in a ‘gas chamber.’ However, as R. Faurisson has shown, this entire scene was staged. During the interview in Israel, Bomba was already retired and had given up his barbershop in New York. Lanzmann simply rented a shop in Israel and had Bomba pretend it was his.<sup>2</sup>

If one follows Bomba’s story, he had been interned in Treblinka about four weeks when the Germans announced that they wanted some barbers for a special detail. Bomba volunteered, of course, then helped the SS identify 16 other Jewish barbers among the internees. They were all taken to the second part of the camp where the alleged gas chambers were. They were led inside the gas chambers where a Kapo<sup>3</sup> (almost certainly a Jew) explained that the 17 barbers were to shear the hair from the women who would arrive to be gassed.

Here, Lanzmann asked Bomba about the greatest murder weapon of all time, the German homicidal ‘poison gas chamber’:<sup>4</sup>

Lanzmann: “How did it look, the gas chamber?”

Bomba: “It was not a big room, around twelve feet by twelve feet.”

And there you have it. Claude Lanzmann is finished with his in-depth investigation of how the Treblinka gas chamber looked. It takes all kinds. If I had been in Lanzmann’s shoes I could have thought of a few more questions to ask about ‘how it looked.’ Particularly if I had some feelings about the stories that maybe a million of my kinsmen had been exterminated in it. Maybe I would have wanted to know what

*Abraham Bomba, the barber of Treblinka, here during his interview for Claude Lanzmann’s movie Shoah in Tel Aviv (VHS Video).*



Bomba could tell me about what material the walls of the gas chamber were made of, what the roof was made of. How would Bomba describe the ventilation system? Where and how, exactly, did the ‘gas’ enter the room? Maybe Bomba would have remembered if the room had been illuminated or not. If it had been, how? What were the doors made of? How did they seal them so that the ‘gas’ could not escape? As historians have not bothered to ask these simple questions, Lanzmann could have done their work for them and helped uncover one of the great mysteries of the 20th century—what the fabled ‘Nazi gas chambers’ really looked like.

As to whether Bomba is being honest about having seen a gas chamber at Treblinka, consider Rachel Auerbach’s description of that gas chamber in her *The Death Camp Treblinka*.<sup>5</sup> Auerbach is given a place of honor in this, the most comprehensive book published on the camp. As she was (she died in 1976) a permanent research staff member of the Yad Vashem Holocaust Memorial museum in Jerusalem, her description of the gas chamber should not be dismissed out of hand:

*“The floor of the gas chamber was sloping and slippery. The first ones in would slip and fall, never to rise again. Those who followed would topple over them [...] About 25 to 45 minutes later [after the ‘gassing’ began, that is], the chutes on the other side could be opened and the corpses tumbled out.”*

And if that is not convincing, then consider what the 1965 verdict of the German trial against the former camp commander Kurt Franz summarized about these gas chambers after many years of thorough criminal investigation, during which all available witness testimony had been collected and evaluated.<sup>6</sup>

*“The solidly built edifice, made of bricks and erected on a concrete foundation, contained 3 gas chambers of an area of some 4 × 4 m (13 × 13 ft) and a height of 2.6 m, as well as a machine room for the Diesel engine and the electric generator of the camp. [...] Opposite to them [the entrance doors], every gas chamber had a folding door made of thick wooden planks. These were some 2.50 m wide and some 1.80 high and when opened could be folded upward like modern garage doors. They ended at a ramp 0.7 m above ground, which ran around the entire building. The floor of the gas chambers was tiled and inclined towards the ramp.”*

This was similar to a report compiled by Zdzisław Łukaszkiwicz on behalf of a Soviet investigative commission, based upon several witness statements:<sup>7</sup>

*“A large shutter was in the exterior wall of the chamber, which could be opened upwardly and served to remove the corpses. The chambers was tiled, the floor inclined to the outside, which facilitated the removal of the corpses.”*

It would seem that while he was being interviewed for *Shoah* Mr. Bomba forgot about how slippery the floor is supposed to

have been in his little gas chamber. It seems he forgot how it slanted steeply in the direction of the chutes/folding doors. As a matter of fact, Mr. Bomba forgot to mention the chutes or large folding doors. If Lanzmann had read the literature even superficially, he would have been aware that Bomba was leaving a few things out of his story. As Lanzmann claims he worked for ten years on *Shoah*, I'm going to guess that Lanzmann is aware of the three description of the Treblinka 'gas chamber' quoted here, which are the main pillars on which the story rests.

In any event, once Lanzmann's curiosity was satisfied about how the gas chamber looked (not big), he wanted to know what happened next.

Lanzmann: "Can you describe precisely?"

Bomba: "Describe precisely... We were waiting there... inside the gas chamber... until the transport came in. Women with children pushed into that place... They were undressed, naked, without clothes, without anything else—completely naked—because they come from the undressing barrack... where they had undressed themselves."

Lanzmann: "What did you feel the first time you saw all those naked women?" [That kind of stuff is called Holocaust Pornography, B.S.]

Bomba: "I felt that accordingly I got to do what they [Germans] told me, to cut their hair."

There you have in a nutshell how eyewitnesses to the gas chamber atrocities typically describe their behavior. They did whatever the Germans or anyone else requested of them. When they received a request to help prepare their kinsmen—and even their own families as well as we shall soon see—to be exterminated, or genocided or whatever, these fellows say they hopped right to it. I don't believe them, but that's the persona that they have chosen to project to the world at large. In the neighborhood where I grew up men who behaved like Bomba claims he behaved would have been spit on. In the upside-down world of Holocaust survivorhood, however, the Abraham Bombas are seen as martyrs and even heroes. It's a peculiar psychological slant on manly behavior, for hasn't Bomba according to his own story become a working partner in the alleged genocide of his people?

Lanzmann expresses a little more curiosity about how Bomba cut his victims hair than he did about how the gas chamber looked. He asked if Bomba had shaved them, if he had used scissors, and if there had not been mirrors available inside the gas chamber. Bomba said that he did not shave the women, and that the Germans had not provided the barbers with mirrors.

Lanzmann: "There were no mirrors?"

Bomba: "No, there were no mirrors. There were just benches—not chairs, just benches."

There's an interesting note. According to Bomba the Germans had provided benches inside the little gas chamber for the ladies and their children to sit on. We're not told how many benches. There could have been 17 individual ones, but more likely Bomba would have said—if Lanzmann had thought to ask him—that there were maybe four or five, half a dozen perhaps. Two or more ladies with their kids could have sat on each bench. No matter how you slice it, traffic is picking up. Seventeen barbers, the benches for 17, and now the 17 women and their kids are all there together inside the gas chamber, which is

about the size of a small bedroom in the rear of an ordinary tract house—and the hair is flying. And all this on a slippery floor with a steep slope toward these folding doors or chutes. Of course, none of the benches start sliding, or did they? But we are not finished yet:

Lanzmann: "You said there were about sixteen [... Lanzmann has forgotten that Bomba makes the seventeenth...] barbers? You cut the hair of how many women in one batch?"

Bomba: "In one day there was about, I would say, going into that place between sixty and seventy women in the same room at one time."

You might think that Claude Lanzmann is about to express some doubt about how Bomba is blocking out this scene for him: 17 barbers, benches, and sixty to seventy naked women in the 160-square-foot room. Lanzmann isn't going to express doubt, however, about anything told to him by a survivor. Lanzmann is a Holocaust fundamentalist. The role of the fundamentalist in any cult is to accept absolutely the testimony of those who claim to have been eyewitnesses to the original sacred event. Once the original story is made to fly, the most elegant minds can elaborate on it endlessly in good faith.

Lanzmann urged Bomba to say something more about how he felt as he went about preparing the women and their children to be exterminated. Something more perhaps than the homely: "I felt that accordingly I got to do what they told me, to cut their hair."

Bomba: "I tell you something. To have a feeling about that... It was very hard to feel anything... your feelings disappeared, you were dead. You had no feeling at all."

This is a universal response by eyewitnesses to the alleged gas chamber murders. The claim Bomba makes that his feelings were "dead," that he had "no feeling at all," resembles the 'temporary insanity' claim murderers use to diminish their responsibility for their behavior in the eye of the State. The ordinary murderer claims that his mental process was so diminished at the time he murdered that he was not responsible for his act. The eyewitness to the alleged gas chamber murders claims that his sensibilities were so diminished while he worked as a link in the murder process that he was not responsible for his behavior. The murderer was out of his 'mind,' while gas chamber eyewitnesses ran out of 'feeling.' When Bomba describes himself as being inwardly "dead," he is saying that he cannot be judged guilty of being an accomplice to mass murder. He can accuse Germans of whatever he likes—participate in the crimes he accuses them of—yet remain forever innocent while Germans remain forever guilty. It's a nice set-up.

In the film Bomba goes on to illustrate how dead he was inwardly while working for the SS at Treblinka. He describes how he shared the hair from women he knew personally from his hometown, from his own street: "[...] and some of them were my close friends." They would ask Abe Bomba: "What's going to happen to us?" But Abe would hold his tongue. With Abe it was just snip, snip, snip. "What could you tell them?," he asks Lanzmann. "What could you tell?"

Snip, snip, snip.

Now Bomba relates to Lanzmann the story that reviewers have remarked on more than any other in *Shoah*:<sup>8</sup>

Bomba: *"A friend of mine worked as a barber—he was good barber in my hometown—when his wife and his sister came into the gas chamber... I can't. It's too horrible. Please."*

Lanzmann: *"We have to do it. You know it."*

Bomba: [holding back tears] *"I won't be able to do it."*

Lanzmann: [very quietly] *"You have to do it. I know it's very hard. I know and I apologize."*

Bomba: [struggling] *"Don't make me go on, please."*

Lanzmann: *"Please. We must go on."*

Bomba: [unable to control tears, leaving the frame for a moment, returning] *"I told you it's going to be very hard. They were taking that [hair] in bags and transporting it to Germany."*

Lanzmann: *"Okay, go ahead. What was his answer when his wife and sister came?"*

Bomba: *"They tried to talk to him and the husband of his sister. They could not tell him this was the last time they stay alive, because behind them was the German Nazis, SS, and they knew that if they said a word, not only the wife and the woman, who were dead already, but also they would share the same thing with them. In a way, they tried to do the best for them, with a second longer, a minute longer, just to hug them and kiss them, because they knew they would never see them again."*

To tell the truth, this is my kind of story, simple and lurid. There is also some new information in it. In addition to the 60 to 70 women and their kids, and the barbers and the benches, there were also "SS men" inside the 12ft × 12ft gas chamber. We don't know how many, but as Bomba speaks in the plural he must mean that there were at least two. If Lanzmann had thought to ask him about it, Bomba might have said that there were 10 or 15 SS men in there. And then there is the welcome news that the SS would allow the Barbers to hug and kiss certain of the naked women inside the gas chamber. Bomba speaks only of married couples. Lanzmann might have asked perhaps how the SS were able to identify which of the naked women were married to which of the barbers. It must be doubtful that the naked women entered the gas chamber carrying their marriage certificates. Maybe the barbers had previously petitioned the SS to keep their own copies of their marriage certificates on the chance that just such a reunion as Bomba claims he witnessed would take place. On the other hand, maybe the SS men took the barber's word for who was married and who wasn't. If they did, it would betray a generosity of spirit that is not usually ascribed to the SS by Jewish survivors.

Imagine trying to visualize this scene from the wife's point of view. Try imagining what might have gone through her mind at the moment she spied her husband. The hope that must have jumped in her heart. Then what her thoughts were as her hus-

band sheared off her hair without speaking to her. Imagine what she must have felt as he held her silently for a minute or so, his cheek pressed lovingly against her scalp, then turned with scissors and comb to the next patient lady waiting her turn. Did his wife run her fingers over her skull and think:

*"Ah, I've always known what kind of man you are. A schmuck when I married you and a schmuck today."*

There are a number of observations that can be made about my presentation of Lanzmann's presentation of Bomba's testimony. It could be observed that while Rachel Auerbach's research suggests that Bomba is inventing his gas chamber story out of whole cloth, it can still be claimed that we are left with Auerbach's scholarly outline of the alleged Treblinka gas chambers. Therefore, while Bomba's investigations may destroy his own credibility as a witness, the Treblinka gas chamber story itself remains as it was, a documented story of a weapon used to annihilate about a million Jews. To give you a

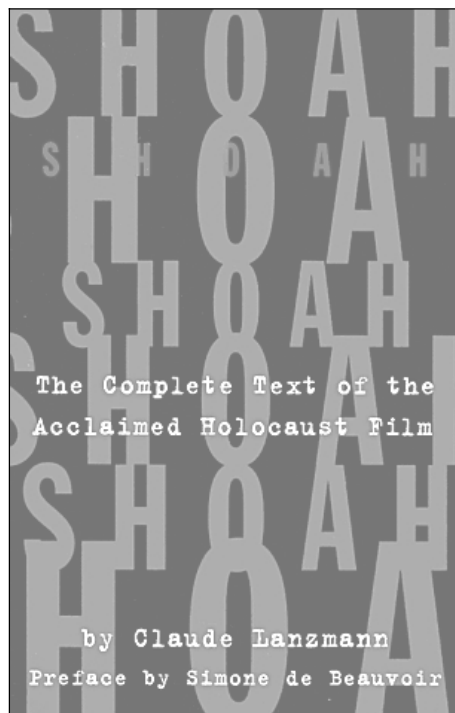
quick fix on Ms. Auerbach's scholarly instincts and her even-handed objectivity, I will quote from her famous essay "In the Fields of Treblinka":

As I read such passages in Rachel Auerbach's essay, I take the trouble to remind myself that after the war she was "one of the first active members of the Jewish Historical Committee in Poland;" that after emigrating to Israel she became a "permanent research staff member of the Yad Vashem Holocaust Memorial Museum," and that this essay "In the Fields of Treblinka" was thought worthy of reprinting as recently as 1979 by The Holocaust Library, which was found and is managed by survivors themselves and is distributed by a major Jewish publishing house, Shoken Books:<sup>9</sup>

*"Polish people still talk about the way soap was manufactured from the bodies of Jews. 'Sent away for soap!' was the expression the Poles would use when they spoke of transports to*

*Treblinka, Belzec, and Sobibor. The discovery of Professor Spanner's soap factory in Langfuhr near Danzig proved that their suspicious had been well founded. Witnesses tell us that when the corpses were burned on pyres, pans would be placed beneath the racks to catch the fat as it ran off, but this has not been confirmed. But even if the Germans in Treblinka or at any of the other death factories failed to do this, and allowed so many tons of precious fat to go to waste, it could only have been an oversight on their part. They were fully capable of doing things like that. It was entirely in keeping with their proclivities. Only the newness of this branch of manufacturing was to blame for this omission. If the Germans ever would make another drive across Europe, they would not make this mistake again."*

Professors Spanner's 'soap factory' in Langfuhr near Danzig was apparently an invention of active members of self-proclaimed Jewish historical committees, based upon the entre-



preneurial reports of professional slanderers, and has since been kept alive by research staffs at Jewish Holocaust memorials around the world. A photograph of this ‘factory,’ with no documentation, appears in the scholarly *Encyclopedia Judacia*, published in Israel and shelved in many of the larger libraries across the United States.

Rachel Auerbach surprises her readers even with trailblazing scientific findings:<sup>10</sup>

*“In Treblinka, as in other places, significant advances were made in the science of annihilation, such as the highly original discovery that the bodies of women burned better than those of men.*

*‘Men won’t burn without women.’ [...]*

*For this reason, the bodies of women were used to kindle, or, more accurately put, to build the fires among the piles of corpses, much as coals are utilized to get coke to burn... Blood, too, was found to be first-class combustion material.”*

Mrs. Auerbach herself gives us a clue what some of her tales are worth, though. On page 48 of the quoted book, she tells us how Heinrich Himmler, while allegedly visiting Treblinka in February 1943, had the honor and pleasure to witness the gassing of several nude women, which is just another example of Holo-pornography. In a rare flare-up of honesty, Auerbach writes:

*“As the Italian saying goes: ‘Se non è vero, è ben trovato.’ (Even if it’s not true, it’s well invented.)”*

Forensic research on the territory of the former Treblinka camp, conducted by a Polish commission just prior to the Nuremberg trials, concluded that no traces of mass graves could be found in the camp itself or its immediate vicinity, but that several mass graves with a maximum of several thousand victims of, in most cases, non-violent deaths were located some 500 m south of the camp.<sup>11</sup> Interestingly enough, R. Auerbach participated at one of these investigations, but instead of correcting her views, she simply hid these very important revelations.

Polish Jews such as Rachel Auerbach witnessed Germans destroying their culture. They witnessed Germans tearing apart Jewish families during the gigantic, brutal resettlement programs. Those Jews can be forgiven their credulity and even some of their hatred, expressed in their eagerness to believe every accusation made against Germans, no matter how corrupt. Americans, however, who suffered nothing of what European Jews suffered at the hands of Germans, have little right to indulge themselves with it.

Which brings me to Mr. George Will, *Washington Post* columnist and *ABC Television* commentator. I am willing to accept Mr. Will’s own assessment of himself. He is a brilliant and principled man. I disagree with some of his viewpoints, particularly with his obsessive-compulsive attachment to the state of Israel, but I can’t show that attachment to be morally wrong. As luck would have it, Mr. Will has written a column about *Shoah* where he makes a remarkable observation.<sup>12</sup>

*“The most stunning episode in this shattering film lasts about five minutes and involves ‘only’ the talk of a barber now in Israel. While he clips the hair of a customer he talks, never needing to raise his voice to be heard over the small sounds of a familiar ambiance. He describes his duties in*

*Treblinka, cutting hair from naked women on the threshold of the gas chamber, and the day a fellow barber saw his wife and sister enter the room.”*

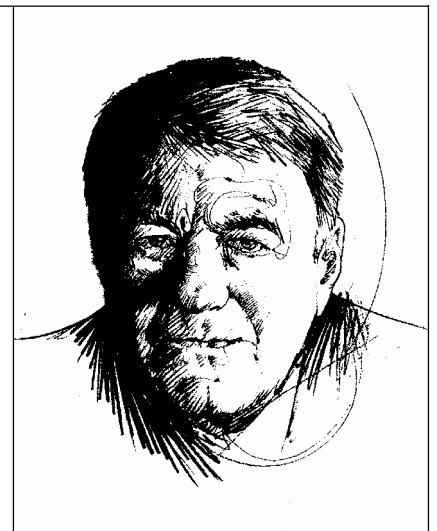
Remarkable, eh? Cutting hair from naked women on the ‘threshold’ of the gas chamber. Do you see it? The threshold is the place directly below the door to a room. A doorsill perhaps. An *entrance* or a *doorway*. According to Mr. Webster it is a “place or point of beginning.” Taking Mr. Will’s own obvious assessment of himself, he is the proud possessor of a formidably organized intellect. A man who always distinguishes carefully between similar but different points of fact. While doing so enrages those lesser men who cannot do it themselves, it gives Mr. Will a lot of pleasure, which is why he does it so regularly. That being so, what am I to make of the fact that Mr. Will has changed the wording of Mr. Bomba’s testimony?

Lanzmann: *“Excuse me. How did it happen when the women came into the gas chamber? Were you yourself already in the gas chamber?”*

Bomba: *“I said we were already in the gas chamber, waiting over there for the transport to come in. Inside the gas chamber—we were already in.”*

If Mr. Bomba swears that he was inside the gas chamber at that particular time, why does Mr. Will write that he barbed those naked women on the “threshold” of the gas chamber? Mr. Bomba can be seen on film saying that he was inside the gas chamber when he did it. In the text of the film published by Mr. Lanzmann, Mr. Bomba again insists he was inside the thing. What happened in Mr. Will’s brain as he wrote “threshold” rather than “inside” or “in”? Is it possible that Mr. Will found Mr. Bomba’s story ludicrous? He wouldn’t want to say so publicly, of course, as Mr. Will is one of our brightest and best Holocaust fundamentalists. Nevertheless, having the kind of relentlessly rational mind that he does, something at the bottom of it might not have bought Mr. Bomba’s story the way Mr. Will would have preferred to buy it. Maybe a single wire got crossed in the depths of Mr. Will’s brain, out of the millions that are twisted around in there. Maybe Mr. Will wanted to express some doubt about Mr Bomba’s story but could not bring himself to do it. He may have been in that peculiar place where writers sometimes find themselves—where they are smart enough to know that something needs to be said but haven’t got

*Claude Lanzmann, master of movie Holocaust propaganda and declared radical opponent of any historiography oriented on facts.*





enough character to go ahead and say it. When this happens it causes a psychological malfunction described cravenly as writer's block; he's got the habit of full production, but if he wasn't to spill the beans he had to turn *somewhere*. He turned to invention. I suppose in the moment it was easy enough for a man wired the way Mr. Will is wired to invent a threshold image and use it to replace the one Mr. Bomba invented. You can judge how more intelligent Mr. Will is than Mr. Bomba when you compare the rationality of the two opposing visualizations.

Now that Mr. Will had Mr. Bomba on the "threshold" of the gas chamber rather than "inside" it, Mr. Will could go on indulging his fantasy about Mr. Lanzmann's *Shoah*. As the "threshold" to an exterior door not only leads inside, but turning about, leads to the great outdoors and indeed to the rest of the planet surface, there would be enough space out there for Mr. Bomba's barbers to ply their trade comfortably for the SS, and for all the naked ladies Mr. Bomba and Mr. Will together can conjure up. Mr. Will can indulge his other fantasy as well—that no serious criticism can be made of the testimony of any of that handful of alleged eyewitnesses who claim to have actually seen a 'poison gas chamber.'

In this scenario, as the eyewitness testimony is not allowed to be challenged, the genocide theory can't be challenged either, and if that is so, then European Jews had every right to conquer Palestine and the U.S. Government is morally obligated to protect forever the state of Israel. That's the line of thought programmed into the American citizenry. Mr. Will's threshold caper is a small example of how Holocaust Fundamentalists use invention on the one hand and suppression and censorship on the other to bolster U.S. foreign policies and cover up hypocrisies and ethnic chauvinism of the largest part of organized Jewry here and abroad.

What could be plainer than that the worldwide Jewish community is being betrayed by this nonsense? Jews are being betrayed by their own leadership, and they're being betrayed by Gentiles like Mr. Will who profess to be friends and allies of the Jewish community but who in reality are merely allies of a disastrous Zionist leadership trapped within its own rhetoric, too ashamed to reveal the immense fraud upon which so much of its influence has been built.

Claude Lanzmann's *Shoah* may be seen as *the* masterpiece of Holocaust documentaries. But if that is so, then it is also the clearest declaration of bankruptcy ever delivered. After all, in his entire 9½ hours of documentation, Lanzmann doesn't show us any documentary or physical proof for the claims he and his witnesses make. Most of these 9½ hours are actually silent sequences of railway tracks, stones, buildings, and countrysides, whose relation to the 'Holocaust' claims exists only through suggestion and imagination. He himself made his brainwashing technique pretty clear when he stated:<sup>13</sup>

*"As a result of our filming the stones at Treblinka from all angles, they have finally spoken."*

With the stones of Treblinka, Lanzmann meant the field of stones erected after the war on the area that once was the Treblinka camp. Of course, those stones cannot speak about anything that happened before they were placed there. The stones in the soil underneath this memorial, however, could speak, if only one would ask them to: A thorough geo-physical examina-

tion of this entire area could confirm still today, if the Polish forensic investigations of 1946 were correct, that is, whether or not the soil in and around Treblinka was ever disturbed by massive mass graves and huge scale open-air incinerations.

But those stones Claude Lanzmann would never want to speak out, and probably for good reasons, since it would destroy his life's work and shatter his firm beliefs. It was in 1994 that Claude Lanzmann explained why he did not include any documentary or forensic evidence in his movie, but restricted himself to psychologically impressive, but scientifically untenable witness statements:<sup>14</sup>

*"There is not one second of archival material in Shoah because it is not the way I work or think, and besides it does not exist. [...] If I had found an existing film—a secret film because that was forbidden—shot by an SS and showing how 3,000 Jews, men, women and children, were dying together, asphyxiated in the gas chamber of Krema 2 in Auschwitz, not only would I have not shown it, but I would have destroyed it. I cannot say why. It goes by itself."*

If it sounds like the statement of an imbecile, as Serge Thion has put it,<sup>15</sup> then read what Lanzmann had to say about his own movie *Shoah* in 1997:<sup>16</sup>

*"Not understanding has been my iron law."*

So what is *Shoah* all about? It is about—NOTHING. Master Lanzmann himself explained it frankly:<sup>17</sup>

*"It was necessary to make this film from nothing, without archival documents, to invent everything."*

*"It is therefore a case of making a film with traces of traces of traces, [...]. With nothing one comes back to nothing."<sup>18</sup>*

André Glucksmann was a bit more sophisticated when he explained that this movie is not about what happened, but about what could have happened, what would have been possible, what is imaginable:<sup>19</sup>

*"The strength of this film is not in showing what took place—in fact it refrains from doing that—but in showing the possibility of what took place."*

### *Se non è vero, è ben trovato*

### Notes

This article is an enhanced and updated version of chapter 11 of B. Smith's book *Confessions of a Holocaust Revisionist*, Prima Facie, Los Angeles 1987.

<sup>1</sup> For other critical reviews of the movie, cf. Robert Faurisson, *Journal of Historical Review*, 8(1) (1988), pp. 85-92, on which I partly relied when quoting Lanzmann's statements about his movie; Theodore O'Keefe, *ibid.*, pp. 92-95; Serge Thion, *ibid.*, 16 (6), pp. 8-10, who also collected some of the quotes reproduced here.

<sup>2</sup> Jean-Charles Szurek, *L'Autre Groupe*, 10, 1986, p. 65; *Times* (London), March 2, 1986; *L'Autre Journal*, May 1985, p. 47; see Robert Faurisson, *Journal of Historical Review*, 8(1) (1988), pp. 85-92, here p. 87f.

<sup>3</sup> Inmates with some authority over other inmates.

<sup>4</sup> Claude Lanzmann, *Shoah: An Oral History of the Holocaust*, Pantheon Books, New York 1985. Unless otherwise noted, all the passages quoted in this article are from the Pantheon Books edition, pages 111-117.

<sup>5</sup> Rachael Auerbach, "In The Fields of Treblinka", in: Alexander Donat (ed.), *The Death Camp Treblinka*, Holocaust Library, New York, 1979, p. 35f.

<sup>6</sup> Quoted in Adalbert Rückerl, *NS-Vernichtungslager im Spiegel deutscher Strafprozesse*, dtv, Frankfurt 1977, p. 203.

<sup>7</sup> URSS-344. Gosudarstvenni Archiv Rossiiskoi Federatsii (State Archive of the Russian Federation), Moscow, 7445-2-126, p. 321 (p. 5 of the report). I took this information from the excellent work by Carlo Mattogno and Jür-

gen Graf, *Treblinka—Vernichtungslager oder Durchgangslager?*, Castle Hill Publishers, Hastings 2002, pp. 145-147.

<sup>8</sup> The parenthetical descriptions of Bomba's reactions here are not in the published text. I have added them from memory. While I watched the film, I could not help but be touched by Bomba's sincere distress. His tears brought tears to my own eyes. At the same time I was aware of what a laugh I thought his story is. A nice irony for the psychotherapists to explain.

<sup>9</sup> R. Auerbach *op. cit.* (note 5), pp. 32f.

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 38.

<sup>11</sup> See C. Mattogno, J. Graf, *op. cit.* (note ), p. 104-114.

<sup>12</sup> *The Washington Post*, Nov. 15, 1985.

<sup>13</sup> *Libération*, April 25, 1985, p. 22.

<sup>14</sup> *Le Monde*, March 3, 1994.

<sup>15</sup> Serge Thion, "The Dictatorship of Imbecility", *Journal of Historical Review*, 16(6) (1997), p. 8-10,

<sup>16</sup> *Le Monde*, June 12, 1997.

<sup>17</sup> *Le Matin de Paris*, April 29, 1985, p. 12.

<sup>18</sup> *L'Express*, May 10, 1985, p. 40.

<sup>19</sup> *Le Droit de vivre*, February-March 1986, p. 21

## The 'Discovery' of 'Bunker 1' at Birkenau: Swindles, Old and New

By Carlo Mattogno

Seven buildings in the infamous Auschwitz concentration camps are claimed to have been equipped with one or more homicidal gas chambers. Five of those buildings were the former Auschwitz crematoria. One smaller crematorium was located in the Auschwitz main camp, and four big crematoria were erected in the huge sub-camp Auschwitz-Birkenau. Since the end of World War Two, it was claimed that the gas chambers in those crematoria were the locations of the biggest mass slaughter that ever took place in human history. Allegedly of minor importance were two former farm houses outside of the immediate perimeter of the Birkenau camp that are said to have been converted into gas chambers as well. A sudden turn happened in the middle of 2002, when a German mainstream journalist published a thesis according to which the Auschwitz crematoria did not, after all, serve as locations for mass slaughter. In his view, the two farm houses were the real location of this atrocity.<sup>1</sup> Though this thesis was badly flawed,<sup>2</sup> it came in quite handy that just a year prior to the publication of this journalist's provocative thesis news spread through Europe's media that finally, after over 55 years, the actual location of one of these farm houses had been located—meaning that so far, no traces of this ominous farm house were known. The following article proves that the 2001 media reports about the alleged discovery of this farm house were nothing but an unfounded hoax, produced by unscrupulous researchers and the media who are always eager to discover some 'Nazi' relics.

### The 'Discovery'

According to the *Kalendarium der Ereignisse im Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau*<sup>3</sup> two Polish farm houses at Birkenau were converted into 'homicidal gas chambers' by the camp administration prior to the construction of the four crematoria. The 'Red House,' known as 'Bunker 1,' is said to have been put into operation on 20 March 1942, and the 'White House,' or 'Bunker 2' is said to have been put into operation on 30 June of the same year. "Bunker 1" is said to have been destroyed in 1943, and no traces of it are said to remain. The destruction of 'Bunker 2' is said to have taken place at the end of 1944, but the foundation walls of the house referred to as 'Bunker 2' and which are said to have been used for this purpose, are still in existence and can still be seen, even today.

On November 20, 2001, the Italian daily paper *Corriere della Sera* published an article by Gian Guido Vecchi<sup>4</sup> on page 35 entitled "Shoa. L'inferno cominciò in una casa rossa" (Shoah: Hell Began in a Red House). The article claims that a certain Marcello Pezzetti discovered the location of the alleged 'Bunker 1' of Birkenau at precisely this location. A private house occupied by a Polish family is said to have stood on the spot until only a few months ago, but that the house has since

been torn down. According to Marcello Pezzetti, the house in question was none other than 'Bunker 1' ("[the author] wondered how anyone could live in a gas chamber with a clear conscience").

This is absurd, since the alleged 'Bunker 1' was destroyed in 1943.

The 'discovery' is said to have taken place in the summer of 1943, when "Schloma" (correctly: Schlomo; in Polish, Szlama) Dragon, his brother, and Eliezer "Esisenschmidt" (correctly: Eisenschmidt) are said to have taken 'discoverer' Pezzetti to the house which appears to the left of the small photograph on the above mentioned page of the *Corriere della Sera*.

### Who is Marcello Pezzetti?

Marcello Pezzetti is a researcher for the CDEC (*Centro di Documentazione Ebraica Contemporanea*, Centre for Contemporary Jewish Contemporary Historical Documentation) in Milan. He is chiefly known for his activity as an adviser during the filming of several Holocaust films (Spielberg's *Schindler's List* and Benigni's *La vita è bella*) as well as for the release of the CD *Destinazione Auschwitz* (Destination Auschwitz). The latter is a sort of video game for the purpose of brain-washing the

younger generation. Among Italian journalistic circles, which make a great deal of space available to him for the presentation of his arguments, Marcello Pezzetti is considered “one of the world’s best-known experts on Auschwitz and the Shoah”, something which he himself, tragically, also appears to believe!

### The first announcement of the ‘Discovery’

Marcello Pezzetti had already announced the remarkable ‘discovery’ of alleged ‘Bunker 1’ at Birkenau four years ago. Pages 94-97 of the February 26 edition of the Italian weekly paper *Panorama*, carried an article by Valeria Gandus under the title “Operazione memoria” relating to the UNESCO decision to include the former Auschwitz concentration camp

“into a program for the restoration and maintenance of the world’s most important museums.” (p. 94)

The journalist announced that the remains of Crematoria II and III of Birkenau were constantly:

“desecrated and plundered by Nazi skinheads in search of macabre souvenirs as well as by negationists greedy for ‘scientific’ proof.” (p. 94)

For this reason, UNESCO cooked up a program, which

“provides that that which remains of the two buildings should be protected (presumably by glass walls), and only made accessible to scientists.” (p. 96)

The object of the project is obvious. Revisionist researchers are to be prevented from accessing the ruins of both these alleged extermination installations to prevent in-depth research into the highly significant question of the ‘chemistry of extermination’ and the existence of the alleged Zyklon B introduction holes. Fred Leuchter and Germar Rudolf have obviously put the fear of God into the official purveyors of history.

The journalist furthermore tells us that “an Italian, Marcello Pezzetti, historian and researcher at the CDEC (*Centro di documentazione ebraica contemporanea*), is one of the world’s leading experts on the sinister location of the collective conscience of Europe, UNESCO Delegate for the project and the control execution.” (p. 94f.)



Fig. 1: First page of the report by Mrs. Józefa Wisińska (full sized on the Internet [www.vho.org/tr](http://www.vho.org/tr))

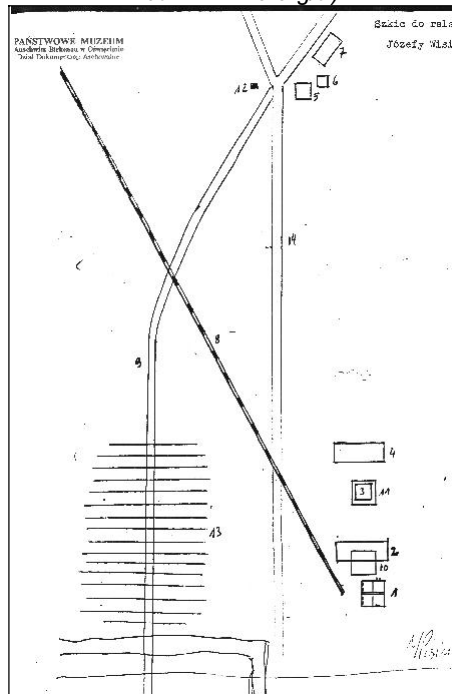


Fig. 2: Topographic sketch by Mrs. J. Wisińska, attached to the report. The sketch shows conditions in 1941. The upper side corresponds to the western side.

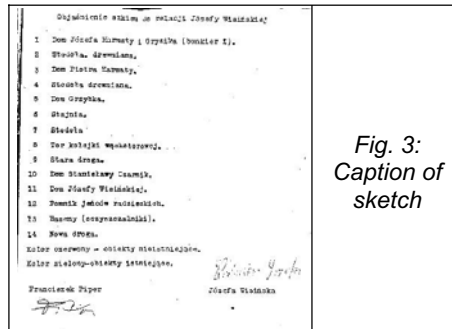


Fig. 3: Caption of sketch

This is followed by the announcement of the extraordinary ‘discovery’:

“In studying the original plans of the camp and interrogating the last survivors of the first ‘Sonderkommando’ unit (the prisoners who had to undress the victims and collect [!] the corpses), Pezzetti discovered the location and the building. ‘Few inmates spoke of Bunker 1 in the post-war trials. But none of them was brought into the camp to identify the location and building’, Pezzetti relates. Political realism, mistakenly intended to soothe old wounds, prevented uncomfortable research on terrain which should have remained protected and dedicated to memory; instead, it was settled by Poles who were on the lookout for cheap land on which to rebuild houses destroyed during the war, as well as a few earlier residents of the area driven away by the Nazis and who returned there. The latter included returning persons who, prior to the construction of Birkenau, resided in the house later converted into a gas chamber. And on the ruins of the old farm house partially blown up by the SS in November 1944 [sic!], they built the new house.” (p. 95)

At that time this extraordinary ‘discovery’ hardly attracted notice, but today things look differently, since this time the Holocaust Industry had its hand in the matter.

Let us first examine how the historical value of this ‘discovery’ was readapted. The following includes several findings from a current study on the alleged ‘Bunker’ of Birkenau, a study which is not yet completed.

### The historical value of the ‘discovery’

Let it be stated first of all, that the ‘Bunkers’ of Birkenau never existed as extermination installations. On the contrary, the Birkenau camp was surrounded by several Polish houses, some of which were torn down, while others were taken over by the Auschwitz camp administration, given a “Bauwerk” number and name, and used for the intended purposes. For example, the Polish house to which the number 44 was assigned was designated “Bauwerk 36c”, converted accordingly, and made available to SS-Sturm-bannführer Cäsar, the head of the agricul-

tural operations, as a dwelling house. Other buildings were left in an unconverted condition, but not taken over by the camp administration and remained unused. Two of these houses were finally given the designations 'Bunker 1' and 'Bunker 2,' but only as the result of a laborious literary procedure which began in August 1942, continued between 1942 and 1944, and finally took concrete form in February 1945 thanks to Szlama Dragon.

But the problem which is of concern to us here is of quite another nature. The location of 'Bunker 1' indicated by Marcello Pezzetti is in complete contradiction to the only source available to official historiography. This is a report given on August 5, 1980, by a Mrs. Wisińska, and made available to the Auschwitz Museum, taken down by Franciszek Piper, and published in the anthology "Oświadczenia" (Testimonies), volume 113, pp. 77-78 (see Fig. 1).

Mrs. Wisińska stated that her family had lived in the immediate vicinity of the Birkenau Camp before WWII. In 1941, the house, owned by her uncle Józef Harmata (as well as by her son-in-law Gryzek), was confiscated and converted into 'Bunker 1' by the Germans. In 1949, Mrs. Wisińska returned to the

property which had belonged to him. The house owned by her uncle (alleged 'Bunker 1') no longer existed. A few meters away from the location where it had existed, a house was later built which at that time belonged to a Mr. Stanisław Czarnik. Mrs. Wisińska appended a topographic sketch of the location to her report (see Figs. 2 and 3), showing the exact positions of the old house owned by J. Harmata (alleged 'Bunker 1') and the new house owned by Mr. Czarnik.

Mrs. Wisińska obviously had no proof that the house owned by her uncle J. Harmata and her son-in-law Gryzek was converted into any 'Bunker 1' by SS men stationed at Auschwitz. This was quite obviously suggested to her by the Auschwitz Museum, which, in 1978, in an official camp plan of Birkenau, had already indicated the exact location of the alleged 'Bunker 1' on an official map of Birkenau camp at the exact location indicated by Mrs. Wisińska in 1980, and needed this fictitious, subsequent 'proof' in order to justify itself. That the choice fell on a member of the Harmata family is explained by the fact that the judgment of the Höß Trial (2 April 1947) states that the Polish houses converted into 'Bunker 1' and 'Bunker 2' had belonged to the peasants Wiechujka und Harmata living in Brezinka (Birkenau). But the names of these two peasants were arbitrarily chosen from among people who had lived in the area and whose houses had been taken over by the SS, so as to conjure up fictitious 'proof' of the location of the 'Bunker.' In their specious reasoning, the judges equated 'Bunker 1' with the house owned by the Wiechujka family, and 'Bunker 2' with the house owned by the Harmata family. In so doing, they followed the findings of the expert Roman Dawidowski in his report dated September 26, 1946. In contrast, Mrs. Wisińska stated that the house converted into alleged 'Bunker 1' had belonged to the Harmata family and not the Wiechujka family, which amounts to further proof that the identification of the two 'Bunkers' with the houses of the two families was completely specious.

On September 20, 1985, Franciszek Piper produced four photographs of a house which had, according to him, belonged to Mr. Czarnik. One of the photos, bearing the archive number "neg. no. 21225/3" in the inventory of the Auschwitz Museum, shows a frontal view of the house in question (see Fig. 4), which is identical to the photograph appearing in the above mentioned article (see Fig. 5). But this house, also photographed by myself in August 2000 (see Fig. 6), is located on the other side of the street which now runs outside and along the western barbed wire perimeter of the camp (see Fig. 7), while the house owned by J. Harmatas (alleged "Bunker 1"), as clearly shown by the topographic sketch drawn by Mrs. Wisińskas, was located further to the east, inside the camp's barbed wire perimeter and only a few meters north of the sewage treatment installation, which can still be seen today.

The house indicated by Marcello Pezzetti is located west of another symbol which cannot be overlooked: namely the monument to Soviet prisoners of war. This monument is located approximately 200 meters west of the sewage treatment installation and, therefore, west of the location where the house owned by J. Harmatas (alleged 'Bunker 1') formerly stood, close to the western fencing of the camp and the street running along this line (see Fig. 7). Access to this monument is by way

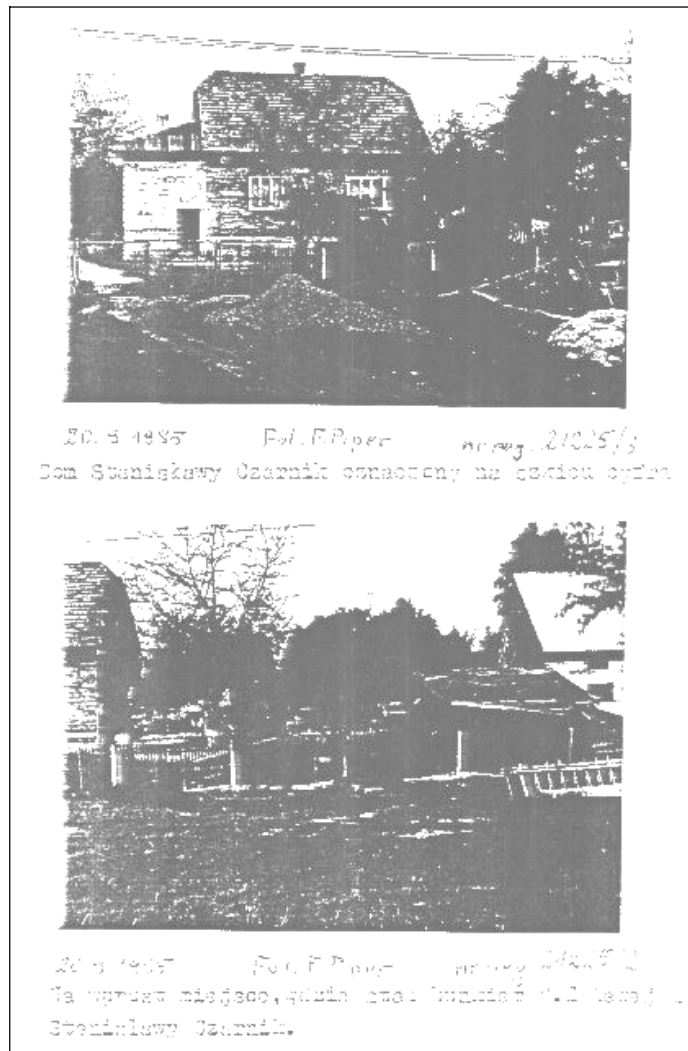


Fig. 4: Photograph of the alleged house owned by Mr. Czarniks taken by Franciszek Piper on September 20, 1985. Below: The courtyard between this house and the adjacent house is easily visible in my photograph (Fig. 6, next page).



*Photograph of the same house taken by F. Piper and published in the Corriere della Sera.*



*Photo taken by myself in August 2000.*

of an old barred gate. If one walks from there to the right or north, the house in question is located approximately 100 m away.

This house, which, according to Mr. Pezzetti, stood on the ruins of ‘Bunker 1’ or was even exactly identical with ‘Bunker 1,’ lies, as the crow flies, more than 300 m away from the location of the house owned by J. Harmatas, and, therefore, the former location of alleged ‘Bunker 1.’

Based on the above, three conclusions can be drawn:

- 1) That a house (owned by Mr. Czarnik) was located only a few meters away from the house formerly owned by J. Harmatas (‘Bunker 1’), is in no way a discovery made by M. Pezzetti, but rather, a revelation by Mrs. Wisińskas.
- 2) The identification of the Czarnik house with the house in the photograph in the article in the *Corriere della Sera* had already been made by F. Piper eight years before the article by M. Pezzetti.
- 3) The identification of this house with ‘Bunker 1’ is incorrect, since the house in the photograph taken by F. Piper and M. Pezzetti, as well in as my own photograph, cannot be identical to the house owned by Mr. Czarnik and cannot, therefore, have been located on the ruins of ‘Bunker 1.’ It cannot, therefore, be the Czarnik house indicated by Mrs. Wisińskas.

M. Pezzetti’s ‘discovery’ therefore lacks all historical value.

### **Marcello Pezzetti’s ‘Witnesses’**

M. Pezzetti reports that in 1993, Szlama Dragon, his brother Abraham, and Eliezer Eisenschmidt had led him directly to the house where ‘Bunker 1’ allegedly stood. But as will be seen below, Szlama Dragon was interrogated in 1945, first by the Soviets and then by the Poles, and had, at that time, shown himself unable to give any information on the location of ‘Bunker 1.’ How can one then seriously believe that Szlama Dragon could, with complete certainty, find a location which he had been unable to find 48 years earlier? The matter becomes even more unbelievable when the witness, at the 26<sup>th</sup> session of the Vienna Trial against the architects of the Auschwitz crematoria Walter Dejaco and Fritz Ertl (March 2, 1972), after confusing Crematorium I with ‘Bunker 2’ on the previous day (!), found himself compelled to admit:<sup>5</sup>

*“I can no longer remember after 30 years [...].”*

By a first-class miracle, therefore, Szlama Dragon remembers something 48 years later, which he had forgotten after 30 years, and which he didn’t know three years later!

Szlama Dragon’s brother Abraham did not appear as a witness at either the Höß Trial or the trial of the Auschwitz guard personnel. Even later, he made no sworn statements and wrote no reports of any kind as to his experiences. The same is true of Eliezer Eisenschmidt. Both told their stories in the 1990s for the first time!<sup>6</sup> In the interview published at that time, the Dragon brothers testified that they had worked at “Bunker 2” for *one single day*, in December 1942.<sup>7</sup> Szlama furthermore claimed to have worked there for *only two days* in 1944.<sup>8</sup> That’s all! Neither Szlama nor Abraham were ever taken to alleged ‘Bunker 1’. How could they identify it in 1993 with such certainty?

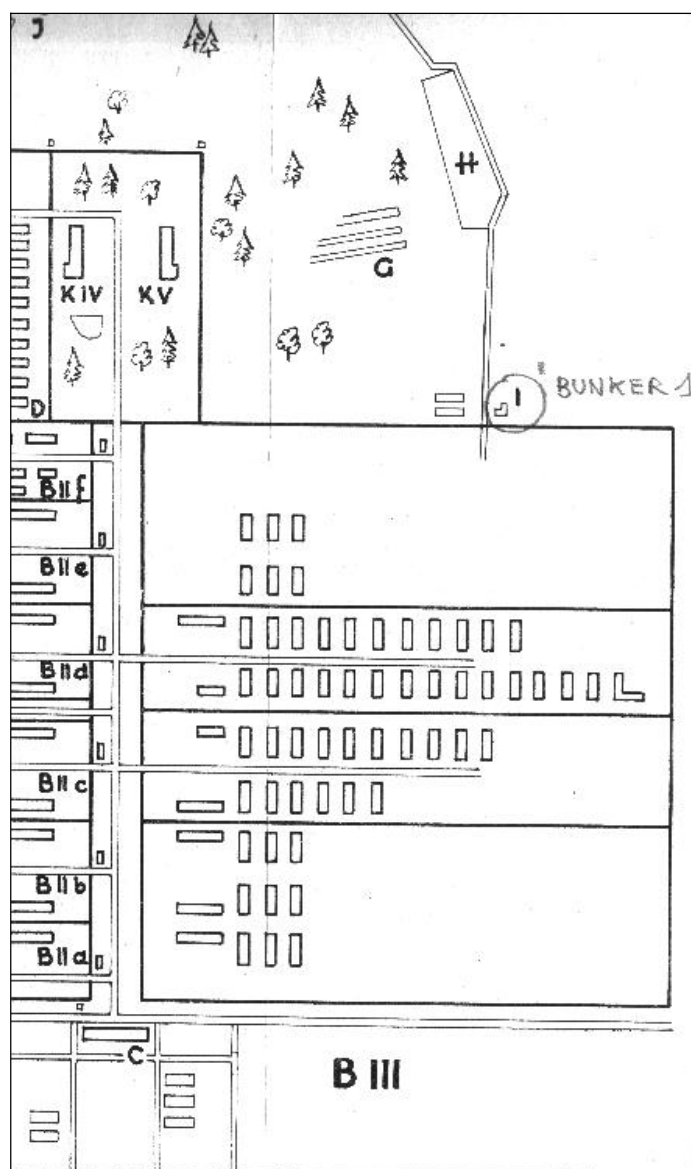
Eliezer Eisenschmidt, on the other hand, testified to having worked six full months at ‘Bunker 1,’<sup>9</sup> but was nevertheless unable to provide even a vague indication of its location.<sup>10</sup> But that’s not all: he was not even aware of the designation ‘bunker’ for the alleged ‘gas chamber;’ rather, he believed that the “bunkers” (plural) were identical to the alleged “cremation pits”:<sup>11</sup>



*My photograph, taken in August 2000, showing the street (from south to north) to the house in question. The building stands to the left rear (to the west), in front of the last tree on the edge of the street. To the right rear (in the East), the barbed wire perimeter of Birkenau camp is visible; in the clearing visible in the foreground is the gate providing access to the monument to the Soviet prisoners of war.*

“The pits, or ‘bunkers’, as we called them, were large and deep.”

In his book mentioned above, Gideon Greif reports that in the summer of 1993, during Szlama Dragon’s interrogation at the ruins of alleged ‘Bunker 2,’ “a friend from Italian television” had come and shown him a page from Szlama Dragon’s affidavit drawn up in Polish in 1945. Based on this document, the Italian had wanted to find the location of the “cremation pits”. Greif told him to ask S. Dragon himself, who was, after all, on the spot. The Italian is said to have been “speechless”.<sup>12</sup> But E. Eisenschmidt was also in Birkenau in the summer of 1993,<sup>13</sup> so that the “friend from Italian television” obviously was no other than Marcello Pezzetti. On this occasion, he then spoke with three ‘survivors’ and ‘discovered’ the alleged ‘Bunker 1’—but why doesn’t Greif mention this ‘discovery’ with a single word?



Plan von Birkenau, entnommen dem Buch Auschwitz.<sup>14</sup> Der „Bunker 1“ nördlich der Kläranlage des Bauabschnitts III ist mit dem Buchstaben „I“ gekennzeichnet, der in der Bildlegende wie folgt erklärt wird: „Erste provisorische Gaskammer“.

Greif’s book reproduces the map of Birkenau<sup>15</sup> which already appeared in the *Kalendarium der Ereignisse im Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau* (p. 27), in which the “1st provisional gas chamber” is indicated at the same spot (and with the same symbol) as in the book *Auschwitz. Nazi Extermination Camp*.<sup>16</sup> I will have more to say about this book below. The “gas chamber” was allegedly located north of the sewage treatment installation of Bauabschnitt (construction section) III, on the spot indicated by Mrs. Wisińska. But if it is true that Szlama Dragon, Abraham Dragon, and Eliezer Eisenschmidt had already indicated the exact location of ‘Bunkers 1’ as early as 1993 (naturally in the presence of Greif, who had asked them to come to Birkenau in order to interview them), why doesn’t he mention it with as much as one single word? And why didn’t the three witnesses correct the map of Birkenau reproduced in the book?

M. Pezzetti claims that the three witnesses had led him, without being asked, “starting out from Crematorium III” to the above mentioned Polish house. This is a mere allegation, about which every person who is only moderately familiar with the topography of Birkenau can only laugh, since the zone around the camp had changed enormously between 1943 and 1993.

If the story of the meeting between these four men is correct, the three pitiful old men simply took M. Pezzetti wherever he wanted to go!

#### The views of the Auschwitz Museums on the ‘discovery’

On November 20, 2001, *Le Monde* published a short article by Henri Tincq, entitled “Le mystère enfin levé de la première chambre à gas d’Auschwitz-Birkenau” (The Secret of the First Gas Chamber of Auschwitz-Birkenau Finally Solved), which was nothing but a pale repetition of the article in *Corriere della Sera*. Via the Paris daily, news of the ‘discovery’ finally found an echo in the European and American press. The Auschwitz Museum also heard of M. Pezzetti’s ‘discovery’ from *Le Monde* and answered it with an article written by Jerzy Sadecki, entitled “Auschwitz-Birkenau. ‘Le Monde’ Reveals a Secret That Never Was”, in the Polish newspaper *Rzeczpospolita* (Republic). In it, Jerzy Wróblewski, Director of the Museum, and Franciszek Piper had their say. I quote the most important excerpts from the article, which I found in English on the website of the Auschwitz Museum:<sup>17</sup>

„It is not possible to live in something that does not exist.

‘That family could not have lived in a gas chamber, because the Germans tore down the Little Red House in 1943. Not a trace of it remained; the Germans did not leave even a bit of its foundation there,’ explains Dr. Franciszek Piper of the Auschwitz-Birkenau State Museum. ‘Only in 1955 did the owners of the property build a new house at the site of the gas chamber and move in.’ [...]

Wróblewski is puzzled by the *Le Monde* assertion that the site has only been discovered now. ‘The location has long been well known, and did not constitute any sort of mystery. The location was identified in 1945 in the reports of both the Soviet and the Polish commissions. It was pointed out by prisoners who gave testimony at the time, including Schlomo Dragon. Camp Commandant Rudolf Höss

described it in his memoirs, which were published later. 'All the guides who lead visitors around the camp know the location,' Piper and Wróblewski both state. 'If the *Le Monde* journalist had wanted to obtain information at the source, in the Museum, we could have shown him the popular study *Auschwitz: Nazi Death Camp*, first published by Interpress in 1977, which contains a map of the Birkenau camp where the site of the first gas chamber is marked. Back in the 1980s, before anyone here had ever heard of Signor Pezzetti, I consulted the property records and established location of the Little Red House to the meter,' says Piper. 'A blueprint of the house can be found on page 114 of the third volume of the five-volume compendium *Auschwitz*, which was published in Polish, German, and English,' he notes. [...]

Marcello Pezzetti appeared in Oświęcim several years ago and joined in the deliberations over how to settle the problem of the site of the Little Red House. Pezzetti found a sponsor, Richard Prasquier. After protracted negotiations, the Museum managed this year to purchase the property and move its occupants to another house, which was remodeled. Teams of technicians from the Museum dismantled the structure on the site of the gas chamber, and landscaped the area. 'In the spring,' says Wróblewski, 'we want to fence off the property, sow grass, plant thuja, and place a commemorative plaque in the middle bearing a brief history of the site and a floor plan of the first gas chamber.'

Today, Dr. Piper notes bitterly that 'we had been so happy that we would finally be able to do something at Auschwitz in a planned, deliberate way, without outside pressure or any sensationalism. Once again, however, it turns out that not even the noblest initiative connected with the history of the Auschwitz-Birkenau Nazi Death Camp—and there have been many—can be taken without misunderstandings and falsification.'"

### The swindles of the Auschwitz Museum

The Auschwitz Museum therefore claims to have made the alleged 'discovery' itself, but does not dispute that the house referred to by M. Pezzetti stands on the spot where 'Bunker 1'

once stood. But Wróblewski und Piper can only defend this claim with risible arguments.

Wróblewski alleges:

"The location [of 'Bunker 1'] was identified in 1945 in the reports of both the Soviet and the Polish commissions. It was pointed out by prisoners who gave testimony at the time, including Schlomo Dragon."

This is completely untrue. None of the eyewitnesses interrogated by the Soviets immediately after the liberation of Auschwitz was able to indicate the location of 'Bunker 1,' neither on the terrain nor on topographical maps. This is true in particular for Szlama Dragon, the star witness to the alleged 'Bunker,' who was interrogated on February 26, 1945, by the Soviets and later, on May 10 and 11 of the same year by the Poles. He was never able to identify the location where 'Bunker 1' had stood. Quite the contrary. Regardless of the presence of Dragon and other witnesses, the Soviets were so uncertain as to this structure that it appeared in quite a different location on the map drawn up on March 3, 1945, by Engineer Nosal for the Soviet Investigating Commission:<sup>18</sup> outside the camp, approximately 300 m away from the north barbed wire perimeter of construction section III of Birkenau, i.e., approximately 500 m north of the location marked by the Auschwitz Museum on its official maps (beginning with the one in the book *Auschwitz: Nazi Death Camp*) and approximately 500 m north of the location indicated by M. Pezzetti. The expert Dawidowski limited himself to accepting the location on the map drawn up by Nosal. This constitutes further proof that the Harmata and Wiechujka families had nothing to do with the houses converted into the alleged 'bunkers.'

None of the witnesses trotted out in the trials of Höß and the camp guards held in 1947 were able to identify the location of the alleged 'Bunker 1,' and this is also true of the witnesses who made statements about this building at a later time.

Wróblewski and Piper finally refer to the

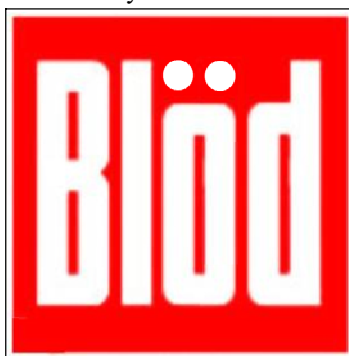
"[...] popular study *Auschwitz: Nazi Death Camp*, first published by Interpress in 1977, which contains a map of the Birkenau camp where the site of the first gas chamber is marked."

It is true that the above mentioned book (published in 1978 and not 1977) contains a map of Birkenau indicating the location of 'Bunkers 1' but the bunker is not located outside the camp, where first Franciszek Piper and then Marcello Pezzetti claims to have 'discovered' it, but rather, north of the sewage treatment installation, at the exact spot indicated by Mrs. Wisińska (see Fig. 8)!

Thus, both representatives of the Auschwitz Museum did not make an error in good faith, but they lie consciously.

The swindle is completed by Franciszek Piper with the following statement:

"Back in the 1980s, before anyone here had ever heard of Signor Pezzetti, I consulted the property records and established location of the Little Red House to the meter."



**Erste Gaskammer entdeckt**  
**Paris – Die erste erbaute**  
**Gaskammer des Konzentrati-**  
**onslagers Auschwitz-Birke-**  
**nau ist gefunden worden. Es**  
**handelt sich um ein 1942**  
**enteignetes polnisches Bau-**  
**ernhaus.**

### First Gas Chamber Discovered

**Paris – The first constructed gas chamber of the concentra-**  
**tion camp Auschwitz-Birkenau was discovered. It is a Polish**  
**farm house which had been confiscated in 1942.**

Brainwashing of the public by the German tabloid Bild, November 20, 2001. On the same day, the same sensational news was announced in Italian, French, and German media. A coincidence?

Here, Piper refers to the report drawn up by Mrs. Wisińskas and taken down by himself personally on August 5, 1980. But as already mentioned, this woman indicated an entirely different location of 'Bunker 1,' "to the meter", so that F. Piper is lying in this case as well.

It is true that F. Piper, in his already mentioned work, *Auschwitz 1940-1945. Studien zur Geschichte des Konzentrations- und Vernichtungslagers Auschwitz* (Auschwitz 1940-1945: Studies on the History of Auschwitz Concentration and Extermination Camp) published a 'plan' of 'Bunker 1,'<sup>19</sup> but this contains no reference to the topographical location of the house and, moreover, in regards to structure, orientation, and size of the house, not only contradicts the plan of the house sketched by Mrs. Wisińska in 1980, but also the plan drawn by Engineer Nosal in 1945, based on information from Szlama Dragon!

Marcello Pezzetti is no better than Piper. In the *Corriere della Sera* article, he turns Mrs. Wisińska's report into a:

*"Plan of the plot of land, a document certified by signature of the owner, containing a reference to the 'gas chamber' [sic]"*

This is pure fantasy. The fact is that according to various German plans of the area of Birkenau, including the extremely important plan of October 5, 1942, east of the future Construction Section III of the camp, within 500 m of the barbed wire perimeter, there were only six structures corresponding exactly to the structures indicated on the plan sketched by Mrs. Wisińskas (apart from Building no. 6, a stall, which does not appear on the plan). In the area in which, according to Mario Pezzetti, the house built on the ruins of 'Bunker 1' stood, *no building ever existed at that time!*

This is irrefutable evidence that the 'discovery' of alleged 'Bunker 1' was not a pardonable error, but, rather, a vulgar swindle.

### 'Discovery' as a business

It is obvious that there are propagandistic and economic grounds for the alleged 'discovery.' With relation to the house which, according to Marcello Pezzetti, stood on the ruins of 'Bunker 1,' the *Corriere della Sera* writes:

*"Today, the house and terrain have been sold, and the house torn down, in order to expose the foundations of the old bunker; the area is included in the tour of the Museum [during camp visits by tourists], and thought and prayer are dedicated thereunto", Pezzetti explains. All this thanks to him and Dr. Richard Prasquier, a Paris cardiologist, who, as a small boy, survived the liquidation of the Warsaw ghetto together with his entire family and financed the entire operation."*

The very title of an article published in the *Bollettino della Comunità Ebraica di Milano* reveals the true purpose of Marcello Pezzetti's miraculous marvellous 'discovery':<sup>20</sup> "Shoà [sic]: la prima camera a gas di Auschwitz diventa museo" (Shoah: The First Gas Chamber of Auschwitz Becomes a Museum). The contribution begins with the following piece of news:

*"Two Polish peasant families, the Harmata and Wichaj families (six persons with grandparents, son and daughter-*

*in-law, as well as two small nephews), moved to a brand-new house equipped with all types of finery."*

The new house, the article continues, has been built thanks to the generosity of the Jewish cardiologist in order to "dedicate thought" to 'Bunker 1':

*"Yes, since the family returned to the house in 1947, which had been confiscated by the Nazis in 1942 and was used as a gas chamber for the Jews until April 1943."*

Therefore, the house that "the family" (which of the two families was it?) moved into in 1947 was no less than 'Bunker 1.' As a mitigating circumstance it may be assumed that this gigantic piece of idiocy was suggested to this anonymous journalist by Marcello Pezzetti, who is quoted in this article as follows:

*"Eight years ago, when I discovered that the house inhabited by this family was none other than Bunker 1, i.e., the first gas chamber of Birkenau", states Marcello Pezzetti of the CDEC foundation, "it became soon clear that this was a particularly important place for Jewish memory, which ought to be included in the tour organized for visitors by the Auschwitz-Birkenau Museum."*

Marcello Pezzetti finally reports as to the shameful methods by means of which he succeeded in forcing the family—"who had no intention of leaving the house"—to leave the house. After eight years of pressure from the "local political authorities", "the new Director of the [Auschwitz] Museum, Stefan Wilkanowicz", and, finally, from the "Officials of the Vatican in France for Relations with the Jewish World", as well as thanks to money from the "French philanthropist Richard Prasquier, the Chairman of the Yad Vashem of France," the family finally capitulated and agreed to move to a new house 500 meters away. In the meantime, Marcello Pezzetti himself did not remain inactive. He in fact unashamedly admits that the members of the Polish family had, if at all, "welcomed the move as the end of a nightmare",

*"[...] since, to induce them to move, I had begun to have tour buses run past the house, which I described as the first gas chamber, and its garden as a graveyard. For years, upon our arrival, the old grandmother used to come out of the house and try to drive us away with rude words and gestures."*

The pitiful family was psychologically tormented by the 'visitors' in this manner, *i.e.*, with the crudest violation of their property rights, "for years", to soften them up and force them to leave their house. Marcello Pezzetti adds that the new house was officially paid for by the Polish government,

*"[...] because the family did not want the neighbours to think that they received money from Jews."<sup>21</sup>*

The money invested in this transaction by the "French philanthropist" was unquestioningly repaid with interest and compound interest, thanks to the propagandistic exploitation of this new pavilion by the Holocaust Industry. We can be certain that the first commercial transaction will be a video film—to be sold in the millions—on the 'discovery' of 'Bunker 1.' There is no doubt that the 'discovery' will even help the Auschwitz Museum increase its sales.

There is also a significant ideological-propagandistic objective to the 'discovery': it comes at a time when a severe crisis is



building up around the official historiography. After the collapse of the hot-air balloon blown up by Jean-Claude Pressac,<sup>22</sup> the official historiography has nothing else to offer than a sterile rehash of arguments that are already threadbare, and is making no scientific progress at all. After the collapse, from Pressac, van Pelt, and Fritjof Meyer,<sup>23</sup> it is caught up in its own mediocrity, and no longer knows what to do to counter revisionist criticism.

The swindle with ‘Bunker 1’ is therefore becoming the new media weapon against revisionism.

## Notes

This article first appeared in German in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung*, 6(2) (2002), 139-145. A badly edited English version with the wrong author, no footnotes, no documents, and no appropriate illustrations appeared in *The Barnes Review*, 9(2) (2003), pp. 29-34. Translated by Carlos Porter.

- <sup>1</sup> Fritjof Meyer, “Die Zahl der Opfer von Auschwitz. Neue Erkenntnisse durch neue Archivfunde” (Number of Auschwitz Victims: New Insights from Recent Archival Discoveries), *Osteuropa*, 52(5) (2002), pp. 631-441
- <sup>2</sup> For this, see Germar Rudolf, “Cautious Mainstream Revisionism”, *The Revisionist*, 1(1) (2003), pp. 23-30; Carlo Mattogno, “Auschwitz. Fritjof Meyer’s New Revisions”, *ibid.*, pp 30-37.
- <sup>3</sup> Rowohlt Verlag, Reinbek 1989, pp. 186 and 239.
- <sup>4</sup> The German tabloid *Bild* carried a short article on the matter the same day. Editor’s note.

- <sup>5</sup> J.-C. Pressac, *Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers*, Beate Klarsfeld Foundation, New York York 1989, p. 172.
- <sup>6</sup> See Gideon Greif, *Wir weinten tränenlos... Augenzeugenberichte der jüdischen “Sonderkommandos” in Auschwitz*, Böhlau Verlag, Köln 1995.
- <sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 77.
- <sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 83.
- <sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 180.
- <sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 177.
- <sup>11</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 178.
- <sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 49f.
- <sup>13</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 167.
- <sup>14</sup> *Ebd.*, unnumbered page.
- <sup>15</sup> *Ibid.*, p. XLIVf.
- <sup>16</sup> *Nazi Extermination Camp*, Interpress Publishers, Warschau 1978
- <sup>17</sup> [www.auschwitz.org.pl/html/eng/aktualnosci/czerwony\\_domek.html](http://www.auschwitz.org.pl/html/eng/aktualnosci/czerwony_domek.html)
- <sup>18</sup> Reproduced in J.-C. Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 5), p. 179.
- <sup>19</sup> Verlag des Staatlichen Museums Auschwitz-Birkenau, 1999, vol. III, p. 160.
- <sup>20</sup> *Mitteilungsblatt der Jüdischen Gemeinde Mailand* (Newsletter of the Jewish Community of Milan), 57 (1) (January 2002), p. 11.
- <sup>21</sup> Note that the Polish population around Auschwitz is perfectly well aware of the game played at this location by Jewish lobbyists! – Editor’s note.
- <sup>22</sup> The best refutation of Pressac is the following German anthology, available in English online: Herbert Verbeke (ed.), *Auschwitz: Nackte Fakten*, Vrij Historisch Onderzoek, Berchem 1995 (online: [www.vho.org/D/anf](http://www.vho.org/D/anf); Engl: [www.vho.org/GB/Books/anf](http://www.vho.org/GB/Books/anf)).
- <sup>23</sup> See note 2 regarding F. Meyer; regarding van Pelt, see online: G. Rudolf, [www.vho.org/GB/c/GR/RudolfOnVanPelt.html](http://www.vho.org/GB/c/GR/RudolfOnVanPelt.html) and [.../CritiqueGray.html](http://.../CritiqueGray.html).

# Ernst Zündel: His Struggle for Germany

## A Curriculum in Historical Dates and Keywords

By Dr. Ingrid Rimland

Without any doubt, Ernst Zündel certainly deserves the title of being the most courageous, active, resourceful, pug-nacious and also the most effective “Holocaust” Revisionist that ever existed. One may or may not agree with his views and may or may not endorse his methods. But this judgment is unavoidable for both friend and foe. After a twenty years lasting uninterrupted struggle for the restitution of the honor of his German people and his fatherland Germany, the war-weary Ernst Zündel intended originally to retreat to the Tennessee Mountains and to retire together with his wife Ingrid Rimland. For the last two years he dedicated almost all of his time to his hobby, which is painting landscapes. For him, the struggle of his life was over; others were supposed to rule the roost. But fate had other, quite cruel plans with him, that is, to have him spend the rest of his life behind bars in a German dungeon. As a tribute to the accomplishments of this great German, whose struggle will now unfortunately keep on going, his life will be summarized and honored in this article. May his courage and perseverance be a shining example for the young generation.

### 1939-1958: Childhood and Youth

Ernst Zündel was born on April 24, 1939, in Calmbach in the Black Forest, Germany, the fourth of six children of lumberjack Fritz Zündel and his wife, Gertrud Zündel, née Meyer, who came from the Augsburg region. From 1938 to 1947, his father, a confirmed Social-Democrat, was in the military as a medic—first at the front and then in American captivity. His mother was a devout Christian.

World War II and its dreadful aftermath for Germany made a lasting impression on the little boy, especially the Allied bombing attacks and the aggravating and dangerous strafing at-

tacks of the fighter bombers, called Jabos, which attacked everything in Germany that moved in the fields, forests, meadows, and on the roads and rails. Added to this were the hunger, the cold, and the bitter privation following Germany’s collapse.

Zündel’s first school days found him in the basement of his hometown’s Protestant church, because the French occupation authorities had billeted soldiers in the local school. Despite malnutrition and the resultant illnesses such as pneumonia, hunger edema etc., the youngster turned out to be a good student, a talented and intelligent but painfully shy boy. Art, history, and essay writing were his favorite subjects in school.

Starving and frequently ill, he was nonetheless soon drawing beetles, bees, and flowers for his classmates or helping them with homework assignments and writing essays for children of “wealthy” parents. In this way, he earned his first “extra rations”—a jam sandwich every now and then.

Before long, the teachers alerted Mother Zündel to her son’s artistic talent, and as a result she found an apprenticeship position for him in Pforzheim, known as the “Golden City” before the war, a city which had been almost entirely destroyed by massive bombing raids just shortly before the war’s end and where up to 20,000 people had been cremated alive in a horrendous fire storm.

Zündel completed his apprenticeship years in a Graphic Arts Institute in bombed-out Pforzheim, 20 km away. He also attended classes for three years in the Graphic Arts Department of the Trade School. He passed his journeyman’s exam with good grades and tried to advance in his profession by applying for a job in Osnabrück, in far-distant northern Germany. One of his reasons for this first “emigration” was to learn proper German—until then he had spoken only Swabian, a dialect which is rather different from High German—and also to rid himself, unobserved by his family and friends, of his troubling shyness. In both he succeeded only to a degree.

1957 was the time of Allied-imposed German re-armament, a process pushed by Konrad Adenauer. Zündel had been raised as a Christian and pacifist and for this reason soon found himself facing a dilemma regarding the impending term of military service. He decided to emigrate a second time, this time for real to overseas, in order to avoid conscription into the Bundeswehr, the German Armed Forces. At that time Canada was the only country in the Western world, which did not require compulsory military service of young men. Canada became his country of choice.

### New Home Abroad

September 3, 1958: 19-year-old Zündel arrived in French-speaking Montreal, Quebec, Canada. He did not know anyone there. He spoke only a few words of English, which he had learned through a correspondence course. He did not speak any French. Soon afterwards he boarded an immigrants’ train to Toronto, where English was spoken.

In the English night school for immigrants in Toronto, which Zündel attended immediately after his arrival in Canada in order to improve his language skills, he met an intelligent and pretty French-Canadian woman who became his wife one year later. This very young marriage produced two sons.

Soon after, the Zündel family relocated back to the French-speaking part of Canada and settled in Montreal, Quebec, where Zündel met Adrien Arcand, the French-Canadian author, newspaper publisher, political philosopher and party leader of a pre-war, pro-German, National-Socialist Christian Party.

Prior to WWII, Mr. Arcand had been a well-known man in Canada. During the war, he had been locked up for six years in a Canadian concentration camp for his political views—without a charge, without a trial, without a sentence, only on the suspicion that he might pose a “risk to Canada” during the war.

In this camp Arcand contracted a kidney ailment from which he never fully recovered. Neither he nor other party members who had been imprisoned along with him, among them Camillien Houd, the French-Canadian Mayor of Montreal, Quebec, Canada’s largest metropolis, ever received so much as a cent in “restitution”!

Like all young people of his post-war generation, Zündel had been taught to hate Hitler and all he stood for and had been brainwashed by Allied occupation authorities-produced books in post-war German schools. Canadian business associates soon suggested to Zündel that he should visit Arcand, due to the latter’s political background and historical knowledge, especially of German-Jewish matters and World War II history. Even though at that time Zündel, like all the young people his age who had gone through the post-war German school system under Allied occupation control, had never doubted the officially taught, Allied-imposed version of Third Reich history, the books and documents he found in Arcand’s library soon made him first curious, then suspicious of what he had been told regarding World War II. This new information eventually changed his life.

Arcand took the young German under his wings because he understood and knew how to counter the poison of “re-education,” the false picture of history instilled in Zündel’s young mind by the Allied “re-educators”. He did this with historical truth from original sources, documents and books in order to enhance Zündel’s understanding of historical analysis. Under Arcand’s influence and guidance, his knowledge and his personal library encompassing more than four thousand volumes, to which he granted the young German free access, Zündel’s thinking soon began to detoxify and to recuperate. It was thus a French-Canadian who turned the young immigrant, thirsting for historical truth and political knowledge, into a thinking German—in distant Canada!

And so it happened that, as news reports reached him in Canada about the first great Auschwitz show trial in Germany in the early 1960s, Zündel already felt the first doubts and Revisionist stirrings. Despite a demanding day-job as graphic artist and photo retoucher he continued to attend evening classes at Sir George Williams University in Montreal, where he studied political science, history and architecture. He wrote his own column, titled “Politics: Past, Present and Future”, for the student newspaper, and contributed items to the university television broadcasts, as well as articles for the ethnic press.

About that time, the Cuban Crisis awakened the Canadians’ interest in the threat of Communism, and Zündel began to give



*Ernst Zündel in trade school 1954*



*Zündel with Adrien Arcand 1963—his Political Mentor, prior to leaving on a 3 1/2 month tour of Europe to meet and interview famous writers, politicians and former soldiers*

anti-Communist lectures at private clubs such as Kiwanis, Rotary etc., in churches, schools, lodges, at businessmen's lunches etc. He also discovered his talent for political radio commentaries and live debates. Almost every evening or night, Montreal residents could hear Zündel on well-known radio talk shows, where he soon became the local Communists' and Zionists' verbal nemesis. Often, stations invited him as guest panelist or participant for hours long broadcasts.

Zündel painted a great deal in his spare time and soon became widely known for his landscape paintings and watercolors, of which he sold more than 700 in Canada and around the world. His paintings and graphic artwork also earned him extra cash, awards and public recognition. In his free time, by writing about current events to newspaper offices and radio and television stations, he persistently defended his homeland, Germany, against anti-German hate propaganda, which was ever more on the rise.

### First Political Activities

Soon a group of like-minded people found themselves drawn to him. Together with his friends, he organized demonstrations and protests outside movie theaters and newspaper offices, which presented slanderous anti-German films, articles and sentiments and which engaged in negative stereotyping and hate propaganda against his homeland. This resulted in frequent television and radio interviews on the topic of the German concentration camps, the National Socialist government's policy toward Jews, Gypsies etc.

Thus, Zündel saw himself forced to deal psychologically, intellectually, and historically with National Socialism and with the phenomenon later to be referred to as "the Holocaust". At that time, the word "Holocaust" had not yet entered the Canadian vocabulary as a synonym for the alleged extermination of the Jews. The term did not become generally accepted until 1977 through the television miniseries by that name, based on a novel by Gerald Greene.

In 1967, Lester Pearson, head of the Liberal Party and Canadian Prime Minister, resigned for health reasons. Zündel ran for the position of Head of the Liberal Party who would automatically become Prime Minister of Canada, if elected as Party leader. Even though he was an immigrant and the youngest candidate ever to run for that office in the history of Canada, he made it to the finals and addressed a live audience of 25,000 people in the Sports Stadium of Ottawa. There, he pleaded for an end to anti-German propaganda in the Canadian media and for the reunification of his homeland. The speech was broadcast by all the radio and television stations in Canada.



Zündel declaring his candidacy for Prime Minister of Canada, Spring, 1968

Ernst Zündel as commercial artist, 1973

To his amazement, his then pending application for Canadian citizenship was turned down by the government of the day—without explanation!

In 1968, having become financially independent thanks to his talent as graphic artist and painter, Zündel embarked on an almost one-year-long tour of Africa, the Middle East, Israel, India, and Asia all the way to Japan, to expand his political horizon and understanding of political conflicts. He read, analyzed and digested everything about history he could get his hands on, especially from Jewish sources, and worked hard on acquiring an independent education. Intensive studies of, and interviews with, political thinkers from every persuasion and nationality, as well as with politicians, writers, military leaders and eyewitnesses of World War II to university professors and book authors from many parts of the world, followed next.

### The Becoming of a Holocaust Revisionist

In the early 1970s, Zündel again roamed the world with notepad, tape recorder and film camera. He met Thies Christophersen who wrote a booklet entitled *Die Auschwitz-Lüge* (The Auschwitz Lie), which Zündel translated into English and then published. This was a key event for the young German national.

Christophersen was a German agronomist who had been stationed in Auschwitz during the war and, together with Auschwitz inmates, had worked in the satellite camp at Raisko to produce natural rubber, which the Germans desperately needed, from dandelions and other plants. He even spent his honeymoon in the Auschwitz camp area. After the war, he wrote a frank and honest account of his observations and experiences there. In this booklet, he stated that he saw no gas chambers in Auschwitz, even though he had free access to all areas of the camp for over a year.

Soon Zündel also published the writings of American Professor Dr. Austin App, one of the best-known German-American community leaders of the post-War period, and translated and published his study *The Six-Million Swindle*.

Because Zündel rebelled and, unlike anybody else in Canada, did something against anti-German hate propaganda, his name soon became a household word. Time and again, his anti-Holocaust demonstrations were mentioned in the press and shown on television. Rapidly he became very well known overseas as well.

In the winter of 1977 and spring of 1978, together with friends, Zündel organized letter-writing campaigns to government agencies on all levels in Canada, the United States, and Germany, and protested against the growing and ever-escalating anti-German propaganda in the press and the broadcasting media. In these early years, well-known Canadian politicians and journalists commented in a positive vein on this topic and his activities.

In summer and fall of 1978, Zündel and his friends protested almost on a daily basis against anti-German hate films on TV, especially against the historically false, emotion-laden miniseries *Holocaust*, which was broadcast throughout North America every night for a week, along with much maudlin promotional hype in the press. Many interviews on the radio, on TV and in the press followed. The Holocaust Lobby reacted

fiercely to Zündel and his friends, who were soon viciously verbally attacked and slandered as “Nazis” by commentators, columnists, and politicians looking for votes.

Spring/summer 1979: Zündel and his rapidly-growing worldwide circle of like-minded friends continued to demonstrate publicly against anti-German hate films on the topic of the “Holocaust,” which were being broadcast ever more frequently throughout Canada, the United States, Europe, and even in Argentina, Chile, and Australia. Zündel organized counter-demonstrations in many places and countries. The Johannesburg/South Africa office of the German weekly magazine *Der Spiegel*—embarrassed by being called “Nestbeschmutzer” (befoulers of their own nest)—called Zündel in Toronto and asked that the demonstrations outside their downtown offices be stopped. In return, *Der Spiegel* offered to report about Zündel’s worldwide “anti-Holocaust campaign”.

Zündel’s friends agreed to stop. A team of *Spiegel* reporters did, in fact, come to Toronto from New York, took pictures and made tape recordings of Zündel’s group at work. However, the interview with Zündel was never printed in *Der Spiegel*. This was a painful but valuable lesson for Zündel.

At the end of 1979, Zündel attended a conference at Northrop University in California, where the “Institute for Historical Review” was founded. There, he conferred with Revisionists from around world, all of whom, to his amazement, had also researched and questioned the so-called “Holocaust” for years. It was there that he found stimulating intellectual reinforcement, as well as companions and invaluable contacts.

Zündel was most impressed by Dr. Arthur Butz, Professor at Northwestern University and author of the trailblazing study and soon-to-be standard Revisionist text *The Hoax of the Twentieth Century*, and by Professor Dr. Robert Faurisson of the Lyon II University in France. Zündel was impressed by Dr. Faurisson’s downright fanatical devotion to detail and historical truth and by his research and document discoveries in the archives in Auschwitz and other former German concentration camps in the East. Especially Dr. Faurisson’s scientific, photo-documented comparisons of American gas chambers and alleged German “gas chambers of the Third Reich” amazed and astounded Zündel. This had a profound impact on him. He promised Dr. Faurisson to pursue these clues independently in North America.

Spring/summer 1980: Zündel met Ditlieb Felderer, the Swedish Revisionist, who, beginning in the 1970s, had undertaken numerous arduous trips and had conducted more than 30 examinations and investigations of Auschwitz and the other former German concentration camps in the East, collected many artifacts, recorded valuable interviews and taken over 30,000 color slides of the sites. Zündel also went on America-wide lecture tours with Thies Christophersen, Udo Walendy and other Revisionists.

Zündel’s publishing firm, Samisdat Publishers, also at first purchased and then produced the first Canadian edition of a British publication *Did Six Million Really Die?*, authored by Richard Harwood, an Englishman. In the middle 1970s, this publication—a most fateful one for Zündel—had already begun its triumphal march as an international revisionist bestseller through 18 nations and 12 translations. In the fall and winter of

1980, Zündel distributed many tens of thousands of copies of *Did Six Million Really Die?* worldwide in several languages, free of charge, financed by donations, to university professors, teachers, clergymen, politicians, and media outlets in North America and Europe.

The Holocaust Lobby sounded the alarm about this “Zündel Truth in History” campaign! There were many interviews from all parts of the world, and this politically uncomfortable publication was even sent to the British Columbia Minister of Justice by someone in the hope that he would move to prosecute Zündel. He did not!

### Beginning of Persecution

In spring and summer 1981, Zündel distributed tens of thousands of audiocassettes with Revisionist content worldwide—again free of charge, again financed by donations. An almost simultaneous mass mailing of tens of thousands of his autobiographical booklet *An mein Volk* (To My People) to friends and European recipients of his newsletters resulted in a media uproar in Germany and Canada—and house searches in Germany: Late March 1981 saw a flood of almost 2,000 German police raids on the homes of Zündel supporters, from Flensburg all the way to Garmisch-Partenkirchen, to confiscate this revisionist material. Everywhere, the search teams demanded and confiscated Zündel’s tapes and the so-called “hate-mongering green booklet” titled *An mein Volk!* It is said that truckloads of seized material were sent to Stuttgart, where legal proceedings had been instituted against Zündel for “incitement of the people”. These German raids caused a big stir in the Canadian media as well.

On May 31, 1981, 2000 Jewish demonstrators gathered in front of the Zündel-House in Toronto’s downtown streets, waving placards and chanting in unison to demand charges against Zündel and his deportation from Canada. The police could hardly restrain the milling, agitated crowd. Zündel’s team guarded the building from the inside. Equipped with tape recorders and movie cameras and disguised as reporters, other friends and supporters mingled with the demonstrators and photographed and documented the pandemonium and their threats of assassination and arson against Zündel. This resulted in the first educational video *Genocide by Propaganda* made of the footage gathered that day. This color video dealing with anti-German hate propaganda, the Holocaust etc., was also distributed to the North American media, mostly free of charge, again financed by donations. Again, many press, TV and radio interviews followed.

In November 1981, in an unprecedented move, the Canadian state denied Zündel his postal privileges! Zündel was banned from mailing anything within Canada, or from Canada to abroad. No letters, no bills, no tax papers, nothing at all could now be mailed to or by Zündel anywhere or anytime! Failure to comply with the postal ban, he was informed, would mean four years’ imprisonment. This decree was not based on any kind of verdict in a trial; it was imposed dictatorially and unilaterally by the Postal Minister alone and was immediately put into force by “Postal Police” with no prior warning. Fortunately, Canadian law granted Zündel the right to appeal to a Postal Tribunal and to have the matter investigated. Zündel appealed the ban and asked for the establishment of a tribunal.

The government had no choice to create such a tribunal, since Zündel insists on his right. During that tribunal, the wealthy Jewess, Sabina Citron from the “Canadian Holocaust Remembrance Association” and none other than the notorious “Nazi hunter” Simon Wiesenthal turned out to be the true instigators of the persecution directed against Zündel.

As a result of this, Zündel was now fighting for his professional survival. Fortunately, he achieved several legal modifications. For one, his graphic arts studio was exempted from the postal ban, and so Zündel managed to survive economically, albeit only barely. The once-thriving company Samisdat Publishing, however, began to lose its financial footing due to this postal ban. Only over-the-counter sales were possible. Tapes and book sales fell off rapidly. Frightened supporters sent fewer donations. His enemies gloated and already saw victory in sight.

All the while, the name “Zündel” and his message were spreading despite or because of the ban. Educational revisionist mailings from the United States maintained the connection via an American address with his ever-growing, worldwide circle of friends, especially in the English-speaking world.

End of 1982, a new era of mass education starts for Zündel: VHS tapes with documentaries about Holocaust revisionism are being copied by the hundreds in the far-flung corners of the world by supporters. Hundreds were sent to Zündel’s now global circle of friends via the still-functional American outpost. These videos were a big hit with supporters all over the world. It was American free-speech supporters and financial donors who kept Zündel’s operation alive in these critical eleven months. The American pillar of his work stood firm! The technical conversion to video was made possible particularly by generous donations from elderly German women and men who could still clearly remember the Second World War. These oldsters made great personal sacrifices at that time. Ernst Zündel became their spokesman and hero. He closed the generation gap. Finally here was a voice which spoke of their sufferings during the War and which defended their Generation and Germany’s honor!

In late summer of 1982, Zündel’s German passport expired. The German Consulate refused to issue him a new one. Now Zündel could not even travel to the neighboring country, America. He was stuck in Canada like a mouse in a trap. In Germany, attorney Jürgen Rieger fought for Zündel’s freedom in the Stuttgart proceedings conducted against him for “inciting the people” as well as for his right to receive a new German passport. In the course of these proceedings, Rieger was able to look at 200 pages of top-secret documents from the German state. These documents, for the first time ever, provided written evidence of the Federal Republic of Germany’s vassal status to the Jewish lobby and made this state of affairs shockingly clear! These papers also included letters from snoopers and informers, which the German Consulates and the German Embassy in Canada evidently utilized in Canada to obtain information on German-Canadians in that country, including their names and addresses.

A brief example, stated in one document: On the occasion of a visit to the Consulate, the German Consul in Toronto received a petition from one of the Jewish leaders of Toronto, re-

questing that the Consul provide him (the Jewish leader) with incriminating materials on Zündel. The Consul assured him that he had none! Seeking help and advice and trying to be obliging, he wrote to the Foreign Office in Bonn. The people there promised to help him out. The Bonn Department of the Interior was also contacted. Bonn’s efficiency proved to be truly amazing! More police raids took place in Germany! Only a few months later, the Department of the Interior in Bonn wrote to the Foreign Office in Bonn, which in turn had its lackeys stationed on-site in Toronto at the consulate and whom it now advised to please see to it that the incriminating material, which was even then being shipped to Canada as diplomatic papers, would be passed on to the Jewish leader in Toronto! It was that easy! And Bonn was that eager to cater to Jewish wishes directed against a German citizen living abroad, a man who had fought for decades to clear Germany’s name! This is what went on behind the scenes in the Federal Republic of Germany!

### **The First Legal Victories**

In winter 1982, Zündel surprisingly won his postal ban case before the Canadian Postal Tribunal. The mail, which had been held back, was now delivered to Zündel by the truckload. Most of the checks had expired. Much of the mail had been rifled and even stolen—by whom, remains a mystery to this day. Zündel suffered staggering financial losses. His publishing company, Samisdat, recovered only slowly, the ban had caused an 80% drop in income. Many supporters became disheartened and withdrew, frightened of the consequences of being linked to Zündel.

Perversely enough, Zündel never received a copy of the Postal Tribunal’s verdict. Only after more than 12 years, he was finally granted the right to see his own verdict in this matter through the courts and Freedom of Information requests! He was not given a copy, however; rather, his lawyer had to copy it by hand, and type it into the computer she had brought along—right there in the Postal Administration Office! Why such elaborate secrecy? Today Zündel knows from other documents which he has gleaned from the government via the courts: the government was seized by panic because the Postal Tribunal, which had been impeached by the government itself, told the Postal Minister, *i.e.*, the government, clearly and unequivocally: Hands off these Holocaust issues! Zündel’s work, the documents stated, involved “a conflict between two peoples, the Germans and the Jews.” The Jewish community, on the other hand, was already in possession of the decision one week after the verdict was handed down, and quoted it in the press! Equality before the law—Canadian style!

Shortly afterwards, attorney Jürgen Rieger also won total victory in the Stuttgart, Germany proceedings against Zündel for “inciting the people.” The state was ordered by the court to release Zündel’s bank account and even to pay for Zündel’s legal fees and court costs. Zündel heaved a sigh of relief, although the media are totally silent about his victory.

At the beginning of 1983, Zündel and his team, entirely free from legal restrictions once again, worked at full swing! Due to the revocation of his passport, Zündel could not yet leave Canada. Instead, he invited well-known Revisionists from all parts of the world to come to Canada to work with him there. Docu-

mentary videos were produced in Zündel's studios and lecture tours were arranged with these guests. Tens of thousands of press releases, brochures, audio- and videotapes on various topics were being sent by him around the world.

An American citizen of German-Polish extraction, Frank Walus, fell victim to the virulent "Nazi war criminals" hysteria, which was suddenly being stepped up in the U.S. Frank Walus came to Zündel in Toronto, seeking help, advice and support. Zündel immediately made a documentary film with him, arranged and widely publicized a press conference and organized lecture programs for Walus before friends. He also raised funds for Walus for appeal proceedings against the US 'Nazi hunters' and against Simon Wiesenthal, the man who was responsible for the wrongful persecution and the misery being inflicted on this quiet, gentle, innocent little man. With Zündel's help, advice and contacts, Walus was finally exonerated in full. As a result, new allies from the United States joined up with Zündel's and support his work.

### The First Zündel Trial in Toronto

Without Zündel's knowledge, the Canadian state had conducted Canada-wide investigations against him for years at the behest of Simon Wiesenthal. On highest orders, fliers, press releases, tapes of radio broadcasts, and television appearances by Zündel had been collected.

Finally, in November 1983, Sabina Citron, defeated in Ottawa before the Postal Tribunal and, by then, Zündel's well-known Jewish adversary, brought criminal charges against Zündel "for knowingly spreading false news", under the Canadian Criminal Code's ancient Section 177, a law that dated from 12th century England.

Many centuries ago, England's aristocrats, including the King, intended to rid themselves of their critics by means of this paragraph. This ancient legal provision was now dusted off by the Jewish activist Citron and her attorneys and used against Zündel because he questioned the Holocaust.

Shortly before Christmas 1983, Zündel was duly dragged before a Canadian Criminal Court. The media were there to record the event. On his way to court he was met by dozens of demonstrators. He was knocked down, spat at, and beaten by thugs from the "Jewish Defense League", the JDL. The media had a field day, with the entire booklet *Did Six Million Really Die?* prominently splashed on the nation's TV screens. Time and again, Canada saw nationwide headlines and broadcasts on the topic of "Freedom of Speech" and "the Zündel Holocaust Trial". This would not last for long.

In early 1984, Zündel became the target of a wave of Jewish terrorist acts that shocked even the Toronto police. Every time there was a court date, Zündel and his attorneys had to run the veritable gauntlet. In plain view of the press, and under the watchful eye of the police, Zündel and his lawyer and friends were now being threatened, pushed, beaten, and spat on. Every day, he and his team had to fight their way into the courthouse.

Zündel went on a major media-wide offensive. He alerted the entire world to this scandalous state of affairs with fiery press releases and the distribution of hundreds of videos and thousands of audiotapes with these threats, providing audio-visual documentation of the violence and often death threats

aimed at him by Jewish thugs and telephone terrorists, while the police stood by in the beginning and did nothing.

Press people from throughout the world began to approach Zündel for interviews. Each of Zündel's court appearances were now accompanied by massive media turnouts. Newscasts about his case on nightly TV were commonplace. Due to the daily violence—and for the first time ever!—Zündel organized his "yellow-helmeted bodyguards." He himself wore a blue hard hat, so the cops could easily locate him in the crowd. This was a bold move on Zündel's part, since private "uniformed" guards are not permitted by law in Canada. These hard hats made him a political celebrity and somewhat of an easily recognizable folk hero. From England, France, Austria, America, and Argentina—from all parts of the world!—volunteers now flocked to Zündel's side to protect him from these Jewish terrorists! The police proved tolerant and let them wear their yellow helmets, glad that they could easily distinguish the disciplined Zündel team from the shrieking Jewish bandits. Time and again, Jewish thugs or violent demonstrators were now shown in the process of being arrested. Everywhere there was talk of Zündel's "media spectacles." So crass was the difference between the "yellow hard hats" and their assailants that the Jewish thugs began to look like movie "extras" who were in Zündel's pay! Before the public's eyes, they turned into "the bad guys"—the so-called "Nazi" in the blue hard hat and his friends wearing yellow hard hats had turned into the "good guys"!

The Jewish forces were beside themselves. They now attacked television reporters verbally and publicly and soon with fists and clubs for showing Zündel in such a positive light in their nightly news reports

Meanwhile, the state moved in the heaviest legal "expert witness" guns it could muster, among them Dr. Raul Hilberg, the "Holocaust Pope", who in the course of decades had put together several weighty tomes on the topic of "the extermination of the Jews in Europe". The pro-Holocaust forces also summoned an 84-year-old Jew, Dr. John Fried from New York, who—much to the prosecution's horror—ended up testifying how he, as editor of the Nuremberg Trial court transcripts, had been in charge of deciding which of these transcripts would make it into print for posterity. He testified and showed how he had edited and selected prosecution-useful transcripts—and thrown everything that was detrimental to the Allie's case into the waste paper basket of history! Until then, it had been assumed by practically all historians that the dozens of volumes were the "complete" sets of those thick transcript volumes in the libraries of the world that issued from the Nuremberg Trials contained everything that had come to light in Nuremberg. It was not until the Zündel trial preliminaries in Toronto in 1984 that the world—and the astonished reporters, most of all—found out what had really taken place in Nuremberg!

As a consequence, to almost everyone's amazement and to the Jewish side's horror, the judge, who was of Ukrainian extraction, decided not to admit these court transcripts as evidence in this trial, since after all they were deemed only "excerpts"—selected fragments of testimony and documents. This decision shocked the Jewish leadership present in the courtroom so badly that the judge had to call for order several times.

In a great hurry, a new judge for the main hearings was selected by the powers-that-be to replace the “uppity” Ukrainian judge!

Meanwhile, on Zündel’s request, the Judge decided to have the public excluded from the proceedings. The media interpreted Zündel’s wish for censorship of the trial as a sign of weakness. Throughout North America, reporters, radio and television commentators and public speakers now attacked Zündel for his alleged cowardice. They sensed disgrace and defeat in the offing for Zündel in the upcoming trial. They thought they were in for a spectacle. For this reason, the press concentrated heavily on the new trial. The intent was to show Zündel up for a fool and a loser. The level of media interest was astounding!

September 1984: Despite massive security measures, someone detonated the first bomb in Zündel’s annex. His building and his neighborhood were shaken up by the explosion. Fortunately no people were injured. Political terrorism à la Beirut had now come to Toronto! Jewish circles contacted the media and claimed responsibility for the pipe bomb, stating brazenly that they had done it in order to scare Zündel and teach him a lesson. To this day, the Toronto police have never identified or arrested the perpetrators. With the explosion of the bomb, Zündel lost all insurance protection.

As a result of the media hype, Zündel lost most customers of his graphics studio. The once flourishing business lost account after account. At the beginning of 1985, Zündel’s business was ruined; only a few smaller clients and personal friends remained faithful to him. This proved to be a mixed blessing: Zündel could now devote his undivided energy and all his attention to the preparations for his First Great Holocaust Trial. Soon, Zündel’s house serves as a university of forbidden thoughts!

On January 7, 1985, the First Great Holocaust Trial began. This trial, lasting 39 court days, was a worldwide media sensation. All of Canada’s television stations and most of the radio stations reported through well-known reporters or columnists almost every day, prominently and in detail, about the events in court.

Zündel now engaged in “public education” on a grand scale, via Canada’s media, far above and beyond the courtroom scene—in the country’s living rooms, offices, and universities. By default, Sabina Citron’s vengeance had caused a vivid sprouting of Holocaust Revisionism. Shock about this public relations disaster followed tangible panic among the Jewish circles. They had not counted on this massive free publicity for Zündel’s cause!

The Zündel media juggernaut rolled on unstoppable and uninterruptedly. Zündel’s good-looking and fearless attorney, Doug Christie, dominated the court. Non-stop, Zündel witness testimony appeared in newspaper headlines and the evening news broadcasts. By contrast, the government’s witnesses showed themselves to be weak and without much credibility, even detrimental to the entire traditional Holocaust story. Day by day, the Crown attorney became ever more nervous, lost 12 pounds and was getting quite haggard! Quite literally, the Holocaust was melting before the public’s incredulous eyes!

By contrast, the atmosphere inside the courtroom became nasty and then downright toxic. The Judge, a visibly hostile

man named Locke, intervened ever more spitefully and frequently in the proceedings against Zündel, turned red in the face with anger, and even threatened to charge Christie himself for lack of respect for the Court because Christie questioned some of the judge’s obviously biased rulings. There were scenes of abuse by Jewish spectators against Zündel’s friends. Even his collaborators and witnesses were threatened. The police stepped in, time and again, to separate the fighting parties. Outside, not far from the courthouse, one of the translators was punched in the face by some thugs. He appeared, dripping blood, in the courtroom.

On March 25, 1985, after the jury returned its guilty verdict, the judge sentenced Zündel to 15 months’ imprisonment and three years on probation. During this time he would be forbidden to say, write or show anything about the Holocaust in public.

The cold steel handcuffs closed about his wrists even while he was still in the courtroom. That very same day, he sat, convicted of thought crimes for the first time in his life, in a lonely, dank and dark prison cell in Canada, far from home. He had dared what no one dared before him. He had confronted the powerful Jewish lobby with a Holocaust question that simply demanded an answer: *Did six million really die?* Now it was time to pay the price. Prison, ridicule, and relentless defamation in the media were that price.

### Attempts of Deportation

On April 12, 1985, the Canadian Department of Citizenship and Immigration ordered a “deportation inquiry.” The inquiry starts on April 29, 1985. Zündel, by then wise to the political use of media props, had painted his face black so as to demonstrate that if he were a black immigrant, he would perhaps be able to enjoy all his rights or even preferential treatment. He pointedly informed the press that as a member of the muchvilified white German minority, he was not granted these advantages. The Immigration judge took precisely 11 minutes to reach his verdict about Zündel: Zündel had to be deported as an “Undesirable” without delay, against which Zündel filed an appeal that same day.

On January 23, 1987, the Appeal Court decided in favor of Zündel due to grave procedural errors. As usual during such court processes, Zündel was in jail again while this happened, where he was detained for the weekend out of sheer bureaucratic chicanery, despite his victory. The excuse he was given by prison authorities was that the judge’s decision came too late in the day—there were no prison officials available during the weekend to release him!

On Monday morning, Canada’s foremost representatives of the press awaited Zündel at the jail’s exit in an almost festive atmosphere. Zündel held a jail gate press conference and settled the score with his opponents—publicly before the press! Once again, the fickle reporters treated him like a folk hero. There was enormous public interest in the reasons for the verdict, and articles and editorials, some even in favor of Zündel, swept the country.

Shortly thereafter, however, the state was taking the Zündel case right to the highest Canadian court, the Supreme Court in Ottawa, in an attempt to overturn the appeal. This failed, how-

ever, and subsequently the first attempt to have Zündel deported failed as well.

### The Second Zündel Trial in Toronto

The second Zündel trial was scheduled for early 1988. Hence, in late 1987, Zündel doubled and tripled his media outreach with press releases, all of which indicated the content and substance of the coming Holocaust Trial. Again, he invited the world media to participate in the trial in Toronto. Even before the trial began, there was a vigorous debate in the Canadian press as to how best to stem the tide of the “Zündel-phenomenon”. As early as February 11, 1987, Lorrie Goldstein, a Jewish columnist with the *Toronto Sun*, had snidely opined that the trial ought to be reported “on page 90, hidden among the soap ads.” On June 8, 1987, the *Calgary Herald*, the largest daily newspaper of Calgary, Alberta, reported:

*“Leading members of the Jewish community visited the major news media of Toronto and implored them to report differently about the new trial than they had about the last.”*

The *Globe and Mail*, Canada’s best-known newspaper, editorialized on August 26, 1987 that a decision ought to be reached “in the public interest” to place “extra restrictions” on the trial reports.

One of the best-known senior reporters in Canada, George Bain, later reported in *Maclean’s Magazine* of May 23, 1988:

*“[...] how unusual it was, and how quickly and unanimously the media managers had responded to the question that they had not been put under any pressure, and that no one had gone to them with the intention of influencing them.”*

Only Ian Urquhart of the *Toronto Star* later admitted openly that a delegation of Jewish leaders had informed him of the wishes of the Jewish community that Zündel’s “hate-filled news and views ought not to receive any publicity.”

On January 18, 1988, the 117<sup>th</sup> anniversary of the founding of the Second German Reich, the Second Great Holocaust Trial began against the German Ernst Zündel in Canada. Media attention is huge.

All the experiences gained in the 1985 trial now bore fruit. He and his team, the witnesses, attorneys, translators etc., were working round the clock. Everything ran like a well-oiled machine.

The editors of the *Toronto Star* had promised the Jewish delegation of leaders that the paper would print its Zündel court-reports always on the same place and page inside the newspaper, and that it would take the personal approval of one of the highest bosses of Toronto’s largest daily to print an account of the Zündel trial elsewhere in the paper, much less on the front page. Ironically, the bottom line of this decision was that the 66 articles printed in the *Toronto Star* about the 1988 Zündel Trial appeared on the same page and at the same place every day, easy for all the readers to find! It was like having a “Zündel column” in Canada’s largest circulation newspaper. Once again Jewish censors had shot themselves in the foot!

The Jewish Defense League and its thugs were of course on duty again on the first court day of 1988, attacking Zündel’s party, just as they had done during the

1985 Zündel Trial. Zündel’s bodyguard was numerically stronger this time and soon had the situation under control. Again, as they had done before, they steadily fought their way through to the entrance of the courthouse. The Toronto Police were also better prepared, and after only a few minutes the ringleaders of the Jewish thugs were handcuffed and lying face-down in the slush and snow on the sidewalk, while Toronto policemen knelt on them and held them down, waiting for the paddy wagons to haul them off to jail.

The media couldn’t have asked for anything better! Their cameras clicked and whirred, and the none-too-pretty picture of the Jewish terrorists lying handcuffed on the ground soon appeared on TV screens and newspaper front pages throughout the country. Prompt sentencing of the thugs was the result—which meant safety for Zündel and his friends on their way to the court, and orderly legal proceedings.

In the courtroom itself, Judge Thomas immediately dove for cover and hid behind the principle of “judicial notice”, which is a rarely used concept in Canadian court tradition—but which occurs routinely in Revisionist trials in Germany, Austria and Switzerland. “Judicial notice” is a legal term and indicates that certain matters are not open to doubt—such as, for example, that the sun rises in the east and sets in the west, or that night follows day. This was to be the guiding principle pertaining to the “Holocaust” topic for this trial!

To apply such a legal principle in such a serious and controversial historical court case in Canada, where so many issues were disputed, violated the Anglo-Saxon tradition of freedom of speech and opinions and civil rights, even the Canadian Charter of Rights and Freedoms. In fact, it was unheard-of! Attorney Doug Christie had to fight with the judge over every word and every sentence. In the end, he was able to tone down the judge’s “judicial notice of the Holocaust” ruling—unfortunately, he could not prevent it entirely. In the Second Great Holocaust Trial, Judge Thomas coyly refused to talk about the “Six million”!

This was important, because it meant that Zündel would not be allowed to defend himself with all the facts and documents at his disposal. The Judge forbade it. The only question that remained was whether Zündel was “too dumb to understand the self-evident”, or whether he acted “with malicious intent against the Jews” when he dared to raise his questions about the “Holocaust”!

Thus, Zündel stood before the jury like one who was not quite “normal”, or “right in the head”—for according to the Judge’s decree, was it not crystal clear that a “Holocaust” had happened and that any normal person must be able to grasp that? After all, the “self-evident” nature of the Holocaust could



*Ernst Zündel with his lawyer Douglas Christie in front of the courthouse in Toronto*      *Ernst Zündel with some of his friends during the second Zündel trial in 1988*



be shown and proven with hundreds of books written by eye witnesses, Holocaust survivors and historians whose material was freely available in any library!

Lawyer Christie told Zündel that under these conditions, and given Judge Thomas's "judicial notice", he could not possibly win the case for his client. He advised Zündel to restrict his defense to a minimum, not to waste his time, and to save the money required for the enormous costs entailed in the defense of a losing proposition. Christie kept beseeching Zündel:

*"Before this judge, in this courtroom, in this court, the battle is hopeless! I can't win it for you!"*

Zündel requested time to think it over. A few days later he called his inner circle team together, outlined the situation and told them:

*"We're soldiering right on! This time I am not fighting for myself. I'm fighting for the honor of my Fatherland. I want to have our extremely important witness testimony recorded in the Canadian court transcripts and the history books for posterity. We're fighting this together—down to the bitter end!"*

The media pressure and the threats of violence against Zündel diminished markedly after the judge has taken "judicial notice" of the Holocaust. The uniformed policemen, who to date had accompanied Zündel's every step, even in the courthouse and on his way to the washroom, now disappeared. Clearly even the uppermost echelons in the Police Department knew what a favor had been handed the Holocaust Lobby! There was an air of anticlimax in the halls of justice. The Holocaust Lobby triumphed openly, as though the ruling of "judicial notice" had already guaranteed forever the lie's victory over truth.

Zündel and his attorney Christie took hours-long walks through the snowy parks near the Zündel-House and discussed in detail the possibilities that were still open to them. Next on the discussion agenda were the specialists, witnesses and court experts who had come from all parts of the world to help. Zündel sounded out their attitudes, and in the end he himself set the course for the trial: in spite of his attorneys' and some of his foremost advisors' recommendations, he would see the trial through as planned—in-depth and as though no "judicial notice" ruling had occurred.

He declared that it would be attorney Christie's task to block, to undermine, to by-pass, to ignore the judge's "judicial notice", to hollow it out and to cut it down to size, bit by bit via "salami tactic" with a kind of "policy of small steps", until in the end the Zündel Team would be able to demolish or at least neutralize and invalidate the government's evidence. The witnesses for the defense would attempt to have all their documents submitted and discussed in court, regardless of the outcome. In this way the Zündel Team would engage in judicial positional warfare, digging down into the subject matter in a kind of judicial trench warfare—much like many battles were fought in the First and often in the Second World War on the battlefields of Europe!

This turned out to be a tough decision! The Zündel-House became a Command Bunker extraordinaire, from where the court battle was planned and prepared with many helpers. Inside the courtroom, day in, day out, Zündel's team of lawyers,

witnesses and advisors now revised and rewrote Germany's recent history—"judicial notice" or no "judicial notice"! The Crown attorney and the Judge could hardly believe their eyes and ears, clearly frustrated by the happenings. Slice by slice and day by day, the old and false Hollywood fake history version of the Holocaust version was dissected, scrutinized, debunked!

### **The Leuchter Report**

In the midst of the legal proceedings, electrifying news hits the Zündel-House much like a lightning bolt! The warden of one of the largest American prisons, Bill Armontrout, who was to serve as Zündel-witness and to testify about the involved technical procedures in American gassings of felons sentenced to death, suggested an expert, Fred Leuchter from Boston, as witness for the defense in questions pertaining to gas chambers! Fred Leuchter, he said almost in passing—not knowing that history would be forever changed—was just the right man. He was currently the only expert and consultant in the entire United States on matters of execution equipment, including electric chairs and gas chambers! Armontrout even had the address and telephone number of this potential expert witness on hand!

What a sensation! The legal team had not even known that such an expert still existed! They had been under the impression that most had retired or died!

Zündel reacted with lightning speed, even though he was already in the midst of the actual trial proceedings. Without hesitation he sent his foremost adviser, Professor Robert Faurisson, to Boston to check Leuchter out thoroughly.

It turned out that Leuchter believed in the Holocaust and that he did not doubt the gas chambers, insofar as he had heard about them. However, everything else about him indicated that here was a man who knew what he was doing, that he understood his job, and that he was honest and professionally ethical.

Dr. Faurisson flew back to Toronto to report to Zündel. Leuchter was asked to come to Toronto himself to meet with Doug Christie and speak with the other experts and to analyze and to familiarize himself with the documents and testimony of both sides, especially Dr. Raul Hilberg's trial transcripts of the 1985 trial and the statements in his books. The models of Auschwitz and Birkenau, which the Zündel team had constructed to scale from German blueprints discovered by Dr. Faurisson at the Auschwitz archives were also shown and explained to him.

Zündel asked Leuchter for a cost estimate for his expert report and testimony. The price was steep; but the testimony was extremely important. Now what to do? From where was the extra money for Leuchter's report to come? Zündel examined bank statements and current income from donations. He compared the constantly accruing expenses and considered tapping his strategic financial reserve. He sounded out his supporters near and far to see whether any extra donations might be obtained.

Meanwhile, Leuchter flew back to Boston. Time was of the essence, since the trial was already approaching half time. Zündel spent entire nights on the telephone and explained the situation to donors both large and small. In the end, some larger

contributions from several elderly German women and men became the deciding factor in this historically so exceedingly important move.

At that point, Zündel made a bold decision. Leuchter would not merely testify. He would go after evidence first-hand! Together with a small, quickly-assembled group consisting of a translator for Leuchter, his wife who would double as typist and secretary, a draftsman and a video- and cameraman, it was decided that the Leuchter team would fly to Auschwitz and Majdanek in what was then still Communist Poland. He would examine and measure the facilities and draw up precise technical building and floor plans. Working meticulously to prevent contamination, he would take material samples, wrap them up carefully, and smuggle them back to the United States, where a well-known laboratory would examine and analyze them for their Zyklon B content. This dramatic expedition would be carried out clandestinely while the trial still continued in Toronto!

At the Zündel-House it felt like at General Staff Headquarters during wartime! People were busy planning, testing, measuring, weighing and packing. Work plans were drawn up. Visas, passports and plane tickets were arranged in a great hurry. And then the word was: "Silence!"

The Zündel-Leuchter-Holocaust-Expedition left North America and Europe at different times and via different airports. Friendly Poles awaited them, to be of assistance, at the other end. Everything went off without a hitch.

The rest is Revisionist history! Leuchter's investigation was first rate pioneering work. Today millions of people around the world already know that the forensic evidence of Leuchter's report and Professor Roth's Auschwitz sample analysis have acquitted Germany of the crime of having carried out or at least attempted the genocide of the Jews by means of "gas chambers."

On April 20, 1988, 99 years after the birth of a certain man, Zündel introduced the witness Leuchter and his report to the Court in Toronto. Panic! Horror! The faces of the Jewish representatives showed total disbelief! The Judge and Crown attorney were speechless at this development! The Judge ordered a lengthy break to recover his composure. Then the jury members were sent from the courtroom.

In their absence, and under orders of strict secrecy and a ban on publication for the media, negotiations were conducted to determine what the extremely important "Witness Leuchter" could or could not testify to, and what the Court would graciously "accept" and allow as evidence to be put to the jury!

What happened next was a legal disgrace! Leuchter was forbidden to say anything about his findings in the presence of the jury! The Crown and the Judge wanted to rescue what could still be rescued, and felt that they would be able to embarrass the defense by demanding the personal appearance, for cross-examination, of the expert chemist who had performed the analysis in the American laboratory—the analysis which would consign the claim of Jewish mass murders by Zyklon B gas to the dust heap of history. This decision to get the chemist could indeed prove dangerous to the defense, since the man in question worked thousands of kilometers away in the United States. No one could force him to fly to Toronto to testify. It was truly touch and go! Zündel was on the phone for hours! But in the

end, late at night, everything was arranged! Professor Dr. Roth, for ten years professor for chemistry at the famous Cornell University in the United States, would testify personally the very next day! Of course he demanded a horrendous fee of US\$ 300.00 per hour from the instant he left his house until the moment he returned. These funds, too, were somehow raised by Zündel.

The next morning in court, Christie stood up and calmly informed the judge that he intended to call as his next witness the chemistry expert, Dr. Roth, who had, in an American laboratory, analyzed Leuchter's brick sludge and concrete samples from Auschwitz! The Judge and Crown attorney were flabbergasted! Again, they had shot themselves in the foot!

The next day, April 22, 1988, David Irving, the famous British historian and best-selling author of over 30 books on World War II, who until then had also believed in the Holocaust, took the stand in Toronto as the last witness for the Zündel defense. To the amazement and shock of all present, Irving publicly revised his previous views on the gas chambers and the Holocaust! He called the Leuchter report a "shattering" document. Looking over at Zündel in the dock, he said that it was "a stroke of genius" on the part of the defense to have commissioned these first ever forensic investigations of Auschwitz!

Leuchter's and Irving's testimony were the culmination of the 1988 trial. But they were unfortunately also the beginning of massive persecution that both Leuchter and Irving were subjected to ever since.

On May 11, 1988, Zündel was found "guilty" by Judge Thomas and the jury as predicted. "Judicial notice" made no other verdict possible. The jury had no choice. Night follows day. Certain "facts" may not be called into question, all the forensic evidence notwithstanding—not even at the end of the twentieth century! Remember Galileo! In a hate-laced, vicious judgment, Judge Thomas sentenced Zündel to nine months imprisonment without parole. Again, Zündel was led off in handcuffs straight to Toronto's Don Jail.

However, thanks to generous donations, Zündel was soon released on cash bail. The gag order, stricter this time than in 1985, was re-imposed. Zündel was not allowed to leave downtown Toronto. He was ordered to report twice a week to the police and a parole officer in the inner city, along with dope pushers and pimps. The political thumbscrews were being re-applied. The media were given carte blanche for months and even years to come. Venom, filth and lies were dumped on Zündel by the bucketful. He could not answer back. His reputation was severely damaged. It was media sharks in a feeding frenzy all over again. Now he was a disreputable, convicted "Nazi" whom the media, the politicians and the mob could attack and vilify with impunity at every opportunity. He is fair game—as were once Hutten, Hus, and Luther!

On the very day of the "guilty" verdict, Zündel's attorneys registered their "leave for appeal" with the court, since they had preparing it already in advance in wise expectation of the coming verdict.

During the first week of May, however, just prior to his conviction, Zündel had mailed more than 20,000 brochures that bore the title *Es ist vollbracht* ("It is done!") to Germany. In it,

he had summarized the substance of the Second Great Holocaust Trial. Copies were sent to all German Members of Parliament, Members of the Landtag, the German press, and the Federal German elite per se. This would keep Germany's elite from pleading ignorance of the historical truth and of Leuchter's findings. No one would be permitted to say at some later date they had been uninformed of sensational findings and facts unearthed in this second Zündel trial. The list of recipients of this brochure is still held in the Zündel archives. "There shall be no excuse!" The truth and the facts are now known to every member of the German vassal state!

### **German Defeat, Canadian Victory...**

September 18-22, 1989: The Ontario Appeals Court heard Zündel's case. The Judges were Brooke, Norden and Galligan. The atmosphere was charged with clearly visible disdain and dislike—quite the opposite of the first appeal proceedings where Justice Howland had still presided. The media vilification campaign had been effective. This time the judges were clearly opposed to Zündel. Zündel could anticipate the outcome of this second appeal trial in advance. That very week in France, Dr. Faurisson, Europe's most noted Revisionist, was nearly beaten to death by unknown assailants.

Early 1990: The Ontario Appeals Court decided against Zündel, just as he had expected. Subsequently, Zündel appealed to the highest court in Canada to hear his case. In the meantime, Zündel helped to organize the "Leuchter Congress" in Munich with the help of German friends during the fall and winter months of 1990-1991. The best-known Revisionists in the world would meet at this "Congress of Alternative Historians" in Munich—at least that was the plan.

In early 1991, however, the County Court Munich issued an arrest warrant against Zündel relating to an old charge of "inciting the people", because a person or persons, unknown to Zündel, had conveniently and anonymously mailed edited Zündel videotapes, "enriched" with European news programs and footage, to addresses in Germany. Unaware that this had happened, Zündel flew to Germany to participate in the preparations for the planned "Leuchter Congress" and to film interviews with some of the attendees. He did not know of the arrest warrant, and flew straight into the arms of disaster.

The Leuchter Congress—first permitted, then forbidden, then permitted again by authorities in Germany—was forbidden for good again in the end. The meeting hall owners canceled the agreement. DM 6,000 in rent for the German museum was gone. Legal bills were staggering. Harassment of this kind was becoming more frequent in Germany. These acts of censorship were permitted there by law. Repression ruled ever more brazenly.

On March 21, 1991, Zündel was arrested in Munich during an interview break with the well-known German book author Ingrid Weckert and thrown in jail. He was soon convicted in absentia—meaning, while he was still imprisoned in Munich!—for newsletters, videos, a revisionist publications about *The Diary of Anne Frank* and, on the whole, "for denigrating the memory of persons deceased", meaning for questioning the Holocaust. The fine was enormous: DM 30,600.00 (some \$15,000)!

In early November 1991, the second Zündel trial in Germany began. These proceedings, too, turned out to be a joke. Not one of the witnesses who had been admitted by the court in Canada was permitted to testify in Germany. Noted experts such as Leuchter or Faurisson, expressly qualified by a Canadian court in his Toronto trials, were forbidden to testify—no expert witness, not a single exonerating document was admitted in Munich! On December 22, 1991, Zündel was once again convicted, but the fine was reduced to DM 14,600.00.

Back in Canada, Zündel was surprised by an unexpected testamentary bequest, which enabled him suddenly to buy commercial radio or even television airtime in the regular media in the United States. He quietly produced on-air commercials and new brochures in his publishing house, as well as a 567-page book about the Second Great Holocaust Trial in 1988, compiled by one of his attorneys, in readiness for the day when his gag order would no longer be an impediment, either through the start of his incarceration or his victory before the Supreme Court, when the gag order would cease to be in force. He intended to launch this book on the market immediately—in jail, or free!

In various parts of the world, other books were being written and published about Zündel's work and sacrifices. Friends composed hundreds of thousands of fliers and small brochures in many countries, from Brazil to Australia, discussing the Leuchter Report. Despite the Canadian gag order, Zündel's revisionist seeds began to bear fruit in even the most remote corners of the globe. The "Revised Holocaust" genie was out of the bottle!

In revisionist history, the Leuchter Report was a milestone. It rapidly expanded into a "Total Truth Campaign". The Zündel case and the Leuchter Report were now being discussed everywhere and served as the springboard for debates. The Leuchter Report became the foundation for further investigations of Auschwitz by the well-qualified and courageous young German chemist, Germar Rudolf, and the distinguished Austrian engineer, Walter Lüftl.

David Irving, the British historian, also pushed the Holocaust debate forward in worldwide speaking tours. He even published a special English edition of the Leuchter Report, with his own foreword and color photos, which caused a sensation, and sent it to all the members of the House of Lords, as well as to all chemistry professors in England.

This move marked the start of David Irving's own suffering. He was arrested in Canada, convicted, and expelled from the country. He was thrown out of Rome and banned from Australia and New Zealand. He was forbidden to enter South Africa. In Germany, he was convicted and thereby criminalized, with grave consequences for his career as an author and for his personal life.

In summer 1992, the miracle happened! In a 4-3 decision the Supreme Court of Canada decided in favor of Zündel—after nine years of litigation! The sensation was complete! Briefly, Zündel's star shone brightly on the firmament of history. Reporters and commentators for the television networks—everyone crowded round him.

Repeatedly, Zündel reached out to his political opponents, pleading: "Let us reason together!" His conciliatory offers of

dialogue with these Jewish circles were turned down coldly and arrogantly. There was no interest in any communication with the tenacious champion of the German cause.

### Publicity Offensive

Now that the gag order was gone, Zündel's information outreach rolled on inexorably for weeks and months on end. The passing of two elderly Zündel supporters had resulted in unexpected extra funds in the form of testamentary bequests. Zündel used the funds to buy more airtime with American radio and TV stations and kept on broadcasting state-of-the-art Revisionism across America and Canada. He also paid for television time on U.S. satellites. His programs were now on the air from Mexico to the North Pole and the Caribbean, broadcast all across Canada, the United States and right across the ocean to Hawaii. Salaries, printing and postage expenses keep emptying the coffers, but it was vital now to break new ground for truth.

The Holocaust Lobby found itself on the defensive and was changing its tactics accordingly. On all sides it exerted economic pressure and indirect emotional and sometimes financial terrorism on the broadcasters, stations and satellite firms that ran Zündel's programs. It met with limited success. In many cases, intimidation worked. Some broadcasters canceled Zündel's contracts. Some satellite owners drew back. One radio station burned down after it announced it would carry Zündel broadcasts. Time and again Zündel sought and found new offers. His information broadcasts and videos seemed to be everywhere all at once—from Los Angeles, Detroit, Houston and Chicago right up to Anchorage. All the hard, dedicated work behind the scenes by his volunteers and staff, in between the trials, was now paying off. The Zündel Truth Campaign was on a roll, and nothing seemed to stop it!

End of 1993, after a 30-year wait, Zündel re-applied for Canadian citizenship for the second time. Meanwhile, Zündel had recovered his right to a German passport from the German Federal Administrative Court, and now he could travel again. He flew to Spain, England, France, Belgium, Holland, Denmark and Poland. In Auschwitz he made a sensational video with the young Jewish Revisionist David Cole, a highly intelligent budding filmmaker. This video disgraced the Holocaust Lobby where it hurt them the most, because in it, this young Jew, yarmulke and all, showed and explained to Zündel, the German, and the world, via film, all the things about Auschwitz that had been faked, reconstructed and fabricated by the Polish Communists in order to deceive the gullible!<sup>1</sup>

Since summer 1994, Zündel could be heard at his "Voice of Freedom" program on worldwide short-wave radio, and throughout America on short wave and the AM band. Six Canadian provinces and 18 American states were receiving Zündel's programs via AM radio. For months, the Holocaust Lobby resorted to special "intervention commandos" which showed up as delegations everywhere Zündel broadcast from, to exert pressure on stations broadcasting Zündel-programs—sometimes to success, often in vain! Undeterred, the Zündel media avalanche rolled on!

In 1994, Zündel addressed the annual conference of The Institute for Historical Review, summarizing the decades-long, often arduous path of Revisionism. At this conference, he met

Dr. Ingrid Rimland, a California resident and award-winning writer of German ethnic descent.

Starting in 1995, Zündel produced a great quantity of TV documentaries, which were broadcasted by various U.S. stations. In October 1996, for the first time ever, Zündel broadcasted into Germany—from Europe via Radio Moscow, based in Königsberg, now called Kaliningrad. It was an ironic twist of fate that Zündel's German-language "Stimme der Freiheit" (Voice of Freedom) programs were also broadcast into Russia by this same station from this ancient German city.

### Revisionism on the Internet

In winter of 1994/95, Zündel took the first steps into cyberspace with the help of American friends. This again unleashed a worldwide avalanche of protest. The first Internet Provider for the *Voice of Freedom* content was put under massive pressure and canceled the account after only a few months. Eventually, in the summer of 1995, Ingrid Rimland found another Provider, Web Communications in Santa Cruz, California, one of America's and perhaps the world's largest Internet providers with 1,300 customers.

In the meantime, the Revisionist website on the Internet, known as the [www.Zundelsite.org](http://www.Zundelsite.org), was becoming more sophisticated through the work of Dr. Ingrid Rimland, its originator, designer, owner, and webmaster. After much wrangling and correspondence back and forth, primarily between Ingrid Rimland and one Jamie McCarthy, webmaster of a traditional Holocaust website called "Nizkor"—hostile to Revisionism and operated and financed mostly by tax deductible donations from Jewish donors—McCarthy pressed for a worldwide electronic debate (later he backpedaled and called it a "rebuttal") about the Holocaust.

Both parties agreed that both sides would make an honest effort and coordinate this electronic confrontation in order to clear up misunderstandings about the Holocaust and to focus on historical truth—whatever the facts in the case! In two faxed letters of January 5 and 8, 1996, Zündel informed the Simon Wiesenthal Centre in Los Angeles that this electronic debate would take place and invited them to be a part. Within 48 hours the Simon Wiesenthal Centre wrote to 2,000 University Presidents and Internet Service Providers, calling for "self-censorship" by ISPs against the "Revisionists".

The Simon Wiesenthal Center's attempts at censorship jolted the American media. In the first weeks of January 1996, all hell broke loose on the Internet and in cyberspace. Reporters, television crews, radio shows and computer magazines focused on the Zundelsite. Even the *New York Times* ran an article on January 10. Within a few days, the news of the impending electronic debate whipped up such waves of frenzy and panic that Deutsche Telekom, the recently privatized German communications outfit, actually tried to block reception of all 1,300 American websites of the Zundelsite Internet provider, Web Communications, just to prevent access to the Zundelsite by Germans!

The numbers of visitors to the Zundelsite grew astronomically. Electronic Internet traffic to the Zundelsite became so snarled that the hosting company had to install a "governor", a sort of electronic emergency brake.

There had never been anything like it: an electronic World War was raging in cyberspace, with freedom-of-speech fighters on one side and the dark forces of the Holocaust censors on the other! Media folks scrambled and screamed for interviews. Within days, the Zundelsite became the fulcrum for a global anti-censorship movement.

Students at various American universities and also in other countries all the way to Australia for the first time decorated their Web pages with the blue ribbon of freedom, defying the censorship of the Holocaust Lobby! More than a dozen individuals—total strangers all over the planet, mostly students—rushed in to save the Zundelsite from the rabid rabbis of the Simon Wiesenthal Center! Computer buffs who understood the technical side of this “War of the Blue Ribbons” started to copy the Revisionist content of the Zundelsite and mirrored it on their own computers or that of their universities!

Like a miracle, the Zundelsite doubled, tripled, quadrupled! A website was cloning itself! On air!

Within days, mirror sites spontaneously sprang up to undermine the German government’s attempt at censorship. All this was taking place in California, where the Zundelsite was located in a small tourist town by the Pacific Ocean and was observed, uploaded and managed from San Diego. Ingrid Rimland would later comment that it felt as though she was sitting at the controls of an electronic jumbo jet—with no idea what kept it in the air!

In the third week of February the German government threw up its hands in frustration, and the world press declared: “Zündel victorious in Internet battle!”<sup>2</sup>

On Mai 21, 1998, the *Discovery Channel* shows a documentary about the Zundelsite at its best time. Visitor numbers to the Zundesite skyrocketed once more.

### Who Lacks Arguments Will Resort to Violence

In spring of 1995, the opposition turned to the mob. For months the Zündel-House was the target of malicious, violent multicultural demonstrations, often 2,000 to 3,000 strong. Posters repeatedly showed up by the thousands throughout Toronto in that period, urging violence against Zündel. These posters contained explicit instructions as to how to make Molotov cocktails to burn the Zündel-House down. There were also posters bearing death threats, showing Zündel in the cross hairs of a rifle, giving his full address, photo, a map to the Zündel-House etc. Security measures in and around the Zündel-House were stepped up one more time as a precaution.



Zundel doing one of his T.V. shows in Moscow in 1994

Damaged inventory after the arson against the Zündel House in 1995

On April 4, 1995, an “Anti-Fascist Militia” organization sent Zündel an anonymous threat with a razor blade and a mousetrap, culminating in a bomb threat.

On May 7, 1995, shortly before 5 o’clock in the morning, an unknown arsonist threw a napalm-like fluid against the Zündel-House and lit a match. The building was soon engulfed in flames. At that time, Zündel was on a speaking tour at the other end of the country, so he saw the fire on the TV news. The fire marshal estimated the loss at \$400,000. Zündel’s furniture, equipment, and archival material was almost completely destroyed

During the week of May 20, 1995, Zündel received a well taped up “book parcel” in the mail. The house still reeked of fire and smoke and the wrecked roof was leaking through countless huge gaps. Therefore Zündel put the mysterious parcel aside and warned his employees and comrades not to open it; he would take care of it himself as soon as he had time. He sensed that something was wrong.

The next Saturday, he took this parcel, shook it gingerly, photographed everything—the sender’s return address, the stamps, etc.—and then prepared to open it outside. By a lucky coincidence a friend called, telling a weekend staffer, when asked if he had ever heard of this return address, that it was fake, that he had used that address for his political group two years earlier.

Now Zündel knew that, in all likelihood, the parcel contained a bomb. He placed the parcel in his car’s trunk on a bag of birdseed to make sure that it would have a smooth ride, and drove it personally to the police station. The police bomb squad x-rayed the parcel and indeed discovered a powerful bomb that would have killed everyone in a 90-yard radius, had it exploded! Later in the day, a special unit of the police detonated the bomb harmlessly by remote control in a quarry near Toronto. Television crews were present to film the event. Zündel watched it on the evening news.

Thanks to some larger donations, Zündel’s house was repaired quickly and equipped with new furniture.

### Legal Harassment

On August 5, 1995, the Canadian Minister of Citizenship and Immigration informed Zündel that the Canadian secret service had classified him a “security risk” to Canada! Thus, Zündel’s application for Canadian Citizenship was in serious jeopardy, but Zündel decided to challenge this classification legally. A bit more than a year later, the Canadian government lost this court case, but won the appeal at the Supreme Court on April 30, 1998.

Early 1996, Sabina Citron filed another criminal complaint against Ernst Zündel for “defamation of the Jews,” but the case was thrown out by the court for lack of evidence. A few months later, Citron sued Zündel civilly, this time for “slander” and “damages” to the tune of \$3.5 million! For his part, Zündel sued his Jewish persecutor to pay him \$8 million for her malicious prosecution and for vilifying him.

As a reaction to this, Sabina Citron came up with yet another persecution wrinkle. She brought a

complaint against Zündel before the Canadian Human Rights Commission. Not to be far behind, the Toronto Mayor's Committee on Community and Race Relations likewise brought a complaint against Zündel before the same Human Rights organization.

What followed was an almost four-years lasting legal trench-warfare, during which the Canadian authorities applied methods which can only be compared with the methods used during the infamous Stalinist show trials. This was possible because so so-called Human Rights Commissions in Canada are not bound by procedural rules, but can define their own rules and apply to the disadvantage of the defendant.<sup>3</sup>

On May 25, 1998 the Tribunal issued its by now famous, or infamous, ruling by proclaiming that "Truth is not a defense!" Hence, in these tribunals the truth is irrelevant! The only thing that counts are the feelings of the so-called "victims." Shortly thereafter, in an unanimous decision, the Canadian Parliament banned Zündel from the entire precincts of Parliament! During June of 1998, this banning is one major topic in all Canadian media.

C-PAC, the Canadian Parliamentary Channel, filmed and broadcast the entire Zündel press conference in full on June 6, 1998. On June 8, Canada's *Globe and Mail* and the *Ottawa Citizen* wrote strong-worded editorials on Zündel's ban from Parliament, excoriating the Human Rights industry as a weapon of political interests. On June 15, 1998, the Canadian news magazine *MacLeans* and the *London Free Press* demanded the dissolution of the Human Rights Commissions.

On August 2, 1998, *The New York Times* (p. 18) published a remarkably fair and objective article about the Zundelsite and the Toronto Tribunal hearings, which was syndicated in dozens of large U.S. newspapers: As a result, the visitor count to the Zundelsite shot up to 40,000 documents accessed within 24 hours and remained heavy for weeks.

Early 1999, Zündel's lawyer Doug Christie, too, was banned from the press room located in the Parliament buildings—his "crime" was merely being Zündel's lawyer! The Christie ban made headlines across Canada. He was repeatedly interviewed by major media.

In March 1999, Zündel managed to have a hearing about the legality of the Human Rights Tribunals, but one by one, he lost not only this case but all the others as well.

### The Last Stronghold of Freedom—End of the Line

Early 2000, Ernst Zündel married the U.S. citizen Ingrid Rimland and immigrated to the United States. Due to his marriage to a U.S. citizen, he applies for permanent legal residence. The couple bought a house in a valley of the Tennessee Appalachian Mountains and retreated almost completely from any revisionist work. Only Ingrid Rimland continued to send out her daily email newsletters to a restricted number of subscribers. The proceedings for legal residence were started properly, but some communication problems apparently evolved between



*The arrested Ernst Zündel at his arrival in Toronto, Feb. 19, 2003*

Zündel and his immigration lawyer. As a result of this, Ernst Zündel missed a scheduled hearing at the U.S. Immigration and Naturalization Service in spring 2001. Since neither Ernst Zündel nor his lawyer followed up with the U.S. authorities in this matter, the U.S. authorities decided some two years later that Ernst Zündel had abandoned his application for permanent legal residence, that he had massively overstayed his visitor visa waiver which he had used to enter the USA, and that he would be deported. Hence, on February 5, 2003, Ernst Zündel was arrested

and taken into custody. On February 17, the U.S. authorities tried to deport him to Canada without having informed the Canadian authorities, but the Canadians refused to accept him back. Thus, Ernst Zündel had to stay temporarily in the Batavia Federal Detention Facility near Buffalo for two days until the U.S. and the Canadian authorities agreed upon the proceedings. After that, Zündel was finally deported to Canada, where he is kept in custody in a high security prison close to Toronto.

Since Ernst Zündel has lived outside of Canada for more than three years, his permanent legal residence in Canada has expired, so that only one reason can prevent him from getting immediately deport to his country of citizenship Germany: As soon as he crossed the border to Canada, Ernst Zündel applied for political asylum in Canada.<sup>4</sup> Meanwhile, the German government has requested Zündel's extradition,<sup>5</sup> and the Canadian government has assigned its "top Nazi hunter" to prosecute Zündel.<sup>6</sup> Statements by the Canadian Immigration authorities indicate that Ernst Zündel is viewed as a crystallization point for right-wing extremist „hate propagandists" and violent criminals, due to which he is considered to be a danger for Canada's security and will be deported under any circumstances.<sup>7</sup>

### Notes

The original Internet article has been slightly abridged, revised, and updated for this printed version. We apologize for the small size of the pictures reproduced in this article. We could have asked Mrs. Zündel for higher resolution pictures, but we did not want to bother her with such irrelevant questions during these hard times of struggling for the freedom of her husband.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. "David Cole Interviews Dr. Franciszek Piper, Director, Auschwitz State Museum", VHS Video, distributed by CODOH, P. O. Box 439016, San Diego, CA 92143, USA (online: [codoh.com/cole.ra](http://codoh.com/cole.ra)); for an abridged text version see: David Cole, "A Jewish Revisionist's Visit to Auschwitz", *JHR* 13(2) (1993), pp. 11-13 (online: [codoh.com/gcgv/gcgvcole.html](http://codoh.com/gcgv/gcgvcole.html))

<sup>2</sup> Cf. I. Rimland, "Revisionismus im Cyberspace", *VffG* 1(2) (1997), pp. 91-99.

<sup>3</sup> For more details see the reports posted at the Zundelsite, [www.zundelsite.org](http://www.zundelsite.org).

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *The Mountain Press*, Feb. 12, 2003; [http://www.zwire.com/site/news.cfm?newsid=7010847&BRD=1211&PAG=461&dept\\_id=169689&rft=6](http://www.zwire.com/site/news.cfm?newsid=7010847&BRD=1211&PAG=461&dept_id=169689&rft=6); *The Globe & Mail* (Toronto); 20.2.2003; <http://www.globeandmail.ca/servlet/story/RTGAM.20030220.wxszund0220/BNStory/National>

<sup>5</sup> *National Post*, Feb. 21, 2003

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, Feb. 28, 2003; cf.

[www.nationalpost.com/search/site/results.asp?keywords=ernst%2Bzundel](http://www.nationalpost.com/search/site/results.asp?keywords=ernst%2Bzundel)

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, March 5, 2003.

# Bing goes Hayward's Ghost

## On the Destruction of Academic Freedom Down Under

By Dr. Fredrick Töben

New Zealand is not exactly the country that causes headlines in the world's media, nor is it a place where one would expect infringements on civil rights of academics. But this is exactly what happened during the past couple of years. In the early 1990s, two young historians had written their master's theses on controversial topics of World War Two history. Their studies were highly praised by their supervisors, but several years later, mainly Jewish pressure groups claimed that these theses are an abomination simply because these Jews did not agree with the theses' conclusion, and they also demanded that the two young historians should lose their academic titles. Fortunately, they did not succeed with this. But both young scholars were harassed and humiliated, and an example was made for all historians to learn: should they dare to come to research conclusions that are unwelcome by Jewish pressure groups, they will be fair game. This proves once more that academic freedom does not really exist anymore, not even in the remotest corner of the world.

### 1. Introduction

In December 2000, the University of Canterbury, Christchurch, New Zealand, thought it had pleased New Zealand's Jewish lobby by going to extraordinary lengths to accommodate a complaint lodged against the university. The Jewish community lodged a complaint because in 1993 Canterbury had awarded to one of its students a masters degree that dealt with the 'Holocaust'. Now seven years later, Canterbury published its *Report By The Joel Hayward Working Party*, wherein a written apology to New Zealand's Jewish community almost took precedence over the maintaining of its own academic integrity.

The small but vociferous New Zealand Jewish lobby had taken great exception to the granting of an MA with First Class Honours to Joel Stuart Andrew Hayward for his thesis on revisionism,<sup>1</sup> thereby making so-called 'Holocaust denial' a 'respectable' branch of academic study. The dogmatists could not let this happen. For them the academic ideal consists of nurturing self-authored taboo topics that bolster and uphold their own fragile intellectual bankruptcy, where a regard for objective knowledge is discarded and despised.

### 2. Background

The early so-called warning signs that something was going on in academia, which could damage Jewish-Zionist interests, were sounded eight years earlier. On May 5, 1992, a group calling itself "Opposition To Anti-Semitism Incorporated", Christchurch, sent a letter of complaint to the University of Canterbury's Registrar, Mr A W Hayward. Therein the president, Kingsley N McFarlane, details a discussion the group had with Joel Hayward, and cite Hayward's reporting that his supervisor Dr. Vincent Orange in November 1991 had stated to Hayward, "OK! I agree there were no gas chambers!"

On May 25, 1992, Professor and head of the History department, W David McIntyre, advised the Registrar:<sup>2</sup>

*"Further to our conversation on the phone about Joel Hayward's MA thesis and the persecution that he has been subjected to [...] I think it important that the University reply blandly but firmly to these people as the interference they have attempted is intolerable. Indeed, the inclusion of*

*the quotation about the conversation with Vincent Orange in the letter to you was probably illegal since it was taken from a tape which was illegally filmed and is the subject of an injunction."*

This courageous stand against Jewish blackmail was also adopted by the External Examiner's Report, written by Waikato University History Department's Professor John H Jensen. Dated April 15, 1993, it states:<sup>3</sup>

*"This study is a brave attempt to deal in a cool and critical fashion with one of the most emotional and political issues of our century. The candidate is to be congratulated on his courage in undertaking it. Nevertheless I have tried to deal with it as I would deal with any thesis, ignoring its political implications, and concentrating on the skillfulness or otherwise with which the writer has carried out his responsibilities as an historian."*

Hayward's Chief Supervisor, Professor Vincent Orange, Reader in History at the University of Canterbury, in his assessment of March 23, 1993, hits a raw nerve with anti-Revisionists when he states in his report:<sup>4</sup>

*"Hayward's thesis is that the Nazis did not attempt the systematic extermination of Jews during the Second World War. In particular, he finds the evidence that gas chambers were built and used for this purpose unconvincing. His argument for and against this key point is based on a detailed, careful study of documentary, oral and scientific evidence. He may, of course, be mistaken, but in my judgment his case is nowhere flawed by improper use of evidence or extravagant language. More positively, he earns credit for adopting a scholarly approach to matters that most historians have flinched from investigating. For example, how many human beings can be packed into a particular space and how long does it take for a body to be wholly consumed by fire?"*

That the thesis would become contentious had been expected by Hayward. As early as 1991, Hayward had written an article on Holocaust Revisionism in New Zealand for the Australian Institute of Jewish Affairs journal, *Without Prejudice*. Hayward's article was titled "The Thinking Man's Anti-Semitism?" Therein Hayward clearly focuses on the political aspect of Revisionism, and is quite critical of British historian David

Irving and France's Dr. Robert Faurisson for their attempt to deny the National Socialist genocide of six million Jews.

Yet two years later, after having submitted his thesis in 1993, Hayward requested that his thesis be embargoed for three years. Although this was an unusual request by any academic who thrives on the 'publish or perish' maxim, Professor Vincent Orange approved the request.

It is little wonder Hayward was in panic mode because the final chapter of his thesis states:

*"A careful and impartial investigation of the available evidence pertaining to Nazi gas chambers reveals that even these apparently fall into the category of atrocity propaganda."*

In 1996, Hayward requested another extension to the publication of his embargoed thesis until January 1, 1999, and again it was granted.

At the beginning of October 1998, Hayward sent his thesis to Adelaide Institute for photocopying, saying that it may be used in any way. Copies were made and distributed to all Associates. A copy was also handed to the Commissioners of Australia's Human Rights and Equal Opportunity Commission, hearing the complaint laid by Jeremy Jones against both Fredrick Töben and Olga Scully.

Also in October 1998, Joel Hayward even contemplated being a witness in the Toronto Zündel trial.<sup>5</sup> The dilemma facing him was the worry that he may say something helpful for the defence, for example his view that Revisionism "can promote anti-Semitism (although I naturally don't think that it does in its own right)."<sup>6</sup>

Dr. Robert Faurisson anticipated this in one of his comments. Hayward's opinion, says Faurisson,<sup>7</sup>

*"is that the Revisionists are right but that they have no heart and do not care distressing the Jews. He believes in Babi Yar and*

*all sorts of stupid things. His testimony could be very harmful in a 'Human Rights' 'tribunal' since that kind of 'tribunal' thinks that 'truth is no defence'. Hayward could even be the ideal witness for the prosecution: Zündel is all the more dangerous since he is right!"*

Faurisson also advised Fredrick Töben:<sup>8</sup>

*"[...] there is nothing confidential, at least today, with this thesis since I see that in 1996 I purchased my own copy. Hayward asked me for the money (because of the photocopy), got it and never asked me to keep all this secret. He asked me my opinion about his thesis. I sent him my draft and asked him two questions:*

1. *Would it be right to say that, for you, at the beginning of 1993 the revisionists were generally right as reason is concerned but wrong as sentiments are concerned?*

2. *I heard you were from Jewish descent; is that right?*

*I asked those questions on 24 August, 18 November and 27 November. I told him that, being overworked, I need first his answer to my first question to go and read carefully his thesis. He sent me finally a rather rude answer but without addressing my two questions."*

Faurisson also pointed out that Hayward's thesis

*"seems also to say that the revisionists tend to distress Jewish people. If he really says so, what are his arguments and, anyway, is this the role of an historian? [...He] ignores that there is absolutely no physical violence from the Revisionists against the Jews."*

In the December 1998/January 1999 issue of the *New Zealand Jewish Chronicle*, a report appeared headed "NZ connection to Internet incitement case":

*"Evidence submitted by Dr. Töben days before the hearings included a 500-page Master's thesis on Holocaust revisionism by New Zealand Canterbury University student, Joel Hayward."*

When Hayward made another request to have his thesis embargoed for another period in 1999, the University of Canterbury refused and invited Hayward to add an addendum to his thesis, which he did. In essence the two-page Hayward Addendum states that his thesis contains "several errors of fact and interpretation".<sup>9</sup>

Hayward also wrote a letter to the *New Zealand Jewish Chronicle*, which was published in its February 1999 edition at p.7. Among other things, he stated:

*"First, Dr Fredrick Töben violated my rights as an author by presenting a copy of my 1993 Masters of Arts thesis to the Human Rights and Equal Opportunity Commission (HREOC) in Sydney. He did so even after I had expressly forbidden him—in writing on October 17—from repro-*

*ducing or distributing my work in part or in whole [...] I have no involvement in the ferocious debate between Holocaust Revisionists and their opponents. I find it distasteful and refuse to be drawn into it. As a scholar I am much too busy; as a person I am much too sensible. I am sending a copy of this letter to Mr Jeremy Jones, Executive Vice-President, Executive Council of Australian Jewry."*

Hayward went further into damage control. In a letter dated December 8, 1999, headed "Strictly Confidential" and addressed to Canterbury's Vice Chancellor, Hayward stated, among other things:

*"Toward the end of 1998, an Australian racist named Dr. Fredrick Tobin [sic], who has just completed a prison term in Germany for Holocaust denial, attempted to present a copy of my thesis to the Human Rights and Equal Oppor-*



Dr. Joel Hayward, 1998



tunity Commission (HREOC) in Sydney as proof that the Holocaust did not happen. I immediately wrote to the HREOC and asked them to withdraw the thesis from their proceedings. They kindly agreed to do so."

Commissioner Cathleen McEvoy, now dean of the law faculty at University of Adelaide, never informed Fredrick Töben of this Hayward communication, nor did Hayward forward a copy of his letter to Töben, though he did send an Email requesting that Töben stop using his thesis.

Graeme Wake, Dean of Postgraduate Studies, and Professor of Applied Mathematics at Canterbury, responded in a letter dated 3 May 2000 (with a hand-written note "Today's date January 2000 sent"):

*"We share your distaste for the actions of racist persons like those you mention. Nonetheless it is incumbent on us, as a premier research University, to maintain open access to scholarship produced, and accepted for, a research degree. To act otherwise could lead to accusations of a cover-up and compromise us in other ways. So we have sought another alternative (which we broached with you by telephone).*

*In the interest of all, and especially the victims of the Holocaust, the University invites you to write a (brief) addendum to the thesis. This would presumably state your more recent views and insights on this topic and summarise results of any post-1993 scholarship which might point to*

*different conclusions than you made originally [...] it would further strengthen the stand against the likes of Dr Fredrick Tobin and his ilk."*

On December 15, 1999, Hayward wrote a letter to Greg Raven of the IHR:<sup>10</sup>

*"Thank you for notifying me about this ratbag's attempt to post my old MA thesis on the Internet. I appreciate your kindness. Truly. I succeeded in having the server company delete my thesis after this mysterious person posted it last time, and I will try this method again."*

Also in 2000, Professor Dov Bing came on to the scene. A political science lecturer at Hamilton's Waikato University, Dr. Bing broadcasted the fact that Hayward had distributed his thesis to Faurisson, Irving, and Töben.

The *New Zealand Jewish Chronicle* of April 2000 whipped up a storm that was picked up internationally. Hayward apologized to New Zealand's Jewish community:

*"I stuffed up. The conclusions are wrong [...] without doubt, around six million Jews perished during World War Two. They were murdered by Nazis and their allies. The perpetrators used a range of methods, including gas chambers, shooting, physical exhaustion and starvation, to carry out this monstrous crime."*

K. R. Bolton, a New Zealand observer of the controversy, sums up the 89-page and 29 appendices Working Party Report thus:<sup>11</sup>

J. S. A. HAYWARD, THE FATE OF JEWS IN GERMAN HANDS: AN HISTORICAL ENQUIRY INTO THE DEVELOPMENT AND SIGNIFICANCE OF HOLOCAUST REVISIONISM (MA THESIS, 1993)

[...]. Hayward's [...] "understanding of the principles of historical research and ability to apply them" are demonstrated with exceptional industry, skill and judgment throughout. It is the most convincing piece of work that has been submitted to me at this level and, in fact, makes a positive contribution to knowledge. [...]

Hayward has used an exceptional range of sources [...]. These sources have been thoroughly mastered and skillfully woven together. He argues cogently and, given the extremely sensitive nature of his subject, consciously and consistently strives to achieve a balanced judgment. [...] He writes clearly and fluently. Overall, the breadth and depth of research, the maturity of judgment and the ability to absorb, transmute and present material are of doctoral standard. His basic enthusiasm for historical research has already been so well honed and disciplined while preparing this thesis that he seems to me perfectly capable of a successful academic career.

Hayward's thesis is that the Nazis did not attempt the systematic extermination of Jews during the Second World War. In particular, he finds the evidence that gas chambers were built and used for this purpose unconvincing. His argument for and against this key point is based on a detailed, careful study of documentary, oral and scientific evidence. He may, of course, be mistaken, but in my judgment his case is nowhere flawed by improper use of evidence or extravagant language. More positively, he earns credit for adopting a scholarly approach to matters that most historians have flinched from investigating. For example, how many human beings can be packed into a particular space and how long does it take for a body to be wholly consumed by fire?

No question of denying Nazi brutality arises. [...] These crimes, nevertheless, did not amount to genocide. They are no unique crimes; [...].

[...] Hayward [...] singles out those valid points (while refuting many invalid points) that Revisionists have made in criticism of some charges made by Jews and their sympathisers against the Nazis. He also demonstrates how far most Holocaust scholars have retreated from accepting all the charges made during the war and at the subsequent war crimes trials. The extent of this retreat, as Hayward shows, has not yet filtered down to mainstream surveys and much less to popular opinion. [...]

I recommend four A+ marks [...]. Overall, his thesis amply supports the award of First Class Honours.

Vincent Orange, Reader in History, [University of Canterbury, New Zealand], 23 March 1993

“After some five months and \$200,000 a tribunal of eminent persons reached conclusions so predictable and cliché-ridden that a fiver and a day spent over a cuppa could have reached the same result.

The Party found that Dr Joel Hayward, now an eminent military historian and lecturer in his own right, did not merit an MA with First Class Honours from Canterbury University for his 1993 thesis: *The Fate of Jews in German Hands: an enquiry into the significance of Holocaust Revisionism*.

Upon seeking legal advice, the Working Party was unable to revoke the MA Hons. Degree, which had been demanded by the New Zealand Jewish Council because it could not be demonstrated that Hayward had acted dishonestly. However, the opinion was that Hayward did not merit such honours. The Working Party found that although Hayward had demonstrated superior abilities as a researcher and had put together his thesis with exceptional skill, his conclusions were flawed. He should not have offered an opinion as to which side of the Holocaust debate, revisionism or orthodoxy, was correct on the weight of evidence. Also, a particularly contentious point was that Hayward’s thesis was three times longer than required. [...] What irked the Jewish Council was that by awarding the Hayward thesis First Class Honours, this appeared to give academic legitimacy to Holocaust revisionism. [...] The Working Party was only required to consider if Hayward had acted dishonestly and therefore whether his MA Hons should be revoked. It found that he had not. It offered that Hayward was not required to render an opinion on the evidence in the Holocaust debate and that the thesis was too lengthy. What the Party should not have done is indulge in a large amount of unfounded criticism of revisionists and revisionism, on the basis of comments supplied by and for the Jewish Council. Outside submissions were not accepted. [...] Despite the recommendations of two reputable New Zealand scholars the thesis ‘did not deserve the highest accolade’, and therefore the opinions of two acclaimed and experienced New Zealand academics are trashed in favour of Jewish ethnocentrists and their ally, a less than dispassionate Professor Evans from England.”

This same Professor Richard Evans was the so-called ‘expert witness’ at the 2000 London Irving-Lipstadt trial. Evans is professor of German history at Cambridge University.

Things began to quiet down a little for Hayward.

### 3. A detour covering similar grounds

While the University of Canterbury had its problems caused by the New Zealand Jewish community’s representatives with their particular ‘Holocaust’ obsession, Waikato University attended to its own as well. The Jewish community had sniffed out a right-wing extremist who had been accepted into the university’s doctoral program:<sup>12</sup>

“Berlin-born Hans-Joachim Kupka was accepted to study the role the German language played in contemporary New Zealand—a field which critics said would have meant his having to interview German-speaking Holocaust survivors. Kupka, the former deputy chair of the Bavarian

branch of the extreme right-wing Republikaner Party, withdrew his candidature in the wake of the controversy.”

The restless paranoid Jewish community leaders would not let things be and demanded that the university investigate and apologise—which it did.

### 4. Updating the old issue with a new one

On October 9, 2002, Waikato University released its report *A Review of the Case of Hans Joachim Kupka*.<sup>13</sup> The Report, prepared by Mr Bill Renwick, detailed the University’s handling of the Kupka case.

The *Waikato Times*, the regional newspaper, ran the story, and Professor Dov Bing weighed in heavily. However, generally there was not much community interest in the Kupka affair, and observant individuals realized that the alleged hysteria had been artificially whipped up by the leaders of the Jewish community. It seems that this displeased Bing somewhat. And so he issued a Press Release and sent it to the *Waikato Times*, which journalist Lester Thorley turned into an article that was published on October 23, 2002:

#### “ESSAY WAS REVISIONIST: PROFESSOR

By Lester Thorley

A Waikato University professor believes he has uncovered a Holocaust revisionist thesis at Canterbury University.

Waikato political science professor Dov Bing, who led Jewish academic outrage during Waikato’s Kupka Holocaust denial affair, wants answers from Canterbury over the history thesis *Judgment On Nuremberg*, by Steven [sic] Eaton.

It was produced one year after the 1993 Hayward thesis, which attracted worldwide attention for its conclusion that the Nazis did not systematically exterminate Jews in gas chambers.

Prof Bing said the Canterbury theses had been hailed on an Alabama, US, Holocaust revisionist website. The *Theses and Dissertations Press home page* says it started in 1994 in response to ‘the reception of two unpublished masters theses in history from a foreign university’.<sup>[14]</sup>

The company says its aim is to publish views which are ‘suppressed’ elsewhere.

Mr Eaton’s thesis, which argued the 1945 Nuremberg war criminal trials were illegal, was part of an honours masters degree. He credits Joel Hayward: ‘who first introduced me to Nuremberg and it is to him that I owe my enthusiasm for the subject’.

Prof Bing said, ‘Holocaust revisionism, especially when it enters the halls of academia, is a matter of considerable public interest.’

A 2000 investigation into Hayward’s paper led to Canterbury’s apology to the Jewish community for accepting a ‘seriously flawed thesis’. A working party said standards had ‘slipped on just one occasion’.

Canterbury’s chancellor Dame Phyllis Guthardt said yesterday the Hayward case was investigated fully.

‘From the university’s point of view the matter is closed.’

Canterbury would not investigate Mr Eaton's thesis unless there was clear evidence of fraud or dishonesty in his work.

Waikato professor John Jensen, who has since left, was the external marker for Hayward's work, which was given an A+.

Canterbury would not name Mr Eaton's external marker, but said it was not Prof Jensen."

As this item mentioned the Hayward affair, it became relevant for the press in Christchurch, and the *Canterbury Press's* Amanda Warren elaborated and fabricated that the Eaton thesis<sup>15</sup> is about the Holocaust—which it is not—and that it is actually on Dr Robert Countess' website, when this is not a fact because Countess does not have a website.<sup>16</sup>

#### "SECOND HOLOCAUST THESIS UNDER FIRE

By Amanda Warren

Canterbury University is under fire after claims that a second thesis by one of its students is being used by the Holocaust denial movement.

The thesis, by Steven Eaton, was supervised by Dr Vincent Orange who supervised Joel Hayward's controversial thesis questioning key aspects of the Holocaust [...].

Mr Eaton's thesis questions the validity of the Nuremberg trials, conducted by the Allies after World War Two, to punish German war criminals. His thesis concludes that 'the Allies evidenced scant regard for the system known as international law', and their disposal of major Nazi war criminals was an 'arbitrary exercise of power'.

Mr Eaton, whose masters degree in history with first-class honours was confirmed in May 1994, argues that in 1945 no law existed to give the Allies the legal right to punish Nazis to the full extent. [...]

An international law expert at the University of Canterbury, Alex Conte, said Mr Eaton's thesis was not the first to question the Nuremberg trials.

Mr Eaton's thesis has been seized upon by a well-known Holocaust denier, the Rev Dr Robert Countess, who posted details of it on his website.

Waikato political science professor Dov Bing yesterday said it was one of the base tenets of the Holocaust denial movement that the Nuremberg trials had no standing in international law and that German war criminals were falsely convicted.

Canterbury University could have prevented this latest controversy if it had identified other theses involving Holocaust denial, Professor Bing said.

The university's Chancellor, Dame Phyllis Guthardt, said it would be a huge undertaking to re-examine old theses. 'There is no suggestion of an investigation into the Eaton thesis. There is no evidence of fraud or dishonesty, there had been no criticism of it, and it had never been embargoed or withheld.' She did not believe a shadow had been cast on other history theses written in the mid-1990s. Dr Orange did not return The Press' calls and Mr Eaton could not be found."

Adelaide Institute's call to the University of Canterbury yielded the following response from a source that

did not wish to be named, though the speaker met Fredrick Töben in 2000:<sup>17</sup>

"The Hayward thesis is behind us. The Eaton thesis is on the Nuremberg War Crimes Trials. It is not a Holocaust issue. The issue at any university is the freedom to research [...] with sensitivity."

#### 5. The latest on the Hayward Affair

The above *Press* article spawned the following in New Zealand's premier Radio and Television magazine, *Listener*, November 2-8, 2002, but actually printed on Friday, October 25, 2002. Its article was introduced with the now famous libel suit British historian David Irving had launched against American Jewish Theologian Deborah Lipstadt, which Irving finally lost in 2002. It then went into detail about the Hayward, the Hupka, and the Eaton 'scandals' and ended with a statement by Richard Evans, Prof. for German history at Cambridge University, who testified against Irving in London. In a report prepared for Massey University about the Hayward thesis, Evans suggested to revoking Hayward's academic degree, and the *Listener* ended its article with quoting Evans accordingly:<sup>18</sup>

"There is a precedent. Evans cites the case of Henri Roques, a protégé of French Holocaust denier Robert Faurisson, who had his 'revisionist' doctorate revoked in 1986 by the French Ministry of Higher Education. Evans's report concluded: 'Allowing a work of Holocaust denial to appear with the imprimature of a university gives it scholarly

PERMISSION TO PUBLISH 'JUDGEMENT ON NUREMBERG'

I agree to the following conditions:

- 1) T&DP have the right to publish my thesis in book form.
- 2) I have the right to make minor corrections, fix typos etc.
- 3) I will right a brief FOREWORD and AFTERWORD to the published edition.
- 4) Royalties will be paid to me only after publishing expenses have been recouped by T&DP.

S. Daniel Eaton  
*Dan Eaton*

*Dr Countess,*

*As promised in my fax of 25 Oct 02.*

- ① Final version of thesis.
- ② Thesis on disc - (word perfect, too)
- ③ permission to publish (the last one I sent had a mistake in item 4)

*Note - everything should be on the disc except table of contents.*

*Dan Eaton*

MINISTRY OF DEFENCE  
MANATU KAUPAPA WAONGA

DANIEL EATON  
ANALYST: STRATEGIC AND INTERNATIONAL POLICY  
POLICY DIVISION

Defence House, Stout Street, Wellington, New Zealand.  
P.O. Box 5347, Lambton Quay, Wellington.  
Telephone (04) 496 0619 Fax (04) 496 0859.

Written permission by Daniel Eaton to have his thesis published by Theses and Dissertations Press

credibility. In the present case, this has also been exploited by anti-Semites and political extremists seeking to argue for the validity of Holocaust denial. If a degree is awarded to a candidate who is subsequently found to have plagiarized his or her work, or who has systematically violated the canons of scholarship which the degree is intended to certify and endorse, then it is reasonable to ask the university in question to withdraw recognition of the degree originally awarded. This indeed happened in the case of Henri Roques. It should happen in the case of Joel Hayward, too.”



Joel Hayward during his visit at the home of Dr. Robert H. Countess in 1994, here while shooting a gun in the backyard.

“I also absolutely hate the fact that these people [Dr. Countess, Theses & Dissertations Press] wish to use my academic credibility to bolster their work, which commonly has anti-Semitic objectives. I detest anti-Semitism and other forms of racism.”

From private communications with both Daniel Eaton and Joel Hayward, where they apologized for their denigrating language, I can only conclude that both fear for their future. They both literally begged me not to publish anything anymore they had written, though I had written permission to do so. Dr. Hayward’s health is severely compromised, which he puts forward as one excuse. However, both academics certainly did not prove that they have a spinal column capable of carrying the load of professing academic responsibility.

## 6. Conclusion.

Whenever a former Soviet-controlled country joins NATO, then it is required to pass before the joining date a specific law that outlaws ‘Holocaust’ denial. Poland passed a law in January 1999, and in April of that year it was permitted to join NATO.

The pattern has repeated itself, all for the well being of the 1500 families that control the thriving business enterprise called NATO, and of course for the ‘memory of the victims of the Holocaust’.

New Zealand is as yet not going down this road—not yet. But the Jewish lobby’s attempt to stifle debate on matters ‘Holocaust’ indicates it is well on its way. Outright ‘Holocaust’ denial is as yet not on the New Zealand legal books, as is the case in Australia, where the 17 September 2002 Federal Court of Australia judgments in *Jones v Scully* and *Jones v Töben* has enshrined in law a European-style ‘Holocaust denial’ law, albeit without criminal sanctions.

New Zealand is focusing on academia to reign in dissident thinkers, the road that Germany walked along in 1983 when Göttingen University withdrew its doctorate conferred upon Justice Wilhelm Stäglich during the 1950s for having written in 1979 the classic *The Auschwitz Myth*.<sup>19</sup> France has done likewise. Switzerland and Austria have not, as yet!

A call to New Zealand’s well-known current affairs TV program *Paul Holmes* indicated that a general interest in the matters raised by the *Listener* article seemed not to warrant a specific program on the Hayward affair, so according to producer Vicky Poland. It remains to be seen whether Professor Dov Bing will let matters rest.

## Editor’s Note

Joel Hayward visited Rev. Dr. Robert Countess in early 1994,<sup>20</sup> and in 1999 he agreed to have some of his articles published by Castle Hill Publishers.<sup>21</sup> In 1994, Daniel Eaton agreed to have his thesis published by Theses and Dissertations Press,<sup>22</sup> as had Joel Hayward. All this indicates that Joel Hayward considered Dr. Countess and other revisionists to be friends. But according to the *Listener*, he is said to have told them:

## Notes

- <sup>1</sup> Joel S. A. Hayward, “The Fate of Jews in German Hands: An Historical Enquiry into the Development and Significance of Holocaust Revisionism”, Master Thesis, University of Canterbury, Christchurch, New Zealand, 1993; it was once posted online, but had to be removed after threat by Dr. Hayward, see [www.aargh.vho.org/engl/hay/hayindex.html](http://www.aargh.vho.org/engl/hay/hayindex.html).
- <sup>2</sup> Appendix I, in: *Report By The Joel Hayward Working Party*, December 2000, University of Canterbury.
- <sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, Appendix M.
- <sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, Appendix L.
- <sup>5</sup> See the contribution by Ingrid Rimland in this issue.
- <sup>6</sup> Email from Hayward to F. Töben, dated October 5, 1998.
- <sup>7</sup> Letter dated October 16, 1998, from R. Faurisson to E. Zündel.
- <sup>8</sup> Letter dated October 18, 1998, from R. Faurisson to F. Töben.
- <sup>9</sup> *Report...., op. cit.* (note 2), Appendix B.
- <sup>10</sup> From: [www.aargh.vho.org/engl/hay/hayindex.html](http://www.aargh.vho.org/engl/hay/hayindex.html). For an account of the Hayward File it is well worth reading Serge Thion’s comprehensive treatment of the moral and intellectual problems raised by Hayward’s behavior and failure of moral nerve.
- <sup>11</sup> In: *Western Destiny*, February 2001, Issue #23.
- <sup>12</sup> *Australian Jewish News*, January 5, 2001.
- <sup>13</sup> <http://unipr.waikato.ac.nz/news/kupka-report.shtml>
- <sup>14</sup> Since summer 2002, *Theses and Dissertations Press* is the English language book publishing imprint of Castle Hill Publishers; see [www.tadp.org/about.html](http://www.tadp.org/about.html)
- <sup>15</sup> Daniel Eaton, Judgment On Nuremberg. An Historical Enquiry into the Validity of Article Six of The London Charter as an Expression of Contemporary International Law, Master’s Thesis, University of Canterbury, Christchurch, New Zealand, 1994; online: <http://vho.org/aaargh/engl/hay/bobprefaceEa.html>
- <sup>16</sup> October 24, 2002, [www.stuff.co.nz/stuff/0,2106,2089615a11,00.html](http://www.stuff.co.nz/stuff/0,2106,2089615a11,00.html)
- <sup>17</sup> See the university’s response: [www.canterbury.ac.nz/search/intro.htm](http://www.canterbury.ac.nz/search/intro.htm)
- <sup>18</sup> Philip Matthews, “Special Report: Holocaust Denial and the NZ Connection. In Denial. The continuing story of why a New Zealand university refuses to dishonor a thesis denying the Nazi Holocaust.”
- <sup>19</sup> Wilhelm Stäglich, *Der Auschwitz Mythos*, Grabert-Verlag, Tübingen 1979; Eng.: *The Auschwitz Myth: A Judge Looks at the Evidence*, Institute for Historical Review, Newport Beach, CA, 1986; the German Federal Constitutional Court confirmed the revocation of Stäglich’s PhD title, ref. 1 BvR 408f./83.
- <sup>20</sup> See his account “Die Neuseeland-Saga”, *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 5(3) (2001), pp. 330-333, and the photo in this article.
- <sup>21</sup> Joel S. A. Hayward, “Eine Fallstudie früher integrierter Kriegführung”, *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 3(1) (1999), pp. 4-16.
- <sup>22</sup> See the document reproduction.

# Discovering Absurdistan

## The Deterioration of Civil Right under the Influence of Wartime Propaganda

*By Germar Rudolf*

- What kind of a country is it where a considerable part of the people think that singing their national anthem could be forbidden?
- What country is it where folksingers might be put in jail for singing peaceful songs?
- What kind of a country is it where a mother of five gets a prison term for having sold one CD with peaceful music on it?
- What country is it where a pastor raising his national flag in his church would get kicked out of his parish for being an extremist?
- What country is it where somebody raising his country's flag would be harassed by his neighbors for being an extremist?
- What country is it where a teacher suggesting that all students should sing the national anthem first thing every morning would lose his job for being an extremist?
- What country is it where showing uncompromised flags of its past is considered a threat to "public peace"?
- What country is it where people can get fined for raising an arm to wave their hands at a person?
- What country is it where people can be fined for collecting and displaying full-scale models of historical weapons?
- What country is it where one can be fined or sent to jail for showing symbols and insignia that have been, and still are, used in many cultures for centuries and millennia?
- What country is it where a professor who writes his disbelief about certain historical events in a footnote, written in Latin, in a scholarly anthology can be prosecuted and threatened with jail?
- What country is it where a judge, writing a well-founded, but highly controversial book on historical topics, sees his book confiscated and burned, his pension cut, and his PhD title withdrawn as a result of this?
- What country is it where a highly renowned historian writing a well-founded book of his country's history can be threatened with prosecution because what he found out is not liked by the authorities?
- What country is it where a history teacher is sent to jail for uttering historical dissent in a private letter to a high-profile personality?
- What country is it where a professor criticizing internationalism can be kicked out of his job, harassed, prosecuted and driven into suicide?
- What country is it that sends a historical dissenter to prison for more than two years just because he published peaceful, scholarly historical material?
- What country is it that denigrates, defames and humiliates its war veterans to such a degree that finally one of them burns himself publicly in protest against what he calls a "Niagara flood of lies" against his generation?
- What country is it that outlaws the commemoration of such a self-sacrifice and punishes everybody who dares to publish this man's last appeal?
- What country is it where well-founded, heavily footnoted books on political and historical topics, authored by academics with solid credentials, can be confiscated and burned by the authorities?
- What country is it where authors, editors, publishers, printers, wholesalers, retailers, importers and exporters, warehouses, and customers buying more than two copies of a certain medium can be prosecuted for producing, stocking, importing/exporting, distributing dissenting political and historical literature?
- What country is it that hides from its citizens which media are outlawed, so that one cannot possibly know whether or not one commits a crime when distributing such media?
- What country is it where judges are threatened with prosecution because they did not punish political and historical dissenters harshly enough?
- What country is it that outlaws the introduction of exonerating evidence?
- What country is it that prosecutes defense lawyers if they try to introduce exonerating evidence on behalf of their clients?
- What country is it that does not keep records of what is said and is happening during trial proceedings?
- What country is it that has institutions designed to conduct political trials?
- What country is it that has a huge spy agency designed to snoop on opposition groups?
- What country is it where members of certain political opposition groups considered constitutional can nevertheless be deprived of some of their civil rights?
- What country is it that, according to experts, will be a totalitarian state very soon, if things keep developing as they have so far?
- What country is it where even the mainstream media admit that this country is in a state of hysteria while persecuting political dissidents?
- What country is it where the head of state asks for children to spy on their parents and parents to spy on their children to make sure they do not harbor unwanted political views?
- What country is it where authorities and the public declare publicly to fight everything that is deemed to be politically on the right?
- What country is it where the authorities declare that half of their population deserves to be ostracized for harboring political views?
- What country is it that is proud of conducting more than 10,000 criminal prosecutions against persons for having committed peaceful "thought crimes"?
- What is the country in the world with the second harshest censorship after China?

**What country would that be???**

The correct answer is:

**Germany**

Surprised? If so, read on.

### **Singing Forbidden!**

Germany's national anthem was written in 1848 by Ludwig von Fallersleben, and it is sung to a melody of Joseph Haydn. In contrast to many other national anthems, it has no military, imperialistic or violent content, but restricts itself to a description of Germany, Germans, and their ideals. By a misrepresentation of a section of its first verse, however, certain anti-German forces managed to give it a bad reputation. The first verse reads in translation:

*Germany, Germany above all in the world,  
When it stands together for protection and defense,  
From the Maas until the Memel,  
From the Etsch until the Belt.*

*Germany, Germany above all in the world,  
When it stands together for protection and defense,*

This verse is obviously totally defensive, but by omitting the second line, it can be misrepresented as a claim of German superiority, which is contrary to the actual content. The third and fourth lines describe characteristic borderline rivers (Maas, Memel, Etsch) or parts of the Baltic Sea (Belt), which in 1848, when this song was written, were actual geographic, political and/or ethnic borders of Germany. That they are no longer today, is a result of two lost world wars, after which the victorious powers conquered and annexed huge parts of German territory and partly expelled and killed millions of Germans. Today, singing this verse is often viewed as if territorial claims are being made against Germany's neighbors, though strictly seen it isn't Germany that has territorial claims, but its neighbors, who simply managed to realize their claims with brute force since 1918, killing millions of Germans along the way. Hence, singing this verse should not be seen as an aggressive territorial claim, but as an eternal reminder of the huge illegal losses in territory and human life Germany suffered since the beginning 20<sup>th</sup> century.

The two other verses of the German national anthem are pretty harmless, the second describing what the Germans are proud of (German loyalty, German wine, German singing, and German women), and the third is an appeal to unity, justice and liberty, three ideals that were not given in the politically splintered and often despotic Germany of 1848.

As a result of these historical and territorial problems, the first two verses of this anthem are never sung at official occasions, since the first verse is considered to cause diplomatic trouble with Germany's conquering neighbors and public relation problems with the media, and the second verse simply has a style considered by many to be embarrassing. But even singing the third verse or merely playing the melody of Germany's national anthem is everything but common practice in Germany. It is basically restricted to international events in sports and politics, for example when the German national soccer team plays against another team, or when some high foreign official is greeted with his country's anthem, followed by the melody of the German anthem.

Otherwise, singing the German national anthem is considered to be something for either morons or 'neo-Nazis' in Germany, as a British newspaper observed correctly in 2001.<sup>1</sup> In the 1980s, there were still a few public radio stations in Germany that would play the melody of the German anthem at midnight, and once in a while I used to pop up the volume of my radio to maximum, and put it right at my opened window to let all the neighbors and all the students in my dormitory hear it. This was and still is quite a provocation, as most people really think that somebody who does that must be either insane or a National Socialist. Consequently, this was one of the reasons why a lecture announcement (about abortion) that I posted on one of those days was nicely embellished with a swastika after just one day.

To understand the degree to which German self-denigration has led, I had to come to the United States and experience myself—with great surprise and a bit of an uncomfortable feeling—that the first thing the entire school did in the morning was to sing the national anthem as it was broadcasted over the loud speakers. If any teacher or headmaster would even dare to suggest such a practice in Germany, s/he would probably lose his job on the spot for being a right-wing extremist. Not even I, who considers himself to be a patriot, would have thought of letting all students sing the anthem each and every morning. This seems extreme to me, that is to say, right-wing radical. But here in the U.S., it is considered to be just perfectly normal.

Because of the artificial controversy about the first verse of the German national anthem, domestic as well as foreign media are spreading rumors or false news that it is actually illegal in Germany to sing this first verse. This is not true at all. But today, many Germans believe it.<sup>2</sup>

What should one think of a country where a considerable percentage of the population believes that it is illegal to sing its national anthem? What should one think of a people, who considers it to be alright that its national anthem is (allegedly) illegal? And what is one to think of a country where considerable parts of the population find it not irritating that songs could possibly be outlawed in the first place?

Unfortunately, things are just as bad in Germany, and even worse. As a matter of fact, many songs are actually outlawed in Germany, most of them because they have a military connotation, others only because they were sung during the third Reich, and others again because they allegedly or actually incited unfavorable feelings against identifiable groups. As an example, I would like to refer to the case of Frank Rennie, a German folksinger who composes and sings patriotic and nationalistic songs. Rennie is as old as I am. He lives in a small town in southern Germany, only a few miles away from where I once lived. Eventually, I had the chance to meet him, and though his music is not always my style and I also do not agree with all of his political views, we became friends.

In 1986, Frank composed a song in which he describes the terrible experience of Germans who lost their home, their goods, and many of them even their lives during the last war. In a second part of this song, Frank draws parallels with today's Germany, where Germans are supposedly again expelled from their home by a massive immigration of foreigners, in his view

forced upon Germany by the then occupying forces (Americans and Russians). The song ends with the following two lines:

*“Americans, Russians, alien people leave –  
finally again masters in our own house.”*

Mainly because of these two lines, the song was banned from distribution in Germany in 1996. As a consequence, Frank rewrote the song and simply omitted these two lines. I won't translate the entire song here, but these two lines are really the only ones that could possibly be interpreted as causing some irritations for “alien people” (foreigners). The rest of the song is much milder. Though still expressing discomfort with the presence and activities of aliens, it doesn't ask for their removal.

Because Frank kept distributing this truncated song, he was sentenced to 17 months in prison without probation in early 2003. Frank is a father of five children and has no criminal record. His wife, who was found guilty of having taken ONE order over the phone for one copy of this song, was sentenced to five months on probation. And this is just one case out of many, one that touched me personally.

So what kind of a country is it where folksingers are sent to prison for their (unpopular) songs, and where mothers are threatened to go to jail for taking just one(!) order for a music CD?<sup>3</sup>

### Forbidden Flags and Symbols

For centuries, Germany had no flag, or at least not a flag accepted to represent the entire nation, since Germany was split into many principalities for most of her history. The first flag that was seen by many Germans to represent the nation was the one adopted from the colors of one of the student fraternities whose members volunteered to fight against Napoleon in 1813: Black, Red, Gold. However, because of the lack of an all-encompassing German national state based upon the will of the people, it was not to be accepted officially by any German monarchy. Only after the demise of the German Kaiserreich after WWI was it introduced in Germany, but it was not accepted by a considerable part of the nation. For many, the so-called Reichskriegsflagge (Imperial War Flag, see picture) represented a more glorious Germany. This flag was introduced by the Second German Reich, the Kaiser, as a symbol of its Army. Since the Kaiserreich was a confederation, where all membership states, kingdoms and smaller monarchies, had their own symbols, flags, rulers, independent police forces and armies, the Imperial War Flag was a symbol representing the whole, which was accepted by many people. Hence, still today, this flag is a strong symbol of German glory.

The first official flag to be accepted by the huge majority of all Germans was—unfortunately—the swastika flag used between 1933 and 1945. After WWII, the Black-Red-Gold flag was introduced again, this time to be accepted by all, except for the Austrians who, forced by the victorious powers, had to say goodbye to their German motherland and stay independent.

As with singing their national anthem, the Germans have similar problems with showing their flag, though it is not historically compromised at all. The first time I realized that there is something different with Germany as compared to other countries was during a summer vacation in Switzerland when my mother and we kids visited a Swiss catholic church. The

ceiling of that church showed a scene from the New Testament where Jesus rises from his tomb in glory, holding the Swiss flag in his hand. It is incomprehensible to me, why Jesus would hold any flag in his hand, not to mention a Swiss flag, a country that did not even exist 2000 years ago. I considered this a kind of displaced patriotism.

However, having lived in the US for a while, I have realized that in this country, too, having the national flag somewhere hoisted in the church doesn't seem to be anything unusual. However, if any pastor or priest in Germany would suggest having the German flag displayed anywhere in his church, I assume he would be ousted as a right-wing extremist and, if persisting, would be kicked out of his parish.

Similarly, if a German mayor of any city would suggest having German flags decorate the city throughout, as it is quite common in the US, particularly after 9/11, he would need to have an extreme patriotism which, if detected while running for office, would prevent him from coming into office in the first place, and if exposed only while in office, the media would make such a huge right-wing radical scandal out of this, that this mayor certainly would be forced to resign.

It can be a similarly unpleasant experience to try to hoist the German flag in one's front yard, if there is no particular reason to do so. This would be taken as evidence for right-wing extremism by the neighborhood and would lead to a social ostracizing, which can become quite unpleasant. As *The Independent* recently noted correctly, raising the German national flag, like singing her national anthem, is considered to be something for “morons and neo-Nazis”<sup>1</sup>

In the early 1990s, when a wave of patriotism was going through Germany after its reunification, many people dared showing the Reichskriegsflagge again, that is, the imperial war flag of the Kaiser's time. As a reaction to this, the authorities declared it a misdemeanor to show this flag in public.<sup>4</sup> It is that simple in Germany to ban the showing of uncompromised symbols, just because some media and politicians didn't like it.

Needless to say that showing any flags of the Third Reich is outright illegal in Germany and can be punished with heavy prison terms. Similarly, all kinds of symbols used during the Third Reich are illegal to show in Germany today. This includes not only the swastika and the SS-Runes, but also many other rune symbols and insignia that are identical or only similar to symbols and insignia used during the Third Reich period. Some of these symbols were in use in various cultures of the world for many centuries or even millennia. Showing them in



Germany today, however, leads to prison terms.<sup>5</sup> This is a legal practice that was totally unheard of during the Third Reich, where any flag or symbol of any period of German history could be displayed.

Let us assume somebody collects models of warplanes and tanks, as so many people do. What to do with the German weapons of WWII, which all had certain insignia on them? Displaying such models with the historically correct, but politically incorrect insignia in Germany is a crime. Even if you have such items only in your private collection, if you are so unfortunate to tell your neighbor about this, he might be so mean as to denounce you to the authorities, which can lead to a house search, confiscation of the items in question, and a prosecution for displaying illegal symbols. This, too, is an extreme overreaction, which was not even heard of during the Third Reich.

Another topic is the so-called “Hitler salute” (stiff arm salute, originally a Roman tradition, as were so many things used by Hitler Germany). It is illegal in Germany and can be punished with fines or imprisonment. However, consider this:

Two friends of mine, who are certainly not National Socialists and would never consider using this salute, once visited an ongoing trial against a historical dissenter. The local Jewish community sent one of their representatives to this trial, as is usually the case during such trials. As my friends approached the courtroom, they saw an acquaintance in the hallway waiting to be admitted as a visitor. My friends greeted their acquaintance by briefly lifting an arm and waving at him. The representative of the Jewish community filed a criminal complaint against both for having used the “Hitler salute”. They were both indicted. The older of my two friends could prove that a) he had no National Socialist views because he had resisted becoming a member of the National Socialist party during the war, and b) his right arm was disabled, which proved that he could not possibly have made a stiff right-arm salute. So he was acquitted. My other friend cannot prove in the same way that he had no National Socialist views, simply because he was born after the war and thus had no chance to resist becoming a member of the National Socialist party during the war, and he also could not prove that he cannot lift his right arm, since he was healthy. So he was convicted and had to pay a hefty fine. Hence, any German encountering anybody lifting his arm to a greeting, and if only for a wave, will experience what I do: a Pavlovian reflex like somebody had given me a high voltage shock. Seeing somebody rising one arm, for what reason so ever, is frightening to Germans. Yes, we Germans are paranoid; we were made paranoid by our society. But this is only the start. Just read on.

### **This Book Must Burn...**

In 1979, German historian Prof. Dr. Hellmut Diwald published a book simply entitled „German History”.<sup>6</sup> It covered 2000 years of history, of which an appropriate amount of pages dealt with the Third Reich. When dealing with the concentration camps and the Holocaust, Diwald ended his section about this topic by stating that what really happened during this time is still not really clear, that many questions are still open, and that much more research needs to be done. This sufficed to trigger a storm of outrage both in the media as well as in academia. Eventually, Diwald’s publisher changed this statement

in a second edition—without asking the author—to the effect that it then expressed horror and outrage about the unimaginable atrocities committed during the Holocaust, an emotional statement that is quite common, but is neither scholarly nor does it solve any of the scientific problems surrounding this event in history.<sup>7</sup>

After Prof. Diwald had died in 1993, several prominent German scholars compiled a commemorative anthology honoring him.<sup>8</sup> One of the contributing authors was Dr. Robert Hepp, professor for sociology in Osnabrück. In his contribution, he retold the story of this “Diwald scandal.” While so doing, he mentioned in one footnote:<sup>9</sup>

*“Sunt apud nos cogitationes liberae in foro interno, constrictae tamen in foro publico. Quoniam in re publica nostra per regem non licet historicum quoddam factum ex officio approbatum ad incertum revocare, in dubio ponere, quin etiam negare, et cum omnis dissensio aperte declarata iudiciis severe puniatur, haeticam opinionem coram publico diligenter dissimulare oportet. Si quis nihilominus pervestigatibus omni studio peractis factum approbatum maxime dubium esse videt et veritatis gratia incorruptam rerum fidem collegas eruditos celare non vult, opinionem suam publicare non potest nisi abscondito modo. Itaque lingua doctorum antiquorum abutens statuo interclericos (quos quod sequitur obsecro, ut vulgus celent): Ego quidem illud iudaeorum gentis excidium, ratione institutum et in ‘castris extinctionis’ gaso pernicioso methodice peractum, veram fabulam esse nego. Sed documentorum et argumentorum scholae revisionisticae ratione habita haud scio, an hoc verum sit. Dixi quod sentio. Unica cura veritas; neminem in dubitationem inducere, neminem laedere cogito. Sol lucet omnibus, attamen non cuivis laico contingit adire Corinthum. Quandoquidem vulgus vult decipi decipiatur!”*

In brief: Prof. Hepp declares here that in Germany everybody is punished who publicly expresses certain dissenting views. If one nevertheless does want to speak out because truth demands it, one has to use certain methods. For this reason, this footnote is in Latin. Next, Prof. Hepp denies that the story about gas chambers used during the genocide of Jews in so-called extermination camps is a true story. He says he has been convinced by scholarly revisionist arguments.

Because of this footnote in Latin language, Prof. Hepp was prosecuted for “Instigating to hatred” and “Incitement of the masses”. Since the statute of limitations had already passed, he could not be convicted, but the commemorative anthology was subsequently confiscated<sup>10</sup> and burned in waste incinerators under the supervision of the German police.<sup>11</sup> How a Latin footnote can incite anybody to hatred, not to mention “the masses”, remains a riddle. And what kind of a system is it that burns scientific, commemorative anthologies written on behalf of one of the nation’s great post-war historians?

A single case? Far is this from being true. In these matters, this is actually the rule in “democratic” Germany. The first and most spectacular burning of a scholarly, heavily footnoted historical book by the German authorities occurred in the early 1980s. Victim was a book written by a retired judge, Dr. Wilhelm Stäglich, who analyzed the historical and legal foundations of several trials held against defendants, who were ac-



cused of having committed crimes in the former concentration camp Auschwitz.<sup>12</sup> Since the author openly showed his disagreement with the “official” version of history and came to “wrong” conclusions, the book was confiscated and destroyed. Not enough with that, Stäglich saw his pension cut down, and the University of Göttingen, where Stäglich had made his PhD in 1951, withdraw his PhD title.<sup>13</sup> This was done with reference to a law introduced in 1939 by Adolf Hitler.<sup>14</sup> The law says that an academic degree can be withheld or revoked if the owner of a title proves to be “academically unworthy.” Today’s legal understanding in Germany assumes such unworthiness, if the academic credentials have been used to commit a crime leading to a prison term of more than one year.<sup>15</sup> Though Dr. Stäglich was not sentenced to anything—he could not be prosecuted because the statute of limitations had expired—the German Federal Constitutional Court nevertheless decided that the University of Göttingen acted perfectly legally.<sup>16</sup>

The most rabid reaction of the German authorities so far was doubtlessly caused by an anthology authored by some 15 scholars from various countries. The book critically analyzed various aspects of the Holocaust and came to several quite controversial conclusions.<sup>17</sup> Though two well-renowned German mainstream historians testified publicly and in court on behalf of this book, endorsing it as a scholarly book which ought to be protected by the constitutionally guaranteed freedom of science,<sup>18</sup> the book was nevertheless confiscated and burned,<sup>19</sup> criminal proceedings started against authors, the editor, the publisher, the printer, wholesalers, and retailers.<sup>20</sup> After the authorities confiscated the customer list of this book, over 100 house searches were conducted all over Germany at customers, who had bought more than two copies of said work, indicating that they had an “illegal” intention to distribute the work.<sup>21</sup> All books found were confiscated and burned. In protest against this rampage, some 1,000 German academics published an “Appeal: Freedom of Expression is Endangered” in various German newspapers<sup>22</sup>—to no avail.<sup>23</sup>

In a further example, another famous German historian barely escaped criminal prosecution for his historically accurate, but politically “incorrect” findings. For decades, Dr. Joachim Hoffmann was a leading scientist at the German government-owned Research Institute for Military History. His field of expertise was Russia, and the German-Russian war 1941-1945 in particular. Just prior to his retirement, he published a thoroughly researched and well-documented book on the way Stalin planned and conducted this war. Hoffmann shows how Stalin planned as early as 1939 to overrun and conquer all of continental Europe, what extremely cruel method he used to force his soldiers to fight an unwanted war, how he unleashed a reign of terror over not only his own people, but all people that he (re-)conquered during the years 1943-1945. But what enraged many left-wing politicians and media personalities most was the fact that Hoffmann exposed some of the Soviet atrocity propaganda unleashed against Germany exactly as what it was: untrue or exaggerated war-time propaganda. Since Hoffmann also touched upon certain aspects of the “Holocaust” in this context, proving the propaganda origin and untruthfulness of certain aspects, this led to voices calling for Hoffmann’s prosecution and the confiscation of his book. Only be-

cause the judge responsible to decide whether or not a trial should be held was a personal friend of Dr. Hoffmann, was he left unharmed.<sup>24</sup> He was also told that a prosecution could not be avoided anymore, should he change only one word in his book, because this would renew the statute of limitations.<sup>25</sup>

The sad story of this attempt of censorship is described in the book itself, which I published in English in 2001. A longer, clearer, and more courageous preface attacking the restriction of freedom of speech in Germany was initially written by Prof. Topitsch, an Austrian historian who had published on the German-Russian war himself. But facing an escalating wave of prosecution of historians (see next section), Prof. Topitsch got so scared that only a very brief preface was finally approved by him.<sup>26</sup>

### ...and so Must This Man!

Prof. Werner Pfeifenberger once taught political science at a fine German university. Then he committed the crime of quoting the German communist Kurt Tucholsky out of context. Tucholsky once wrote that the German bourgeois should be asphyxiated. As dramatic as this sounds, read in context it is not that dramatic anymore. Since Prof. Pfeifenberger had used this and other quotations in an article he wrote juxtaposing nationalism and internationalism, he was massively attacked for being a right-winger. First, Prof. Pfeifenberger temporarily lost his job at the state university where he worked. He fought against this dismissal and won. But in a later case, he lost and was hence removed from his chair and “promoted” to a small university in nowhere-land. Next, certain political and media lobbies demanded that he ought to lose this job as well and that he be prosecuted for his writings. After many years of harassment by his colleagues and students, and after having lost his job, he finally was indeed indicted for allegedly having committed a crime by writing critical comments about internationalistically inclined Communists. On May 13, 2000, when Prof. Pfeifenberger received notice of the initialization of criminal prosecution with the threat of up to five years in prison, he committed suicide.<sup>27</sup>

One may consider this suicide unreasonable, but it was also tragic and went like a shockwave through Germany’s conservative and patriotic academia. Prof. Pfeifenberger was considered an Austrian patriot and conservative who had many friends in academia and politics, most of them conservatives and patriots themselves. I myself know quite a few of those academics, and the fear I heard and read expressed in communications, panic stricken fear of facing possible persecution against anything right-wing, conservative, patriotic in Germany and Austria, has stunned and frightened me.

Since the mid 1990s, an exhibition organized by communist propagandists is shown all over Germany, with public approval and support, depicting the activities of the German armed forces during World War II in a one-sided, derogatory way, as a formation of mass-murderers and criminals.<sup>28</sup> Most German WWII veterans, of course, feel heavily offended by this, but they are not listened to anymore. The propaganda-warfare against the Wehrmacht in particular and the German nation in general has become so bad that some elderly people are getting massively upset. A defense against these lies is almost impossi-

ble, since any dissent from the official line can lead to ostracizing and in extreme even criminal prosecutions. In 1995, after years of suffering under what he perceived as a “Niagara flood” of lies and distortions poured out about and over him and his generation, Reinhold Elstner, one of the many surviving German war veterans, wrote a flaring appeal to the German people to stop these lies and distortions. He went to the Munich Feldherrnhalle, poured gasoline over himself and set himself ablaze. He died shortly thereafter.<sup>29</sup>

Again, one might consider such self-sacrifice foolish, but even more foolish was the reaction of the authorities to this: they confiscated Elstner’s final appeal and outlawed its publication. They also outlawed any commemorative gathering at the Feldherrnhalle on his behalf, and they seized and destroyed any wreath and flowers that were laid down on Elstner’s behalf.

Compare this with the reaction of the communist authorities in Czechoslovakia in 1968 when the Prague student Jan Palach burned himself in protest against the Russian suppression of the “Prague Spring”. As Germany suppresses any commemoration of Reinhold Elstner, so did the communist authorities in Czechoslovakia until 1989, when their system finally collapsed.

### **Censorship as far as the eye can see**

In 1994, I was invited by a small historical society to lecture on some historical research I had done in 1991 and which had been published in 1993. The president of this society is the Fürth high school history teacher Hans-Jürgen Witzsch. After my lecture, this society gave me an award for my research accompanied with a small donation. During later years, I stayed in touch with Mr. Witzsch and learned more about his activities and ongoing research projects, which focus on the post-war Nuremberg trials and other post-war trials. Having analyzed a massive amount of original documents as they are stored in several Nuremberg archives, he had come to well founded conclusions regarding some of those trials which did not conform with the “officially” held view. Of course, in a democracy, there is no “officially” held view on history, since science is a field where no authority can prescribe any research results or opinions on any topic. But in Germany, things are a bit different when topics are touched which could undermine the reputation or self-proclaimed moral superiority and the justification of the existence of certain pressure groups who define themselves primarily by being opposed to anything that did actually or only allegedly happen during the years 1933 through 1945. Hence, anybody daring to revise the black-and-white all-negative historical image of this period of German history, no matter how well founded such revisions may be, will feel the heat of those pressure groups, which mainly consists of anything liberal and left-wing as well as anything Zionist, Jewish, or philo-Semitic. And since almost all relevant social groups in Germany are at once leftist, Zionist, and philo-Semitic, anybody daring to approach the Third Reich history from a “politically incorrect” angle will unavoidably unleash a hurricane of slander, insinuations, ostracizing, persecution, and possibly even prosecution.

Mr. Witzsch did exactly this. As an honest researcher and scholar, he felt obligated to publish his research results despite the fact that the authorities would not like his results. For example, he proved in detail that most foreigners who worked in

Germany during the war were not, as widespread media propaganda wants us to believe, forced laborers or even slave laborers, but that they were paid, received social benefits, vacations, decent living quarters, and even enjoyed their own social activities and access to media in their own language. Hence, in most cases, the working and living conditions for those foreigners were probably by far better than the conditions they could ever have enjoyed in their countries of origin which in most cases did neither grant social benefits nor decent working and living conditions. In another work, Witzsch was analyzing the conditions of one of the post-war trials against Oswald Pohl, head of the economic branch of the Third Reich concentration camp system. Witzsch proved the illegality of the court procedures used by the allied victorious powers and that the verdict handed down against Pohl was legally and historically untenable when considering the evidentiary situation.

As a result of these works, Witzsch first got suspended as a high school teacher, and the State of Bavaria tried to kick him out of this position forever and to reduce his pension.

In the late 1990s, Mr. Witzsch wrote a private letter to a Jewish Professor of history at the University of the German Army at Munich, asking him to intervene and put a stop to the ongoing false historical atrocity propaganda against Germany. In Witzsch’s mind, this propaganda would not only harm the German people, but since the inaccuracies of the historical picture spread by media and pressure groups would sooner or later be revealed as distorted, this will, in the long run, also do tremendous harm to the German Jewish community as one of the pressure groups which pushes this propaganda most intensively. In reaction to this private letter, said Jewish professor filed a criminal complaint against Mr. Witzsch for inciting the masses to hatred. In early 2003, Mr. Witzsch was sentenced to three months imprisonment for having written this private letter. After his conviction, Witzsch also lost his position as a teacher, and his pension was considerably cut down.<sup>30</sup>

Another representative example is Udo Walendy, a political scientist who edited a historical series called “Historical Facts” which focused on the history of the two World Wars. Walendy is best described as an old Prussian: stiff, stubborn, sometimes arrogant, and not very diplomatic. He also is a dedicated German nationalist, which made him the target of social and criminal persecution. Many of Walendy’s historical writings, most of them featuring right-wing views on Third Reich history, were put on the “Index”, a list of publications deemed dangerous for the mental development of young people. Publications listed on this Index may no longer be offered and sold in public; hence they exist only as underground literature.

A particularly tragicomic case was the attempt of the German authorities to ban Walendy’s book “Truth for Germany”,<sup>31</sup> in which Walendy tries to dispel the claim that Germany is solely or even mainly responsible for the outbreak of World War II. Walendy sued the German government repeatedly for their censoring his book. Walendy won each case, but after the German government was forced to release the book, they simply put it back on the index the next day, with only a slightly different reason given. Walendy sued again, won again, and this case was developing into a madhouse play. In one of their writings, the German authorities were stupid enough to state

that Walendy's book was well-founded, and that his thesis about Germany's lack of guilt for the outbreak of WWII could not be refuted, which, in their eyes, was even more reason to ban the book, since young people, when exposed to such a thesis, must necessarily become mentally disoriented after hearing the opposite claim of Germany's sole responsibility in all media and at the schools for decades. In other words: The German government admitted that Walendy's book was scientifically correct, that all government school books were a bunch of lies, and that the fact that kids, who are learning about the fraudulent nature of their government, might get upset, which would be reason enough—not to change the school books, but to censor Walendy! Eventually, the ban of Walendy's book, which had been imposed for almost 30 years, was lifted by the decision of Germany's Constitutional High Court. In essence, this verdict says that the German government lies to all students (in Germany, almost the entire school system is public), and that it is highly active in illegal censorship.<sup>32</sup>

Of course, such a victory for Walendy could not be left unpunished. As a consequence, the German authorities indicted Walendy for several issues of his historical periodical, where he had critically analyzed certain aspects of National Socialist anti-Jewish politics, in particular regarding the so-called Holocaust. Since Walendy had dissenting views to those prescribed in Germany by its harsh penal law, he was eventually found guilty of inciting the masses etc., and sentenced to 29 months imprisonment.<sup>33</sup>

### **The Legal Foundations of German censorship**

In German history, censorship unfortunately is more of a rule than an exception. It was introduced by the Catholic Church in the form of the Inquisition. However, it was left to the well-known Austrian statesman Metternich to perfect the system of suppressing freedom of speech by means of a comprehensive spy and surveillance apparatus introduced in the early 1800s. Neither the German Empire nor the Weimar Republic were particularly soft in their dealings with unwelcome literature,<sup>34</sup> but the worst reputation was doubtless acquired by the Third Reich, which managed, within the twelve years of its existence, to black-list some 10,000 books.<sup>35</sup> While these books were not burned, they did disappear from the shelves of bookstores, to be banned to library archives.

What is not nearly as well known is the fact that it was the Allied "liberators" of Germany who staged the greatest campaign of book destruction that mankind had ever seen. Among the victims of Allied displeasure were 34,645 titles as well as, comprehensively, all school textbooks published between 1933 and 1945; not only were these no longer permitted to be printed and sold after the war—they also had to vanish from the archives of many libraries. In the years from 1946 to 1952, the Soviet Occupation Power published four such lists ("Liste der auszusondernden Literatur", or list of literature to be destroyed) of titles earmarked for destruction. In accordance with the instructions in the censors' introduction to the second and third volumes, the first three of these lists also went into force in the western Occupation Zones.<sup>36</sup>

In modern Germany, things are not quite as arbitrary and rigorous, but censorship is still an intrinsic part of German so-

ciety.<sup>37</sup> Though the German Basic Law (similar to a constitution) expressively prohibits general censorship, it allows censorship by "general laws." The German Constitutional High Court rule that such "general laws" may not be sweeping in nature and may not prohibit a specific opinion, and may be used only to protect other fundamental human rights, like human dignity. However, the same court ruled that media can be banned from public distribution already if they are "a constant threat" to the mental development of young people.<sup>38</sup>

The German Criminal Code has at its disposal several laws facilitating censorship. One is used to prevent or punish libel (§185), another to prevent the defamation of the memory of dead persons (§189). Both activities are considered to be an attack on the fundamental right or human dignity. Two other German penal laws are used to prevent or punish the "stirring up of the people" (§130) and the "incitement to hatred" (§131), offenses which are considered to be an attack on human dignity and/or on public peace.<sup>39</sup> Though German courts originally ruled that an attack on human dignity (libel, defamation of the dead, incitement to hatred) is committed only by the use of insulting/denigrating words, legal practice has shifted the border line from which onward a crime is committed more and more from insult to justified criticism.

Also, the question of when "public peace" might be threatened is handled more and more arbitrarily. There has never been a need that "public peace" was actually disturbed (for example by demonstrations and riots caused by a certain publication). It suffices that some authorities think that if a certain dissenting view would be widespread in Germany and would be accepted by a certain portion of society as being true, than a scenario could be thought of where certain unpeaceful activities could occur. This construction, of course, can be applied to almost all views dissenting with the views held by the current authorities, and is thus the perfect tool to suppress any real and fundamental opposition.<sup>40</sup>

Following this changing practice, the German penal law was revised in autumn 1994 to reflect these changes. The revised law now includes regulations, which expressively criminalizes dissenting historical views of certain aspects of German history (primarily about National Socialist persecution of minorities), and additionally in a certain sense anything, which could be considered a "politically incorrect", yet perhaps justified criticism of population subgroups of potentially any definition—though only those subgroups will find protection from insult and criticism under this law which are considered "politically correct" (foreigners, Jews, homosexuals, but *not* Germans, German veterans, patriots, right-wingers, etc.).

In this regard the foremost German criminal law commentary observes that this amendment means that practically any kind of criticism of population subgroups—however they are defined—can become a criminal offense, since the legal right that is supposed to be protected (the anti-discrimination rule) and the feature it is supposed to protect (public peace) are rendered too general and vague in this law.

Also, the outlawing of dissenting historical views about a narrowly defined historical event is precisely the scenario, which the German Federal Constitutional Court ruled out years ago (but is ignoring today): this law criminalizes a specific

opinion about one detail of the history of only one single, past regime. From this perspective alone, this “hastily passed and not well thought-through”,<sup>41</sup> “special law against freedom of speech”<sup>42</sup> would seem to be unconstitutional, and it has been criticized commensurately in German legal subject literature, where it is described as being, in effect, “an attack on the intellectual freedom of dissidents”<sup>43</sup> and “virtually the classic example of a norm [...] directed against a specific opinion.”<sup>42</sup>

*“The legitimacy of this regulation is dubious at the very least. One can already question whether a[n opinion considered by the authorities to be a] lie is a criminal wrong at all; one must question whether the mere denial[, correction, or refutation] of [what the authorities consider to be] a historical fact, in the absence of any characteristics of agitation, may be described and dealt with as incitement of the people, of all things.”*<sup>44</sup>

The concept of “denying” something, which the authorities deem true, is a new element in German criminal law and poses problems, which it seems quite impossible for criminal procedure to solve, except with the means of political show trials, where nothing else is accused than one’s “wrong” historical views. In order for denial to objectively constitute a criminal offense, it must be done deliberately; that is, the “denier” must know that he is not telling the truth and the Judge must prove this knowledge, which in and of itself is already virtually impossible. But in order to be able to also punish (especially) the so-called “criminals of belief” who are convinced that they are telling the truth, in particular when the accused are academic experts with dare trying to prove in public and in the courts in a scholarly way that they are right, the German judiciary has concocted an entirely new definition of “intent”:<sup>45</sup>

*“In this case, intent can only be the knowledge that one’s conviction puts one into conflict with that which ‘general opinion’ indisputably regards as a historical fact. Admittedly, in a state under the rule of law this places a system of criminal law based on guilt squarely at the crossroads [between a state under the rule of law and a tyranny].”*

The new law also permits preventive censorship, as it were, by providing for the confiscation of publications or other data carriers considered to be inciting or posing a potential threat to “public peace”, which are allegedly “intended for” distribution. The judiciary holds that the intent to distribute prohibited publications exists if a person has in his or her possession more than one single copy of a data carrier.

That this new German law cannot be reconciled with international human rights standards—this was also thoroughly demonstrated by a PhD thesis analyzing this problem<sup>46</sup>—is a fact openly acknowledged by Germany’s leading politicians, but it is excused by virtue of the country’s particular history. The flawed logic goes something like this:<sup>47</sup>

*“In order to prevent the reoccurrence of book-burning and the persecution of minorities, we must burn certain books and persecute certain minorities.”*

### **Banning Books**

The first step in the process of German censorship is the blacklisting or “indexing” of, for example, a book or pamphlet. This indexing is done by the Federal Review Office for Youth-

Endangering Media (Bundesprüfstelle für jugendgefährdende Medien, BPjM), which can decide without any court or government order which media is to be indexed. This indexing means that the blacklisted work may no longer be advertised and that it may not be sold or otherwise made available to persons under 18 years of age. In practical terms this means that the work ceases to exist for the public, as one can then legally learn of its existence only by private means—or, alternately, via the list of indexed works which the BPjM regularly publishes in its Report. By now this list includes thousands of printed, audio and audio-visual works.<sup>48</sup>

While the BPjM was initially created primarily to protect German youth from pornography and the glorification of violence, it has increasingly also engaged in the battle against politically or historically unpopular literature. As early as 1990 Eckhard Jesse, who is today a Professor of Sociology in Chemnitz, criticized that the BPjM had in many ways turned out to be a gateway for a one-sided fight against everything, which is deemed to be on the right of the political spectrum.<sup>49</sup> According to Jesse, the censorship measures of the BPjM are “difficult to reconcile with the principles of a liberal society [...], because, on principle, in an open society the printed and spoken word may not be stifled.”<sup>50</sup>

While Jesse regrets that the printed word is being stifled in our society, he considers it a comforting thought that these blacklisting decisions were published in those years, thus allowing the public to review them.<sup>51</sup> However, in 2002, the German Law for the Protection of the Youth was changed to the effect that from now on, media, which are considered to be a serious threat to the youth, will be listed in a non-public list.<sup>52</sup> Affected by this new rule are mainly political and historical works which breach penal laws like “incitement to hatred” and “stirring up the people”. The public can now no longer learn which media are outlawed and which are not. Hence, one of the most important rules of a state under the rule of law, that its legal decisions and laws must be made public so that all citizens can learn about them and hence abide by them, is breached: The German authorities keep their decisions secret, and the German citizen who distributes banned media will run afoul with the law without having had any chance to prevent this. This is a first class example of a totalitarian law.

### **Book Burning by the Government**

The second stage of German censorship is the so-called confiscation (or seize-and-destroy) stage. This stage is hardly known by the public, and even Professor E. Jesse, whom we quoted earlier, seems either not to be aware of it or to ignore it. The confiscation of a publication takes place on the order of a court. What happens to the confiscated copies of such a publication is not quite clear, but it probably varies with the police station in charge. One publisher who is quite frequently the target of such book confiscations reported that he had been told that the books are burned under police supervision, and this was also confirmed by various mainstream media reports.<sup>53</sup> This seems logical, since dangerous books are, in the eyes of the German authorities, to be treated like drugs: they poison our minds and turn us into defunct members of the society. Hence the weapon of the crime—drug or book—must

be destroyed by fire (or for the book the shredder, as an alternative).

According to information from the German Federal Government, and unlike for indexed works, there is no office or authority which publishes an even remotely complete list of confiscated books;<sup>54</sup> similarly, the confiscation orders issued by the courts are not published anywhere. According to a hardly known administrative rule of the German police, every court that orders or revokes the confiscation of a medium is required to communicate its decision to the German Federal Bureau of Investigation (Bundeskriminalamt), which therefore ought to have a complete and current list, particularly as it serves the courts as information central regarding confiscation orders already issued.<sup>55</sup> However, inquiries to receive a copy of this list are never answered by this German FBI, a behavior in concordance with the secrecy the above mentioned list of “dangerous” banned media.<sup>56</sup> So here as well, the public is left completely in the dark about which media are confiscated and which are not. Should a person dare to import, export, stock, reprint, distribute, or sell such a confiscated media, he will find himself in front of a judge charged with thought crimes.

Although pornographic or pro-violent publications are also affected by confiscations, which will find approval by most people, and justly so in most cases, these media are not a particular focus here, since the destruction of political or historical publications is a much more explosive issue from a human-rights point of view.

Whereas no author, printer, wholesaler, retailer or multi-copy purchaser can be punished for having distributed a banned book *prior* to its banning, all of these individuals can be, and usually are, prosecuted for such activities even if these activities occurred *prior* to the actual court decision which declared the confiscation of such media a legal fact. According to German law, a medium that will eventually be confiscated is illegal not by its declaration of illegality by a court, but by its content. Subsequently, the act of bringing into existence such a medium is a crime, even if the authorities did not yet know of this medium at the time when it was produced. Hence, authors, translators, editors, publishers, printers, warehouse owners, wholesalers, retailers, and customers who bought more than one copy of such media—indicating an intention of distribution—are all subject to criminal prosecution even if their activities took place prior to any court decision.

In reply to an inquiry the Ministry of Justice of the Federal Land of Baden-Württemberg has stated that in the time between the end of 1994 and mid-1996, in Baden-Württemberg alone, there were 32 cases of preliminary proceedings being instituted against private individuals for their multiple purchases of confiscated books of political and/or historical nature.<sup>57</sup> Extrapolated to cover all of Germany, this figure indicates some 250 to 300 such criminal cases. Exactly how many persons have been punished in recent years for their will to produce and/or disseminate media which were confiscated afterwards is not known; the aforementioned figure of several hundred preliminary proceedings, however, would indicate that the number is substantial.

Most people prosecuted under these censorship laws adhere

to more or less right-wing views, starting from simply conservatives and patriots via nationalists to fascists and National Socialists. However, it does not really matter what one thinks of the views advocated by this group of persons. The fact is that the human right to freedom of speech must be indivisible, as Professor R. Dworkin stated it in an issue of the British periodical “Index on Censorship” that addressed the German wave of censorship.<sup>58</sup> Not a single one of the cases described here involved any calls to violence, instructions for violent acts, or trivializations of violence—at most, violence is disputed for certain historical events, or portrayed as less than generally usual in other accounts. Hence, the harshness with which the German judiciary proceeds against these dissidents is incomprehensible and unjustified.

If the cases described herein affected any other persons or groups, such as Jews, homosexuals, women, left-wingers, there would be a worldwide outcry in the press, denouncing such human rights violations. But since the victims are after all only the “right” ones, the matter is ignored and hushed up. But from an objective perspective there is no difference between, for example, Communists and Jehovah’s Witnesses being imprisoned in the Third Reich for their beliefs, and right-wingers and historians skeptical about certain aspects of Holocaust history being thrown behind bars in the Federal Republic of Germany today for the sake of their publications. Human rights remain human rights. They go for leftist radicals just as much as for right-wing radicals.

It seems that Germany’s tradition of free speech is rather underdeveloped. In light of her history, the only correct position for Germany to take would doubtlessly be to strictly and impartially grant human rights for everyone—and **not** to simply deny those human rights to the other side of the political spectrum, as happens right now. Obviously, where human rights are concerned, Germany is caught in a historical vicious circle, or, to use a different metaphor: the pendulum is swinging wildly from one extreme to the other. It is high time that it came to rest in the middle.

### **Denunciation, Wire-Tapping, Mind-Control**

One of the Allied conditions for establishing the Federal Republic of Germany was the creation of a “Federal Bureau for Protection of the Constitution.” This Orwellian device’s name was chosen in order not to give German citizens the impression that they were exposed to governmental snooping, which was of course the mission of the Bureau, and as such it was just a kind of successor of the infamous Gestapo, the Secret State Police of the Third Reich. From this bureau subsequently evolved, within the Interior Ministry, the Department for Protection of the Constitution.

Recently, Claus Nordbruch exhaustively documented the scandalous jurisdictional expansion of this domestic spy service.<sup>59</sup> Although this Department possesses no police or legal resources, it nevertheless wields tremendous power. If an individual or organization is mentioned in one of its “Constitutional Protection” reports, it is the social equivalent of a death sentence. The person or institution targeted is ostracized and shunned like a leper, often fired from his job and denied right of appeal before the employment courts.

The role of the victorious allies is evident also in the first disfranchisement of a political party, which occurred early in the 1950s. In those days the newly organized German Reich Party, which was very popular among former soldiers and the patriotically inclined, was enjoying rapid growth and electoral successes. The leading personality and draft horse of the new party was Major General Otto Ernst Remer. Because of his success he was visited by an Allied delegation. They issued him an alternative: either quit the Reich Party or else the Allies would ban it. Remer refused to knuckle under and the party was banned. For the sake of appearances the KPD (Communist Party of Germany) was also banned, but it promptly re-emerged as the DKP (German Communist Party.)

The introduction of the Emergency Decrees (“Notstandsgesetze”), which occurred toward the end of the sixties, was a decisive step toward gutting constitutional rights. These laws were intended to enable the government to restrict civil rights in case of a severe conflict with the Soviet Union. Before the Emergency Decrees were introduced, it was legally impossible for the government to restrict individual rights. It has now become commonplace.

Controversy over the Emergency Decrees also gave impetus to the student revolts of the late 1960s. With good reason, the students feared that the decrees would open the door to despotism, which they mistakenly believed would be “fascistic” in nature.

When the emergency decrees were finally accepted under the Grand Coalition of Christian Liberals and socialist at the end of the sixties, the “extraparliamentary opposition” (“*Außerparlamentarische Opposition*”, APO) was organized, which challenged the accumulation of power within the established parties through struggles in the street. Out of this APO developed the terrorist movement of the seventies, which gave the government a pretext for restricting human rights still further. It became permissible to search domiciles, tap telephones and open mail, even without official court permission, provided the intent was to head off “development of a potentially dangerous situation.” (“Gefahr im Verzug”)

With the expansion of organized criminality in the eighties, basic human rights (inviolability of the home, and privacy of mail and telephone) were weakened still further. Now came another striking innovation: such measures could be applied without judicial permission, under the simple pretext of “Suspicion [sic] of potential danger.” This is commonly called “Salami tactics.”

No one seems interested in the fact that combating organized crime is not caused by inadequate legislation, but rather by lack of support for the police and lack of will on the part of politicians, who are frequently involved in organized crime. The period around 1980 also saw the first flowering of Holocaust revisionism. The government responded to this challenge with another streamlining of its procedure for prosecuting thought crime. It raised such violations to the level of crimes that are to be prosecuted automatically, i.e., they do no longer be initiated by complaints by anybody.

Since Germany’s reunification in 1989/90, a flood of patriotism and patriotic organizations has been sweeping across Germany. International power brokers were then exerting tremendous

pressure upon Germany to repress the patriotic movement. During this time, several xenophobic attacks against foreigners occurred, some of which may well have been engineered. The German government has certainly exploited all these attacks in order to create the specter of a “brown threat,” a resurgence of fascism. As a result of this, on December 1, 1994, Germany’s Penal Code was changed on an unprecedented scale. Freedom of opinion regarding German social taboos such as foreigners, multi-culture, Jews, Holocaust and the Third Reich has been banned altogether.

The government’s most recent step toward total surveillance occurred at the end of the nineties. This was the so-called “Great Spying Assault” (“*Großer Lauschangriff*”), which legalizes constant residential surveillance with microphones and cameras under certain circumstances. Simultaneously, the German judiciary launched prosecutions of foreigners as well as German nationals for disseminating “contraband” documents over the Internet.

In Germany at present, all the following are treated as illegal items or activities:

- Anything that might be construed as a threat to “public peace” can be prohibited at the discretion of a prosecutor or judge.
- All symbols, gestures, songs, speeches, and poems, which directly or indirectly suggest anything associated with the Third Reich, are prohibited.
- Criticism of “multicultural” society and immigration policy can be construed as an illegal act.
- It is unlawful to publicly voice dissenting research results about the circumstances surrounding National Socialist crimes, whether actual or alleged. Every critical researcher who investigates the Third Reich works under the threat of persecution and suppression.
- The punishment meted out for “inciting to hatred” can be up to five years in prison.

## Süddeutsche Zeitung

(Germany’s biggest newspaper, left-wing)

30.9.98

**»According to a French study, there are currently more political prisoners in Germany than in the [communist] German Democratic Republic in the year before its collapse. However, these politically motivated offenders, who were sentenced for inciting the people, denying the Holocaust, and continuation of banned organizations, are not perceived as political prisoners in this country, [...]. These are mainly young people who thus turn into martyrs of the national resurrection of Germany.«**

*Horst Mahler*

- Even criticism of established parties, government and its representatives can be prosecuted as an offense (denigration of symbols and representatives of the state).
- As a result, thousands of books have been burned, tens of thousands of German citizens punished for thought crimes, hundreds of citizens thrown into prison, and numerous opposition parties and other organizations outlawed. Other parties and political groupings are severely restricted in their constitutionally guaranteed rights. They are subjected to social and criminal punishment, if they openly oppose or expose the conditions mentioned above. The formation of a parliamentary or extra-parliamentary opposition to these conditions has thus been made legally impossible.
- If one criticizes despotic measures, one makes oneself liable for prosecution on grounds of maligning the government, its representatives and symbols. The government has hermetically sealed itself off from all criticism and possibility of reform.

In view of such conditions it is not surprising that political scientists, sociologists, and historians no longer dare to call things by their real names. They are afraid of being hauled before the German “State Protection Police” and the courts’ “State Protection Chambers” and sentenced to severe punishment over more or less trivial expressions of political opinion.

In all the years I have been associated with representatives of German intellectual life, I have been hearing formulaic expressions such as “Freedom is in peril” and “Are our opinions really free?” It has now become clear that freedom is not “endangered”—it no longer exists. Likewise there is no longer any question about whether one’s thoughts are still free. Given the present climate of anxiety

in Germany’s society, media and government, many citizens are actually afraid to express their opinions. More and more often one hears it said: “You can’t even think that!” People are afraid to openly discuss conditions in Germany because they could suffer serious consequences if they did.

Prof. Gottfried Dietze, Emeritus of Johns Hopkins University, responded to my request to comment from the unassailable position of retired emeritus in a foreign country. His response was discouraging: the world has already dragged Germany through the mud so badly that he chooses not to make the situation even worse with negative comments about present day conditions in his beloved fatherland. What a heartbreaking observation!<sup>60</sup>

There is a little German witticism going around that illustrates the difference between the former DDR and the present government. Today’s Germany does the opposite of what the DDR used to do: it keeps its citizens fat and politically impotent and takes away their hope of escape by incorporating all German territory and pressing its neighbors to act as she wishes, and so she has no further need of walls and self-firing robot guns at the borders.

In 1994, Germany had a president named Richard von Weizsäcker who publicly called upon children to spy upon their

parents and vice versa in order to denounce them should they harbor right-wing views. In the meantime, Germany even has a toll-free number where German citizens can denounce their co-citizens in case they harbor unwanted right-wing views: 011-49-1805-234566. Only totalitarian states can sink this low.

On January 19, 1993, Mr. E. Mußmann, Professor of Police Law at the Ludwigsburg Academy for Public Administration, delivered a lecture to the German Catholic Student Organization *Nordgau Prag* in Stuttgart, entitled “How the Police Change with the Times.” In this lecture he criticized the relentless undermining of constitutional rights and the expanding power of the police apparatus. Prof. Mußmann remarked that, if these trends were not reversed, he would not want to live in Germany in forty years, because it would have become a police state with pronounced Orwellian tendencies. Prof. Mußmann was mistaken. It took only ten years.

Today, the leaders of the 1968 student revolt have become Germany’s political leaders—almost all of them radical socialists, Communists, Marxists, Spartacists, or even supporters of Red Army terrorists, like Trittin (Minister for Ecology), Schröder (Federal Chancellor), Fischer (Minister for Foreign Affairs), Schilly (Minister for Internal Affairs) –, and the persecution they unleash against the German people has no parallel in German post-war history. Factually, Germany has turned into a left-wing extremists state, closer to the former communist East Germany than to the U.S.

In such an atmosphere, everybody visiting Germany should be aware that telling the wrong kind of jokes with the wrong kind of audience—and if it is only the guy on the table next to you in the restaurant who doesn’t like your joke—might be a free ticket to a German jail, because

making jokes about certain minorities (Jews, Turks, homosexuals, gypsies...) might be interpreted as “Incitement to hatred.” So you better watch your back when visiting Germany!

**Currently, it is the moral terror of political correctness, which turns free speech into a neck-breaking risk.**

*Martin Walser, famous German writer*

### **A Legal System Bound to go Berserk**

One certain law of the German criminal rules of procedure enables German judges to disallow evidence or testimony if the point to be proven is considered by the legal system to be common knowledge. The purpose of this law is to create obstacles to a possible defense tactic of prolonging the trial, or making it more expensive for the authorities.<sup>61</sup>

There is, however, one topic where the German legal system misinterprets this rule, and that is in connection with historical events of the Third Reich period, with criticism of the Jewish religion, or with criticism against multiculturalism or mass-immigration. If anybody publicly utters beliefs that are not in accordance with the officially decreed truth, he might find himself in front of a judge, not able to present any evidence that would possibly substantiate his views. The reason is that according to present day German legal practice, certain aspects of Third Reich history are considered to be proven facts, and criticizing victims of the Third Reich—Jews, foreigners, any minority in general—is considered a crime, whether the

criticism is justified or not. Regarding criticism of such groups, truth is no defense. What matters is the impact a dissenting view could possibly have if a majority in Germany agreed with it. Therefore, defendants holding such dissenting views have no right to prove their point. The public prosecutor does not have to prove he is right, since the judges decree “common knowledge” of the fact that the public prosecutor is always right, and the defendant has no right to introduce evidence, since the judges decree “common knowledge” of the fact that the defendant is always wrong.<sup>62</sup> Trying to prove his point nevertheless only results in more severe punishment, since it proves that the defendant is willing to repeat his crime of dissent in front of the court and is not willing to submit.

It has been ruled that “common knowledge” can be abandoned if there is evidence which is new and/or superior to any other evidence ever produced in a German court of law, or if there is noticeable public dissent.<sup>63</sup> However, all attempts of lawyers to introduce new, superior evidence or evidence proving that there is noticeable public dissent have been dismissed due to—guess what—“common knowledge” that the defendant is wrong. In perversion of every proper legal system, historical and forensic experts who prepared evidence far superior to any other evidence ever produced have always been rejected—due to “common knowledge that they are wrong”—and also been subjected to prosecution and sentenced, without having a chance to even introduce their own evidence—due to “common knowledge that they are wrong”.<sup>64</sup>

Public personalities who dare to start creating “noticeable public dissent” are also prosecuted without having a chance to present their own public activity as “noticeable public dissent”, because it is “common knowledge that they are wrong”.

Most recently, the German Federal Supreme Court has even decided that any defense lawyer, who dares to present or ask for the introduction of evidence challenging the officially decreed historical truth of the Third Reich, has to be prosecuted and sentenced for collaborating with the defendant in harboring and spreading his dissenting views, hence “incitement of the masses” and “stirring up the people”.<sup>65</sup> That is exactly the directly analogous to the medieval witch trials, when lawyers trying to prove that there is no devil or no witchcraft were prosecuted themselves for collaborating with the devil and the witches.

To top all this, in 1994, German judge Rainer Orlet who, in the opinion of the media and many politicians, did not punish a historical dissenter and leader of a nationalistic opposition group harshly enough and even showed some sympathy with the sympathetic, thus far law-abiding defendant, was threatened with prosecution and finally had to resign. All the right-wing defendant had done was to translate a speech by an American who expressed dissenting, but peaceful views on Third Reich history. This case made it clear to all judges in Germany that they better punish all dissenters on certain his-

torical topics without mercy, or they might find themselves persecuted.<sup>66</sup>

The organizational framework of the German legal system is somewhat awkward as well. For example, as I experienced myself while active as an expert in several court cases, German prosecutors as well as judges in conference with defense lawyers openly admit that trials against political and historical dissenters are political trials whose outcomes are predetermined from the beginning by order from higher up. Thus it happened that a prosecutor of the court in Bielefeld let slip the following “lapsus linguae” in a conference with Attorney H. Herrmann during court recess:

*“Counsel, it is obvious that you have prepared yourself extremely well for this case, and I obviously can not compete with your expertise. In this trial I am merely substituting for my colleague who normally handles political cases.”*

This was by no means an exceptional case. To Munich Attorney Klaus Göbel, who frequently represented revisionist defendants during the early 1990s, a judge in the evidentiary phase of a trial expressed himself quite candidly, as follows:

*“Surely you do not think your expert witness will be admitted. Surely you know that this court has a political mission. Our mission demands that without exception those who express doubt about certain aspects of Third Reich history must be brought to trial and convicted. You will never be allowed to present your evidence.”*

Attorney Göbel shared this with me on July 22, 1992, during the preliminary proceedings of the trial for which I was to be summoned as an expert witness. He did this in order to make it clear to me that our tactic of “considered, innovative, up-to-

date evidence” in order to break the “common knowledge” could not prevail. German courts are charged with suppressing all exculpatory evidence in such trials, and to disqualify expert witnesses without a hearing.

Toward the end of 1992, I accidentally learned about the existence of a certain “Department of State Protection” of the District Criminal Court of Baden-Württemberg. I was so flabbergasted to see a title with such an obvious political program that I investigated. It turned out that there really exist such State Protection Departments in Germany’s police headquarters, whose mission consists of prosecuting crimes, which could threaten the existence of the Federal Republic and/or the “basic principles of freedom and democracy.” Evidently, in the eyes of the criminal police, harboring certain dissenting political and historical views represents just such a threat. The State Protection Department is divided into three units: Rightwing Extremism, Leftwing Extremism, and Political Extremism by Foreigners.<sup>66</sup>

One would assume that the bureaucrats in their respective units have been instructed in these respective ideologies so that they will be able to recognize their particular brand of “extremism”, be able to combat it, and avoid falling victim to it. A con-

**More and more, I get the impression that one now lives in an Orwellian-like State in Germany**

*Hiltrud Schröder, former wife of  
German Federal Chancellor  
Gerhard Schröder*



versation with one of these bureaucrats showed me just how thorough his instruction had been. One certainly cannot accuse these people of ignorance, and most particularly not of ideological insensitivity!

In the fall of 1994, I learned that even the German courts of laws have their political section, doing nothing else but prosecuting crimes with a political background, or crimes consisting of nothing else but expressing “illegal,” dissident political or historical views. They are internally referred to as “Chambers of State Protection.”

Nothing of this is actually kept secret in Germany, yet the average citizen has no idea of how deeply the principle of politicized judiciary has taken root in the German criminal justice system, penetrating even into organizational structure. As far as the public is concerned, there has been a complete news blackout on the subject. Nobody asks if there could or should possibly be such things as State Protection Departments in a state under the rule of law, specialized Courts of State Protection and political trials in a system which, after all, pretends to be a liberal democracy.

To make matters worse, the German criminal rules of procedure are awkward as well, to say the least. Every TV viewer is familiar with court procedures as they are common in most countries. While a trial is under way, the court secretaries are sitting at a stenographic table and are industriously typing away creating an official court record. Today, much of this work is done by automatic voice recognition. That is the way it is done in the USA, England, Austria, and even in German civil trials.

But not in German criminal trials! Here, no court record is kept!!! This is extremely ominous, since afterwards it cannot be pointed out just what the judge, prosecutor, defendant, defense attorney, or witness has said.<sup>66</sup> This opens the door very wide for lies and errors on the part of the judge. As a matter of fact, there is absolutely no excuse for German criminal courts’ not keeping a court record, considering the state of modern stenographic technology. The absence of such a record invites for all kinds of judicial misconduct, which, as I may add, does occur especially frequent in the political trials discussed here. Not even the best judge remembers everything that was said during his trial, but even if discrepancies resulting from such errors could be remedied, there would still remain the worst evil of all: That is the very existence of a political judiciary, which is bound to find a way to convict whomever it targets.

### How it all evolved

The avalanche of persecution described here is mainly directed against anything on the right side of the political spectrum. To understand this, one must look back into the early history of post-war Germany. After their conquest of Germany, the allied powers instituted a rigorous policy to uproot and destroy any German nationalism, militarism and historical pride.<sup>67</sup> To achieve this, they introduced several measures:

a) A system of media licensing guaranteed that only left-wing oriented media could be established during the first ten years after the war. These media do still dominate the German media market. Basically, no noticeable patriotic, right-wing media do exist.

b) All German academics who were deemed right-wing lost their positions and were replaced with left-wingers. The most important positions in the humanities at the most important German universities were occupied with dedicated anti-German, left-wing radical (Marxist) individuals.

c) No right-wing political party was allowed to establish itself. The only one that had initial success (Deutsche Reichspartei) was outlawed by the Allies.

d) A program of re-education was introduced which turned German history into a horror cabinet, with the intention to break German pride and self-confidence.

After some 50 years, the allied post-war re-education program showed full success. Today, German society is led by personalities who are filled with contempt for anything patriotic, right-wing, conservative, and who view German history mainly under the perspective of the (often exaggerated and distorted) events of the Third Reich. To quote *The Independent* once more: German individuals who dare to declare that they are proud to be a citizen of their country are called neo-Nazis and Skinheads in Germany, even if they are mainstream politicians. For comparison: An American individual who would declare that he is *not* proud of his country would never be elected into any US office. In Germany, the opposite is true: A person who would declare that he *is* proud of his country would never be elected into any office.

In the meantime, the word “Rechts”—right-wing—has become synonymous with evil in Germany. Virtually everybody—political parties, religious groups, commercial associations, social entities, the media and corporations...—is joining in the fight against “right.” Note: this is not a fight against radicalism, extremism, fascism, or ‘neo-Nazism,’ but against everything deemed to be “right”. Government agencies spread brochures entitled “Laws against right”,<sup>68</sup> showing how everybody can help to fight anything deemed to be politically right. The situation has become so hysterical that in late 2000, Germany’s leading, left-wing political magazine *Der Spiegel* justly headlined that Germany would be in a hysteria against right, caused mainly by a media paranoia that falsely (!) suspected a right-wing conspiracy behind almost each and every crime that had shattered Germany during that year.<sup>69</sup>

The climax was reached in 2001, when a German public prosecutor rejected the criminal complaint of a conservative activist who had been slandered as a “Nazi” by certain media. As a reason not to allow this complaint, this prosecutor stated that the German public would consider everybody on the political right to be a “Nazi,” whether they are conservatives, patriots, right-wingers, radicals, extremists, fascists, or National Socialist. Since “Nazi” had become a collective term for everything on the right, nobody could be insulted by such a designation as long as he indeed belongs to any group considered to be right-wing in any regard. That means that everybody who is politically on the right is a “Nazi” by definition of the German authorities.

As a result of this climate of hatred against German patriotic self-confidence, anybody who happens to end up on the right side of the spectrum quickly moves a little to the left to avoid being called “right,” *i.e.*, evil. Of course, this then leaves somebody else on the right margin of the spectrum, who is next to move to

the left. As a result of this, the entire political spectrum in Germany has been shifting to the left over the last 4 decades. German society today can be compared with an airplane that has no right wing to balance errors and misconceptions of the left. Such a society is bound to crash in the long run.

Nowadays, one is tempted to support the repression of 'neo-Nazis,' who are depicted in the media as intolerant, racist, anti-Semitic, brutal, and disgusting. However, one should consider this: whoever blithely agrees that "Nazis" ought to be prosecuted solely on account of their dissenting political views, should not complain if tomorrow he finds himself slandered as a "Nazi" and persecuted only because a neighbor denounces him for waving a national flag or singing the national anthem. Because that is exactly what is happening in Germany: Those who express plain normal patriotic feelings, as it is quite common and considered normal in the U.S., are considered to be "Nazis" in Germany—so far to the left has the political spectrum drifted there. Everybody has the duty to protest the persecution of unconventional thinkers. This is true not only if persecution comes from a dictatorship, but also if it emanates from a state that claims to be a constitutional democracy!

To give another example of the mental conditions of Germans, I want to tell a story of my own making, using true data I had learned about in 1989. During a business management course in 1994, I once had to hold a spontaneous lecture about anything. I walked to the overhead projector and began:

*"I want to present to you the result of a remarkable poll that was conducted a few years ago. In this poll, 1000 representatively chosen Germans should answer the question, who was guilty for the German-Hungarian war of 1880. The results of this poll are as follows:"*

With color markers, I drew the columns for each answer:

*"83% of all Germans answered that Germany was responsible for this war.*

*7% of all Germans answered that Hungary was responsible for this war.*

*10% had other answers."*

The classroom was silently listening, as I continued:

*"Now comes the catch: There was never a German-Hungarian war. Actually, most of the Germans of these 10% 'other answers' knew that. Now, what does that tell us, apart from the fact that the historical knowledge of Germans isn't that good? Well, it tells us that the Germans in their vast majority tend to blame themselves for crimes even if these crimes were never committed."*



**Staatsanwaltschaft  
Chemnitz**

Staatsanwaltschaft Chemnitz  
Aunaberger Straße 79, 09120 Chemnitz

Herrn  
Alexander Kleber

Chemnitz, den 27. Oktober 2000  
Telefon: 0371/453-4414  
Bearbeiter: Herr SA a. GL Zöllner / leu  
Aktenzeichen: [REDACTED]  
(Bitte bei Antwort angeben)

Ermittlungsverfahren gegen [REDACTED]  
wegen Beleidigung

Strafanzeige vom 30.05.2000

Sehr geehrter Herr Kleber,

das Ermittlungsverfahren habe ich mit Verfügung vom 25.10.2000 gemäß § 170 Abs. 2 Strafprozeßordnung eingestellt.

**Gründe:**

Dem Beschuldigten wurde vorgeworfen, den Anzeigenerstatter in einem Artikel der Zeitung "Freibürger", Ausgabe Mai 2000 als Neonazi bezeichnet und so beleidigt zu haben. Desweiteren sei ohne Erlaubnis ein Bild des Anzeigenerstatters veröffentlicht worden.

Eine strafbare Beleidigung im Sinne von § 185 StGB liegt nicht vor, der Beschuldigte hat die Grenzen der Pressefreiheit nicht überschritten. Maßgebend bei der Beurteilung der Frage, ob die Bezeichnung als Neonazi eine Beleidigung darstellt, ist, wie ein unbefangener verständiger Durchschnittsleser die Äußerung versteht. Entscheidend ist damit der objektive Sinngehalt (Erklärungsinhalt), nicht also, was der Beschuldigte zum Ausdruck bringen wollte oder was der Anzeigenerstatter als Betroffener darunter versteht, sondern was mit dem Begriff Neonazi zum Ausdruck gebracht wurde. Gerade vor dem Hintergrund der aktuell häufig in der Öffentlichkeit diskutierten "rechten Gewalt" wird der Begriff Neonazi als Sammelbegriff für sämtliche Personen, die in irgendeiner Art und Weise dem politisch rechten Spektrum zuzurechnen sind, verwendet, ohne dass dabei hinsichtlich einer Gruppenzugehörigkeit innerhalb des rechten Spektrums differenziert wird. Die hier verwendete Bezeichnung stellt also keine Beleidigung dar, sondern ordnet den Anzeigenerstatter lediglich

Hausanschrift: Aunaberger Str. 79, 09120 Chemnitz Vermittlung: 0371/453-0 Telefax: 0371/453-4445  
Verbindung: Straßenbahnlinien Linie 5 und 6. Behindertengerechter Zugang über Lutheringer Straße

- 2 -

einer Gruppe zu, der er tatsächlich angehört. Er ist als Landesvorsitzender der Jungen Landmannschaft von Sachsen und Niederschlesien zweifelsohne als rechtsorientiert einzustufen. Hinsichtlich des veröffentlichten Bildes des Anzeigenerstatters war seine Erlaubnis wegen § 23 Abs. 1 Nr. 3 KunstUrkG entbehrlich.

Hochachtungsvoll

gez. Zöllner  
Staatsanwalt als Gruppenleiter

Diese Mitteilung wurde elektronisch erstellt und enthält deshalb keine Unterschrift, wofür um Verständnis gebeten wird.

Now one could hear a needle drop on the floor. I carried on:  
*"This becomes really interesting when compared with polls in other nations. When the guilt-question about any similarly invented war is asked in Great Britain or the US, for example, the results usually look inverted: Most people there blame the other nation, but not themselves, for such a war they cannot remember.*

*I think that this should make all of us wonder about the psychological state of the German people.*

*I thank you for your attention."*

This shocking revelation even flabbergasted the most left-wing radical students in that course.

### Persecution by Prosecution

Just recently, the Canadian media referred to Germany as a country with one of the toughest "hate crime" legislation in the world.<sup>70</sup> This choice of words is unfortunate, since what we are dealing with in Germany has nothing to do with what is called a "hate crime" in Canada or the U.S. In North America, a hate crime is a normal criminal offense (theft, robbery, rape, murder, assault, etc.) driven by hatred against a group, which is considered to be worthy of protection against such hatred. Feelings themselves, be they hate or love, are not a crime in both America and Canada. Expressing feelings or opinions is never a crime. But it is different in Germany: If one expresses hate, contempt, disgust or any other negative feeling for somebody or a certain group, this by itself can be a crime. There is, of course, one big exception: Everybody is allowed to spread unlimited hatred, contempt, and disgust against Germany, the German people, and its culture. This is not an offense. But doing the same against any other group may very well constitute a crime. And even worse so: Expressing views out of love, affection, and altruism can be a crime as well, that is, if somebody expresses opinions driven by his love for the German people, the German nation, or the German culture, this can be regarded as a denigration of other nations, people, and cultures and can get one into legal trouble.

And even worse, in cases where no feelings are expressed, but simple, unemotional facts and opinions are claimed, a "hate crime" can be committed in Germany if any identifiable, influential group hates that such facts or opinions are voiced publicly. For example, if one has dissenting views on certain historical topics, this does, of course, not come with any emotional statement about any identifiable group. But such dissenting views are very often hated by certain leftist and/or Jewish groups, hence they are classified as "hate crimes"—allegedly

because they incite to hatred against those groups, but actually because those groups hate such opinions.

It would therefore be helpful if the German prosecution of such "crimes" would not be referred to as "hate crimes", since they do not consist of crimes in a legal sense, but as Orwellian "thought crimes" or, as the German authorities call them, as "propaganda offenses".

To summarize the situation: Germany and its leaders have fallen from one extreme to another, from extreme nationalism to extreme self-hatred and self-destruction, from the brutal suppression of anti-patriotic forces to the brutal suppression of patriotic forces. The pendulum swings to the other extreme, but

hopefully it will not get stuck there, which would ultimately lead to the destruction of Germany, its people, and its culture, to a geno-suicide.

### Total Silence of Media and Human Rights Organizations

But why do not hear about this in our media? Must one not expect that at least some human rights organization would speak out about it?

The reason for this total silence is simple: Would you dare to defend individuals who are called "neo-Nazis" by the German authorities and media?

The president of one human rights organization, the German *Internationale Gesellschaft für Menschenrechte (IGFM, International Society for Human Rights)*, clearly spelled it out when approached to assist the victims of modern day German persecution. Though they know about the injustice done to many scholars and publishers, they decided not to assist.<sup>71</sup>

*"I believe that the IGFM does not have the strength to get through such a proceeding without harming the entire society."*

The background of this is that this society has already come under massive attack by the German media and left-wing organizations for its firm stance against communism and for assisting ethnic Germans who experience persecution due to

their ethnic background in eastern European countries (mainly Poland and Czechoslovakia). Assisting individuals who are accused of being "politically incorrect" due to their (alleged) right-wing views would most likely unleash a wave of persecution against the society itself, which it thinks it could not deal with.

400 years ago, nobody would dare to defend those made out as witches by the authorities. In the Soviet Union, it could prove fatal to defend someone depicted as a capitalist. In National Socialist Germany, you would better not dare to defend a Jew or a Communist. The labels that dictatorial systems place on people to ostracize them change. But neither do the methods

**Germany today:  
83,610 Criminal  
prosecutions  
Because of "Thought Crimes"  
During The Last Eight Years:**

Year	Right	Left	Foreign	Sum
1994	5,562	185	235	5,982
1995	6,555	256	276	7,087
1996	7,585	557	818	8,960
1997	10,257	1,063	1,249	12,569
1998	9,549	1,141	2,098	12,788
1999	8,651	1,025	1,525	11,201
2000	13,863	979	525	15,367
2001	8,874	429	353	9,656

- **Right:** "Offenses with right wing extremist background", that is: "Propaganda Offenses" and "Stirring up the People"
- **Left:** Offenses with left wing extremist background", generally referred to as "other offenses"
- **Foreign:** offenses committed by foreign extremists, mainly against the German law of organizations ("Vereinsgesetz") by Kurds in the prohibited Kurdian Liberation Army PKK

Source: Report of the German Office for the Protection of the Constitution (1995-2002), acc. to the German Federal Bureau of Investigation ("Bundeskriminalamt")

of persecution change, nor the indifference or even active approval of the public.

What will you say if they call you a ‘neo-Nazi’ tomorrow because you dared to sing your national anthem in public? So think twice, if somebody is called a ‘neo-Nazi’ by the media. It is perhaps only a patriot.

## Notes

- <sup>1</sup> *The Independent*, March 21, 2001, p. 5.
- <sup>2</sup> Most prominently the Student edition of Germany’s biggest political magazine, *Der Spiegel*, see <http://www.spiegel.de/unispiegel/studium/0,1518,125322,00.html#v>; when searching the internet on this, German websites discussing the anthem expressively state that it is not outlawed, and emphasis which is necessary to give to visitors, see, e.g., <http://www.deutschlandlied.de/>; <http://www.frankfurter-verbindingen.de/studentenlieder/liedderdeutschen.html>; <http://www.deutsche-schutzgebiete.de/deutschlandlied.htm>; English media frequently wrongly report that it is outlawed, see, e.g., the British *Searchlight* (<http://www.searchlightmagazine.com/stories/DefendingWehrmacht.htm>).
- <sup>3</sup> On F. Rennie’s case, see court case from Sept. 18 to Oct. 15, 2002, District Court Stuttgart, ref. Ns 6 Js 88181/98; see the description by Johannes Heyne, “Patriotenverfolgung: Der Fall Ute und Frank Rennie”, *VffG* 7(1) (2003); compare also Rennie’s website at <http://go.to/Rennie>.
- <sup>4</sup> Regulations about this vary from State to State, see an article published in the periodical of the German parliament, e.g., *Aus Politik und Zeitgeschichte* No. 39 / September 22, 2000; [www.das-parlament.de/2000/39/Thema/2000\\_39\\_095\\_3076.html](http://www.das-parlament.de/2000/39/Thema/2000_39_095_3076.html)
- <sup>5</sup> For this, see, e.g., the free brochure *Recht gegen Rechts*, distributed by all German authorities, e.g.: [www.hamburg.de/Behoerden/Landeszentrale/archiv/pdf/recht\\_gegen\\_rechts.pdf](http://www.hamburg.de/Behoerden/Landeszentrale/archiv/pdf/recht_gegen_rechts.pdf); also: <http://www.recht-gegen-rechts.de/>
- <sup>6</sup> H. Diwald, *Geschichte der Deutschen*, Propyläen, Berlin 1978.
- <sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, 2nd edition, 1978 (actually printed in 1979).
- <sup>8</sup> R.J. Eibicht (ed.), *Hellmut Diwald*, Hohenrain, Tübingen 1994.
- <sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*, endnote 74, p. 147. This article is available online at [www.vho.org/D/diwald/hepp.html](http://www.vho.org/D/diwald/hepp.html).
- <sup>10</sup> County Court Tübingen, Ref. 4 Gs 1085/97.
- <sup>11</sup> *Abendzeitung* (Munich), March 7./8., 1998: “The remaining copies are occasionally being burnt in a waste incinerator”; *Zur Zeit* (Vienna), no. 9/1998 (Febr. 27): “65 years ago this still happened publicly, today this is being achieved on the quite in waste incinerators.”
- <sup>12</sup> Wilhelm Stäglich, *Der Auschwitz Mythos*, Grabert-Verlag, Tübingen 1979; Eng.: *The Auschwitz Myth: A Judge Looks at the Evidence*, Institute for Historical Review, Newport Beach, CA, 1986.
- <sup>13</sup> Cf. Wigbert Grabert (ed.), *Geschichtsbetrachtung als Wagnis*, Grabert, Tübingen 1984; see also DGG, “Bundesverwaltungsgericht im Dienste der Umerzieher. Erstmals Doktorgrad aus politischen Gründen aberkannt”, in *Deutschland Geschichte und Gegenwart* 36(3) (1988), p. 18 (online: [vho.org/D/DGG/DGG36\\_3\\_2.html](http://www.vho.org/D/DGG/DGG36_3_2.html)); DGG, “Unglaubliches Urteil im Fall Dr. Stäglich”, *ibid.*, 36(1) (1988), p. 7 (online: [.../DGG36\\_1\\_1.html](http://www.vho.org/D/DGG/DGG36_1_1.html)); DGG, “Vernunft wird Unsinn ... Späte Rache für den ‘Auschwitz-Mythos’”, *ibid.*, 31(1) (1983), pp. 19f. (online: [.../DGG31\\_1.html](http://www.vho.org/D/DGG/DGG31_1.html)); DGG, “Ende der Wissenschaftsfreiheit?”, *ibid.*, 29(3) (1981), p. 38 (online: [.../DGG29\\_3\\_1.html](http://www.vho.org/D/DGG/DGG29_3_1.html)).
- <sup>14</sup> *Reichsgesetz über die Führung akademischer Grade*, June 7, 1939 (*Reichsgesetzblatt I*, p. 985) (Reich Law for the Carrying of Academic Degrees) as well as *Durchführungsverordnung*, July 21, 1939 (*Reichsgesetzblatt I*, p. 1326).
- <sup>15</sup> Administrative Court of Baden-Württemberg, Ref. IX 1496/79, decision on March 18, 1981. At that time, a person who had been convicted to five years imprisonment for drug trafficking, which was entered in his police record, was certified as *having* the necessary ethical qualification, and the University was ordered to admit him to the Rigorosum. In this decision, it was held that this Hitler law is still in effect because it does not contain National Socialist thinking and should be considered as having been legally enacted.
- <sup>16</sup> German Federal Constitutional Court, ref. 1 BvR 408f./83. A similar case occurred in 1996, when a PhD title was withheld from a candidate at Stuttgart University because he had used his academic credentials to prepare a chemical and engineering expert report coming to “wrong” conclusions on the same taboo topic. The victims was the author of this article. In France, similar cases have occurred against the historians Henry Roques (PhD title revoked by the Ministry of Education; André Chelain, *La thèse de Nantes et l’affaire Roques*, Polémiques, Paris 1988) and Jean Plantin (Bachelors and Masters degrees revoked by the University of Lyon III in 2000/2001).
- <sup>17</sup> Ernst Gauss (ed.) *Grundlagen zur Zeitgeschichte. Ein Handbuch über strittige Fragen des 20. Jahrhunderts*, Grabert, Tübingen 1994; Engl.: E. Gauss, *Dissecting the Holocaust*, Theses and Dissertations Press, Capshaw, AL, 2000.
- <sup>18</sup> Dr. Joachim Hoffmann and Prof. Dr. Ernst Nolte. Dr. Hoffmann’s expert opinion was published in E. Gauss, *Dissecting the Holocaust*, *ibid.*, pp. 561-564. Prof. Nolte’s expert opinion has not been published. It is part of the trial records of County Court Tübingen, ref. 4 Gs 173/95.
- <sup>19</sup> So the statement of Wigbert Grabert, publisher of said book, in private communications. According to Grabert, one of the police officers involved in this confiscation told him that those books will be burned in waste incinerators under police supervision. Cf. note 11.
- <sup>20</sup> County Court Tübingen, ref. 4 Gs 173/95; and private communication by publisher W. Grabert, who told me that the criminal investigation against the printer of the book was eventually dropped because he declared publicly that he did not know about the content of the book and that he was horrified when he heard about it—which was a plain lie, because he very well knew what this book was all about.
- <sup>21</sup> Private communication by W. Grabert, whose customer list was confiscated and who subsequently had well over one hundred of calls and letters by his customers bitterly complaining about this massive house search campaign.
- <sup>22</sup> *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, May 17, 1996, p. 12 (100 signatories); *Stuttgarter Nachrichten*, July 19, 1996, p. 6, *Stuttgarter Zeitung*, July 19, 1996, p. 7 (both 500 signatories); *Westfalen-Blatt*, Sept. 13, 1996 (1,000 signatories); though not expressively mentioned, this appeal was triggered by said book burning, see private communications of the initiator of these ads, Dr. R. Kosiek, to me, Nov. 17, 2000, and May 2, 2001.
- <sup>23</sup> In German public TV, this appeal was simply dismissed as a right-wing extremist propaganda campaign, see *ARD-Tagesthemen*, June 5, 1996; similar the reaction of the Baden-Württemberg parliament, when this affair was brought to its attention, cf. Landtag (state parliament) of Baden-Württemberg, 12th session, Paper 12/334, Parliamentary question by Rep. Michael Herbricht (REP), re. the appeal of 500 academics protesting against book burning by the authorities (“Appell der 500”, *Stuttgarter Zeitung*, Aug. 27, 1996, see note 22). Position of the Baden-Württemberg Ministry of Justice, Stuttgart, Sept. 23, 1996, Ref. 4104 - III/185, Dr. Ulrich Goll.
- <sup>24</sup> See Hoffmann’s updated preface on this in J. Hoffmann, *Stalin’s War of Extermination 1941-1945*, Theses and Dissertations Press, Capshaw, AL 2001. Personal communications from Dr. J. Hoffmann.
- <sup>25</sup> Personal communications from Prof. Dr. E. Topitsch.
- <sup>26</sup> For this, see Otto Scrinzi, “Menschenjagd bis in den Tod”, *Aula*, 6/2000; also Rudi Zornig, “Zum Gedenken an Werner Pfeifenberger”, *Vierteljahrshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 4(2) (2000), pp. 127-130.
- <sup>28</sup> Hamburger Institut für Sozialforschung (ed.), *Vernichtungskrieg. Verbrechen der Wehrmacht 1941 bis 1944*, (War of Extermination. The Crimes of the Wehrmacht, 1941 to 1945) Hamburger Edition, Hamburg 1996; English: Hamburg Institute for Social Research (ed.), *The German Army and Genocide: Crimes Against War Prisoners, Jews, and Other Civilians, 1939-1944*, The New Press, New York 1999. For criticism of this exhibition, see, e.g., Rüdiger Proske, *Wider den Mißbrauch der Geschichte deutscher Soldaten zu politischen Zwecken*, Von Hase & Köhler, Mainz 1996; Proske, *Vom Marsch durch die Institutionen zum Krieg gegen die Wehrmacht*, *ibid.*, 1997; Joachim F. Weber (ed.), *Armee im Kreuzfeuer*, Universitas, Munich 1997; Walter Post, *Die verleumdete Armee*, Pour le Mérite, Selent 1999; Klaus Sojka (ed.), *Die Wahrheit über die Wehrmacht. Reemtsmas Fälschungen widerlegt*, FZ-Verlag, Munich 1998; Franz W. Seidler, *Verbrechen an der Wehrmacht, Pour le Mérite*, Selent 1998; Focus, No. 16 & 17/1997, 6/1998; Bogdan Musial, “Bilder einer Ausstellung. Kritische Anmerkungen zur Wanderausstellung ‘Vernichtungskrieg. Verbrechen der Wehrmacht 1941-1944’”, *Vierteljahrshefte für Zeitgeschichte*, 47(4) (1999), pp. 563-591; cf. Bogdan Musial, “Konterrevolutionäre Elemente sind zu erschießen”, *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Oct. 30, 1999, p. 11; Krisztián Ungváry, “Echte Bilder - problematische Aussagen”, *Geschichte in Wissenschaft und Unterricht*, 50(10), (1999), pp. 584-595; cf. Krisztián Ungváry, “Reemtsmas Legenden”, *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Nov. 5, 1999, p. 41; Dieter Schmidt-Neuhaus, “Die Tarnopol-Stellwand der Wanderausstellung ‘Vernichtungskrieg – Verbrechen der Wehrmacht 1941 bis 1944’”, *ibid.*, pp. 596-603; Klaus Hildebrandt, Hans-Peter Schwarz, Lothar

- Gall, quote in "Kritiker fordern engültige Schließung", *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Nov. 6, 1999, p. 4; Ralf Georg Reuth, "Endgültiges Aus für Reemtsma-Schau?", *Welt am Sonntag*, Nov. 7, 1999, p. 14.
- <sup>29</sup> His letter has been published on the internet, see, e.g., <http://www.vho.org/VffG/2000/2/Elstner131f.html>; cf. Mark Weber, "A German takes his life to protest defamation and historical lies", *Journal of Historical Review*, 15(5) (1995) p. 19.
- <sup>30</sup> See [www.vho.org/News/D/News4\\_97.html#historiker](http://www.vho.org/News/D/News4_97.html#historiker); [www.vho.org/News/D/News3\\_00.html#n14](http://www.vho.org/News/D/News3_00.html#n14); [www.vho.org/News/D/News3\\_01.html#7](http://www.vho.org/News/D/News3_01.html#7); [www.vho.org/News/D/News1\\_02.html#20](http://www.vho.org/News/D/News1_02.html#20)
- <sup>31</sup> *Wahrheit für Deutschland*, Verlag für Volkstum und Zeitgeschichtsforschung, Vlotho 1964; also available in English: *Truth for Germany*.
- <sup>32</sup> Probably the best description by Dr. C. Nordbruch, "Geistesfreiheit in der Bundesrepublik Deutschland", *Vierteljahreshfte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(2) (2002), pp. 190-209; for the court decisions, see Federal Constitutional Court, ref. 1 BvR 434/87; Re-indexing by BPjM; *JMS-Report*, February 1/1995, pp. 52-54; new verdict of Upper Administrative Court, ref. 17 K 9534/94.
- <sup>33</sup> The following issues of the series *Historische Tatsachen* (Verlag für Volkstum und Zeitgeschichtsforschung, Vlotho) were confiscated and lead to Wandley's prison term: Nr. 1 (LG Dortmund, KLS 31 Js 270/78), 15 (BVG, 2 BvR 1645/84), 23 & 24 (ref. Currently unknown), 36 (BVG, BvR 824/90), 38 (OLG Hamm, 3 Ws 82/91), 44 (LG Bielefeld 4 KLS W 3/96), 52 & 53 (LG Bielefeld, Qs 563/94), 59 & 60 (BGH 4 StR 518/96), Inew & 64 (BGH 4 StR 524/96), 66 (AG Bielefeld, 9 Gs 1279/96), 67 (AG Bielefeld, 9 Gs 1325/96), 68 (LG Bielefeld, 4 KLS W 5/96 IV); cf. [www.vho.org/News/D/News4\\_97.html#u](http://www.vho.org/News/D/News4_97.html#u); [http://www.vho.org/News/D/News3\\_99.html#16](http://www.vho.org/News/D/News3_99.html#16); [http://www.vho.org/News/D/News1\\_00.html#22](http://www.vho.org/News/D/News1_00.html#22)
- <sup>34</sup> For more see: Claus Nordbruch, *Zensur in Deutschland*, Universitas, Munich 1998, 320 pp.
- <sup>35</sup> The opinions about this differ slightly: acc. to Dietrich Strothmann, *Nationalsozialistische Literaturpolitik*, 3rd ed., Bonn: Bouvier 1985, some 12,500 books, acc. to Dietrich Aigner, "Die Indizierung 'schädlichen und unerwünschten Schrifttums' im Dritten Reich", vol. XI of the *Archiv für Geschichte des Buchwesens*, Buchhändlervereinigung, Frankfurt/Main 1971, the number was less than 10,000.
- <sup>36</sup> Deutsche Verwaltung für Volksbildung in der sowjetischen Besatzungszone (ed.), 3 vols., *Liste der auszusondernden Literatur*, Zentralverlag, Berlin 1946-1948, 1953; reprint: Uwe Berg (ed.), *Toppenstedter Reihe, Sammlung bibliograph. Hilfsmittel zur Erforschung der Konservativen Revolution und des Nationalsozialismus*, 4 vols., Toppenstedt, Uwe Berg-Verlag, 1983-1984; cf. Martin Lüders, "Die größte Büchervernichtungssaktion der Geschichte", *Nation und Europa*, 47(9) (1997), pp. 7-11.
- <sup>37</sup> Two recent studies of censorship in Germany, highly to be recommended: Jürgen Schwab, *Die Meinungsdictatur. Wie 'demokratische' Zensoren die Freiheit beschneiden*, Nation Europa Verlag, Coburg 1997; Claus Nordbruch, op. cit. (Note 34).
- <sup>38</sup> The Federal Constitutional Court's decisions were quoted from: Karl-Heinz Seifert, Dieter Hömig (eds.), *Grundgesetz für die Bundesrepublik Deutschland*, 2nd ed., Baden Baden: Nomos Verlagsgesellschaft, 1985.
- <sup>39</sup> §130 expressively says: "Who, in a way suitable [sic] to disturb public peace, attacks the human dignity of others by stirring up to hatred against parts of the population, calling for acts of violence or despotism against them or insults them, exposes them to contempt, or slander them, will be punished with a prison term from three months to five years."
- <sup>40</sup> Cf. for this the legal expertise of defense lawyer Dr. G. Herzogenrath-Amelung, *Vierteljahreshfte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(2) (2002), pp. 176-190.
- <sup>41</sup> Dreher/Tröndle, *Strafgesetzbuch*, 47th ed., MN 18 re. §130.
- <sup>42</sup> Stefan Huster, "Das Verbot der 'Auschwitz-Lüge', die Meinungsfreiheit und das Bundesverfassungsgericht", *Neue Juristische Wochenschrift*, 1995, pp. 487ff., here p. 489.
- <sup>43</sup> Daniel Beisel, "Die Strafbarkeit der Auschwitz-Lüge", *Neue Juristische Wochenschrift*, 1995, pp. 997-1000, here p. 1000.
- <sup>44</sup> Karl Lackner, *Strafgesetzbuch*, 21st ed., Munich, 1995, MN 8a re. §130; the criticisms of this article are legion; cf.: Hans A. Stöcker, *Neue Strafrechts-Zeitung*, 1995, pp. 237-240; Manfred Brunner, *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Aug. 17, 1994; Ernst Nolte, *ibid.*, Sept. 8, 1994; Ronald Dworkin, *Tageszeitung*, May 17, 1995; Horst Meier, *Die Zeit*, Sept. 15, 1995; Horst Meier, *Rheinischer Merkur* 12/1996: 1128-1131.
- <sup>45</sup> Theodor Leckner, in: Schönke/Schröder, *Strafgesetzbuch*, 25th ed., Munich: Beck, 1997, p. 1111.
- <sup>46</sup> Thomas Wandres, *Die Strafbarkeit des Auschwitz-Leugnens*, Strafrechtliche Abhandlungen, neue Folge, Band 129, Duncker & Humblot, Berlin 2000; cf. review by G. Rudolf, *Vierteljahreshfte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 5(1) (2001), pp. 100-112.
- <sup>47</sup> Federal Minister of Justice Edzard Schmidt-Jorzig, Ruge. NeunzehnZehn: "Ehrenschutz für Soldaten - Gesetz gegen die Meinungsfreiheit?", *3-SAT*, March 10, 1996, 19:10; same, *Mut*, no. 351, 11/1996: 32-35; Wolfgang Schäuble, *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, April 24, 1996, p. 41.
- <sup>48</sup> The latest "comprehensive" listing of non-secret banned media, "Gesamtverzeichnis indizierter Bücher, Taschenbücher, Broschüren und Comics, Stand 30.4.1993", includes about 2,500 titles. Some 120 more have since joined the ranks. The list of indexed videotapes is about the same length. Added to this are several hundred electronic sound and data carriers. The current indexing lists are published in the periodical of the Federal Review Office for Youth-Endangering Publications, "BPjS aktuell". To order: Bundesprüfstelle, Postfach 26 01 21, D-53153 Bonn, Germany.
- <sup>49</sup> Eckhard Jesse, "Streitbare Demokratie und 'Vergangenheitsbewältigung'", in: Bundesamt für Verfassungsschutz (ed.), *Verfassungsschutz in der Demokratie*, Carl Heymanns Verlag, Cologne 1990, p. 304, cf. p. 289.
- <sup>50</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 287; cf. also p. 303: "Liberal society may not stifle or suppress the free exchange of ideas and points of view."
- <sup>51</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 286.
- <sup>52</sup> [http://www.bmfsfj.de/Anlage22804/Jugendschutzgesetz\\_JuSchG\\_vom\\_23\\_Juli\\_2002.pdf](http://www.bmfsfj.de/Anlage22804/Jugendschutzgesetz_JuSchG_vom_23_Juli_2002.pdf)
- <sup>53</sup> Wigbert Grabert, of Grabert Verlag in Tübingen, to the author; see note 11.
- <sup>54</sup> Admission of the German Federal Government, *Bundestagsdrucksache* 13/4222, March 26, 1996, p. 6.
- <sup>55</sup> *Richtlinien für das Strafverfahren und das Bußgeldverfahren* (Guidelines for penal procedure and fining procedure), No. 208, II + IV; according to: Gerd Pfeiffer (ed.), *Karlsruher Kommentar zur Strafprozeßordnung*, 3rd ed., Beck, Munich 1993, p. 2174.
- <sup>56</sup> An unofficial, probably extremely incomplete list can be found on the internet, with links to the confiscated works available online: [www.vho.org/censor/Censor.html](http://www.vho.org/censor/Censor.html).
- <sup>57</sup> Landtag of Baden-Württemberg, 12th session, Paper 12/334, see note 23.
- <sup>58</sup> R. Dworkin, "A new map of censorship", in: *Index on Censorship* 1/2 (1994), pp. 9-15; cf. R. Dworkin, "Forked tongues, faked doctrines", *ibid.*, no. 3 (1997), pp. 148-151.
- <sup>59</sup> *Der Verfassungsschutz*, Hohenrain, Tübingen 1999.
- <sup>60</sup> Cf. his article "Ein Schritt zurück in polizeistaatliche Intoleranz", *Vierteljahreshfte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 2(3) (1998), pp. 219ff.
- <sup>61</sup> §244 Section 3 Clause 2, German Code of Criminal Procedure.
- <sup>62</sup> Federal Supreme Court, verdict of March 15, 1994, Ref. 1 StR 179/93.
- <sup>63</sup> Cf. *Oberlandesgericht* [Provincial High Court and Court of Appeal] at Düsseldorf, Ref. 2 Ss 155/91 – 52/91 III; Federal Constitutional Court, Ref. 2 BrR 367/92.
- <sup>64</sup> BGH, Ref. 1 StR 193/93 (motion to prove whether evidence offered is superior to any other evidence rejected due to "common knowledge"); BGH; ref. 1 StR 18/96 (sentencing of an expert witness to 14 months in jail for daring to ask to appear as a witness for the defense).
- <sup>65</sup> German Federal Supreme Court, BGH, ref. 5 StR 485/01; cf. Sigmund P. Martin, *Juristische Schulung*, 11/2002, pp. 1127f.; *Neue Juristische Wochenschrift* 2002, 2115, *Neue Strafrechts-Zeitung* 2002, 539;
- <sup>66</sup> For details, see G. Herzogenrath-Amelung, op. cit. (note 40).
- <sup>67</sup> Cf. von Schrenck-Notzing, *Charakterwäusche. Die Politik der amerikanischen Umerziehung in Deutschland*, Ullstein, Berlin 1993; G. Franz-Willing, *Umerziehung*, Nation Europa, Coburg 1991.
- <sup>68</sup> See note 5. Though most of the outlawed insignia, songs, etc. can rightfully be called "Nazi", the fact that "right" and "Nazi" have become synonymous in Germany is again underlined by the title and general choice of words in this brochure, as it is common in the media and by the authorities.
- <sup>69</sup> *Der Spiegel*, Dec. 4, 2000, Title.
- <sup>70</sup> Toronto *Globe and Mail*, Feb. 14, 2003; Boston *Globe*, 2/21/2003: The media call Germany's laws "strict" or "tough" anti-hate laws, though they do, of course, not simply address hate as such.
- <sup>71</sup> Letter of Karl Hafen, president of *Internationale Gesellschaft für Menschenrechte*, to Germar Rudolf, Oct. 30, 1996.

# Censorship of the Internet

*By Germar Rudolf*

In early 1996, the revisionist Web site [www.zundelsite.org](http://www.zundelsite.org) caused a storm in the then still relatively tiny internet-pot, since its content was hated by several Jewish lobby groups and in particular by the German authorities, who all together tried with several legal and less than legal techniques to shut down this controversial site. These attempts on censorship resulted in a massive movement of solidarity in the then still quite idealistic internet community. At the end of many months of struggle, all measures to stifle the zundelsite had failed, also because many idealists around the world posted copies of the zundelsite, not because they agreed with the content of the zundelsite, but because they wanted to defend the highly regarded freedom of speech against all attempts of censorship.

Of course, governmental as well as non-governmental institutions kept trying to find more effective ways to censor the internet. The censorship case, with perhaps the most damaging impact on freedom of speech, was probably that against Dr. Fredrick Töben, who has been arrested and sentenced to a prison term in Germany for having posted revisionist contents on his Australian website.<sup>1</sup>

In October 2002, an academic paper about censorship of internet search engines has caused quite a stir on an international level, but has unfortunately not led to a similar reaction by the internet free speech community as it did in 1996.

---

## Background

In September 1997, I established the website [www.vho.org](http://www.vho.org), initially under the legal cover of the Belgian non-profit foundation Vrij Historisch Onderzoek (Free Historical Research), thus the name vho.org. Initially, this site had only some five visitors per day, and maybe most of these visits were by the webmaster, that is me. Today, this site has several thousand visitors every day, which means that within five years [www.vho.org](http://www.vho.org) has grown to be the biggest revisionist website worldwide.

One of the first steps after creating the site was to have it listed with the major search engines, which could still be done manually and for free at that time. Today, considering the vast amount of new websites flooding the internet every day, one has to pay a fee to get registered by the noble club of the big engines.

In 1998 I learned that Germany has its own search engines concentrating only on German language material. Since at that time the content of [www.vho.org](http://www.vho.org) was almost completely in German language, it was only logical to have the site registered with those search engines as well. To my surprise, one of the search engine companies told me that they had decided not to list my site, because after reviewing my content they had come to the conclusion that it was illegal under German law. This is so because dissenting views on the Holocaust are punishable with up to five years in Germany. Strictly formally seen, of course, this is wrong, since it is not the content of my website that is illegal but the German censorship laws. But the German bureaucrats were never really impressed by arguments about human rights and epistemological considerations. Thus, I had to accept that [www.vho.org](http://www.vho.org) was not listed with this search engine.<sup>2</sup>

On an international level, Yahoo.com was the first big search engine who got in trouble primarily due to massive critique from Jewish lobby groups. Yahoo is one of the biggest internet service providers worldwide, whose search engine is currently powered by a company named Google. Google itself is a search engine which has succeeded only recently to beat all

its competitors in that field, like [Altavista.com](http://Altavista.com), [Lycos.com](http://Lycos.com), and [Excite.com](http://Excite.com), thanks to a very user friendly service. End of October 2002, this service had 2.5 Billion websites indexed.

In 2000, the attacks against Yahoo escalated in that the company was sued, and on November 20, 2000, sentenced in France for having offered National Socialist memorabilia on its internet auction site and for offering access to sites with Holocaust-revisionist content.<sup>3</sup> Since then, Yahoo has cleaned its French search engine from almost all links to such sites. Later, due to pressure from the usual Jewish pressure groups like the Simon-Wiesenthal-Center, Yahoo announced that it would be prepared to even clean its U.S. main search engine from links to any content which is hated by those Jewish associations.<sup>4</sup> It seems, however, that this did not happen so far.

As a result of Yahoo's conviction in France, the Central Council of Jews in Germany felt encouraged to announce that it will file similar suit cases against German search engine companies as well.<sup>5</sup> It does therefore come as no surprise that German search engines or the German sections of internationally operating search engines started to clean undesired content from their engines as well.

## Scientific Analysis

On October 22, 2002, Jonathan Zittrain and Benjamin Edelman from the Berkman Center for Internet & Society at the Harvard Law School published a study, in which they reported which internet sites are censored by the German and French sections of the search engine Google, in contrast to the company's international, US-based main search site [Google.com](http://Google.com).<sup>6</sup>

The result of this study is that the French and German search engines of Google exclude 91 internet sites completely or partly.<sup>7</sup> Even though such an exclusion doesn't prevent anybody from accessing these sites, this must nevertheless be considered to be a massive impediment to find these sites, because a considerable part of the population residing in Germany and France finds content on the internet by using these search engines. The exclusion of search results from websites which are involved in controver-

sial debates leads to nothing less than that a majority of the population will no longer be able to take notice of the arguments of the other side of that debate.

Of course, censorship by search engines is not solely an effect of governmental pressure. Even private companies and individuals can pursue such censorship and might even prevail. For example, The Church of Scientology allegedly succeeded to convince Google not to list certain websites, which express critical views about Scientology.<sup>8</sup> In other cases, organizations or individuals have the option to apply to have certain websites unlisted, if these sites commit copyright violations.<sup>9</sup> Only a few of these censorship cases are ever published; most of them happen in secrecy. No search engine likes to admit publicly that they manipulated their search results. According to Edelman, Google should at least indicate that its search results are not complete:<sup>10</sup>

*“If Google is prohibited from linking to [the right-wing Website] Stormfront, they could include a listing but no link. And if they can’t even include a listing for Stormfront, they could at least report the fact that they’ve hidden results from the user. The core idea here is that there’s no need to be secretive.”*

### Censorship Victims

According to the authors of the study quoted, they have analyzed several thousand websites until the end of October in order to find out, if the search results delivered by the three Google sections google.com (USA), google.de (Germany) and google.fr (France) differ. The censorship victims discovered by this method are divided in basically three categories. The largest group consists of right-wing websites, which are usually summarized under the term “White Supremacy.” The second biggest group consists of revisionist websites—with one surprising exception: The most embattled website, carrying the name and the mission of the German-Canadian Ernst Zündel, www.zundel.org, is *not* included! The last category consists of radical, anti-Jewish, mostly Arab groups. In the list printed in this article, I have emphasized revisionist websites in bold

face, and those consisting only partly of revisionist content in italics.

A more detailed analysis of the censored websites shows that some Christian and conservative-fundamentalist websites are victims of this censorship as well, and in one case even an anti-revisionist website (www.williscarto.com). Left-wing extremist, communist, or other politically or religiously fanatic/fundamentalist sites have either not even been considered worth an investigation by the authors, or they are simply not censored by Google.

It is also worth noting that all of the German sites censored by Google are equally censored by its French site (65), whereas 45 websites, which are accessible through the German search engine, are inaccessible through the French search engine. This means that censorship is currently tougher in France than it is in Germany.

### More Censorship...

Google does not only serve as the search engine for Yahoo, but also for AOL, the worldwide largest internet service provider. As a consequence, all German and French AOL-customers not intentionally using a different search engine, are censored just as badly as are all users of google.de/.fr and yahoo.de/.fr. Three major other search engines with separate German and French sections—altavista, lycos and excite, censor their search result as well, though apparently not quite as strict as google. For instance, webpages from the once leading revisionist websites codoh.com and codoh.org can be found when searching with these engines. All of these search engines have in common, however, that the worldwide largest revisionist website www.vho.org is not listed under any circumstances.

Before getting upset about Google, Altavista, and all other censoring search engines, one should keep in mind that these companies do not censor voluntarily. They were forced to do this by court orders and several legal threats. The true perpetrators are sitting in Paris and Berlin and to a disproportionate degree also in synagogues.

<b>WEB SITES COMPLETELY OR PARTLY CENSORED BY GOOGLE.DE AND/OR GOOGLE.FR</b>			
Revisionist web sites are rendered in bold, web sites with partial revisionist content are rendered in italics			
www.1488.com	<i>www.freedomsite.org</i>	www.mysticknights.org	www.seek-info.com
www.14words.com	<i>www.globalfire.tv</i>	www.naawp.com	www.sigdrifa.com
<i>www.abbc.com</i>	www.hammerskins.com	www.natall.com	www.ssenderprises.com
<b>www.air-photo.com</b>	www.hangemhighrecords.com	www.natvan.com	www.ssmann.com
www.americandefenseleague.com	www.harold-covington.org	www.nazi.org	www.stormfront.org
www.americannaziparty.com	www.heathenfront.org	www.nazi-lauck-nsdapao.com	www2.stormfront.org
www.amren.com	www.hitlerisgod.com	www.neworderknights.com	www3.stormfront.org
www.aryan88.com	<b>www.hoffman-info.com</b>	<i>www.noontidepress.com</i>	www4.stormfront.org
www.aryan-nations.org	www.holywar.org	www.nsm88.com	www.thulepublications.com
<b>www.barnesreview.org</b>	www.iahushua.com	www.nswpp.org	<b>www.vho.org</b>
www.bayouknights.org	<b>www.ihr.org</b>	<b>www.ostara.org</b>	www.unitedskins.com
www.blacksandjews.com	<b>www.jeffsarchive.com</b>	www.ourhero.com	www.vanguardnewsnetwork.com
www.bnp.net	www.jesus-is-lord.com	www.panzerfaust.com	<b>www.vho.org</b>
www.christianseparatist.org	www.jewwatch.com	<b>www.patriot.dk</b>	www.wakeupordie.com
www.churchfliers.com	www.kingidentity.com	www.posse-comitatus.org	www.wckkkk.com
<b>www.codoh.com</b>	www.k-k-k.com	www.propatria.org	www.whitepower.com
<b>www.codoh.org</b>	www.kkkk.net	<b>www.radioislam.net</b>	www.whitepride.com
www.compuserb.com	www.kukluxklan.net	<b>www.radioislam.org</b>	www.whitepride.net
www.creator.org	www.libreopinion.com	www.rahowa.com	www.whiterace.com
www.crusader.net	www.louisbeam.com	www.resist.com	www.whiteracist.com
www.ety.com	www.melvig.org	www.resistance.com	www.williscarto.com
www.faem.com	www.missiontoisrael.org	www.revilo-oliver.com	www.wpww.com
<b>www.fpp.co.uk</b>	www.musicalterrorists.com	<b>www.revisionists.com</b>	www.yoderanium.com

### ... And Attempts to Circumvent it

One can of course try to use non-censoring search engines instead. For example, one could visit the uncensored.com search domains instead of going to the.de and.fr domains (aol.com, yahoo.com, google.com, altavista.com, excite.com, lycos.com). But Google has put a stop to this as well for all visitors, whose internet service providers have an IP address which can be identified as being located in Germany or France respectively. In such cases, Google redirects any attempt to access google.com automatically to google.de/.fr. Thus, all internet users in Germany and France are now sitting in the dark regarding the possibility of thoroughly searching the internet with the help of the largest and best search engine that there is: google.com.

It would be desirable if all users who are upset about such totalitarian censorship would demonstrate their solidarity by no longer using the search domains.de and.fr of these search engines, and in particular by not using those search engines which refuse access to its uncensored international domain, like Google. After all, this is not a matter of whether or not one agrees with the content of those sites which are censored. Tomorrow, when other powers rule or their interests change, other websites may be the victims of this censorship, and a totally different group of users might then face the situation that exactly the content he is looking for is being withheld from him, or even worse, that the content he is offering is being withheld from his potential clientele.

### Dark Future

During a session of the European Council in Strasbourg on November 6<sup>th</sup> and 7<sup>th</sup>, 2002, the foreign ministers of 44 European countries represented in the European Council agreed to a protocol, which demands from those 44 nations to outlaw the following activities:<sup>11</sup>

- Computer assisted distribution of racist and xenophobic material;

- Threats and insults with racist or xenophobic motivations;
- Denial, rude minimization, approval, or justification of genocide or crimes against humanity, in particular in context with the events of the era between 1940 and 1945 (in other words: revisionism).

All offenses mentioned in this protocol need to be committed deliberately in order to be a crime, which means that an internet service provider would not commit a crime if helping to distribute such material unknowingly. During the negotiations for this protocol, representatives of the USA, of Canada, Japan, Mexico and South Africa were present as well.

Fortunately, the European Council has no legislative powers. But it may only be a matter of time until this program is accepted and cast into law in many countries around the world.

Only as an aside, it should be mentioned that the prohibition of the distribution of pedophilic material was apparently not even discussed during this Conference.

### Notes

- <sup>1</sup> Cf. Willibald Gründer, "Der Prozeß gegen Dr. Fredrick Toben" (The trial against Dr. Fredrick Toben), *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung*, 4(1) (2000), pp. 97-100.
- <sup>2</sup> I do not mention any name here because now www.vho.org is listed.
- <sup>3</sup> [http://news.excite.com/news/r/000616/08/france-usa-yahoo;www.oneworld.org/ips2/june00/00\\_41\\_003.html;www.guardian.co.uk/freespeech/article/0,2763,400491,00.html;www.tomwbell.com/NetLaw/Ch03/YahooComplaint.html](http://news.excite.com/news/r/000616/08/france-usa-yahoo;www.oneworld.org/ips2/june00/00_41_003.html;www.guardian.co.uk/freespeech/article/0,2763,400491,00.html;www.tomwbell.com/NetLaw/Ch03/YahooComplaint.html)
- <sup>4</sup> *New York Times*, Jan. 3, 2001.
- <sup>5</sup> German weekly news magazine *Spiegel*, Feb. 20, 2001.
- <sup>6</sup> <http://cyber.law.harvard.edu/filtering/google/>; cf. AP news release of Oct. 24, 2002; [www.sltrib.com/10252002/business/10409.htm](http://www.sltrib.com/10252002/business/10409.htm)
- <sup>7</sup> <http://cyber.law.harvard.edu/filtering/google/results1.html>; the authors mention 113 sites, but they have listed some sites several times, in one case with and in the other without www, in other cases they have counted subdomains as well, and some sites no longer exist, like, e.g., [www.spotlight.com](http://www.spotlight.com), [www.revisionism.com](http://www.revisionism.com).
- <sup>8</sup> [www.wired.com/news/politics/0,1283,51233,00.html](http://www.wired.com/news/politics/0,1283,51233,00.html)
- <sup>9</sup> Cf. <http://www.archive.org/about/terms.php>
- <sup>10</sup> <http://zdnet.com.com/2100-1105-963132.html>
- <sup>11</sup> [http://press.coe.int/cp/2003/048a\(2003\).htm](http://press.coe.int/cp/2003/048a(2003).htm)

## Book Reviews

### The Israeli Masada Myth Exposed

By Robert H. Countess, Ph.D.

**Nachman Ben-Yehuda, *The Masada Myth. Collective Memory and Mythmaking in Israel*, University of Wisconsin Press, Madison 1995, 401 pp., paperback, \$24.95**

Hebrew University Professor Nachman Ben-Yehuda of the Sociology Department dropped a cultural-historiographical bombshell on the Jewish State of Israel when he wrote (p. 3):

*"How does one develop a sociological interpretation for an important belief system that turns out to be based on a series of deceptive and very biased (even falsified) claims? Moreover, what should one do when this belief system turns*

*out to be not only an important building block for the development of receptive young minds but also a cornerstone of an entire nation?"*

*The so-called Masada mythical narrative is such a belief system: a fabricated moralistic claim. The startling discovery of its falsehood descended upon me in 1987. However, while the sociological interpretation presented in this book is based on an Israeli experience, it would be a grave mistake to assume that such a mythology and deviant belief system constitutes a cultural idiosyncrasy, typical of Israel only. On the contrary, such myths and deviant beliefs are*



characteristic of many cultures. Hence, the sociological lesson embedded in this particular tale has wide-ranging ramifications, as we shall see later.”

## Background

Who is the Israeli academic who would write such a—seemingly—outrageous statement as quoted above? Has he written with similar boldness in the past?

In 1993, the State University of New York Press published Ben-Yehuda’s *Political Assassinations by Jews. A Rhetorical Device for Justice*,<sup>1</sup> in which he focused on how Jews killed—for the most part—other Jews. He placed this in a particularly Jewish cultural matrix and described how this specific form of murder had been conceptualized so as to become an alternative system for moral justice. He also authored *Deviance and Moral Boundaries*<sup>2</sup> and *The Politics and Morality of Deviance*.<sup>3</sup>

For several years now I have enjoyed informative, humane, and spirited correspondence with Professor Ben-Yehuda, and I hold him in the highest regard on all levels.

## The Historical Masada of King Herod The Great

The fortress in the Judean desert toward the south end of the Dead Sea—some 1290 feet below sea level and about 80 miles south of Jerusalem and on the western side of the Sea—has been made famous in a Hollywood style film of that name, but perhaps most of all by Israeli archaeologist Yigael Yadin in his 1996 book *Masada. Herod’s Fortress and the Zealots’ Last Stand*.<sup>4</sup> His excavation on site began in 1963 with a large team and government sponsorship.

Built by King Herod the Great between B.C. 36-30, it was a marvel of engineering, defense, and luxuriant living for escaping the hot summer weather of Jerusalem, his capital. At the beginning of the year 66 A.D., a group of Jewish Zealots took over the Roman military garrison at Masada and held it throughout the rebellion against the Romans (66-70 A.D.). It became the final holdout for these Zealots after the rest of Palestine had been restored to Rome’s control. By late fall or Winter of 72 A.D., the Roman Governor Flavius Silva marched on Masada with his Tenth Roman Legion, some auxiliary troops, and thousands of prisoners of war. The Roman siege ended on April 16<sup>th</sup> in the year 73 A.D.

The number of men, women, and children atop Masada is placed at 967 (p. 37). Joined by the Sicarii, which were Jewish rebels who used knives for their assassination of Romans and fellow Jews who would not rebel with them, the Zealots and Sicarii discussed their options in the face of the inevitable Roman storming of the fortress. Elazar Ben-Yair made “two fiery speeches to persuade the reluctant people to agree to be killed or to kill themselves. The two speeches succeeded, and the Si-

carii killed one another and themselves.” (p.37) Ben-Yehuda terms this action “collective suicide.” (p. 42)

As it turned out, seven survived: five children and two women. The murdering took place on April 15<sup>th</sup>. When the Romans entered, they found only silence. When the two women heard noises, they came out of hiding and told the Romans what had happened.

Today, Masada is a most impressive tourist site with lodging and eating facilities, an electric cable car to convey tourists who do not choose to walk up and down “the Snake Path.” The tram up took about five minutes, but it took me about an hour to walk down again in 1994. The site is basically closed on the Sabbath.

## Organization of the Book

Part One is “The Puzzle and the Background.” In this section, Ben-Yehuda demonstrates his own existential experience with discovering the myth itself and his struggle with facing the truth of having been deceived for so many years. He writes of his denial, his anger, his resentment, and then his motivation to learn the full story. In short, this professor of sociology experienced what untold numbers of serious thinkers over the years have experienced about all sorts of deceptions served up by governments, organizations, religions, and individuals, but with

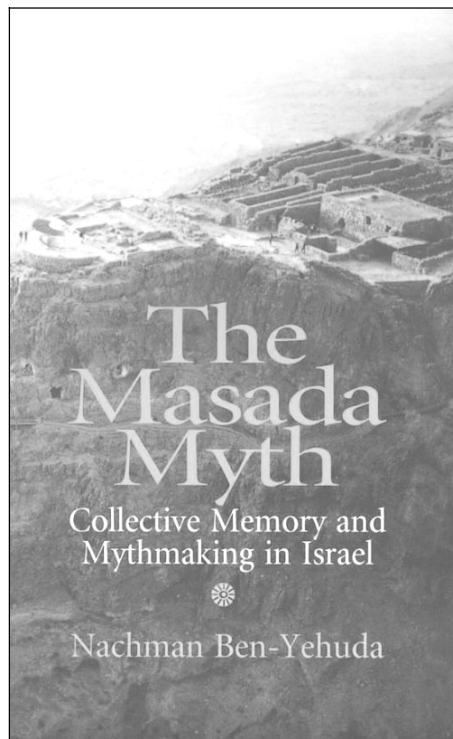
Ben-Yehuda, his own effort to revise the Masada Myth away from its mythic elements and to arrive at a complete picture of how and why the myth became so widely accepted, is filled with implications for other Israeli promoted ideas and myths. Thus, the question must be asked: What other myths are Israelis believing about their “history” that may require radical revising in the future?

This, I believe, is the greatest value of this book: it opens an important door for a scientific-historiography in Israel and by Israelis and Jews of the Diaspora to re-examine and—if found necessary—to revise their dogmatically held concepts about 1) the Land of Palestine, 2) their special, unique “Chosenness” by YHWH, 3) the rightness of the establishment of the Jewish State of Israel with its narrowly conceived Jewish-racialist ethnocentric focus, 4) the ethnic-cleansing of the indigenous Semito-Palestinians, and 5) supporting ideologies such as the Jew-

ish Holocaust Story with its traditional content of enormity and qualitative uniqueness.

Part Two of the book covers “The Masada Mythical Narrative” and goes into great detail of development by Shmaria Guttman, youth movements, underground Jewish groups prior to 1948, the Israeli IDF (= military), school textbooks, media and tourism, children’s literature and art, and the mythical narrative itself today. Ben-Yehuda discusses on pages 243f. “the Masada Complex” and “the Masada Syndrome.”

The first has to do with suicide heroism as a last stand, a siege mentality against enemies everywhere, and more. An ex-



cellent example of it was given by US Secretary of State William Rogers (p. 244) of the Nixon administration, who remarked that Israeli Prime Minister Golda Meir displayed a “Masada complex” and that this was a chief obstacle to real peace in the Middle East.

“The Masada Syndrome” is similar in that it takes up the historical facts, wraps them in a moral covering, and then challenges Israelis to die with Samson and the Philistines (Judges 16:30) rather than give up the Land.

Part Three is “Analysis, Discussion, and Summary.” In it, Ben-Yehuda emphasizes that one of the “extremely important element(s) in a myth is the symbolic, awe-inspiring dimension” (p. 261). For myself, I see the Al-Qaeda Moslems to be so caught up in the myth of Islam as absolutely true and Allah as personally directing them that they give their lives freely without regard to personal pain or loss. The Masada Myth has worked similarly for Israelis, but for how much longer?

Ben-Yehuda writes that the myth began its ascent in the early 1920s, peaked during the 1940s-1960s, but saw a marked decline during 1970s and thereafter. Again, from my own observation standpoint, the Masada Myth has been somewhat replaced recently by the ‘Saddam Hussein is Hitler’ myth, truly this is awe-inspiring to millions who beat the drums for a Bush-Sharon-Blair Axis to invade and remove this ‘Hitler’ who threatens ‘the entire world,’ as our media unceasingly inform us.

### Is Nachman Ben-Yehuda a “Revisionist”?

It seems to me that my first acquaintance with the term “Revisionist” may have been in the 1980s when I read Alfred Lilienthal’s fine work *The Zionist Connection II. What Price Peace?*<sup>6</sup> On page 190, Dr. Lilienthal refers to “the Jabotinsky Revisionist movement of the 1930s and Menachem Begin’s Irgun Zavaï Leumi of the 1940s,” and he associated this with Gush Emunim (Hebrew for “bloc of the faithful”), “a paramystical, ultrachauvinist movement insisting that as the Chosen People and through biblical revelation, the Jews have the right to all of Palestine, and that Israel must hold onto all the occupied territories, with the possible exception of portions of the Sinai.”

This Gush Emunim was drawn from the extremely right-wing Likud party, itself being the successor of Vladimir Jabotinsky’s “Revisionist movement.”

Later, I read extensively in works by Harry Elmer Barnes and found that he and certain historians in the early 1920s had attempted to *revise* the background of World War One so as to display more accurately the contributing factors that brought about the World’s first great war that seems to have involved so many combatant nations that it was properly called a “World War.”

Then I became aware of the Institute for Historical Review and its “Revisionist History” journal *The Journal of Historical Review* and related occasional conferences, usually held in Southern California. The IHR promoted in its journal and conferences an open, unfettered forum for speakers to offer data and interpretations of the two great World Wars, the so-called American “Civil War,” the Jewish Holocaust Story and especially the problem of the alleged homicidal gassing chambers in German built and administered camps for detainees, prisoners, and slave workers, as well as of many other topics of 19<sup>th</sup> and 20<sup>th</sup> century.

Then I heard popular talk shows using the term “revisionist” as a sort of “four-letter word” to brush off anyone and any idea that the host did not 1.) either agree with, or 2.) did not want to take seriously and thus allow for extensive time commitment on the show. It is this latter and quite popular use of “revisionist”

that most Americans are perhaps familiar with. In Germany since the end of WW2, “revisionist” has been used for the German attempt to revise the Treaty of Versailles after WWI and to regain territories and sovereignty for Germany, especially in the National Socialist years between 1933-45. But also in Germany, “revisionistisch” and “Revisionismus” have been used as a *Keule* (animal bone used as a club) to beat down anyone who dissents from the orthodox German philosophy of history imposed by the victorious Allies after 1945.

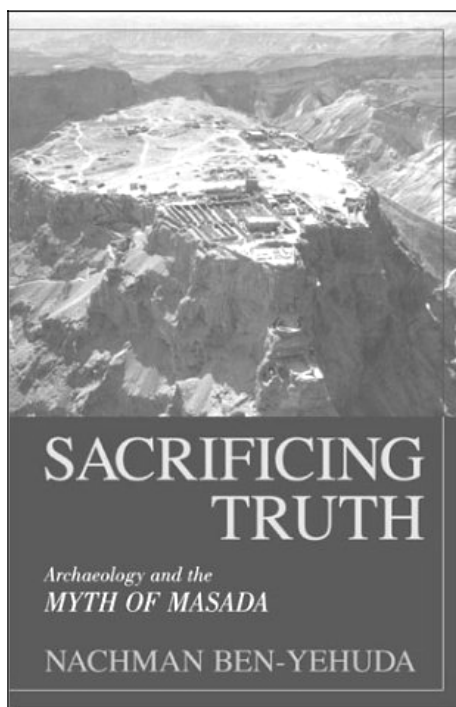
That orthodox German philosophy of history comprises 1.) the sacred story of the innocent Six Million Jews exterminated by Germans in homicidal gassing facilities of a uniquely ghastly nature allegedly erected in several countries; 2.) the intent of Germany to exterminate physically the Jews of Europe and then on all of Planet Earth; and 3.) the historic truth that Germans have been and still are preponderantly “anti-Semitic” and must be carefully watched and controlled by

the Allies and Israel and by Jews themselves living in Germany and all other countries.

Therefore, when one asks if the author of the book *The Masada Myth* is a “revisionist,” one must define the term in order to avoid a vague generality and also avoid a specifically harmful label to a professor at Hebrew University in Jerusalem.

In Theses & Dissertations Press’ first book, *Dissecting the Holocaust: The Growing Critique of ‘Truth’ and ‘Memory’*,<sup>7</sup> one can read on page 6 the support for a mind-set of scientific revisionism as follows:

*“The Natural sciences [like other scholarly disciplines, Ed.] are extremely conservative and dogmatic. Any corroboration of a paradigm is welcome, whereas any innovation or revision will long meet with resistance; the instinct for preservation (including self-preservation!) is stronger than the search for truth. Therefore, new findings usually gain accep-*



*Follow-up: Ben-Yehuda’s second assault on one of Israel’s founding myths*<sup>5</sup>

tance only when sufficient numbers of researchers vouch for them: then the dogmatic status quo topples and a 'scientific revolution' occurs, a new paradigm replaces the old. [...] The bottom line is that no student, no researcher and no layman should believe any facts to be 'conclusively proven', even if the textbooks present them as such.[...]"

This powerful statement comes from Professor Dr. Walter Nagl in his book *Gentechnologie und Grenzen der Biologie*<sup>8</sup> and it is this concept so powerfully expressed here by Nagl that so-called "Historical Revisionists" I am acquainted with employ when they research and write and publish books and magazines such as *Dissecting the Holocaust* and *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* or *The Revisionist*.

It is Professor Nagl's definition of "revision" (-ist, -ism) that I have in view when I seek to answer the question: Is Nachman Ben-Yehuda a "revisionist"?

"The proof is in the pudding," as one says, and if one reads Ben-Yehuda's statement on page 3 about the Masada myth, then one is most likely to conclude that he is clearly a "revisionist" in his intellectual commitment to historiography as well as in his method of research and writing. Whether or not he may be called a "Revisionist" is not for me to decide.

### Conclusion.

If I may offer an illustration of the profound insight and courage of this Professor in Jerusalem, I would refer to his first book that I became aware of: *Political Assassinations by Jews. A Rhetorical Device for Justice*. I remember well, upon contemplating this provocative title, asking myself this question: What would be the Jewish reaction in general or in governments and academia and the media if a German published a book entitled *Political Assassinations by National Socialists. A Rhetorical Device for Justice*?

The axis of Planet Earth would most likely have been dislodged from its position in space, I suggest, as a result of the uproar and tumult and rage that would certainly have followed such a book's appearance by a German!

Readers everywhere must ask themselves this question: What makes a non-Revisionist into a Revisionist? And the answer has

to be: new data, new methods of evaluating data, and a willingness to revise long standing orthodoxies. That is the principle that Professor Nagl lives by and, I suggest, every historiographer 'worth his salt' must live by the same principle or be judged by later generations to have been a Feigling (=coward).

I conclude with registering my complete agreement with Professor Pat Lauderdale of Stanford University who praised *The Masada Myth* on the book's cover:

"The Masada Myth is both scholarly and a passionate book, analyzing with great clarity the relationship between deviance and mythology. The careful descriptions and provocative ideas will create new controversy, one that is timely and important for our understanding of what has become the new world dis-order."

Multitudes of serious readers wonder when a Norman Finkelstein or Ruth Bettina Birn or a Nachman Ben-Yehuda will research, write, and publish a book with a title such as "The Jewish Holocaust Myth. Collective Memory and Mythmaking in Israel", because the time has come for serious scholars outside the present realm of "Historical Revisionists" to produce such a book. Jews and Goyim deserve such a work that will provoke and create new controversy, as Pat Lauderdale above wrote, and a book that will advance "our understanding of what has become the new world dis-order."

Just perhaps, Planet Earth might be able to keep its course at 23.5 degrees of axis if such a book were produced. For me, I am willing to take that chance!

### Notes

- <sup>1</sup> State Univ. of New York Press, January 1993.
- <sup>2</sup> *Deviance and Moral Boundaries: Witchcraft, the Occult, Science Fiction, Deviant Sciences and Scientists*, University of Chicago Press, reprint September 1987.
- <sup>3</sup> *The Politics and Morality of Deviance: Moral Panics, Drug Abuse, Deviant Science, and Reversed Stigmatization*, State Univ. of New York Press, April 1990.
- <sup>4</sup> Random House, New York.
- <sup>5</sup> *Sacrificing Truth: Archaeology and the Myth of Masada*, Humanity Books, June 2002, 300 pp., \$35.-
- <sup>6</sup> Brunswick, NJ: North American, 1978.
- <sup>7</sup> Edited by Ernst Gauss aka Germar Rudolf, Capshaw, AL, 2000, 608 pp.
- <sup>8</sup> Darmstadt: Wissenschaftliche Buchgesellschaft, 1987, pp. 126ff.

## Revisionism: The Most Dangerous Topic

By Bruno Chapsky

**Dariusz Ratajczak, *Tematy Jeszcze Bardziej Niebezpieczne (An Even More Dangerous Topic)*, published by author, Opole 2002, 245 pp.**

Already in the fall of 1998, when the historian Dr. Dariusz Ratajczak was still teaching at the University of Opole (Opole), he published a book with the Title *Dangerous Topics*. One of the chapters covered dealt with Holocaust Revisionism. For this chapter, Ratajczak was indicted<sup>1</sup> and fortunately eventually acquitted,<sup>2</sup> but this did not hinder his Alma Mater from dismissing him.<sup>3</sup>

Those who feared that Dr. Ratajczak was intimidated by this persecution can breathe freely: following his first book, Dr. Ratajczak has written a second one, which deals exclusively with Holocaust Revisionism, the most dangerous of all topics covered by Ratajczak in his first book.

Ratajczak was born in 196, is married and has children. He stems from a patriotic Polish family. At the University of Opole he had a reputation of being a very popular professor and for his fun-loving humor. He used to be highly respected and frequently cited as a scholar, writer, author, and journalist. He was also known for not making any compromises with the

truth. But when Dr. Ratajczak decided to delicately question the myth of all myths, he lost his teaching job and had to face numerous legal assaults. This defender of freedom has been the subject of an incomprehensible hate campaign, initiated by leading Polish publications. These papers, for the most part, are owned by non-ethnic passport Poles, many of them foreigners.

As a result of these attacks, Prof. Ratajczak was forced to live as a near-downtrodden pauper, since he has been unemployable. At present he is able to feed his children because he makes minimal wages as a security guard. It makes one wonder about transcontinental alliances and the element that tyrannizes freedom of debate.

At any rate, Prof. Ratajczak is an individual of immense integrity. He ascribes to the responsibility of moral codes and has not succumbed to semantic accusations of those with a history of corralling majorities via blackmail and political terror. With his new book, Ratajczak has done exactly what those anti-free-speech terrorists wanted to prevent: Now he has put all of his fingers in the festering wound of all western societies, on the most dangerous topic of all, the Holocaust. By so doing, he aligned himself into the worldwide front of pacemakers in this confrontation about freedom of speech, as Dr. Robert Countess used to say.

The title of his book *Tematy Jeszcze Bardziej Niebezpieczne* (A Subject Even More Dangerous) indicates that this book came into existence only *because* the author had to learn the hard way that Holocaust revisionism is indeed the most dangerous topic of all. All other allegedly dangerous topics covered in his first book did not cause any attention, thus were not really dangerous. If Ratajczak wouldn't have been persecuted for his first book, he would probably never have written the second. Hence, the Holocaust lobby's attack on him backfired.

In a Central European world controlled by the brethren of former communists, Ratajczak could not retain his job in a manner similar to the noble Prof. Arthur Butz. He could not continue to publish articles like Joe Sobran and Pat Buchanan. In the spirit of a Jürgen Graf, Ratajczak gives us another glowing example of the spirit of freedom against overwhelming odds. Let's take our hats off to him.

In his new book, Ratajczak glorifies numerous individuals who have fought against mental totalitarianisms. His language makes it obvious that he dislikes those impeding freedom of speech. This does not imply that he agrees with all the views of those he declares his solidarity with. Among the people mentioned in his book are John C. Ball (Canadian), Jürgen Graf (Swiss), Prof. Robert Faurisson (Frenchman), Dr. Fredrick Töben (Australian), Germar Rudolf (German), David Irving (Englishman) and Carlo Mattogno (an Italian). He also refers to Americans Mark Weber and Harry Elmer Barnes.

Ratajczak explains that many scholars do not believe in much of what is articulated about the so called Holocaust industry, but that they consider 'gas chamber' stories to be fables.



Among those who have pronounced such are: Thies Christophersen, Mark Weber, David Cole (a Jew) and Miloslav Dragon.

On page 29, a chapter entitled "Fałszywi Świadkowie" starts (False Witnesses), which speaks for itself. On page 35, Darek Ratajczak refers to the famous air photo analyses by Canadian John Ball,<sup>4</sup> Report and by the time the reader reaches p. 42, he has learned quite some revisionist arguments about Treblinka.

On page 44 Ratajczak speaks about Jan Koziński (Jan Karski) and his dishonesty. The title of a chapter starting on page 48 is "Six Million," in which Ratajczak explains revisionist arguments on Jewish population statistics. He also mentions that the first time that six million Jews were allegedly killed in Europe was as early as

1919.<sup>5</sup> Starting on page 51, he finally reports about the views of Robert Faurisson under the title: "Rewizjonizm Holocaustu Według Roberta Faurissona" (Revisionism According to R. Faurisson).

On page 69, a chapter starts with the title "Jak Adolf Israel Budował" (How Adolf built Israel). On page 87, the reader is confronted with a chapter that reads "Amerykańska Piąta Kolumna" (America's 5th Column). After that, Ratajczak turns to the Jewish religion by exposing Jewish-talmudic views about Christianity. Near the end of the book, he also elaborates on the conflict in Palestine, and he also refers to the disproportionately high participation of Jews during the Russian Revolution with all its mass murder and genocides.

Dariusz Ratajczak is living proof of Michael Hoffman's prophecy that knowledge and anger about censorship and the ongoing Holocaust propaganda is spreading and is getting finally discharged into revisionism. I recommend Ratajczak's book to the 20 million Poles in exile. Not only is Prof. Darek Ratajczak carrying the shield of defence for European values like freedom and civil rights. And even if Dariusz Ratajczak is now a pauper, he has made many people mentally and culturally richer by giving them the opportunity to get decisive insights about our world. He might be a political slave, but he is also a liberator. He may be slandered by the Poland's *New York Time*, the *Gazeta Wyborcza*, but he is a giant of a man.

Prof. Ratajczak has been unmercifully beaten down economically by the media. Anyone wishing to cheer him up would be fighting for freedom of speech and morality. The author's address is: ul. Tatrzańska 48/3, Opole 45-217, Poland.

#### Notes

- <sup>1</sup> *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 3(3) (1999), p. 355.
- <sup>2</sup> Cf. J. Graf, "Freispruch für halbrevisionistischen polnischen Historiker", *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 4(1) (2000), pp. 96f.
- <sup>3</sup> *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 4(2) (2000), p. 239.
- <sup>4</sup> J. C. Ball, *Air Photo Evidence*, Ball Resource Services Ltd., Suite 160-7231, 120th St., Delta, BC, Canada, V4C 6P5, 1992.
- <sup>5</sup> Cf. about this D. Heddesheimer's article "Der Erste Holocaust anno 1914-1927", *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 3(2) (1999), pp. 153-158.

# A Provocative History of the Aryan Race

By Robert H. Countess, Ph.D.

**Arthur Kemp, *March of the Titans. A History of the White Race. Volume One: 35,000 Years of History—The Complete Story of the White Race and Its Destiny*, Ostara Publications, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed., Johannesburg 2001, oversize, Bound. 311 pp. (ISBN 0-620-25117-4)**

While the subtitle “The Complete Story of the White Race” is question begging—no one is able to produce completeness on any subject at any time!—this highly illustrated book with its photos and drawings and maps, but no Index or Bibliography in the present edition, will be welcomed by many readers as long overdue, so as to correct the present lack of balance in social anthropological studies.

This book focuses on a racial sub-group of *Homo Sapiens* no less than does the Jewish writer Martin Bernal in his *Black Athena* volumes focus on the Negroid sub-group, nor any less than the Senegalese writer Cheikh Anta Diop focuses on Afrocentrism (more accurately, my term: “Negro-centrism”) in his *Kemet, Afrocentricity and Knowledge*, nor any less the forcefully racial focus of multitudes of books by Jews on Jewish history.

The second volume in this projected series is said (p.311) to continue “the staggering saga of the White Race, beginning with the creation of modern Russia by the Vikings and moving into the settlement of the Americas, Africa, Australia and New Zealand.” How many volumes are projected overall is not given.

Author Kemp, writing in Oxford, England, on September 14, 1998, informs the reader of the background circumstances of his study:

*“The idea for writing this book came from a perusal of the history section of the Jagger Library at the University of Cape Town, South Africa, in 1983. While undertaking some unrelated research, I chanced upon a book dealing with the history of the Chinese people. Intrigued, I investigated further in that section of the library. I found rows of books dealing with the history of the Japanese, the Black race, the Incas, Aztecs, the Australian Aborigines, the Arabs, the Native Americans, the Polynesians—in fact there was a history of every people and every race on earth—except, much to my surprise, the White race. This lack of a history of the White people of the world has persisted to this day: and it is to correct this imbalance that this book has been written. As it is a history of a defined race, not of any particular country, its narrative follows several continents and centuries, not limiting itself to any one geographical region.*

*I have always felt that the point of studying history is not the memorizing of some dates and facts, but rather the search for and discovery of the forces causing the results we see before our eyes as historical events.*

*History lost its value through the efforts of academics producing lists of meaningless dates and names, expecting everyone else to be as interested in their lists as they are. The proper study of history is in reality a tremendously exciting field of endeavour—the exploits and tribulations de-*

*tailed in this book will hopefully convince skeptics of this! More importantly, history does indeed contain lessons—sobering ones, with massive implications. As this book will show, it raises issues which confronted past civilizations and which confront modern society—how we answer them will determine if our society will survive or vanish like those of old.”*

## The Titans

In Greek mythology, the sons and daughters of *Gaea* and *Uranus* were Titans and Titanesses. These sons’ and daughters’ children were also called Titans. *Gaea* got them to make war on her “husband” as it were, and they dethroned him and put *Cronus* on the throne of the *Cosmos*. In time, son *Zeus* succeeded his father *Cronus* and became “The Father of gods and men” and distributed to all humans their good and bad fortunes in life. Again, in time, he battled against the Titans and consigned them to a hellish or heavenly place, depending on which strand of the myth one accepts.

In short, the Titans have a reputation for enormous accomplishments, but they suffer from a reputation based on warlike deeds.

Author Arthur Kemp has appropriately, it seems, selected Titans for his title’s key noun: White Indo-Europeans who performed great feats of subduing lands and environments and creating enormously advanced civilizations, but also with high negatives—frequent internecine warfare, rape, robbery, pillage, and destruction of their fellow Titans.

## “The White Race”

He properly begins with defining the key term and divides Whites into three subgroupings: Nordic, Alpine, and Mediterranean. Nordics were originally in northern Europe, Alpines in central Europe, and the Mediterraneans in southern Europe. The Mediterraneans are no longer existent today, having been submerged for the most part into the sea of Nonwhite Arabic, Turkic, and Negroid subgroups. On page 2 is an illustration of skulls, pictures, and descriptions of these three subgroups.

The method for tracking racial history he gives as 1.) genetics; 2.) palaeoserology; 3.) study of art forms; 4.) linguistic affinities; and 5.) technological achievements.

His treatment of ancient history with photos and analysis is fascinating and engages one’s sense of eagerness to explore his theory in greater detail. Stonehenge, of course, provides a central clue to the megalithic capabilities of the White Race and must be compared to similar structures on other continents and islands along with the first step type pyramid, found near Marlborough in Wiltshire, England, dating to circa 2600 B.C. (p.15)

## “Nordic Desert Empire—Ancient Egypt.”

Chapter Eight allows one to enter perhaps the most controversial field of study in the Ancient Near East (ANE)—Egypt. “Egypt had been settled by three White groupings prior to 3500 BC, namely the Old European Mediterranean types.” He writes

of evidence to support significant numbers of Semitic and Negroid (= Nubian) presence in the Nile Valley alongside them—”and against whom the Egyptians waged war and enslaved for nearly 2,000 years.” (p. 56)

### The Six Great Race Wars

The first was Europe against Attila the Hun from 372-454 AD (Ch. 18); the second was 1095-1270 AD with Christian Europe’s Crusaders against the Moslems (Ch. 21); the third was the Moslem invasion of Europe and expulsion that covered 711-1492 AD (Ch.23); the fourth was the Europeans opposing the invading Bulgars, Avars, Magyars and Khazars from 550-950 AD (Ch.31); the fifth was Ghengis Khan and the Mongols’ invasion of Europe, 1220-1650 AD (Ch.32); and the last was 1300-1919 AD which he terms “the Ottoman Holocaust” (Ch. 35)

Aryan, Iran, Iraq, Ireland, Harappa, Europe, Sumer, Tocharian—built on the same linguistic root? One must read the early chapters to see that the author attempts “to connect the dots,” as it were, between certain terms that *might* point back to an original *ar-/-ir* root for these Titan types. Surely, there is evidence for further linguistic and archaeological study on this fascinating observation to provide more verification or to falsify it.

### “Born of the Black Sea—The Indo-European Invasions.”

Chapter Five may well possess the most cogent thesis and data of the entire book. “Most modern Whites are to the greatest part, either direct or part descendants of a great wave of White peoples who swept into Europe from about 5500 BC till around 500 BC.” (p. 22) Kemp’s drawing of the Mediterranean and ANE regions of the mid-sixth millennium BC (= 5600 BC) shows the Titans moving out from the present day Ukraine plains, but now the Black Sea after the melting of ice sheets at the end of the Pleistocene era, which led to a rise in ocean levels to some 300 feet over centuries. The Mediterranean Sea overflowed through the narrow Bosphorus neck and into the fertile plains of south central Russia-Ukraine and flooded the region, creating the Black Sea. (Leading me to ask if extensive exploration activity has taken place in order to map out any man-made formation on the floor of the Black Sea.)

For author Kemp, this mega movement of water created the basis for the Biblical legend (not “myth”) of the Noachian Flood.

And, from the steppes, now under water, Whites moved out in waves in every direction, thus establishing civilizations for

which words such as Baltic, German, Slavic, Celtic, Pre-Dynastic Egyptian, Sumerian, Indo-Aryan, Aryan, Tocharian, and Ainu, can be used.

### “Germanic Roller Bearings—500 BC.”

This reviewer found the photographic reproduction—! ought to have been given a whole page!—on page 23 to be marvelously pregnant with meaning if it is indeed genuine and if the dating is accurate. And there is no reason to doubt what Kemp provides.

On the left is “A finely cast Bronze wagon complete with figures, from Strettweg, Austria. 700 BC.” Next to it is “The Dejbjerg wagon from Denmark, circa 500 BC; includes an astonishingly sophisticated roller bearing system of wooden pins in a bronze brace, to facilitate the turning of the wheel on its axle.”

Indeed, if all is in order here, “Such sophisticated technology shows that the Pre-Roman Empire Celts, Germans, Balts and Slavs were actually not ‘barbarians’ at all but highly developed people capable of stunning and complicated technological feats such as these.” He even has an enlarged drawing of the hub with the rolling bearings and its bearing race.

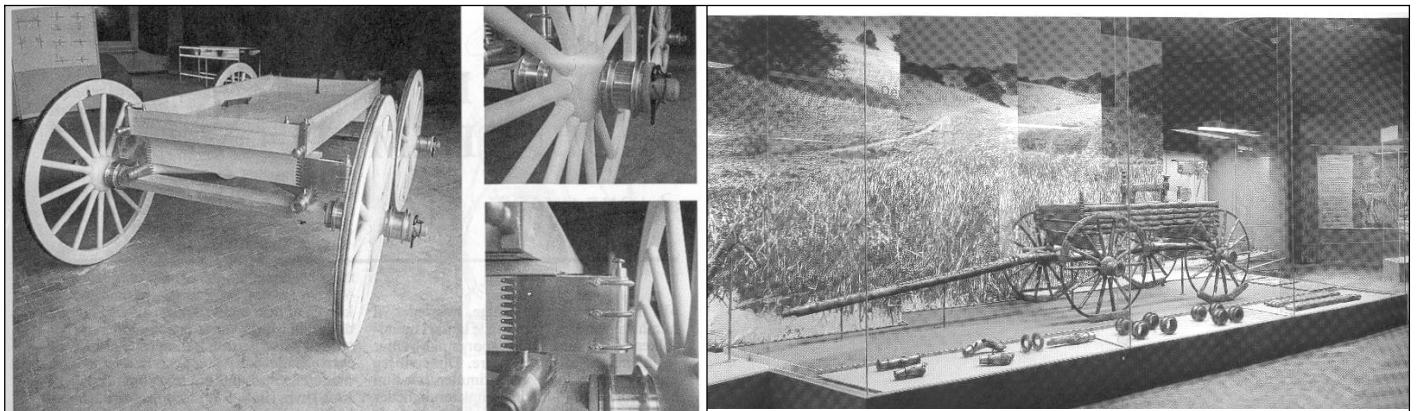
Kemp is to be faulted for not citing the present museum location of these items. Recently, I showed this picture to a Danish scholar and he had never heard of “the Dejbjerg wagon.” Kemp’s volume suffers overall for lacking complete footnote or endnote references and a bibliography, which is, I am told, to be corrected in a third edition to be published later in 2002.

### Anti-Christian Thrust

Kemp makes severe criticisms of Christianity as a non-Aryan religion and (justly) criticizes the violent spread of Christian influence from the time of Constantine the Great forward until all Europe became (largely) Christianized. His own positive favoring Aryan/Norse/Teutonic/Celtic pagan religion is obvious in Chapter Thirty Eight and elsewhere. In fact, his favorable treatment will remind some readers of some Germans of the National Socialist era, but one, of course, must be careful not to make simple equations of religious sentiment and political sentiment of a bygone era.

### Observations Derivable from *March of the Titans*

I made a list of observations about historical development of the White Race that Kemp might well agree with. These ob-



The Dejbjerg wagon, Museum Hollufgård in Odense, Denmark (left) and National Museum in Kopenhagen, both circa 500 BC

servations are based, I believe, logically on the content and spirit of his work. They are listed here and are my own interpretations:

- 1.) The march of human history points to a seeming superiority of Indo-European Caucasoids in comparison to Semitoids, Mongoloids, and Negroids, when emphasis is given to the fundamental characteristics of civilization: art, architecture, technology, physical sciences, construction of buildings and roads, language, literature, and government.
- 2.) The environmental theory of racial subgroup development or non-development cannot be supported by the available data; on the contrary, DNA is of vital importance to civilization advances.
- 3.) The present theorizing and dogmatizing about Afrocentrism (the “Out of Africa” view) and early Egypt as Negroid cannot be verified, but rather that the physical data and artifacts point to an early settlement of the region by Indo-Europeans and their responsibility for the gigantic construction projects, with their demise through racial dilution culminating in the first millennium BC and the demise of Egyptian greatness by circa 500BC.
- 4.) Since Caucasoids have so frequently been migratory in their search for land (and freedom?), they were never able to develop—as Jews have so successfully done—methods of

maintaining their racial integrity, and this has always spelled the demise of their civilizations. (Note: If Kemp in fact holds this principle, as I suggest that he does, then present day Caucasoid proponents of White racial integrity face a losing battle in view of the past several thousand years of reality.)

- 5.) The USA and Europe will be excellent models to watch for Kemp’s principle (4.); by 2200 or 2300 or 2400, one might posit that Kemp’s inferences about the White Race will be verified or falsified by empirical data.

### Conclusion

I look forward to the second volume and others with a critical mind. Kemp’s evidence is persuasive at times but unpersuasive at others. But, the very fact that he attempts to do what, seemingly, no one else has done up to this time, is itself praiseworthy. I only hope that the technical aspects of the succeeding volumes will be greatly improved in order to satisfy the higher demands of original scholars and highly adept students. The general public will profit enormously from the present state of this initial volume—already sold out, I am told—but all in all, the subject has been so severely neglected that it deserves the best treatment.

## On Third Reich Flying Saucers, German Physics, and the Perpetuum Mobile

By *Germar Rudolf*

**Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point*, Century/Random House, London 2001, 281 pp. hardcover, £17.99**

### An Introduction into the Topic

For certain book reviews one must give an explanation and justification in order not to be misunderstood or put in a false light. The review of the book in question here is one of them, because in this book history is only a byproduct, the main concern being revolutionary energy technologies, a subject that is not the main focus of *The Revisionist*. However, since the historical background falls in the era of the Third Reich and deals with secret weapons research in Germany, the subject will probably be of much interest to readers of *TR*.

Cook’s book is about the suppression of revolutionary physical and technical discoveries by powerful interested parties, which would entail the revision of current knowledge. That this kind of proceeding is familiar to Revisionists is another reason to review the book.

### A Personal Introduction

In 1989, I came across a German magazine named *Code*—now discontinued—which contained a long article on flying saucers supposedly developed by the Third Reich, containing authentic appearing cross-section construction drawings of flying saucers named Hanebu. The article was impressive, but it suffered from the major drawback that it did not contain any

references to primary sources or to scientific or technical literature which might have enabled the reader to examine the claims more closely. When I inquired at Diagnosen Verlag, the publisher of *Code*, I received an answer from the author of the article that did not refer to any primary documents or archives nor to any technical or scientific literature, but merely asserted that one could understand the former German wonder technology only by means of an esoteric frame of mind. My own half-year lasting excursion into esoterics, however, had convinced me that believers in the idea of Third Reich flying saucers were essentially devotees of a religion who wanted to believe rather than wanted to know, and who used a few photographs and construction plans as devotional objects.

In 1993, shortly after my house was searched for the first time by the German Thought Police, I came in contact with a person who subscribed to this religion. He was an ingenuous patriot with little education who held the fixed conviction that the earth was hollow and that the Third Reich and its flying saucers had survived in the interior and was waiting for the right time to return and to liberate Germany. My attempts to explain to him that there were good static and tectonic reasons why the earth could not be hollow were useless—he wanted to believe.

In 1996, during my short exile in Spain, I became acquainted with a German war veteran who was not highly educated, but who had acquired broad, though not very deep scien-

tific knowledge as a former librarian of a scientific library. He professed a comparable belief, namely that the moon was really hollow and inhabited. A little later he even published a book on the subject.

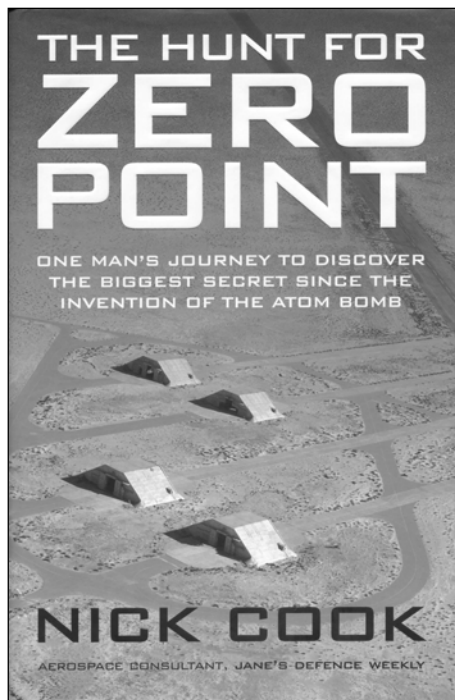
At the beginning of 2000, I received a book manuscript for publication in which the thesis of the hollow earth and a base for Third Reich flying saucers was set out. The entrance to this base was supposedly in *Neuschwabenland* (New Swabia), a place in Antarctica which had been explored and mapped by a German research team in 1938. When I enquired with the author whether he had any scientific or technical evidence for this base in the Antarctic, such as satellite photos, he sent me what was supposedly a satellite photo of Antarctica showing a hole several hundred kilometers wide with vertical walls many tens of kilometers deep. Aside from the problem that such a deep hole would break the earth's crust and expose liquid magma, there was also the problem that vertical walls of several tens of kilometers high would be statically unstable and would doubtlessly collapse, causing earthquakes and volcanic activity such as would be caused by the impact of a giant meteor. That would be the end of all higher life forms on earth.

Why do I discuss this here? The reason is that handling the subject matter discussed in this book necessarily involves a delicate course of enquiry that can easily end in a plunge into the above-mentioned spiritual and social bottomless pits. Nick Cook's book is full of references to his own anxiety and the anxiety of many of the technical people and scientists he contacted that they would be painted as dreamers and idiots by their colleagues and the media if they let themselves become involved in investigations into a tabooed area of science that had acquired a very unsavory reputation due to its historical origins and connection with political fringe groups.

### Who is Nick Cook?

In order to forestall the impression that I have gone crazy and lost contact with reality, I introduce the author of the book, which by the way is published not by a hole-in-the-wall publisher, but by one of the most well-known publishing houses in England.

For 15 years or more, Nick Cook, now 42, has written articles on the newest developments in the weapons industry, with emphasis on aeronautics. He is advisor to the



worldwide leading journal for weapons and weapon systems *Jane's Defence Weekly* and editor of the air weapons section of that journal. His articles also appear in many of the larger British magazines, and his commentaries on weapons development and security issues are broadcasted by the large TV companies of the world. He is considered one of the world's foremost experts in the area of military aeronautics.

The English-language science program *Discovery Channel* broadcasted a two-hour report on the subject covered in this book, written and presented by Cook, in which he introduced the audience into secrets of the US weapons industry of which he had received knowledge or just made educated assumptions.

Cook was educated at Eaton and has received a degree in Arabic and Islamic studies. The author's lack of scientific training is the weakest point of this book,

for it leads him to some obvious errors and misunderstandings, which undermines his competence. It is also irritating that Cook does not make any references to source literature, but attempts to allay the reader's skepticism with a bibliography only. How-

**The G-Engines Are Coming!**

By far the most potent source of energy is gravity. Using it as power future aircraft will attain the speed of light.

By MICHAEL GLADYCH

■ Nuclear-powered aircraft are yet to be built, but there are research projects already under way that will make the super-planes obsolete before they are test-flown. For in the United States and Canada research centers, scientists, designers and engineers are perfecting a

which there has been no escape. "What goes up must come down," they said. The bigger the body the stronger the gravity attraction it has for other objects . . . the larger the distance between the objects, the lesser the gravity pull. Defining those rigid rules was as way to earth.

This discovery gave modern scientists a new hope. We already knew how to make magnets, by coiling a wire around an iron core. Electric current running through the coiled wire created a magnetic field and it could be switched on



ever, a search of the Internet showed that this bibliography, short though it may be, should be a good starting point for investigation of the subject.

### A Journey Through Time and Space

Nearly 10 years ago, Nick Cook found a journal article by M. Gladych, dating from 1956, at his workplace at *Jane's Defence Weekly*, which reported on the advanced state of development of gravity motors that would make possible nearly effortless travel and transport based on a technology which suspended the effects of gravity (see illustration). Nothing has come of this, as we all know. Cook was bothered by the article: who had put it on his work desk and why?

What chiefly excited Cook's interest were statements in the article of technical persons in the US aviation industry who were apparently working on a project in the mid-1950s with the purpose to neutralize the force of gravity by means of an electromagnetic apparatus with which one could cause things to float in the air. Was this merely a journalistic hoax, or were leading US airplane manufacturers really working on such a project? Nick Cook tracked down the last one of the quoted technical authorities still living, but his anxious, nearly panicky, refusal to comment made the matter even more irresistible for Nick Cook. What was going on here?

In his book, Nick Cook describes his search for knowledge in this area move for move: In the US archives he found evidence that at the close of the war the US government confiscated German "wonder" weapons technology and brought it to the USA, and that nothing has been heard of it since: beam weapons for anti-aircraft defense (apparently lasers) and various kinds of vaguely described flying objects. He found eyewitness reports by US bomber pilots describing unknown flying objects and unusual optical and magnetic effects in German air space near the end of the war.

From diverse but obscure sources it is apparent that the Third Reich was working on the development of various experimental flying devices. Names such as Schriever, Habermohl, and Miethe appear—they were men who worked on secret projects at laboratories located in Bohemia and Moravia.



*This late 1950s or early 1960s picture is said to be a sub-scale electrogravitics experimental air vehicle mounted on a wind-tunnel test stand<sup>1</sup>*

However, this line of inquiry led Cook into the proximity of politically dangerous groups who have cobbled together a substitute religion out of secret weapons development during the Third Reich, so he abandoned it and turned back to investigate the researches made in the USA and Canada after the war.

In the 1950s and 1960s, the Canadian firm Avro conducted experiments with "flying saucers" that were later made public. The experiments were discontinued. But was this all? For example, what can one make of the numerous sightings of unknown flying objects since the end of the war? And do the secret proceedings at the famous-infamous Area 51, the top-secret US air base in the Nellis military test range in southern Nevada, owe anything to the development of new technology that was carried out in Germany in the 1940s?

With his excellent connections to the leading US weapons manufacturers, Cook attempted to get a look behind the curtains at the most secret projects under way, at companies and agencies such as Lockheed-Martin, Northrop Grumman, and the NASA Marshall Space Flight Center. He made contact with various aviation and weapons development experts and received the almost conspiratorial support of researchers who, while not giving him useful information, told him he was definitely on the right track.

### Revolution in Physics

The weakest point of Cook's book—due to the author's lack of scientific training—is at once its most fascinating: considerations of certain areas of scientific research that could alter our scientific worldview fundamentally, if new theories that were regarded as mere speculations should prove valid. Cook examines some of these areas with the help of a number of scientists. One point is that Einstein's theory of relativity may be in need of correction, since the proposition that objects can not move faster than the speed of light (ca. 300,000 km per second, or 1.08 million km per hour) may not hold.

The breakthrough in physical sciences anticipated for nearly a century with respect to the unification of the four natural forces (electromagnetism, gravity, strong and weak nuclear forces) may be at the point of a practical (partial) realization, because experiments carried out by physicists in the last ten years may prove that gravity can be screened by electromagnetic devices, and thus things placed "above" an electromagnetic field may be made weightless, so as to hover. Even more, one could even speak of a repelling effect here by which an object could be accelerated. The next step might be the generation of gravity beams which could cause things to have weight in certain directions.

There are a number of reasons to believe that our world is built in a way quite different than we have been accustomed to think. According to certain quantum theories, our world does not simply 'exist,' but is formed from the statistical appearance and disappearance of energy and material quanta, the so-called quantum background noise. Should it prove possible to tap this quantum noise (the so-called zero point energy) before it disappears again into nothingness, it would be possible to extract energy quasi out of nothing. What sounds like a perpetuum mobile, or rather, an apparatus that takes energy from the void—which contradicts all physics as now taught (the conservation of

energy, the fundamental principle of thermodynamics)—would be relativized, since the theory assumes the existence of parallel universes, so that our ‘energy from the void’ pump would merely move energy from one parallel universe to another.

Moving faster than the speed of light, levitation, manipulation of gravity, tractor beams, parallel universes, hyperspace, zero point energy: does this all sound like the Star Trek? Yes, and if one believes it is real, that is what our future looks like. That is what Nick Cook thought when he published an article in *Jane’s Defence Weekly*, “Warp Drive When?” (July 26, 2000)

### Science or Humbug?

One can easily imagine what our establishment physicists think of all this, as it would turn all physics from the last 2000 years upside down. Yevgeni Podkletnov, a Russian physicist, is one of the leading physicists in the area of “revisionist” physics. When his gravity screening experiments had progressed to such a point that he wished to publish an article in one of the worldwide leading journals for physical science (*Journal of Physics D: Applied Physics*), it caused an unexpected uproar that caused a set back for the whole project of at least five years. Before the paper was published, Ian Sample of the *Sunday Telegraph* heard of the new revolutionary research and straightaway wrote a shocking article about it (see illustration) published on Sept. 1, 1996. The term “antigravity” used in this article, which is regarded as extremely unscientific, shed a negative light on the whole project and was devastating. The ‘scientific community’ launched a flurry of attacks and caused most of the other scientists involved in the project to get cold feet and withdraw their support for the article, leaving Podkletnov out in the rain. Further pressure from the ‘scientific community’ caused Podkletnov to lose his position at University of Tampere in Finland.<sup>2</sup>

The same thing happened to other scientists who got near this subject: they were made ridiculous by their colleagues, ostracized, often stripped of their honor and dignity, and frequently even having their careers ended. These are behavioral patterns that are only too familiar to Historical Revisionists and explain why Nick Cook found it difficult to draw a technical expert into conversation, since in such matters they shun the media like the devil shuns holy water.

Podkletnov’s experiments,<sup>3</sup> however, were taken seriously enough that even NASA showed interest. Together with the University of Huntsville NASA carried out experiments along the lines Podkletnov had followed.<sup>4</sup> Also, two of the world’s leading aircraft manufacturers, Boeing and British Aerospace, started their own research projects (see illustrations).<sup>1</sup>

### German Physics

After Cook received an experimental demonstration of ‘revisionist’ physics that convinced

him that he was dealing with serious research, he took up again the pursuit of physics in the Third Reich, which, he believed, would bring him to the origin of the new ‘revisionist’ physics. Cook’s reports on secret weapons research in the Third Reich are, as one might expect in the contemporary climate of opinion, colored with the usual polemic about the ‘Empire of Evil,’ but one should ignore it. The most interesting part of his investigation brought him into contact with the son of Viktor Schauberger, whose practical researches led to a number of revolutionary technologies, none of which were developed to the point of practical usefulness. Toward the end of the war, Schauberger collaborated on the development of German flying saucers. At the suggestion of a Polish researcher, Cook journeyed to Silesia and inspected a secret research facility whose purpose is now a mystery. Cook speculated on the basis of information he had collected that the site could have been a test stand for a prototype gravity-drive flying saucer (see illustration).

It is true that Schauberger was brought to America at the end of the war by Operation Paperclip, a program to kidnap leading German scientists and to bring them to the USA, but

# Breakthrough as scientists beat gravity

by ROBERT MATTHEWS  
and IAN SAMPLE

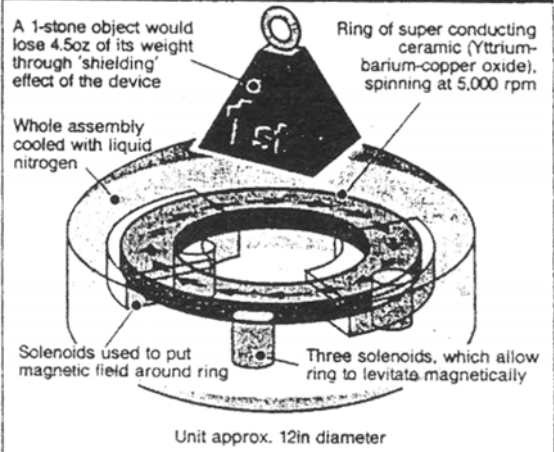
SCIENTISTS in Finland are about to reveal details of the world’s first anti-gravity device. Measuring about 12in across, the device is said to reduce significantly the weight of anything suspended over it.

The claim — which has been rigorously examined by scientists, and is due to appear in a physics journal next month — could spark a technological revolution. By combatting gravity, the most ubiquitous force in the universe, everything from transport to power generation could be transformed.

The *Sunday Telegraph* has learned that Nasa, the American space agency, is taking the claims seriously, and is funding research into how the anti-gravity effect could be turned into a means of flight.

The researchers at the Tampere University of Technology in Finland, who discovered the effect, say it

## HOW THE ANTI-GRAVITY DEVICE WORKS



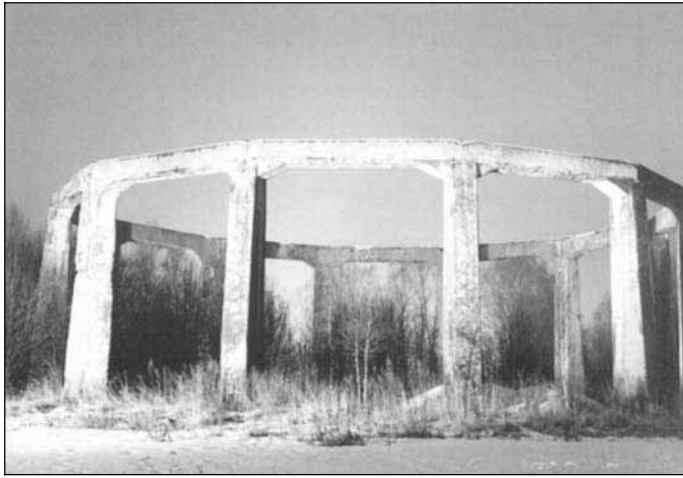
tures. The team was carrying out tests on a rapidly spinning disc of superconducting ceramic suspended in the magnetic field of three electric coils, all enclosed in a low-temperature vessel called a cryostat.

“One of my friends came in

the *Journal of Physics-D: Applied Physics*, published by Britain’s Institute of Physics.

Even so, most scientists will not feel comfortable with the idea of anti-gravity until other teams repeat the experiments.

*Sunday Telegraph*, Sept. 1, 1996



*A test stand for flying saucers in Ludwigsdorf, Silesia?*

due to his age he had little success in the replication of his research—that, at least, is the official version.

Cook discusses briefly the desperate research conducted by the Third Reich in remote hideaways of science in the face of extremely limited resources in order to find technical solutions to their military problems. This despair had as one result that researchers were allowed to deviate from the accepted theories and to penetrate into areas deemed impossible by established physics. According to Cook, the Germans may have succeeded in developing a technology for screening gravity and maybe even for tapping zero point energy, without being entirely aware of the theoretical basis. Cook is effusively shocked at the possibility that the Third Reich, the ‘Empire of Evil,’ may have been at the threshold of getting access to unlimited energy resources and transport methods, based apparently on the victory of quantum theory over relativity theory, the victory of applied research over theoretical science, or, as Cook puts it, the victory of ‘German physics’ over ‘Jewish physics,’ as it was then polemically called in the Third Reich. What a horror that would have been, indeed!

**... But They Hover After All!**

Podkletnov has returned to Finland and has recently published an article in which he reports on successful experiments on the generation of gravity beams.<sup>6</sup> He told Cook in a conversation that he had also succeeded in completely screening gravity from objects, thus enabling them to hover.

It appears that this technology has reached a point where practical applications are possible. Thus, Ning Li, who has

**Discover the Solutions To America's Most Pressing Energy, Economic & Environmental Problems and Find Out Why You May Never Have To Pay Another Energy Bill Again!**

Discover the Newest Breakthrough Technologies Of the 21st Century That Are Just Now Being Made Public. Witness With Your Own Eyes...

- That you can burn pure water to cut through steel or use it as fuel to run an internal combustion engine. See the engine run live at our tour show!
- You can transmute the nucleus of an atom to neutralize radioactive waste. We will do it for the audience.
- Use fuel consisting of equal parts of pickle juice, soda pop, water, sugar, crude oil, gas, soy sauce, even human urine as fuel to run an internal combustion engine with NO contaminants or pollution released into the environment.
- We will run a second modified internal combustion engine in the room closed loop with no exhaust system.
- See an engine that replicates the awesome power of a tornado to supply power for our large generator.
- We will demonstrate the world's most efficient electric generator ever built.
- Wash clothes without using any laundry detergent or poisonous phosphates again.
- We will prove that a permanent magnet (contrary to popular physics teachings) can and does do work without any other energy input.
- A one horsepower AC motor runs without being hooked up to any wires.
- We will show you the only gas in the world that actually implodes rather than explodes.
- We'll send live electricity through the air without any wires.
- We'll demonstrate magnetic materials & phenomena that will astound you.
- Car engines can be modified to run on 80% water and 20% gas right now. You can sign up to modify your car!
- Grow a garden with cabbages as big as pumpkins & 500 tomatoes on one plant with no need for pesticides.
- See the Neutrino Circuit light bulbs and produce electricity without wires or a generator.

...This is just a sample of the technology you will see! Come to our free tour show and see how you can make money helping us to save the environment! People (including skeptics and the scientific community) are welcome & encouraged to attend and bring their own testing instruments to verify our claims! (Anyone coming to test will need a 3-Phase Cumulative Watt Meter That Measures Power Factor.)

50 Tour Shows—One In Every State! Encourage Your State Politicians & Scientists To Be Responsible and Attend! For Show Locations and Additional National Tour Information, Please Visit [www.teslaelectric.com](http://www.teslaelectric.com) or call 1-212-461-2747. If You Cannot Attend A Show, Call To Order A Show On Video At 1-800-566-4258.

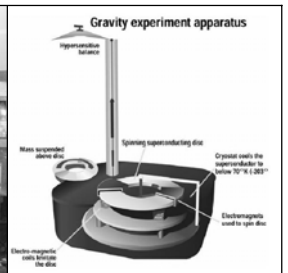
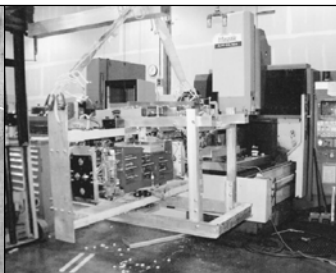
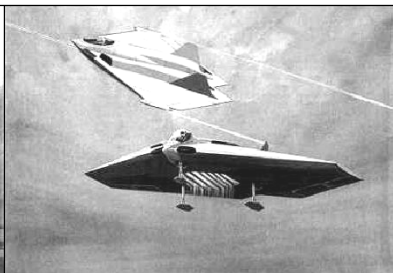
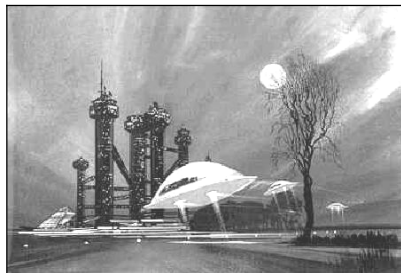
*Advertisement for an apparatus that solves all problems at once with the 'new physics.' This may be too much of a good thing.<sup>5</sup>*

done research for NASA at the University of Huntsville, Alabama, has withdrawn from the physics faculty of the University of Huntsville in order to devote herself to applying the results of her research to practical purposes. Cook stated that Podkletnov had received an offer from Toshiba to make his research results commercially useful.

Of course, there are many hangers-on involved here because this area of physics is new and little understood, it is difficult not just for the layman, but also for the technical specialist, to distinguish between serious research and charlatany (see illustration). It should be kept in mind that specious promises of costless energy should not be lightly believed.

**Reactions**

During a telephone conversation, Nick Cook told me what the reactions to his latest book were, which has become a best-



*Two BAe Military Aircraft Division's concepts for air vehicles employing anti-gravity<sup>1</sup> Doesn't this look too familiar?*

*Boeing test stand for gravity test in Seattle<sup>1</sup>*

*Configuration of gravity modification experiment by Boeing<sup>1</sup>*

seller in England. The book was favorably reviewed in the English daily newspaper *The Guardian*, in the science magazine *New Scientist*, and in a number of smaller English daily newspapers. Cook's colleagues at *Jane's Defence Weekly* were thoroughly approving of his work, and some of them congratulated him on its success. The reaction from the aeronautics and weapons industries was divided. While some rejected his main thesis of the emergence of a new physics, others thanked him for having opened their eyes. The 'scientific community' was also divided. Some of them dismissed Cook's work as nonsense, while others were grateful that he had popularized this interesting and controversial theme and had rescued it from oblivion. The most negative reaction came from a UFO researcher who called Cook a "neo-Nazi" because he said the historical origin of flying saucer technology was in the Third Reich. (UFO researchers want to believe in little green men.) This label is utter nonsense because Nick Cook's opinion of the Third Reich is, as has been stated, distinctly negative.

Nick Cook stated:

*"It would be a mistake to disregard the research in Germany in the 1930s and 1940s just because it was done in the Third Reich. This kind of suppression of facts would be unscientific and would be just as bad as the suppression of facts that happened during that era."*

So it may turn out that not only Otto, Diesel, Wankel, Jet and Rocket motors were invented in Germany, but also gravity motors—Nazis or no Nazis.

#### Notes

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung*, 5(4) (2001), pp. 459-463; translated by Michael Humphrey.

A comprehensive collection of primary and secondary sources on this topic can be downloaded from [www.aeronautics.ru/archive/gravity/gravitsapa.pdf](http://www.aeronautics.ru/archive/gravity/gravitsapa.pdf) (41 MB!). The following internet sites are good places to locate further literature:

[www.inetarena.com/~noetic/pls/gravity.html](http://www.inetarena.com/~noetic/pls/gravity.html);

[www.omicron-research.com/RecDocD/introD.htm](http://www.omicron-research.com/RecDocD/introD.htm).

<sup>1</sup> [www.aeronautics.ru/archive/gravity/gravitsapa.htm](http://www.aeronautics.ru/archive/gravity/gravitsapa.htm).

<sup>2</sup> Cf. the article in *Wired*, 6(3) (March 1998);

[www.wired.com/wired/archive/6.03/antigravity.html](http://www.wired.com/wired/archive/6.03/antigravity.html).

<sup>3</sup> Evgeny Podkletnov and R. Niemanen: "A Possibility of Gravitational Force Shielding by Bulk YBa<sub>2</sub>Cu<sub>3</sub>O<sub>7-x</sub> Superconductors", *Physica C* 203 (1992), pp. 441-444.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Ning Li and D.G. Torr: "Effects of a Gravitomagnetic Field on Pure Superconductors", *Physical Review D*, (1991), pp. 457-459; Ning Li, D. Noever et. al.: "Static Test for a Gravitational Force Coupled to Type II YBCO Superconductors", *Physica C*, 281 (1997), pp. 260-267.

<sup>5</sup> The information given at the website <http://www.teslaelectric.com/> is so paltry and concentrates so much on advertising that it does not seem to be worthwhile.

<sup>6</sup> Evgeny Podkletnov, Giovanni Modanese, "Impulse Gravity Generator Based Y Ba<sub>2</sub>Cu<sub>3</sub>O<sub>7-y</sub> Superconductor with Composite Crystal Structure", <http://xxx.lanl.gov/abs/physics/0108005>.

## Research News

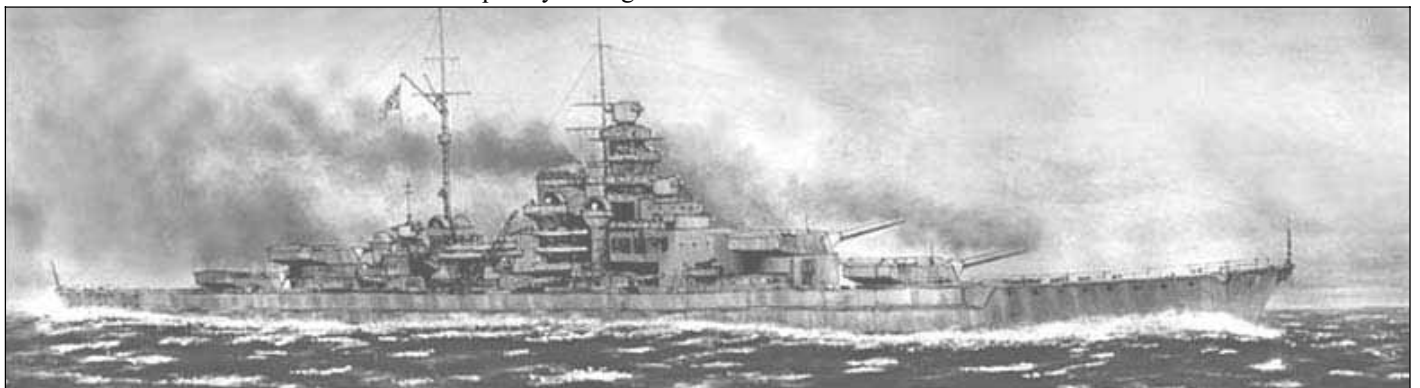
### The Sinking of the Battleship Bismarck

By Wolfgang Pfitzner

At its time, the German Battleship *Bismarck* was the finest, most feared warship the world had ever seen. It was a super weapon meant to help cut off the British supply lines in the Atlantic. Hence, when the *Bismarck* went on its first mission on May 19, 1941, the British launched the biggest hunt for a single ship the world has ever seen. Britain's finest ship, the Battleship HMS *Hood*, was the first to confront the *Bismarck*, but it went down after its ammunition chamber was hit by a *Bismarck* shell. Only 3 men of its 1,415 crewmembers survived. "Sink the Bismarck!" was then the British battle cry. Britain sent an entire fleet after the *Bismarck*. The British quickly managed to

encircle the *Bismarck* because its rudder had been damaged early on by a torpedo launched from a British aircraft. What followed was an uninterrupted shelling of the partly disabled *Bismarck* with cannon fire and torpedoes from many ships. Thus, it lasted only a few days before the *Bismarck* finally went down, 600 miles off the coast of France, on May 27, 1941. Only 115 of its 2,200 men survived, since the British abandoned the area in fear of U-boat attacks.

This British victory was vastly exploited by the Anglo-Saxon propaganda machinery with books, movies, and television shows.



Battleship Bismarck

The only problem is that the story is probably untrue. Survivors of the *Bismarck* have always maintained that they actually scuttled the ship to prevent it from falling into enemy hands, which is a German naval tradition. Scuttling charges were said to have been placed to shatter water intakes and other weak areas near the ship's keel. According to those German survivors, these charges exploded about 30 minutes before the ship sank, thus being the real cause of the *Bismarck*'s demise.

The British Admiralty itself assumed in a report during the war that German explosives could have been one reason why the ship sank so quickly, but British zealots dismissed this idea.

Dr. Robert D. Ballard was the first one to discover the *Bismarck* wreck in 1989, one mile off the point where it sank, because it had slid down an under water mountain. (See his book *The Discovery of the Bismarck*," Warner Books, NY 1990) Since the ship was largely intact, he concluded that the scuttling must have been very effective. If scuttled incompletely, large air pockets remain within the ship, which are highly pressurized when the ship sinks and lead to the hull being crushed, as it happened with Titanic's stern. But nothing of that sort can be seen at the *Bismarck*.

Of course, these claims have infuriated the British, who label such research as "revisionist claptrap." They organized their own explorations in 2001 and claimed that there are major gushes in the hull, indeed, thus scuttling can only have expe-



HMS Hood

ditioned the *Bismarck*'s fate.

In 2002, two more explorations were made, the first one in May and June of 2002 by a team of American and Canadian experts, using a Russian Mir submarine run by the P. P. Shirshov Institute of Oceanology (Moscow). These subs can deploy remote controlled mini robots in order to explore locations where the big submarine cannot go, here in particular the inside of the ship. So far, this team has not made many public declarations about their findings, but what they said indicates that the *Bismarck*'s hull has no large shell holes below the waterline that could have caused its demise, and not a single torpedo penetration.

The only damage to the hull that could have proven fatal is shown to have been the result of the ship's impact on the sea floor. Reacting like a balloon full of water, the impact of this water balloon wrapped in iron armor caused the sides of the ship to bulge out and break in places—especially at the bottom, as the ship slid down the mountain slope.

The mini robots could also verify that the *Bismarck*'s double-layered hull was never completely penetrated by torpedoes. The German engineers built the ship's hull with two armor belts and placed water and fuel tanks in between. Torpedoes which had penetrated the outer layer exploded in the water and fuel tanks, but did not penetrate the second armor belt, thus the ship's interior spaces were kept dry.

In July and August 2002, a second exploration led by Dr. Alfred S. McLaren, a former instructor at the United States Naval War College, went down to the *Bismarck* with the same technologies as the one described before, confirming the results of the earlier exploration. After thoroughly reviewing the material gathered during the last exploration, Dr. McLaren stated:

*"We conclusively proved there was no way the British sank that ship. It was scuttled."*

Source: William J. Broad, "Visiting Bismarck, Explorers Revise Its Story", *The New York Times*, Dec. 12, 2002, [www.nytimes.com/2002/12/03/science/03BISM.html?ex=1040197450&ei=1&en=8c3cc69139ca8dec](http://www.nytimes.com/2002/12/03/science/03BISM.html?ex=1040197450&ei=1&en=8c3cc69139ca8dec)

## From the Records of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, Part 2

By Gernar Rudolf

### Professional Denouncer—Witness—Criminal

As described in Part 1 of this series in the last issue, the investigation of crimes allegedly committed at concentration camp Auschwitz was initiated by charges filed by criminal convict Adolf Rögner,<sup>1</sup> whom Stuttgart public prosecutor Weber described several times as a "contradictory and psychopathic professional criminal", (p. 106r, p. 85r).<sup>2</sup>

During their investigations against Wilhelm Boger, who Rögner had accused of torture and murder in Auschwitz as a member of the Gestapo, the public prosecutor's office at first had little information to rely on. Even the Central Council of Jews in Germany had no knowledge of Boger, but they offered to circulate a letter to the Jewish community if the prosecutor's

office would provide them with particulars (letter dated Aug. 25, 1958, p. 46). This letter was answered by public prosecutor Weber on Aug. 29, 1958, with details about the accusations against Boger and other SS men (p. 58). In letters to other public prosecutors and police offices, Weber had emphasized that all witnesses should be thoroughly examined before any names are made public (see pp. 73f., 78-83, 109, 117f.). But with respect to the Central Council of Jews in Germany, he conveniently ignored his warning—a violation of proper prosecutorial conduct, since possible witnesses should provide information on their own memory and not be influenced by detailed descriptions from third parties.

The subsequent appeal put out by the Central Council of

Jews in Germany with details about the alleged crimes Wilhelm Boger was accused of having committed is not in the records. However, it may be assumed that it contained the information provided by Weber—and therefore would have constituted an early suggestive influencing of possible future witnesses.

Another interesting aspect of the personality and biography of the initial accuser Rögner is his involvement in the famous-infamous show trials that the Americans held in Dachau in 1946.<sup>3</sup> In a handwritten letter dated March 30, 1958, to the public prosecution at the District Court Stuttgart, he mentioned these show trials (p. 53r):<sup>4</sup>

*“During the 3 years of my working for various military courts and for the CIC as an identifier and informer etc., I made discoveries that struck me, for example: Camp 29—Dachau, the so-called ‘professional witnesses’ who lived year-round in the camp, received housing, first-rate American rations, cigarettes and 20 Reichsmark from the Americans and 10 from then-president Auerbach the [illegible] Munich’; they were mainly Slavic Jews (Poles, Czechs, Hungarians, Yugoslavs, etc.); they committed perjuries again and again, were all full of hate and bent on revenge (besides, they were also work-shy). [?Every] day they committed perjury and signed affidavits full of lies, made false identifications, etc.”*

Rögner himself was interrogated intensively on Aug. 20, 1958. Among other things, he stated (p. 48r):

*“On June 20, 1945, I was taken by the Americans in Laufen and put into Automatic Arrest because I had worked as a Kapo [supervising inmate] in various concentration camps.”*

From uncounted witness statements of various camps it can be seen that the Kapos—prisoners with leadership functions—were guilty of committing many crimes against their fellow prisoners. This was especially true of those Kapos who were professional criminals.<sup>5</sup> Rögner was one of these Kapos. Perhaps he thought he faced the choice of either ending up as a defendant at the Dachau show trial or of serving the Americans in some way. In any case, he was subsequently released from Automatic Arrest and then worked for the CIC (Counter Intelligence Corps of the US Army) as “identifier and informer” during the Dachau and later during the Nuremberg trials. He also admitted that he performed this work for pay (expenses, housing, rations) until 1948 (p. 48r). What Rögner criticized others for in his handwritten letter, that is, denouncing others for money and food, that was actually what he himself had done for three whole years. Rögner was therefore not only a professional criminal, but also one of those professional denouncers and professional witnesses who helped the Americans at the Dachau lynch trials. During his interrogation, he confirmed that the material he used in 1958 to bring about the Auschwitz trial mostly derived from those show trials (p. 49):

*“During this time [his work for the CIC], I collected records and documents on the former concentration camps for purposes of my respective evaluation work.”*

However, he later corrected this (p. 49):

*“I want to say that in the documents I have written down and commented only my very own observations and have not written down anything that I have not seen myself.”*

It is not clear from what time frame Rögner’s “original observations” come, whether 1940-1945 or from 1946-1948. In any case, it is almost impossible that during his imprisonment in Auschwitz he was in a position to collect records on SS personnel on duty amounting to over 100 pounds (his own words, p. 55r). One must conclude therefore that he collected his material in Dachau, Nuremberg, and thereafter. In one case, he mentioned that he possessed the “Allied War Crimes lists” and the “Polish original charge records from Auschwitz I and II” (p. 55rf.).

Both during his interrogation and in his written declarations, Rögner provided long lists of alleged wrongdoers as well as former concentration camp comrades and possible witnesses on Auschwitz, with many personal details (pp. 49r-50r, 55-56r, 87-101). In his handwritten letters, most of the alleged SS criminals were “mass-murderers of the worst sort”. These stereotypical denunciations suggest that his information came from a stereotypical source, such as the Dachau show trials.

In his summary of the interrogation of Rögner, investigating police detective Brunk wrote (p. 51b):

*“The accuser Adolf Rögner has a record here. Up to 1935, he had been sentenced fourteen times altogether for theft, fraud, falsification of records with fraud [...] with a total sentence time of 5 years in prison. Also he was sent to a concentration camp as a preventive measure, where he soon advanced to Kapo.”*

Brunk was also skeptical with respect to Rögner’s assurance that all his statements were based on first-hand experience (p. 51b):

*“It must be assumed that he acquired extensive knowledge from the trials, which he sometimes participated in as a witness. It must also be assumed that the material that he is putting to use against the persons he has named has come from that source.”*

That Rögner had other—at times perhaps more important—motives for his actions than his political opinions is shown by his words in a handwritten letter to the public prosecution at District Court Stuttgart dated Aug. 31, 1958. In it, he tied the delivery of his documents to the prosecutor to a condition, namely, his transfer from the prison at Bruchsal to a prison in Stuttgart (p. 67r):

*“It is now up to you, chief prosecutor of Stuttgart, I must either now be given humane accommodations, not these ‘dirty, stinking transport cells which are teeming with vermin’! I must be present at the analysis and evaluation of the lists, because there are thousands of names, and so on. I can not do that here in Bruchsal, because here I have the greatest trouble with the warden [...]”*

The rest of his letter showed clearly that Rögner was ready to do anything that would get him out of Bruchsal: serving as a witness in a trial in Munich for several days, evaluating documents in Stuttgart for several weeks, and so on.

### **Communist Propaganda**

Rögner stated repeatedly that he wished to emigrate to eastern, Soviet occupied communist Europe as soon as he was released from imprisonment (p. 25):

*“I am 100% east-oriented and will go to Cracow right after my release, which will be my permanent residence.”*

For exactly this reason, public prosecutor Weber felt compelled to temporarily confiscate the records that Rögner had accumulated in his cell, since Rögner might not be willing to surrender them out of fear of losing them (pp. 67r., 106r):

*"I remark that the confiscation should be done because there is danger in hesitation, in that the accuser Rögner, a contradictory and psychopathic professional criminal, has threatened to send his documents to the eastern zone [communist East Germany]."*

In a letter to the prosecution at District Court Stuttgart dated Aug. 30, 1958, the Comité International d'Auschwitz, directed chiefly by former political concentration camp prisoners—that is, Communists—enclosed a brochure that had been "sent by the international resistance organization in the concentration camp Auschwitz to Cracow" on Sept. 16, 1944 (p. 59).

It is well known that many communists and socialists were held prisoner in concentration camps during the National Socialist era. It must be considered a certainty that these persons set up their own Organizations within the camps and worked together with underground groups outside the camps. One such communist prisoner involved in these activities was Bruno Baum. After the war he freely admitted his propaganda activity in books and journal articles in the communist German Democratic Republic.<sup>6</sup> In addition to Baum, other communist camp partisans were Hermann Langbein, later president of the Auschwitz Committee, and such well known authors, 'Holocaust survivors,' and professional witnesses as Ota Kraus, Erich Schön-Kulka,<sup>7</sup> Rudolf Vrba and Rudolf Wetzler,<sup>8</sup> Phillip Müller,<sup>9</sup> Stanislaw Jankowski,<sup>10</sup> Ella Lingens-Reiner,<sup>11</sup> and Kazimierz Smolen, the director of the Auschwitz Museum for many years.<sup>12</sup> Bruno Baum wrote:

*"The whole propaganda which started about Auschwitz abroad was initiated by us with the help of our Polish comrades."<sup>13</sup>*

*"It is no exaggeration when I say that the majority of all Auschwitz propaganda, which was spread at that time all over the world, was written by ourselves in the camp."<sup>14</sup>*

*"We carried out this propaganda in [for] the world public until our very last day of presence in Auschwitz."<sup>15</sup>*

With this background, and in view of the massive propaganda campaign against Germany begun by the Soviets in August 1944 when the Lublin-Majdanek camp was occupied, it must be asked what value a brochure could have, which was produced by the above-named propagandists on the concentration camp Auschwitz in September 1944? The translation of this Polish publication included in the trial records is crawling with descriptions of supposed barbarities. Two examples will show blatantly how much they are worth (p. 69):

*"In his personal behavior, he [camp commandant Rudolf Höß] got carried away by sexual excesses with women in the bunker, whereby several became pregnant, which inmate physicians were forced to interrupt [sic]." (emphasis in original)*

Höß has been accused of many immoralities, but this is not mentioned anywhere in the literature. But it gets worse (p. 65):

*"In interrogations, Unterscharführer Quackernack Walter [...]—used torture by crucifixion, stabbing the testicles with steel needles and burning tampons in the vagina."*

To my knowledge, these kinds of perversities can not be found anywhere else in the literature and have never been mentioned by any witness. In view of such flaming nonsense, it should not be surprising that public prosecutor Dr. Bech, concerning some Czechian printed matter sent by Langbein to the prosecutor's office of Stuttgart, thought that these "publications from the Soviet" may be a "danger to national security" (p. 71). But the reader appreciative of Dr. Bech's conceptual ability would be disappointed, since right afterward, concerning this publication written in a language he did not understand, he asked,

*"if it was only a description of Nazi crimes or if the publication also contained propaganda."*

Why or? From 1933 onward both have gone hand-in-hand! Dr. Bech thereupon made it quite clear that he was not concerned to suppress propaganda which might be a threat to national security:

*"If this mailing is regarded as one of the usual mass mailings, an investigation should formally be started against Hermann Langbein and subsequently quashed on a technicality."*

This is the German censor going by the book! How pleasant it would be if German public prosecutors would respond to Revisionist mass mailings with just a formal investigation and then quash it on a technicality!

### Interest from Higher Quarters

At the very beginning of the investigation in Stuttgart, the public prosecution in Stuttgart was aware that the case had attracted attention from the highest quarters. For example, in an addendum of Aug. 30, 1958, to the statement filed with the public prosecution at District Court Stuttgart on Sept. 29, 1958, Hermann Langbein mentioned (p. 62):

*"Due to a letter dated Aug. 7, 1958, from the Minister of Justice of Baden-Württemberg, I amplify this statement [...]."*

Public prosecutor Weber was evidently not pleased with Mr. Langbein, because in a note in the records dated Sept. 11, 1959, he wrote (p. 76):

*"Langbein makes an unsubstantiated complaint about the methods used in the investigation, which I specifically deny. Apparently he has also made complaints to the Ministry."*

This means that Weber was worried about Langbein's complaint to the Ministry of Justice. Two days later Weber wrote (p. 102r):

*"Because it concerns an important investigation case, in which the Ministry of Justice is very interested, [...]."*

The Ministry of Justice of Baden-Württemberg was then in the hands of the conservative CDU (Christian Democratic Union) government. It may therefore be assumed that their interest in this investigation case was due not to sympathy for Langbein's communist front organization, but rather came from higher quarters located elsewhere.

### The Second Witness Statement

Several of the witnesses named by Rögner could not remember anything of what he claimed about the supposed barbarities of Wilhelm Boger (pp. 110, 116, 119). But on Sept. 24,

1958, Paul Leo Scheidel gave the investigators what they were looking for. During his interrogation, Scheidel reported that it had been his task during executions at the “black wall” in the main camp at Auschwitz to see to it that his fellow prisoners stayed in rooms whose windows did not permit a view of the events in the court with the said “black wall,” so that there would be no witnesses to the executions. However, he himself had gotten to a window from which he could observe the executions allegedly carried out by Wilhelm Boger (p. 111f.). How he could have kept his fellow prisoners from looking on with him remains a mystery. However, there is another fact, which proves that Scheidel was not telling the truth: There is no doubt that there many executions in Auschwitz, and they were either by shooting or by hanging. The SS regularly sent dispatches of same to Berlin which were intercepted by the British.<sup>16</sup> Auschwitz served as an execution site also for death sentences for criminals who were not camp inmates. It is false to think the camp headquarters could have done anything to keep executions in the camp a secret. Moreover, these death sentences were decided by the legal standards of the Third Reich and served as deterrence for other potential miscreants. Had it been desired to carry out the sentences in secrecy, the executions would have taken place in some remote forest, as done by the Soviets at Katyn, and not in the middle of a camp. Scheidel’s report that it was his duty to keep his fellow prisoners from being witnesses to the proceedings is therefore false.

Shortly thereafter, Scheidel reports about the later famous, but never clearly described “Boger swing,” with which Wilhelm Boger supposedly tortured numerous prisoners (p. 112):

*“After a long time Boger [...] had me tied up and hung on the Boger swing (it looks like a gymnastic horizontal bar), which everybody in the camp knew and feared. Boger invented this swing himself; that’s why it is called the Boger swing. Both hands were tied together tightly and pulled over my knees. The crossbar of the so-called swing ran through between my lower arms and knee-joints (knee-hollows).”*

The torture supposedly consisted in Boger abusing with a stick the naked behind of the prisoner thus strung up head downward. It has been shown that one can actually tie someone up to a horizontal bar that way, so that he can not free himself. However, it requires a securely anchored crossbar as well as the cooperation of the prisoner. That is, one can only tie someone up to a horizontal bar if he hangs on the bars with his knee-hollows, pulls his body up, and grabs his knees from beneath the bars—certainly an athletic feat—at which time he could be bound. Scheidel’s report that he was first tied up and then hung on the bar could not work. It also would not be reasonable for the Gestapo to have installed an anchored horizontal bar—the beating of a prisoner bent upon a horizontal bar would have required a firmly secured horizontal bar as well as stay cables which gymnastic bars also have. And in any case, one could have beaten up a prisoner with a stick without such a complicated construction, so why bother? As will be seen in a later installment of this analysis, Scheidel’s description of the so-called “Boger swing” is not quite accurate, which is an indication that his account is from hearsay rather than from his own recollection.

Later Scheidel added the following touch (p. 113):

*“I had to sit with my tailbone on the edge of a chair, so that one half of the butt was on the chair and the other hung down. I had to stretch both arms and legs in the air and keep my balance by using all my strength. I felt hellish pain in my tailbone. I begged Boger to let me stand up.”*

This is yet another scene where the evil Gestapo man tortures the prisoner by virtue of acrobatic acts. Scheidel had an active imagination, but to believe that a Gestapo man bent on torture would have depended on the athletic cooperation of his victim is comic.

Scheidel got typhus in 1943 and was, like all other Auschwitz prisoners unfit to work—not gassed or “selected” by Boger for execution, as Scheidel and others of his frame of mind never fail to claim—but placed in the sick camp at Birkenau and cared for until he got well (his statement, p. 113). Such are Scheidel’s fairy tales on the torture and annihilation camp Auschwitz.

In other words, Paul Leo Scheidel, after Adolf Rögner the second former Auschwitz inmate ready to testify, is a liar.

## Notes

First published in German in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 6(4) (2000), pp. 473-47; translated by Michael Humphrey. A few pages of the documents mentioned were reproduced in the German version of this article.

<sup>1</sup> Rögner had been encouraged to do this by the Comité International d’Auschwitz (Langbein) and had been supported by the Central Council of Jews in Germany and the State Museum of Auschwitz, see *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 49, 53r, 57.

<sup>2</sup> All page numbers in the text refer to: Staatsanwaltschaft beim LG Frankfurt (Main), Strafsache beim Schwurgericht Frankfurt (Main) gegen Baer und Andere wegen Mordes, ref. 4 Js 444/59, vol. I.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. the summary by Manfred Köhler, “The Value of Testimony and Confessions Concerning the Holocaust”, in E. Gauss (ed.), *Dissecting the Holocaust*, Theses and Dissertations Press, Capshaw, AL, pp. 85-132.

<sup>4</sup> Rögner mentions also that witnesses testifying at allied trials were prohibited to say anything exonerating about the defendants until Feb. 7, 1947, p. 54.

<sup>5</sup> The most reliable source for this is probably Paul Rassiniere, *Die Lüge des Odysseus sein*, K.-H. Priester, Wiesbaden 1959.

<sup>6</sup> E.g.: Bruno Baum, *Widerstand in Auschwitz*, Kongress-Verlag, Berlin 1957; unpublished works of Langbein in the Documentation Center of the Austrian Resistance (Dokumentationsarchiv des Österreichischen Widerstandes, DÖW), Vienna: unpublished manuscript of B. Baum, “Bericht über die Tätigkeit der KP im Konzentrationslager Auschwitz” from June 1945; B. Baum “Wir funken aus der Hölle” in *Deutsche Volkszeitung - Zentralorgan der KPD*, Berlin 31.7.1945.

<sup>7</sup> Ota Kraus, Erich Schön-Kulka, *Továrna na Smrt*, Cin, Prague 1946, pp. 121f.

<sup>8</sup> Authors of the famous War Refugee Board Report, see “German Extermination Camps - Auschwitz and Birkenau” in David P. Wyman (ed.), *America and the Holocaust*, Vol. 12, Garland, New York/London 1990. Cf. also R. Vrba, *I Cannot Forgive*, Bantam Books, Toronto 1964.

<sup>9</sup> Filip Müller, *Sonderbehandlung*, Steinhausen, 1979.

<sup>10</sup> *Hefte von Auschwitz*, special issue 1, “Handschriften von Mitgliedern des Sonderkommandos”, State Museum Auschwitz, 1972, pp. 42ff.

<sup>11</sup> Ella Lingens, *Eine Frau im Konzentrationslager*, Europa Verl., Wien-Frankfurt-Zürich 1966; H. G. Adler, H. Langbein, E. Lingens-Reiner (ed.), *Auschwitz*, 3<sup>rd</sup> ed., Europäische Verlagsanstalt, Köln, 1984.

<sup>12</sup> He was director of the Auschwitz Museum until the collapse of the Soviet Union; see Bruno Baum, *Widerstand in Auschwitz*, Kongress-Verlag, East Berlin 1957, chapter “Erfolg der Propaganda”, p. 97; cf. Kazimierz Smolen, *Auschwitz 1940 - 1945*, State Museum, Auschwitz 1961.

<sup>13</sup> “Wir funken aus der Hölle”, *Deutsche Volkszeitung* July 31, 1945.

<sup>14</sup> Bruno Baum, *Widerstand in Auschwitz*, *op. cit.* (note 12), 1949, p. 34.

<sup>15</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 35.

<sup>16</sup> F.H. Hinsley, *British Intelligence in the Second World War*, Her Majesty’s Stationary Office, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed., London 1990, Vol. 2, p. 673.



# Letters to the Editor

**About R. Countess, “Why the USA Wages War in the Gulf Region,” *TR* 1(1) (2003), pp. 109-111.**

To the Editor:

Dr. Countess is to be congratulated for writing a fine review of this book, and for bringing to your readership’s attention the role played by ‘Oil Concerns’ in bringing the US into the Gulf War of 1991. And of course, *The Revisionist* is to be commended for their willingness to explore all sides of this issue.

However, we must always remain aware of the demonstrable role that Jewish-Zionist interests played in driving America into this war. It is common knowledge that the ardently pro-Israeli, Jewish Congressman Stephen Solarz helped form a pro-war pressure group, the Committee for Peace and Security in the Gulf. That Jewish-Zionist interests—and not ‘Oil interests’—were the driving force behind his pro-war behavior, was revealed by a comment that he made on January 17, 1991, at Georgetown University, one day after US air strikes against Iraqi targets began:

*“Enough Jews have been gassed in our century. For that reason alone our [military] strike last night was justified.”*

At the 85th Annual Dinner of the American Jewish Committee, he again admitted that the “overwhelming thought of the six million Jews killed in the Holocaust” was the ideological driving force behind his pro-war activism. Clearly, he cared little for ‘Oil interests.’

The American-Israel Public Affairs Committee (AIPAC)—an organization whose primary purpose is to work for Zionist and Israeli interests—is one of the most powerful of all political lobbying organizations in the United States. In a rare but quite candid *Wall Street Journal* article (p. A-12, 1/28/91), it was pointed out that AIPAC’s efforts were crucial in gaining Congressional approval for President George H. W. Bush’s war plans. But even more importantly, the article revealed this immensely powerful Zionist organization worked ‘behind-the-scenes’ and consciously disguised its efforts to garner Congressional approval for the war. Once again, one cannot say that ‘Oil interests’ were their main concern.

Sometime after the end of the Persian Gulf war of 1991, the former Prime Minister of Canada, Brian Mulroney, admitted his country’s reason for joining the war effort was to protect the state of Israel:

*“The ultimate ambition of Saddam Hussein was to launch an attack on Israel, which is why Canada took a stand to avoid this eventuality.”*

See *The Washington Report on Middle East Affairs*, June 1993, p. 57. Here, this official was admitting that Israeli-Zionist interests were of paramount importance.

For the interested reader, I refer them to my article (with appropriate documentation) “The Zionist Campaign for War with Iraq in Revisionist Perspective,” online available at <http://vho.org/GB/c/PG/230103.html>. In a future issue of *The Revisionist*, I will provide enough evidence that will show beyond a shadow of a doubt that Jewish-Zionist interests were

one of the main driving forces behind the US entry into both wars with Iraq.

*The Revisionist* is an outstanding publication!

Paul Grubach, USA

**About R. Faurisson, G. Rudolf, C. Mattogno, “Auschwitz: The Dwindling Death Toll,” *TR* 1(1) (2003), p. 18-37.**

## False Mistake

On page 634 of his article (*Osteuropa*, 5/2002) Meyer has given 1942 as the year of his “key document,” the Prüfer letter of September 8 (and so does van Pelt, *The Case*, p. 350), but at the same time Meyer says that this letter was written “nine weeks before Bischoff’s letter” (the one about the 4,756 corpses), but Bischoff’s letter is dated June 28, 1943 (van Pelt, *op. cit.*, p. 343, illustration).

On the other hand, I copied Meyer’s article from the internet from Irving’s website, and there Meyer’s article reads “8. September 1943.”

What is the correct year? Apparently nobody has seen this letter of the Topf company, Meyer quoted van Pelt, but why did Irving change it to 1943? Was it an error during the OCR process?

Sincerely

T.D., France

## EDITOR’S REMARK:

Both Meyer and Irving are wrong: Meyer quoted the correct date, but his calculations and interpretations are wrong, and Irving edited an error into the text so that Meyer’s statements make sense. In his contribution, C. Mattogno has emphasized Meyer’s mistake, which results in the collapse of Meyer’s way of arguing.

## Send the Holocaust into the Desert

Dear Germar!

Summarized, this is the astonishing thesis of Fritjof Meyer: The holy of holies has now moved from Leichenkeller I to the Bauernhäuser just outside Birkenau. This is great news! If only someone would write a well-documented article (or still better, a book) that the gas chambers were actually situated in a suburb of Berlin or Switzerland, or maybe on the Channel Islands. If that is too much to ask, at least Meyer’s is a move in the right direction, for obvious reasons. Gloom and doom go away!

In the future I suspect that the focus of ‘exterminationism’ will move to territories of the former USSR, concentrating almost exclusively on the shootings there. Questions related to numbers, security motives and participation by local militia will become core revisionist issues.

As the ‘Holocaust’ moves eastward, from its vivid beginnings in Dachau and Belsen to Buchenwald, to Auschwitz, to Treblinka, to Russia, one thing is certain: When it reaches Outer-Mongolia we can rest.

Dr. Costas Zaverdinos, South Africa

**About H. Pedersen, “The Hole in the Door”, TR 1(1) (2003) pp. 52-56.**

Dear Mr. Rudolf!

Attached please find the pages 352f. of the book *Erinnerungen, Gedanken und Meinungen* (memories, thoughts, and opinions) by Dr. Bernard Naunyn, which appeared in 1925 in Munich. The memories of Dr. Naunyns, a physician, are very interesting, but in this context not so much from a medical perspective, but because it gives a good insight into the situation during the second half of the 19<sup>th</sup> century in Eastern Europe. To the “hysterical sufferings” mentioned in this excerpt fits a story told by Tjudar Rudolph, who grew up in Lodz, Poland. At one point, he said, some Polish boys had put several black pigeons into a synagogue. As a result of this, the local Jews went nuts, believing that these black pigeons were evil ghosts. They carried all the equipment out of the synagogue in order to thoroughly clean it. It seems to be the oriental mentality which tends to exaggerate. This may be the background of those concentration camp stories which are even believed by those who tell them. And this is also a way to explain the Jewish nonsense

argument going like this: “It was impossible, because it happened.”

Let me now quote the interesting passage from said book:

*“A type of disease which triggered my curiosity were severe hysterical sufferings and the conditions bordering at hysteria found with children, which I called childish imagination neurosis. I reported about one such case earlier. The Jewish population in Russia offered an incredibly rich material for both symptoms. I did not get myself as deeply involved as a thorough clinical study would have required, [...] but the confrontation with these sick individuals gave me ample opportunity to treat these people with great success with the help of a psycho-therapy of my understanding, that is, the treatment of the affected person by turning off the sickening imaginations. [...] Generally, the most important thing [during the treatment] is to keep detrimental influences away from the patient, so that he can come to rest, to rest from their alleged sickness, to rest in their ‘hunt for health!’”*

With best regards

F.B., Germany

## In Brief

### Israel Threatens Human Rights Activists

With up to ten year imprisonment can be punished in Israel in the future who reports violations of human rights by Israeli authorities to the International Criminal Court (ICC) in Den Haag. Following the example of the USA, Israel does not recognize the ICC. (*Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Oct. 31, 2002).

### Israel Sends out Killers

Israeli death squads have been authorized to enter “friendly” countries and assassinate opponents in a move that raises the prospect of political killings in Western countries. Agents of the Israeli secret service Mossad have been given free rein to kill those deemed to be a threat to the Jewish state wherever they are hiding. (*Sunday Times*, 1/19/03)

### Skull an Outlawed Sign in Germany

Displaying a skull in Germany has been declared illegal by the German legal system, if done by individuals with right-wing views. A German who had used a skull in an advertisement published in the newspaper *Liibischer Aufklärer* was sentenced to a fine of 2,500 € (\$2,750) for displaying symbols “hostile to the constitution” (District Court Lübeck; ref. 2 Ns Kl. 13/01).

### Filing a Criminal Complaint can be a Crime

Because he filed a criminal complaint for libel against the president of the Jewish community of Nuremberg, the German

right-wing activist Günter Deckert was sentenced to pay a fine of 3,750 € (\$4,000) by the County Court Weinheim. According to the court’s view, the following words in Deckert’s criminal complaint are illegal:

*“I do not even allow Jews to call me a criminal. What his racial and religious comrades commit against the Arabs in Palestine for many years now is a crime.”*

In recent years, Deckert had been sentenced several times to a total of more than five years imprisonment for his revisionist views and comments about Jews similar to the one quoted here.

### Taxi Driver Sentenced for Distributing Brochures

For distributing the revisionist brochures *Holocaust and Revisionism* and *66 Questions and Answers*, Denise Patricia Doyle was sentenced to a fine of 900€ (\$1,000) by the County Court Stuttgart.

### Disciplinary Investigation Against Expert Witness

Since 2000, many German right-wing individuals and organizations faced a wave of cancellations of their bank accounts, initiated by lobby groups trying to destroy the livelihood of everything deemed politically on the right. In the wake of these cancellations, the German Governmental Director J. S. wrote an expert report about the illegality of canceling bank account contracts for political reasons. As a consequence, his employer, the German authorities, have now initiated a disciplinary investigation against him with the goal to dismiss him, which indicates that even the German authorities support the

destruction of the livelihood of everybody and everything not being leftist. (*Das Freie Forum*, July-Sept. 2002)

### House Search at Radio Islam

The apartment of the worldwide largest Islamic-revisionist website [www.radioislam.org](http://www.radioislam.org), located in Stockholm, Sweden, was raided by eight police officers at 4:30 pm on Sept. 7, 2002. All computer equipment and documents were confiscated. Sweden's Minister of Justice Thomas Bodstrom declared that this was done in order to end Rami's anti-Jewish and revisionist Internet activities and to throw him in jail for four years.

### Arab Revisionist Arrested

Ibrahim Alloush, Revisionist, Palestinian freedom fighter, and president of the [FreeArabVoice.org](http://FreeArabVoice.org), was arrested on March 24, 2003, in his home in Amman. This arrest was part of a massive clamp-down of the Jordanian authorities on the opposition movement against the US war on Iraq. Alloush was arrested because he revealed the fact that the US operates military bases in Jordan.

### Another French Encyclopedia Scandal

Because the popular French encyclopedia *Quid*, 2002 edition, also quoted an estimate by French revisionist Dr. Robert Faurisson about the number of victims of the Auschwitz camp in its list of 20 estimates (p. 594: "150,000, of which 100,000 Jews, most victims of typhus"), a storm of protest rose last year, demanding that the editor of this encyclopedia agree to delete this entry in the 2003 edition. However, while editing this edition, it was "accidentally" forgotten to remove this entry, causing another storm of protest. The entry has been deleted on the internet edition, but it was too late for a correction of the printed version ([www.quid.fr](http://www.quid.fr)).

### German Historian: Some Hitler comparisons okay

Some comparisons of today's politicians to Hitler are kosher, according to the famous German historian Prof. Dr. Ernst Nolte. Picking up on a fracas this fall when a German politician drew comparisons between President Bush and Hitler, Nolte told the German Press Agency *dpa* that it is acceptable to make such comparisons when talking about the pre-war Hitler. Nolte:

*"If one says, 'I want to compare the Hitler of 1938 with a current politician,' that is something else, because at that point Hitler was considered a 'national liberator' in many parts of the world."* (*JTA*, 1/20/03)

### New Study on Unreliability of Human Memory

Elisabeth Loftus, highly renowned Expert for false memory syndrome, has presented her most recent research results. After a suggestive interrogation about the sensorial experience of a confrontation with Bugs Bunny in Disneyland, 36% of all interviewed individuals claimed to remember this event. However, Bugs Bunny is not a Disney-character and can therefore not be found in Disneyland.

Loftus as well as Psychologist Richard McNally of Harvard University found out that the human memory can be manipulated more easily the more emotional the circumstances or the

interrogation or the actual or alleged events giving rise to memories are (sexual abuse, alien abduction, etc.). Emotional media reports can lead to deformed memories as well. (*AP*, 2/16/03).

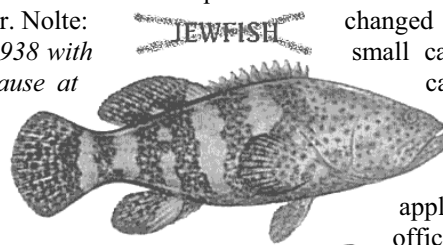
### Reporters Without Borders support Revisionism

Robert Ménard, founder and responsible person of "Reporters sans frontières" (Reporters Without Borders) as well as his wife Emmanuelle Duverger, responsible person of "Fédération internationale des ligues des droits de l'homme" (International Federation of human rights leagues), have just published a book entitled *La Censure des bien-pensants* (Censorship by the Well-Thinkers). Chapter 4 (p. 69-83) carries the title: "*Faurisson doit pouvoir s'exprimer*" (Faurisson must be allowed to express himself). Among others, the following statements can be found in it: "The revisionist are right. They are the object of a real witch hunt, victim of what really ought to be called a thought police, a suppression of the law." The authors refer to a "man hunt." They consider France's anti-revisionist law to be a "stupidity" (p. 154) and to be a "unique text unworthy of a democracy" (p. 163). They regret not to have "helped the revisionists already earlier, when they were punished under this law" (p. 82). However, both authors declare also that they consider the claims made by the revisionists "contradicts everything which is known today about the final solution" (p. 69).

On Jan. 16, 2003, during a TV discussion with M. Ménard, Arno Klarsfeld, son of the "Nazi hunter" couple Serge and Beate Klarsfeld, lost his composure and tossed the content of a glass of water into Ménard's face. At the end of this discussion, A. Klarsfeld was asked what he thought about an opinion that the State of Israel could disappear and would therefore constitute finally only a parenthesis in the history of the Jewish people. The water-throwing-man answered that, in this case, "the Jews would undoubtedly get themselves organized so as to eliminate the Holocaust deniers." ("Tout le monde en parle", France 2, broadcasted on Jan. 18, 2003)

### Jewfish Creek to be Renamed

Florida's largest grouper species was once called "Jewfish." On request of a scientist residing in Georgia, the name was changed to Goliath grouper. Now even a small canal flowing through Key Largo carrying the name "Jewfish Creek"



is bound to be renamed. Arnold G. Konheim from Washington, DC, has filed an application in this regard with the US office for geographical names. (*AP*, 11/25/02; [goliathgrouper.net](http://goliathgrouper.net))

### Polish Cardinal blames Jews for Communism

In September 1939, the small Polish town Jedwabne was occupied by the Red Army. As a result, parts of the Polish population, mainly members of the upper society, were deported to Siberia and vanished from the face of the earth.

On July 10, 1941, the German Army liberated this town from the Soviet yoke and put its own yoke on it. Shortly after

the Germans moved in, some 400 Jewish inhabitants of Jedwabne were rounded up, locked up in a barn and burned alive, an event which was brought back into public memory by the 1999 book *Neighbors* by Jan Gross. As a result, an investigation was started, and ever since the blame game is going on. Jewish groups claim that the Christian Poles were the perpetrators without any German contribution. Of course, nationalistic Poles do not like that, and so for instance, catholic priest Edward Orłowski claims:

*"It's the Germans who put the Jews to death."*

He also claimed to have proof the real killers were a German unit commanded by a Jewish General in German uniform. While attending a Mass to honor the Jedwabne Jews, Poland's Catholic Church leader Cardinal Josef Glemp asked Poland's surviving Jews to apologize for having brought Communism to Poland. (*The New York Times*, 2/8/03)

### Swiss Police Attack Anti-War Protesting Children

On March 20, 2003, hundreds of Swiss school children demonstrating peacefully against the US war against Iraq have been fired upon by riot police outside the US Mission in Geneva. The attack, witnessed by workers from the nearby World Health Organization, was unprovoked. The police were tear gassing innocent children. There were no adults among them.

([www.scoop.co.nz/mason/stories/HL0303/S00174.htm](http://www.scoop.co.nz/mason/stories/HL0303/S00174.htm))

### US Journalist Sacked for Unwillingness to be a Parrot

NBC fired veteran reporter Peter Arnett on March 31, 2003, because he had given the Iraqi TV an interview in which he stated that the American-led coalition's initial plan for the war had failed because of Iraq's resistance. He also explained that his reporting about civil casualties and the general destruction supports the rising resistance of the US population against this war. Arnett's statements were considered detrimental to the coalition's war efforts. In the meantime, Arnett was hired by the British tabloid *Daily Mirror* to report about the war.

([www.townhall.com/columnists/monacharen/mc20030401.shtml](http://www.townhall.com/columnists/monacharen/mc20030401.shtml);  
[www.ftd.de/tm/me/1048931531355.html?nv=cpm](http://www.ftd.de/tm/me/1048931531355.html?nv=cpm))

### EU Officials Bugged—by US?

Telephone lines in the Justus Lipsius building in Brussels, a regular meeting

place for EU ministers, have been bugged, which caused an outrage in the EU member nations. This building houses the secretariat of the EU Council of Ministers, and it was also the place where the EU's foreign ministers met during the week just prior to the war. This bugging operation was first reported by France's newspaper *Le Figaro*, blaming the US for this, because the US administration distrusts many EU nations due to their attitude against the war on Iraq.

(<http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/europe/2864063.stm>)

Updated: April 3, 2002



### Cremated Doughboys

**Rotten.com:** Because the picture to the left reminds certain Jews of the Holocaust, they demanded that the website rotten.com remove it. Suddenly anything that reminds Jews of the Holocaust, even things that have nothing to do with it, verboten?

WEST REGION



April 4, 2000

Rotten.com  
P.O. Box 4436  
Mountain View, CA 94040

Dear Sir or Madam:

I am writing to you on behalf of the Anti-Defamation League (ADL) regarding your website, "Rotten.com." We have recently received complaints from visitors to the site who felt that the depictions of the "Doughboy Massacre" invoked upsetting memories of the Holocaust. The picture of the skeletal "Doughboy" figures reminded people of those who died in concentration camps.

As you may know, the Anti-Defamation League is the world's leading organization combating prejudice, bigotry and anti-Semitism through its programs and services that promote tolerance and diversity.

While we respect your right to webcast the material that you choose, we hope that you can also be aware of your diverse audience, especially in this sensitive situation.

We understand that this may have been unintentional and I thank you for your consideration. I would be interested in discussing the matter with you further. You can reach me at [REDACTED] ext. [REDACTED].

Sincerely,

*Amy Levy*  
Amy Levy  
Associate Director

# The Revisionist

## Journal for Critical Historical Inquiry

Volume 1 • Number 3 • August 2003

### Israel, Stop Killing Peace



**Rachel Corrie, 1979-2003**

Rachel, a nonviolent peace activist, was killed when an Israeli soldier bulldozed her. She was trying to stop the demolition of a physician's family home in Palestine.

If Americans Knew ~ 510-655-6384 ~ ifamericansknew@yahoo.com ~ 3284-B Adeline St., Berkeley, CA 94703

9/11: Arab or Government Terror?

Ghost Riders in the Sky, p. 248

Cell Phones in Airliners, p. 271

On the Inept U.S. Air Defense, p. 273

The War on Iraq Reviewed:

A War Conceived in Israel, p. 285

The Revisionist Method Applied, p. 299

Why the US rejects the ICC:

War Crimes Made in USA, p. 301

◀ How Israel Murders Peace:

Murder of Rachel Corrie, pp. 308-312

Foreign Workers in the 3rd Reich:

A Different Facet of Reality, p. 312

Partisan Warfare during WWII:

Reprisal, Excess, Propaganda, p. 321

Gypsies at Auschwitz:

Were they gassed?, p. 330

Raul Hilberg's Incurable Autism:

Ignoring 20 Years of Research, p. 344



# The Revisionist • Journal for Critical Historical Inquiry

Publisher: Castle Hill Publishers, PO Box 257768, Chicago IL 60625, USA; [chp@vho.org](mailto:chp@vho.org)  
PO Box 118, Hastings, TN34 3ZQ, UK

Established: in Fall 2002, first edition in February 2003

Chief Editor: Germar Rudolf; [tr@vho.org](mailto:tr@vho.org)

Foreign Language Editor: Jürgen Graf

News & Civil Rights Editor: Dr. Fredrick Töben; [news@vho.org](mailto:news@vho.org)

Reviews: [reviews@vho.org](mailto:reviews@vho.org)

Copy Editor: Andrew Fuetterer; [proof@vho.org](mailto:proof@vho.org)

Customer Care, Subscriptions, Orders: [chporder@vho.org](mailto:chporder@vho.org)

Fax: USA: ++1(413) 778-5749; UK: ++44(8701) 387263 (faxes to both numbers reach us immediately by email)

Internet: <http://www.vho.org/tr>

Advertisements: price list from Jan. 1, 2003; please ask us for our Media Data ([www.vho.org/tr/MediaData.pdf](http://www.vho.org/tr/MediaData.pdf)).

ISSN: 1542-376X

Publication Dates: quarterly: February, May, August, November; each issue currently has some 120 pages, perfect bound.

Subscriptions (including shipping and handling):

- Normal: \$55 (3 years: \$150).
- Students: \$38 (3 years: \$96) (please send photocopy of ID).
- Supporter: \$100 (3 years: \$270).
- Free: donators with a yearly donation volume  $\geq$ \$55 receive *The Revisionist* for free for one year, but are then asked to convert this into a normal subscription.

Single Issues: \$15\*

Trial Issues: free. Just ask us for one!\*\*

Promotion Copies: We can send you free promotion copies as well as promotional material for *The Revisionist* on request. Please get in touch with us.

Shipping: *The Revisionist* is currently printed in, and shipped from, the UK; all subscription prices include airmail delivery worldwide. Single issues come with a shipping fee.\*

Payment terms: 60 days net.

- cash: preferably US\$; we can also accept € and GB£.
- checks: make payable to Castle Hill Publishers
  - in US\$ only if drawn on a Canadian or U.S. bank!

- in GB£ only if drawn on a British bank!
- in € only if drawn on a bank within the European Currency Union.

– online with credit card: [www.vho.org/chp](http://www.vho.org/chp).

– transfer: please contact us for our bank accounts in Germany, the UK, and the U.S.A.

Cancellation: 3 months before the end of your current subscription, otherwise the subscription will renew automatically for another (3) year(s).

Copyrights: Reprint of published articles only with written permission. All rights reserved.

Royalties: We pay scholars suffering persecution a royalty for contributions published in our periodical. This seems to be the most appropriate way to help them.

Support: Should you consider our work valuable, we cordially ask you to support us according to your possibilities, be it by subscribing to our periodical, by donating subscriptions to others, by hiring new (potential) subscribers, by volunteering for our editorial efforts (proof-reading, translations, marketing), or even by donating funds. Any financial surplus will flow 100% into researching important historical topics.

## Requirements for the Publication of Articles in *The Revisionist*

### Requirements of Content:

Topics: History, especially modern history; also freedom of speech and freedom of science. If possible, new and hitherto unpublished reports, overviews, and research papers;

Style: Systematic structure; objective; backing up of factual statements with references; separation of opinion from factual statements.

External Requirements: For understandable reasons, we will also publish articles written under a pen name, which will, of course, be treated as highly confidential. Contributions sent in anonymously, which are also welcome, can only be published if their content is ready for print.

There is no restriction regarding the length of contributions. However, contributions which exceed 10 pages of our journal (some 50,000 characters or 9,000 words), may be split in several parts and published in consecutive issues. In such cases, the structuring of articles should allow such a partition.

Articles of two pages and more should include illustrations to break up the text (covers of works dealt with, document facsimiles, portraits of personalities and authors, pictures of historical events, maps, etc.).

Procedure: Except for articles sent in anonymously, proofs of all

articles considered for publications will be sent to the authors; no right for publication arises from this. The editors reserve their right to determine in which issue such articles will be published. Royalties are paid only in case the author(s) suffer under social and/or legal persecution for expressing her/his opinions. Authors receive only one proof copy. If expressively wished, we can send up to five proof copies.

Data: We prefer to receive contributions per email. We can process various data carriers (PC, 3.5"/1.44MB, and ZIP/100 or 250 MB, CD ROM). The file formats of all major type-setting and DTP programs can be read; for reasons of portability, file formats of \*.rtf (Rich Text Format), \*.html (HyperTextMarkupLanguage, *i.e.*, Internet files) and MS-Word files are preferred. Please do not send manuscripts by fax, as this renders optical character recognition almost impossible. Images can be sent in all usual data formats (\*.gif, \*.jpg, \*.png, \*.tif...) and also as hard copies.

3.5" floppy disks as well as unsolicited manuscripts will not be sent back; solicited manuscript as well as image hard copy only if expressively desired.

*Should you agree to these conditions,  
we are looking forward to receiving your papers.*

\* plus a shipping fee of \$1.- for each started \$12.50 of your entire order, if your order is not paid in advance. / \*\* Only one copy for each new customer

# Contents

<b>George Bush versus Revisionism</b> .....	<b>244</b>
<i>By Richard A. Widmann</i>	
<b>Revisionist Notebook</b> .....	<b>245</b>
<i>By Bradley Smith</i>	
<b>9/11: Terror Attack or Government Fraud?</b>	
<i>Ghost Riders in the Sky · An Alternative 9-11 Scenario, by Prof. Dr. Alexander K. Dewdney.....</i>	
	<i>248</i>
<i>Cell Phone Experiments in Airliners, by Germar Rudolf.....</i>	
	<i>271</i>
<i>Stand Down · Was 9/11 Lack of Air Defense Deliberate?, by Mark Elsis.....</i>	
	<i>273</i>
<b>The War on Iraq: Conceived in Israel</b> .....	<b>285</b>
<i>By Stephen J. Sniegoski</i>	
<b>The Revisionist Method Applied to the History of World War III</b> .....	<b>299</b>
<i>By Robert Faurisson</i>	
<b>Why the United States Reject the International Criminal Court</b> .....	<b>301</b>
<i>By Dr. Dieter Bartling</i>	
<b>How Israel Murders Peace</b>	
<i>Israeli Bulldozer Driver Murders American Peace Activist, by Nigel Parry and Arjan El Fassed.....</i>	
	<i>308</i>
<i>Eulogy to Rachel, by Colonel Maguire.....</i>	
	<i>310</i>
<i>How German and American Money is Spent in Israel, by German Rudolf.....</i>	
	<i>311</i>
<b>Foreign Workers in the Third Reich</b> .....	<b>312</b>
<i>By OSTR Hans-Jürgen Witzsch</i>	
<b>Partisan War and Reprisal Killings</b> .....	<b>321</b>
<i>By Dipl.-Chem. Germar Rudolf and Sibylle Schröder</i>	
<b>The “Gassing” of Gypsies in Auschwitz on August 2, 1944</b> .....	<b>330</b>
<i>By Carlo Mattogno</i>	
<b>A Case Study of Holocaust Revisionism and the Mass Media</b> .....	<b>332</b>
<i>By Paul Grubach</i>	
<b>Against the Revisionists, Argumentation <i>ad hominem</i></b> .....	<b>336</b>
<i>By Dr. Robert Faurisson</i>	
<b>Book Reviews</b>	
<i>Battlefield Patriotism, by Scott L. Smith.....</i>	
	<i>339</i>
<i>“Genocide” by Shovel and Sewing Machine, by Scott L. Smith.....</i>	
	<i>340</i>
<i>Gestapo USA, by Germar Rudolf.....</i>	
	<i>342</i>
<i>Indelible Shadows: Film and the Holocaust, by Francis Dixon.....</i>	
	<i>343</i>
<i>Raul Hilberg’s Incurable Autism, by Jürgen Graf.....</i>	
	<i>344</i>
<i>Book Notices, by Francis Dixon.....</i>	
	<i>351</i>
<b>Research News</b>	
<i>From the Records of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, Part 3, by Germar Rudolf.....</i>	
	<i>352</i>
<b>Letters to the Editor</b> .....	<b>358</b>
<b>In Brief</b> .....	<b>359</b>

# George Bush versus Revisionism

By Richard A. Widmann

On Monday, June 16, 2003 news headlines across the United States announced the latest target of President George W. Bush's wrath—Revisionist historians. Strangely as Bush was shifting his focus from al Qaeda and Iraq to Iran, he decided to take a shot at Revisionists. One headline screamed, "Bush Blasts 'Revisionist Historians' on Iraq."<sup>1</sup> Harry Barnes, the early pioneer of Revisionism once noted that to anti-Revisionists, "the term [Revisionism] savors of malice, vindictiveness, and an unholy desire to smear the saviors of mankind."<sup>2</sup> Surely Bush had positioned himself not only as an "anti-Revisionist" but also as a "savior of mankind" for his recent maneuvers in Iraq.

For the sake of this article, I am not interested in Bush's motivations nor am I interested in the case that criticizes Bush's intentions. I am interested only in the attack on Revisionism itself. Bush's attack suggests incorrectly an attribute of falsification to Revisionism. It is critical to understand that Revisionism is not vindictive and neither does it falsify history. It's been said that all good history by necessity is Revisionist history. Revisionists have never sought to falsify history. They do seek however to rehabilitate the truth and to discover the underlying causes of wars.

Bush took his shot at Revisionists in response to those who have expressed doubt about the official justification for the war in Iraq. In a speech given to a group of New Jersey business leaders, Bush lashed out:<sup>3</sup>

*"Now there are some who would like to rewrite history: revisionist historians is what I like to call them."*

Showing that Bush really did take issue with Revisionists, he made similar remarks one day later while speaking at a community college in a Washington suburb:<sup>4</sup>

*"I know there's a lot of revisionist history going on. But he [Saddam Hussein] is no longer a threat to the free world."*

Reporters seeking clarification asked Bush spokesman Ari Fleischer what Bush meant by "revisionist history." Fleischer responded:<sup>5</sup>

*"The notion that Saddam Hussein did not have weapons of mass destruction before the war."*

Fleischer's definition however proves less than satisfactory. To best understand what this recent flap is all about, it is best to return to Harry Elmer Barnes. Barnes defined "Revisionism" as follows:<sup>6</sup>

*"Revisionism means nothing more or less than the effort to correct the historical record in the light of a more complete collection of historical facts, a more calm political atmosphere, and a more objective attitude."*

Revisionists understand that history is often shaped by what is read during wartime but that this often bears little resemblance to reality. In wartime, emotions and propaganda often prevent us from getting a clear picture of the actual events—never mind the causes and motivations for such events.

Bush's comment, "I know there's a lot of revisionist history going on. But he [Saddam Hussein] is no longer a threat to the

free world" is disingenuous. Although Bush is correct in his latter point about Hussein, this in no way proves Bush's implication. Bush had made the accusation that Hussein needed to be removed from power because he was developing a program of weapons of mass-destruction (WMD's). If this was the reason, and it can be shown that no WMD's in fact existed, then the war itself would be unjustified.

In the days leading up to the war, the propaganda being issued from the White House was unfocused and apparently seeking to find the note that would resonate best with the American people. We heard of Hussein's brutality against his own people; we heard of the WMD's; we heard of links to al Qaeda and international terrorism. Ultimately however, it was the vaguely defined WMD program which won the day with references to the 1988 gassing of Kurds.<sup>7</sup> By extension, post 9-11 Americans drew frightening images of themselves being gassed and of course stirred their collective memory of the fantastic legends of Nazi gassings during the Second World War. Hussein had been positioned as a modern day "Hitler." This "Hitler" was not the Hitler of history but the Hitler of popular legend and myth. This was Hitler with the devil's pitchfork in hand.<sup>8</sup>

The world may well be a safer place with Saddam Hussein out of power. The administration's inept propaganda and lack of proof that Iraq had WMD's however is worthy of analysis by historians. Perhaps Iraq did have such weapons and they are simply well hidden in the desert. Perhaps Iraq did not possess the weapons but Bush truly believed they did—a consideration with its own frightening conclusions. Or perhaps the entire story was a fabrication developed for public consumption.<sup>9</sup>

The truth regarding these events and the motivations to unleash American might against Iraq will one day be written. It may take years for documents to be declassified, but at that time it will be known what caused this latest destruction of human life. Make no mistake about it, when that day comes, the books that will be written, will be written by Revisionist historians. History will once again be set into accord with the facts. This is something that can only be done by rewriting the official tales spun by politicians and their spokesmen. Revisionism has always served this role. Only through knowledge of the facts concerning international relations and the causes for war can we truly bolster our hope for prosperity, security and peace in the years ahead. Bush is wrong to think that Revisionists are out to smear him; they are just doing what they've always done, discrediting lies and myths that form a barrier to peace and goodwill among nations.

## Notes

<sup>1</sup> Randall Mikkelsen, "Bush Blasts 'Revisionist historians' on Iraq," Yahoo! News, June 16, 2003; [http://story.news.yahoo.com/news?tmpl=story&u=nm/20030616/ts\\_nm/iraq\\_usa\\_bush\\_dc\\_7](http://story.news.yahoo.com/news?tmpl=story&u=nm/20030616/ts_nm/iraq_usa_bush_dc_7)

<sup>2</sup> Harry Elmer Barnes, "Revisionism and the Promotion of Peace", in: Barnes Against the Blackout: Essays Against Interventionism, Institute for historical review, Costa Mesa, California, 1991, p. 273.



- <sup>3</sup> Mikkelsen.
- <sup>4</sup> Scott Lindlaw, "Bush Again Defends Rationale for Iraq War," Yahoo! News, June 17, 2003; [http://story.news.yahoo.com/news?tmpl=story&u=/ap/20030617/ap\\_on\\_go\\_pr\\_wh/bush\\_59](http://story.news.yahoo.com/news?tmpl=story&u=/ap/20030617/ap_on_go_pr_wh/bush_59)
- <sup>5</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>6</sup> Barnes, p. 273.
- <sup>7</sup> The charge of Hussein's gassing of the Kurdish people is unproven. In fact this charge is very controversial. It has even been suggested that Iran in fact gassed the Kurds and not Iraq. For additional information see: <http://www.informationclearinghouse.info/article1779.htm>
- <sup>8</sup> There were many such articles and letters written comparing Saddam Hus-

sein to Adolf Hitler. This became a popular sentiment. A few of these include: "Hitler and Hussein and the Lesson of History," [http://www.mikehersh.com/Hitler\\_Hussein\\_and\\_History.shtml](http://www.mikehersh.com/Hitler_Hussein_and_History.shtml) and "Of Hitler and Hussein," <http://stacks.msnbc.com/news/919790.asp> and "Saddam Hussein - could he be another Adolf Hitler?" <http://www.stp.uh.edu/vol63/89/OpEd2/8921198/8921198.html>

<sup>9</sup> On the issue of Weapons of Mass Destruction, it is now acknowledged that even Colin Powell had serious doubts about Iraq's weapons claims. See "Straw, Powell had serious doubts over their Iraqi weapons claims: Secret Transcript revealed." <http://www.guardian.co.uk/Iraq/Story/0,2763,967548,00.html>

## Revisionist Notebook

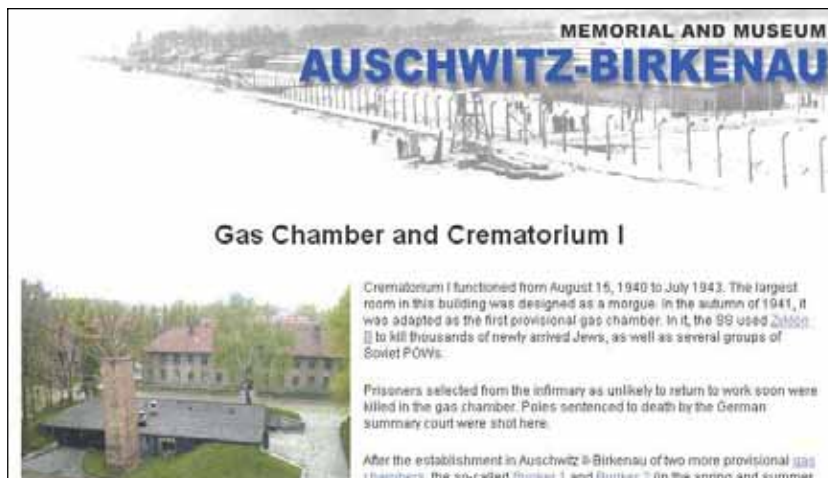
By Bradley Smith

### Boneheads at Auschwitz Museum Admit to Faking "Original State" of Auschwitz Gas Chamber.

For the best part of half a century the official guides who work at the Auschwitz Museum have told visitors from around the world that the "gas chamber" at Auschwitz I is in its "original state." That's the one everyone visits. No telling how many people—millions?—have heard this from the official tour guides. Tens of millions all over the earth have read, or been told, that Auschwitz I is in its "original" state. We have a couple of those people on a 1994 video tape telling a group of visitors exactly that—in English.<sup>1</sup> God only knows what they were saying in Polish.

Revisionists pointed out some thirty years ago, and have repeated it endlessly, that the claim is, well, a demonstrable lie. It is a lie that is so easy to demonstrate that one would think only the stupid, or those committed to the demonization of Germans, would attempt to propagate it. I suspect it is the latter. The people who run the Museum, and who support it, find that there is nothing they are unwilling to say, or do, to forward the charge of unique German monstrosity.

Now, without fanfare, the Auschwitz Museum has added a little note to its spiel about the phony "gas chamber" at Auschwitz I on its Web site:<sup>2</sup>



The official Auschwitz Website<sup>2</sup>

*"After the war, the Museum carried out a partial reconstruction. The chimney and two incinerators were rebuilt using original components, as were several of the openings in the gas chamber roof."*

One more detail to the unraveling of the Auschwitz story. Until a few years ago we were told, and told again and again, that the German monsters at Auschwitz had murdered "four million" Jews. This story was so incredibly stupid that even the boneheads at the Museum decided it would be better to abandon it. The press in America and Europe showed every sign of being willing to go on for another half century to repeat the four-million figure, but they were deprived of that pleasure by the growing shame that those who had promoted the story for so long must have felt, knowing that it was a lie. Not a "falsehood." A lie.

Now the Auschwitz Museum boneheads tell us about "one million" Jews were killed there. As the truth would have it, we don't know how many Jews were killed at Auschwitz. It may have been a dozen or so. Maybe more. One thing appears certain. None were killed in "gas chambers," not one was killed as part of an organized attempt at genocide. None. Zip.

If you work for the *New York Times*, say, you bought the "four-million-exterminated-Jews-at-Auschwitz" lie from the Auschwitz boneheads for half a century. You also bought the lie about the "original state" of the Auschwitz "gas chamber" for close to half a century. I don't want to be a cause for the folks at the *Times* to get too deeply introspective over this matter. Every other paper in America followed whatever line the Auschwitz boneheads dished out to them, not just the *Times*.

I wonder what the Elie Wiesels will have to say about this little, but very telling, story. They must be slapping their foreheads over this one. Still, it will take years for the significance of this new confession of personal and historical shame to leak into the press. The Elie Wiesels and their handlers know how to handle the press. First you buy it, then you program it, then you manage it. Nothing to it. The Auschwitz bonehead factor can be handled.

## Palestinian President a Holocaust Revisionist

*"An almost empty Israeli Knesset (parliament) voted Tuesday to 'pursue' all Holocaust deniers, in a motion which singled out the new Palestinian prime minister Mahmud Abbas. The late-night motion, brought by the far-right National Union party, was passed by 13 votes to five in the 120-seat Knesset, president of the parliamentary law commission Michael Eytan said on public television.*

*He stressed that the vote has no binding effect in law.*

*Abbas once wrote a doctoral thesis at the university of Moscow on the theme of 'the secret ties between Nazism and Zionism' in which he denied that the Nazi Holocaust had cost the lives of six million Jews, talking instead of 'less than a million'."*<sup>3</sup>

While Abbu Mazen, aka Mahmud Abbas, the new Palestinian prime minister, is a Holocaust revisionist, the left is not attacking him as a "hater." That's how thought works. The seamless integration of the homely with the significant. It's so liquid that it's difficult to notice. Politicos and intellectuals, the gurus, make it a practice to not notice. I have discovered only recently that J. Krishnamurti, one of my highly principled heroes, was screwing his best friend's wife and covering it up. His whole high-falutin circle helped in the cover-up. What were they *thinking*? Imagine if we were able to observe what really goes on in the minds of the powerful, the influential, our role models. The world would turn upside down.

Many on the left argue for the "human rights" of Palestinians and against Israeli occupation of Palestine. All those on the left argue against intellectual freedom for Holocaust revisionists, as if wanting to be free to say what you think is not a "human" right. At the same time, to forward its cracked political agenda of human "rights," the left has nothing to say about Abu Marzun's Holocaust revisionism. If you're a widely known Palestinian, you can argue that something is very wrong with the Holocaust story. If you're an ordinary American—or, even worse, if you are an ordinary European—you risk everything when you mention it. The politics of the left.

## America's Most Wanted Criminal Caught after 5 Years

Eric Rudolph, the fellow arrested in North Carolina on suspicion of being responsible for four bombings, including the attack at the 1996 Olympics in Atlanta, wrote a paper when he was in junior high school claiming that the "Holocaust never happened."<sup>4</sup> Maybe at that youthful age he was still interested in intellectual issues, and had not yet decided to just kill the people who he believed were doing something wrong (I know—he's innocent until proved guilty).

In addition to Holocaust denial, Rudolph has been associated with Christian Identity people, a sect based on an imaginative reading of Christian sacred texts. Because there is no end to human variation, there is no end to the interpretation of sacred texts, and no end to people who might take such interpretations to heart. Christian Identity people circulate in revisionist circles. Nice guys and gals for the most part. They can tell you in detail about how the historical migrations of the Israelites led them to the British Isles where they became Englishmen.

Identity people don't trust Jews, don't often like them, and for the most part wish them ill. This is a perfectly rational atti-

tude if you believe what they believe about the Bible, the serpent, Cain, and the rest of that Jewish story. It's in the same ballpark as the idea some Jews have about how 3,000 years ago Cain's father gave them some dirt in the Middle East to keep forever and ever.

Those of us who believe that revisionism can, and should, play an important role in American culture would do well to distinguish revisionist theory itself from those who are drawn to it out of interests that are eccentric at best and far too ambitious. Their ambition is no less dangerous than that of those who nurture and exploit the taboo that protects the Holocaust story from disinterested examination.

Those who would dismiss revisionist theory because some exploit it for their own purposes should keep in mind that it is not the Christian Identity people, for example, who do the killing for us. It's Republicans and Democrats. Always. Not the "haters," but Democrats and Republicans—good folk all.

## Brainwashing and Brain-Cleaning

A reader in New Jersey writes that his interest in revisionism has been reawakened upon discovering that his daughter is being force-fed Holocaust "tripe" in her eighth-grade public school class. It culminated with mandatory attendance at a showing of Spielberg's shoddy movie *Schindler's List*, which in turn is based on a cheap Australian novel. He writes:

*"Failure to watch the thing would result in all sorts of punishment assignments including papers and what have you. So after using five class periods to watch Schindler, they had two periods where teachers crammed more Holocaust 'facts' at them. That was after spending the day before listening to a Holocaust survivor prattle on about the 11 (eleven) million. Here are the 'facts' that the New Jersey public schools are teaching our children in the 8th grade. Eleven million—that's 6 million Jews plus 5 million others. Gas chambers. Human soap made from dead Jews. Tattoos cut off Jewish prisoners and used as artwork to decorate various buildings. And my favorite (as I am sure it would be a favorite of Samuel Crowell<sup>5</sup>)—when the victims were being gassed their adrenaline was so high that they would use their fingernails to scratch and claw words into the concrete walls of the 'gas chambers.'*

*What would the victims actually scratch into the walls while they were being gassed?*

*'I was gassed.'?*

*Well, I wanted to hold back, but it set me over the edge. I had to explain the 'Gas Chamber of Sherlock Holmes' to my daughter. Before long we were watching David Cole's interview with Dr. Franciszek Piper. At least to my own 8th grader, the nonsense is becoming obvious."*

So the State of New Jersey is exhibiting a Hollywood movie, based on a novel, to teach eighth grade students Holocaust 'history.' Who benefits from such a disingenuous exercise? Follow the struggle for cultural hegemony. Follow the money.

## Are the Gurus Irrelevant?

Watching the Fox channel this Sunday morning. After the usual discussion with Brit Hume and the other guys is finished

for the week, the California (Carpentaria) Buddhist guru comes on. Can't recall his name. About the first thing he says is: "It is not what you do, it's who you are." That's an issue that interests me for the moment and I look around in the kitchen for a pencil to make a note of it. By the time I find a pencil I'm not certain if he said what I first thought he said, or if he said: "It is not who you are but what you do."

Now that I have the pencil to hand I have a free moment, and that's about all it takes, to wonder how I can differentiate who I am from what I do? Who I am is what I do, and what I do is who I am. What's the difference? If I do something inexpressibly stupid it would be nice to be able to say: "Sure, I did that, but it wasn't me." If it wasn't me, who the hell was it?

When the devout Muslim, following his reading of the sacred texts, intentionally blows up a bus to kill the Jews riding it, he can say "Yes, I did it, but that's not really who I am. If the Jews of Israel would withdraw to this line in the sand, or that one, and leave me alone, I would do something else and be a different fellow altogether." Meanwhile, however, he's a devout Muslim who randomly kills Jews riding Israeli buses. That's what he does, that's who he is.

Same for those Jews of Israel who take land for themselves that belongs to Palestinians. They justify it by readings from their sacred texts, or from one or another political or moral perspective. Still, they remain who they are, Jews greedy for Palestinian land who continue to take it for themselves. And the irony is that the more devout they are, the greedier they are apt to be.

The American president is a devout man himself. He has his own reading of the sacred texts. I don't know what his reading is, but those who we call, and call themselves, "Christian Zionists," appear to believe that the American president understands what the correct reading of the texts should be. He may have discovered the correct reading shortly after being, as he put it, "born again."

One thing is certain in all this. If we follow the gurus—Jewish, Muslim, Christian, Buddhist or any of the rest of them—we'll keep to the path we have followed for five or ten thousand years. The path that urges an eye for an eye. The path that illustrates through deeds that might makes right; the path demonstrating that, no matter which culture you had the good fortune to be born into, your gurus are smarter and know more about God than the gurus in all other cultures, no matter how much devotion is paid to them.

It can be argued that no one has followed the path of the gurus in any culture, and that if we had we would have a different world. I reply with the obvious. After five or ten thousand years listening to the gurus, it must be obvious that they are irrelevant. More accurately—they are downright dangerous. Just consider the joy in the streets of Gaza City when Jewish civilians are intentionally murdered by devout Muslims; the cigar-smoking, self-satisfaction in Tel Aviv when the Apache gun ships successfully kill Arabs who are struggling to free their homeland of Jewish conquerors; the frustration in Washington to see Jews being killed along with Palestinians instead of only Palestinians.

No use going on about it. That's who we are. It's not going to change. We are all driven to hope that it will change. We want to do what we can to see that it does change. But we are

who we are, and what we do, and since being and doing is the same thing, it just doesn't look very good for us.

### NY Personality Favors Penalties for "Thought Crimes"

Rudolf Giuliani writes that the world, and particularly Europe, is experiencing a surge in anti-Semitic violence.<sup>6</sup> He notes that anti-Semitism is the oldest hatred in Western culture, and that the "Holocaust" proves it. He argues that this being the case, "Making sure [Europe's] citizens have an honest understanding of the Holocaust is vital, as revisionist viewpoints put us at risk of a repetition of race-based genocide."

Revisionist viewpoints are the viewpoint of me and some of my friends—not all my friends are revisionists, and not all revisionists are my friends. In any event, Rudolf Giuliani believes that I am one of those putting Europe, if not the whole world, at risk of experiencing a "race-based genocide."

This is just a little too stupid (a phrase I picked up from Proust and like to use), but it is the commonplace understanding of revisionism among our cultural and political elites.

At the Vienna conference Giuliani is going to recommend that Europeans track hate crimes and recognize them as "distinct" from other crimes, like murder, assault or vandalism, that such information must be analyzed and acted upon, and that special hate crimes legislation must be passed.

Giuliani doesn't mention "thought crimes." In most European countries, revisionist theory is already a "thought crime," one for which you can be ruined, or jailed, or persecuted and prosecuted year after year after year. Giuliani, being a product (as he tells us) of the ethnic diversity of Brooklyn, of New York City and Jewish culture and politics, has been taught to believe that revisionist theory about the Holocaust story can lead to genocidal mass murder, therefore it must be a "hate" crime to question the gas-chamber stories. So much for the inherent value of ethnic diversity in Brooklyn.

In Canada, Ernst Zundel has been in prison for months because he is a Holocaust revisionist. So Canada is safe for the moment. In America, Germar Rudolf, who has just published *The Rudolf Report: Expert Report on Chemical and Technical Aspects of the "Gas Chambers" of Auschwitz*,<sup>7</sup> has been sentenced to prison in Germany for thought crimes. I wonder what Giuliani would think of making it a thought crime to do a scientific chemical analysis of wall scrapings from a building in some place other than Poland?

Well, it would depend on which building, wouldn't it? For some buildings, it would be okay. Others—well, you could get four, five years in the jug if you do that and come up with the "wrong" results. It could be a "hate" crime. There are some walls, in some buildings, at some locations, where you better not analyze the chemical compounds in the walls. Because what you find there could reveal that what is supposed to be there is not there, and what is not supposed to be there is there, which would lead to a race-based genocide of—whom? Our Jewish friends? Yet one more time, eh?

Giuliani writes:

*"One of the functions of the law is to teach, to draw lines between what's permissible and what's forbidden."*

So—we had better draw a line between revisionist theories on the one hand and the orthodox theory about the Holocaust as

it is taught by the professors. We must forbid revisionist theories. We must make it impermissible for revisionists to publish the results of their work. We must forbid professors to teach it, students to study it, and the public to hear about it via media. All those things are thought crimes—or—in this culture driven by a sullied liberalism, “hate” crimes.

That’s the purpose of the Holocaust Industry. Giuliani reveals himself as a spokesman for that Industry, which specializes in censorship and the suppression of intellectual freedom of one historical question. Who benefits? You say you would like to know? Follow the money.

If you believe that the Holocaust taboo should be challenged, and that the taboo—the taboo itself—which prohibits an open debate about the U.S. alliance with Israel is wrong, please pitch in a few bucks to help me create a public context in which these shadowy taboos are uncovered to the light of day. Thanks.

## Notes

- <sup>1</sup> “David Cole Interviews Dr. Franciszek Piper, Director, Auschwitz State Museum”, VHS Video, distributed by CODOH, P.O. Box 439016, San Diego, CA 92143, USA (online: [codoh.com/cole.ra](http://codoh.com/cole.ra) (includes audio)); for the abridged text-only version, see: David Cole, “A Jewish Revisionist’s Visit to Auschwitz”, *JHR* 13(2) (1993), pp. 11-13 (online: [codoh.com/gegv/gegvcole.html](http://codoh.com/gegv/gegvcole.html) (excerpt))
- <sup>2</sup> [www.auschwitz-muzeum.oswiecim.pl/html/eng/zwiedzanie/krematorium\\_1.html](http://www.auschwitz-muzeum.oswiecim.pl/html/eng/zwiedzanie/krematorium_1.html)
- <sup>3</sup> “Knesset Votes to Pursue Holocaust Deniers, Including New Palestinian Prime Minister”, *Agence France Presse*, May 21, 2003; *Inquiry and Analysis Series*, No. 95, May 30, 2002; Mahmud Abbas, *The Other Side: The Secret Relations between Nazism and the Leadership of the Zionist Movement*, PhD dissertation, Moscow Oriental College, 1983.
- <sup>4</sup> *JTA*, June 2, 2003; cf. [www.fbi.gov/mostwanted/topten/fugitives/rudolph.htm](http://www.fbi.gov/mostwanted/topten/fugitives/rudolph.htm)
- <sup>5</sup> [www.codoh.com/incon/inconshr123.html](http://www.codoh.com/incon/inconshr123.html)
- <sup>6</sup> *New York Times*, June 17, 2003.
- <sup>7</sup> Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago 2003. The book can be order from the publisher of this magazine, see back cover.

## 9/11: Terror Attack or Government Fraud?

### On the Flourishing Conspiracy Theories Surrounding the Attacks on America

Everybody knows the official version of what happened on September 11, 2001. However, a short search of the Internet reveals that there are many individuals who disagree about this version. Some only doubt the official version that these attacks came as a complete surprise, without any prior warning allowing for any defense or precautionary measures. Others, however, go far beyond this. Was flight 93 that crashed into a field in Pennsylvania shot down by a U.S. fighter? Were the planes that flew into the WTC towers really flown by Arab terrorist, or were they flown by remote control? Did the towers collapse as a result of damage inflicted upon them by impact and fire, or were they dynamited? Did a Boeing 767 crash into the Pentagon, or was it a totally different plane, or maybe even a missile?

When it comes to 9/11, conspiracy theories go wild. After so many uncovered U.S. Government lies during the past century, the community of those willing to believe in anything, if it just contradicts what Washington tells us, is growing faster than ever. Maybe even the U.S. Secret Services have their fingers in this game of producing rumors and more or less plausible sounding theories contradicting the official version. It would help covering the truth behind a confusing smoke screen of hundreds of conflicting theories. This tactic proved very effective regarding the assassination of John F. Kennedy. The skeptic reader needs to be all the more careful when confronted with alternative theories. The following will discuss two of them, the first one of them having the advantage that every reader can check it out.

---

## Ghost Riders in the Sky · An Alternative 9-11 Scenario

*By Prof. Dr. Alexander K. Dewdney*

A cell phone works only, if its signal is picked up by a nearby relay tower and if it stays for a minimum period of time within the range of this relay tower, so that a stable connection between the phone and the tower can be established and maintained. For this reason, it has been a problem for cell phone networks to maintain a stable connection to cell phones traveling in cars at high cruising speed of 70 mph (112 km/h) and more. It is also generally acknowledged that cell phones do not work when they are miles above a network, which is why they do not work in planes cruising at high altitude.

During the tragic events of September 11, 2001, many cell phone calls where made from the hijacked airplanes to various destinations on the ground. In particular United Airlines flight 93, which finally crashed in Pennsylvania, is of interest here, because so many phone calls were made from this plane, which were all successful, despite the plane’s altitude and high cruising speed. Introduced by a series of experiments with cell phones in air planes at various heights and backed-up by testimonies from experts and laymen, the following article investigates whether or not these phone calls were technically possible, and if not, how they could be explained.

# Project Achilles

## 'Project Achilles' Report · Part One—January 23, 2003 Preliminary Low-Altitude Cell Phone Experiment

January 23, 2003; 4:35 - 5:40 pm; Civic Airport, London, Ontario, Canada

### EQUIPMENT:

*Aircraft:* Diamond DA20/C1 Katana two-seater; engine: 125 hp fiberglass/carbon fiber composite body & airframe; weight fully loaded: 1630 lbs

*Cell phones:* one Motorola model "120 CDMA" cell phone (A); two Motorola "i1000 plus" cell phones (B) (both fully charged at flight time)

The flight plan consisted of four 'laps,' elongated circuits (shaped like a paperclip) over London, Ontario, airspace. Each lap was about seven to eight miles long and two to three miles wide. Three calls were made on each of two straight legs in each lap. Calls alternated between cell phone A and cell phone B. A second i1000, intended for use at higher altitudes, slipped to the cockpit floor and could not be retrieved in those cramped quarters. A check of battery levels of the first i1000, however, showed that there had been no significant power drain on the unit.

After the third call, I decided that the cockpit was too noisy to hear the message system, so I changed my plan and called home (my wife), instead.

Calls to the business number were recorded by the message

### T1: RESULTS CELL PHONE HIGH ALTITUDE EXPERIMENT #1

#### Lap 1 @ 1,100 feet altitude:

1st leg:	A to business number	no connection?
	B to business number	1 min. complete
	A to business number	1 min. complete
2nd leg:	B to home number	no connection?
	A to home number	(broken) complete
	B to home number	complete

#### Lap 2 @ 2,100 feet altitude:

1st leg:	A to home number	no connection?
	B to home number	no voice, just a 'beep'
	A to home number	no connection?
2nd leg:	B to home number	1 min. complete
	A to home number	no voice
	B to home number	no voice

#### Lap 3 @ 3,100 feet altitude:

1st leg:	A to home number	missed making the call
	B to home number	"system busy"
	A to home number	incomplete
2nd leg:	B to home number	"please wait: CLEARNET"
	A to home number	incomplete
	B to home number	call made late, incomplete

#### Lap 4 @ 3,500 feet altitude:

	A to home number	incomplete
	B to home number	complete, but breaking up

Note: "altitude" means aboveground altitude, not height above sea level, as recorded by the altimeter.

system. Two calls made it through. Of the 17 calls to the home number, only about ten calls got through. In three of these, we had a conversation (of sorts) and the rest were just white noise. (No record of which.)

### SUMMARY

In the preliminary test, only five of the 16 (attempted) calls resulted in any meaningful voice contact. In at least two of those calls, no connection whatever could be established with cell sites below. The composition of the Diamond Katana (manufactured right here in London, Ontario) makes it almost transparent to EM radiation at radio wavelengths and the results of this experiment are therefore optimal. Aircraft with metal skins will undoubtedly fare rather worse in the percentage of calls making it through.

Altitude Range	Range in Feet	Success Rate	Success Rate
low altitude	(1,100' - 2,100')	4/12	33%
mid altitude	(3100' - 3500')	1/7	14%

### CONCLUSION

The purpose of this experiment was to probe the effect of altitude on cell phone service and to iron out wrinkles in experimental procedure. In the first instance, it looks as though there might well be a decline in service with increasing altitude. The phenomenon must now be mapped more carefully.

As far as operating procedures is concerned, it is probably best to make calls to a number you know well, to be familiar with the various status messages on each cell phone display screen, and to have someone at the other end who can log the time of the call, as well as to summarize the content. (The cockpit in most light aircraft is so noisy that one cannot always hear a voice at the other end, although I did hear my wife talking somewhat clearly on two occasions.) Also, it is important to be very organized, having a special carrier case for cell phones, writing/recording materials, etc. The airspeed of the Katana was just a little fast for me to comfortably make the calls and stay organized at the same time. Two of the calls were made rather late in the current lap, even as we began to climb out to the next one. It would be better to have a separate person operating the cell phones. We also need a meaningful call classification system to fill the gaps between complete failure and an audible conversation.

All calls were handled by the Bell Mobility Network, which has some 25 cell sites operating in the London area. I have now located all the cell sites in London, Ontario, thanks to a very helpful set of maps provided by a local cell phone aficionado: [www.arcx.com/sites/](http://www.arcx.com/sites/)  
A. K. Dewdney  
(with thanks to Corey Barrington, pilot with Empire Aviation)

## 'Project Achilles' Report · Part Two February 25, 2003

### EQUIPMENT:

*Aircraft:* Diamond Katana four-seater (Empire Aviation)

*Cell phones:* C1, C2, C3, C4 (See appendix for descriptions.)

*Personnel:* Corey Barrington (pilot); Darren Spicknell (operator - technician for Wireless Concepts, Inc); Kee Dewdney (director); Pat Dewdney (ground recorder)

*Weather:* unlimited ceiling, light scattered cloud at 3,000 and 25,000 feet, visibility 15 miles, wind 5 knots from NW, air temperature -12 C.

For this experiment, we flew a circular route, instead of the elongated oval. The circle centered on the downtown core and took us over most of the city suburbs. All locations below are referred to the city centre and are always about three miles distant from it.

PROTOCOL

At times specified by the director, the operator made a call

T2: RESULTS CELL PHONE HIGH ALTITUDE EXPERIMENT #2

Tme (pm)	Call	C#	loc.	Operator Recorder
5:05				started taxi to runway
5:12				takeoff
5:14				at 2000 feet (ab. ground altitude)
5:15	Call #1	C1	N	success not very clear
5:17	Call #2	C2	W	success not very clear
5:19	Call #3	C3	SW	failure
5:21	Call #4	C4	S	success not clear/ breaking up
5:24				climbed to 4000 feet ab. ground
5:25	Call #5	C1	NE	failure
5:26	Call #6	C2	N	success clear
5:27	Call #7	C3	NW	failure
5:29	Call #8	C4	W	failure
5:33				climbed to 6000 feet ab. ground
5:34	Call #9	C1	SE	failure
5:36	Call #10	C2	E	failure
5:37	Call #11	C3	NE	failure
5:38	Call #12	C4	N	failure
5:39	Call #13	C1	NW	failure
5:40	Call #14	C2	SW	success clear
5:42	Call #15	C3	S	failure
5:43	Call #16	C4	SE	failure
5:44	Call #17	C1	E	failure
5:45	Call #18	C2	NE	failure
5:45	Call #19	C3	NE	success breaking up
5:46	Call #20	C4	N	failure
5:49				begin climb to 8000 feet above ground (cell phones 2 and 3 only)
5:50	Call #21	C2	W	failure
5:50	Call #22	C3	SW	failure
5:51	Call #23	C2	S	success buzzy
5:53				completed climb to 8000 feet above ground
5:58	Call #24	C3	SE	failure
5:58	Call #25	C2	E	failure
5:58	Call #26	C3	E	failure
5:59	Call #27	C2	NE	failure
6:00	Call #28	C3	N	failure
6:01	Call #29	C1	N	failure
6:01	Call #30	C2	NW	failure
6:02	Call #31	C3	NW	failure
6:02	Call #32	C4	NW	failure
6:15				landed at airport

to a specified number, stating the code number of the cell phone (1 to 4) and the altitude. The receiver recorded whatever was heard and the time the call was received. At the first three altitudes of 2000, 4000, and 6000 feet above ground each cell phone was used once. At 8000 feet above ground, only C2 and C3 were tried, C1 and C4 now being *hors de combat*.

For the results with timeline see table T2.

CONCLUSIONS

To the extent that the cell phones used in this experiment represent types in general use, it may be concluded that from this particular type of aircraft, cell phones become useless very quickly with increasing altitude. In particular, two of the cell phone types, the Mike and the Nokia, became useless above 2000 feet. Of the remaining two, the Audiovox worked intermittently up to 6000 feet but failed thereafter, while the BM analog cell phone worked once just over 7000 feet but failed consistently thereafter. We therefore conclude that ordinary cell phones, digital or analog, will fail to get through at or above 8000 feet above ground.

It should be noted that several of the calls rated here as “successes” were difficult for the Recorder to hear, witness description such as “breaking up” or “buzzy.”

SUMMARY TABLE EXPERIMENT #2

altitude (in feet)	calls tried	calls successful	success
2000	4	3	75%
4000	4	1	25%
6000	12	2	17%
8000	12*	1	8%

\* includes three calls made while climbing; last successful call was made from just over 7000 feet.

The four cell phones operated via four different cellular networks (cell sites). Because calls were made from a variety of positions for each network, it cannot be said that failures were the fault of cell site placement. The London, Ontario, region is richly supplied with cell sites belonging to five separate networks.

It may be noted in passing that this experiment was also conducted in a radio-transparent aircraft with carbon-fibre composite construction. Failure to make a call from such an aircraft with any particular brand of cell phone spells automatic failure for the same cell phone from a metal-clad aircraft flying at the same altitude. A metal skin attenuates all cell phone signals to a significant degree. It may safely be concluded that the operational ceiling for cell phones in aluminum skin aircraft (most passenger liners, for example) would be significantly lower than the ones reported here.

It may therefore safely be concluded that cell phone calls from passenger aircraft are physically impossible above 8000 feet above ground and statistically unlikely below it.

CELL PHONE TYPES, NETWORKS

- C1 Motorola i95cl - Telus Mike Network - 800 Mhz IDEN
- C2 Motorola StarTac - Bell Mobility - 800 Mhz Analog

- C3 Audiovox 8300 - Telus PCS Network - 1.9 Ghz CDMA / 800 MHz
- C4 Nokia 6310i - Rogers AT&T - 1.9 Ghz GHz GSM. (Tri-Band - Has an 1.8 GHz and 900 Mhz GSM these are European frequencies)
- IDEN - Integrated Digital Enhanced Network
- CDMA - Code Division Multiple Access
- GSM - Global Systems for Mobile Communications

*Power Levels:* Power output of these handsets. The Nokia 6310i and Audiovox 8300 when in digital mode will output 0.2 Watts. When the Analog Motorola StarTac is operating it is at 0.6 Watts optimal. When and IF the Audiovox 8300 is in analog mode it will operate at 0.6 Watts (However, this is not normally the case - you will see wattage levels around 0.52 - 0.45 approximately)

*Frequency:* Both the Telus Mike (C1) and Motorola StarTac (C2) operate in the 800 MHz range. This will allow the signal to travel at a great distance. However, the IDEN (Mike) network has fewer site locations and is a newer Digital network. Most digital technologies operate on a "all or none" basis. When it has signal it will work well. As the signal fades, one hears no static, but some digital distortion just before the call drops.

*Networks:* Mike Network: Newer, all-digital network with modern antenna design, and fewer cell sites; Bell Mobility Analog: Older, analog network with less focused antenna design but many cell sites; Telus PCS: Newer, digital network with multiple frequencies, modern antenna design, and many cell sites; Rogers GSM: Our newest digital network with modern antenna design and many cell sites. (All data (courtesy of Darren Spicknell.)

A. K. Dewdney,  
February 25th 2003

### **'Project Achilles' · Final Report and Summary of Findings**

During the early months of the year 2003, the author conducted three experiments to determine whether and how well cell phones could be operated from aircraft. The first flight (Part One) was essentially a probe of the experimental situation, to acquire some primary data and to work out a simple, readily implemented protocol. The results of Part Two (Diamond Katana 4-seater) have already appeared in these pages. The results of Part Three (Cessna 172-R) appear immediately below.

Since this completes the suite of experiments, it is appropriate to summarize the findings and to draw some conclusions. The conclusions are based partly on the experiments and partly on two other sources. (See Appendix B at the end of the report.) Expert opinion and eyewitness testimony are acceptable not only in court, but in certain scientific inquiries where events are of short duration or experiments are too expensive or impossible to carry out. Of course, eyewitness accounts do not carry the same weight as expert opinions or actual experiments, but the eyewitness ac-

counts quoted below seem to be both consistent and compelling.

Disclaimer: The companies hired to assist in this experiment, namely Empire Aviation and Cellular Solutions, both of London, Ontario, Canada, acted as disinterested commercial parties, with no stake in the outcome or even knowledge of the purpose of the tests.

### EXPERIMENTS

The previous experiment, called Part Two, established a distinct trend of decreasing cell phone functionality with altitude. It was conducted in a four-seater Diamond Katana over the city of London (pop. 300,000), Ontario in Canada, an area richly supplied with some 35 cell sites distributed over an area of about 25 square miles. The flight path was an upward spiral, punctuated every 2000 feet (above ground) with a level circuit around the outskirts of the city. On each circuit a fixed number of cell phone calls were attempted by an expert operator employing a battery of well-charged phones broadly representative of those on the market both currently and in the year 2001.

(It should be remarked that not only is the cell phone technological base in Canada identical to its US counterpart, but Canadian communication technology is second to none, Canada being a world-leader in research and development.)

The purpose of Part Three was to test the effects of what might be called "Faraday attenuation" on the strength and success of calls. The presence of a metallic shell around some electronic devices can alter their behavior by its ability to attract and store electrons, especially electromagnetic waves. For this reason, the experimental craft was switched from the Katana, which is supposed to be relatively transparent to em radiation, to an aircraft with an aluminum skin, as below.

### EQUIPMENT

*Aircraft:* Cessna 172-R (2002) four-seater (Empire Aviation)

*Cell phones:* C1, C2, C3, C4, C5 (See Appendix A for descriptions.)

*Personnel:* Corey Barrington (pilot - Empire Aviation); Darren Spicknell (operator - technician for Wireless Concepts, Inc); Kee Dewdney (director); Pat Dewdney (ground recorder).

*Weather:* unlimited ceiling, light scattered cloud at 5,000,



One of the planes used to make the cell phone experiments

T3: RESULTS CELL PHONE HIGH ALTITUDE EXPERIMENT #3				
time (pm)	Call	C#	Loc.	Operator Recorder
7:05 - started taxi to runway				
7:12 - takeoff				
7:15—at 2000 feet (above-ground altitude)				
7:17	Call #1	C1	N	success clear, slight breakup
7:18	Call #2	C2	W	success clear
7:20	Call #3	C3	SW	success clear
7:22	Call #4	C4	S	success (2 tries) clear
7:23	Call #5	C5	SE	success clear
7:27 - climbed to 4000 feet above ground				
7:28	Call #6	C1	NE	success clear
7:30	Call #7	C2	N	success clear
7:31	Call #8	C3	NW	“success” (frag) no complete word
7:32	Call #9	C4	W	failure no ring
7:34	Call #10	C5	SW	success clear
7:35 - climbed to 6000 feet above ground				
7:39	Call #11	C1	SE	success clear
7:41	Call #12	C2	E	success clear
7:42	Call #13	C3	E	success clear, slight breakup
7:44	Call #14	C4	NE	failure no ring
7:44	Call #15	C5	NE	failure no ring

solid/broken 24,000 feet, visibility 12 miles, wind 11 knots from SSW, air temperature +19 C.

For this experiment, we flew the same circular route as we did in Part Two, The circle centered on the downtown core and took us over most of the city suburbs. All locations below are referred to the city centre and are always about two miles distant from it.

#### PROTOCOL

At times specified by the director, the operator made a call to a specified number, stating the code number of the cell phone (1 to 5) and the altitude. The ground recorder noted whatever was heard and the time the call was received. At the first two altitudes of 2000, 4000 above ground altitude (above ground) each cell phone was used once. At 6000 and 8000 feet above ground, each cell phone was used twice only C2, C3, and C5 were tried, C1 and C4 being hors de combat. For the results,

SUMMARY TABLE EXPERIMENT #2

altitude (feet)	calls tried	calls successful	success
2000	5	5	100%
4000	5	3	60%
6000	15	6	40%
8000	15	2	13%

7:45	Call #16	C1	N	failure no ring
7:46	Call #17	C2	N	success clear
7:47	Call #18	C3	NW	failure no ring
7:48	Call #19	C4	NW	failure no ring
7:49	Call #20	C5	W	success clear
7:50	Call #21	C1	W	failure no ring
7:51	Call #22	C2	SW	failure no ring
7:52	Call #23	C3	SW	failure no ring
7:53	Call #24	C4	S	failure no ring
7:54	Call #25	C5	S	success clear
7:55 - begin climb to 8000 feet above ground (cell phones C2, C3 and C5)				
7:55	Call #26	C2	SE	failure no ring
7:57	Call #27	C3	E	failure no ring
7:59	Call #28	C5	E	success clear, slight breakup
8:00 - completed climb to 8000 feet above ground				
8:01	Call #29	C2	NE	failure no ring
8:02	Call #30	C3	NE	failure no ring
8:03	Call #31	C5	N	failure no ring
8:04	Call #32	C2	NW	success clear
8:05	Call #33	C3	NW	failure no ring
8:07	Call #34	C5	W	failure no ring
8:20 - landed at airport				

see table T3, for the summary see the table on the bottom left.

Note: calls “tried” includes retired cell phones C1 and C4 above the altitude of 4000 feet where, in the opinion of the cell phone expert, they would have failed to get through, in any case. Failure to include them in the count would make the results at different altitudes non-comparable.

The results of this experiment may be compared to the results from Part Two where, instead of the Cessna, we used the Diamond Katana:

altitude (feet)	calls tried	calls successful	success
2000	4	3	75%
4000	4	1	25%
6000	12	2	17%
8000	20	1	5%

To make the results comparable, however, cell phone C5 was omitted from the calculations, since it was not used in the first experiment.

altitude (feet)	calls tried	calls successful	success
2000	4	3	75%
4000	4	1	25%
6000	12	2	17%
8000	12	1	8%



## Analysis

Since the (1.5 mm) skin of the Cessna appears to have made little difference to the outcome of the experiment, the data of Parts Two and Three may be combined, as follows, to produce more reliable figures for the battery of test phones that were used in the experiment:

altitude (feet)	calls tried	calls successful	percent
2000	9	8	89%
4000	9	4	44%
6000	27	8	30%
8000	35	3	9%

The data from the first three altitudes appear to fit an inverse-linear model of attenuation. In other words, the probability of a call getting through varies inversely as the altitude, according to the formula:

Probability of success =  $k/\text{altitude}$ , where  $k$  is a constant

It will be noted that the values of  $k$  implied by these data, at least up to 6000 feet above ground are remarkably consistent. However, at 8000 feet the  $k$ -value falls precipitously, implying that a different regime may be in play.

altitude (feet)	$k$ -value
2000	1780
4000	1760
6000	1800
8000	720

The expected model of attenuation with distance is of course inverse squared, a natural consequence of the three dimensions that any uniform radiation must travel through. Inverse squared attenuation follows a slightly different pattern or formula:

Probability of success =  $k/\text{altitude}^2$

To estimate  $k$ , it seems reasonable to use the data from 4000 feet and 8000 feet as benchmarks for the calculation of the constant  $k$  (not the same constant as was used in the foregoing analysis, of course.)

At 4000 feet above ground the implied  $k$ -value is 7,040,000, while at 8000 feet, the implied  $k$ -value is 5,760,000. although here again the  $k$ -value appears to drop (indicating that the actual attenuation may be worse than inverse squared), we use an average of the two estimates, following our consistent practice of always giving the benefit of the doubt to the cell phones, so to speak.

Taking an average value of  $k = 6,400,000$ , we obtain the formula,

Probability of success =  $6,400,000/\text{altitude}^2$

Using this formula, we can get a best-case estimate for the probability of cell phone success from a slow-moving light aircraft, as summarized in the following table.

altitude (feet)	probability of cell phone call getting through
4,000	0.400
8,000	0.100
12,000	0.040
16,000	0.025
20,000	0.016
24,000	0.011
28,000	0.008
32,000	0.006

Private pilots flying light aircraft are nowadays familiar with the fact that they may use their cell phones to make calls to the ground, at least if they are not higher than one or two thousand feet. Above that altitude, calls get rather iffy, sometimes working, sometimes not. The higher a pilot ascends, the less likely the call is to get through. At 8000 feet the pilot will not get through at all unless he or she happens to be using a cell phone with the same capabilities as C5 (See appendix A.) But even that cell phone begins to fail at 6000 feet.

Calls from 20,000 feet have barely a one-in-a-hundred chance of succeeding.

The results just arrived at apply only to light aircraft and are definitely optimal in the sense that cell phone calls from large, heavy-skinned, fast-moving jetliners are apt to be considerably worse.

## Conclusions

It cannot be said that the Faraday attenuation experiment (Part Three) was complete, in the sense that the operator normally held the phone to his ear, seated in a normal position. This meant that the signals from the test phones were only partially attenuated because the operator was surrounded by windows that are themselves radio-transparent.

Although we cannot say yet to what degree the heavier aluminum skin on a Boeing 700-series aircraft would affect cell phone calls made from within the aircraft, they would not be without some effect as windows take up a much smaller solid angle at the cell phone antenna. Signals have a much smaller window area to escape through, in general.

As was shown above, the chance of a typical cell phone call from cruising altitude making it to ground and engaging a cell site there is less than one in a hundred. To calculate the probability that two such calls will succeed involves elementary probability theory. The resultant probability is the product of the two probabilities, taken separately. In other words, the probability that two callers will succeed is less than one in ten thousand. In the case of a hundred such calls, even if a large majority fail, the chance of, say 13 calls getting through can only be described as infinitesimal. In operational terms, this means "impossible."

At lower altitudes the probability of connection changes from impossible to varying degrees of "unlikely." But here, a different phenomenon asserts itself, a phenomenon that cannot be tested in a propeller-driven light aircraft. At 500 miles per hour, a low-flying aircraft passes over each cell in a very short time. For example if a cell (area serviced by a given cell site) were a mile in diameter, the aircraft would be in it for one to eight seconds. Before a cell phone call can go through, the device must complete an electronic "handshake" with the cell site servicing the call. This handshake can hardly be completed in eight seconds. When the aircraft comes into the next cell, the call must be "handed off" to the new cell site. This process also absorbs seconds of time. Together, the two requirements for a successful and continuous call would appear to absorb too much time for a speaking connection to be established. Sooner or later, the call is "dropped."

This assessment is borne out by both ear-witness testimony and by expert opinion, as found in Appendix B, below. Taking

the consistency of theoretical prediction and expert opinion at face value, it seems fair to conclude that cell phone calls (at any altitude) from fast-flying aircraft are no more likely to get through than cell phone calls from high-flying slow aircraft.

A. K. Dewdney,  
February 19th 2003

A. K. Dewdney, 19th April 2003

### Disclaimer

The author has not placed his university affiliations below his name, as the research described here was not conducted with any university facilities or supported by university-administered grants. He currently holds the titles of Professor Emeritus of Computer Science and Adjunct Professor of Biology at the University of Western Ontario, as well as Professor of Computer Science at the University of Waterloo.

### Appendix A: Cell phone Types

- C1 - Motorola i95c1 - Telus Mike Network - 800 Mhz IDEN
- C2 - Motorola StarTac - Bell Mobility - 800 Mhz Analog
- C3 - Audiovox 8300 - Telus PCS Network - 1.9 Ghz CDMA / 800 MHz
- C4 - Nokia 6310i - Rogers AT&T - 1.9 Ghz GSM. (Tri-Band - Has an 1.8 GHz and 900 Mhz GSM these are European frequencies)
- C5 - Motorola Timeport 8767 - Bell Mobility - 800 MHz Analog (CDMA Tri-Mode 1.9 GHz CDMA / 800 Mhz CDMA)

### Appendix B: Letters

#### PROFESSIONAL OPINIONS

"Dear Sir

*I have yet to read the entire [Ghost Riders] article but I do have a background in telecommunications. Using a cell phone on an aircraft is next to impossible. The reasons are very detailed, but basically the aircraft would run major interference, as well as the towers that carry the signal would have a difficult time sending and receiving due to the speed of the aircraft. As well, calling an operator? Well that is basically impossible.*

*Having worked for both a major Canadian and American provider I had to instruct my staff that operator assistance is not an option. Have you ever tried to use a cell phone in some public buildings? Impossible. There are too many spots that service is voided. Just a tidbit of information to share.*

Megan Conley <megan\_conley@hotmail.com> "

"Hi,

*I am an RF design engineer, having built out Sprint, Verizon and another network in New Orleans. You are absolutely correct. We have trouble making these things work for cars going 55 mph on the ground. If you need another engineer's testimony for any reason, let me know I will corroborate. My engineering site:*

*[http://www.geocities.com/rf\\_man\\_cdma/](http://www.geocities.com/rf_man_cdma/)  
Brad Mayeux <cdmaman@engineer.com> "*

#### ANECDOTAL EVIDENCE

"Sir,

*Yours is the first article I've read which focuses on those dubious 'cell phone calls'. Last month my Wife and I flew to*

*Melbourne, about 1000 miles south of here.*

*Cell phones are Verboten in Airlines here, but on the return journey I had a new NOKIA phone, purchased in Melbourne, and so small I almost forgot it was in my pocket. I furtively turned it on. No reception anywhere, not even over Towns or approaching Brisbane. Maybe it's different in the US, but I doubt it.*

*There has to be an investigation into this crime. Justice for the thousands of dead and their families demands it.*

Best

Bernie Busch <bbusch@iprimus.com.au> "

"Hi Prof

*I have repeatedly tried to get my cell phone to work in an airplane above 2-3000 feet and it doesn't work. My experiments were done discretely on [more than] 20 Southwest Airlines flights between Ontario, California and Phoenix, Arizona. My experiments match yours. Using sprint phones 3500 and 6000 models, no calls above 2500 ft [succeeded], a 'no service' indicator at 5000 ft (guestimate).*

*There seem to be two reasons. 1. the cell sites don't have enough power to reach much more than a mile, 2. The cell phone system is not able to handoff calls when the plane is going at more than 400 mph.*

*This is simply experimental data. If any of your contacts can verify it by finding the height of the Pennsylvania plane and it's speed one can prove that the whole phone call story is forged.*

Rafe <rafeh@rdlabs.com> (airline pilot) "

"Greetings,

*I write in praise of your report, as I have felt from day one that the cell phone 'evidence' was perhaps the flimsiest part of the story, and am amazed that nobody has touched it until now.*

*I'd also like to bring up the point of airspeed, which is what made the cell calls a red-flag for me in the first place. I'm not sure what your top speed achieved in the small plane was, but, in a large airliner travelling at (one would think) no less than 450mph, most cell phones wouldn't be able to transit cells fast enough to maintain a connection (at least, from what I understand of the technology) .. and we're talking 2001 cell technology besides, which in that period, was known to drop calls made from cars travelling above 70mph on the freeway (again, due to cell coverage transits)*

*Anyway, thanks for shining the light, keep up the good work*

Ben Adam <email on request> "

"Dear Professor,

*Responding to your article, I'm glad somebody with authority has taken the trouble to scientifically prove the non-sense of 9/11.*

*I was travelling between two major European cities, every weekend, when the events in the US occurred. I was specifically puzzled by the reports that numerous passen-*

gers on board the hijacked planes had long conversations with ground phone lines, using their mobile phones (and not on board satellite phones). Since I travelled every weekend, I ignored the on board safety regulations to switch off the mobile phone and out of pure curiosity left it on to see if I could make a call happen.

First of all, at take off, the connection disappears quite quickly (ascending speed, lateral reception of ground stations etc.), I would estimate from 500 meters [1500 feet approx.] and above, the connection breaks.

Secondly, when making the approach for landing, the descent is more gradual and the plane is travelling longer in the reach of cell phone stations, but also only below 500 meters. What I noticed was that, since the plane is travelling with high speed, the connection jumps from one cell phone station to another, never actually giving you a chance to make a phone call. (I have never experienced this behaviour

over land, e.g. by car). Then, if a connection is established, it takes at least 10-30 seconds before the provider authorises a phone call in the first place. Within this time, the next cell station is reached (travel speed still > 300 km/h) and the phone, always searching for the best connection, disconnects the current connection and tries to connect to a new station.

I have done this experiment for over 18 months, ruling out weather conditions, location or coincidence. In all this time the behaviour was the same: making a phone call in a plane is unrealistic and virtually impossible.

Based on this, I can support you in your findings that the official (perhaps fabricated) stories can be categorised as nonsense.

With kind regards.

Peter Kes <kpkes@yahoo.com> “

---

## An Alternative Scenario

Effective stage magic produces the illusion of an event that did not actually happen, at least not in the manner implied by the illusion.

The implied explanation is ‘magic,’ while the actual explanation, invariably more complicated, is quite different. Most members of the audience know that the implied explanation is wrong. They try to imagine how the effect was produced. Very few believe the ‘official’ explanation.

In other, blacker forms of magic, the manipulative element remains but the polarity of the audience is reversed. Most members of the audience ‘know’ that the implied explanation is correct and do not try to imagine how the effect was produced. Very few disbelieve it. If the events of September 11, 2001, were all part of an elaborate piece of stage magic, in effect, how could it have been arranged? This article explores one possibility. The name of the trick is ‘Ghost Riders in the Sky.’ It begins with a peek behind the curtain on that fateful day.

### Flight 11

The morning of September 11 dawned bright and clear over Boston’s Logan Airport as crews arrived for the first flights of the day. The departure lounge for American Airlines Flight 11 was already filling with passengers when John Ogonowski, the pilot, and Thomas McGuinness, the first officer, arrived to board their Boeing 767 and begin the pre-flight check.

As they walked through the lounge, Ogonowski casually scanned the waiting passengers, a longtime habit. Nothing out of the ordinary.

In the cockpit, he and McGuinness worked through the long checklist and, when they came to engine start-up, the two giant General Electric turbofan engines roared into life. The weather reports were good all the way to Los Angeles. It would be a routine flight.

At 7:45 the flight crew closed the cabin doors and the 767 began to taxi out to the runway. Clearance came minutes later and, at 7:59, the engines opened to full throttle and the 767 became airborne. It climbed into clear blue skies, leveled at

25,000 feet, and headed west toward Los Angeles. Ogonowski called up the coordinates for Los Angeles on the flight control computer, then engaged the INS/autopilot system. A flight attendant brought coffee to the cockpit and stayed to chat briefly, before resuming her duties.

The flight continued normally until 8:27, nearly half an hour into the trip. At that point Ogonowski’s chest felt tight and he experienced difficulty breathing. Was it a heart attack? He glanced nervously at McGuinness, thinking that if the symptoms got worse, he should warn the co-pilot that he was having a medical problem. But McGuinness’ face was white and he appeared to be gasping for air. Then he vomited. “We have a situation,” declared Ogonowski, trying desperately to think. There were shouts and screams coming from the passenger compartment behind the closed cockpit doors. His mind seemed to be clouding over and breathing was now impossible. He managed to say, “Call the flight attendants,” before passing out. McGuinness’ head was already lolling to one side.

Back in the passenger area, the last flight attendant to lose consciousness, sank slowly to her knees before passing out in the aisle. The aircraft smelled of vomit and feces. Except for one or two passengers lying in the aisles, most remained in their seats. They appeared to have all fallen asleep, but they were dead. Everybody in the aircraft was dead.

Back in the cockpit, pilot and copilot sat dead in their seats, eyes staring blankly at the deep blue sky above the cockpit windows. The aircraft continued to fly normally, when suddenly the numbers on the inertial navigation system display changed. Instead of the coordinates for Los Angeles airspace, new numbers jumped into place. The aircraft banked steeply to the left and began a slow descent, adding another 100 mph to its airspeed.

In the distance, the New York skyline was growing steadily larger through the cockpit windows, though no one saw it. The aircraft, continuing to descend, headed for lower Manhattan.

By the time the 767 crossed the East River, it would have been all too clear where the aircraft was going. The World

Trade Center Towers loomed steadily larger, dead ahead, through the cockpit windows. At 8:45, the Boeing 767 slammed into the North Tower. A huge ball of flame, burning jet fuel, blossomed from the southeast side of the North Tower. The passengers and crew of Flight 11, having been gassed, were now cremated, along with hundreds of office workers in the North Tower.

At 9:03, 18 minutes later, even as thousands of New Yorkers gaped upward in astonishment and dismay at the burning North Tower, another Boeing 767, approaching from the southwest, crashed into the South Tower. United Airlines Flight 175 had also departed from Boston Logan that morning at 8:15.

At 9:45 a third aircraft crashed into one corner of the Pentagon building. At 10:00 am, a fourth crashed in a field near Pittsburgh, apparently unable to complete its mission.

Within minutes of the first crash, major networks carried the developing story. Four apparent suicide attacks involving large passenger aircraft had just struck two of America's most important landmarks. Asked for their impressions, people on the street described it as 'unreal.' The scale was unprecedented. The drama swept away the debris of ordinary life, shocking Americans into numbness, then anger.

In the days that followed, the story of four cells of Arab terrorists emerged with unprecedented speed. The names of the hijackers were revealed, along with their affiliation or 'links' to al Qaida and the dreaded Osama bin Laden. Soon, Bush would declare his "war on terrorism." Soon American forces would be heading for Afghanistan. Soon Israel would be re-invading the West Bank and Gaza.

The September attacks acquired, almost from the start, an apocalyptic dimension, as if the hijackers stood proxy for the Four Horsemen themselves. This analysis explores the possibility that the aircraft were hijacked not by persons physically present in the cockpit, but by a simple combination of two hi-tech methods. In such a case, there would be no Horsemen, only 'ghost riders,' recalling the American ballad *Ghost Riders in the Sky*.

### Analyzing the Terror Attacks

The discrepancy between the account I have just given of the hijackings and the one reported in the media is obvious and, to many, highly improbable. How could anyone question such an open-and-shut case? There had been the decisive and amazingly rapid unfolding of the FBI investigation, wherein the domestic agency had pretty well solved a case involving 19 terrorists in just two days. (It took them several years to find one terrorist—the Unabomber.) There had also been the steady stream of timed press releases and Pentagon briefings, the disclosure of a war plan by the White House within days of the attacks. What could they be but the work of a well-prepared government? Besides, people who had only just begun adjusting to the 'new reality' would hardly be in a mood to exchange it for something far worse. Nevertheless, the 'unreality' of the attacks themselves would seem to join seamlessly with the unreality of the subsequent drama.

In a following section I will examine the technical feasibility of hijacking large commercial aircraft electronically, as de-

scribed in the opening scenario. I do not claim that this is what actually what happened on September 11. But even less would I claim that the attacks were planned and carried out by 'Arab terrorists.'

I claim only that the method described below amounts to one of several methods, albeit among the most efficient, for converting passenger aircraft into flying fuel bombs. I must therefore also claim that the rush to judgment following September 11 was, at best, foolhardy on the part of the Bush administration and, at worst, disastrous for America. In that event, the evidence compiled here points to elements within the power structure of the US government and it can only be concluded that the United States itself has been hijacked.

Before explaining how a hi-tech hijacking might be feasible, it would be appropriate to disclose some findings related to the attacks for clues they may contain that something quite different from hijackings by 'Arab terrorists' was in progress that day.

### The Historical Context

First and most important, no attack blamed on any recognized 'terrorist' group, whether Palestinian, Basque separatist, Irish nationalist, Tamil Tiger, Red Army brigade, or what have you, was ever carried out without the group responsible claiming responsibility. The whole point of the attack is to publicize a cause. The only exception to this rule in the history of terrorism is the mysterious Al Qaida, led by the equally mysterious Osama bin Laden. Robert Fisk, the well-known British reporter, gave voice to the same opinion:

*"They left no message behind. They left just silence."*

In Fisk's opinion, this was quite out of character for any terrorist organization. (MacIntyre, 2001)

If Al Qaida was responsible for the attacks, what possible reason would bin Laden have for not claiming responsibility? The White House claim that Al Qaida's purpose was to inflict 'nameless terror' on America is deeply contradictory. The only other terrorist acts for which none of the 'regular' organizations took responsibility, namely, the bombing of the US embassies in Kenya and Tanzania in 1998, as well as the attack on the USS Cole in 2000, were also blamed on Al Qaida. What reason would bin Laden have for imagining that the terror inflicted by Al Qaida on September 11 would be blamed on anyone but Al Qaida, let alone be 'nameless?' It simply fails to make sense. Worse yet, bin Laden has repeatedly denied involvement in the attacks. On September 11 bin Laden said:

*"This terrorist act is the action of some American group. I have nothing to do with it."*

Later, on September 28:

*"I have already said that I am not involved in the 11 September attacks in the United States. As a Muslim, I try my best to avoid telling a lie. I had no knowledge of these attacks, nor do I consider the killing of innocent women, children, and other humans as an appreciable [sic] act."* (Ummat, 2001)

Nevertheless, the White House claimed to have 'links' between Al Qaida and the September 11 attacks, secret information that, for reasons of 'national security,' could not be disclosed to the public.

## Intelligence Leaks

Another discrepancy in the September 11 attacks is apparent to anyone who has followed the history of ‘terrorism.’ The sheer size of the operation as outlined by the White House, the high degree of coordination involved, and the need for absolute secrecy, is not one, but two, orders of magnitude greater in scale than anything previously attempted by any terrorist group. Indeed, even the previous attacks blamed on Al Qaida were relatively simple operations involving the clandestine transport of explosive materials (by boat or car) to the target site. In the large-scale operation of September 11, the requirement of secrecy was especially important.

The scale of the operation, however it may have been achieved, was more suited to a large, well-organized intelligence agency, with as many as 50 field agents involved, each privy to one or more aspects of the plan. With such a large operation, leaks are inevitable. The two cited below both point to a very different source for the attacks.

According to *Ha'aretz*, Israel's largest daily, two employees of Odigo, an Israel-based messaging service in one of the WTC towers, received email warnings of the attack two hours before impact on September 11. (Dror, 2001) The employees immediately informed the company, which cooperated with Israeli security services, as well as American law enforcement agencies, giving them the source of the message. No follow-up on this story has ever been made available, which leads one to believe that the message did not come from a ‘terrorist’ source: If such a source had been suspected, much less proved, the administration would not have hesitated to use the item in its ‘war on terrorism.’

An interesting report of another leak alleged:

*“A US military intelligence report revealed details of an internal intelligence memo linking Mossad to the WTC and Pentagon attacks. The memo was in circulation three weeks before the attacks.”* (Stern, 2001)

It pointed to a threat that Mossad was planning a covert operation on US soil to turn public opinion against the Arabs. David Stern, an expert on Israeli intelligence operations, stated:

*“This attack required a high level of military precision and the resources of an advanced intelligence agency. In addition, the attackers would have needed to be extremely familiar with both Air Force One flight operations, civil airline flight paths, and aerial assault tactics on sensitive US cities like Washington.”*

Stern also pointed out that the attacks “serve no Arab group or nation's interest, but their timing came in the midst of international condemnation of Israel [...]”

## The Virtual Celebration

A highly suspicious occurrence was the airing of a videotape supposedly shot in Palestine on the day of the attacks. The video shows Palestinians celebrating something. The media claimed that the Palestinians were celebrating the attacks on the World Trade Center and the Pentagon. The only problem with the tapes is the time of day. Shadows thrown by the stands and buildings in the vicinity of the celebrants clearly show the local time to be approximately noon. At the time of the attacks, however, it was already 5:00 pm (daylight time) in Palestine. At

that time of day (and year), the angle of the shadows would be at most 30 degrees from the horizontal and readily visible on the video as deep shadows.

Since the tape is unquestionably a fake, shot at some other time and on some other occasion of celebration, it must be asked how it got into the hands of the American media (via an ‘independent producer’) so quickly, unless it had been prepared in advance of the attacks. There is no other explanation for this anomaly.

## Planted Evidence

Another difficulty arises in the matter of evidence discovered by FBI investigators in the parking lots of airports used by the hijackers. In more than one rental vehicle, field officers recovered copies of the Qur'an and aircraft flight manuals. In a context where the White House was stressing the ‘sophistication’ of the attackers, as well as the high state of organization and coordination necessary to carry them out, it would seem reasonable to assume that all operatives would have been extensively briefed on the importance of leaving no trace of themselves or their mission (in pursuit of ‘nameless terror’). Such a briefing would certainly include all personal possessions, religious documents, flight manuals, and so on. The rental vehicles would be left as clean as they were when they were rented. No Muslim, (especially, one supposes, a ‘fanatic’) would ever leave a Qur'an in a rented vehicle, especially if he knew he would not be returning to it.

Come to think of it, why would any terrorist organization with such a high level of competence rent cars in the first place? After all, it would be simpler (and no less reliable) to take a cab to the airport.

Again, there are very serious discrepancies between the facts as reported and on-the-ground realities.

## The Lebanese Playboy

Ziad Jarrah, the alleged pilot of United Airlines Flight 93 (which crashed in Pennsylvania), presents those who seek to understand the September 11 attacks with serious difficulties. As revealed in a CBC (Canadian Broadcasting Corporation) investigative report, first aired in November 2001, Jarrah was the playboy son of a wealthy family in Lebanon. (MacIntyre, 2001) The family was only nominally Muslim and Jarrah, if anything, more so. He loved to go dancing with other young people of his set in nightclubs and even had a steady girl friend, hardly practices of a believing Muslim, let alone a fanatical one. Linden MacIntyre, host and reporter, traveled to Lebanon to interview the Jarrah family, then to Hamburg, where he discussed Ziad's behavior during the months leading up to September 11 with Jarrah's landlady. The Jarrahs were completely mystified by their son's alleged role in the hijackings. The landlady, who seemed rather fond of him, was also mystified.

Jarrah loved the good life but had one over-riding passion, to study aeronautical engineering and (probably) to learn how to fly. He went to Hamburg to study and it was there, according to his landlady, that he began making mysterious evening trips to Harburg, sometimes not returning until dawn. Harburg was the address of Mohammed Atta, one of the most notorious of the alleged hijackers, and the person who, MacIntyre opines,

probably recruited Jarrah for a special mission. If this is true, although we do not know what Atta may have told Jarrah, June of 2000 finds him in Florida, taking flying lessons (light aircraft only) and discussing with his room-mate (also interviewed for the program) what it would be like to fly a large commercial aircraft.

Anyone with a reasonably active imagination can come up with several different stories that may have been fed to Jarrah (apart from the standard Al Qaida recruitment scenario) causing him to spend a few nights in Harburg or to take flying lessons in Florida. Such behaviour is easily induced by any reasonably competent field officer: A lovely and very cooperative lady in Harburg, as well as the promise of a position as private pilot to a wealthy Middle Eastern businessman currently living in Florida.

On September 9, just two days before the attacks, Jarrah telephoned his uncle in Lebanon. He sounded normal and reasonably happy, according to the uncle. He stated that he would be flying back to Lebanon in two weeks for a party which his family had planned. A new Mercedes awaited Jarrah, an anticipatory wedding gift which his father had purchased for him. MacIntyre professed no little puzzlement over the discrepancies:

*"It becomes more perplexing as each layer of the mystery peels away."*

I will return to the alleged hijackers in a later section.

### **The 1993 Trade Center Bombing**

The most important target of the September 11 attacks was undoubtedly the twin towers at the World Trade Center in lower Manhattan. These had been the target of a prior attempt at bombing in February, 1993. Among those charged with the bombing was Mohammed Salameh, a student who lived in Jersey City at the time.

On February 26, 1993, at 12:18 pm, a powerful explosion, originating in parking level 'B' beneath the WTC twin towers shook the buildings, killing seven people and trapping thousands of workers inside for hours, forcing them to breathe heavy smoke. Within a week, the FBI had arrested Mohammed A. Salameh, along with a friend, Nidal Ayyad, as prime suspects in the blast. Salameh had been traced through a fragment of metal found in the WTC parking garage. It bore the serial number of a Ford Econoline van belonging to a Ryder rental agency in Jersey City.

Salameh, it turned out, had certainly rented the van in question. Unlike most terrorists who rent vans to blow up large buildings, he reported the van stolen to Jersey City police on February 25 (the day before the blast). Unfortunately, he was unable to supply the license number, having left the rental documents in the stolen vehicle. He also reported the theft to the rental agency, attempting in the process to retrieve his \$400 deposit on the vehicle. On the next day, even as everyone learned of the WTC bombing, Salameh again telephoned Ryder, obtaining the plate number and filing a second report to the police, this time with the correct number. On the face of things, the youth was behaving just like someone who had no idea that his missing van had been used in the World Trade Center bombing.

This case gets even stranger. Salameh and Ayyad attended a small mosque on the second floor of a building in downtown Jersey City. The Imam was Shaikh Omar Abdel-Rahman. The shaikh was also arrested and brought to trial in a separate, closed proceeding. A police search of the mosque revealed no hidden bomb-making or related material. A search of Salameh's apartment had the same negative result.

Police did, however, discover bomb-related wiring, instruction sheets and traces of explosives in the apartment of a 'friend' of Salameh's. On the day before the bombing, an acquaintance of Salameh's in Jersey City, one Josie Hadas, had hired him to rent a van to move a certain cargo. Hadas, an Israeli citizen, was taken into custody by police, but was soon sent back to Israel and (apparently) cannot be found to this day. (IIIE, 2001)

The main source of damaging testimony at the trial was delivered by FBI informant Emad Salem, a former Egyptian army officer, who had become close to Shaikh Abdel Rahman and his circle of friends, infiltrating the group on behalf of the FBI. He testified that he had been involved in assisting with the bomb. The jury found the pair guilty of the blast, with Abdel-Rahman being tried in separate proceedings. The verdict was based on circumstantial evidence of a conspiracy; none of the suspects ever being placed by witnesses, or forensic evidence, at the scene of the crime. (Pringle, 1994)

After the trial, Salem disclosed a very different story:

*"We was start [sic] already building the bomb which is went off in the World Trade Center. It was built by supervising supervision from the bureau and [...] we was all informed about it and we know that the bomb was start to be built."* (Morales & DeRienzo, 1995)

Those who are unfamiliar with the activities of large intelligence operations should be aware that frame-ups and other 'dirty tricks' are part of regular operations. (Ostrovsky & Hoy, 1990) They are relatively easy to carry out, for the most part. For example, in the present case, Salameh could have been directed by Hadas to deliver the goods (innocuous items) to an address somewhere in Jersey City, where he would have to enter a building to report the delivery. While he was inside, the van would be stolen, then driven to another location to be prepared for its ultimate mission.

### **The Missing Passengers**

In most of the web sources (CNN, 2001) (WRH, 2001) (IIIEb, 2001) for passenger lists, the names of the hijackers did not appear. There are, of course, a number of reasons why we might not see the names of the hijackers. One is that the airlines all decided, in releasing the lists to the media, to delete the names of the hijackers from the lists so as not to dishonor the dead, reproducing the lists as consisting of 'victims' only. No statement to this effect appeared in conjunction with any of the lists. Another reason is that the hijackers may have used phony names. Yet the passengers are usually identified not only by name on the lists, but their place of residence and occupations are also included. None of the entries give 'terrorist' as occupation. It may be a bit of a stretch, but it is just possible that the hijackers' names do not appear on the passenger lists because they were not aboard the aircraft in the first place.

## The Missing Black Boxes

Each of the Boeing aircraft involved in the September 11 attacks was equipped with the standard 'black boxes,' a flight data recorder (FDR) and a cockpit voice recorder (CVR). There is no known instance, prior to September 11, 2001, of a terrestrial airplane crash from which the essential flight and voice data were not ultimately recovered.

Only one of the eight black boxes was ever recovered, namely the CVR of United Airlines Flight 93, which crashed in rural Pennsylvania. According to ABC News:

*"The voice recorder was said to be heavily damaged and the manufacturer was being asked to help with further analysis. The plane that crashed in Pennsylvania was reported to have hit the ground in excess of 500 miles an hour."*

Black boxes are built to withstand g-forces of up to 3400 Gs, generated by a deceleration of 108,800 f/sec/sec. An aircraft traveling at 500 mph that crashes into the ground or a building will have all motion arrested within one-tenth of a second, at the very least, yielding an average deceleration of at most 7,330 ft/sec/sec, about 7 percent of the rated maximum. Heat resistance for the units is 1100 degrees Celsius over a thirty minute period. Temperature would not have been a factor in the Pennsylvania crash, but even the fireball resulting from the WTC impacts had a temperature no greater than 1000 degrees Celsius. (NTSB, 2002) The heat lasted no longer than the jet fuel and temperatures may not have reached half that value in the insulated confines of the black box housings. In any event, the buildings each collapsed in less than half an hour from impact.

There can be little doubt that had the black boxes been recovered, they would have all the information necessary to confirm that hijackers did, indeed, commandeer the four aircraft on September 11. There have been no further reports in the media about the contents of the Flight 93 CVR. The FBI, which claimed that the tape had sounds of screams and shouts on it, has refused to release it. (Quinn, 2001) It might be added that the presence of such sounds on the CVR is perfectly consistent with what would be heard in and from the cockpit of Flight 93 in the few minutes following implementation of the hijacking method described below.

## The Missing Interceptors

It has been standard policy for many years to intercept any aircraft within minutes of it being reported off course. The request is made by an air traffic control (ATC) operator as soon as he or she notices that an aircraft has deviated from its flight path. Failure to contact the pilot (which would have been the case under both the alternate scenario and under the White House interpretation) results in a request by ATC to the military (NORAD) to intercept the aircraft (FAA, 1998) (FAA, 2001). Interception is automatic, does not require approval by any authority higher than the FAA liaison official at NORAD, and takes anywhere from five to 15 minutes, depending on the initial separation of target aircraft and the nearest operational base. Upon arrival, the interceptor waggles its wings to elicit a response from the pilot of the off-course aircraft. The pilot is also instructed to make a visual check of the cockpit area.

New York and Washington are among the most heavily guarded places in the United States. For the first time in the history of this policy being implemented, no interceptors were sent up, in spite of the fact that not one but four aircraft were involved.

It would have taken approximately five minutes for any fighter from, Andrews Air force Base to intercept the aircraft that struck the Pentagon, for example. Aircraft were on standby on the morning of September 11, according to the official air force website, although the contents of the site were changed two days after the attacks to say that no aircraft were available that morning (a strange circumstance, considering the sensitivity of the area and the number of fighters stationed there). (Ruppert, 2002)

The air force had not five minutes, but more than an hour to carry out interceptions. [For this, see the next contribution in this issue, Editor]

## Virtual Hijacking

The natural assumption of every single viewer of the September 11 attacks was that human beings were at the controls of the aircraft. What could they be but hijackers? Since they were also committing suicide, what could they be but terrorists? But what at first sight seems impossible sometimes turns out to be not only possible, but the actual explanation of events. Although I shall be using an in-principle argument, it must be recognized that the 'devil is in the details' and that certain features of the scheme I have worked out might have to be implemented in another way. About the main conclusion, however, there can be little doubt. The thing is do-able.

In a modern commercial airliner like the Boeing 757 or 767, all control signals from the pilot and co-pilot go through the flight control system (FCS) (Safford, 1975) (Spitzer, 1987). The heart of the system is a computer with three processors to ensure reliability of operation. Each processor is able to run separate versions of what is essentially the same software. Only one processor runs at a time, but the pilot can switch from one processor to another if he suspects a malfunction. Each processor, like any multi-mission computer, has an operating system.

If something goes wrong with the computers or with the flight control system generally, a manual override is initiated by the pilot. This allows the pilot to fly the aircraft manually -- unless he is dead.

The simplest possible scheme for converting a modern commercial airliner into a flying fuel bomb involves two elements: a) two small canisters of lethal gas hidden in the aircraft's ventilation ducts and triggered either by a timer or by radio signal, b) a small information implant (three numbers) in the flight control system and a means to trigger it.

The agent of choice for part a) would probably be fast-acting sarin, a lethal nerve gas that, at the dose levels to be used in a hijacking, would incapacitate every human being in the aircraft within a minute of first breathing the gas. Should the oxygen masks all pop out of the ceiling, it would make no difference to the outcome. One breath of the deadly gas would be more than sufficient. The symptoms described in the alternative scenario are all typical of sarin poisoning. Sarin degrades chemically within a short time of use, being undetectable thereafter.

The information implant mentioned in part b) would be new coordinates (latitude, longitude and altitude) in a form used by the inertial navigation system (INS), which is part of the aircraft's flight control system (FCS). The central problem of this analysis is to determine which of two ways of achieving this goal is most efficient. In what I call the 'custom job,' a pre-installed virus-like code implant in the flight control computer(s), triggered like the gas canisters (either by timer or by radio signal), sends new coordinates to the INS. No more than a few lines of code would be required: there would be a time/signal check followed by an instruction to replace the Los Angeles coordinates by the ones stored in memory location so-and-so. In the 'installed base' method (Vialls, 2001), the software already exists in the FCC operating system, awaiting its use (presumably) as a counter-hijacking facility. This software would be able to read the new coordinates directly by radio from the ground. It has proved impossible to document this possibility from reliable sources.

In the custom job, installation of the unfriendly software and hardware would be carried out on selected aircraft during routine maintenance periods. The agents carrying out the installation might pose as mechanics or even cabin cleaners. In the cockpit they would install the special software patch in all three FCS processors, if necessary. In a maintenance port of the plane's air supply system, they would install two custom-made sarin gas canisters, each with its trigger. Such installations are actually the easy part of the overall operation, depending on how much 'cooperation' the organization receives. Although it would not be crucial, access to aircraft maintenance and location schedules would be very useful to the agents, giving them more time for installation on specific aircraft, instead of having to make the installation on additional aircraft, which might or might not be used.

The components of the FCS that concern us here are the flight control computer, the INS, and the autopilot. During most commercial flights, the pilot places the aircraft on autopilot, as guided by the INS. The autopilot manages the aircraft's control surfaces to guarantee a smooth, level flight, automatically compensating for various forms of disturbance, such as turbulence and other factors. Autopilots have been around for over fifty years and have grown increasingly sophisticated with time. They do a superb job of what might be called 'local control,' keeping the aircraft on its present heading, altitude, and so on. However, autopilots have no idea where they're going, so to speak. That information must come from the INS. The destination coordinates, stored in the FCC, may be called up by the pilot and sent to the INS. Routinely, commercial pilots engage the INS and autopilot together, the INS continually sending new directions to the autopilot to keep the aircraft on course.

Inertial navigation systems have been around for approximately thirty years and, like autopilots, have been the subject of tremendous development and sophistication. According to Edward Safford, dean of American avionics:

*"The plane can fly any course in the world without the need for a navigator or external nav aids."* (Safford, 1975)

Present INS capabilities are even more sophisticated, positioning an aircraft over the center of a runway hundreds of

miles from the point of insertion. Such accuracy is adequate to accommodate the precise three-dimensional coordinates of the impact sites of the WTC towers and the Pentagon.

The agency carrying out the attacks would, after clandestine installation of software implants of the kind outlined above, simply trigger the whole operation when it was determined that the target aircraft was flying in INS/autopilot mode. The gas canisters would then be triggered and after about five to ten minutes the software implant would feed the new coordinates to the INS. The flight would be managed smoothly, the direction being changed as soon as the new destination coordinates were in place. The changes in direction that took place on September 11 would be visible on ground radar (transponders or no transponders) as a 'hard left' or a 'hard right.' (This is precisely how Air Traffic Control personnel described the turns.) By inserting more than one set of coordinates, it would also be possible to program a more complicated flight, with several changes of direction.

### Virtual Phone Calls

However an electronic hijacking might be managed, the organization responsible would also be sure to add other elements to the basic plan, not only developing lists of ghost riders, but sending fake cell phone calls from some of the passengers. The following analysis focuses on Flight 93, from which more alleged cell phone calls were made than from the other three flights combined. It could be called the 'Cell phone Flight.' The calling operation would be no less complex and require no less planning than the virtual hijacking itself.

Any analysis of the cell phone and "airfone" calls from Flight 93 must begin with some basic, high-altitude cell phone facts. According to AT&T spokesperson Alexa Graf, cell phones are not designed for calls from the high altitudes at which most airliners normally operate. It was, in her opinion, a "fluke" that so many calls reached their destinations. (Harter 2001) In the opinion of a colleague of mine who has worked in the cell phone industry, it was a "miracle" that any of the calls got through from altitude. An aircraft, having a metal skin and fuselage, acts like a Faraday cage, tending to block or attenuate electromagnetic radiation. One can make a cell phone call from inside an aircraft while on the ground because the greatly weakened signal is still close enough to the nearest cell site (relay tower) to get picked up. Once above 10,000 feet, however, calls rarely get through, if ever.

Here is the statement of an experienced airline pilot:

*"The idea of being able to use a cell phone while flying is completely impractical. Once through about 10,000 feet, the thing is useless, since you are too high and moving too fast (and thus changing cells too rapidly) for the phone to provide a signal."* (AVWeb, 1999)

People boarding aircraft for the last decade or so have all heard the warnings to turn off their cell phones for the duration of the flight. The reason for this has nothing to do with interference with aircraft radio equipment, which is all electronically shielded in any case. Instead, the FCC has requested that airlines make this rule, owing to the tendency for cell phone calls made from aircraft at lower altitudes to create 'cascades' that may lead to breakdown of cell site operations.



The cascade problem is more likely at altitudes of 10,000 feet or lower, where reaching a cell site, although still a touch-and-go matter, is more easily accomplished. However, because of its superior position, the cell phone may reach several cell sites at once. This can create problems, as software that determines which site is to handle the call makes its judgment based on the relative strength of calls. If the call is made from an overhead position, it may well not be able to distinguish relative strength at different cell sites. When this happens it is designed to close off the calling channel, selecting another channel in its place. But the same problem of deciding which cell site should handle the call also occurs on the new channel, so the new channel is closed, and so on. One by one, in a rapid cascade that would last only seconds, all the channels would be closed, leading to a network-wide breakdown. [Fraizer 2002]

Although it was practically impossible for any calls to get through early in the hijacking of the Cell phone Flight, when it was at or near cruising altitude, there would be no theoretical difficulty after its slow descent over Pennsylvania. But it was then just as unlikely that no cell phone network cascades would occur. On the morning of 9/11, no such cascades occurred. Two more elements of doubt thus weigh against the official account.

It must also be remarked that the alleged hijackers of the Cell phone Flight were remarkably lenient with their passengers, allowing some 13 calls. However, it would seem highly unlikely that hijackers would allow any phone calls for the simple reason that passengers could relay valuable positional and other information useful to authorities on the ground, thus putting the whole mission in jeopardy.

The following analysis of the actual calls is based on text assembled by four reporters of the Pittsburgh Post-Gazette. [Roddy et al. 2001] The calls were mostly rather brief and it must be borne in mind that, with the exception of two recorded messages, the persons called would not necessarily recollect the exact words which either they or the caller used.

Following a delay in its scheduled departure time of 8:01 am, Flight 93 reached its cruising altitude of approximately 30,000 feet about 40 minutes into the flight. At about this time the INS/autopilot would have been engaged. And at about this time, the aircraft was 'hijacked,' according to several cell phone calls.

CALL A1: A man claiming to be Tom Burnett called his wife Deena in San Ramon, CA around 9:20 to Deena's best recollection:

Deena: "Are you alright?"

Caller: "No. I'm on United Flight 93 from Newark to San Francisco. The plane was hijacked. We are in the air. They've already knifed a guy. There is a bomb on board. Call the FBI."

CALL B: Just before 9:30 am, a man claiming to be Jeremy Glick called Lyz Glick, who was visiting in-laws in the Catskills of New York state. The phone was answered by Glick's mother-in-law, JoAnne Makely:

JoAnne: "Jeremy. Thank God. We're so worried."

Caller: "It's bad news. Is Liz there?"

The caller went on to describe Arabic-looking hijackers wearing red headbands and carrying knives. One had told the passengers he had a bomb. The caller asked if it was true that planes had been crashed into the World Trade Center. She con-

firmed this. The caller mentioned that another passenger had heard the news on his/her cell phone.

CALL A2: The man claiming to be Tom Burnett called Deena Burnett again around 9:30 am. As Deena later described his call, "He didn't sound frightened, but he was speaking faster than he normally would." He told her there were hijackers in the cockpit.

Deena: "A lot of planes have been hijacked, but they don't know how many."

Caller: "You've got to be kidding."

Deena: "No."

Caller: "Were they commercial planes or airliners?"

Deena: "I don't know."

Caller: "Okay. I've got to go."

CALL C: A man claiming to be Mark Brigham called Brigham's sister-in-law, Cathy Hoglan, who was being visited by Brigham's mother, Alice. Cathy took the call and handed the phone to Alice with the remark, "Alice, talk to Mark. He's been hijacked."

Caller: "Mom? This is Mark Brigham." (Alice Brigham accounts for this strange announcement as due to her son being flustered.)

Caller: "I want you to know that I love you. I'm on a flight from Newark to San Francisco and there are three guys who have taken over the plane and they say they have a bomb."

Alice: "Who are these guys?"

Caller: (after a pause) "You believe me, don't you?"

Caller: "Yes, Mark. I believe you. But who are these guys?"

(After another pause the line went dead.)

CALL D: A man claiming to be Todd Beamer on a United Airlines airfone had some trouble getting through to anyone but the Verizon customer service center, where the operator relayed the call to Verizon supervisor, Lisa Jefferson at 9:45 am. (Verizon is a large communications company that has the contract for airfones on United airlines equipment.) The man told Jefferson that the plane had been hijacked, that he could see three hijackers armed with knives, one of them claiming to have a bomb. He described how the passengers had been herded to the rear of the aircraft, guarded by the one with the bomb. He asked the supervisor to call the Beamer family on his behalf.

Caller: "Oh! We're going down. [Pause] No. We're okay. I think we're turning around." (It was approximately around this time that the flight, then passing near Cleveland, made a hard left toward Washington, DC.)

CALL A3: The man claiming to be Tom Burnett called Deena Burnett again.

Deena: "They're taking airplanes and hitting landmarks all up and down the east coast."

Caller: "Okay. We're going to do something. I'll call you back."

CALL F1: At 9:47, the answering machine of Lorne Lyles recorded a call that he thought was from his wife, CeeCee. The woman could be heard praying for herself, her family, and even for the souls of the hijackers.

CALL B (cont'd.): State police, talking to Jeremy Glick's mother-in-law, asked her to relay a question to Jeremy. Did he know where his plane was? He didn't know, but said they had changed direction.

Caller: "I need you to be happy and I will respect any decisions that you make."

He told Ms Lyles that the passengers were about to take a vote on whether to take back the aircraft. Should they try?

Lyz: "Honey, you need to do it." They spoke of weapons. The caller joked.

Caller: "I have my butter knife from breakfast."

*CALL G:* About this time, Phil Bradshaw, husband of flight attendant Sandy Bradshaw, received a phone call from a woman who identified herself as his wife.

Caller: "Have you heard what's going on? My flight has been hijacked. My flight has been hijacked by three guys with knives."

Phil asked her who was flying the plane.

Caller: "I don't know who's flying the plane or where we are. I see a river."

Bradshaw: "Be safe and come home soon."

The caller then explained that she had to go. She planned to prepare boiling water in the galley -- to pour on the hijackers.

*CALL H:* Sometime after 9:30, Fred Fiumano received a call from someone claiming to be his friend, Marion Britton. The caller was crying, stating that the plane had been hijacked and that two passengers had already been killed. Fiumano tried to console his friend, stating that the hijackers were probably going to take her for a ride. "You'll be alright."

*CALL I:* Jack Grandcolas in San Rafael, CA, received a call from a woman claiming to be Lauren Catuzzi Grandcolas, his wife. The message, as recorded on his answering machine, was short:

Caller: "Sweetie, pick up the phone if you can hear me. (pause) Okay, I love you. There's a little problem with the plane. I'm fine and comfortable for now [...]"

She asked Jack to pass along her love for everyone, then passed the airfone to her seat-mate.

Caller: "Now you call your people."

*CALL J:* Esther Heymann received a call from a woman claiming to be her stepdaughter, Honor Elizabeth Wainio, also Grandcolas' seat-mate.

Caller: "Mom, we're being hijacked. I just called to say good bye."

Heymann: "Elizabeth, we don't know how this is going to turn out. I've got my arms around you."

Wainio said she could feel them.

Heymann: "Let's look out at that beautiful blue sky. Let's be here in the moment. Let's do some deep breathing together." (pause)

Caller: "It hurts me that it's going to be so much harder for you than it is for me."

*CALL A4:* Once again, just before 10:00 am, Deena Burnett received a fourth phone call.

Caller: "A group of us are going to do something."

Deena: "No, Tom. Just sit down and don't draw attention to yourself."

Caller: "Deena, if they're going to crash the plane into the ground, we have to do something. We can't wait for the authorities. We have to do something now."

Caller: "Pray. Just pray, Deena. We're going to do something."

*CALL D (cont'd):* The caller who had identified himself as Todd Beamer appears to have remained connected with Lisa Jefferson, the Verizon supervisor, almost to the end of the flight. At this point the caller was reciting the 23rd Psalm from the Bible

*CALL F2:* The caller identifying herself as CeeCee Lyles finally got through to Lorne Lyles.

Caller: "Babe, my plane's been hijacked."

Lyles: "Huh? Stop joking."

Caller: "No Babe, I wouldn't joke like that. I love you. Tell the boys I love them."

As the couple prayed together, Lorne heard sounds that he would later interpret as passengers preparing a counter-attack.

Caller: "They're going to force their way into the cockpit."

*CALL D (cont'd):* Having finished his prayer session with Lisa Jefferson, the caller claiming to be Todd Beamer left the phone connected. Jefferson recalls hearing the now famous rallying cry.

Caller: "Are you guys ready? Let's roll."

*CALL J (cont'd):* Esther Heymann, who believed herself to be talking with her step daughter, heard her last words.

Caller: "I need to go. They're getting ready to break into the cockpit. I love you. Goodbye."

*CALL G (cont'd):* Phil Bradshaw heard his caller's last words to him.

Caller: "Everyone's running to first class. I've got to go. Bye."

*CALL F2 (cont'd):* Lorne Lyles recalls hearing the last moments of Flight 93.

Caller: (screams) "They're doing it! They're doing it! They're doing it!"

The caller screamed again, said something he couldn't hear, then the line went dead.

## Operational Details

How on Earth could any organization fake the calls I have just described? In the middle of writing this very sentence, I was interrupted by someone calling through the back door of our porch: "Is anybody home?" It was my son who was visiting us from out of town. He had been out with some old friends. I went out to the back porch to greet him.

It wasn't my son at all, but the neighbor next door wanting to borrow our ladder. I marveled that I could have mistaken his voice for that of my son. It has a different timbre and tone, yet the context of expectation over-rode my ability to discriminate sounds. This example proves nothing, of course, but it illustrates a fact that has been used by spiritualists and mediums to beguile clients for hundreds of years. Forlorn people, hoping to contact a deceased loved one, would typically report satisfaction with a sentence. "I swear, it was my son. There was no mistaking that sweet little voice." The context leads the recipient of such a message actually to hear the loved one. Of course, the tone of voice must be approximately correct. In the case at hand, persons faking the calls would have the further advantage of electronic fuzzing, the tendency for audio lines with very low bandwidth to transmit the human voice somewhat imperfectly. In addition, extreme emotional stress alters the human voice even more markedly, causing the person addressed to make unconscious allowances.

To obtain names and relevant personal data, operatives would have taken the flights in question several times before September 11, engaging fellow passengers in friendly conversation: "Take this flight often?" It would not take very long to build a file of names, secretly recorded voices, and a host of more or less intimate details from the lives of passengers. The ultimate list might run to several dozen passengers, not all of whom would be on Flight 93 the fateful morning of September 11.

Meanwhile, a script has been written to portray a sequence of events. The backbone of the script, a timeline running from the moment of sarin/INS insertion up to the point of impact, would consist of a sequence of pseudo-events such as the first appearance of the hijackers, their announcement, scuffles with passengers, the back-of-the-plane strategy session, and the final rush to the cockpit. It would also include real events such as the aircraft's turn mentioned in Call D.

Imagine then an operations room (of which every intelligence agency has several) with a screen on which the events appear as text, keeping all operatives on the same page, so to speak. An operations director would have much the same role as a symphony conductor, cueing various operators as the script unfolds. An audio engineer would have several tapes already made in a sound studio. The tapes, which portray mumbled conferences among passengers or muffled struggles, replete with shouts and curses, can be played over any of the phone lines, as determined by the script, or simply fed as ambient sound into the control room. Trained operators with headsets make the actual calls. Each operator has studied tapes for several of the individuals, as recorded on prior occasions of Flight 93, as well as profiles of the individuals, including a great deal of personal information, some of it obtained 'on the ground,' as they say. As soon as the passenger lists become available, each operator scans his or her own copy, searching for the names that he or she will specialize in, discarding the rest.

The introductory sentence, somewhat fuzzily transmitted, would carry the hook: "Honey, we've been hijacked!" Thereafter, with the belief framework installed, a similar live voice could react to questions, literally playing the situation by ear, but being sure to include pertinent details such as "Arab-looking guys," "boxcutters," and all the rest. If the contact has been made successfully in the operator's opinion, with the essential information conveyed, it is always possible to terminate the call more or less gracefully, depending on what portion of the script is under execution. "Okay. We're going to do something. I'll call you back." Click.

Each operator has a voice that is somewhat similar to that of the person he or she is pretending to be. It is not particularly difficult to do this. For example, it is far easier to find someone with a voice that can be mistaken for mine (especially over a telephone line) than it is to find someone who looks like me (even in a blurred photograph). Moreover, most people can learn to mimic voices, an art well illustrated by comedians who mimic well-known personalities.

Operators would have received general instructions about what to do in the course of a call. Although each has been supplied with at least some 'intimate' details of the target's life, there would be techniques in place for temporizing or for avoiding long conversations where basic lack of knowledge

might threaten to become suddenly obvious, and so on. Three such techniques are praying (from text, if necessary) (Calls D, F1, and J), crying (as in call H), or discussing the other attacks (as in call A2 and B).

In the case at hand, Flight 93, various calls may now be examined as a consistency check. First, it must be noted that the longest call was made by the person who identified himself as Todd Beamer (Call D) to someone whom the real Todd Beamer did not know at all, Lisa Jefferson, a Verizon supervisor. Among the shorter conversations were Calls B, A2 and D.

Early in Call B (Glick), the caller indicates that it is general knowledge among the passengers that other aircraft have been hijacked that morning. Near the end of this conversation, when the caller discusses possible actions against the hijackers, he makes a joking remark:

Caller: "I have my butter knife from breakfast."

This is strange because it implies that the caller had already finished breakfast, whereas meals are not normally served until the aircraft reaches cruising altitude, about the time that the alleged hijacking began.

In Call A2 (Burnett), Deena Burnett describes the other hijackings.

A2 Deena: "A lot of planes have been hijacked, but they don't know how many."

Caller: "You've got to be kidding."

Deena: "No."

Caller: "Were they commercial planes or airliners?"

Here, the caller seems to be temporizing. Not only are hijackings of commercial (i. e., cargo) aircraft extremely rare events, the caller's apparent surprise contradicts the implication of Call B (made earlier) that the other attacks were already general knowledge among the passengers of Flight 93.

Call C, also short, may point to a possible fumble. Was one of the callers asleep at the switch?

Caller: "Mom? This is Mark Brigham."

Caller: "I want you to know that I love you. I'm on a flight from Newark to San Francisco and there are three guys who have taken over the plane and they say they have a bomb."

Alice: "Who are these guys?"

Caller: (after a pause) "You believe me, don't you?"

Caller: "Yes, Mark. I believe you. But who are these guys?"

Alice Brigham attributed the strange introductory sentence to her son being flustered. But if Mark chose his mother to call, over all other people in the world, would he be likely to make such a mistake? Would thoughts of his mother not be uppermost in his mind, no matter what happened in the passenger compartment? A caller can only make such a mistake if he or she is thinking of something entirely unrelated to the reason for the call or the person being called and that can hardly have been the case in the alleged circumstances.

Instead of answering his mother's question, the caller seems uncertain. Mrs. Brigham has just asked "Who are these guys?" and the caller answers with another question. Does she believe his previous sentence? The caller, who may have lost confidence in the call, terminates the conversation (possibly pounding his forehead in silent frustration).

Caller C never called back. Of the 13 phone calls allegedly made from the plane, four were from one caller (A: Burnett),

two were from another (F: Lyles), and the remaining seven calls were not repeated. Non-repeated calls would thus represent final exits with either flubbed results or a smooth performance. The repeated calls give continuity to the script, as well as opportunities for myth-building. Here's Todd Beamer, known to friends (and observers) as a kind of go-ahead, take-charge guy. Perfect. He will be the 'reason,' decided well in advance of September 11, why the plane crashes well short of the White House.

Caller D, the one alleged to be Todd Beamer, apparently had difficulty using his airfone. This could be explained if the telephone used by the caller was not part of the Verizon system. However, the caller could easily access the Verizon supervisory office over an ordinary telephone, explaining that he had been trying to reach someone. Strangely enough, caller D preferred to talk to Lisa Jefferson (asking her to call his loved ones for him), even though he was about to die.

One other cell phone call bears mention. Barbara Olson, a well-known Washington lawyer and, more recently, television political pundit, died aboard American Airlines Flight 77, the aircraft which apparently struck the Pentagon building. News reports (San Diego, 01), (BBC, 01), (Telegraph, 01) described two calls which Ms Olson made to her husband, Ted Olson, Solicitor General of the United States. The caller said she had locked herself in the lavatory and attempted to place the call to Mr. Olson ten times before the charges were accepted. The first conversation, in which the caller said, "Can you believe this, we are being hijacked," was cut short, for some reason. In a second attempt, the caller described men with box-cutters overpowering the flight crew, then asked: "What do I tell the pilot to do?"

The Olson call is neither less nor more mysterious than the calls previously analyzed. In this case it might be asked what advice Ted Olson could possibly have for the pilot (who was allegedly at the back of the plane with the passengers).

The foregoing analyses certainly do not prove that the cell phone operation actually took place. But they clearly demonstrate that all the conversations are consistent with such an operation, along with a sprinkling of tantalizing clues that are more consistent with the operation than actual in-flight calls. That is all one can hope for from such an analysis, even if the alternate scenario is correct or approximately correct.

In any case, there are serious doubts that the calls could have been made from cruising altitude or that they would not trigger cell phone network cascades at lower altitudes.

### **Interceptor Reprise**

If Flight 93 were hijacked by the alternate method outlined in this document, it may have been deliberately crashed. This is easily achieved by the INS portion of the method. Allegedly heading for the White House, the INS coordinates would be set for the (preselected) point of impact in an empty Pennsylvania field. The point would lie on a line pointing in the general direction of the White House. The aircraft's flight path would be a long, shallow dive, producing a high-speed crash would be sure to leave an extensive debris field.

Three F-16 fighters were apparently scrambled from a base in Langley, Virginia to shoot down Flight 93. They were, by

one estimate, about 14 minutes away from the aircraft when it crashed. Such a late scramble would be guaranteed to miss.

In the case of all four flights it would be crucial, once such an automated hijacking was in progress, that air force fighters not be deployed anywhere in their vicinity. As part of operating procedure during such intercepts, pilots are instructed to inspect the aircraft visually, including a look into the cockpit. Has the aircraft been hijacked? Under this scenario, the pilot would see the flying officers slumped over in their seats—and no guys with dark beards.

### **Virtual Hijackers**

One clue that the alleged terrorists are not everything they seem comes from the rather deep gulf between the stereotype and the reality. We have already seen, in the case of Ziad Jarrah, a young man who has no commitment to Islam, suddenly converted into a fiendish hijacker. As far as religion goes, almost every hijacker has displayed the same troubling discrepancy, as we shall see. At the same time, Jarrah earnestly wished to become an aeronautical engineer. If Islam (or 'Muslim fanaticism') did not divert him from his chosen course in life, who did? Perhaps no one.

Another puzzle is presented by Hani Hanjour, a small, shy lad who, throughout his teens in Saudi Arabia, wanted nothing more than to be a flight attendant. Despite the fact that Hanjour displayed little interest in his flying lessons, abandoning courses that he did not flunk outright, he was the alleged pilot of American Airlines Flight 77 which crashed into the Pentagon.

In 1998, Hanjour received a one-hour lesson after which, in the words of manager Wes Fults, "He had only the barest understanding of what the instruments were there to do." Yet by April 1999, by means that FAA officials refuse to discuss, Hanjour had obtained a commercial pilots license, capping several years of trying. In April of 1996 he attended a 30-minute class at the Sierra Academy of Aeronautics in Oakland California, never to return. The next month finds him in Scottsdale, Arizona, where he signed up for lessons at CRM Flight Cockpit Resource Management. Hanjour left after three months with no certificate. He returned one year later, stayed only a few weeks, then left again. Over the next three years, Hanjour called the Scottsdale School seeking re-admission but was rebuffed as having no pilot potential. In 1998 Hanjour enrolled at Sawyer Aviation in Phoenix, Arizona. He attended a handful of sessions on the flight simulator, then disappeared once again. (Goldstein et al., 2001)

In August of 2001, Hanjour arrived at the Freeway Airport in Bowie, Maryland. His attempt to get himself checked out in a single-engine plane ended once more in failure. Owing to his general incompetence, officials at Bowie refused to rent an aircraft to him. (Goldstein et al., 2001) In view of the fact that Hanjour could not manage to fly single-engine aircraft, it seems amazing that Hanjour piloted the Boeing passenger liner that hit the Pentagon right on target.

The other major discrepancy between stereotype and reality in the case of the alleged 19 (or 20) hijackers is religion. Perhaps Hanjour was the most religious of the lot, having been rather devout, according to his older brother, throughout his

youth. Hanjour was never observed flouting the rules of Islam openly, as several of his better-known colleagues were. Some of the other alleged hijackers were observed drinking alcohol and engaging in sexually promiscuous behavior.

How could it be possible for more than a dozen ‘hijackers’ to live in the United States for more than a year, doing what the media have reported them to have done, and yet not be hijackers at all? In this section, I will demonstrate how the men in question could have carried out all the actions reported of them, yet be entirely innocent of any ‘terrorist’ activity. It all depends on what the men themselves thought they were doing. Presently, I will sketch a ‘dirty trick’ (one among many possibilities) that will provide an in-principle answer to this question.

First, it will be necessary to develop a list of the ‘19’ alleged hijackers and to sort out some of the confusion surrounding their names. A preliminary list furnishes us with 19 names distributed among four aircraft:

United Airlines Flight 175 (WTC South Tower)

- Marwan Al-Shehri
- Fayez Ahmed
- Mohald Alshehri
- Hamza Alghamdi
- Ahmed Alghamdi

American Airlines Flight 11 (WTC North Tower)

- Waleed M. Alshehri
- Wail Alshehri
- Mohamed Atta
- Abdulaziz Alomari
- Satam Al Suqami

American Airlines Flight 77 (Pentagon)

- Khalid Al-Midhar
- Majed Moqed
- Nawaq Alhamzi
- Salem Alhamzi
- Hani Hanjour

United Airlines Flight 93 (Pennsylvania)

- Ahmed Alhaznawi
- Ahmed Alnami
- Ziad Jarrah(i)
- Saeed Alghamdi

Were there 20 ‘terrorists’ and not 19? One Amer Kenfer was also alleged to be on United Airlines Flight 175. Perhaps it doesn’t matter, since five of the hijackers’ names released by the FBI to the media proved to be mistakes. Kenfer, along with four others listed below, were identified by the FBI not only by name, but by occupation and birthdate. They all turned out to be not only alive and well, but outraged that they had been identified as ‘terrorists.’

- Waleed Al Shehri (BBC, 2001)
- Abdulaziz Al Omari (BBC, 2001)
- Ahmed Ibrahim Al Ghamdi (Islam Online, 2001)
- Fayez Mohammad al-Shehri (Islam Online 2001)

How could 25 percent of the hijackers be so misidentified? According to FBI sources, Arabic names are easy to confuse with one another. But how does one confuse birth dates and occupations? In more than one instance, the passports of these gentlemen had been stolen sometime in the past (Telegraph, 2001). This fact is certainly consistent with the alternate sce-

nario, although the mainstream US media has opined that passports were stolen by Al Qaida operatives prior to 2001. It is not clear why Al Qaida would carry out an operation that would deflect blame onto other Arabs. What possible difference could it make?

If the passports were, in fact, the incriminating element, then how would the FBI have gotten hold of them? They would not have survived the crashes and must have been left with rental vehicles. Such an explanation only strains our credulity even further. Were all 20 passports left in the rental vehicles? It is more reasonable to suppose that the FBI obtained the information from another source.

### **Magic Carpet Air Services**

Here is but one way that the trail left by the alleged hijackers could have been engineered prior to Sept. 11: Each of the men who are alleged to have been in the United States prior to the fateful day were lured there by promises of lucrative employment. Imagine a false front operation called ‘Magic Carpet Air Services.’ Here is the sales pitch delivered by an agent posing as a senior executive officer of a startup corporation by that name:

*“We propose to call our new venture ‘Magic Carpet Air Services.’ Although it will operate primarily as a high-speed executive jet service between major Middle Eastern cities and beyond, it will also explore a variety of other opportunities, including specialized cargo operations, agricultural spraying and other things that we are continuing to look into. We need, at this point, a group of talented gentlemen like yourselves to form the managerial core of the company. Other managers and staff will be recruited later, but we need a core staff and you gentlemen will have the inside track. In the months to come, you will be given every opportunity to display the kind of initiative and imagination that we are looking for. You will be paid, of course, and paid generously. But those of you who survive the training period will find yourselves paid far better, once we launch the enterprise.*

*You will all attend a variety of training sessions, including flight training, in order to familiarize yourselves with the various operations of the proposed air services. By no means will you achieve professional levels but we want you to understand the various operations of our proposed company. It is well known that managerial staff with some hands-on experience make better decisions than those without it. We will also require that you set a good example for the employees to follow by encouraging good health habits, eating sensibly, getting lots of sleep, and working out regularly.*

*Now I must ask, for reasons of corporate security, not to discuss the company or its goals with anyone, including friends and relatives. We want to be in position to get the jump on our competitors, once we have begun operations.”*

Since only nine of the alleged 19 hijackers left paper trails, the training scenario may apply only to the nine persons. The operation would have commenced no later than early 1999, the time when the paper trail begins. Of particular interest are the public activities of Mohamed Atta, as remembered by several

different witnesses in 2000. In mid-March of that year, he moved into the apartment of Amanda Keller, a woman of dubious virtue with hair dyed a bright pink. Keller can no longer be located. (MCMN, 2002b) Between the end of April and the third week of May, Johnette Bryant, a Dept. of Agriculture loan officer, states that Atta applied for a USDA loan to buy a crop duster. (MCMN, 2002b) The FBI has vehemently denied both allegations, possibly because Atta was supposed to be still in Hamburg, recruiting potential suicide pilots such as Ziad Jarrah.

The official timeline has Atta arriving in the US on June 3, 2000. Previously bearded, Atta had shaved his face clean. In July of 2000, Atta and Marwan AlShehhi enrolled at Huffman Aviation in Venice, Florida, while Nawaq Alhamzi and Khalid Al-Midhar began flight training in San Diego, California. (ABC, 2001) The latter pair terminated training early, owing to problems with English. They are alleged to have gone to Arizona for more training. In Florida, where most of the trainees lived, several may have tried to follow the health advice of the 'executive' by regularly attending the World Gym in Boynton Beach, Florida. They showed little enthusiasm for the workouts, however. "Waleed Al-Shehri, Wail Alshri, and Satam Al-Suqami simply clustered around a small circuit of machines, never asking for help [...] never pushing any weights." Atta, on the other hand, worked out very hard. (Golden & Moss, 2002)

At Huffman Aviation, where Atta and Al-Shehhi were enrolled for flight training, they apparently told the director that they would be working in the United Arab Emirates. They obtained their pilots licenses on December 21, 2000. On December 29 of that year, both men took three hours training each on a Boeing 727 flight simulator in Opa-locka near Miami.

The alleged hijackers, notably Atta, left a well-marked trail involving witness memories, video surveillance tapes, car rental records, and so on. Those in charge of the Magic Carpet operation would know the movements of their charges, later greatly facilitating the FBI investigation by being able to suggest specific venues where records would be available. The movements of Atta, for example, are now known through a few scattered records. (ABC, 2001) They are consistent not only with a terrorist planning a hugely ambitious attack on the United States, but with an earnest dupe (of relatively low morals) keen on earning the huge salary promised by Magic Carpet Air Services.

The trail left by Atta, as we have it today, involves only those activities that support, in one way or another, his role as a terrorist. However, each activity has a parallel interpretation under the Magic Carpet scenario. For example, in January of 2001, Atta flew to Madrid, returning after six days. Was he consulting with the upper echelons of Al Qaeda or taking a vacation thanks to his inflated salary? In February and March of 2001, Atta and others are remembered as having inquired about crop-dusting planes at the agricultural spraying firm of South Florida Crop Care. Again in August of the same year, Atta and friends made inquiries at another crop-dusting operation in Belle Glade, Florida. Were they planning anthrax attacks or learning about crop-dusting operations for Magic Carpet Air Services?

From mid-May to mid-June, Atta and Al-Shehhi lived in Hollywood, Florida while they took flight training. For Al

Qaeda or Magic Carpet? In late June, Atta traveled to Las Vegas, meeting there with Alhazmi, Hanjour, Al-Shehhi and Jarrah. Another Las Vegas meeting in mid-August included Hanjour and Alhamzi. Were these an Qaeda planning sessions or a Magic Carpet business meetings?

A succession of flights by Atta in June and July of that year (Ft. Lauderdale to Boston, Boston to New York, Newark to Ft. Lauderdale) are just as consistent with the Magic Carpet operation as they are with the al Qaeda scenario. Again, in early July, Atta flew to Spain again, touring the country for 12 days, an activity which is somewhat more consistent with an extended vacation (encouraged by Magic Carpet executives) than it is with an al Qaeda strategy session.

On July 31, a waitress and bartender at the Pelican Alley restaurant in Venice, Fl overheard Atta, Al Shehhi, and a third heavy-set gentleman are overheard arguing about money. Big guy:

*"We're talking \$200,000. We've got to answer to the family!"*

The waitress thought they were mafia. (MCMN, 2002a) The figure of \$200,000 happens to coincide with the estimated cost of the September 11 operation to al Qaida. In this context it could as easily be an argument about salaries.

Equally bland activities in mid-August involve a four day car rental by Atta and Al-Shehhi in Pompano Beach and a three-day rental of a Piper aircraft at Palm Beach. Were they visiting Al Qaeda operatives or touring air service sites or just vacationing?

After purchasing two tickets for American Airlines Flight 11 (on the internet) in late August, Atta appeared in Shuckum's Oyster Bar in Hollywood, Florida. Atta drank Cranberry juice and played the pinball machine while his colleague Al-Shehhi drank alcohol with a third, unidentified man. Was the third party another hijacker or an executive with Magic Carpet?

On what may well have been their last night on Earth, Atta, Alomari, and Al-Shehhi visit the Red Eyed Jacks sports bar in Daytona Beach, where they spent heavily on drinks and lap dancers. There may or may not have been a fourth party with them. The celebrants were careful to engage in some audible (and possibly prompted) America-bashing, saying "Wait 'til tomorrow, America is going to see bloodshed." They were also careful to leave a Qur'an on the bar, of course. (CBS News, 2001)

Later that evening, Atta and Alomari checked into the Comfort Inn in South Portland. Security cameras caught them at a nearby gas station, at two separate ATMs and in the local Wal Mart. Was this the night before the alleged suicide missions or, as far as the Magic Carpet trainees were concerned, just another business trip? (ABC, 2001) In what must have been a superhuman effort, the FBI spent literally thousands of hours going through miles of videotape from every ATM, gas station and supermarket in the area. How else could they have come upon the tapes so quickly?

It is quite possible that no Magic Carpet operation, or anything like it, was ever launched. Instead, Atta and at least some of the others were well aware that they were 'going through motions,' earning large sums of money in the process, thanks to CIA paymasters. One piece of evidence that supports this pos-

sibility are rumors that appeared in Newsweek magazine, the Washington Post and the Miami Herald in 2001 (MCMN, 2001). These media outlets alleged that Atta had attended International Officers School at Maxwell Air Force Base in Montgomery Alabama.

The 'mother of all hijackers' is, of course, Ousama bin Laden himself. Since September 11, 2001, videotapes of bin Laden pontifications have turned up in abandoned houses, caves, and other venues with a frequency sufficient to warrant charges of littering against Al Qaida. The tapes, which were made with unbelievable incompetence, have extremely fuzzy sound tracks which can be interpreted to mean almost anything. In the earlier tapes, this can be put down to casual incompetence, but in the later ones, which the makers would know were going to media outlets, the fuzzy sound tracks are frankly not possible. The tapes varied in content, from discussions of the Trade Center attacks to explanations of why Al Qaida is attacking western targets. The scripts are laid out in contemporary Islamic boilerplate which students of Middle Eastern politics would instantly recognize.

Suspicion that some or all of the interpretations are essentially faked has been widespread since late 2001. For example, a videotape reported to contain the complete text of a declamation against the west was found in late November, 2002. The text, subsequently published in many newspapers, aroused widespread indignation against bin Laden and Al Qaida (not to mention an accompanying deepening of the mistrust with which Arabs and/or Muslims are viewed in North America). The tape was analyzed by the Swiss AI Institute, which issued a statement saying that the audio portion of the tape was not compatible with the video portion, being superadded at another time. (SMH, 2002)

### **Mopping up**

The extensive 'training program,' the hitech hijacking, and the cell phone operation would involve dozens of persons. If Mossad were to carry out such an operation, for example, many of the operatives would be Mossad officers (katsas) and helpers (sayanim), as well as outsiders with appropriate talents for various special tasks. Although Mossad personnel can be counted on to keep their mouths shut, what can one do about those who might talk too much? Harsh though it may seem, the simplest thing to do is to get rid of the unreliable personnel -- for good.

The simplest and most effective way to 'mop up' after a highly sensitive operation involving many operatives is to put the less reliable ones on a passenger aircraft with a cover story that they are being sent to an out-of-the-way place 'for their own good' until things blow over. On October 4th, 2001, less than one month after the aircraft hijackings, a Sibur Airlines TU-154 flying from Tel Aviv to Novosibirsk went down in the Black Sea, killing all 77 passengers and aircrew. Initial reports indicated two explosions, one at altitude, the other just before impact, leading some to suspect that two bombs had been placed aboard the aircraft. However, the story changed within days when US 'officials' stated that the aircraft had been shot down by Ukrainian missiles during military exercises, a charge flatly denied by Ukrainian military spokespersons. (CNN, 2001)

### **What is 'Complicated'?**

Some readers have complained that the alternate scenario spelled out in this document is 'too complicated.' Complication, however, is a purely relative matter. What may seem 'too complicated' to me or to you may turn out to be quite simple when the goal of an operation is taken into account. Consider, for example, the relatively minor goal of an operation described by former Mossad officer Victor Ostrovsky while still working for Mossad and assigned to a European post. (Ostrovsky & Hoy, 1990)

It was learned from internal sources that the Syrian Air Attaché was going to Europe to buy furniture for new administrative quarters that had been constructed for the Syrian Air Force in Damascus. Mossad planned to take advantage of this information by planting listening devices in the furniture at some point between purchase and delivery. The perceived potential payoff in new information made the following 'complicated' operation worthwhile.

With three weeks before the purchase was to be made, operatives had to move fast. They set up a dummy furniture brokerage company, printed expensive brochures, trained an officer (katsa) in sales techniques and sales lingo, brought in cooperators (sayanim) to stage a scene, followed the movements of both the Air Attaché and his Aide during the few days they were in Brussels, waited for the Attaché to leave for Paris, followed the Aide to an expensive furniture store, brought in a katsa pretending to be a furniture broker, brought in a sayan posing as a satisfied customer, had the sayan thank the katsa profusely within earshot of the Aide for a wonderful deal, had the sayan leave, and had the katsa engage the Aide in conversation, showing him a brochure of expensive furniture.

The Aide was so impressed by the marvelous deal, as spelled out by the katsa, that he agreed at once and sat down with the katsa to draw up a shopping list of tables, chairs, and what have you. The deal became irresistible when the Aide realized that he could pocket the difference between list price and the actual amount being charged by the 'salesman.' Mossad then purchased the items, shipping two of the tables to Israel by private jet, where Mossad experts spent days installing complicated microphones and radio gear, sending the tables back to Brussels, then shipping the entire purchase to Syria.

The overall operation was a good deal more complicated than this. It may well be asked, 'Why so complicated?' especially for such a minor payback. Given the value of the goal to Mossad, however, and the mere fact that the plan was feasible, Mossad proceeded with the operation. Under the circumstances, it may well have been the simplest method. According to Ostrovsky, such operations are routine. Modern intelligence organizations like Mossad not only gather intelligence, they create 'facts,' frame people, carry out assassinations, organize political events, and even provide training for militants in other countries.

How much more complication would be allowable for a really important operation like hijacking four aircraft and blaming it on Arab terrorists? Considering the payoff, the methods outlined here are not only relatively simple, but not atypical of methods in the Mossad playbook.

## Who Benefited?

If the September 11 attacks are regarded as an unsolved crime, the most reasonable approach is to follow standard criminal investigation technique, asking in effect, 'Who benefited?' Assuming for the moment that Al Qaida is not the perpetrator, the finger of suspicion swings 180 degrees; Ehud Sprinzak, an Israeli expert on terrorism at the Hebrew University in Jerusalem, referred to the attacks as follows:

*"From the perspective of Jews, it is the most important public relations act ever committed in our favor."* (Jackson, 2001)

This observation ties in with a news report that was nearly lost in the post-September 11 shuffle.

Within an hour of the attacks on the WTC towers, five Israelis were spotted in a parking lot near Liberty State Park in New Jersey, directly across the Hudson River from the twin trade towers. Three of them stood on the roof of a white cube van, taking videos of the disaster and, according to an eyewitness who watched them through binoculars, shouting with cries of joy and mockery. (Melman, 2001) The witness, who watched the five from a building adjacent to the parking lot, reported their strange behavior to the FBI immediately. The five men, described as "Israeli tourists," were picked up by the FBI, two of them being subsequently identified as working for "Israeli intelligence." (ABC, 2002) The five were held for approximately two months, then deported to Israel. This apparently real celebration provides an ironic contrast with the faked Palestinian one.

Certain elements in the United States also stand to benefit. First, there was an immediate excuse to engage in a lengthy military exercise that would involve the expenditure of hundreds of millions of dollars worth of munitions, a plus for the arms industry. Strategically, the United States would also benefit from the ensuing 'war on terrorism' because it promises to secure American control of the extraordinarily rich Central Asian oil fields via Afghanistan, the natural pipeline corridor to the Persian Gulf. Of course, Afghanistan was the alleged base of Al Qaida operations.

If the United States and Israel are jointly culpable of this crime, it would not be unfair to ask what role each played in the disaster. Under the alternative scenario, it would seem likely that by secret arrangement Israel's Mossad took care of the aircraft attacks under a separate (and purely oral) 'contract.' That way, the right hand would not know what the left hand was doing, except in the most general terms; elements in the US government would have known that some kind of attack was coming.

In one of many ironic twists that accompany this scenario, the declaration by the US Department of State that they had definite information that Al Qaida was responsible may actually have been true.

## Implications of the Alternative Scenario

If the September 11 attacks were planned and executed as a combined clandestine operation between Mossad and some US agencies such as the CIA and NSA (with God knows what involvement by the Joint Chiefs and the White House), it can be reliably inferred that other attacks blamed on Al Qaida are also

fakes or 'dirty tricks' in CIA parlance. These would include the bombing of the US embassies in Kenya and Tanzania on August 7, 1998, as well as the attack on the USS Cole on October 12, 2000, in the port of Aden, Yemen.

Self-attack is the theme of some scandalous proposals of the Joint Chiefs and the National Security Agency to launch attacks on American targets, blaming them on Cuban terrorists some decades ago. (Bamford, 2001) The schemes code-named "Operation Northwoods" and "Operation Mongoose" both involved terror attacks, mostly on US soil. The attacks included blowing up a ship at the US naval base in Guantanamo, Cuba, sinking boatloads of refugees, mounting a 'communist' terror campaign in Miami which included bombings and the assassination of prominent Cuban exiles. More to the point, a proposal signed by the Joint Chiefs of Staff and presented to President Kennedy involved a 'real or simulated' airliner hijacking which would result in the deaths of all aboard. The purpose of the proposal was to blame Cubans, recruiting public opinion to the point where the media would back a direct military invasion of the country. (Kennedy rejected the plan.)

It would consequently be fair to infer that Al Qaida itself is not exactly your run-of-the-mill terrorist operation. (As the only Arabic word in the Scrabble dictionary, "qaid" might well be the inspiration for the original name of the organization.) The possibility emerges that Al Qaida is a front under joint Israel-US control. Links between bin Laden and the CIA, as well as between the bin Laden and Bush families are well known. With "Al Qaida" performing the necessary terrorist services, the United States gets a free hand to engage in whatever military operations it likes, while Israel gets a free hand on the West Bank and Gaza. This in no way precludes the possibility that some members of Al Qaida may think they belong to a genuine terrorist organization, including bin Laden himself. (The whole operation becomes increasingly reminiscent of Joseph Heller's novel, *Catch-22*, wherein Milo Minderbinder sells US Air Force bombing services to the Germans.)

Unfortunately, we are not living in a novel or a movie. However, the surreal quality of the September 11 attacks, noted by many observers, may be an unwitting, grassroots comment on the overly-dramatic, near-cinematic quality of the attacks. What might be called 'Hollywood evil' (rather than the 'banal evil' thought to lie behind the Jewish Holocaust, for example) has been invoked in the form of a terrorist who has no real cause, who, having being made insane by his religion, simply loves to kill people and looks forward to martyrdom. (Or perhaps he is "envious of western civilization.") Such imagery has played a key role in media reporting on the Middle East since well before the September 11 attacks.

## Why Now?

Under the alternate scenario, the timing of the September 11 terror attacks can be directly related to Israel's discomfiture, one should say extreme discomfiture, with a slow turning of the tide of public opinion in the west against Israel for its treatment of the Palestinians. The change is more noticeable in Europe than in North America, but Israel has feared that as time went on, more and more Americans would become disillusioned with Israel and there would be increasing political pressure on



elected officials to begin changing America's relationship with Israel.

This was not to be tolerated, as more than \$100 billion dollars (probably a conservative estimate) has been sent from the United States to Israel since the 1950s. With this money and only with this money, most of it 'foreign aid,' much of it in donations, Israel has been able to survive economically. Much of the foreign aid money goes right back to the United States, being spent on American arms.

Among the pressure items prompting Israel to act now was the UN conference on racism in Durban which addressed, among other matters, the issue of Israeli state racism. American and Israeli delegates walked out of the conference as soon as the item was raised.

Another pressure item was the filing by Palestinian complainants of a brief to the Belgian Court of International Law on the June 18 2001. The Palestinians were survivors of the Sabra and Shatila massacres in Lebanon in 1982. Their brief singled out Ariel Sharon and other Israelis. It came just one day after a BBC documentary concluded that Sharon was indictable for war crimes and crimes against humanity. Thought to constitute a strong legal challenge, the complaint seemed likely to lead to trial. Sharon would be charged under the 1993 Law for the Repression of Grave Breaches of the Geneva Conventions of 1949 and of additional Protocols I and II. Sharon took the prospects of a trial seriously enough to hire a Belgian lawyer Michele Hirsch to derail the proceedings.

American policy in the Middle East, broadly conceived, has come to resemble Israel's policy on the West Bank and in relation to neighboring Arab states. Israel, which has been using the word 'terrorist' for several decades, urging it upon the US media at every opportunity, uses the label to obscure the roots of 'terrorism' in its own policies in the West Bank, Gaza, and in neighboring Arab states. Its continuing response to Palestinian militancy seems calculated to guarantee a continuing source of violence that permits Israel to pose as a victim, rather than a perpetrator.

### The Media

Sadly, ever since the Gulf War, the US media, particularly television news operations, have been under strict control of the Pentagon in any and all matters relating to military reporting. (MacArthur, 1993) Gone are the days of the independent reporter roaming the war zone, as was the case in Vietnam. Reporters who do not toe the Pentagon line, adopting its interpretation of events, are simply not invited to press briefings. The

media have, furthermore, been subtly influenced into adopting the 'terrorist' spin urged upon it by parties with an interest in promoting hatred of Arabs and/or Muslims.

In this context the American news media have become enthusiastic partners in the war on terrorism, serving narrow interests that it interprets as 'American.' Under the scenario developed in this report, it can be reasonably be suggested that had the media not allowed its own best interests to be undermined in this way over the last two decades, the September 11 attacks would not have taken place. For without the guarantee of a news media already programmed to fall instantly into line with the 'terrorism' spin urged upon it by the Pentagon, the planners of this tragedy would surely have thought twice. (Where are Woodward and Bernstein when you really need them?)

By allowing the 'terrorist' to become a separate, amorphous entity, straight out of Central Casting, the media have guaranteed that legitimate struggles for self-determination, driven as they sometimes are to violent expression, will result in more 'terrorists,' involving American forces in a never-ending search for the boogey-man of the new millennium:

*"So cowboy change your ways to-day or with us you will ride chasing this devil herd across these endless skies."*

### Summary

This document describes an alternate method to achieve the effects witnessed on the morning of September 11, 2001. There can be little doubt that the method, consisting of the sarin/INS component and the cell phone operation, will work. No claim is made that this method was actually used, only that a clandestine operation by the side with the most to gain happens to be more consistent with various facts on the ground (about which there is no dispute) than is the standard explanation involving 'Arab hijackers' and Al Qaida.

These facts include the political background, wherein Al Qaida is the only terrorist organization ever to attack a target or targets without claiming responsibility, and wherein Israel and the United States are the real beneficiaries of the attacks.

The alternate scenario is also more consistent with the following events than is the standard explanation: intelligence leaks; the virtual celebration in Palestine on the day of the attacks; the prior attempt to blow up the World Trade Center towers; the missing interceptors; the missing passengers; the missing black boxes; the (apparently) planted evidence; the mystery of Ziad Jarrah. In short, if the entire constellation of events behind the September 11 attacks is regarded as a jigsaw

puzzle, the pieces of the puzzle already in place would represent the facts which everyone knows and about which there is no disagreement from any quarter. The pieces not yet placed include the White House scenario and the alternate scenario described here. The first piece has the right overall shape but,



### About the Author

Dr. Dewdney is a well known Canadian computer scientist, who used to write *Mathematical Recreations* for *Scientific American* magazine, author of numerous books and academic publications, and Professor Emeritus of the University of Western Ontario. A. K. Dewdney is also a student of Middle Eastern affairs and a supporter of human rights. He can be reached by email at [akd@uwo.ca](mailto:akd@uwo.ca) or by telephone at (519) 6798-8105. Academic website: [www.csd.uwo.ca/faculty/akd/](http://www.csd.uwo.ca/faculty/akd/).

when we try to actually put it in the proposed space of the puzzle, it doesn't actually fit. The piece proposed by the White House must find a very different place in the puzzle, perhaps in the cover-story corner.

One may approach the problems posed by the official White House explanation of September 11 from a scientific point of view. What is the probability that the standard explanation is correct? To find out, one would simply multiply the probabilities of the component parts: Thus if one says that interceptors are sent up only half the time when airliners go off course (instead of all the time), that black boxes are found only half the time (instead of virtually all the time), that passengers are missing from passenger lists half the time (instead of rarely), that at least one out of 100 cell phone calls get through at least half the time, then the probability that all four elements are present in an event (without taking any of the other elements into account) is no more than one-sixteenth. This should be enough to make any rational person suspicious, especially as this brief probability analysis goes out of its way to favor the official explanation.

The author is aware of allegations made by others that the Pentagon attack was in some manner faked, involving a much smaller aircraft, that the WTC towers were assisted in their demolition by planted explosives, and that approximately 130 Israelis that should have been among the WTC dead were not. Such possibilities have been excluded from the present analysis for the sake of simplicity and without further comment. Also excluded is the analysis of potentially endless faked terror attacks, such as the bombing in Bali (Israeli-made C4 plastic explosive discovered on site) or the Washington area sniper (Mr. Muhamad's name was not actually Muhamad, he had no 'white van,' etc. etc.).

## Recommendations

The mere possibility that the September 11 attacks had a quite different source demands two responses:

1. An open, public inquiry into the attacks should be set up under an independent judicial body. Investigations currently under way in the US Congress may well be compromised by the attempts of Bush and Cheney to limit their scope, itself a suspicious circumstance.
2. The evidence presented in the trials of Salameh, Ayyad and others in relation to the 1993 Trade Center bombing should be re-examined by an independent judicial body in open hearings.

## Recommended Reading

N. M. Ahmed, *The War on Freedom: How and why America was attacked, September 11, 2001*, Tree of Life Publications, CA, 2002. This book is ably researched and documented by a well-known scholar with impeccable credentials. The present article complements Ahmed's book which misses only one major element—a genuine alternate scenario for the events of September 11, 2001. It can be found in many book stores or ordered on amazon.com, as well.

## References

Note: the reference technique used here is non-standard in that it lists the reference in parentheses next to the reference itself. This was done to ease the process of checking or consulting references by lay readers who may be unfamiliar

with reference systems.

- (ABC, 2001) ABC. 2001 (November 12). A mission to die for. Four Corners, ABC TV. Retrieved October 3, 2002 from <http://www.abc.net.au/4corners/atta/default.htm>.
- (AVWeb, 1999) Dahler C. 1999. AVWeb letters. Retrieved November 20, 2002 from <http://www.avweb.com/other/avma9910.html>
- (Bamford, 2001) Bamford J. 2001. *Body of Secrets: Anatomy of the Ultra-secret National Security Agency*, New York, NY: Houghton-Mifflin.
- (BBC, 2001) British Broadcasting Corporation, 2001. Final calls from doomed flights, Retrieved November 3, 2002, from <http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/world/americas/1539193.stm>
- (CBS News, 2001) CBS News (AP), 2001. Focus on Florida. September 124, 2001. Retrieved October 2, 2002, from <http://www.cbsnews.com/stories/2001/09/14/national/main311268.shtml>
- (CNN, 2001) Cable Network News. 2001. Trade Center Victims. Retrieved January 22, 2002, from <http://www.cnn.com/SPECIALS/2001/trade.center/victims/ua175.victims.html>
- (Dror, 2001) Dror Y. 2001. Odigo says workers were warned of attack. Israel: *Ha'aretz*. (September 27)
- (Eager & Musso, 2001) Eager TW, Musso C. 2001. Why did the World Trade Center collapse? Science, engineering, and speculation. *Journal of the Minerals, Metals, and Materials Society*. 53 (12): 8-11. <http://www.tms.org/pubs/journals/JOM/0112/Eagar/Eagar-0112.html> Retrieved December 17, 2001.
- (FAA, 1998) 1998 (July 3). Special military operations. Chapter 4, section 5, Federal Aviation Agency Order 7610.4J. <http://www2.faa.gov/ATpubs/MIL/Ch4/mil0405.html>
- (FAA, 2001) 2001 (July 12). Emergency situations. Chapter 10, section 2-5, Federal Aviation Agency Order 7110.65M. <http://www.faa.gov/ATpubs/ATC/Chp10/atc1002.html>
- (Fraizer, 2002) Fraizer J. How do I log on while in flight? North American Network Operators. (June 27 2002) <http://www.irbs.net/internet/nanog/0206/0907.html> . Retrieved Sept. 3, 2002.
- (Golden & Moss, 2002) Golden T, Moss M. Terrorists exploited anonymity and freedom offered by US. *Rutland Herald*. September 30, 2002. Retrieved September 30, 2002, from <http://rutlandherald.nybor.com/News/Story/34311.html>
- (Goldstein et al., 2001) Goldstein A, Sun, LH, Lardner G Jr. Hanjour an unlikely terrorist. (adapted by) *Cape Cod Times*. October 21, 2001. Retrieved September 30, 2002, from <http://www.unansweredquestions.net/timeline/2001/capecodtimes102101.html>
- (Harter, 2001) Harter B. Final Contact. *Wireless Review* (November 1, 2001) [www.wirelessreview.com/ar/wireless\\_final\\_contact\\_2/](http://www.wirelessreview.com/ar/wireless_final_contact_2/) Retrieved Sept. 3, 2002.
- (Ostrovsky & Hoy, 1990) Hoy C, Ostrovsky V. 1990. *By Way of Deception*. Toronto, Canada: Stoddart.
- (IIIEa, 2001) Institute of Islamic Information and Education. 2001. Who did it and why? Retrieved November 4, 2001, from [www.iiie.net/Articles/WTCbombing.html](http://www.iiie.net/Articles/WTCbombing.html). (See also <http://www.iiie.net/Articles/WTCbombing.html>)
- (IIIEb, 2001) Institute of Islamic Information and Education. 2001. Passenger Lists: Where were the Arabs on those airplanes? Retrieved December 19, 2001, from <http://www.iiie.net/Sept11/PassengerLists.html> - LINK NO LONGER AVAILABLE
- (Islam Online, 2001) Islam online.net. September 17, 2001. Saudi suspects in US attacks were not in the US. Retrieved September 29, 2002, from <http://islam-online.net/English/News/2001-09/17/article11.shtml>
- (Jackson, 2001) Jackson DZ. 2001. A call for us to be fair to Palestinians. Boston, MA: *The Globe*. (September 19, 2001) See also <http://www.commondreams.org/views01/0921-01.htm>. Retrieved December 17, 2001.
- (MCMN, 2001) Hopsicker D. 2001. Atta, Dekkers & the Venice Flying Circus. *Mad Cow Morning News*, November 13, 2001. Retrieved October 2, 2002, from <http://www.madcowprod.com/index9.html>
- (MCMN, 2002a) Hopsicker D. 2002. Says waitress of terror pilots: "I thought they were mafia!" *Mad Cow Morning News*, April 8, 2002. Retrieved October 2, 2002, from <http://www.madcowprod.com/index23a.html>
- (MCMN, 2002b) Hopsicker D. 2002. FBI Bungles Terrorist Atta's Timeline By At Least Three Months. *Mad Cow Morning News*, September 18, 2002. Retrieved December 9, 2002, from <http://www.madcowprod.com/index34.html>

- (MacArthur, 1993) MacArthur JR. 1993. *Second Front*. Berkeley, CA: University of California Press.
- (MacIntyre, 2001) MacIntyre L. November 2001. Portrait of an Enigma. The Fifth Estate. Toronto, Canada: Canadian Broadcasting Corporation.
- (Melman, 2001) Melman Y. 2001. Five Israelis detained for puzzling behaviour after tragedy. Israel: *Ha'aretz*. (September 22, 2001)
- (Morales & DeRienzo, 1995) Morales F, DeRienzo P. 1995. Who bombed the World Trade Center? FBI bomb builders exposed! *The Shadow*. (October-January 1995) Retrieved November 1, 2001, from <http://www.lectlaw.com/files/cur46.htm>
- <http://www.smh.com.au/articles/2002/11/29/1038386299712.html>(NTSB, 2002) National Transportation Safety Board. Cockpit Voice Recorders (CVR) and Flight Data Recorders (FDR) [http://www.nts.gov/aviation/CVR\\_FDR.htm](http://www.nts.gov/aviation/CVR_FDR.htm) Retrieved February 2, 2002.
- (Pringle, 1994) Pringle P. 1994. World Trade Center bombing: Four guilty of New York bomb attack. To [http://www.nationalpost.com/features/siege/March\\_5\\_1994.html](http://www.nationalpost.com/features/siege/March_5_1994.html) Toronto, Canada: *National Post*. (March 4) Retrieved November 10, 2001 - NO LONGER RETRIEVABLE
- (Quinn, 2001) Quinn A. 2001. Widow presses FBI to release hijack cockpit tape. *Reuters News Service*. San Francisco. (December 27) (See also <http://www.discussanything.com/forums/archive/15/2001/11/4/2421> for text of story.)
- (Roddy et al., 2001) Roddy DB, Lash C, Levin S, and Silver JD. Flight 93: Forty lives, one destiny. *The Pittsburgh Post-Gazette*. Oct 28, 2001. See also <http://www.post-gazette.com/headlines/20011028flt93mainstory7.asp>, Retrieved August 24, 2002.
- (Ruppert, 2002) Ruppert MC. 2002. Interviewed on YTV, Canada. 8:00 pm, March 16, 2002.
- (Safford, 1975) Safford EL. 1975. *Aviation Electronics Handbook*. Blue Ridge Summit, PA: Tab Books.
- (San Diego, 2001) *San Diego Union-Tribune*. 2001. Author calls spouse from doomed plane. Retrieved November 8, 2002, from [http://www.signonsandiego.com/news/nation/terror/firstweek/20010912-9999\\_1n12olson.html](http://www.signonsandiego.com/news/nation/terror/firstweek/20010912-9999_1n12olson.html)
- (SMH, 2002) *Sydney Morning Herald*. Nov. 29, 2002. Swiss institute brands latest bin Laden tape a fake. Retrieved December 05, 2002, from <http://www.smh.com.au/articles/2002/11/29/1038386299712.html>
- (Spitzer, 1987) Spitzer CL. 1987. *Digital Avionics Systems*, New York, NY: McGraw Hill.
- (Stern, 2001) Stern D. 2001. News embargo after Israeli security leak. *Stern Intel* (Canada). September 13, 2001. Retrieved September 13, 2001, from [sternintel@hotmail.com](mailto:sternintel@hotmail.com)
- (Telegraph, 2001) Harrison, D. 2001. Revealed: the men with stolen identities. *The Telegraph*. London. September 23, 2001. Retrieved September 29, 2002, from <http://www.unansweredquestions.org/timeline/2001/telegraph092301.html>
- (Ummat, 2001) Ummat, Pakistan. September 28, 2001.
- (Vialls, 2001) Vialls J. 2001. "Home Run": Electronically hijacking the WTC attack aircraft. Retrieved January 22, 2002, from <http://www.geocities.com/mknemesis/homerun.html>
- (WRH, 2001) WhatReallyHappened.com - United Airlines Flight 175 Passengers. 2001. Retrieved January 22, 2001, from <http://www.whatreallyhappened.com/U175pass.html>

## Cell Phone Experiments in Airliners

*By Germar Rudolf*

Since the topic discussed above seems to be of utmost importance, I decided to make my own experiments while traveling from Chicago, IL, to Burlington, VT, to a family anniversary of a friend.

### Phones

- Audiovox CDM 9000 with Verizon Wireless network.
- Nokia 8260 with Cingular Wireless network.

### Travel Data

1. Trip: Aircraft: Airbus A320. United Airlines Flight 568. Take off from Chicago O'Hare on Friday, July 18, 2003, nominal take off at 18:05 central summer time. Weather conditions: sunny, only a few clouds at both start and arrival in Burlington, VT, at 20:54 eastern summer time.

2. Trip: Aircraft: Airbus A319. United Airlines Flight 397. Take off from Burlington, VT, on Sunday, July 20, 2003, 17:40 eastern summer time. Weather conditions: sunny, only a few clouds at both start and arrival. Arrival at Chicago O'Hare at 19:00 central summer time.

### Experiments

While starting, only the Audiovox phone was used. While the plane was still accelerating on the runway, I dialed into my voice message box and received a clear and immediate connection just when the plane took off. I hung up right away and dialed again. As the plane ascended quickly, I received another immediate and clear connection, but this time I entered my PIN number waiting for the message service to grant me access to

my messages. However, the connection was lost, and any attempt to reestablish a connection failed. After another minute, the phone complained with a loud alarm tone that no service was available. According to a later inquiry with the pilots, the plane reached an altitude above ground of 15,000 ft (4,575 m) within five minutes.

During this high altitude flight at 37,000 ft, no service was ever available. As soon as the plane started to descend toward Burlington, both cell phones were switched back on in an attempt to get any service. As soon as the phones gave up on searching service, they were turned off and turned on again so that the phones would again search for service. Several minutes before the pilot put out the landing gear at 20:49 EST, both phones indicated that they had found service, but any attempt to get any connection to the voice message boxes with either of the phones failed. On 20:51, two minutes after the landing gear was pulled out, a clear and stable connection to the voice message system could be established by both phones. This connection could be reestablished at will until the plane touched down at 20:54. Asked for his assistance, the pilot explained that he had put out the landing gear at an altitude above ground of 2,000 ft (610 m) at a speed of 200 knots (230 mph/371 km/h).

Since no information could be gained about the exact altitude above ground for the exact time when a cell phone connection gets interrupted during take off—not even this point in time is exactly known—no experiments were done at take off from Burlington.

When descending toward Chicago, the Nokia/Cingular phone could not establish any service at any time until after the aircraft had landed. The Audiovox/Verizon cell phone managed

to get service just as we flew in over Lake Michigan from the east at an estimated altitude above ground of around 6,000 feet. However, none of the uninterrupted attempts to get a connection was successful. This cell phone signal was lost again as we flew out toward the center of the lake, and was re-established as we approach the west coast of Lake Michigan. Uninterrupted attempts to establish a connection to the mailbox continued to fail until one minute after the pilot had pulled out the landing gear some 6 to 8 miles west of the coast of Lake Michigan at 18:56. The first successful connection appeared at 18:57. The second one established right thereafter was immediate and clear until the plane touched down at 19:00. According to the pilot, the landing gear must be pulled out when flying at an altitude of 1,500 ft at the latest (457.5 m). He could not remember exactly at which height he actually pulled the gear, but stated that it was well above that mark, probably at some 2,200 to 2,500 ft (671-762.5 m) at a speed of some 200 knots (230 mph/371 km/h).

Whereas the Nokia phone user was seated one seat away from the window in both descends, the Audiovox user was seated two seats away from the window during the first descent toward Burlington, but right at a window during the descent to Chicago. As a matter of fact, this cell phone was held only 10 cm away from a window to ensure best reception.

### Conclusion

Burlington, VT, lies within a more rural area, whereas Chicago is the third largest city of the U.S. with one of the best developed cellular networks. In spite of this, the results were similar in both cases for the Verizon Wireless network, which prides itself on being the best developed in the U.S. The reason why the second phone failed to establish any service in the Chicago area until after landing is unknown.

Cell phones traveling in airliners can get a service signal at heights up to some 6,000 ft, but it is not possible to make a connection, at least not while traveling at the usual cruising speed of a normal airliner (500-550 mph). Since in all cases (if at all) connections could only be established well after the pilots have pulled out the landing gear at some 2,000 ft and at a cruising speed of 230 mph or less, it seems safe to conclude that in summer of 2003, no connection could be made with a cell phone from an airliner flying in the U.S. when above an altitude above ground of 2,000 ft (610 m) and when traveling with a speed over 230 mph. Considering the fast descent of the planes and the fact that they kept slowing down as they approached the runway, the height at which a connection could be established might actually be as low as 1,500 ft (457.5 m), and the speed around 200 mph.

The reason why a connection could only be established at some 1,500 ft above ground despite the fact that a signal was present already at some 6,000 ft may be that the speed of the traveling aircraft was too high at higher altitudes. It seems safe to say that the speed must be under 230 mph in order to establish a stable

connection, a speed which an airliner can reach only during landing, with landing gear, air brakes and flaps all the way out.

It is generally agreed upon that all the airliners that crashed on September 11, 2001, flew at a high cruising speed of 500 mph and more until they crashed. Thus, it seems safe to say that no cell phone of any type could have established any stable connection to any cell site at that speed, no matter which height the planes flew at. This is particularly true for United Airlines flight 93, which did not only fly at high speed but also at a relatively high altitude during the time when the alleged cell phone calls were placed.

### Appeal to All Readers

Anybody who is willing to provide his own input on this problem by testing his cell phone's capability to make connections from aircrafts during descent is more than welcome. We will publish such data either with the name of the experimenter or anonymously if indicated. Please provide the following data:

- type of phone, network used;
- plane flown, airline, flight no., date and time of take off (nominal) and landing (actual);
- weather conditions prevailing when landing;
- exact times when you did what or when you succeeded to establish a connection, and since pulling out the gear is a nice reference point, make a note of this as well and ask the pilot while deplaning at what height he pulled the gear.



# Stand Down · Was 9/11 Lack of Air Defense Deliberate?

By Mark Elsis

*"In the beginning of a change,  
the patriot is a scarce and brave man,  
hated and scorned.  
When his cause succeeds however,  
the timid join him,  
for then it costs nothing to be a patriot."*

Mark Twain

*"Fear not the path of truth,  
for the lack of people walking on it."*

Robert Francis Kennedy

With a minute-by-minute chronology from 7:59 a.m. until 10:06:05 a.m., this article will dismantle the press release of the North American Aerospace Defense Command (NORAD) issued on Wednesday, September 18, 2001. This press release encompasses the (supposed) response times of the United States Air Force on Tuesday, September 11, 2001.<sup>1</sup>

This article will explain exactly what happened for the almost one hour and fifty-three minutes that elapsed between the time American Airlines Flight 11 lost voice contact with air traffic control and was hijacked at 8:13:31, until the time United Airlines Flight 93 crashed in Shanksville, Pennsylvania, at 10:06:05.

Also, when reading this article, please keep in mind the following five very significant pieces of information.

1) The United States Government will spend more on the military in fiscal year 2003, than all the rest of the countries on Earth combined. Current expenditures are 437 billion and our past obligations are 339 billion, this equals 776 billion. 46% of our Taxes go to the Military Industrial Complex.<sup>2</sup> This figure doesn't even begin to account for all of the off-budget, black projects, and homeland security nor the 40+ billion the United States Government will spend on intelligence in 2003.

2) The United States Air Force (USAF) is the most technologically advanced and the most dominant military force ever known to man. There were seven Air Stations that were armed and on full alert to protect the continental United States on Tuesday September 11, 2001. The Air National Guard exclusively performs the air sovereignty mission in the continental United States, and those units fall under the control of the 1st Air Force based at Tyndall Air Force Base (AFB) in Panama City, Florida. The Air National Guard maintains seven alert sites with 14 fully armed fighters and pilots on call around the clock. Besides Tyndall AFB, alert birds also sit armed and ready at: Homestead Air Reserve Base (ARB), Homestead, Florida; Langley AFB, Hampton, Virginia; Otis Air National Guard (ANG), Falmouth, Massachusetts; Oregon ANG, Portland, Oregon; March ARB, Riverside, CA; and Ellington ANG, Houston, Texas.<sup>3</sup>

There were at least 28 other USAF bases that were in range of the 4 airliners on 9/11.<sup>4</sup>

3) New York City and Washington D.C. are far and away the top two cities in the United States that would be targeted by terrorists.

4) NORAD is a bi-national United States and Canadian organization charged with warning of attack

against North America, whether by aircraft, missiles, or space vehicles, utilizing mutual support arrangements with other commands. Aerospace control includes providing surveillance and control of Canadian and United States airspace. The job of NORAD is to know every inch of the skies over North America.

5) Almost one hundred and thirteen minutes elapsed between the time American Airlines Flight 11 lost contact and was hijacked at 8:13:31 until the time United Airlines Flight 93 crashed in Shanksville, Pennsylvania at 10:06:05. One hour and fifty-three minutes went by and the USAF did not intercept any one of these four "hijacked" airlines. To understand all the rules, regulation and procedures that make this totally impossible to happen, one should read The Federal Aviation Administration (FAA) Standard Intercept Procedures.<sup>5</sup>

## Stand Down<sup>6</sup>

1. To end a state of readiness or alert.
2. To go off duty.
3. To withdraw, as from a political contest.

All times are Eastern Daylight Time.

7:59 a.m.: American Airlines Flight 11 a Boeing 767-223ER with a maximum capacity of 181 passengers and 23,980 gallons of fuel, lifts off from Logan International Airport in Boston, Massachusetts, bound for Los Angeles International Airport in Los Angeles, California. Take-off was scheduled for 7:45.

There are supposed to be 92 victims on board American Airlines Flight 11, yet when you add up the official death manifest list that was published on CNN.com, there are only 86 victims.



*The White House: Victim or Perpetrator?*

The same goes for the other three flights of 911. Add up the passenger and crew lists from all 4 flights of 911 and you have officially 265 people on board. Yet when one adds up the 4 official death manifest lists published on CNN.com, there are only 229 names. Somehow 36 people are missing from the 4 CNN.com official death manifest lists, including all 19 of the hijackers. Why?<sup>7</sup>

The four airliners used on September 11th, 2 Boeing 767s and 2 Boeing 757s, had a total passenger seating capacity of 762 people.<sup>8</sup> How could these four flights possibly be only between 30.1% (229 passengers and crew) to 34.7% (265 passengers and crew) occupied? How could all four of these flights added together possibly be more than 65% empty?

8:01 a.m.: United Airlines Flight 93 a Boeing 757-222 with a maximum capacity of 200 passengers and 11,489 gallons of fuel, rolls from the gate in Newark International Airport, Newark, New Jersey with 44 people aboard bound for San Francisco International Airport, San Francisco, California. United Airlines Flight 93 will sit on the ground for 41 minutes before taking off. There are supposed to be 44 victims on board, yet when you add up the official death manifest list that was published on CNN.com, there are only 33 victims.

8:13:31 a.m.: American Airlines Flight 11 last transmission from Boston Air Traffic Control: AAL11 turn 20 degrees right American Airlines Flight 11 responds: 20 right AAL11. A few seconds later the Controller asks: AAL11 now climb maintain FL350 [35,000 feet] Controller: AAL11 climb maintain FL350 Controller: AAL11 Boston. There is no response from American Airlines Flight 11.

8:14 to 8:20 a.m.: American Airlines Flight 11 goes off course and is hijacked.

8:14 a.m.: United Airlines Flight 175, a Boeing 767-222 with a maximum capacity of 181 passengers and 23,980 gallons of fuel, lifts off from Logan International Airport in Boston, Massachusetts, bound for Los Angeles International Airport in Los Angeles, California. Take-off was scheduled for 7:58. There are supposed to be 65 victims on board, yet when you add up the official death manifest list that was published on CNN.com, there are only 56 victims.

8:17 a.m.: After 3 minutes and 30 seconds of lost voice contact with American Airlines Flight 11, the FAA should have started to implement Standard Intercept Procedures.<sup>9</sup>

8:20 a.m.: American Airlines Flight 11 transponder signal stops transmitting Identification, Friend or Foe (IFF) beacon signal. If a pilot loses their transponder, the air traffic controllers (ATC) console immediately alerts him to this fact since he no longer has the transponder code and altitude. This causes the controllers a great deal of trouble, especially in the busiest airspace on earth, the northeastern corridor.

After 6 minutes and 30 seconds of lost voice contact, and now with the transponder signal stopped on American Airlines Flight 11, there is no excuse left, the FAA should have started to implement Standard Intercept Procedures. They did this for the late great golfer Payne Stewart after only a few minutes of lost voice contact from his Lear Jet. Why not now? Or did the FAA implement Standard Intercept Procedures and tell NORAD between 8:14 to 8:20? Did NORAD then sit on (Stand Down) this information for 26 to 32 minutes, until they finally

tell 102nd Fighter Wing of the Otis Air National Guard Base in Falmouth, Massachusetts to scramble at 8:46? Somewhere between 8:13:31 and 8:20, American Airlines Flight 11 has been hijacked, and by 8:20 its transponder also is turned off, and NORAD doesn't order Otis to scramble until 8:46.

8:20 a.m.: American Airlines Flight 77, a Boeing 757-223 with a maximum capacity of 200 passengers and 11,489 gallons of fuel, lifts off from Dulles International Airport about 30 miles west of Washington D.C. and the Pentagon, bound for Los Angeles International Airport in Los Angeles, California. Take-off was scheduled for 8:01. There are supposed to be 64 victims on board, yet when you add up the official death manifest list that was published on CNN.com, there are only 56 victims.

8:24:38 a.m.: The pilot of American Airlines Flight 11, John Ogonowski, or one of the hijackers activates the talk-back button, enabling Boston ATC to hear a hijacker say to the passengers: "We have some planes. Just stay quiet and you will be OK. We are returning to the airport. Nobody move." Apparently, one of the hijackers confused the aircraft's radio with its public-address system. Air traffic control responds, "Who's trying to call me?"

8:25 a.m.: Boston ATC notified several air traffic control centers that a hijack is in progress with American Airlines Flight 11. Boston air traffic control first lost communication with American Airlines Flight 11 more than 11 minutes ago. What took them so long to start to implement procedure? Why didn't they also notify North American Aerospace Defense Command (NORAD) at this time? Or did they?

If they did follow procedure and notify NORAD at 8:25 and NORAD followed protocol and ordered the 102nd Fighter Wing of the Otis Air National Guard Base in Falmouth, Massachusetts to scramble at say 8:26—two F-15s would have been airborne by no later than 8:32—these F-15s would have had at least 14 minutes and 26 seconds to reach the WTC before American Airlines Flight 11 impacts the north side of the North Tower (1 World Trade Center) at 8:46:26. If these two F-15s were flying at top speed, 14 minutes and 26 seconds is exactly twice the amount of time needed to reach the WTC. These two F-15s could have been at the WTC in just over 7 minutes, or as early as 8:39. Even a spokesperson for Otis said that their F-15s could reach the WTC in 10 to 12 minutes, which would have them there at 8:42 to 8:44.

These two F-15s could have easily intercepted American Airlines Flight 11. If only Boston ATC, which notified several air traffic control centers that a hijack is in progress with American Airlines Flight 11 at 8:25, had also notified NORAD. Why didn't they? Or did they follow procedure, and notify NORAD, and NORAD is lying about it? Let me state that it is NORAD's job to know every inch of the skies over North America, so they must have known that American Airlines Flight 11 was hijacked somewhere between 8:14 and 8:20.

8:26 a.m.: American Airlines Flight 11 is heading west-northwest, its location is between Albany and Lake George, New York, when it suddenly makes a 100 degree turn to the south and starts heading directly toward New York City. American Airlines Flight 11 finds the Hudson River and follows it all the way south until it impacts the north side of the North Tower of the WTC.

Almost 40 miles north of the WTC on the Hudson River is by far the number one terrorist target in the United States, Indian Point and its 3 nuclear power stations, 2 of which are online. These 3 nuclear stations have accumulated 65 years worth of stockpiled highly radioactive waste. Indian Point is only 24 miles north of the New York City border. It is surrounded by the densest concentration of population in the United States, the northeast corridor. Why did American Airlines Flight 11 fly directly over the number one terrorist target in the United States, Indian Point nuclear power stations, and not hit it? (read more about this at 8:39 a.m.)

8:33:59 a.m.: Another transmission from American Airlines Flight 11, “Nobody move please. We are going back to the airport. Don’t try to make any stupid moves.”

8:36 a.m.: A NORAD spokesman, Major Mike Snyder, has been reported to have said that the FAA notified NORAD of a hijacked aircraft, American Airlines Flight 11, about 10 minutes before it impacted into the World Trade Center.

8:37 a.m.: Flight controllers ask the United Airlines Flight 175 pilots to look for the lost American Airlines Flight 11, about 10 miles to the south. They respond that they can see it. They are told to keep away from it. This incident is not included in *The New York Times* flight controller transcript. Why?

8:38 a.m.: Boston ATC notifies NORAD that American Airlines Flight 11 has been hijacked.

8:39 a.m. American Airlines Flight 11 flies directly over the number one terrorist target in the United States, Indian Point nuclear power stations. Indian Point has 3 nuclear power stations (1 is offline and the other 2 have been online since 1973 and 1976), which are only 24 miles north of New York City (and about 40 miles north of the WTC).

If American Airlines Flight 11 hits Indian Point correctly in any of three different ways, they could have caused a meltdown and a release of vast amounts of radiation. There are also a cumulative 65 operating years worth of highly radioactive waste stored at Indian Point. Casualties could possibly be upwards of 20 million people prematurely dying from radiation poisoning. The whole northeast corridor from New York City to Boston would instantly become a wasteland for thousands of years.

Why did American Airlines Flight 11 jeopardize their mission by flying another 7 plus minutes (when they could and should have been intercepted by the USAF) down the Hudson River to hit the WTC between the 94th and 98th floors where they ended up “only” killing less than half of the 3,056 people that died, when they could have hit their enemies’ number one target?

The mastermind behind these “terrorists” hijackers would have soon figured out their best and only shot against the strongest military foe in the world would have been to hit them first and hit them as hard as you can. Why didn’t they hit Indian Point?

If the terrorists were targeting the WTC, don’t you think they would have waited until around 11:00 when these buildings were full with 50,000 plus people? And of course, to cause the most deaths and destruction isn’t it elementary to strike these buildings as low as possible, which would have been around the 30th floor?

So, why did this well planned “terrorist” attack kill only 3,056 people when they could have easily killed ten times that many? This reasoning also goes along with the Pentagon attack. Why was the Pentagon hit on the so-called “peaceful” west side, which was mostly under construction as opposed to the command center east side of the Pentagon?

If one plane didn’t do the job at Indian Point, two planes most definitely would have done the job. United Airlines Flight 175 also flew very close to Indian Point; it was literally within a couple of minutes flying time.

If two planes didn’t do the job (one should and two will), a third plane, United Airlines Flight 93 a Boeing 757-222 will lift off in 3 minutes from Newark International Airport in Newark, New Jersey, bound for San Francisco International Airport, San Francisco, California. Newark International Airport is within 10 minutes flying time of Indian Point.

So three of these airliners could have hit Indian Point within about 13 minutes of each other, between 8:39 and 8:52, if they had wanted to. The whole northeast corridor from New York City to Boston would instantly become a wasteland for thousands of years.<sup>10</sup>

8:40 a.m. Nasty and Duff are the code names of the two F-15 pilots from the 102nd Fighter Wing of the Otis Air National Guard Base in Falmouth, Massachusetts who would scramble after United Airlines Flight 175. Nasty says that at this time, a colleague tells him that a flight out of Boston has been hijacked and to be on alert. They put on their flight gear and get ready.

8:40 a.m.: The Federal Aviation Administration (FAA) notifies NORAD that American Airlines Flight 11 has been hijacked. Even NORAD officially admitted that the FAA told them about the hijacking of American Airlines Flight 11 at 8:40. As mentioned earlier, American Airlines Flight 11 lost voice contact with ATC at 8:13:31—so for 26 minutes and 29 seconds nothing has been done. American Airlines Flight 11 lost its transponder at 8:20—so for 20 minutes nothing has been done. This doesn’t happen accidentally.

OK, the FAA notifies NORAD that American Airlines Flight 11 has been hijacked—what does NORAD do? Do they immediately scramble the 102nd Fighter Wing of the Otis Air National Guard Base in Falmouth, Massachusetts? No they don’t, they sit on this most vital information for another six minutes.

Stand Down.

8:41:32 a.m.: United Airlines Flight 175 last communication with the New York ATC: “We figured we’d wait to go to your center. We heard a suspicious transmission on our departure from BOS [Boston] sounds like someone keyed the mike and said everyone stay in your seats.”

8:42 a.m.: United Airlines Flight 93 a Boeing 757-222 with a maximum capacity of 200 passengers and 11,489 gallons of fuel, lifts off from Newark International Airport in Newark, New Jersey bound for San Francisco International Airport, San Francisco, California. Take-off was scheduled for 8:01. There are supposed to be 44 victims on board, yet when you add up the official death manifest list that was published on CNN.com, there are only 33 victims.

8:42 a.m.: An air traffic controller says of United Airlines Flight 175, looks like he’s heading southbound but there’s no transponder no nothing and no one’s talking to him.

8:43 a.m.: The FAA notifies NORAD that United Airlines Flight 175 has been hijacked. NORAD has officially admitted that the FAA told them about the hijacking of United Airlines Flight 175 at 8:43. So, now NORAD knows about two hijackings—and American Airlines Flight 11 has been barreling down on New York City since turning south at 8:26, and is just 3 minutes away from impacting the WTC. What does NORAD do with this new information? Do they immediately scramble the 102nd Fighter Wing of the Otis Air National Guard Base in Falmouth, Massachusetts? Again, no they don't, they sit on this most vital information of now two hijacked airliners.

Stand Down.

8:46 a.m.: NORAD orders the 102nd Fighter Wing of the Otis Air National Guard Base in Falmouth, Massachusetts to scramble two of their F-15 fighters. This is from the 102nd Fighter Wing's mission statement of September 11, 2001. "Our aircraft and their crews are on continuous 24-hour, 365-day alert to guard our skies. The 102nd Fighter Wing's area of responsibility includes over 500,000 square miles, 90 million people, and the major industrial centers of Boston, New York, Philadelphia, and Washington, D.C."

NORAD, by their own account, held on to the most vital information of American Airlines Flight 11 hijacking for at least 6 minutes before ordering Otis to scramble. NORAD, by their own account, held on to the most vital information of United Airlines Flight 175 hijacking for at least 3 minutes before ordering Otis to scramble.

NORAD may have held on to the vital information of American Airlines Flight 11 for perhaps 8 minutes, maybe 10 minutes (see 8:36 a.m. statement by NORAD spokesman, Major Mike Snyder), possibly up to 26 minutes (see 8:20 a.m. American Airlines Flight 11 transponder signal stopped transmitting its IFF beacon signal) and let us not forget that the last voice transmission of American Airlines Flight 11 with Boston air traffic control occurred at 8:13:31, so maybe NORAD had over 32 minutes before they notified Otis to scramble their two F-15s.

How could NORAD possibly hold on to the 8:40 information of the American Airlines Flight 11 hijacking, and not immediately scramble Otis? How could NORAD possibly hold on to the 8:43 information of the United Airlines Flight 175 hijacking, and not have immediately scrambled Otis? How could NORAD, by their own account, hold on to the most vital information of both of these hijackings for three and six full minutes, before notifying Otis to scramble?

Stand Down.

Knowing that New York City and Washington D.C. are far and away the top two cities in the United States that would be targeted by terrorists, don't you think we would have also ordered Langley AFB to scramble at 8:46 a.m. to protect Washington D.C.? NORAD says they actually waited until 9:24 a.m. to order Langley AFB to scramble. Thirty-eight minutes went by before anyone bothers to order fighters to scramble to protect Washington D.C.? No way. This is the big time Smoking Gun

Stand Down.

8:46:26 a.m.: American Airlines Flight 11 impacts the north side of the North Tower (1 World Trade Center) of the WTC

between the 94th and 98th floors. American Airlines Flight 11 was flying at a speed of 490 miles per hour.

When American Airlines Flight 11 struck the North Tower, "it set up vibrations which were transmitted through the building, through its foundation, and into the ground," says Lerner-Lam. Those vibrations, as indicated by seismographs at Lamont-Doherty and other locations, were the equivalent of a magnitude 0.9 earthquake, one too small to be felt.

8:46 a.m.: United Airlines Flight 175 transponder signal stops transmitting IFF beacon signal.

8:47 a.m.: The FAA informed NORAD of American Airlines Flight 11 striking the World Trade Center. NORAD says it doesn't tell the two F-15 pilots now scrambling to take-off from Otis that American Airlines Flight 11 has hit the WTC until 8:57. Why not? Especially when there is another hijacked airliner, United Airlines Flight 175, so close to New York City—and at 8:49 it turns and heads straight on for New York City?

8:47 a.m.: NYC Fire Battalion Chief Joe Pfeiffer from the 7th Battalion puts out an emergency call stating that American Airlines Flight 11 impacting the north side of the North Tower (1 World Trade Center) was no accident. The plane's impact was clearly a deliberate attack, an intentional act of mass death and devastation.

As the small video crew (who shot the only video of American Airlines Flight 11 impacting the WTC—the fireman video) and firemen that had eye-witnessed the first plane hit the WTC were racing to the location, Chief Pfeiffer sounded red alerts over the radio and phone; specifically stating that what they witnessed was a "direct attack" and that the airliner was clearly being directed straight at the WTC and the incident was definitely not any kind of accident.

8:48 a.m.: The first news reports appear on TV and radio that a plane may have crashed into the WTC.

8:49 a.m.: United Airlines Flight 175 now deviates from its assigned flight path.

8:50:51 a.m.: American Airlines Flight 77 last radio communication, about 285 miles west of the Pentagon.

8:52 a.m.: Two F-15 Eagles have scrambled and are airborne from the 102nd Fighter Wing of Otis Air National Guard Base in Falmouth, Massachusetts. An F-15 has a top speed of 1875+ mph. Otis is 153 miles (according to *The New York Times*) eastnortheast of the WTC. They are airborne within 6 minutes of their 8:46 scramble orders. Good job. So, 38 minutes after American Airlines Flight 11 has been hijacked, we finally have fighters in the air. But they still don't know American Airlines Flight 11 has crashed into the WTC or that United Airlines Flight 175 has turned and has been heading straight toward New York City now for 3 minutes. Why not?

Stand Down.

8:53 a.m.: A flight controller says to other airplanes in the sky about United Airlines Flight 175: "We may have a hijack. We have some problems over here right now."

8:55 a.m.: Barbara Olson, a passenger on American Airlines Flight 77, calls her husband, Solicitor General Theodore Olson, at the Justice Department. He is watching the WTC news on TV. She tells him: "they had box cutters and knives. They rounded up the passengers at the back of the plane." She asks



him: "What should I tell the pilot to do?" She gets cut off; he calls the Justice Department's command center to alert them of the hijacking. She calls back and says the plane is turning around. She appears to have been the only person on American Airlines Flight 77 to call someone on the ground. Why is she the only person who calls from American Airlines Flight 77?

8:56 a.m.: American Airlines Flight 77 transponder signal stops.

8:56 a.m.: American Airlines Flight 77 goes off course and starts making a 180 degree turn over southern Ohio / northeastern Kentucky.

8:57 a.m. The FAA formally notified the military that American Airlines Flight 11 crashed into the WTC. Until then, the two F-15s fighters from Otis did not know the plane had crashed. Yet at 8:47 a.m., NORAD had been notified. Why does it take over 10 minutes to inform the two F-15 pilots of this? Do the two F-15 pilots know United Airlines Flight 175 has changed course, and for the last eight minutes has been heading directly for New York City? Stand Down.

8:59 a.m.: American Airlines Flight 77 completes its 180 degree turn over southern Ohio / northeastern Kentucky and starts heading directly back to Washington D.C. and the Pentagon, 330 miles away.

9:00 a.m.: United Airlines systems operations transmitted a system wide message, warning its pilots of a potential "cockpit intrusion". United Airlines Flight 93, flying over Pennsylvania replies "Confirmed".

9:00 a.m.: Last radar reading on United Airlines Flight 175 is observed at an altitude of 18,000 feet, descending, with a ground speed of 480 knots.

9:00 a.m. The FAA starts contacting all airliners to warn them of the hijacking.

9:00 a.m.: The Pentagon moves its alert status up one notch from normal to Alpha. It stays on Alpha until after American Airlines Flight 77 hits the Pentagon.

9:01 a.m.: U.S: President G.W. Bush later makes the following statement. "And I was sitting outside the classroom waiting to go in, and I saw an airplane hit the tower—the TV was obviously on, and I used to fly myself, and I said, 'There's one terrible pilot.' And I said, 'It must have been a horrible accident.' But I was whisked off from there—I didn't have much time to think about it." Bush could not have possibly seen the first plane (American Airlines Flight 11) hit the WTC, because the only video showing this was not shown on television until later in the day. So how could he have possibly seen and said this?

9:02:54 a.m.: United Airlines Flight 175 impacts the south side of the South Tower of the WTC between the 78th and 84th floors at a speed of over 500 mph. Parts of the plane including an engine leave the building from its north side, to be found on the ground up to six blocks away.

When United Airlines Flight 175 struck the South Tower, "it set up vibrations which were transmitted through the building, through its foundation, and into the ground," says Lerner-Lam. Those vibrations, as indicated by seismographs at Lamont-Doherty and other locations, were the equivalent of a magnitude 0.7 earthquake.

NORAD says that when United Airlines Flight 175 impacts the WTC at 9:02:54, the two F-15s from Otis are still 71 miles

away. This means their average flight speed was only 23.9% of their top speed in trying to intercept United Airlines Flight 175.

Otis is 153 miles from WTC. F-15s have a top speed of 1875+ mph. Minus 71 miles left from 153 miles equals 82 miles covered in the 11 minutes from 8:52 take-off to 9:03. Sixty minutes divided by 11 minutes equals 5.45, times this by the 82 miles covered, equals 447.3 mph; divided by 1875 mph equals 23.9% of their top speed. How could these two F-15s possibly be going less than one quarter of their top speed in trying to intercept United Airlines Flight 175? How?

Stand Down.

The following passages are from a BBC article published on August 30, 2002. Two of the pilots patrolling northeast America told the program how they struggled to get to New York as fast as possible after the first plane had hit the World Trade Center. Pilots "Duff" and "Nasty" recalled they were only minutes away when the second plane hit the towers. Pilot Duff said:<sup>11</sup>

*"For a long time I wondered what would have happened if we had been scrambled in time. We've been over the flight a thousand times in our minds and I don't know what we could have done to get there any quicker."*

Perhaps if they flew a little faster than 23.9% of their top speed is how?

*"The F-15 pilots flew 'like a scalded ape,' topping 500 [sic!] mph but were unable to catch up to the airliner [United Airlines Flight 175], Maj. Gen. Paul Weaver said."*<sup>12</sup>

Now the only airliner left in the sky with its IFF transponder signal off is American Airlines Flight 77, which has just made a 180 degree turn over southern Ohio/northeastern Kentucky and has been heading directly back to Washington D.C. and the Pentagon since 8:59 a.m. Why didn't these two F-15s that were 71 miles from NYC and the WTC immediately redirect to intercept the only dangerous airliner now in the sky, American Airlines Flight 77?

These two F-15s had 34 minutes to reach Washington D.C. before American Airlines Flight 77 hits the Pentagon at 9:37 a.m. The mission of these two F-15s from the 102nd Fighter Wing of the Otis Air National Guard Base is to protect the skies from Washington D.C. to the north. The F-15 has a top speed of 1875+ mph, so they could have closed the 300 or so miles from their current position to Washington D.C. in just about 11 minutes. At top speed they could have been at the Pentagon 23 minutes before American Airlines Flight 77 hits it.

Even if they were flying at the same speed NORAD says that they covered in the last 71 miles until they reach the WTC (532.5 mph or only 28.4% of top speed), they would have beaten American Airlines Flight 77 to the Pentagon. Why didn't these two F-15s directly fly to intercept the only known airliner still in the sky that is hijacked, and heading directly for the nations capitol?

Still, much worse, why didn't these two F-15s, upon reaching the WTC at 9:11 and now knowing that American Airlines Flight 77 has been heading dead on for Washington D.C. for 12 minutes, finally try to intercept? The WTC is about 250 miles from the Pentagon. They still have 26 minutes to intercept American Airlines Flight 77 before the Pentagon gets hit at

9:37. All they have to do is to fly only 576.9 mph or 30.8% of their top speed to beat American Airlines Flight 77 to the Pentagon. What do we pay these guys to do?

Still, unbelievably worse, these two F-15s could have waited in New York City until 9:26 before heading down to protect Washington D.C. and the Pentagon. By 9:26, American Airlines Flight 77 has now been heading directly back to Washington D.C. for 27 minutes, it is the only airliner in the sky with its transponder signal off, and has been off course for 30 minutes. If these F-15s were flying at top speed, they could be at the Pentagon in less than 10 minutes. They can leave New York City at 9:26 and still beat American Airlines Flight 77 to the Pentagon by one minute. Why didn't these F-15s leave at any time between 9:03 and 9:26 to intercept American Airlines Flight 77, the only airliner in the sky with its transponder signal off and also off course and heading straight to Washington D.C.? Why, NORAD?

Stand Down.

There is a very interesting video of what looks like a possible F-15 streaking by the WTC just as United Airlines Flight 175 impacts the South Tower of the WTC. Why isn't anyone talking about this video?<sup>13</sup>

9:03 a.m.: Boston air traffic control center halts traffic from its airports to all New York area airspace.

9:05 a.m.: Andrew Card walks up to Bush while he is listening to a Goat Story with 16 second graders in Sandra Kay Daniels's class at Emma E. Booker Elementary School in Sarasota, Florida. Card whispers in his ear "A second plane has hit the World Trade Center. America is under attack." Bush (commander-in-chief?) keeps listening to this Goat Story with these children for at least 7 minutes, and perhaps as long as 18 minutes. Why he didn't excuse himself from these children right away and immediately address this national emergency is totally illogical and unexplainable.

There is no way this should have happened. What of course should have happened, was as soon as the secret service found out about United Airlines Flight 175 impacting the WTC (now knowing it was a 'terrorist' act), they would have immediately grabbed Bush and brought him to an undisclosed location. There is no way the secret service leaves Bush in a place (Emma E. Booker Elementary School) where everyone knows he is.

Stand Down.

9:05 a.m.: West Virginia flight control notices a new east-bound plane entering their radar with no radio contact and no transponder identification. They are not sure if it is American Airlines Flight 77. Supposedly they wait another 19 minutes before notifying NORAD about it.

Why hasn't NORAD scrambled any fighters to protect Washington D.C. by 9:05? How could they not have? Two airliners have already hit the WTC. Nine minutes ago the transponder on American Airlines Flight 77 was shut off and it made a 180 degree turn and has been heading directly for Washington D.C. for 6 minutes. Perhaps now would be a good time to remember that New York City and Washington D.C. are far and away the top two cities in the United States that would be targeted by terrorists. Why hasn't NORAD scrambled any fighters to protect Washington D.C. by 9:05?

Stand Down.

9:06 a.m.: Order to halt traffic is expanded to include the entire northeast from Washington to Cleveland. FAA's air traffic control center outside Washington D.C. notifies all air traffic facilities nationwide of the suspected hijacking of American Airlines Flight 11.

9:06 a.m.: The FAA formally notified the military that United Airlines Flight 175 had been hijacked.

9:08 a.m.: FAA orders all aircraft to leave New York area airspace and orders all New York-bound planes nationwide to stay on the ground.

9:10 a.m. to 9:20 a.m.: United Airlines Flight 93 was hijacked.

9:11 a.m.: The two F-15 Eagles from Otis Air National Guard station in Falmouth, Massachusetts, finally make it to NYC and the WTC. So, it takes these two F-15s, which have a top speed of 1875+ mph, 19 minutes to cover the 153 miles from Otis to the WTC. This means their average flight speed from Otis to the WTC was only 483.2 mph or just 25.8% of their top speed. A little math exposes these window dressing fighters for what they are. Thank you NORAD for your September 18, 2001, Press Release.

Stand Down.

9:12 a.m.: The FAA formally notified the military that United Airlines Flight 175 had crashed into the WTC.

9:15 a.m.: American Airlines orders no new takeoffs in the United States.

9:16 a.m. to 9:20: The FAA notifies NORAD that United Airlines Flight 93 has been hijacked. (Reported as 9:20 a.m. in the *Pittsburgh Post-Gazette*) No fighters are scrambled in specific response, now or later. There is the possibility the fighters sent after American Airlines Flight 77 later headed towards United Airlines Flight 93. NORAD's own timeline inexplicably fails to say when the FAA told them about the hijack. This is the only flight NORAD fails to provide this data for. Why?

Stand Down.

9:17 a.m.: The FAA shuts down all New York City area airports.

9:20 a.m.: United Airlines orders no new takeoffs in the United States.

9:21 a.m.: New York City Port Authority orders all bridges and tunnels in the New York City area closed.

9:22 a.m.: A sonic boom occurs, which was picked up by an earthquake monitor in southern Pennsylvania, 60 miles away from Shanksville.<sup>14</sup> This was most likely caused by a fighter jet breaking the sound barrier.

9:23 a.m.: Bush talks privately with Cheney, his National Security Adviser Condoleezza Rice, the head of the FBI, Robert Mueller, and Governor George Pataki of New York. Why does Bush wait from 9:05 (when Card tells him of United Airlines Flight 175 hitting the WTC) until 9:23 to finally call? He still does not give the authority to the fighters to shoot down any hostile airliners. Fighters do not need his OK to intercept—that should have of course happen automatically (but didn't—or it was IGNORAD<sup>15</sup>)]—his orders are only needed to shoot down a commercial airliner. What is he waiting for?

9:24 a.m.: The FAA notifies NORAD that American Airlines Flight 77 has been hijacked. The FAA lost contact with

American Airlines Flight 77 when the transponder signal stops at 8:56 a.m. Why does it take 28 minutes for the FAA to tell NORAD that American Airlines Flight 77 has been hijacked? Impossible.

Stand Down.

9:24 a.m.: NORAD orders the 1st Fighter Wing from Langley Air Force Base in Hampton, Virginia to scramble two, possibly three F-16 fighters. This time NORAD does not sit on this vital information for six minutes (or more) before notifying Langley AFB (like they did before they scrambled Otis). Langley is 130 miles south of Washington D.C. and the Pentagon. The F-16 has a top speed of 1500 mph.

Why wasn't Langley AFB scrambled at 8:20 or 8:40 or 8:46:26 or at the very least at 9:02:54? How could NORAD possibly have waited the 21 minutes from the time United Airlines Flight 175 hits the South Tower of the WTC at 9:02:54 before finally scrambling Langley at 9:24? Waiting these 21 extra minutes to finally scramble Langley is the real smoking gun Stand Down that no one can get around.

Inconceivably, Andrews Air Force Base, with its two fighter wings only about 11 miles from the Pentagon, never got off the ground until after everything was over. They must have been told to Stand Down. This Stand Down that happened at Andrews AFB is the same thing that happened with the at least 35 Air Stations that were easily within distance to protect us of all of these hijackings. They were all told to Stand Down.<sup>4</sup>

9:25 a.m.: Air traffic controllers inform the United States Secret Service that American Airlines Flight 77 is approaching Washington D.C.

9:26 a.m.: The FAA halts takeoffs nationwide. All airborne international flights are told to land in Canada.

9:26 a.m.: American Airlines Flight 77-Passenger, Barbara K. Olson again calls her husband, Solicitor General Theodore Olson, at the Justice Department to tell him about the hijacking and to report that the passengers and pilots were held in the back of the plane. Again she is the only person who makes a call from American Airlines Flight 77. Isn't it very strange that is she the only person to call, not once but twice?

9:28 a.m. United Airlines Flight 93: An open microphone aboard reveals someone in the cockpit saying: "Get out of here!"

9:28 a.m.: United Airlines Flight 93: "there are the first audible signs of problems, in background cockpit noise." Air traffic controllers hear the sound of screaming and scuffling over an open mike. They then hear hijackers speaking in Arabic to each other. Yet this is at least 8 minutes and maybe 12 minutes after the hijackers had taken over the cockpit and done something to cause the FAA to notify NORAD of United Airlines Flight 93's hijacking.

9:30 a.m.: Two, possibly three F-16 Fighting Falcons code-named Huntress take off from Langley AFB headed at first toward NYC. A couple of minutes into their mission, according to General Haugen "A person came on the radio and identified themselves as being with the Secret Service" and said, "I want you to protect the White House at all costs." The F-16s laid in a new course and vectored to Washington D.C. Since both Washington D.C. and New York City are both north of Langley, and this happened within a couple of minutes of take-off, this was not a factor in why these F-16 fighters were flying so slow.

Why were these fighters headed to NYC when American Airlines Flight 77 has been headed directly for Washington D.C. for the last 31 minutes, and with their communication and transponder turned off for 34 minutes? There are no airliners headed for NYC or anywhere else with their communication and transponders turned off. Also, at 9:25, air traffic controllers have already informed the United States Secret Service in Washington D.C. that American Airlines Flight 77 is approaching them very fast. So why are these F-16s first flying toward NYC?

Stand Down.

9:30 a.m.: Bush, speaking to the nation from Emma E. Booker Elementary School in Sarasota, Florida, says the country has suffered an "apparent terrorist attack" and "a national tragedy." He would chase down, "those folks who committed this act." Bush also said: "Terrorism against our nation will not stand."<sup>16</sup> It was an echo of "This will not stand," the words his father, George H. W. Bush, had used a few days after Iraq invaded Kuwait in August 1990—in Bush's opinion, one of his father's finest moments.

Also, during this address to the country, Bush promised a full investigation into the attack. Well here we are, 16 months later, after everything Bush could possibly do to stop an investigation, and we are finally getting a so-called 911 investigation. That Henry Kissinger and George Mitchell quit as chair and vice chair is very interesting. Of course, having appointed killer Kissinger to lead the 911 investigation in the first place was like saying 'Welcome to the Twilight Zone.' Did Kissinger quit because some of his clients were about to be exposed and tried by him? A little conflict of interest, Henry?

This address to the country should have been said at least 15 to 20 minutes earlier. But of course he had much more important business to attend to, he was listening to the Goat Story with the 16 second graders from 9:05 until at least 9:12 and possibly as long as 9:23.

9:30 a.m.: United Airlines begins landing all of its flights inside the United States.

9:32 a.m.: Secret Service agents burst into Cheney's White House office. They carry him under his arms—nearly lifting him off the ground—and take him to the security of the underground bunker in the White House basement. What took them so long?

9:32 a.m.: The New York Stock Exchange closed.

9:33 a.m.: According to *The New York Times*, American Airlines Flight 77 was lost at 8:56 when it turned off its transponder and stayed lost until now. Washington air traffic control sees a fast moving blip on their radar at this time and sends a warning to Dulles Airport in Washington. Is it conceivable that an airplane could be lost inside United States air space for 37 minutes?

Stand Down.

9:35 a.m.: United Airlines Flight 93 goes off course near Cleveland, Ohio, where it makes a 135 degree turn, and is now headed to the southeast. United Airlines Flight 93 is 375 miles from Newark, New Jersey, and 280 miles from where it was now headed, Washington D.C.

Also reported about United Airlines Flight 93: ABC News has learned that shortly before the plane changed directions,

someone in the cockpit radioed in and asked the FAA for a new flight plan with a final destination of Washington. This should have been a big red flag, a problem aircraft usually diverts to the nearest field. Did the Pilot do this to signal Air Traffic Control?

9:35 a.m.: American Airlines begins landing all of its flights inside the United States.

9:36 a.m.: Ronald Reagan Washington National Airport instructs a military C130 aircraft that had just departed Andrews Air Force base to try to identify American Airlines Flight 77. The C130 reports it is a 767 and it is moving low and very fast.

9:37 a.m.: American Airlines Flight 77 is lost from radar screens and impacts the western side of the Pentagon. The section of the Pentagon hit consists mainly of newly renovated, unoccupied offices. The Pentagon says American Airlines Flight 77 hits them at 9:37. Other published reports have American Airlines Flight 77 striking at 9:40 to 9:43; *The New York Times* even published 9:45.

At 9:37, NORAD says the F-16s from Langley were still 105 miles and 12 minutes away. Incredibly, this means their average flight speed was only 14.3% of their top speed in trying to intercept United Airlines Flight 175 before it hits the Pentagon. If these F-16s flew at top speed, they would have been there just after 9:37.

Langley is 130 miles from the Pentagon. F-16s have a top speed of 1500 mph. Minus 105 miles left from 130 miles equals 25 miles covered in the 7 minutes from 9:30 take-off to 9:37. 60 minutes divided by 7 minutes equals 8.57, times this by the 25 miles covered, equals 214.3 mph. divided by 1500 mph equals 14.3% of their top speed. How could these two F-16s possibly be going one seventh of their top speed in trying to intercept American Airlines Flight 77? Even the story about first flying to NYC does not account for this unbelievably slow speed because they got the message to redirect to Washington D.C. within a couple of minutes of take-off, and NYC and Washington D.C. are almost exactly the same direction (north) from Langley.

Stand Down.

Three more of the 7 air stations on full alert were within range of Washington D.C.: Tyndall AFB in Panama City, Florida, is 800 miles from Washington D.C.; from the time they scramble and flying at top speed, they could have reached Washington D.C. in 35 to 40 minutes. Homestead ARB in Homestead, Florida, is 1000 miles from Washington D.C.; from the time they scramble and flying at top speed, they could have reached Washington D.C. in 45 to 50 minutes. Ellington ANG in Houston, Texas, is 1250 miles from Washington D.C.; from the time they scramble and flying at top speed, they could have reached Washington D.C. in 55 to 60 minutes.

Remember at 8:40 the FAA notifies NORAD that American Airlines Flight 11 has been hijacked and at 8:43 a.m. the FAA notifies NORAD that United Airlines Flight 175 has been hijacked. So at 8:43 a full 54 minutes before American Airlines Flight 77 hits the Pentagon, NORAD admits to knowing about these two airlines being hijacked. With a 54 minute start—besides of course Otis ANG who were already in the air (at 8:52) and Langley AFB fighters (finally ordered to scramble at 9:24—airborne at 9:30), both Tyndall AFB and Homestead ARB fighters could have beaten American Airlines Flight 77 to

the Pentagon and Ellington ANG fighters had an outside chance. Of course both air stations in Florida, Tyndall AFB, and Homestead ARB, should have been sent to protect Air Force One in Sarasota—but incredibly they weren't sent there either.

At 8:56, the transponder on American Airlines Flight 77 stops sending the IFF beacon. This is 41 minutes before it hits the Pentagon. Again besides of course Otis ANG and Langley AFB fighters, if ordered to scramble at 8:56, Tyndall AFB fighters could have still beaten American Airlines Flight 77 to the Pentagon.

Stand Down.

9:38 a.m.: United Airlines Flight 93 completes its 135 degree turn and is headed directly towards Washington D.C.

9:40 a.m.: United Airlines Flight 93 transponder signal stops.

9:40 a.m.: Transportation Secretary Norman Y. Mineta, summoned by the White House to the bunker, was on an open line to the Federal Aviation Administration operations center, monitoring Flight 77 as it hurtled toward Washington with radar tracks coming every seven seconds. Reports came that the plane was 50 miles out, 30 miles out, 10 miles out—until word reached the bunker that there had been an explosion at the Pentagon.

Mineta shouted into the phone to Monte Belger at the FAA: “Monte, bring all the planes down.” It was an unprecedented order—there were 4,546 airplanes in the air at the time. Belger, the FAA's acting deputy administrator, amended Mineta's directive to take into account the authority vested in airline pilots. “We're bringing them down per pilot discretion,” Belger told the secretary.

“Fuck pilot discretion,” Mineta yelled back. “Get those goddamn planes down.”

The FAA stops all flight operations at U.S. airports and orders all planes in the air to land at the nearest airport. No civilian aircraft are allowed to lift off. This is the first time all commercial flights in the U.S. have been suspended. Only military and medical flights are allowed to fly.

9:42 a.m.: United Airlines Flight 93 passenger Mark Bingham calls his mother: “Mom, this is Mark Bingham,” he said, nervously. “I want to let you know that I love you. I'm calling from the plane. We've been taken over. There are three men that say they have a bomb.”

9:45 a.m.: Bush's motorcade leaves the Emma E. Booker Elementary School in Sarasota, Florida, headed for Air Force One at the Sarasota-Bradenton International Airport.

9:45 a.m. to 9:48 a.m.: The Capitol and the White House are evacuated.

9:47 a.m.: Commanders worldwide were ordered to raise their threat alert status four notches to “Delta”, the highest level to defend United States facilities. Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld raised the defense condition signaling of the United States offensive readiness to DefCon 3, the highest it had been since the Arab-Israeli war in 1973. United States officials also sent a message to the Russians, who were planning a military exercise not far from Alaska, urging them to rethink their plans.

9:49 a.m.: The F-16s from Langley AFB finally arrive over Washington D.C. to perform Combat Air Patrol over the city. It

takes these F-16s 19 minutes to reach Washington D.C. from Langley AFB which is about 130 miles to the south.

If these F-16s were flying at top speed it should have taken them just over 7 minutes to reach the Pentagon. They should have been there at about the same time the Pentagon is hit by American Airlines Flight 77, at 9:37.

By arriving in Washington D.C. at 9:49, that would mean these F-16s average flight speed was only 410.5 mph. This means their average flight speed was only 27.4% of their top speed in trying to protect our nation's capital. Langley AFB is 130 miles from the Pentagon and F-16s have a top speed of 1500 mph. 60 minutes divided by 19 minutes =  $3.16 \times 130$  miles = 410.5 mph divided by 1500 mph = 27.4%.

These F-16s took-off at 9:30, this is 43 minutes after American Airlines 11 impacts the North Tower of the WTC and 27 minutes after United Airlines Flight 175 slams into the South Tower of the WTC. Knowing this, these F-16s fly at only 14.3% (overall 27.4%) of their top speed in trying to intercept American Airlines Flight 77 and protect our nations capital, Washington D.C. How could that possibly be?

Why were all of these ultra-sophisticated fighter jets averaging flight speeds only one quarter of their top speed when sent to intercept hostile aircraft and protect New York City and our nation's Capital, Washington D.C.? What exactly is the purpose of these fighter jets being able to go 1875+ mph and 1500 mph, yet when the United States is being attacked and needs them the most they are only somehow capable of doing one quarter of their top speed?

Stand Down.

The United States Air Force is the most technologically advanced and the most dominant military force ever known to man, and yet we didn't have any other fighters on routine patrols or training missions anywhere within 1000 miles of New York City or Washington D. C. that morning? I have talked to a few people in the Air Force, and this is totally impossible. There are always fighters up on routine patrols or training missions. So where were they?

And lastly, why didn't the Air Force follow procedure and immediately scramble to monitor any of these 4 flights like they did for the late great golfer Payne Stewart when his Lear Jet went off course? This is not Oshkosh, Wisconsin, we are talking about protecting here, it is New York City and the Capital of the United States, Washington D.C., and its air defenses were left totally unguarded for one hour and twenty-three minutes (from 8:14 to 9:37) (or one hour and thirty-five minutes—F-15 arrived in DC at 9:49) by the same country which has the greatest air superiority by far ever known. What type of a preposterous wag of the NORAD tale is this?

Both of these groups of fighters, the F-15s out of Otis and the F-16s out of Langley, were put in the air merely as window dressing. To make the public actually think they were valiantly trying to intercept these 4 hijacked planes. There is only one explanation for this—our Air Force was ordered to Stand Down on 911.

9:55 a.m.: Bush arrives at the Sarasota-Bradenton International Airport and boards Air Force One.<sup>17</sup>

9:55 a.m.: Inside his White House bunker, a military aide asks Cheney: "There is a plane 80 miles out. There is a fighter in

the area. Should we engage?" Cheney immediately says, "Yes." As the fighter gets nearer to United Airlines Flight 93, he is asked the same thing twice more, and responds yes both times.

9:58 a.m.: Confrontation with the hijackers and the passengers begins aboard United Airlines Flight 93. Emergency dispatcher in Pennsylvania receives a call from a passenger on Flight 93. The passenger says: "We are being hijacked!"

9:58 a.m.: A frantic male passenger onboard United Airlines Flight 93 called the 911 emergency number, he told the operator, named Glen Cramer, that he had locked himself inside one of the toilets. Cramer told the AP, in a report that was widely broadcast on September 11th, that the passenger had spoken for one minute. "We're being hijacked, we're being hijacked!" the man screamed into his mobile phone. "We confirmed that with him several times," Cramer said, "and we asked him to repeat what he said. He was very distraught. He said he believed the plane was going down. He did hear some sort of an explosion and saw white smoke coming from the plane, but he didn't know where. And then we lost contact with him." This was the last cell phone call made from any passenger on any of the hijacked planes.

9:59 a.m.: Air Force One Departs Sarasota-Bradenton International Airport, Sarasota, Florida, bound for Washington D.C. Air Force One departed with no extra military protection. This is totally impossible. Two of the 7 military air stations we had on full alert to protect the continental United States that day were based in Florida. Homestead Air Reserve Base in Homestead is 185 miles and the Tyndall Air Force Base in Panama City is 235 miles from Sarasota and Air Force One.

These two air stations should have been ordered to scramble their fighters at 8:20 or 8:40 or 8:43 or 8:46:26 or 9:02:54 or 9:24 or at the very least at 9:37. From the time these two Air stations should have been scrambled and flying at top speed, both of these air stations fighters could have been in Sarasota within 16 to 18 minutes to protect Air Force One. Even if both Air stations waited on the ground with their 4 fighters until the Pentagon gets hit at 9:37, all 4 fighters could have scrambled and been at Sarasota 4 to 6 minutes before Air Force One takes-off at 9:59. Where were the fighters from both of these air stations? Did both of these air stations have something better to do that day than protect Air Force One? Please, this just does not happen. Why is no one else in the world asking this question?

Stand Down.

Also, is the place to be in the air when there are still a couple of thousand airliners in the air deviating from their normal flight plans to land, and who knew then how many of them were hostile or not?

Also, please take a look at the August 30, 2002, BBC article which states:<sup>18</sup>

*"In the immediate aftermath of the terror attacks US fighter planes took to the skies to defend America from any further attacks. Their mission was to protect President George W. Bush and to intercept any hijacked aircraft heading to other targets in the US."*

9:59:04 a.m.: The south tower of the World Trade Center suddenly collapses, plummeting into the streets below. A massive cloud of dust and debris quickly fills lower Manhattan. It is later explained that the collapse was not directly caused by the

impact, but the intense heat caused by the fire fueled by the jet's fuel weakening the steel support beams of the concrete floors. The WTC towers were built to withstand a 707 being flown into them. A 767 carries almost the same amount of fuel as a 707.<sup>19</sup>

10:00 a.m.: Bill Wright is flying a small plane when an air traffic controller asks him to look around outside his window. He sees United Airlines Flight 93 three miles away - close enough to see the United Airlines colors. Air traffic control asks him the plane's altitude, and then commands him to get away from the plane and land immediately. Wright saw the plane rock back and forth three or four times before he flew from the area. He speculates that the hijackers were trying to throw off the attacking passengers.

10:00 a.m.: The NRC tells all nuclear power stations to go to the highest level of alert.

10:01 a.m.: The FAA orders F-16 fighters to scramble from Toledo, Ohio. Although the base has no fighters on stand-by alert status, it manages to put fighters in the air 16 minutes later, a "phenomenal" response time—but still 11 minutes after the last hijacked plane has crashed.

One interesting aspect is that NORAD has explained that it didn't scramble fighters from bases nearer to the hijacked planes because they only used bases in the NORAD defensive network (seven bases were on fully armed alert covering the continental United States). Yet this Toledo base wasn't part of that network, so why weren't planes in this base and other bases scrambled an hour or more earlier? Could it be that they were scrambled earlier, and that it was one of these F-16s that tailed Flight 93? While it hasn't been reported in the media yet, note this recent claim by a seismologist that there was a sonic boom in Western Pennsylvania at 9:22. Could that have been a fighter tracking United Airlines Flight 93?

10:02 a.m.: After a review of radar tapes, a radar signal of United Airlines Flight 93 is detected near Shanksville, Pennsylvania.

10:03 a.m.: According to the FBI, the cockpit voice recorder stops and United Airlines Flight 93 crashes near Shanksville, Pennsylvania, in Somerset county, about 80 miles southeast of Pittsburgh.

10:04 a.m.: Johnstown-Cambria County Airport reports United Airlines Flight 93 is 15 miles south.

10:06:05 a.m.: According to seismic data, United Airlines Flight 93 crashes near Shanksville, Pennsylvania, in Somerset county, about 80 miles southeast of Pittsburgh. This is also 124 miles or 15 minutes away at 500 mph from Washington D.C. An eyewitness reports seeing a white plane resembling a fighter jet circling the site just after the crash.

The F-16s from Langley AFB arrived in Washington D.C at 9:49 a.m. The F-16 has a top speed of 1500 mph. After the Pentagon gets hit by American Airlines Flight 77 at 9:37, there is only one airliner left in the sky with its transponder signal off, and once again heading directly for Washington D.C., and that is United Airlines Flight 93. Flying at top speed these F-16s could have intercepted United Airlines Flight 93 within 5 to 8 minutes depending on when they would have left. Why didn't these F-16s try to intercept United Airlines Flight 93? How could they not go after the only threat in the sky yet once again?

Stand Down.

Listen to what a former Pentagon air traffic controller say:

*"All those years ago when I was at the Pentagon, this wouldn't have happened. ATC Radar images were (and are) available in the understructures of the Pentagon, and any commercial flight within 300 miles of Washington D.C. that made an abrupt course change toward Washington D.C. or turned off their transponder and refused to communicate with ATC would have been intercepted at supersonic speeds within minutes by fighters out of Andrews AFB. Why there were no fighters from Andrews up baffles me. If we could get fighters notified, scrambled, and airborne within about 6 minutes from Andrews AFB then, we could now."*

Shortly after 911, a flight controller in New Hampshire ignores a ban on air traffic controllers speaking to the media, and it is reported he claims "that an F-16 fighter closely pursued United Airlines Flight 93... the F-16 made 360-degree turns to remain close to the commercial jet, the controller said. 'He must've seen the whole thing,' the controller said of the F-16 pilot's view of Flight 93's crash."

What happened to our first amendment? Where are all of the free and open debates in the United States questioning September 11th? I, Mark Elsis, will debate anyone or any panel on this issue. Does any formidable opponent dare to debate me about what really happened on September 11, 2001?

© January 8, 2003

## Notes

- 1 See [www.norad.mil/newsreleases/news\\_rel\\_09\\_18\\_01.htm](http://www.norad.mil/newsreleases/news_rel_09_18_01.htm); see also the AP article on the NORAD press release: [www.attackonamerica.net/8minutesaway.htm](http://www.attackonamerica.net/8minutesaway.htm)
- 2 See [www.warresisters.org/piechart.htm](http://www.warresisters.org/piechart.htm).
- 3 See [www.af.mil/news/airman/1299/home2.htm](http://www.af.mil/news/airman/1299/home2.htm).
- 4 The following website lists the 7 bases on full alert and the 28 that were within range: [www.StandDown.net/USAFbases.htm](http://www.StandDown.net/USAFbases.htm).
- 5 See [www.standdown.net/FAAStandardInterceptProcedures.htm](http://www.standdown.net/FAAStandardInterceptProcedures.htm).
- 6 Many sources for Stand Down are from the 600 articles on [www.AttackOnAmerica.net](http://www.AttackOnAmerica.net); for audios, photographs and videos of September 11, 2001, see [www.9112001.net](http://www.9112001.net). For the most comprehensive timeline on 9/11, see [www.911timeline.net/](http://www.911timeline.net/).
- 7 Go to [www.attackonamerica.net/](http://www.attackonamerica.net/), click on "Evidence;" scroll down until you see: AA11 Passenger List, UA 175 Passenger List, AA 77 Passenger List and UA 93 Passenger List. Click on any of these four links and count the number of passengers listed for yourself.
- 8 Boeing 767 Seating Charts: [www.boeing.com/commercial/767family/pf/pf\\_seating\\_charts.html](http://www.boeing.com/commercial/767family/pf/pf_seating_charts.html)  
Boeing 757 Seating Charts: [www.boeing.com/commercial/757family/pf/pf\\_seating\\_charts.html](http://www.boeing.com/commercial/757family/pf/pf_seating_charts.html).
- 9 [www.standdown.net/FAAStandardInterceptProcedures.htm](http://www.standdown.net/FAAStandardInterceptProcedures.htm)
- 10 See "Jet [757 / 767] Could Wreck TMI [Three Mile Island], NCR [Nuclear Regulatory Commission] Admits," [www.AttackOnAmerica.net/JetCouldWreckNuclearNRCAdmits.htm](http://www.AttackOnAmerica.net/JetCouldWreckNuclearNRCAdmits.htm).
- 11 "US Considered 'Suicide Jet Missions'," [news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/world/americas/2222205.stm](http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/world/americas/2222205.stm)
- 12 "National Guard Fighters Raced After 2 Airliners," [www.staugustine.com/stories/091601/ter\\_0916010027.shtml](http://www.staugustine.com/stories/091601/ter_0916010027.shtml)
- 13 [www.MyCountryRightOrWrong.net/F-15.htm](http://www.MyCountryRightOrWrong.net/F-15.htm)
- 14 [www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE\\_ID=30682](http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=30682)
- 15 [www.attackonamerica.net/ignorad.htm](http://www.attackonamerica.net/ignorad.htm)
- 16 <http://www.AttackOnAmerica.net/BushAtEmmaEBookerSchool.mov>.
- 17 We have captured and saved the video of Bush as he arrives at Sarasota-Bradenton International Airport, and the take-off of Air Force One. Go to: [www.AttackOnAmerica.net/AirForceOneLeavingSarasota.ra](http://www.AttackOnAmerica.net/AirForceOneLeavingSarasota.ra)
- 18 [news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/world/americas/2222205.stm](http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/world/americas/2222205.stm)
- 19 See [www.fema.gov/library/wtctestudy.shtml](http://www.fema.gov/library/wtctestudy.shtml) for a detailed forensic study of the WTC tower collapses.

# Disturbing Facts about 9/11 and the U.S. Government

The Bush administration ignored the issue of terrorism from the moment it assumed office:

- They ignored the final report of the Hart-Rudman commission, the Road Map for National Security: Imperative for Change, that was issued on January 31, 2001 ([www.cjr.org/year/01/6/evans.asp](http://www.cjr.org/year/01/6/evans.asp))
- They blocked Senate hearings on the Hart-Rudman commission's report, scheduled for the week of May 7, 2001, by announcing a brand new commission led by Vice President Dick Cheney - which never met before 9/11 ([www.cjr.org/year/01/6/evans.asp](http://www.cjr.org/year/01/6/evans.asp))
- They ignored repeated requests from the Hart-Rudman commission from January 2001 to September 6, 2001, when National Security adviser Condoleezza Rice said she would "pass on" their concerns ([www.cjr.org/year/01/6/evans.asp](http://www.cjr.org/year/01/6/evans.asp))
- They ignored repeated requests from Senator Dianne Feinstein to restructure US counter-terrorism and homeland defense programs, starting in July 2001 and continuing through September 10, 2001, when Dick Cheney's Chief of Staff told Feinstein to wait 6 months ([www.senate.gov/~feinstein/Releases02/attacks.htm](http://www.senate.gov/~feinstein/Releases02/attacks.htm))
- They ignored the report of the Gore Commission on Aviation Safety and Security ([www.fas.org/irp/threat/212fin~1.html](http://www.fas.org/irp/threat/212fin~1.html))

The Bush administration changed Bill Clinton's policy towards Afghanistan to appease Al Qaeda, the Taliban, and their Saudi backers to promote the interests of oil companies, putting profits for campaign contributors ahead of fighting terrorism:

- They prevented FBI terrorism experts from investigating Saudi Arabian ties to Al Qaeda before 9/11, leading to the resignation of FBI Deputy Director John O'Neill only two weeks before 9/11 ([democrats.com/view.cfm?id=7352](http://democrats.com/view.cfm?id=7352))
- They ordered the Naval Strike Force - which President Clinton deployed near Afghanistan on 24-hour alert in order to strike Osama Bin Laden - to "stand down" before 9/11 ([democrats.com/view.cfm?id=5714](http://democrats.com/view.cfm?id=5714))
- They gave \$43 million to the Taliban in April 2001 ([www.robertscheer.com/1\\_natcolumn/01\\_columns/052201.htm](http://www.robertscheer.com/1_natcolumn/01_columns/052201.htm))

When appeasement failed, the Bush administration then prepared for war against Afghanistan:

- They issued an ultimatum to the Taliban in July 2001, telling them to turn over Osama Bin Laden and permit Unocal to build a pipeline across Afghanistan in return for a "carpet of gold" - or face a "carpet of bombs" (<http://democrats.com/view.cfm?id=5166>)
- They prepared a National Security Presidential Directive on September 9, 2001, a detailed "game plan to remove al-Qaida from the face of the Earth" (<http://www.msnbc.com/news/753359.asp?cp1=1>)

The Bush administration ignored numerous warnings from US and foreign agencies:

- They ignored warnings as early as June from the National Security Agency's Echelon electronic spy network that Middle Eastern terrorists were planning to hijack commercial aircraft to use as weapons to attack important symbols of American and Israeli culture (<http://www.newsbytes.com/news/01/170072.html>)
- They ignored warnings from an FBI agent in Phoenix on July 10, 2001 about suspicious Arab pilots with ties to Al Qaeda who were training in a local flight school, urging a nationwide investigation of Arab students in flight schools (<http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/articles/A30176-2002May16.html>)
- Bush personally ignored warnings from the CIA on August 6, 2001 that Al Qaeda planned to hijack US planes (<http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/articles/A35744-2002May17.html>)
- They ignored warnings from Jordanian intelligence in the summer that a major attack was planned inside the US using airplanes (<http://www.iht.com/cgi-bin/generic.cgi?template=articleprint.tmpl&ArticleId=58269>)
- They ignored warnings from Israeli intelligence in August that large-scale terrorist attacks on highly visible targets on the American mainland were imminent, organized by a cell of as many as 200 terrorists said to be preparing a big operation (<http://www.dailytelegraph.co.uk/news/main.jhtml?xml=/news/2001/09/16/wcia16.xml>)
- They ignored warnings from Russian intelligence in August that at least 25 terrorists were trained in Afghanistan and Pakistan to attack US targets, with future plans to attack financial, nuclear, and space facilities ([http://www.fromthewilderness.com/free/ww3/izvestia\\_story\\_pic.html](http://www.fromthewilderness.com/free/ww3/izvestia_story_pic.html))
- They ignored warnings from Moroccan intelligence in August that Bin Laden was "very disappointed" by the failure of the 1993 WTC bombing, and planned "large-scale operations in New York in the summer or autumn of 2001" (<http://www.iht.com/cgi-bin/generic.cgi?template=articleprint.tmpl&ArticleId=58269>)
- They ignored warnings from Egyptian president Hosni Mubarak on August 31 of an impending attack on the US (<http://globalresearch.ca/articles/LEB112A.html>)
- They ignored phone calls from Abu Zubaida, bin Laden's chief of operations, to the United States that were intercepted by the National Security Agency shortly before 9/11 ([http://abcnews.go.com/sections/wnt/DailyNews/wnt\\_missedsignals\\_1\\_020218.html](http://abcnews.go.com/sections/wnt/DailyNews/wnt_missedsignals_1_020218.html))
- They ignored an extraordinary number of "puts" on the stocks which were hardest hit by the 9/11 attacks, including American and United airlines, in the days leading up to 9/11

# Disturbing Facts about 9/11 and the U.S. Government

(<http://news.independent.co.uk/business/news/story.jsp?story=99402>)

The Bush administration failed to take meaningful precautions against a terrorist attack when so many warnings were being issued:

- They allowed counterterrorism agencies to “stand down” from the highest level of alert before August 6, 2001, despite repeated warnings from CIA director George Tenet (<http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/articles/A30176-2002May16.html>)

On 9/11, Bush failed to take decisive action:

- George W. Bush said on two occasions that he saw the first plane hit the World Trade Center at 8:46 a.m. on 9/11, and was told by Andrew Card about the second plane hitting the World Trade Center at 9:05 a.m. - yet Bush did nothing but listen to a children’s story until 9:30 a.m. instead of ordering fighter jets to intercept all hijacked planes immediately (<http://democrats.com/view.cfm?id=6061>)
- George W. Bush and Dick Cheney ordered the Pentagon to shoot down Flight 93 over Pennsylvania at 9:55 a.m., but could have shot down the other three flights if they had not waited so long to act (<http://www.washingtonpost.com/ac2/wp-dyn/A42754-2002Jan26>)
- Following 9/11, Bush used the tragedy to promote the agenda of his wealthy and powerful supporters:
- Bush pushed through the USA Patriot Act, which rewarded right-wing opponents of freedom and civil liberties
- Bush demanded additional tax cuts for the wealthy using the pretense of “stimulating” the economy
- Bush massively increased defense spending, to the direct personal benefit of his father and his cronies in the Carlyle Group

To cover up his failures, the Bush administration resorted to stonewalling, fingerpointing, and lies about 9/11:

*They have continually lied about the extent of the warnings about the 9/11 attack*

- Shortly after 9/11, Ari Fleischer declared flatly that there were “no warnings”
- When it was revealed in May 2002 that the CIA briefed Bush personally on August 6, 2001, they claimed that the briefing did not address terrorist attacks in the US; then they claimed it was a “low-level” briefing based on only one warning  
*Condoleezza Rice said, “I don’t think anyone could have predicted that these people... would try to use an airplane as a missile, a hijacked airplane as a missile.” (5/16/02)*
- The Pentagon commissioned a study in 1993 called “Terrorism 2000”, which predicted multiple simultaneous attacks, the use of airplanes as weapons, targeting of large landmarks and financial centers, etc. ([http://www.infowar.com/class\\_3/class3\\_081398a\\_j.shtml](http://www.infowar.com/class_3/class3_081398a_j.shtml))
- A Fedex employee tried to crash a DC-10 into FedEx HQ in Memphis in 1994, but was apprehended
- An Islamic fundamentalist group hijacked an Air France flight and loaded it with 27 tons of fuel to destroy the Eiffel Tower, but special forces stormed the plane on the ground
- Abdul Hakim Murad and Ramsey Yousef conceived of ‘Project Bojinka’ in 1995, a plan to blow up 11 US airline flights over the Pacific in 1995, and to crash airplanes into the Pentagon and the CIA, which definitely caught the attention of counter-terrorism experts in the US ([http://www.mediamonitors.net/mosaddeq36.html#\\_Toc9410681](http://www.mediamonitors.net/mosaddeq36.html#_Toc9410681))
- The Library of Congress Report on The Sociology And Psychology Of Terrorism warned in 1999 about suicide hijackers ([http://www.loc.gov/rr/frd/Sociology-Psychology\\_of\\_Terrorism.htm](http://www.loc.gov/rr/frd/Sociology-Psychology_of_Terrorism.htm))
- The Pentagon conducted a drill in December 2000 to respond to an airline crashing into the Pentagon ([http://www.mdw.army.mil/news/Contingency\\_Planning.html](http://www.mdw.army.mil/news/Contingency_Planning.html))
- U.S. and Italian officials were warned in July 2001 that Islamic terrorists might attempt to kill President Bush and other leaders by crashing an airliner into the Genoa summit of industrialized nations (<http://www.latimes.com/news/nationworld/nation/la-092701genoa.story>)

*They did everything possible to block an independent commission investigation*

- Bush and Cheney personally called Senate Majority Leader Tom Daschle urging him not to conduct an investigation (<http://www.cnn.com/2002/ALLPOLITICS/01/29/inv.terror.probe/>)
- When pressure for an independent commission became too strong, they suddenly announced warnings of another attack - although they did not raise the official alert level above yellow, leading to widespread speculation of a deliberately false alarm to stop the momentum
- When the Independent Commission finally began its work, Bush used Nixon’s dictatorial doctrine of “Executive Privilege” to deny commissioners access to crucial documents (<http://www.msnbc.com/m/pt/printthis.asp?storyID=910676>)

*George W. Bush himself has repeatedly JOKED about the 9/11 attack:*

- “Lucky me. I hit the trifecta,” George W. Bush, shortly after 9/11—quoted by Bush Budget Director Mitch Daniels, 11/28/01

Taken from a supporter website of the Democrats, <http://democrats.com/elandslide/petition.cfm?campaign=911>



# The War on Iraq: Conceived in Israel

By Stephen J. Sniegoski

In a lengthy article in *The American Conservative* criticizing the rationale for the projected U.S. attack on Iraq, the veteran diplomatic historian Paul W. Schroeder noted (only in passing) “what is possibly the unacknowledged real reason and motive behind the policy—security for Israel.” If Israel’s security were indeed the real American motive for war, Schroeder wrote:<sup>1</sup>

*“It would represent something to my knowledge unique in history. It is common for great powers to try to fight wars by proxy, getting smaller powers to fight for their interests. This would be the first instance I know where a great power (in fact, a superpower) would do the fighting as the proxy of a small client state.”*

Is there any evidence that Israel and her supporters have managed to get the United States to fight for their interests?

To unearth the real motives for the projected war on Iraq, one must ask the critical question: How did the 9/11 terrorist attack lead to the planned war on Iraq, even though there is no real evidence that Iraq was involved in 9/11? From the time of the 9/11 attack, neoconservatives, of primarily (though not exclusively) Jewish ethnicity and right-wing Zionist persuasion, have tried to make use of 9/11 to foment a broad war against Islamic terrorism, the targets of which would coincide with the enemies of Israel.

Although the term *neoconservative* is in common usage, a brief description of the group might be helpful. Many of the first-generation neocons originally were liberal Democrats, or even socialists and Marxists, often Trotskyites. They drifted to the right in the 1960s and 1970s as the Democratic Party moved to the antiwar McGovernite left. And concern for Israel loomed large in that rightward drift. As political scientist Benjamin Ginsberg puts it:<sup>2</sup>

*“One major factor that drew them inexorably to the right was their attachment to Israel and their growing frustration during the 1960s with a Democratic party that was becoming increasingly opposed to American military preparedness and increasingly enamored of Third World causes (e.g., Palestinian rights). In the Reaganite right’s hard-line anti-communism, commitment to American military strength, and willingness to intervene politically and militarily in the affairs of other nations to promote democratic values (and American interests), neocons found a political movement that would guarantee Israel’s security?”*

For some time prior to September 11, 2001, neoconservatives had publicly advocated an American war on Iraq. The 9/11 atrocities provided the pretext. The idea that neocons are the motivating force behind the U.S. movement for war has been broached by a number of commentators. For instance, Joshua Micah Marshall authored an article in *The Washington Monthly* titled: “Bomb Saddam?: How the obsession of a few neocon hawks became the central goal of U.S. foreign policy.” And in the leftist e-journal *CounterPunch*, Kathleen and war on Iraq. Bill Christison wrote:<sup>3</sup>

*“The suggestion that the war with Iraq is being planned at Israel’s behest, or at the instigation of policymakers whose main motivation is trying to create a secure environment for Israel, is strong. Many Israeli analysts believe this. The Israeli commentator Akiva Eldar recently observed frankly in a Ha’aretz column that [Richard] Perle, [Douglas] Feith, and their fellow strategists ‘are walking a fine line between their loyalty to American governments and Israeli interests.’ The suggestion of dual loyalties is not a verboten subject in the Israeli press, as it is in the United States. Peace activist Uri Avnery, who knows Israeli Prime Minister Sharon well, has written that Sharon has long planned grandiose schemes for restructuring the Middle East and that ‘the winds blowing now in Washington remind me of Sharon. I have absolutely no proof that the Bushies got their ideas from him. But the style is the same.’”*

In the following essay I attempt to flesh out that thesis and show the link between the war position of the neoconservatives and the long-time strategy of the Israeli Right, if not of the Israeli mainstream itself. In brief, the idea of a Middle East war has been bandied about in Israel for many years as a means of enhancing Israeli security, which revolves around an ultimate solution to the Palestinian problem.

## War and Expulsion

To understand why Israeli leaders would want a Middle East war, it is first necessary to take a brief look at the history of the Zionist movement and its goals. Despite public rhetoric to the contrary, the idea of expelling (or, in the accepted euphemism, “transferring”) the indigenous Palestinian population was an integral part of the Zionist effort to found a Jewish national state in Palestine. Historian Tom Segev writes:

*“The idea of transfer had accompanied the Zionist movement from its very beginnings, first appearing in Theodore Herzl’s diary. In practice, the Zionists began executing a mini-transfer from the time they began purchasing the land and evacuating the Arab tenants.... ‘Disappearing’ the Arabs lay at the heart of the Zionist dream, and was also a necessary condition of its existence.... With few exceptions, none of the Zionists disputed the desirability of forced transfer—or its morality.*

However, Segev continues, the Zionist leaders learned not to publicly proclaim their plan of mass expulsion because “this would cause the Zionists to lose the world’s sympathy.”<sup>4</sup>

The key was to find an opportune time to initiate the expulsion so it would not incur the world’s condemnation. In the late 1930s, David Ben-Gurion wrote: “What is inconceivable in normal times is possible in revolutionary times; and if at this time the opportunity is missed and what is possible in such great hours is not carried out—a whole world is lost.”<sup>5</sup> The “revolutionary times” would come with the first Arab-Israeli war in 1948, when the Zionists were able to expel 750,000 Palestinians (more than 80 percent of the indigenous population),

and thus achieve an overwhelmingly Jewish state, though its area did not include the entirety of Palestine, or the “Land of Israel,” which Zionist leaders thought necessary for a viable state.

The opportunity to grab additional land occurred as a result of the 1967 war; however, that occupation brought with it the problem of a large Palestinian population. By that time world opinion was totally opposed to forced population transfers, the idea of expulsion resurfaced equating such a policy with the unspeakable horror of Nazism. The landmark Fourth Geneva Convention, ratified in 1949, had “unequivocally prohibited deportation” of civilians under occupation.<sup>5</sup> Since the 1967 war, the major question in Israeli politics has been: What to do with that territory and its Palestinian population?

It was during the 1980s, with the coming to power of the right-wing Likud government, that the idea of expulsion resurfaced publicly. And this time it was directly tied to a larger war, with destabilization of the Middle East seen as a precondition for Palestinian expulsion. Such a proposal, including removal of the Palestinian population, was outlined in an article by Oded Yinon, titled “A Strategy for Israel in the 1980s,” appearing in the World Zionist Organization’s periodical *Kivunim* in February 1982. Yinon had been attached to the Israeli Foreign Ministry and his article undoubtedly reflected high-level thinking in the Israeli military and intelligence establishment. The article called for Israel to bring about the dissolution and fragmentation of the Arab states into a mosaic of ethnic groupings. Thinking along those lines, Ariel Sharon stated on March 24, 1988, that if the Palestinian uprising continued, Israel would have to make war on her Arab neighbors. The war, he stated, would provide “the circumstances” for the removal of the entire Palestinian population from the West Bank and Gaza and even from inside Israel proper.<sup>6</sup>

Israeli foreign policy expert Yehoshafat Harkabi critiqued the war/expulsion scenario—referring to “Israeli intentions to impose a Pax Israelica on the Middle East, to dominate the Arab countries and treat them harshly”—in his very significant work, *Israel’s Fateful Hour*, published in 1988. Writing from a realist perspective, Harkabi concluded that Israel did not have the power to achieve that goal, given the strength of the Arab states, the large Palestinian population involved, and the vehement opposition of world opinion. He hoped that “the failed Israeli attempt to impose a new order in the weakest Arab state—Lebanon—will disabuse people of similar ambitions in other territories.”<sup>7</sup> Left unconsidered by Harkabi was the possibility that the United States would act as Israel’s proxy to achieve the overall goal.

### **U.S. Realpolitik**

In the 1970s and 1980s, U.S. Middle Eastern policy, although sympathetic to Israel, was not identical to that of Israel. The fundamental goal of U.S. policy was to promote stable governments in the Middle East that would allow oil to flow reliably to the Western industrial nations. It was not necessary for the Muslim countries to befriend Israel—in fact they could openly oppose the Jewish state. The United States worked for peace between Israel and the Muslim states in the region, but it was to be a peace that would accommodate the demands of the Muslim nations—most crucially their demands involving the Palestinians.

Pursuing its policy of ensuring the security of Middle East oil supplies, by the mid 1980s Washington was heavily supporting Iraq in her war against Iran, although for a while the United States had also provided some aid to Iran (viz. the Iran-contra scandal). Ironically, Donald Rumsfeld was the U.S. envoy who in 1983 paved the way for the restoration of relations with Iraq, relations which had been severed in 1967. The United States along with other.

Western nations looked upon Iraq as a bulwark against the radical Islamism of the Ayatollah’s Iran, which threatened Western oil interests. U.S. support for Iraq included intelligence information, military equipment, and agricultural credits. And the United States deployed the largest naval force since the Vietnam War in the Persian Gulf. Ostensibly sent for the purpose of protecting oil tankers, it ended up engaging in serious attacks on Iran’s navy.

It was during this period of U.S. support that Iraq used poison gas against the Iranians and the Kurds, a tactic that the U.S. government and its media supporters now describe as so horrendous. In fact, U.S. intelligence facilitated the Iraqi use of gas against the Iranians. In addition, Washington eased up on its own technology export restrictions to Iraq, which allowed the Iraqis to import supercomputers, machine tools, poisonous chemicals, and even strains of anthrax and bubonic plague. In short, the United States helped arm Iraq with the very weaponry of horror that administration officials are now trumpeting as justification for forcibly removing Saddam from power.<sup>8</sup>

When the Iran/Iraq war ended in 1988, the United States continued its support for Iraq, showering her with military hardware, advanced technology, and agricultural credits. The United States apparently looked to Saddam to maintain stability in the Gulf. But American policy swiftly changed when Iraq invaded Kuwait in August 1990. Neoconservatives were hawkish in generating support for a U.S. war against Iraq. The Committee for Peace and Security in the Gulf, headed by Richard Perle, was set up to promote the war.<sup>9</sup> And neoconservative war hawks such as Perle, Frank Gaffney, Jr., A.M. Rosenthal, William Safire, and *The Wall Street Journal* held that America’s war objective should be not simply to drive Iraq out of Iran but also to destroy Iraq’s military potential, especially her capacity to develop nuclear weapons. The first Bush administration embraced that position.<sup>10</sup>

But beyond that, the neocons hoped that the war would lead to the removal of Saddam Hussein and the American occupation of Iraq. However, despite the urgings of then-Defense Secretary Richard Cheney and Undersecretary of Defense Paul Wolfowitz, the full conquest of Iraq was never accomplished because of the opposition of General Colin Powell, chairman of the Joint Chiefs, and General Norman Schwarzkopf, the field commander.<sup>11</sup> Moreover, the United States had a UN mandate only to liberate Kuwait, not to remove Saddam. To attempt the latter would have caused the U.S.-led coalition to fall apart. America’s coalition partners in the region, especially Turkey and Saudi Arabia, feared that the elimination of Saddam’s government would cause Iraq to fragment into warring ethnic and religious groups. That could have involved a Kurdish rebellion in Iraq that would have spread to Turkey’s own restive Kurdish population. Furthermore, Iraq’s Shiites might have fallen under

the influence of Iran, increasing the threat of Islamic radicalism in the region.

Not only did the Bush administration dash neoconservative hopes by leaving Saddam in place, but its proposed “New World Order,” as implemented by Secretary of State James Baker, conflicted with neoconservative/Israeli goals, being oriented toward placating the Arab coalition that supported the war. That entailed an effort to curb Israeli control of her occupied territories. The Bush administration demanded that Israel halt the construction of new settlements in the occupied territories as a condition for receiving \$10 billion in U.S. loan guarantees for Israel’s resettlement of hundreds of thousands of immigrants from the former Soviet Union. Although Bush would cave in to American pro-Zionist pressure just prior to the November 1992 election, his resistance disaffected many neocons, causing some, such as Safire, to back Bill Clinton in the 1992 election.<sup>12</sup>

### The Network

During the Clinton administration, neoconservatives promoted their views from a strong interlocking network of think tanks—the American Enterprise Institute (AEI), Middle East Media Research Institute (Memri), Hudson Institute, Washington Institute for Near East Policy, Middle East Forum, Jewish Institute for National Security Affairs (JINSA), Center for Security Policy (CSP)—which have had great influence in the media and which have helped to staff Republican administrations. Some of the organizations were originally set up by mainline conservatives and only later taken over by neoconservatives;<sup>13</sup> others were established by neocons, with some of the groups having a direct Israeli connection. For example, Colonel Yigal Carmon, formerly of Israeli military intelligence, was a co-founder of the Middle East Media Research Institute (Memri). And the various organizations have been closely interconnected. For example, the other co-founder of Memri, Meyrav Wurmser, was a member of the Hudson Institute, while her husband, David Wurmser, headed the Middle East studies department of AEI. And Pede was both a “resident fellow” at the American Enterprise Institute (AEI) and a trustee of the Hudson Institute.<sup>14</sup>

In a recent article in the *The Nation*, Jason Vest discusses the immense influence in the current Bush administration of people from two major neocon research organizations, JINSA and CSP. Vest details the close links among the two organizations, right-wing politicians, arms merchants, military men, Jewish billionaires, and Republican administrations. Regarding JINSA, Vest writes:<sup>15</sup>

*“Founded in 1976 by neoconservatives concerned that the United States might not be able to provide Israel with adequate military supplies in the event of another Arab-Israeli war, over the past twenty-five years JINSA has gone from a loose-knit proto-group to a \$1.4-million-a-year operation with a formidable array of Washington power players on its rolls. Until the beginning of the current Bush administration, JINSA’s board of advisors included such heavy hitters as Cheney, John Bolton (now Under Secretary of State for Arms Control) and Douglas J. Feith, the third-highest-ranking executive in the Pentagon. Both Pede and*

*former Director of Central Intelligence James Woolsey, two of the loudest voices in the attack-Iraq chorus, are still on the board, as are such Reagan-era relics as Jeane Kirkpatrick, Eugene Rostow, and [Michael] Ledeen—Oliver North’s Iran/contra liaison with the Israelis.”*

Vest notes that “dozens” of JINSA and CSP “members have ascended to powerful government posts, where their advocacy in support of the same agenda continues, abetted by the out-of-government adjuncts from which they came. Industrious and persistent, they’ve managed to weave a number of issues—support for national missile defense, opposition to arms control treaties, championing of wasteful weapons systems, arms aid to Turkey and American unilateralism in general—into a hard line, with support for the Israeli right at its core.” And Vest continues:<sup>15</sup>

*“On no issue is the JINSA/CSP hard line more evident than in its relentless campaign for war—not just with Iraq, but total war,’ as Michael Ledeen, one of the most influential JINSAans in Washington, put it last year. For this crew, ‘regime change’ by any means necessary in Iraq, Iran, Syria, Saudi Arabia and the Palestinian Authority is an urgent imperative.”*

Let’s recapitulate Vest’s major points. The JINSA/CSP network has “support for the Israeli right at its core.” In line with the views of the Israeli right, it has advocated a Middle Eastern war to eliminate the enemies of Israel. And members of the JINSA/CSP network have gained influential foreign policy positions in Republican administrations, most especially in the current administration of George W. Bush.

### “Securing the Realm”

A clear illustration of the neoconservative thinking on war on Iraq is a 1996 paper developed by Perle, Feith, David Wurmser, and others published by an Israeli think tank, the Institute for Advanced Strategic and Political Studies, titled “A clean break: a new strategy for securing the realm.” It was intended as a political blueprint for the incoming government of Benjamin Netanyahu. The paper stated that Netanyahu should “make a clean break” with the Oslo peace process and reassert Israel’s claim to the West Bank and Gaza. It presented a plan whereby Israel would “shape its strategic environment,” beginning with the removal of Saddam Hussein and the installation of a Hashemite monarchy in Baghdad, to serve as a first step toward eliminating the anti-Israeli governments of Syria, Lebanon, Saudi Arabia, and Iran.<sup>16</sup>

Note that these Americans—Perle, Feith, and Wurmser—were advising a foreign government and that they currently are connected to the George W. Bush administration: Perle is head of the Defense Policy Board; Feith is Assistant Secretary of Defense for Policy; and Wurmser is special assistant to State Department chief arms control negotiator John Bolton. It is also remarkable that while in 1996 Israel was to “shape its strategic environment” by removing her enemies, the same individuals are now proposing that the United States shape the Middle East environment by removing Israel’s enemies. That is to say, the United States is to serve as Israel’s proxy to advance Israeli interests.

On February 19, 1998, in an “Open Letter to the President,” the neoconservative Committee for Peace and Security in the

Gulf proposed “a comprehensive political and military strategy for bringing down Saddam and his regime.” The letter continued:

*“It will not be easy—and the course of action we favor is not without its problems and perils. But we believe the vital national interests of our country require the United States to [adopt such a strategy].”*

Among the letter’s signers were the following current Bush administration officials: Elliott Abrams (National Security Council), Richard Armitage (State Department), Bolton (State Department), Feith (Defense Department), Fred We (Defense Policy Board), Zalmay Khalilzad (White House), Peter Rodman (Defense Department), Wolfowitz (Defense Department), David Wurmser (State Department), Dov Zakheim (Defense Department), Perle (Defense Policy Board), and Rumsfeld (Secretary of Defense).<sup>17</sup> In 1998 Donald Rumsfeld was part of the neocon network and already demanding war with Iraq.<sup>18</sup>

Signers of the letter also included such pro-Zionist and neo-conservative luminaries as Robert Kagan, William Kristol, Gaffney (Director, Center for Security Policy), Joshua Muravchik (American Enterprise Institute), Martin Peretz (editor-in-chief, *The New Republic*), Leon Wieseltier (*The New Republic*), and former Rep. Stephen Solarz (D-N.Y.).<sup>19</sup> President Clinton would only go so far as to support the Iraq Liberation Act, which allocated \$97 million dollars for training and military equipment for the Iraqi opposition.<sup>20</sup>

In September 2000, the neocon think tank Project for the New American Century (PNAC)<sup>21</sup> issued a report,

“Rebuilding America’s Defenses: Strategy, Forces and Resources for a New Century,” that envisioned an expanded global posture for the United States. In regard to the Middle East, the report called for an increased American military presence in the Gulf, whether Saddam was in power or not:<sup>22</sup>

*“the United States has for decades sought to play a more permanent role in Gulf regional security. While the unresolved conflict with Iraq provides the immediate justification, the need for a substantial American force presence in the Gulf transcends the issue of the regime of Saddam Hussein.”*

The project’s participants included individuals who would play leading roles in the second Bush administration: Cheney (Vice President), Rumsfeld (secretary of defense), Wolfowitz (deputy secretary of defense), and Lewis Libby (Cheney’s chief of staff). *Weekly Standard* editor William Kristol was also a co-author.

In order to directly influence White House policy, Wolfowitz and Perle managed to obtain leading roles on the Bush foreign policy/national security advisory team for the 2000 campaign. Headed by Soviet specialist Condoleezza Rice, the team was referred to as “the Vulcans.” Having no direct experience in foreign policy and little knowledge of the world, as illustrated by his notorious gaffes—confusing Slovakia with Slovenia, referring to Greeks as “Grecians,” and failing a pop quiz on the names of four foreign leaders—George W. Bush would have to rely heavily on his advisors.

“His foreign policy team,” Kagan observed, “will be critically important to determining what his policies are.” And columnist Robert Novak noted: “Since Rice lacks a clear track re-

cord on Middle East matters, Wolfowitz and Perle will probably weigh in most on Middle East policy.”<sup>23</sup> In short, Wolfowitz and Perle would provide the know-nothing Bush with a ready-made foreign policy for the Middle East. And certainly such right-wing Zionist views would be reinforced by Cheney and Rumsfeld and the multitude of other neocons who would inundate Bush’s administration.

Neocons would fill the key positions involving defense and foreign policy. On Rumsfeld’s staff are Wolfowitz and Feith. On Cheney’s staff, the principal neoconservatives include Libby, Eric Edelman, and John Hannah. And Cheney himself, with his long-time neocon connections and views, has played a significant role in shaping “Bush” foreign policy.<sup>24</sup>

### **A Perle among Men**

Perle is often described as the most influential foreign-policy neoconservative, their *eminence grise*.<sup>25</sup> He gained notice in the 1970s as a top aide to Senator Henry “Scoop” Jackson (D-Wash.), who was one of the Senate’s most anti-Communist and pro-Israeli members. During the 1980s, Perle served as deputy secretary of defense under Ronald Reagan, where his hard-line anti-Soviet positions, especially his opposition to any form of arms control, earned him the moniker “Prince of Darkness” from his enemies. However, his friends considered him, as one put it, “one of the most wonderful people in Washington.” That Perle is known as a man of great intellect, a gracious and generous host, a witty companion, and a loyal ally helps to explain his prestige in neoconservative circles.<sup>26</sup>

Perle isn’t just an exponent of pro-Zionist views; he has also had close connections with Israel, being a personal friend of Sharon’s, a board member of the *Jerusalem Post*, and an employee of the Israeli weapons manufacturer Soltam. According to author Seymour M. Hersh, while Perle was a congressional aide for Jackson, FBI wiretaps picked up Perle providing classified information from the National Security Council to the Israeli embassy.<sup>27</sup> Although not technically part of the Bush administration, Perle holds the unpaid chairmanship of the Defense Policy Board. In that position, Perle has access to classified documents and close contacts with the administration leadership. As an article in *Salon* puts it:<sup>28</sup>

*“Formerly an obscure civilian board designed to provide the secretary of defense with non-binding advice on a whole range of military issues, the Defense Policy Board, now stacked with unabashed Iraq hawks, has become a quasi-lobbying organization whose primary objective appears to be waging war with Iraq.”*

### **“Actions Inconceivable at Present”**

As Bush and his people came into office in January 2001, press reports in Israel quoted government officials and politicians speaking openly of mass expulsion of the Palestinians. Ariel Sharon was elected prime minister of Israel in February 2001; noted for his ruthlessness, he had said in the past that Jordan should become the Palestinian state where Palestinians removed from Israeli territory would be relocated.<sup>29</sup> Public concern was mounting in Israel over demographic changes that threatened the Jewish nature of the Israeli state. Haifa Univer-

sity professor Amon Sofer released the study, "Demography of Eretz Israel," which predicted that by 2020 non-Jews would be a majority of 58 percent in Israel and the occupied territories.<sup>30</sup> Moreover, it was recognized that the overall increase in population would exceed what the land, with its limited supply of water, could support.<sup>31</sup>

It appeared to some that Sharon intended to achieve expulsion through militant means. As one left-wing analyst put it at the time: "One big war with transfer at its end—this is the plan of the hawks who indeed almost reached the moment of its implementation."<sup>32</sup> In the summer of 2001, the authoritative Jane's Information Group reported that Israel had completed the planning for a massive and bloody invasion of the Occupied Territories, involving "air strikes by F-15 and F-16 fighter bombers, a heavy artillery bombardment, and then an attack by a combined force of 30,000 men ... tank brigades and infantry." Such bold strikes would aim at far more than simply removing Arafat and the PLO leadership. But the United States vetoed the plan, and Europe made its opposition to Sharon's plans equally plain.<sup>33</sup>

As one close observer of the Israeli-Palestinian scene presciently wrote in August 2001, "It is only in the current political climate that such expulsion plans cannot be put into operation. As hot as the political climate is at the moment, clearly the time is not yet ripe for drastic action. However, if the temperature were raised even higher, actions inconceivable at present might be possible."<sup>34</sup> Once again, "revolutionary times" were necessary for Israel; to achieve its policy goals. And then came the September 11 attacks.

### Revolutionary September

The September 11 atrocities provided the "revolutionary times" in which Israel could undertake radical measures unacceptable during normal conditions. When asked what the attack would do for U.S.-Israeli relations, former prime minister Benjamin Netanyahu responded:

*"It's very good."*

Then he edited himself:

*"Well, not very good, but will generate immediate sympathy."*

Netanyahu correctly predicted that the attack would "strengthen the bond between our two peoples, because we've experienced enemies would now terror over so many decades, but the United States has now experienced a massive hemorrhaging of terror." Sharon placed Israel in the same position as the United States, referring to the attack as an assault on "our common values" and declaring:<sup>35</sup>

*"I believe together we can defeat these forces of evil."*

In the eyes of Israel's leaders, the September 11 attacks had joined the United States and Israeli together against a common enemy. And that enemy was not in far-off Afghanistan but was geographically close to Israel. Israel's traditional enemies would now become America's as well. And Israel would have a better chance of dealing with the Palestinians under the cover of a "war on terrorism."

Immediately after the 9/11 attacks, the neoconservatives began to publicly push for a wider war on terrorism that would immediately deal with Israel's enemies. For example, Safire

held that the real terrorists that America should focus on were not groups of religious fanatics "but Iraqi scientists today working feverishly in hidden biological laboratories and underground nuclear facilities [who] would, if undisturbed, enable the hate-driven, power-crazed Saddam to kill millions. That capability would transform him from a boxed-in bully into a rampant world power."<sup>36</sup>

Within the administration, Wolfowitz clearly implied a broader war against existing governments when he said:<sup>37</sup>

*"I think one has to say it's not just simply a matter of capturing people and holding them accountable, but removing the sanctuaries, removing the support systems, ending states who sponsor terrorism. And that's why it has to be a broad and sustained campaign. It's not going to stop if [only] a few criminals are taken care of."*

On September 20, 2001, neocons of the Project for the New American Century sent a letter to President Bush endorsing the war on terrorism and stressing that the removal of Saddam was an essential part of that war. They maintained that "even if evidence does not link Iraq directly to the attack, any strategy aiming at the eradication of terrorism and its sponsors must include a determined effort to remove Saddam Hussein from power in Iraq. Failure to undertake such an effort will constitute an early and perhaps decisive surrender in the war on international terrorism." Furthermore, the letter-writers opined, if Syria and Iran failed to stop all support for Hezbollah, the United States should "consider appropriate measures against these known sponsors of terrorism." Among the letter's signatories were such neoconservative luminaries as William Kristol, Midge Decter, Eliot Cohen, Francis Fukuyama, Gaffney, Kagan, Kirkpatrick, Charles Krauthammer, Perle, Peretz, Norman Podhoretz, Solarz, and Wieselfer.<sup>38</sup>

### World War IV

In the October 29, 2002, issue of *The Weekly Standard*, Kagan and Kristol predict a wider Middle Eastern war:<sup>39</sup>

*"When all is said and done, the conflict in Afghanistan will be to the war on terrorism what the North Africa campaign was to World War II: an essential beginning on the path to victory. But compared with what looms over the horizon—a wide-ranging war in locales from Central Asia to the Middle East and, unfortunately, back again to the United States -Afghanistan will prove but an opening battle.... But this war will not end in Afghanistan. It is going to spread and engulf a number of countries in conflicts of varying intensity. It could well require the use of American military power in multiple places simultaneously. It is going to resemble the clash of civilizations that everyone has hoped to avoid."*

Kagan and Kristol seem to be looking forward to this gigantic conflagration.

In a November 20, 2001, article in *The Wall Street Journal*, Eliot Cohen dubs the conflict "World War IV," a term picked up by other neocons. Cohen proclaims:<sup>40</sup>

*"The enemy in this war is not 'terrorism' [...] but militant Islam. [...] Afghanistan constitutes just one front in World War IV, and the battles there just one campaign."*

Cohen calls not only for a U.S. attack on Iraq but also for

the elimination of the Islamic regime in Iran, which “would be no less important a victory in this war than the annihilation of bin Laden.”<sup>41</sup>

Critics of a wider war in the Middle East quickly recognized the neoconservative war-propaganda effort. Analyzing the situation in September 2002, paleoconservative U Scott McConnell wrote:<sup>42</sup>

*“For the neoconservatives [...] bin Laden is but a side-show. [...] They hope to use September 11 as pretext for opening a wider war in the Middle East. Their prime, but not only, target is Saddam Hussein’s Iraq, even if Iraq has nothing to do with the World Trade Center assault.”*

However, McConnell mistakenly considered the neocon stance to be only a minority view within the Bush administration:<sup>42</sup>

*“The neocon wish list is a recipe for igniting a huge conflagration between the United States and countries throughout the Arab world, with consequences no one could reasonably pretend to calculate. Support for such a war—which could turn quite easily into a global war—is a minority position within the Bush administration (assistant secretary of state Paul Wolfowitz is its main advocate) and the country. But it presently dominates the main organs of conservative journalistic opinion, the Wall Street Journal, National Review, the Weekly Standard, and the Washington Times, as well as Marty Peretz’s neoliberal New Republic. In a volatile situation, such organs of opinion could matter.”*

Expressing a similar view, veteran columnist Georgie Anne Geyer observed:

*“The ‘Get Iraq’ campaign [...] started within days of the September bombings. [...] It emerged first and particularly from pro-Israeli hard-liners in the Pentagon such as Deputy Defense Secretary Paul Wolfowitz and advisor Richard Perle, but also from hard-line neoconservatives, and some journalists and congressmen.*

*Soon it became clear that many, although not all, were in the group that is commonly called in diplomatic and political circles the ‘Israeli-firsters,’ meaning that they would always put Israeli policy, or even their perception of it, above anything else.”*

Geyer believed that this line of thinking was “being contained by cool heads in the administration, but that could change at any time.”<sup>43</sup>

### Lighting up the Recesses of Bush

Neoconservatives have presented the September 11 atrocities as a lightning bolt to make President Bush aware of his destiny: destroying the evil of world terrorism. Ironically enough, Podhoretz adopted Christian terminology to describe a changed Bush:<sup>44</sup>

*“A transformed—or, more precisely, a transfigured—George W. Bush appeared before us. In an earlier article [...] I suggested, perhaps presumptuously, that out of the blackness of smoke and fiery death let loose by September 11, a kind of revelation, blazing with a very different fire of its own, lit up the recesses of Bush’s mind and heart and soul. Which is to say that, having previously been unsure as to why he should have been chosen to become President of*

*the United States, George W. Bush now knew that the God to whom, as a born-again Christian, he had earlier committed himself had put him in the Oval Office for a purpose. He had put him there to lead a war against the evil of terrorism.”*

In the immediate aftermath of 9/11, administration heavyweights debated the scope of the “war on terrorism.” According to Bob Woodward’s *Bush at War*, as early as September 12 Rumsfeld “raised the question of attacking Iraq. Why shouldn’t we go against Iraq, not just al Qaeda? he asked. Rumsfeld was speaking not only for himself when he raised the question. His deputy, Paul D. Wolfowitz, was committed to a policy that would make Iraq a principal target of the first round in the war on terrorism.”<sup>45</sup>

Woodward adds:

*“The terrorist attacks of September 11 gave the United States a new window to go after Hussein.”*

On September 15, Wolfowitz put forth military arguments to justify a U.S. attack on Iraq rather than Afghanistan. Wolfowitz expressed the view that “attacking Afghanistan would be uncertain,” voicing the fear that American troops would be “bogged down in mountain fighting. [...] In contrast, Iraq was a brittle, oppressive regime that might break easily. It was doable.”<sup>46</sup>

However, the neoconservatives were not able to achieve their goal of a wider war at the outset, in part because of the opposition of Secretary of State Powell, who held that the war should focus on the actual perpetrators of September 11. (That was how most Americans actually envisioned the war.) Perhaps Powell’s most telling argument was his declaration that an American attack on Iraq would lack international support. He claimed that a U.S. victory in Afghanistan would enhance the United States’ ability to deal militarily with Iraq at a later time, “if we can prove that Iraq had a role” in September 11.<sup>47</sup>

Powell diverged from the neocon hawks in his emphasis on the need for international support, as opposed to American unilateralism, but an even greater difference lay in his contention that the “war on terror” had to be directly linked to the perpetrators of September 11—Osama bin Laden’s network. Powell publicly repudiated Wolfowitz’s call for “ending states” with the response that “we’re after ending terrorism. And if there are states and regimes, nations, that support terrorism, we hope to persuade them that it is in their interest to stop doing that. But I think ‘ending terrorism’ is where I would leave it and let Mr. Wolfowitz speak for himself.”<sup>48</sup>

Very significantly, however, while the “war on terrorism” would not begin with an attack on Iraq, military plans were being made for just such an endeavor. A Top Secret document outlining the war plan for Afghanistan, which Bush signed on September 17, 2001, included, as a minor point, instructions to the Pentagon to also start making plans for an attack on Iraq.<sup>49</sup>

Bush’s public pronouncements evolved rapidly in the direction of expanding the war to Iraq. On November 21, 2001, in a speech at Fort Campbell, Kentucky, he proclaimed that “Afghanistan is just the beginning of the war against terror. There are other terrorists who threaten America and our friends, and there are other nations willing to sponsor them. We will not be secure as a nation until all these threats are defeated. Across the

world, and across the years, we will fight these evil ones, and we will win.”<sup>50</sup>

On November 26, in response to a question whether Iraq was one of the terrorist nations that he had in mind, Bush said:

*“Well, my message is, that if you harbor a terrorist, you’re a terrorist. If you feed a terrorist, you’re a terrorist. If you develop weapons of mass destruction that you want to terrorize the world, you’ll be held accountable.”*

Note that Bush included possession of weapons of mass destruction as an indicator of “terrorism.” And none of that terrorist activity necessarily related to the September 11 attacks.<sup>51</sup>

### Transformation Complete

The transformation to support of a wider war was complete with Bush’s January 29, 2002, State of the Union speech, in which he officially decoupled the “war on terrorism” from the specific events of 9/11. Bush did not even mention bin Laden or al Qaeda. The danger now was said to come primarily from three countries—Iran, Iraq, and North Korea—which he dubbed “an axis of evil” that allegedly threatened the world with their weapons of mass destruction. According to Bush:<sup>52</sup>

*“States like these, and their terrorist allies, constitute an axis of evil, arming to threaten the peace of the world. By seeking weapons of mass destruction, these regimes pose a grave and growing danger. They could provide these arms to terrorists, giving them the means to match their hatred. They could attack our allies or attempt to blackmail the United States. In any of these cases, the price of indifference would be catastrophic.”*

The phrase “axis of evil” was coined by Bush’s neoconservative speechwriter, David Frum.<sup>53</sup>

By April 2002, Bush was publicly declaring that American policy was to secure “regime change” in Iraq. And in June, he stated that the United States would launch preemptive strikes on those countries that threatened the United States.<sup>54</sup> According to what passes as the conventional wisdom, Iraq now posed such a threat. Moreover, by the spring of 2002, General Tommy R. Franks, chief of U.S. Central Command, began giving Bush private briefings every three or four weeks on the planning for a new Iraq war.<sup>55</sup>

Neoconservatives both within and without the administration sought a unilateral U.S. attack on Iraq that would not be encumbered by the conflicting goals of any coalition partners. That push was countered by Powell’s efforts to persuade Bush that UN sanction would be necessary to justify a U.S. attack, which the President ultimately found persuasive. That slowed the rush to war, but it also represented a move by Powell away from his original position that Washington should make war on Iraq only if Baghdad were proven to have been involved in the September 11 terrorism.

The UN Security Council decided that UN inspectors, with sweeping inspection powers, would determine whether Iraq was violating her pledge to destroy all of her weapons of mass destruction. UN Security Council Resolution 1441 (November 8, 2002) places the burden of proof on Iraq to show that she no longer possesses weapons of mass destruction. The resolution states that any false statements or omissions in the Iraqi weapons declaration would constitute a further material breach by Iraq of

her obligations. That could set in motion discussions by the Security Council on considering the use of military force against Iraq.

While some have claimed that this might mean that war would be put off,<sup>56</sup> it also allows the United States to use the new UN resolution as a legal justification for war. In fact, the United States could choose to enforce the resolution through war without additional UN authorization. As British journalist Robert Fisk writes:<sup>57</sup>

*“The United Nations can debate any Iraqi non-compliance with weapons inspectors, but the United States will decide whether Iraq has breached UN resolutions. In other words, America can declare war without UN permission.”*

### Armchair Strategists

Neoconservatives not only have determined the foreign policy leading to war against Iraq but have played a role in molding military strategy as well. Top military figures, including members of the Joint Chiefs, initially expressed opposition to the whole idea of such a war.<sup>58</sup> But Perle and other neoconservatives have for some time insisted that toppling Saddam would require little military effort or risk. They pushed for a war strategy dubbed “inside-out” that would involve attacking Baghdad and a couple of other key cities with a very small number of airborne troops, as few as 5,000 in some estimates. According to the plan’s supporters, such strikes would cause Saddam’s regime to collapse. American military leaders adamantly opposed that approach as too risky, offering in its stead a plan to use a much larger number of troops—about 250,000—who would invade Iraq in a more conventional manner, marching from the soil of her neighbors, as was done during the Gulf War of 1991.

Perle and the neoconservatives, for their part, feared that no neighboring country would provide the necessary bases, so that this approach would likely mean that no war would be initiated or that, during the lengthy time needed to assemble this large force, opposition to war would so burgeon as to render the operation politically impossible. Perle angrily responded to the military’s demurrals by saying that the decision to attack Iraq was “a political judgment that these guys aren’t competent to make.”<sup>59</sup> Cheney and Rumsfeld went even further, referring to the generals as “cowards” for being insufficiently gung-ho about an Iraq invasion.<sup>60</sup>

Now, one might be tempted to attribute Perle and the other neocons’ rejection of the military’s caution to insane hubris—how could amateurs pretend to know more about military strategy than professional military men? However, Richard Perle may be many things, but insane is not one of them. Nor is he stupid. Undoubtedly he has thought through the implications of his plan. And it is apparent that the “inside-out” option would be a win-win proposition from Perle’s perspective.

Let’s assume that it works—that a few American troops can capture some strategic areas and the Iraqi army quickly folds. Perle and the neocons appear as military geniuses and are rewarded with free rein to prepare a series of additional low-cost wars in the Middle East.

On the other hand, let’s assume that the mini-invasion is a complete fiasco. The American troops are defeated in the cities. Many are captured and paraded around for all the world to see. Saddam makes bombastic speeches about defeating the Ameri-

can aggressor. All the Arab and Islamic world celebrates the American defeat. American flags are burned in massive anti-American celebrations throughout the Middle East. America is totally humiliated, depicted as a paper tiger, and ordinary Americans watch it all on TV. How do they react?

Such a catastrophe would be another Pearl Harbor in terms of engendering hatred of the enemy. The public would demand that American honor and prestige be avenged. They would accept the idea fed to them by the neoconservative propagandists that the war was one between America and Islam. Washington would unleash total war, which would involve heavy bombing of cities. And the air attacks could easily spread from Iraq to the other neighboring Islamic states. A war of conquest and extermination is the neocons' fondest dream since it would destroy all of Israel's enemies in the Middle East. (It appears that the Pentagon has augmented the magnitude of the Iraq strike force to reduce the risk of the aforementioned scenario.)<sup>61</sup>

### **“Our Enemies, the Saudis”**

Indications are plentiful that the war will not be limited to Iraq alone. On July 10, 2002, Laurent Murawiec, at Perle's behest, briefed the Defense Policy Board about Saudi Arabia, whose friendly relationship with the United States has been the linchpin of American security strategy in the Middle East for more than 50 years. Murawiec described the kingdom as the principal supporter of anti-American terrorism—“the kernel of evil, the prime mover, the most dangerous opponent.” It was necessary, he claimed, for the United States to regard Saudi Arabia as an enemy. Murawiec said Washington should demand that Riyadh stop funding fundamentalist Islamic outlets around the world, prohibit all anti-U.S. and anti-Israeli propaganda in the country, and “prosecute or isolate those involved in the terror chain, including in the Saudi intelligence services.” If the Saudis refused to comply with the ultimatum, Murawiec contended that the United States should invade and occupy the country, including the holy sites of Mecca and Medina, seize her oil fields, and confiscate her financial assets.<sup>62</sup>

Murawiec concluded the briefing with the astounding summary of what he called a “Grand Strategy for the Middle East:” “Iraq is the tactical pivot. Saudi Arabia the strategic pivot. Egypt the prize.” In short, the goal of the war on Iraq was the destruction of the United States' closest allies. It would be hard to envision a policy better designed to inflame the entire Middle East against the United States. But that is exactly the result sought by neoconservatives.<sup>62</sup>

Predictably, the day after the briefing, the Bush administration disavowed Murawiec's scenario as having nothing to do with actual American foreign policy and pronounced Saudi Arabia a loyal ally.<sup>62</sup> However, the White House did nothing to remove or even discipline Perle for holding a discussion of a plan for attacking a close ally—and individuals have frequently been removed from administrations for much smaller faux pas. We may be certain that the Bush administration's inaction failed to assure the Saudis that Murawiec's war plan was beyond the realm of possibility.

Murawiec's anti-Saudi scenario simultaneously emerged in the neocon press. The July 15, 2002, issue of *The Weekly Standard* featured an article titled “The Coming Saudi Show-

down,” by Simon Henderson of the neoconservative Washington Institute for Near East Policy. And the July/August issue of *Commentary*, published by the American Jewish Committee, contained an article titled, “Our Enemies, the Saudis.”<sup>63</sup>

The leading neoconservative expert on Saudi Arabia, Stephen Schwartz, made his views known, too, though he did pay a price for it. Schwartz has written numerous articles as well as a recent book, *The Two Faces of Islam: The House of Sa'ud from Tradition to Terror*, in which he posits a Saudi/Wahhabist conspiracy to take over all of Islam and spread terror throughout the world. As a result of his anti-Saudi comments, Schwartz was dismissed from his brief tenure as an editorial writer with the *Voice of America* at the beginning of July 2002, thus becoming a martyr in neoconservative circles.<sup>64</sup>

As Thomas F. Ricks points out in the *Washington Post*, the anti-Saudi bellicosity expressed by Murawiec represents a point of view that has growing currency within the Bush administration—especially on the staff of Vice President Cheney and in the Pentagon's civilian leadership—and among neoconservative writers and thinkers closely allied with administration policymakers.<sup>65</sup>

By November 2002, the anti-Saudi theme had reached the mainstream—with an article in *Newsweek* alleging financial support for the 9/11 terrorists from the Saudi royal family, and commentary on the subject by such leading figures in the Senate as Joseph Lieberman (D-Conn.), John McCain (R-Ariz.), Charles Schumer (D-New York), and Richard Shelby (R-Ala.).<sup>66</sup>

Bush administration policy has come a long way but has still not reached what neocons seek: a war by the United States against all of Islam. According to Podhoretz, doyen of the neoconservatives: “Militant Islam today represents a revival of the expansionism by the sword” of Islam's early years.<sup>67</sup> In Podhoretz's view, to survive resurgent Islam the United States must not simply stand on the defensive but must stamp out militant Islam at its very source in the Middle East:

*“The regimes that richly deserve to be overthrown and replaced are not confined to the three singled-out members of the axis of evil. At a minimum, this axis should extend to Syria and Lebanon and Libya, as well as “friends” of America like the Saudi royal family and Egypt's Hosni Mubarak, along with the Palestinian Authority, whether headed by Arafat or one of his henchmen.”*

After the great conquest, the United States would remake the entire region, which would entail forcibly re-educating its people to fall into line with the thinking of America's leaders. Podhoretz acknowledges that the people of the Middle East might, if given a free democratic choice, pick anti-American and anti-Israeli leaders and policies. But he proclaims that “there is a policy that can head it off” provided “that we then have the stomach to impose a new political culture on the defeated parties. This is what we did directly and unapologetically in Germany and Japan after winning World War II.”<sup>68</sup>

### **Expulsion Redux**

Within Israel herself, however, the Arabs would not be expected to adopt a “new political culture”; they would be expected to vanish.



Expulsion of the Palestinians is inextricably intertwined with a Middle Eastern war—or, in Ben-Gurion’s phrase, “revolutionary times.” As the post-September 11 “war on terror” has heated up, the talk of forcibly “transferring” the Palestinians has once again moved to the center of Israeli politics. According to Illan Pappé, a Jewish Israeli revisionist historian, “You can see this new assertion talked about in Israel: the discourse of transfer and expulsion which had been employed by the extreme Right, is now the bon ton of the center.”<sup>69</sup>

Even the dean of Israel’s revisionist historians, Benny Morris, explicitly endorsed the expulsion of the Palestinians in the event of war. “This land is so small,” Morris exclaimed, “that there isn’t room for two peoples. In fifty or a hundred years, there will only be one state between the sea and the Jordan. That state must be Israel.”

According to a recent poll conducted by Israel’s Jaffee Center for Strategic Studies, nearly one-half of Israelis support expulsion of West Bank and Gaza Palestinians, and nearly one-third support expulsion of Israeli Arabs. Three-fifths support “encouraging” Israeli Arabs to leave.<sup>70</sup>

In April 2002, leading Israeli military historian Martin van Creveld held that a U.S. attack on Iraq would provide the cover for Prime Minister Sharon to forcibly remove the Palestinians from the West Bank. In Creveld’s view, “The expulsion of the Palestinians would require only a few brigades,” which would rely on “heavy artillery.” Creveld continued:<sup>71</sup>

*“Israeli military experts estimate that such a war could be over in just eight days. If the Arab states do not intervene, it will end with the Palestinians expelled and Jordan in ruins. If they do intervene, the result will be the same, with the main Arab armies destroyed. [...] Israel would stand triumphant, as it did in 1948, 1956, 1967, and 1973.”*

Although Creveld did not express any opposition to this impending expulsion, in September 2002, a group of Israeli academics did issue a declaration of opposition, stating:<sup>72</sup>

*“We are deeply worried by indications that the ‘fog of war’ could be exploited by the Israeli government to commit further crimes against the Palestinian people, up to full-fledged ethnic cleansing. [...] The Israeli ruling coalition includes parties that promote ‘transfer’ of the Palestinian population as a solution to what they call ‘the demographic problem.’ Politicians are regularly quoted in the media as suggesting forcible expulsion, most recently [Knesset members] Michael Kleiner and Benny Elon, as reported on Yediot Ahronot website on September 19, 2002. In a recent interview in Ha’aretz, Chief of Staff Moshe Ya’alon described the Palestinians as a ‘cancerous manifestation’ and equated the military actions in the Occupied Territories with ‘chemotherapy,’ suggesting that more radical ‘treatment’ may be necessary. Prime Minister Sharon has backed this ‘assessment of reality.’ Escalating racist demagoguery concerning the Palestinian citizens of Israel may indicate the scope of the crimes that are possibly being contemplated.”*

In the fall of 2002, the Jordanian government, fearing that Israel might push the Palestinian population into Jordan during the anticipated U.S. attack on Iraq, asked for public assurances from the Israeli government that it would not make such a

move. The Sharon regime, however, has refused to publicly renounce an expulsion policy.<sup>73</sup>

### Simply a Pretext

As is now apparent, the “war on terrorism” was never intended to be a war to apprehend and punish the perpetrators of the September 11 atrocities. September 11 simply provided a pretext for government leaders to implement long-term policy plans. As has been pointed out elsewhere, including in my own writing, oil interests and American imperialists looked upon the war as a way to incorporate oil-rich Central Asia within the American imperial orbit.<sup>74</sup> While that has been achieved, the American-sponsored government of Hamid Karzai in Afghanistan is in a perilous situation. Karzai’s power seems to be limited to his immediate vicinity, and he must be protected by American bodyguards. The rest of Afghanistan is being fought over by various war lords and even the resurgent Taliban.<sup>75</sup> Instead of putting forth the effort to help consolidate its position in Central Asia, Washington has shifted its focus to gaining control of the Middle East.

It now appears that the primary policymakers in the Bush administration have been the Likudnik neoconservatives all along. Control of Central Asia is secondary to control of the Middle East. In fact, for the leading neocons, the war on Afghanistan may simply have been an opening gambit, necessary for reaching their ultimate and crucial goal: U.S. control of the Middle East in the interests of Israel. That is analogous to what revisionist historians have presented as Franklin D. Roosevelt’s “back door to war” approach to World War II. Roosevelt sought war with Japan in order to be able to fight Germany, and he provoked Japan into attacking U.S. colonial possessions in the Far East. Once the United States got into war through the back door, Roosevelt focused the American military effort on Germany.<sup>76</sup>

### The Oil Motive

But what about the American desire for controlling Iraqi oil? Iraq possesses the world’s second-largest proven oil reserves, next to Saudi Arabia. Moreover, many experts believe that Iraq possesses vast undiscovered oil reserves, making her the near-equal of Saudi Arabia. Most critics of war allege that American oil companies’ desire to gain control of Iraqi oil is what motivates U.S. war policy. Some, mostly proponents of war, have also argued that, once in control of Iraqi oil, the United States could inundate the world with cheap oil, thus boosting the American and world economies out of recession.<sup>77</sup>

Although the arguments have a prima facie plausibility, the oil motive for war has a couple of serious flaws. First, oil industry representatives or big economic moguls do not seem to be clamoring for war. According to oil analyst Anthony Sampson, “oil companies have had little influence on U.S. policy-making. Most big American companies, including oil companies, do not see a war as good for business, as falling share prices indicate.”<sup>78</sup>

Further, it is not apparent that war would be good for the oil industry or the world economy. Why would Big Oil want to risk a war that could ignite a regional conflagration threatening their existing investments in the Gulf? Iraq does indeed have

significant oil reserves, but there is no reason to believe that they would have an immediate impact on the oil market. Daniel Yergin, chairman of Cambridge Energy Research Associates, points out:<sup>79</sup>

*"In terms of production capacity, Iraq represents just 3 percent of the world's total. Its oil exports are on the same level as Nigeria's. Even if Iraq doubled its capacity, that could take more than a decade. In the meantime, growth elsewhere would limit Iraq's eventual share to perhaps 5 percent, significant but still in the second tier of oil nations."*

A war would pose a great risk to the oil industry in the entire Gulf region. As William D. Nordhaus, Sterling Professor of Economics at Yale and a member of the President Carter's Council of Economic Advisers, writes:<sup>80</sup>

*"War in the Persian Gulf might produce a major upheaval in petroleum markets, either because of physical damage or because political events lead oil producers to restrict production after the war."*

*A particularly worrisome outcome would be a wholesale destruction of oil facilities in Iraq, and possibly in Kuwait, Iran, and Saudi Arabia. In the first Persian Gulf War, Iraq destroyed much of Kuwait's oil wells and other petroleum infrastructure as it withdrew. The sabotage shut down Kuwaiti oil production for close to a year, and prewar levels of oil production were not reached until 1993—nearly two years after the end of the war in February 1991.*

*Unless the Iraqi leadership is caught completely off-guard in a new war, Iraq's forces would probably be able to destroy Iraq's oil production facilities. The strategic rationale for such destruction is unclear in peacetime, but such an act of self-immolation cannot be ruled out in wartime. Contamination of oil facilities in the Gulf region by biological or chemical means would pose even greater threats to oil markets."*

Nordhaus's forecasts may be excessively bleak. However, the point is that the experts simply cannot gauge what will happen. War poses tremendous risk. In his evaluation of the possible economic impact of a war on Iraq, economic analyst Robert J. Samuelson concludes:<sup>81</sup>

*"If it's peace and prosperity, then war makes no sense. But if fighting now prevents a costlier war later, it makes much sense."*

None of this to deny that certain oil companies might benefit from a Middle East war, just as some businesses profit from any war. Particular oil companies could stand to benefit from American control of Iraq, since under a postwar U.S.-sponsored Iraqi government, American companies could be expected to be favored and gain the most lucrative oil deals. However, that particular oil companies could derive some benefits does not undercut the overall argument that war is a great risk for the American oil industry and the American economy as a whole.

An American-imperialist strategic motive might be more plausible than the economic interests of the oil industry and the economy in general. Instead of the current informal influence over the oil producing areas of the Middle East, the United States would move into direct control, either with a puppet government in Iraq providing enough leverage for Washington

to dictate to the rest of the Middle East, or actual direct U.S. control of other parts of the Middle East as well as Iraq. Presumably that state of affairs would provide greater security for the oil flow than exists under the current situation, where the client states enjoy some autonomy and face the possibility of being overthrown by anti-American forces. Neoconservative Robert Kagan maintains:<sup>82</sup>

*"When we have economic problems, it's been caused by disruptions in our oil supply. If we have a force in Iraq, there will be no disruption in oil supplies."*

Neoconservatives often try to gloss over this projected American colonialism by claiming that the United States would be simply spreading democracy. They imply that "democratic" Middle East governments would support American policies, including support of Israel and an oil policy oriented toward the welfare of the United States.

However, given popular anti-Zionist and anti-American opinion in the region, it seems highly unlikely that governments representative of the popular will would ever pursue such policies. Only a non-representative dictatorship could be pro-American and pro-Israeli. Zionist U.S. Rep. Tom Lantos (D-Calif.) put it candidly in calming the worries of an Israeli member of the Knesset:<sup>83</sup>

*"You won't have any problem with Saddam. We'll be rid of the bastard soon enough. And in his place we'll install a pro-Western dictator, who will be good for us and for you."*

### **A Truly Foreign Imperialism**

Control of the Middle East oil supply would certainly augment U.S. domination of the world. However, American imperialists who are in no way linked to the Likudnik position on Israel—e.g., Zbigniew Brzezinski and Brent Scowcroft—are cool to such a Middle East war.<sup>84</sup> If such a war policy would be an obvious boon to American imperialism, why isn't it avidly sought by leading American imperialists? Direct colonial control of a country's internal affairs would be a significant break with American policy of the past half-century. America might have client states and an informal empire, but the direct imperialism entailed by an occupation of the Middle East would be, as Mark Danner put it in the *New York Times*, "wholly foreign to the modesty of containment, the ideology of a status-quo power that lay at the heart of American strategy for half a century."<sup>85</sup>

Moreover, a fundamental concern of American global policy has been to maintain peace and stability in the world. Washington preaches probity and restraint to other countries regarding the use of force. Hence, for the United States to launch a preemptive strike on a country would undoubtedly weaken her ability to restrain other countries, which would also see a need to preemptively strike at their foes. In short, the launching of preemptive war would destabilize the very world order that the United States allegedly seeks to preserve in her "war on terrorism." In fact, world stability is often seen as central to the global economic interdependence that is the key to American prosperity.<sup>86</sup>

Since America already exercises considerable power in the oil-producing Persian Gulf region through her client states—Saudi Arabia and the Gulf emirates—it is difficult to understand why American imperialists would make a radical change

from their status-quo policy. Would the benefits to be gained from direct control of the region outweigh the risks involved? War could unleash virulent anti-American forces that could destabilize America's Middle East client states and incite terrorist attacks on the American homeland. Moreover, American military occupation of Iraq, not to mention other Middle Eastern countries, would place a heavy burden on the U.S. government and people.<sup>87</sup>

Would such a burden be acceptable to the American people? Would they support the brutal policies needed to suppress any opposition? In the 1950s, the people of France would not support the brutality necessary to retain the colonial empire in Algeria. Even in the totalitarian Soviet Union, popular opinion forced the abandonment of the imperialistic venture in Afghanistan, which contributed to the break-up of the entire Soviet empire. In short, the move from indirect to direct control of the Middle East would strike men who were simply concerned about enhancing American imperial power as the gravest sort of risk-taking, because it could undermine America's entire imperial project.

Direct American control of the Middle East would not only prove burdensome to the American people but would also undoubtedly provoke a backlash from other countries. That almost seems to be a law of international relations—operating since the time of the balance-of-power politics practiced during the Peloponnesian War. As Christopher Layne points out:<sup>88</sup>

*“The historical record shows that in the real world, hegemony never has been a winning grand strategy. The reason is simple: The primary aim of states in international politics is to survive and maintain their sovereignty. And when one state becomes too powerful—becomes a hegemon—the imbalance of power in its favor is a menace to the security of all other states. So throughout modern international political history, the rise of a would-be hegemon always has triggered the formation of counter-hegemonic alliances by other states.”*

The British Empire, which might seem an exception to the rule of the inevitable failure of hegemonies, achieved its success because of its caution. Owen Harries, editor of the *National Interest*, has pointed out that England's imperial successes stemmed from her rather cautious approach. In the Spring 2001 issue, Harries observed:<sup>89</sup>

*“England was the only hegemon that did not attract a hostile coalition against itself. It avoided that fate by showing great restraint, prudence and discrimination in the use of its power in the main political arena by generally standing aloof and restricting itself to the role of balancer of last resort. In doing so it was heeding the warning given it by Edmund Burke, just as its era of supremacy was beginning: ‘I dread our own power and our own ambition. I dread being too much dreaded.’ I believe the United States is now in dire need of such a warning.”*

Obviously, the American takeover of the major oil-producing area of the world would be anything but a cautious move. It would characterize a classic example of what historian Paul Kennedy refers to as “imperial over-stretch.” Tied down in the Middle East, the United States would find it more difficult to counter threats to its power in the rest of the world. Even

now it is questionable whether the U.S. military has the capability to fight two wars at once, a problem (from the standpoint of the U.S. regime) that has now come to the fore with the bellicosity of North Korea.<sup>90</sup> In essence, it is not apparent that intelligent American imperialists concerned solely about the power status of the United States, which holds preeminence in the world right now, would want to take the risk of a Middle East war and occupation.

### **No American Motive**

The previous analysis leads to the conclusion not only that the neoconservatives are obviously in the forefront of the pro-war bandwagon but also that pro-Israeli Likudnik motives are the most logical, probably the only logical, motives for war. As I have noted, Likudniks have always sought to deal in a radical fashion with the Palestinian problem in the occupied territories—a problem that has gotten worse, from their standpoint, as a result of demographic changes. A U.S. war in the Middle East at the present time provides a window of opportunity to permanently solve that problem and augment Israel's dominance in the region. The existing perilous situation, as Likud thinkers see it, would justify the taking of substantial risks. And a look at history shows that countries whose leaders believed they were faced with grave problems pursued risky policies, such as Japan did in 1941.<sup>91</sup>

In contrast, no such dire threats face the United States. American imperialists should be relatively satisfied with the status quo and averse to taking any risks that might jeopardize it.

The deductions drawn in this essay seem obvious but are rarely broached in public because Jewish power is a taboo subject. As the intrepid Joseph Sobran puts it:<sup>92</sup>

*“It's permissible to discuss the power of every other group, from the Black Muslims to the Christian Right, but the much greater power of the Jewish establishment is off-limits.”*

So in a check for “hate” or “anti-Semitism,” let's recapitulate the major points made in this essay. First, the initiation of a Middle East war to solve Israeli security problems has been a long-standing idea among Israeli rightist Likudniks. Next, Likudnik-oriented neoconservatives argued for American involvement in such a war prior to the atrocities of September 11, 2001. Since September 11, neocons have taken the lead in advocating such a war, and they hold influential foreign policy and national security positions in the Bush administration.

If Israel and Jews were not involved, there would be nothing extraordinary about my thesis. In the history of foreign policy, it has frequently been maintained that various leading figures were motivated by ties to business, an ideology, or a foreign country. In his Farewell Address, George Washington expressed the view that the greatest danger to American foreign relations would be the “passionate attachment” of influential Americans to a foreign power, which would orient U.S. foreign policy for the benefit of that power to the detriment of the United States. It is just such a situation that currently exists.

We can only look with trepidation to the near future, for in the ominous words of Robert Fisk:<sup>93</sup>

*“There is a firestorm coming.”*

## Notes

- <sup>1</sup> Paul W. Schroeder, "Iraq: The Case Against Preemptive War," *The American Conservative*, October 21, 2002 ([www.amconmag.com/10\\_21/iraq.html](http://www.amconmag.com/10_21/iraq.html)). In fact the spectacle of a powerful nation under the direction of a weaker one is not unprecedented. The great revisionist diplomatic historian Charles C. Tansill maintained: "The main objective of American foreign policy since 1900 has been the preservation of the British Empire." (*Back Door to War*. Chicago: Chicago University Press, 1952, p. 3.) Britain was able to achieve her goal through media propaganda and sympathizers in high places in the United States. See Nicholas John Cull, *Selling War. The British Propaganda Campaign against American 'Neutrality' in World War II* (Oxford University Press, 1995) and Thomas E. Mahl, *Desperate Deception: British Covert Operations in the United States, 1939-44* (Washington: Brassey's, 1998).
- <sup>2</sup> Benjamin Ginsberg, *The Fatal Embrace. Jews and the State* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1993), p. 231. On the connections among Jews, Zionism, and neoconservatism, see Paul Gottfried, *The Conservative Movement* (New York: Twayne Publishers, 1993); J. J. Goldberg, *Jewish Power. Inside the Jewish Establishment* (Reading, Mass.: Addison Wesley Publishing Company, Inc., 1996), pp. 159-162; Peter Steinfels, *The Neo-conservatives: The Men Who Are Changing America's America's Politics* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1979); Gary Dorrien, *The Neoconservative Mind Politics, Culture, and the War of Ideology* (Philadelphia: Temple University, 1993); and James Neuchterlein, "This Time: Neoconservatism Redux," *First Things*, 66 (October 1996), pp. 7f. ([www.firstthings.com/ftissues/ft9610/opinion/neuchterlein.html](http://www.firstthings.com/ftissues/ft9610/opinion/neuchterlein.html)).
- <sup>3</sup> Joshua Micah Marshall, "Bomb Saddam?: How the obsession of a few neocon hawks became the central goal of U.S. foreign policy," *Washington Monthly*, June 2002 ([www.washingtonmonthly.com/features/2001/0206.marshall.html](http://www.washingtonmonthly.com/features/2001/0206.marshall.html)); Kathleen and Bill Christison, "A Rose By Another Other Name. The Bush Administration's Dual Loyalties," *CounterPunch*, December 13, 2002 ([www.counterpunch.org/christison1213.html](http://www.counterpunch.org/christison1213.html)). See also Christopher Matthews, "The road to Baghdad," *San Francisco Chronicle*, March 24, 2002; Justin Raimondo, "Our Hijacked Foreign Policy: Neoconservatives take Washington—Baghdad is next," March 25, 2002 ([www.antiwar.com/justin/j032502.html](http://www.antiwar.com/justin/j032502.html)); Holger Jensen, "Pre-Emption, Disarmament Or Regime Change? Part III," October 7, 2002 ([www.antiwar.com/orig/jensen1b.html](http://www.antiwar.com/orig/jensen1b.html)); Scott McConnell, "The Struggle over War Aims: Bush versus the Neo-Cons," September 25, 2002 ([www.antiwar.com/mcconnell/mc092501.html](http://www.antiwar.com/mcconnell/mc092501.html)); and Jim Lobe, "Neoconservatives Consolidate Control over U.S. Mideast Policy," *Foreign Policy in Focus*, December 6, 2002 (<http://www.foreignpolicyinfocus.org/commentary/2002/0212abrams.html>). As will become obvious, much of the material in this essay derives from authors who express the belief that neoconservatives are a leading force for war with Iraq.
- <sup>4</sup> Tom Segev, *One Palestine, Complete: Jews and Arabs under the British Mandate* (New York: Metropolitan Books, 2000), pp. 404f. For a history of Zionist ideas on expulsion, see Nur Masalha, *Expulsion of the Palestinians: The Concept of 'Transfer' in Zionist Political Thought, 1882-1948* (Washington: Institute of Palestine Studies, 1992).
- <sup>5</sup> Quoted in Norman Finkelstein, "Image and Reality of the Israel-Palestine Conflict," *Introduction to German edition* (10 July 2002) ([www.normanfinkelstein.com/id127.htm](http://www.normanfinkelstein.com/id127.htm)).
- <sup>6</sup> Ralph Schoenman, *The Hidden History of Zionism*, Chapter 12, "Strategy for Conquest," 1988 (<http://www.balkanunity.org/mideast/english/zionism/ch12.htm>).
- <sup>7</sup> Yehoshafat Harkabi, *Israeli Fateful Hour* (New York: Harper & Row, 1988), pp. 57f.
- <sup>8</sup> Stephen R. Shalom, "The United States and the Iran-Iraq War," <http://www.zmag.org/zmag/articles/ShalomIranIraq.html>; Jeremy Scahill, "The Saddam in Rumsfeld's Closet," *Common Dreams*, August 2, 2002, <http://www.commondreams.org/views02/0802-01.htm>; Robert Windrem, "Rumsfeld key player in Iraq policy shift," *MSNBC*, August 18, 2002, <http://www.msnbc.com/news/795649.asp>; Chris Bury, "The U.S.-Iraq relationship was not always about confrontation," September 18, 2002, [http://abcnews.go.com/sections/nightline/DailyNews/us\\_iraq\\_history\\_1\\_020917.html](http://abcnews.go.com/sections/nightline/DailyNews/us_iraq_history_1_020917.html); and Michael Dobbs, "U.S. Had Key Role in Iraq Buildup," *Washington Post*, December 30, 2002, p. A-1, <http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/articles/A52241-2002Dec29.html>.
- <sup>9</sup> B. Ginsberg, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 208.
- <sup>10</sup> Christopher Lane, "Why the Gulf War was Not in the National Interest," *The Atlantic*, July 1991 (<http://www.theatlantic.com/issues/91jul/layne.htm>).
- <sup>11</sup> Arnold Beichman, "How the divide over Iraq strategies began," *Washington Times*, November 27, 2002 (<http://www.washtimes.com/commentary/beichman.htm>).
- <sup>12</sup> Warren Strobel, "Bush won't back loan to Jewish state," *Washington Times*, March 18, 1992, p. A7; Michael Hedge, "Israeli lobby president resigns over promises," *Washington Times*, November 4, 1992, p. A-3; "Loan Guarantees for Israel," *Washington Times*, September 11, 1992, p. F-2; Frank Gaffney, Jr., "Neocon job that begs for answers," *ibid.*, October 13, 1992, p. F-1; Andrew Borowiec, "Group counters Bush on Israel," *ibid.*, February 27, 1992, p. A-1; and Ginsberg, *op. cit.* (note 2), pp. 218-223. An interesting side note: In *Jewish Power*, J.J. Goldberg observes (p. 234) that "in 1991, at the height of the Bush administration's confrontation with Israel, no fewer than seven of the nineteen assistant secretaries in the State Department were Jews."
- <sup>13</sup> The neoconservative takeover of the mainstream conservative intellectual movement is recounted by Paul Gottfried, *op. cit.* (note 2).
- <sup>14</sup> Brian Whitaker, "US thinktanks give lessons in foreign policy," *The Guardian*, August 19, 2002 (<http://www.guardian.co.uk/elsewhere/journalist/story/0,7792,777100,00.html>).
- <sup>15</sup> Jason Vest, "The Men From JINSA and CSP," *The Nation*, September 2, 2002 (<http://www.thenation.com/doc.mhtml?i=20020902&s=vest&c=1>).
- <sup>16</sup> The Institute for Advanced Strategic and Political Studies, "Study Group on a New Israeli Strategy Toward 2000," "A Clean Break: A New Strategy for Securing the Realm" ([www.israeleconomy.org/strat1.htm](http://www.israeleconomy.org/strat1.htm)).
- <sup>17</sup> "Open Letter to the President," February 19, 1998, <http://www.iraqwatch.org/perspectives/rumsfeld-openletter.htm>; Frank Gaffney, "End Saddam's Reign of Terror: Better late than never," *National Review Online*, February 21, 2002, <http://www.nationalreview.com/contributors/gaffney/022101.shtml>.
- <sup>18</sup> Rumsfeld has a long record as an avid supporter of Israel. For example, he has spoken at "Solidarity with Israel" dinners hosted by the "International Fellowship of Christians and Jews." Michael Gillespie, "Bill Moyers, modernity, Islam," *Middle East Times*, 30 (2002) ([www.metimes.com/2K2/issue2002-30/opin/bill\\_moyers.htm](http://www.metimes.com/2K2/issue2002-30/opin/bill_moyers.htm)).
- <sup>19</sup> "Open Letter to the President," and F. Gaffney, both *op. cit.* (note 17).
- <sup>20</sup> Seymour Hersh, "The Iraq Hawks," *New Yorker*, December 20, 2001 (<http://www.globalpolicy.org/wtc/targets/1220hawks.htm>).
- <sup>21</sup> PNAC describes itself as follows: "Established in the spring of 1997, the Project for the New American Century is a non-profit, educational organization whose goal is to promote American global leadership. The Project is an initiative of the New Citizenship Project (501c3); the New Citizenship Projects chairman is William Kristol and its president is Gary Schmitt." (<http://www.newamericancentury.org/aboutpnac.htm>)
- <sup>22</sup> Neil Mackay, "Bush planned Iraq 'regime change' before becoming President," *Scottish Sunday Herald*, September 15, 2002 (<http://www.sundayherald.com/print27735>).
- <sup>23</sup> Ian Urbina, "Rogues' Gallery: Who Advises Bush and Gore on the Middle East?," *Middle East Report*, 216, Fall 2000 ([http://www.merip.org/mer/mer216/216\\_urbina.html](http://www.merip.org/mer/mer216/216_urbina.html)).
- <sup>24</sup> Glenn Kessler and Peter Slevin, "Cheney Is Fulcrum of Foreign Policy: In Interagency Fights, His Views Often Prevail," *Washington Post*, October 13, 2002, A-1.
- <sup>25</sup> J.M. Marshall, *op. cit.* (note 3).
- <sup>26</sup> Eric Boehlert, "The Armchair General," *Salon*, September 5, 2002 ([www.salon.com/news/feature/2002/09/05/perle/](http://www.salon.com/news/feature/2002/09/05/perle/)). Sidney Blumenthal would write that Perk "had done more to shape the administration's nuclear arms policy than perhaps any individual except Reagan himself." ("Richard Perle, Disarmed but Undeterred," *Washington Post*, November 23, 1987, p. B-1.)
- <sup>27</sup> Holger Jensen, *op. cit.* (note 3); J. Vest, *op. cit.* (note 15); and Seymour M. Hersh, "Kissinger and Nixon in the White House," *The Atlantic Monthly*, 24:5 (May, 1982) ([www.theatlantic.com/issues/82may/hershwh2.htm](http://www.theatlantic.com/issues/82may/hershwh2.htm)).

- <sup>28</sup> E. Boehlert, *op. cit.* (note 26).
- <sup>29</sup> Ronald Bleier, "Sharon Routs Bush: Palestinians now vulnerable to expulsion," August 2001 (<http://desip.igc.org/SharonRoutsBush.html>), and Bleier, "The Next Expulsion of the Palestinians," January 2001 (<http://desip.igc.org/TheNextExpulsion.html>).
- <sup>30</sup> Tikva Honig Parnass, "Israel's Recent Conviction: Apartheid in Palestine Can Only Be Preserved through Force," *Between the Lines*, September 2001 ([www.between-lines.org/archives/2001/sep/Tikva\\_Honig-Parnass.htm](http://www.between-lines.org/archives/2001/sep/Tikva_Honig-Parnass.htm)).
- <sup>31</sup> R. Bleier, "Sharon Gears Up for Expulsion," January 2002 (<http://desip.igc.org/SharonGearsUp.html>).
- <sup>32</sup> Tikvah Honig-Parnass, "Louder Voices of War- Manufacturing Consent at its Peak," *Between the Lines*, 1:8 (July 2001), quoted in R. Bleier, "Sharon Routs Bush" (note 29).
- <sup>33</sup> *Jane's Foreign Report* (July 12, 2001), quoted in Finkelstein, "Israelis Generals' Plan to 'Smash' Palestinians," July 12, 2002, *Mid-East Realities*, ([www.middleeast.org/premium/read.cgi?category=Magazine&standalone=&num=278&month=7&year=2001&function=text](http://www.middleeast.org/premium/read.cgi?category=Magazine&standalone=&num=278&month=7&year=2001&function=text)); and Tanya Reinhart, "The Second Half of 1948," *Mid-East Realities*, June 20, 2001 ([www.middleeast.org/premium/read.cgi?category=Magazine&num=251&month=6&year=2001&function=text](http://www.middleeast.org/premium/read.cgi?category=Magazine&num=251&month=6&year=2001&function=text)).
- <sup>34</sup> Bleier, "Sharon Routs Bush" (note 29).
- <sup>35</sup> James Bennet, "Spilled Blood Is Seen as Bond That Draws 2 Nations Closer," *New York Times*, September 12, 2001, p. A22 ([www.nytimes.com/2001/09/12/international/12ISRA.html](http://www.nytimes.com/2001/09/12/international/12ISRA.html)); "Horrific tragedy, the media, Palestinian reaction," Jerusalem Media & Communication Centre ([www.jmcc.org/new/01/Sep/us.htm](http://www.jmcc.org/new/01/Sep/us.htm)).
- <sup>36</sup> William Safire, "The Ultimate Enemy," *New York Times*, September 24, 2001 ([www.embargos.de/irak/post1109/english/ultimate\\_enemy\\_nyt.htm](http://www.embargos.de/irak/post1109/english/ultimate_enemy_nyt.htm)).
- <sup>37</sup> Department of Defense News Briefing—Deputy Secretary Wolfowitz, September 13, 2001 ([www.defenselink.mil/news/Sep2001/t09132001\\_t0913dsd.html](http://www.defenselink.mil/news/Sep2001/t09132001_t0913dsd.html)).
- <sup>38</sup> William Kristol & others, "Toward a Comprehensive Strategy: A letter to the president," September 20, 2001 ([www.nationalreview.com/document/document092101b.shtml](http://www.nationalreview.com/document/document092101b.shtml)), and "Project for the New American Century" ([www.newamericancentury.org/Bushletter.htm](http://www.newamericancentury.org/Bushletter.htm)).
- <sup>39</sup> Robert Kagan and William Kristol, "The Gathering Storm," *The Weekly Standard*, 7:7 (October 29, 2001) ([http://theweeklystandard.com/Content/Public/Articles/000/000/000/384th\\_hq.asp](http://theweeklystandard.com/Content/Public/Articles/000/000/000/384th_hq.asp)).
- <sup>40</sup> Eliot A. Cohen, "World War IV," *The Wall Street Journal*, November 20, 2001 ([www.opinionjournal.com/editorial/feature.html?id=95001493](http://www.opinionjournal.com/editorial/feature.html?id=95001493)).
- <sup>41</sup> Paleoconservatives are the conservative opponents of the neoconservatives. In regard to foreign policy matters, they tend to support noninterventionism. Paleocons are much less powerful than neocons. Almost all think tanks referred to as "conservative" or "right-wing" by the Establishment media are dominated by the neoconservatives.
- <sup>42</sup> Scott McConnell, *op. cit.* (note 3).
- <sup>43</sup> Georgic Anne Geyer, "Pro-Israeli, Anti-Arab Campaigns Could Isolate America," October 25, 2001 ([www.uexpress.com/georgicannegeyer/index.cfm?uc\\_full\\_date=20011025&uc\\_comic=gg&uc\\_daction=X](http://www.uexpress.com/georgicannegeyer/index.cfm?uc_full_date=20011025&uc_comic=gg&uc_daction=X)).
- <sup>44</sup> Norman Podhoretz, "In Praise of the Bush Doctrine," *Commentary* (September 2002) ([www.ourjerusalem.com/opinion/story/opinion20020904a.html](http://www.ourjerusalem.com/opinion/story/opinion20020904a.html)).
- <sup>45</sup> Bob Woodward, *Bush at War* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 2002), p. 49.
- <sup>46</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 83.
- <sup>47</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 84.
- <sup>48</sup> Patrick E. Tyler and Elaine Sciolino, "Bush's Advisers Split on Scope of Retaliation," *New York Times*, September 20, 2002 ([www.stanford.edu/class/intlre1193/readings/week4/split.html](http://www.stanford.edu/class/intlre1193/readings/week4/split.html)), and Julian Borger, "Washington's hawk trains sights on Iraq," October 15, 2001 ([www.guardian.co.uk/waronterror/story/0,1361,558276,00.html](http://www.guardian.co.uk/waronterror/story/0,1361,558276,00.html)).
- <sup>49</sup> Glenn Kessler, "U.S. Decision on Iraq Has Puzzling Past," *Washington Post*, January 12, 2002, p. A-1 ([www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/articles/A43909-2003Jan11.html](http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/articles/A43909-2003Jan11.html)).
- <sup>50</sup> "Bush Promises Military All It Needs to Win Long Battle Ahead, President addressed the troops at Fort Campbell, KY," November 21, 2002, U.S. Department of State (<http://usinfo.state.gov/topical/pol/terror/01112113.htm>).
- <sup>51</sup> "Bush Meets with Aid Workers Rescued from Afghanistan," November 26, 2002 (<http://usinfo.state.gov/topical/pol/terror/01112607.htm>).
- <sup>52</sup> "President Delivers State of the Union Address," January 29, 2002 ([www.whitehouse.gov/news/releases/2002/01/20020129-11.html](http://www.whitehouse.gov/news/releases/2002/01/20020129-11.html)).
- <sup>53</sup> Matthew Engel, "Proud wife turns 'axis of evil' speech into a resignation letter," *The Guardian*, February 27, 2002 ([www.guardian.co.uk/bush/story/0,7369,658724,00.html](http://www.guardian.co.uk/bush/story/0,7369,658724,00.html)).
- <sup>54</sup> B. Woodward, *op. cit.* (note 45), p. 330.
- <sup>55</sup> Glenn Kessler, "U.S. Decision on Iraq Has Puzzling Past," *Washington Post*, January 12, 2002, p. A-20.
- <sup>56</sup> Justin Raimondo, "War Party Stalled," November 20, 2002 ([www.antiwar.com/justin/j112002.html](http://www.antiwar.com/justin/j112002.html)).
- <sup>57</sup> Robert Fisk, "George Bush Crosses Rubicon—But What Lies Beyond?," *The Independent*, November 9, 2002 ([www.commondreams.org/views/02/1109-03.htm](http://www.commondreams.org/views/02/1109-03.htm)).
- <sup>58</sup> Thomas F. Ricks, "Some Top Military Brass Favor Status Quo in Iraq," *Washington Post*, July 28, 2002, p. A-1.
- <sup>59</sup> Richard Norton-Taylor, "British military chiefs uneasy about attack plans," *The Age*, July 31, 2002 ([www.theage.com.au/articles/2002/07/30/1027926884871.html](http://www.theage.com.au/articles/2002/07/30/1027926884871.html)).
- <sup>60</sup> Justin Raimondo, "Attack of the Chicken-Hawks," August 2, 2002 ([www.antiwar.com/justin/pf/p-j080202.html](http://www.antiwar.com/justin/pf/p-j080202.html)); and Doug Thompson, "Suddenly, the hawks are doves and the doves are hawks," *Capitol Hill Blue* ([http://chblue.com/artman/publish/article\\_165.shtml](http://chblue.com/artman/publish/article_165.shtml)).
- <sup>61</sup> Julian Borger, "Pentagon build-up reaches unstoppable momentum," *The Guardian*, December 31, 2002 ([www.guardian.co.uk/Iraq/Story/0,2763,866919,00.html](http://www.guardian.co.uk/Iraq/Story/0,2763,866919,00.html)).
- <sup>62</sup> Thomas E. Ricks, "Briefing Depicted Saudis as Enemies," *Washington Post*, August 6, 2002, p. A-1; and Jack Shafer, "The PowerPoint That Rocked the Pentagon: The LaRouchie defector who's advising the defense establishment on Saudi Arabia," *Slate*, August 7, 2002 (<http://slate.msn.com/?id=2069119>).
- <sup>63</sup> Simon Henderson, "The Coming Saudi Showdown," *The Weekly Standard*, July 15, 2002 ([www.washingtoninstitute.org/media/henderson/henderson071502.htm](http://www.washingtoninstitute.org/media/henderson/henderson071502.htm)); Victor Davis Hanson, "Our Enemies, the Saudis," *Commentary*, July/August 2002. See also Simon Henderson, "The Saudi Way," *Wall Street Journal*, August 12, 2002 ([www.opinionjournal.com/editorial/feature.html?id=110002116](http://www.opinionjournal.com/editorial/feature.html?id=110002116)); and Claudia Rosett, "Free Arabia," *Wall Street Journal*, August 14, 2002 ([www.opinionjournal.com/columnists/cRosett/?id=110002126](http://www.opinionjournal.com/columnists/cRosett/?id=110002126)).
- <sup>64</sup> Ronald Radosh, "State Department Outrage: The Firing of Stephen Schwartz," *Front Page Magazine*, July 2, 2002 ([www.frontpagemag.com/Articles/Printable.asp?ID=1610](http://www.frontpagemag.com/Articles/Printable.asp?ID=1610)); Stephen Schwartz, "Defeating Wahabbism," *Front Page Magazine*, October 25, 2002 ([www.frontpagemag.com/Articles/Printable.asp?ID=4178](http://www.frontpagemag.com/Articles/Printable.asp?ID=4178)); and Stephen Schwartz, *Two Faces of Islam: The House of Sa'ud from Tradition to Terror* (New York: Doubleday & Co., 2002). Among the favorable views of Schwartz: William Kristol writes that "no one has done more to expose the radical, Saudi-Wahhabi face of Islam than Stephen Schwartz." And maverick pro-war leftist Christopher Hitchens chimes in that "Stephen Schwartz's work is exemplary in illuminating intra-Muslim distinctions, both historic and theological; distinctions which are of the first importance for the rest of the world to understand. He is a most articulate enemy of Islamofascism." ([www.randomhouse.com/doubleday/display.pperl?isbn=0385506929](http://www.randomhouse.com/doubleday/display.pperl?isbn=0385506929)) Schwartz depicts most of Islam as peaceful, with only the Wahhabi variety being dangerous. While his argument could be used to remove some Islamic countries (such as Iraq and Iran) from the enemies list, it does not seem to have that effect.
- <sup>65</sup> T.E. Ricks, *op. cit.* (note 62).
- <sup>66</sup> Michael Isikoff and Evan Thomas, "The Saudi Money Trail," *Newsweek*, December 2, 2002; Calvin Woodward, "Saudi princess's largess may extend to terrorists," *The Associated Press*, *The News Tribune* (Tacoma, Wash.), November 25, 2002 ([www.tribnet.com/news/story/2218751p-2286814c.html](http://www.tribnet.com/news/story/2218751p-2286814c.html)).
- <sup>67</sup> Norman Podhoretz, "How to Win World War IV," *Commentary*, February 2002,
- <sup>68</sup> N. Podhoretz, *op. cit.* (note 44).

- <sup>69</sup> Jacob A. Mundy, "Palestine: 'Transfer' or Apartheid," *Eat The State*, 7:6 (November 20, 2002) (<http://eatthestate.org/07-06/PalestineTransferApartheid.htm>).
- <sup>70</sup> "Many Israelis content to see Palestinians go," in *Chicago Sun-Times* (March 14, 2002) Uaffee poll); Ad Shavit, "Waiting for the sign," in Haaretz (March 22, 2002); and Tom Segev, "A black flag hangs over the idea of transfer," in Haaretz (April 5, 2002), quoted in Finkelstein, "Image and Reality," *op. cit.* (note 5).
- <sup>71</sup> Martin van Creveld, "Warning: Sharon's plan is to drive Palestinians across the Jordan," *Daily Telegraph*, April 28, 2002 ([www.telegraph.co.uk/news/main.jhtml?xml=/news/2002/04/28/wpal28.xml](http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/main.jhtml?xml=/news/2002/04/28/wpal28.xml)); [www.seeingred.com/Copy/5.3\\_sharons\\_plan.html](http://www.seeingred.com/Copy/5.3_sharons_plan.html)).
- <sup>72</sup> "Urgent Plea to Prevent Massive War Crimes Comes from Israeli Academics," *Mid-East Realities*, September 22, 2002 ([www.middleeast.org/premium/read.cgi?category=Magazine&num=752&month=9&year=2002&function=text](http://www.middleeast.org/premium/read.cgi?category=Magazine&num=752&month=9&year=2002&function=text)).
- <sup>73</sup> Aluf Benn, "PM rejects Jordan's request to rule out 'transfer' in Iraq war," *Ha'aretz*, November 29, 2002 ([www.haaretzdaily.com/hasen/pages/ShArt.jhtml?itemNo=235416&contrasID=2&subContrassID=4&sbSubContrassID=0&listSrc=Y](http://www.haaretzdaily.com/hasen/pages/ShArt.jhtml?itemNo=235416&contrasID=2&subContrassID=4&sbSubContrassID=0&listSrc=Y)).
- <sup>74</sup> See Stephen J. Sniegoski, "September 11 and the origins of the 'War on Terrorism': A revisionist account," Part 3, *The Last Ditch* ([www.thornwalker.com/ditch/towers\\_3.htm](http://www.thornwalker.com/ditch/towers_3.htm)).
- <sup>75</sup> Eric Margolis, "Details of U.S. victory are a little premature," *Toronto Sun*, December 22, 2002 ([www.canoe.ca/Columnists/margolis\\_dec22.html](http://www.canoe.ca/Columnists/margolis_dec22.html)).
- <sup>76</sup> For a review of Roosevelt's efforts to get the United States into the war, see Stephen J. Sniegoski, "The Case for Pearl Harbor Revisionism," *The Occidental Quarterly*, 1:2 (Winter 2001) ([www.charlesmartelsociety.org/toq/vol1no2/ss-pearlharbor.html](http://www.charlesmartelsociety.org/toq/vol1no2/ss-pearlharbor.html)), and "Pearl Harbor: Facing facts," *The Last Ditch* ([www.thornwalker.com/ditch/pearl.htm](http://www.thornwalker.com/ditch/pearl.htm)).
- <sup>77</sup> Undersecretary of Commerce Grant Aldonas told a business forum that a war in Iraq "would open up this spigot on Iraqi oil, which certainly would have a profound effect in terms of the performance of the world economy for those countries that are manufacturers and oil consumers." Michael Moran and Alex Johnson, "Oil after Saddam: All bets are in," *MSNBC News*, November 7, 2002 ([www.msnbc.com/news/823985.asp?0sl=-10#BODY](http://www.msnbc.com/news/823985.asp?0sl=-10#BODY)).
- <sup>78</sup> Anthony Sampson, "Oilmen don't want another Suez," *Guardian Unlimited*, December 22, 2002 ([www.observer.co.uk/international/story/0,6903,864336,00.html](http://www.observer.co.uk/international/story/0,6903,864336,00.html)). Sampson is the author of *The Seven Sisters* (New York: Bantam Books, 1976), which deals with Big Oil and the Middle East. Dan Morgan and David B. Ottaway write: "Officials of several major firms said they were taking care to avoid playing any role in the debate in Washington over how to proceed on Iraq. 'There's no real upside for American oil companies to take a very aggressive stance at this stage. There'll be plenty of time in the future,' said James Lucier, an oil analyst with Prudential Securities." ("In Iraqi War Scenario, Oil Is Key Issue," *Washington Post*, September 15, 2002, p. A-1. For MSNBC, John W. Schoen writes: "So far, U.S. oil companies have been mum on the subject of the potential spoils of war." ("Iraqi oil, American bonanza?," November 11, 2002; [www.msnbc.com/news/824407.asp?0bl=-0](http://www.msnbc.com/news/824407.asp?0bl=-0)).
- <sup>79</sup> Daniel Yergin, "A Crude View of the Crisis in Iraq," *Washington Post*, December 8, 2002, Page B-1. Yergin's book *The Prize. The Epic Quest for Oil, Money, and Power* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1991) won the Pulitzer Prize.
- <sup>80</sup> William D. Nordhaus, "Iraq: The Economic Consequences of War," *New York Review of Books*, December 5, 2002 ([www.nybooks.com/articles/15850](http://www.nybooks.com/articles/15850)). See also a more extensive piece by Nordhaus, "The Economic Consequences of a War with Iraq," October 29, 2002, ([www.econ.yale.edu/~nordhaus/iraq.pdf](http://www.econ.yale.edu/~nordhaus/iraq.pdf)); and George L. Perry, "The War on Terrorism, the World Oil Market and the U.S. Economy," Analysis Paper #7, America's Response to Terrorism (rev. November 28, 2001) ([www.brookingsinstitution.org/dybdocroot/views/papers/perry/20011024.htm](http://www.brookingsinstitution.org/dybdocroot/views/papers/perry/20011024.htm)).
- <sup>81</sup> Robert J. Samuelson, "The Economic Impact of War," *Newsweek*, December 2, 2002.
- <sup>82</sup> Quoted by Jay Bookman, "The presidents real goal in Iraq," *The Atlanta Journal-Constitution*, September 29, 2002 ([www.accessatlanta.com/ajc/opinion/0902/29bookman.html](http://www.accessatlanta.com/ajc/opinion/0902/29bookman.html)).
- <sup>83</sup> Akiva Eldar, "They're jumping in head first," *Ha'aretz*, September 30, 2002 ([www.haaretzdaily.com/hasen/pages/ShArt.jhtml?itemNo=214159](http://www.haaretzdaily.com/hasen/pages/ShArt.jhtml?itemNo=214159)). For a summary of some of the non-democratic solutions the U.S. government is contemplating for postwar Iraq (including the installation of Jordanian Prince Hassan as king), see Conn Hallinan, "Favored Post-Saddam Leaders Belie Bush's Democracy Rhetoric," *Foreign Policy in Focus*, November 26, 2002 ([www.foreignpolicyinfocus.org/commentary/2002/0211invasion.html](http://www.foreignpolicyinfocus.org/commentary/2002/0211invasion.html)); and Brian Whitaker, "Jordan prince touted to succeed Saddam," *The Guardian*, July 19, 2002 ([www.guardian.co.uk/Archive/Article/0,4273,4464346,00.html](http://www.guardian.co.uk/Archive/Article/0,4273,4464346,00.html)).
- <sup>84</sup> Todd S. Purdum, Patrick E. Tyler, "Top Republicans Break With Bush on Iraq Strategy," *New York Times*, August 16, 2002 ([www.rider.edu/users/phanc/courses/350-web/mideast/iraq/topGOPbreakwGWBreirraq.htm](http://www.rider.edu/users/phanc/courses/350-web/mideast/iraq/topGOPbreakwGWBreirraq.htm)); Zbigniew Brzezinski, "If We Must Fight ...," *Washington Post*, August 18, 2002, p. B07 ([www.rider.edu/users/phanc/courses/350-web/mideast/iraq/brzezinski.htm](http://www.rider.edu/users/phanc/courses/350-web/mideast/iraq/brzezinski.htm)).
- <sup>85</sup> Mark Danner, "The Struggles of Democracy and Empire," *New York Times*, October 10, 2002 ([www.globalpolicy.org/globaliz/politics/1010empire.htm](http://www.globalpolicy.org/globaliz/politics/1010empire.htm)).
- <sup>86</sup> Christopher Layne and Benjamin Schwarz, "Making the World Safer for Business: Instability and aggression are regarded as a threat to the global stability upon which U.S. markets depend," *Los Angeles Times*, April 2, 1999 ([www.diaspora-net.org/food4thought/layneschwarz.htm](http://www.diaspora-net.org/food4thought/layneschwarz.htm)).
- <sup>87</sup> Stratfor, "U.S. Could Become Mired in Iraq Occupation," December 30, 2002 (<http://world-analysis.laccesshost.com/stratfor2.html>).
- <sup>88</sup> Christopher Layne, "The Power Paradox: History teaches that holding a monopoly on might—as the United States now does—is likely to provoke a backlash," *Los Angeles Times*, October 6, 2002.
- <sup>89</sup> Owen Harries, "The Anglosphere Illusion," *National Interest*, 63 (Spring 2001).
- <sup>90</sup> Rowan Scarborough, "U.S. ability to fight two wars doubted," *Washington Times*, December 25, 2002, A-1, A-9.
- <sup>91</sup> Robert Smith Thompson, *A Time for War. Franklin D. Roosevelt and the Path to Pearl Harbor* (New York: Prentice Hall Press, 1991), p. 379; and Bruce M. Russett, *No Clear and Present Danger. A Skeptical View of the United States Entry into World War II* (New York: Harper Torchbooks, 1972), pp. 53f.
- <sup>92</sup> Joseph Sobran, "The Jewish Establishment," *Sobran's*, September, 1995, p. 4. Similarly, Philip Weiss, writing in the *New York Observer*, points out: "You don't see The Times pussyfooting when it comes to the anti-Castro lobby or the National Rifle Association, two other powerful special-interest groups. When they muscle the system, we read faintly sinister accounts of the Arlington, Va., headquarters for the gun lobby and the bland, alien Wayne LaPierre, or hysterical interviews with nutso Castrohaters on Eighth Street in Miami.... [However,] one of the difficulties about discussing this question [Jewish influence] is that the mainstream media refuse to address it directly; its considered too sensitive." ("Holy or Unholy, Jews and Right in an Alliance," *New York Observer*, September 19, 2002; [www.observer.com/pages/story.asp?ID=6336](http://www.observer.com/pages/story.asp?ID=6336)) For the power of American Jewish groups in silencing criticism of Israel, see Alexander Cochburn, "Israel and 'Anti-Semitism'," *Counterpunch*, May 16, 2002 ([www.counterpunch.org/cockburn0516.html](http://www.counterpunch.org/cockburn0516.html)).
- <sup>93</sup> Robert Fisk, "The Coming Firestorm," May 27, 2002 ([www.counterpunch.org/fisk0527.html](http://www.counterpunch.org/fisk0527.html)).

# The Revisionist Method Applied to the History of World War III

By Robert Faurisson

The U.S. government considers itself in a state of world-wide war against what it calls international terrorism. It entered into war against Iraq because, according to them, Saddam Hussein had weapons of mass destruction which threatened the United States. In support of this charge, the Americans have not, up to now, provided any real proof but only fallacious demonstrations.

Certain observers think that this absence of real evidence must embarrass at the same time the White House and those who, in the international community, have made chorus with George W. Bush and Tony Blair to assure us that Saddam Hussein had such weapons. These observers are mistaken. They ignore the history of war propaganda. They should consult the revisionist authors on this subject. They would learn whereas, for the general public taken as a whole, *the best proof of the existence of these weapons is precisely that one finds neither any trace of it, nor proof.*

## Lies of the Past

Let us recall the witch trials, the so-called “Nazi war crime” trials and the court cases brought against the revisionists.

In centuries passed, in particular from 1450 to 1650, but also towards the end of the 18th century, if we have to believe some ecclesiastical courts and university scientists, there were *sixty* places on a woman’s body where traces of intercourse with the Devil could be detected. However, other courts made-up of no less scholarly minds determined that, in spite of the precise details brought by these experts, the best proof on the matter lay in the fact that the Devil had erased all traces of his activity; if not, they put forward, it would not have been the Devil.

In the last century, especially since 1945-1946, with the show trials at Nuremberg, then from that time on ceaselessly conducted trials—to this day!—against “camp guards”, “war criminals”, “collaborators” and, lastly, during legal actions brought against revisionists, one observed a similar phenomenon with the alleged genocide of Jews and the alleged Nazi homicidal gas chambers. The know-it-all initially sustained that, considering the abundance of evidence and witnesses, it was enough to affirm that these horrors were “facts of common knowledge” (Article 21 of the Charter of the International Military Tribunal at Nuremberg). The other learned ones nevertheless wanted to carry out in their work a demonstration, but it has finally come out from this work that, according to these experts themselves, one could not, when all is said and done, discover more than “beginnings of proofs”, accompanied by testimonies that should be taken with caution (the case of Jean-Claude Pressac, for example, author of a bulky work, in English, devoted to the gas chambers of Auschwitz, and the case of Robert Jan van Pelt, author of two books on the subject). Lastly, the most cunning have chosen to affirm: “Everyone knows that the Nazis destroyed these gas chambers and systematically eliminated all the witnesses”; the declaration, this time, emanating from Simone Veil (*France-Soir Magazine*, May 7, 1983, p.47) who made us thus understand that Hitler would not

have been Hitler if he had left the smallest trace of his gigantic crime. In fact, in the millions of documents left behind by the new Satan, one will find *not even a single order* to kill the Jews, *no plan* to exterminate millions of them (including in the report of a certain meeting held in Berlin-Wannsee), *no instruction* on how to physically eliminate the Jews (including in the case of *Einsatzgruppen*), *no trace of a budget* for so vast an enterprise, *not a single execution gas van* nor *a single execution gas chamber*, if not Potemkin’s theatrically grotesque gas chambers, awkwardly “reconstructed” after the war. Such authority as that most learned of the experts, a Jewish Master by the name of Raul Hilberg, finished, in a sigh of despair, by explaining that the formidable slaughter had taken place thanks to “an incredible meeting of minds, a consensus-mind reading by a far-flung bureaucracy,” of course the German bureaucracy. More diabolic than Beelzebub, Adolf Hitler had not been satisfied to wipe out all evidence of the crime spree but, to better mislead the world, he left evidence intended to make people believe that he had never wanted to exterminate the Jews. To take only three examples, first, he had granted a safe life to millions of them; then, as the documents prove, he had not sought “to solve the Jewish question in Europe”, but to find a “final territorial solution” (the Madagascar plan or a similar plan); finally, he made his military courts shoot Germans who were found to be guilty of murdering a Jew. And so on. As for the magic gas chambers, he made them disappear so well that nobody could take up the challenge of the revisionists demanding that one show them or, at the very least, either describe or draw a picture of the crime weapon and that one explain how these chemical slaughterhouses could function without killing the personnel in charge of clearing the gas chambers of the thousands of corpses, highly cyanided and thus rendered untouchable. Thus the impossibility where the Jews are to prove their main accusation confirms the fully diabolic character of Adolf Hitler.

## The Lie of Today

At the beginning of 21st century, it seems that we are replaying the same scenario with the weapons of mass destruction of Saddam Hussein. I say well: “it seems,” because it should be stressed here the difference in size. While intercourse with the Devil was physically impossible and the Nazi gas chamber was chemically inconceivable, it should be recognized that the terrifying weapons of Saddam Hussein are, in theory, perfectly possible, from the point of view of physics and chemistry; they are all the more possible since his accusers, starting with Ariel Sharon, are themselves in possession of a huge number of the same but under the innocent name of “weapons of deterrence.”

## The Eternal Big Fat Lie

In times of war, all political regimes, whatever they may be, that of Saddam Hussein just like that of G.W. Bush, use the coarsest of lies. To launch a country into a war or to maintain the war fervor or to justify a military crusade afterwards, only

the good old big lie will speak to the crowd. A clever lie or a newly invented lie will not seal the deal. There exist recipes to provoke a crowd to indignation, anger, the desire to fight and to arouse, at least temporarily, the desire to engage heart and soul into the war cause. The politician who has experience handling the masses knows the virtue of over-simplification which ultimately consists in fictitious touching on the themes: "I love you; you love me!" or: "I am good, you are good and the others are vicious." The televangelist intones: "God is love, God is with us and He is against the foul wretches." The first weapon of the ordinary con artist is not the ingeniousness of his swindle but the ability to gain sympathy when approaching his victim and to hold him to the simplest dialogue. Among the leaders of a country in times of war, one always finds the traits and evasions of the politician, the televangelist and the swindler. From this point of view, in the 20th century, Franklin D. Roosevelt will perhaps be known as the master of duplicity among the warmongers. Will Bush outdo him?

### **The Comfort of Credulity**

The perfect crime leaves no trace, no proof. In the same way, here the perfect accusation is not based on any verifiable proof. The war propagandist knows this. It will be sufficient for him to launch the never ending atrocity stories about numerous accounts of the adversary which he will most plainly describe as spending its time killing babies, using invisible weapons, operating corpse factories located near mass graves. These accounts will seduce only if they are not accompanied by some hard evidence or at least if they are only flanked by "clues", "testimonies" or references to unidentified "sources." Hard evidence presents the disadvantage of restraining imagination and passion. Vague clues have the advantage of giving the impulse to the fevered imagination. As for testimonies, they are touching to sensitive souls, especially if they are accompanied by tears or scenes of fainting (a specialty of the Israeli witnesses). A gratuitous and stereotyped slander will make the deal better than one with detailed accusations and supporting evidence. The recipe of choice is that of a genuine photograph accompanied by a false caption; for example, the photograph will show bodies but the caption will speak about those killed, those murdered, those exterminated. The ideal witness provides no further information on the crime other than vague details, which allows those who grant him faith to build the décor with his imagination fantasy, and to construct the scene of the crime to his own liking. Without any difficulty and as if on a flying carpet, this last one flies away then in his mind towards Auschwitz, Timisoara or the hospital of Kuwait City where, according to father Bush, the Iraqis had, in 1991, disconnected the incubators of Kuwaiti premature babies. The one who listens to or sees this witness feels delightfully flooded with compassion; he enjoys himself; all at the same time he feeds his shameful craving for the spectacle of horror, his need to hate and his yearning for the finer feelings. Thus the seasoned propagandist leaves to those he has deceived the illusion of some personal freedom.

### **The Need to Believe**

The crowd is simple and one will never quite explain the charm that can pepper the simple-minded with elementary rea-

soning and, in particular, with circular reasoning. It will be said to him, for example, that the proof that one is malicious, is that the latter is malicious. The proof that the latter is malicious is that he does not love us. If he does not love us, it is that he is barbarian. If he is barbarian, it is that he does not see things as we see them. This malicious barbarian belongs to another world, which can only be an inferior people. If they are an inferior people, it follows that we have a superior culture. Here is what assures us that, if we are good, our enemy is fundamentally bad. The circle is complete: it is perfect. Any other proof is superfluous and, just as the white horse of Henri IV is white because it is white, in the same way it should not be wondered how the mass murder attributed to Hitler was *technically* possible; "It was technically possible given that it took place." This brilliant stupidity was uttered, in a joint declaration, by Léon Poliakov, Pierre Vidal-Naquet, Fernand Braudel and about thirty French historians when in 1978-1979 I had to some extent requested of these people to explain how the gassings of Jews, such as they have been described to us, could have been *technically* possible (*Le Monde*, February 21, 1979, p.23). As for the weapons of Saddam Hussein, if they are not in his country, then they must be elsewhere. If they are not in Iraq, it is that they are in Syria. Or in Iran. Or on the Moon. The Devil knows where. But does it matter? The masses have a short memory. They will not go and demand accountability of the liars. For them, with or without a weapon, with or without any proof, the crime of the defeated side remains the crime and the vanquished criminal, a criminal. The circular reasoning delightfully finds its place in the cerebral convolutions of the simple-minded. It coils out there. Reptilian or not, isn't the brain a relatively soft, spongy, formless mass? Isn't the heart a pump which suctions in and pushes out without one thinking about it? Isn't the idleness voluptuous? The mental concentration, tiring? Effort of memory, painful? Then, why, in a consumer society, complicate one's life when it is sufficient enough to receive, to absorb, to regurgitate, to have a full belly and a brain full of air, to feel good hearted at the side of the *winner killer*?

### **The Third World War Recycles the Old Lies**

American leaders never make an impression of having very much interest in nuance or detail. At least since 1898, they have, to justify their ceaseless military expeditions, employed the same inventions. Why would they change them? These inventions successfully covered the horrors which the *boys* accumulated during the Second World War, throughout their war in Vietnam and at the time of twenty other military expeditions. These same deceptions were used to justify the masquerade of a trial at Nuremberg and are found again in the hideous holo-caustic propaganda whose American Jews were the champions. Very recently, the White House and its Judeo-Israeli cabal did nothing but recycle the most hackneyed machinations of war propaganda while creating and exploiting this fable about the weapons of mass destruction supposedly held by Saddam Hussein, who, it should be said in passing, moreover forgot, when the time came, to put them to use. Their second war against Iraq illustrated to the Americans the progress of their inventions in any field except, on one side, in the manufacture of the horrors loaned to the adversary and, on the other, in the manufac-



ture of the supposed prowess of their soldiers. Their propaganda could change form but the content never varied. Incidentally we were entitled to the doubles of Saddam Hussein (six in all, of which none have been found up to now) and to the heroic account of pure fiction in the alleged rescue of the young soldier Jessica Lynch.

The revisionists have a chance. Over the new world war, their task will be easy. War propaganda will imperturbably remain the same. Jean Norton Cru for the First World War and Paul Rassinier for the Second World War, to some extent, already described to us the great impostures of this third world war. It should be enough to read these authors again. They have, if one dares say, recorded in advance the long-standing lies of Bush Sr., Bush Jr., Blair and Sharon. The third world war will be extremely different from the two great wars which

preceded it and it will innovate in many scientific fields, but its propaganda containing accounts of atrocities will continue to abide by the previously set standard. Coarse and heavily cynical, it will continue to illustrate the wisdom of experience: *in times of war fever, the charge which really carries the masses is that which is not accompanied by real evidence*. The Americans will compensate that absence of real evidence with the montage-work of spin doctors, with the tomfoolery of Powell (putting on a show by waving in front of the cameras a tube of Iraqi poison), or still more by Hollywoodian frame-ups in the tradition of the Shoah Business and the Holocaust Industry.

Applied to the history of the third world war, the revisionist method will at least offer the advantage of flushing out these kinds of impostures.

© May 11, 2003

# Why the United States Rejects the International Criminal Court

*By Dr. Dieter Bartling*

The United States' rejection of the International Criminal Court (ICC), coupled with its demand for immunity for its military forces, has been received with disdain and outrage by most countries. It is astounding that the very country which created the League of Nations and United Nations—and which orchestrated the Nuremberg International Military Tribunal (IMT) along with its counterpart in Tokyo, presenting them to the world as a monumental judicial achievement—now refuses to participate in the ICC. What is the ICC, except an impartial and demilitarized IMT? What has driven the US to its present position? What are the reasons for its bitter resistance to international cooperation?

## 1. The Openly Discussed Reasons

### 1.1. THE ARROGANCE OF POWER

The USA sees itself as the sole remaining superpower. As such, it is unwilling to give up a iota of its sovereignty to any international body, regardless of how congenial it might be. Its rationale is: "We did not fight so many bloody wars to be told by any third party, now that we are the big winners, what we can and can not do. That is not going to happen." Such reasoning also explains its excessive use of the veto in the United Nations Security Council.

### 1.2. AMERICAN TROOPS SERVE ONLY UNDER AMERICAN COMMANDERS

It is axiomatic for the US that its troops are never commanded by foreigners. For Americans, this 'self-evident truth' is not a recent development, as it dates to their Revolution. Once they had won independence from Great Britain, they vowed to always command their own troops directly, as a matter of principle. They conceive of 'loaning out' their soldiers to foreign powers or subordinating them to foreign control in any way (including the jurisdiction of an international military court) as regression to feudalistic conditions. This attitude of course greatly complicates all international military cooperation, but the Americans dismiss this with a shrug of the shoulders. And so, when one points out to the Americans that if all

countries followed their example there could be no such thing as a combined multinational military force, they reply that the United States are not just any country. In short, they see themselves as a unique people with a unique system of laws and a unique nationality, forged by countless bloody struggles. In times of war they field the most powerful military force and so, as the classic Roman expression goes, "Quod licet Jovi, non licet bovi" (What is allowable for Jupiter is not allowable for the ox.) In other words: whatever rules exist apply to others, not the US. In their opinion, that is really all that needs to be said. Again, this rationale explains their abuse of veto power in the UN.

### 1.3. THE US DEMANDS FOR UNHAMPERED FREEDOM OF ACTION IN ITS WAR AGAINST TERRORISM

The former Inspector General of the German Armed Forces (*Bundeswehr*), General Naumann, recently pointed out that antiterrorist operations are legitimate "only if carried out under a UN mandate or with the invitation of the concerned country."<sup>1</sup> It is obvious that neither of these conditions prevailed in the invasion of Iraq. Under no circumstances is the USA willing for its military operations to be dependent on an uncertain majority in the UN Security Council, and this is true whether the operations are defensive, offensive or preemptive. The US finds the Security Council useful for vetoing actions and resolutions

which are unacceptable to the US; but where its own military actions are concerned, it prefers to act independently. An analogous situation exists with the International Criminal Court (ICC), an international court designed to deal with aggression and war crimes. The United States do not want to be officially branded as an “Aggressor Nation” for attacking Iraq or other nations. Similar considerations have led Israel and China to reject the ICC. The US preference to continue under the rules governing relations between enemy states also reflects this position: half a century after the end of World War II, the US retains the right to intervene in Germany in case developments occur there which it might find objectionable. Thus US rejectionism is a combination of (1) arrogance of power and (2) safeguarding a major power’s freedom to act unilaterally.

#### 1.4. THE US WANTS TO PROTECT ITS TROOPS FROM “POLITICALLY MOTIVATED PUNITIVE MEASURES”

This is the most blatant argument for the US policy of rejection, for it implies that the ICC would lend itself to political misuse and is therefore unqualified. This is most certainly not the case. One must assume that the ICC will be staffed with highly qualified jurists; it is in fact already so staffed. No, behind this argument are memories of its own “politically motivated war crimes prosecutions” which it carried out in the grossly unfair and legally questionable charges, procedures, and sentences of the military tribunals at Nuremberg and Tokyo. The Americans know perfectly well that in those trials the defense was held under extreme constraints in order to expedite “politically motivated war crimes prosecutions.” The Americans are obviously afraid that their soldiers might receive the same treatment before the ICC, even though there are no reasons for such an assumption. The ICC would without doubt conduct its proceedings strictly according to international law. There is absolutely no reason to assume that it would constrain the defense as the US did at Nuremberg and Tokyo.

So much for the official and public reasons given by the US for its rejection of the ICC. Let us now consider another category of its reasons for rejection.

## 2. Reasons which Are Not Publicly Discussed

The ruling elite of the USA are all too familiar with the lack of discipline in their armed forces, a reflection of the widely disseminated lack of proper conduct in their general population. The American rulers can never be confident of discipline and conduct in the military ranks. They are very worried that in future wars, as well as in the present war against terrorism, their forces will commit—indeed, have already committed—massive violations of human rights.

History suggests that these fears are not unfounded. Beginning with the genocidal Indian wars and continuing to the present, the US military have conducted themselves with little regard for the rules of civilized warfare. Consider the frontier slogan “the only good Indian is a dead one” and the battle of Wounded Knee. During the American Civil War, the US applied the genocidal strategy of attacking undefended civilian populations of the Confederacy, ushering in the modern concept of total war. “My Lai,” “Free Fire Zones” and the Phoenix Program in Vietnam suggest that this strategy still prevails. If

atrocities committed under these strategies should be brought before an international war crimes court, the US would be greatly embarrassed. We must realize that American atrocities have not been restricted to isolated incidents. They have in fact been extremely wide spread; one could say, the rule rather than the exception. The best evidence for this conclusion comes from American sources.

#### 2.1. THE OBSERVATIONS OF CHARLES A. LINDBERGH

Lindbergh, who won world renown in 1927 by crossing the Atlantic in the “Spirit of St. Louis,” was an outspoken opponent of President Franklin Delano Roosevelt and consequently harassed throughout his lifetime. When the US entered World War II in December 1941, Lindbergh was not allowed to serve in the US Air Corps. He was, however, allowed to serve his country as technical consultant and test pilot. Beginning in 1944, he was assigned to both the Pacific and European Theatres of Operation in this capacity. In 1970, he published his diary, *The Wartime Journals of Charles A. Lindbergh*. They make clear why the US has misgivings about the conduct of its troops and the charges which could ensue from an international war crimes court. Following are a few quotations:

21<sup>st</sup> May 1944 (New Guinea, page 813f.)

*General Arnold came with a jeep to take me over to see General (Robert B.) McClure. Another tour of the beachhead with General McClure, this time to see the coast positions. [...] The Army engineers are putting in a road through this area—still in rough condition but passable for our jeep with all four wheels pushing. Several places along it, Japanese skulls had been set up on posts [...].”*

21<sup>st</sup> June 1944 (p. 853f.)

*“General’s account of killing a Japanese soldier: A technical sergeant in an advanced area some weeks ago complained that he had been with combat forces in the Pacific for over two years and never had a chance to do any fighting himself—that he would like the chance to kill at least one Jap before he went home. He was invited to go out on a patrol into enemy territory.*

*The sergeant saw no Jap to shoot, but members of the patrol took a prisoner. The Jap prisoner was brought to the sergeant with the statement that here was his opportunity to kill a Jap.*

*‘But I can’t kill that man! He’s a prisoner. He’s defenseless.’*

*‘Hell, this is war. We’ll show you how to kill the son of a bitch.’*

*One of the patrol members offered the Jap a cigarette and a light, and as he started to smoke an arm was thrown around his head and his throat ‘slit from ear to ear.’*

*The entire procedure was thoroughly approved by the general giving the account.”<sup>2</sup>*

26<sup>th</sup> June 1944 (pp. 856f.)

*“The talk drifted to prisoners of war and the small percentage of Japanese soldiers taken prisoner. ‘Oh, we could take more if we wanted to,’ one of the officers replied. ‘But our boys don’t like to take prisoners.’*

*‘We had a couple of thousand down at —, but only a hundred or two were turned in. They had an accident with*

the rest. It doesn't encourage the rest to surrender when they hear of their buddies being marched out on the flying field and machine guns turned loose on them.'

'Or after a couple of them get shot with their hands up in the air,' another officer chimed in.

'Well, take the —th. They found one of their men pretty badly mutilated. After that, you can bet they didn't capture very many Japs.'

The talk drifted to air combats and parachute jumps. All of the pilots insisted it was proper to shoot enemy airmen coming down in their parachutes."<sup>3</sup>

28<sup>th</sup> June 1944 (p. 859)

"I am shocked at the attitude of our American troops. They have no respect for death, the courage of an enemy soldier, or many of the ordinary decencies of life. They think nothing whatever of robbing the body of a dead Jap and call him a 'son of a bitch' while they do so. I said during a discussion that regardless of what the Japs did, I did not see how we could gain anything or claim that we represented a civilized state if we killed them by torture. 'Well, some of our boys do kick their teeth in, but they usually kill them first,' one of the officers said in half apology."

13<sup>th</sup> July 1944 (p. 875)

"It was freely admitted that some of our soldiers tortured Jap prisoners and were as cruel and barbaric at times as the Japs themselves. Our men think nothing of shooting a Japanese prisoner or a soldier attempting to surrender. They treat the Jap with less respect than they would give to an animal, and these acts are condoned by almost everyone."

24<sup>th</sup> July 1944 (p. 882-884)

"Going down the hill, we came to a pass with the bodies of a Japanese officer and ten or twelve soldiers [...]. And as one of the officers with me said, 'I see that the infantry have been up to their favorite occupation,' i.e., knocking out all the teeth that contain gold fillings for souvenirs.

[...In the bomb crater] bottom were lying the bodies of five or six Jap soldiers, partly covered with a truckload of garbage our troops had dumped on top of them. [...]

We climbed down the ladder past the bodies of more soldiers and picked our way over to the entrance of one of the caves. This is the cave where the Japs reportedly tried to surrender and were told by our troops to 'get the hell back in and fight it out.'"

11<sup>th</sup> August 1944 (pp. 901f.)

"A major says that American soldiers never meet the higher type of Australian girl because our men have carried on in such a manner that to be seen with an American uniform in Sydney practically identifies a girl as a whore."

"The officers wanted some prisoners to question but couldn't get any until they offered two weeks' leave in Sydney for each one turned in. Then they got more than they could handle.'

'But when they cut out giving leave, the prisoners stopped coming in. The boys just said they couldn't catch any.'

'The Aussies are still worse. You remember the time they had to take those prisoners south by plane? One of the pilots told me they just pushed them out over the mountains and reported that the Japs committed hara-kiri on the way.'

'Well, you remember when our troops captured that Jap hospital? There wasn't anyone alive in it when they got through.'"

30 August 1944 (Tarawa, p. 915)

"the general desire was to kill and not take prisoners. Even when prisoners were taken, the naval officer said, they were lined up and asked which ones could speak English. Those who were able to speak English were taken for questioning. The others 'simply weren't taken.'"

4<sup>th</sup> Sep 1944 (Kwajalein, p. 917)

"One of the doctors on the island tells me that some of the Marines dug up Japanese bodies to get gold-filled teeth for souvenirs."

In Europe after the war, Lindbergh wrote the following:

18<sup>th</sup> May 1945 (p. 947, near Munich)

"The fact is that our American soldiers are out for loot wherever they can get it. [...] To destroy and loot is considered entirely proper and the right thing to do as far as the G.I. is concerned."

19<sup>th</sup> May 1945 (p. 953)

"Here, our soldiers use the term 'liberate' to describe the method of obtaining loot. Anything taken from an enemy home or person is 'liberated' in the language of the G.I. Leica cameras are 'liberated' (probably the most desired item); guns, food, art. Anything taken without being paid for is 'liberated.' A soldier who rapes a German woman has 'liberated' her."

20 May 1945 (p. 955, near Munich)

"[...] a young medical officer [...] tells me how our people have been making the Germans talk when they at first refuse to do so—solitary confinement on bread and water; and, if that doesn't work, solitary confinement with no bread and water. Our people had become alarmed at the condition of some of their prisoners, and he had been called in to examine them."

24 May 1945 (p. 961, Heilbronn)

"One of the officers (American) tells me that [German] prisoners are in the open day and night, rain or shine, and with very little food."

8<sup>th</sup> June 1945 (p. 980f., between Nuremberg and Leipzig)

"Stop at a battalion ordnance station in a small village for an extra tire. Lunch with the local officers. They talk of the S.S. troops they have in their 'cage.'

'The last time I saw them, they were sweeping up the streets with their hands,' said one of the officers.

'Do you mean literally or figuratively?' I asked.

The officers seemed to hate Germans in general, and the S.S. above all else. 'We rotate being in charge of the cage,' a young lieutenant told me. 'The fellows try to outdo each other in handling the S.S.'

'For instance?' I asked.

'Oh, one of the best is to make them stretch out their arms and lean against a wall. They start falling down after about half an hour. Then we say, 'S.S. goot?' And if they answer, 'S.S. goot,' we make them do it again.'"

9<sup>th</sup> June 1945 (p. 989f., Dessau)

"All of the ex-prisoners of war seemed to me surprisingly well fed—both those going into and these coming from

the Russian area. Faces showed the signs of years of captivity; there was no doubt about that. But I did not see the signs of starvation that I expected after reading the accounts of the way these people have been treated. [...] There is an abundance of food in the American Army, and few men seem to care how hungry the German children are outside the door."

10<sup>th</sup> June 1945 (pp. 992f.), Nordhausen

"Since it was still daylight we decided to go to the underground factory before looking for our billets. [...] To reach the entrance we had to drive through Camp Dora, an ex-German prison camp from which a large percentage of the factory's workers were obtained. [...] Their clothing was dirty but seemed adequate for the season. From their bodies and faces one would judge that they were not too badly fed."

11<sup>th</sup> June 1945 (p. 997, Nordhausen)

"A long line of such incidents parades before my mind; the story of our Marines firing on unarmed Japanese survivors who swam ashore on the beach at Midway; the accounts of our machine-gunning prisoners on a Hollandia airstrip; of the Australians pushing captured Japanese soldiers out of the transport planes which were taking them south over the New Guinea mountains ('the Aussies reported them as committing hara-kiri or 'resisting'); of the shinbones cut, for letter openers and pen trays, from newly killed Japanese bodies on Noemfoor; of the young pilot who was 'going to cream that Jap hospital one of these days'; of American soldiers poking through the mouths of Japanese corpses for gold-filled teeth ('the infantry's favorite occupation'); of Jap heads buried in anthills 'to get them clean for souvenirs';"

Such was Charles Lindbergh's testimony.

## 2.2. LINDBERGH'S REPORTS CONFIRMED BY OTHER ALLIED WAR CORRESPONDENTS

### A. REPORT BY EDGAR L. JONES<sup>4</sup>

The American war correspondent Edgar L. Jones wrote the following summarization in February 1946, shortly after the end of World War II:

"What kind of war do civilians suppose we fought, anyway? We shot prisoners in cold blood, wiped out hospitals,

strafed lifeboats, killed or mistreated enemy civilians, finished off the enemy wounded, tossed the dying into a hole with the dead, and in the Pacific boiled the flesh off enemy skulls to make table ornaments for sweethearts, or carved their bones into letter openers"

### B. EXCERPTS FROM JOHN W. DOWER'S WAR WITHOUT MERCY<sup>5</sup>

"The Japanese accused the Allies of mutilating Japanese war dead for souvenirs, attacking and sinking hospital ships, shooting sailors who had abandoned ship and pilots who had bailed out, killing wounded soldiers on the battlefield, and torturing and executing prisoners—all of which did take place." (pp. 61f.)

On page 63 Dower relates the command of an Australian major general to shoot wounded Japanese prisoners. "But sir, they are wounded and want to surrender," protested a colonel. "You heard me, Colonel," said the general; "I want no prisoners. Shoot them all." And they were all shot.

Also on page 63, he quotes the memoirs of the American professor of biology E. B. Sledge:<sup>6</sup>

"Sledge, deeply religious and patriotic, watched his comrades go over the edge: severing the hand of a dead Japanese as a battlefield trophy, 'harvesting gold teeth' from the enemy dead, urinating in a corpse's upturned mouth, shooting a terrified old Okinawan woman and casually dismissing her as 'just an old gook woman who wanted me to put her out of her misery.'"

On page 65 Dower describes an even more gruesome scene, from page 120 of Sledge's memoirs:

"In the diary of a seaman, published after the war, we find tucked away in an entry in July 1944 the casual mention of a Marine who had already collected seventeen gold teeth, the last from a Japanese soldier on Saipan who was wounded and still moving his hands. Sledge, in his memoir of Pelehu and Okinawa, records an even more excruciating scene of a wounded Japanese thrashing on the ground as a Marine slit his cheeks open and carved his gold-crowned teeth out with a *kabar*. [...]

In April 1943, the *Baltimore Sun* ran a story about a local mother who had petitioned authorities to permit her son to mail her an ear he had cut off a Japanese soldier in the South Pacific. She wished to nail it to her front door for all



Defense worker N. Nickolson writes to her sweetheart thanking him for his letter and "souvenir." This skull of a Japanese soldier bears the inscription: "Here is a good Jap -- a dead one!"

to see. On the very same day, the Detroit Free Press deemed newsworthy the story of an underage youth who had enlisted and 'bribed' his chaplain not to disclose his age by promising him the third pair of ears he collected.

Scalps, bones, and skulls were somewhat rarer trophies, but the latter two achieved special notoriety in both the United States and Japan when an American serviceman sent President Roosevelt a letter opener made from the bone of a dead Japanese (the president refused it), and Life published a full-page photograph of an attractive blonde posing with a Japanese skull she had been sent by her fiancé in the Pacific."<sup>7</sup>

And in the footnote on page 330:

"The Life photo appeared in the issue for May 22, 1944, 35, with the caption 'Arizona war worker writes her Navy boyfriend a thank-you note for the Jap skull he sent her.'"

On page 66, Dower describes a truly horrendous atrocity:

"A U.S. submarine commander who sank a Japanese transport and then spent upwards of an hour killing the hundreds and possibly thousands of Japanese survivors with his deck guns, for example, was commended and publicly honored by his superiors even though he included an account of the slaughter in his official report."

Dower provides additional information concerning this incident in his footnote 94 (page 330) to a book by Clay Blair:<sup>8</sup>

"The submarine was the Wahoo, and the episode occurred off the north coast of New Guinea in January 1943. One of the officers on the Wahoo, recalling the occasion, spoke of the commander's 'overwhelming biological hatred of the enemy'; [...] The submarine commander, following this mission, was awarded both the Navy Cross and, from General MacArthur, an Army Distinguished Service Cross."

The mass murderer was not only tolerated, he was decorated! From p. 67:

"An equally grim butchery took place on March 4, 1943, the day after the three-day battle of the Bismarck Sea, when U.S. and Australian aircraft systematically searched the seas for Japanese survivors and strafed every raft and lifeboat they found."

Such events were by no means kept secret, as he points out on page 67. In its issue of 15<sup>th</sup> March 1943, Time Magazine stated:

"low-flying fighters turned lifeboats towed by motor barges, and packed with Jap survivors, into bloody sieves."

Likewise, no attempt was made to hide the fact that very few prisoners were taken; on the contrary. Dower writes on page 68:

"An article published by a U.S. Army captain shortly after the war, for example, carried the proud title 'The 41st Didn't Take Prisoners.'<sup>[9]</sup> The article dealt with the 41st Division under MacArthur's command, nicknamed 'the Butchers' in Tokyo Rose's propaganda broadcasts, and characterized the combat in the Pacific in typical terms as 'a merciless struggle, with no holds barred.'"

Obviously a colonel in the US Army was proud of these atrocities and did not hesitate to publicize them.

Even the highest ranking American officers incited murderous frenzy in a very primitive manner. On page 71 Dower

quotes the Australian general Blamey who addressed his troops, as well as the New York Times (9<sup>th</sup> Jan 1943, p. 1) as follows:

"Your enemy is a curious race—a cross between the human being and the ape. [...] You know that we have to exterminate these vermin [...]. We must exterminate the Japanese. [...] The Jap is a little barbarian. [...] Our troops have the right view of the Japs. They regard them as vermin."

Neither President Roosevelt, after receiving a letter opener made from the bones of a Japanese soldier, nor the American public, after publication of the photo in Life Magazine of the Japanese skull sent by a Marine to his sweetheart, or after the reports by Charles Lindbergh, Edgar Jones, or John Dower, expressed disapproval of the beastly conduct of US troops. Most significantly, they undertook no measures to guard against repetitions of these atrocities.

### 2.3. KEEPING PRISONERS IN CAGES IS CUSTOMARY PROCEDURE FOR US TROOPS

The caged and tortured SS men described by Lindbergh, quoted in 2.1. above, are not the only prisoners of the US who have been treated this way. In the US interrogation center at Guantanamo, Cuba, Taliban prisoners are subjected to the same barbarous confinement, which is broadcast on worldwide television.

Perhaps the best known instance of caging prisoners is the notorious case of the world famous American poet Ezra Pound (1885-1972), a supporter of Mussolini who lived in Italy during World War II and broadcast polemics against Roosevelt and the Jews. Captured by the Americans in Genoa in August 1945, he was first placed under house arrest. His subsequent treatment is described by Charles Norman in his book *Ezra Pound*:<sup>10</sup>

"Then he was taken to a military prison compound near Pisa. This was the Disciplinary Training Center of the Mediterranean Theater of Operations."

The word "training" is an American euphemism. Pound's lawyer, Julien Cornell, made the following notes after his first conversation with the poet in the Federal prison at Washington, DC on 20<sup>th</sup> November 1945 (p. 397):

"At Pisa, Pound was confined in a cage made of air-strip, and in solitary confinement.<sup>[11]</sup> Cage was in yard with little shelter from sun or rain. Bright lights on stockade shone at night. Two guards outside at all times. Slept on cement floor with 6 blankets. Can for toilet. Allowed no reading matter except Confucius he was working on. Incommunicado. Was told nobody knew where he was.

"After 3 weeks, Pound collapsed. Taken out of cage and put in tent. Partial amnesia. Claustrophobia. Not allowed to talk to other prisoners (told this was ordered by Washington)."

Norman continues:

"Some of the 'trainees' were destined for federal prisons in the United States, some were hanged at Aversa, and others were shot down in attempts to escape. Pound was the only civilian prisoner. The commandant during his incarceration was Lt. Col. John L. Steele, whose name occurs in *The Pisan Cantos*, as do the names of fellow prisoners. A medical section attendant has recalled seeing, one May

night, the blue light of acetylene torches reinforcing the cage that was to hold Ezra Pound. It was on the extreme end of a row of such cages. The excuse for this, and for the cage itself, was the fear that Fascists might attempt to rescue him. No such attempt was ever made, and it was an incredible barbarity for Americans to conceive and execute.”

The government intended to charge Pound with high treason. Instead, they declared him insane and imprisoned him for almost 13 years in St. Elizabeth Hospital, Washington DC. Thanks to international pressure, he was finally released in 1959. He returned to Italy where he lived with his daughter at Brunnenberg Castle in Meran until his death in Venice on 1<sup>st</sup> November 1972.

#### 2.4. THE HUMAN VULTURES OF HIROSHIMA

After the atomic bomb attacks on Hiroshima and Nagasaki, Japan capitulated on 15<sup>th</sup> August 1945. In the Fall of 1945, Air Corps General Anderson assigned a camera team of the US Bomber Command to fly to Japan and document on location the total defeat of Japan “before the grass grows green again.” The documentary film had the working title “Defeated Japan.” The camera team was supplied with the best equipment and personnel available and even given a special train in which it traveled throughout Japan.

The head of the team was Lt. Daniel McGovern, who had worked as camera man on “The Memphis Belle,” a documentary about an American bomber airplane. For a short time, the commanding officer of this project had been Ronald Reagan. McGovern’s camera team shot a total of 100,000 feet of color film, 9 hours on Hiroshima and Nagasaki and 30 hours on the rest of Japan. The scenes depicted are so horrible that the Pentagon classified the entire film as “Top Secret” in 1946.

In 1983, on the initiative of Japan, the Pentagon finally released it. Robert Harris of the BBC then edited the film into a movie which includes interviews of contemporary witnesses, including Daniel McGovern. The title of the Harris film is “Hollywood Goes to Hiroshima—A Film of the Japanese Holocaust, 1945.” The German version was broadcast by Walter Halfer of West German TV Broadcasting Company. The following passages are quoted and retranslated from the German version (the author has a video copy.)

*(Narrator): “In that winter of 1945/46, Hiroshima and Nagasaki were afflicted with sickness and suffering to an extent which science has never before witnessed. For the scientific researcher, the atom bomb survivors represented ideal objects for study. Their wounds were minutely examined and photographed. Among the researchers was a British mission, which observed that the number of dead in Hi-*

*roshima alone was greater than the total number of bombing victims during the Battle of Britain.”*

*Not all of those rummaging through the rubble of Hiroshima were scientists, as Daniel McGovern will always remember.*

*(Daniel McGovern): “There was one thing which I found so disgusting that I never wanted to talk about it. A human form was rummaging about with two leather pouches strapped to its waist. One pouch was for silver, the other for gold. This creature was prying silver and gold from the skulls of rotting corpses. I saw it with my own eyes.”*

*(Narrator) “And what was this creature?”*

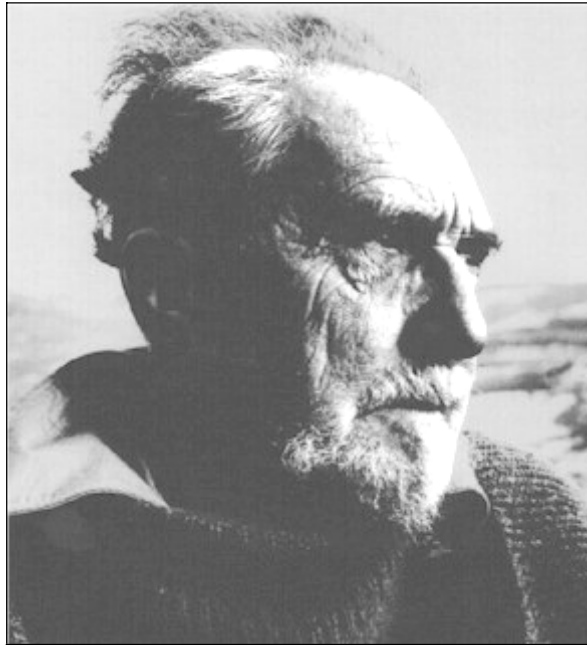
*(McGovern): “An Army officer.”*

*(Narrator): “An American officer?”*

*(McGovern): “Yes, American.”*

*(Narrator): “He was robbing gold and silver from the corpses?”*

*(McGovern): “Yes. It was the most repulsive thing I saw there. If I had been in charge I would have had him shot.”*



Ezra Pound

#### 2.5. IN VIETNAM, US SOLDIERS AGAIN BEHAVED LIKE BARBARIANS

Eddie Adams, who in 1968 made the famous photograph of a Vietnamese police official executing a Vietcong lieutenant with his revolver (for which he received the Pulitzer Prize), wrote the following for the US news magazine Newsweek:<sup>12</sup>

*“There were things a hell of a lot worse that happened in Vietnam. We had pictures that we never released. There were pictures of Americans holding heads of Viet Cong they’d chopped off. I talked to one soldier*

*who said, ‘Oh, you should have been here a little while ago, you missed it. I cut me a head out of one of them Viet Cong. I just buried it.’ Very gruesome. But this is a war. People are dying, your friends are getting killed, people are blown away. There aren’t any rules. There aren’t any.”*

Such is the American concept of war: No rules.

#### 2.6. THE BARBAROUS METHODS USED BY US FORCES DURING THE GERMAN WAR CRIMES TRIALS

In order to illustrate the conduct of the Americans in Germany, let me quote a few passages from the book by Friedrich Oscar, *Über Galgen wächst kein Gras* (No Grass Grows Over the Gallows).<sup>13</sup>

*“On the 27<sup>th</sup> of January 1949, Senator William Langer introduced a resolution before the US Senate, recorded in the Congressional Record of the first session of the 81<sup>st</sup> Congress. It is entitled ‘American Military Justice: A Shame*

for All Americans' and reads as follows:

*'A two man civil commission, dispatched by Secretary of State Royall to gain an overview of the proceedings at Nuremberg, returned to the US and reported that the following methods were used to force confessions from the accused: Kicks and blows which knocked out prisoners' teeth and fractured their chins; mock trials; solitary confinement; burning splinters shoved under their fingernails; deceptions by phony priests; extreme deprivation of food; broken promises of visits; and promises of release in return for collaboration.'*"

According to the Congressional Record for the Senate (Item No. 134 dated 26<sup>th</sup> July 1949, page 10397), Senator McCarthy delivered the following remarks in a major address. Here is a short extract from a long speech:<sup>14</sup>

*"As Bishop Theophilus Wurm of Stuttgart, the aged leader of German Protestantism, said in a blistering statement issued to the press on the one-sidedness and the problematic character of the methods used in the war crimes trials:*

*'Never will the people of the town of Schwabisch Hall, who in the nights heard the cries of pain of the tortured beyond the prison walls, be made to believe that these investigators were servants of justice and not servants of revenge.'*"

Oscar's book is a veritable catalog of terrifying but well documented accounts of postwar American atrocities.

### 3. On Balance

We have seen that, in addition to avoiding "politically motivated criminal accusations" against American troops, there are other, stronger motives for Washington's rejection of the ICC. These are concerns that such accusations would expose numerous atrocities committed by members of the US armed forces. What can one expect from an army whose officers encourage their troops to do the following?

- Place the heads of dead enemies on stakes;
- Kill prisoners by cutting their throats;
- Machinegun large groups of prisoners;
- Shoot enemy soldiers who are in process of surrendering, with hands held high;
- Approve of "knocking off" enemy pilots parachuting to earth;
- Capture an enemy hospital, then bomb and kill all the patients;
- Condone plundering and desecrating the bodies of the dead;
- Barbarously torture prisoners, often to death;
- Pry out the gold filled teeth of dead and wounded prisoners;
- Send enemy prisoners back to their positions in order to shoot or burn them to death;
- Take prisoners only when rewarded with leave time;
- Routinely put wounded enemy to death;
- Excavate bodies of enemy soldiers so as to pry out gold filled teeth;

- Bury wounded enemy soldiers alive
- Impound prisoners in the open, without protection from the elements, and allow them to starve;
- Deliberately sink lifeboats filled with survivors of torpedoed ships;
- Bury the skulls of enemy dead in ant beds to "polish" them before sending them home as souvenirs;
- Make letter openers from the bones of enemy dead;
- Lock prisoners in cages like gorillas and torment them;
- Proudly pose holding the severed heads of enemy soldiers;
- Cut out the hearts of fallen enemy soldiers;
- Shoot hundreds of survivors of sunken ships as they helplessly swim or float;
- Extort confessions with beatings, burning splinters, fake trials, withholding promised religious visits, etc.;
- Rape and plunder civilian populations of conquered lands.
- What is one to think of an army if one of its officers observes other officers going about like "human vultures" in the ruins of a devastated city, prying out gold filled teeth from decomposing corpses, and does not report such desecrations?

There is little reason to expect that such an army, whose countless atrocities are catalogued by its own side, will show improvement in future. The American war correspondent Edgar L. Jones described this situation very succinctly:<sup>15</sup>

*"We Americans have the dangerous tendency to assume a 'holier than thou' attitude toward other nations... We consider ourselves nobler than others, and consequently in a better position to decide what is right and what is wrong. When victors, we consider ourselves righteous in bringing our defeated enemies to trial for their crimes against humanity, but we should be realistic enough to perceive that if we had been defeated and tried before an international court we too would be found guilty of massive human rights violations."* (Retranslated)

When Jones asked an American colonel of infantry if he had addressed his battalion before battle, the colonel answered:<sup>16</sup>

*"Yes, I gave them a lecture on the ethics of war. I told them that there are two kinds of ethics: one for us and one for the yellow bellied bastards on the other side."* (Retranslated)

This is the real motivation for American rejectionism. They assume and demand an ethic for themselves which is different from that of their enemies. *This is the reason why they demand immunity from the International Criminal Court.* If there were no special privileges for the US, Americans would present a miserable figure before the ICC. The US government would have to admit that it is unable or unwilling to instill proper discipline in its armed forces, unable to guarantee that its forces will abide by the Geneva Convention and the Haag Protocol on Land Warfare. Such an admission is not in the interests of the US, who presumes to set an example for the world. The US has no choice except to hinder exposure with every means at its command.

## Notes

First published as “Warum Washington den ISG nicht mag”, in *Deutschland in Geschichte und Gegenwart*, 50(3) (2002), pp. 11-17; translated by James Damon.

<sup>1</sup> *Frankfurter Allgemeine*, Sunday Edition, 7.March .2002, pp. 1f.

<sup>2</sup> Translator’s Note: Norman Mailer describes killing prisoners and other atrocities in his novel *The Naked and the Dead*, published 1948. Based on his experiences in the Pacific, it depicts the plight of a young lieutenant caught between murderous, insubordinate enlisted men and a sinister senior officer who uses the men’s depravity as a device for controlling them.

<sup>3</sup> In this context it should be noted that Col. Howard A. Buechner, in his book *Dachau. The Hour of the Avenger* (Thunderbird Press, Inc., Metairie, Louisiana, USA, 1986) wrote laconically on p. XVII:

“According to Joseph Lawrence, author of *Fighting Soldier* [Fighting Soldier. The AFF in 1918, Colorado Associated University Press, 1986], it was common practice for American soldiers to shoot prisoners in WWI.”

On p. 104 of his book, Lawrence reports how he brought a wounded German prisoner of war to a U.S. field hospital, where an American physician told him: “Get him out and shoot him!”

<sup>4</sup> Edgar L. Jones, “One war is enough!,” in *The Atlantic Monthly*, Febr. 1946, pp. 48-53.

<sup>5</sup> Faber and Faber, London-Boston 1986., pp. 60-73 and 328-331.

<sup>6</sup> *With the old breed at Pelaliu and Okinawa*, Presidio Press, 1981.

<sup>7</sup> *New York Times*, Aug. 10 and 14, 1944.

<sup>8</sup> *Silent Victory: The US Submarine War against Japan*, Lippincott, 1975, pp. 384ff.

<sup>9</sup> George S. Andrew, “The 41st didn’t take prisoners,” in *Saturday Evening Post*, July 27, 1946, pp. 22ff.

<sup>10</sup> The Macmillan Company, New York 1960, pp. 396f.

<sup>11</sup> This was the infamous “Gorilla Cage” described by Matthias Wegner in his review of the book by Mary de Rachewitz, *Diskretionen. Die Erinnerungen der Tochter Ezra Pounds* (Discretions: Memoirs of the Daughter of Ezra Pound) Haymon Publishing House, Innsbruck 1993. Reviewed in *Frankfurter Allgemeine* Dec. 22, 1993, p. 28.

<sup>12</sup> April 15, 1985, p. 65.

<sup>13</sup> Erasmus Publishing House, Braunschweig 1950, p. 35ff.

<sup>14</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 38-41.

<sup>15</sup> *Op. cit.* (note 4) p. 49.

<sup>16</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 56.

# How Israel Murders Peace

## Israeli Bulldozer Driver Murders American Peace Activist

By Nigel Parry and Arjan El Fassed

On March 16, 2003, in Rafah, occupied Gaza, 23-year-old American peace activist Rachel Corrie from Olympia, Washington, was murdered by an Israeli bulldozer driver. Rachel was in Gaza opposing the bulldozing of a Palestinian home as a volunteer with the *International Solidarity Movement*, which describes itself as follows:<sup>1</sup>

»The International Solidarity Movement is a Palestinian-led movement of Palestinian and International activists working to raise awareness of the struggle for Palestinian freedom and an end to Israeli occupation. We utilize non-violent, direct-action methods of resistance to confront and challenge illegal Israeli occupation forces and policies.

As enshrined in international law and UN resolutions, we recognize the Palestinian right to resist Israeli violence and occupation via legitimate armed struggle. However, we believe that nonviolence can be a powerful weapon in fighting oppression and we are committed to the principles of nonviolent resistance. «

Rachel and seven other ISM activists were in the Hi Es Salam area of Rafah, Gaza, trying to prevent the razing of Palestinian land and property.

Present were two Israeli occupation army bulldozers and a tank. For a period of two hours, the activists played ‘cat and mouse,’ attempting to prevent the illegal demolitions by physically blocking the passage of the two bulldozers.

An e-mailed report from the *Palestine Monitor* stated:<sup>2</sup>



Picture taken between 3:00-4:00PM, 16 March 2003, Rafah, Occupied Gaza. Rachel Corrie (L) and Nick (R) oppose the potential destruction of this home (to the west of the Doctor’s home where Rachel was killed). In the instance pictured, the bulldozer did not stop and Rachel was pinned between the scooped earth and the fence behind her. On this occasion, the driver stopped before seriously injuring her. Photo by Joseph Smith (ISM Handout).



»Rachel Corey [sic], 23 years old from the state of Washington, was killed while she was trying to prevent Israeli army bulldozers from destroying a Palestinian home. Other foreigners who were with her said the driver of the bulldozer was aware that Rachel was there, and continued to destroy the house. Initially he dropped sand and other heavy debris on her, then the bulldozer pushed her to the ground where it proceeded to drive over her, fracturing both of her arms, legs and skull. She was transferred to hospital, where she later died. Another foreigner was also injured in the attack and has been hospitalized - at this stage his nationality is unknown.«

A press release from the International Solidarity Movement dated March 15, 2003, stated:

»Rachel had been staying in Palestinian homes threatened with illegal demolition, and today Rachel was standing with other non-violent international activists in front of a home scheduled for illegal demolition. According to witnesses, Rachel was run over twice by the Israeli military bulldozer in its process of demolishing the Palestinian home. Witnesses say that Rachel was clearly visible to the bulldozer driver, and was doing nothing to provoke an attack.«

The photos below clearly show that Rachel was well marked, had a megaphone which removes any doubt that the activists' presence was somehow invisible to the driver, and she clearly posed no threat to the bulldozer driver.

A later report from ISM Media Coordinator Michael Shaik in Beit Sahour offered more details about the events:

»The confrontation between the ISM and the Israeli Army had been under way for two hours when Rachel was run over. Rachel and the other activists had clearly identified themselves as unarmed international peace activists throughout the confrontation.

The Israeli Army are attempting to dishonour her memory by claiming that Rachel was killed accidentally when she ran in front of the bulldozer. Eye-witnesses to the mur-



Picture taken between 3:00-4:00PM on 16 March 2003, Rafah, Occupied Gaza. A clearly marked Rachel Corrie, holding a megaphone, confronts the driver of one of two Israeli bulldozers in the area that were attempting to demolish a Palestinian home. She was confronting the bulldozer in order to disrupt its work, and prevent it from threatening any homes. Photo by Joseph Smith. (ISM Handout)



Picture taken at 4:45PM. Other peace activists tend to Rachel after she was fatally injured by the driver of the Israeli bulldozer (in background). This photo was taken seconds after the bulldozer driver dragged his blade over her for the second time while reversing back over her body. He lifted the blade as seen in the photo only after he had dragged it back over Rachel's body. This image clearly shows that had he lifted his blade at any time he may have avoided killing her, as the bottom section of the bulldozer is raised off the ground. Photo by Richard Purssell. (ISM Handout)



Picture taken at 4:47PM on March 16, 2003, Rafah, Occupied Gaza. Rachel Corrie lies on the ground fatally injured by the Israeli bulldozer driver. Rachel's fellow activists have dug her a little out of the sand and are trying to keep her neck straight due to spinal injury. Photo by Joseph Smith. (ISM Handout)



Rachel in Najjar hospital, Rafah, Occupied Gaza. Rachel arrived in the emergency room at 5:05PM and doctors scrambled to save her. By 5:20PM, she was gone. Ha'aretz reported that Dr. Ali Musa, a doctor at Al-Najjar, stated that the cause of death was "skull and chest fractures". Photo by Mohammad Al-Moghair

## The Most Recent Victims

**Israeli Soldiers Shot Tom Hurndall, 22, a British ISM Activist while he was protecting children in Rafah from Israeli gunfire on April 10, 2003. Tom was hit in the head by sniper fire. His condition is listed as critical.<sup>3</sup>**

**Brian Avery, 23, US ISM activist shot in the face by Israeli Forces in Jenin on April 5, 2003. He has suffered sever damage to his face and will have to undergo extensive reconstructive surgery. Brian returned home from the hospital in Haifa on June 16, 2003.<sup>4</sup>**

der insist that this is totally untrue. Rachel was sitting in the path of the bulldozer as it advanced towards her. When the bulldozer refused to stop or turn aside she climbed up onto the mound of dirt and rubble being gathered in front of it wearing a fluorescent jacket to look directly at the driver who kept on advancing. The bulldozer continued to advance so that she was pulled under the pile of dirt and rubble. After she had disappeared from view the driver kept advancing until the bulldozer was completely on top of her. The driver did not lift the bulldozer blade and so she was crushed beneath it. Then the driver backed off and the seven other ISM activists taking part in the action rushed to dig out her body. An ambulance rushed her to A-Najar hospital where she died.”

“This is a regrettable accident,” Israeli Defence [sic] Forces spokesman Captain Jacob Dallal was reported as saying in Ha’aretz newspaper. “We are dealing with a group of protesters who were acting very irresponsibly, putting everyone in danger.”

Members of the Israeli army and associated Israeli settler

paramilitary units have been responsible for the killing of 2,181 Palestinians and the injuring of another 22,218 between September 29, 2000, and March 14, 2003.

In addition to the killing of Rachel Corrie by the bulldozer driver, Israeli troops have shot and killed several other internationals in different incidents during the Intifada: German doctor Harald Fischer, Italian cameraman Rafaele Ciriello, and British United Nations worker Iain Hook.<sup>5</sup>

## Notes

Taken from *The Electronic Intifada*, March 16, 2003, <http://electronicintifada.net/v2/article1248.shtml>. Nigel Parry and Arjan El Fassed are two founders of the Electronic Intifada. Michael Brown and Ken Harper also contributed to this report.

<sup>1</sup> [www.palsolidarity.org/](http://www.palsolidarity.org/)

<sup>2</sup> [www.palestinemonitor.org/](http://www.palestinemonitor.org/), March 15, 2003.

<sup>3</sup> See [www.palsolidarity.org/activists/tomhurndall/tomhurndall.htm](http://www.palsolidarity.org/activists/tomhurndall/tomhurndall.htm)

<sup>4</sup> See [www.palsolidarity.org/reports/writings/5Apr03\\_JeninMichael.htm](http://www.palsolidarity.org/reports/writings/5Apr03_JeninMichael.htm)

<sup>5</sup> See <http://electronicintifada.net/cgi-bin/artman/exec/search.cgi?keyword=iain%20hook>

## Eulogy to Rachel

*By Colonel Maguire*

Sixteen hundred years ago in 404 AD the Christian monk Telemachus traveled from Asia Minor to Rome with a fixed purpose: end the gladiatorial combats. Upon arriving in Rome he ran into the arena crying out “In the name of Christ, forbear!” Telemachus interposed his body between the combatants to try to stop the gladiators. But the gladiators and their crowds, many ‘Christians’ among them, didn’t forbear his interference in their ancient traditions. Together they killed Telemachus. But Honorius, the Christian Roman Emperor of the West, was stricken in his conscience. He did forbear and that very evening he outlawed all future gladiatorial contests.

Recently another pilgrim from afar interposed her frail body crying out ‘Forebear!’ By her side stood a man in fervent and reverent prayer appealing to Heaven for her success. We can imagine 1600 years ago other Christians praying as Telemachus interposed his body between the gladiators. Like Telemachus, Rachel Corrie was mercilessly crushed by the heartless ones, heedless of her pleas and angered by her message. In the tiers of the worldwide videodrome the watching mob, many Judeo-Christians among them, also roared out “kill, kill”. So far our analogy is exact.

The utter callousness of this documented war crime, the premeditated character of the Israeli driver’s acts; and also of the by-standing Israeli security troops who couldn’t be bothered for 10 seconds of pepper spray to move Rachel and friends aside, all of this defies our comprehension. We know none of these Zionist occupation troops go into the Gaza Strip alone to demolish a home. But to complete this scene from Dante’s *Inferno*, to perfect the satanic insult to Christ, afterwards some Pharisees passed by and refused their medical help to this woman lying broken in the dust. This happened not far from where the merciful Samaritan’s wounded wayfarer lay two mil-

lennia ago. It’s not just the killing but the casual gratuitousness of it all. One can imagine demons in Hell behaving this way with the damned, but nowhere else.

The aftermath however is quite different. Instead of outlawing demolitions, the Israeli government declares the driver ‘not guilty’ in a rigged investigation, while proclaiming the activity itself legal. The videodrome mob continues to cry out for more blood. Can anyone still question that here indeed is the Kingdom of the Anti-Christ, populated by Zionist Jews and Zionist Gentiles alike? Does any question remain that God has delivered these people over for utter destruction?

And what, you may ask, has the government of the United States of America under the leadership of President George W. Bush done about this atrocity? After all, Rachel Corrie was an American citizen. Nor is the Gaza Strip sovereign Israeli territory. Israeli troops illegally occupy this land in contemptuous defiance of multiple UN Security Council resolutions demanding their immediate withdrawal. If ever there was a clear cut international war crime, here it is, complete with multiple human witnesses and recorded live in full color video.

In these circumstances should not the People and Government of the United States demand an apology? Should not the President call a press conference and demand that Sharon’s government arrest the perpetrators, both the guilty soldiers directly involved and their military and civilian superiors? Should not these war criminals be extradited to the United States to stand trial and be brought to justice? Should not the government of the United States immediately end all aid to the Zionist State until it bows to international law and the dictates of common humanity?

It is not surprising that President Bush has not made so much as a single peep of protest to the Israelis. It is understand-

able because, quite frankly, the Jews and Israel dominate this corrupt administration. They own Mr. Bush, they control his Department of Defense and he, their obedient puppet, faithfully does their bidding.

And where are the voices of those who claim to speak for Christ today, that evangelical Christian leadership we see daily on Jewish owned television channels? These self-appointed prophets, men like Pat Robertson, Jerry Falwell, James Dobson, and Billy Graham could not care less about what happened to Rachel Corrie. They preach that Israel can do no wrong; they are concerned only with promoting Zionist political ambitions

and they gladly ignore any Christian principles which do not fit the Israeli agenda.

Nor have the media-CNN, FOX, ABC, CBS, the Associated Press and newspapers across North America, uttered more than a passing reference about the tragic events of last March 16, when young Rachel Corrie's life was snuffed out by cruel and sadistic Israeli killers. They, too, you see, are owned and controlled by Zionist Jewish interests. They, too, like Bush, his Washington D.C. cohorts, and the pro-Zionist Christian lobby, are complicit in the murder of Rachel Corrie.

## How German and American Money is Spent in Israel

*By German Rudolf*

It ought to be general knowledge that Israel can survive only because it receives massive funding mainly from two nations: Germany—by manipulating public opinion with an imposed German guilt complex—and the United States as a result of the enormous political influence of American Jewish lobby groups. The reasoning behind unconditional support for Israel

is that after the 'Holocaust,' the Jews deserve their own country so that they have a safe haven in the future. How concentrating millions of Jews on a small strip of land surrounded by hundreds of millions of extremely hostile people can possibly be called a safe haven, is a riddle in and of itself. Such a setup almost asks any would-be exterminator for a sweep 'final solu-



*The Gaza Wall, Israel's Anti-Arab Defence Wall, under construction...*

tion' of the Jewish question in the Middle East.

As a result of this situation, the Jewish attempts to turn 'their' homeland into a fortress become more and more grotesque. While the U.S. was preparing to go to war against Iraq, arguably the potentially most dangerous opponent of Israel, Israel re-invented 'The Wall:' it started erecting a huge concrete wall around the occupied Gaza area to contain the local Palestinian population. It certainly is not intended to keep the Jews within, as the Berlin Wall was built by the communist east German regime to keep its citizens from fleeing, even though this wall is looking shockingly similar to the former Berlin Wall. This wall, however, is supposed to protect the Jewish oc-

cupational power from the risk of any hostile intrusion, similar perhaps to the ancient Roman Hadrian Wall in Scotland or the Limes in Germany. Each mile of this wall costs roughly one million dollars, made possible because of American and German funds. It is a perfect expression of the Zionist paranoia of permanent siege. Not only every Israeli Embassy looks like a small KZ (concentration camp)—with the decisive difference that the watch towers are directed outwardly—now all of Israel seems to be slowly transferred into a huge fortress secured by massive walls and guarded by terrifyingly looking watch-towers.

## Foreign Workers in the Third Reich

By OSTR Hans-Jürgen Witzsch

Between 1997 and 2001, a broad media campaign occurred in Germany reporting about the widespread use of so-called forced laborers in Germany during the Third Reich period. These people were brought into the German Reich from German occupied territories allegedly against their free will, and it is claimed that these persons were exploited and treated inhumanely. These media reports followed the general historiographic pattern as it was imposed by the victorious powers of World War II. Germany's biggest weekly newsmagazine *Der Spiegel*, for example, adopted this position most emphatically and supported the claims made by certain lobby groups that Germany ought to pay huge amounts of money to compensate the alleged foreign 'working slaves.' It is significant that hardly any newspaper reported about the millions of Germans who, after the war, were forced to work for the victorious powers abroad. Apparently, the utmost pitiful working and living conditions of these unpaid German slaves were not even worth mentioning.

He who desires to study this section of history in more detail will discover soon that a real lack of research exists here—also within Revisionism. Up to now no scientific work has been presented which deserves to be called seriously scholarly, not to mention a standard work.

### Official Presentation of the Subject

How the complex of the foreign workers in the Third Reich is treated by the official German research can be gathered for example from the article in Germany's highly renowned newspaper *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung* of March 16, 1999, with the title "The Million Men Army of the Modern Slave State" and the subtitle "Deported, worn out, forgotten: Who were the forced laborers of the Third Reich and what fate did they await?", in which Ulrich Herbert, professor for modern history at the University of Freiburg, writes about this topic. Herbert talks about forced laborers, whether it involves concentration camp inmates, prisoners of war (POW's), or foreign workers:

*"The National Socialist 'employment of foreigners' between 1939 and 1945 represents the largest case of forced mass usage of foreign workers in history since the end of slavery in the 19<sup>th</sup> century. In the late summer of 1944, there were 7.6 million foreign civilian workers and POW's officially registered as employed on the territory of the 'Greater German Reich.' Most of them were forcedly brought for work deployment into the Reich."*

Herbert continues that the deployment of Poles led "to a regular man hunt in the so called 'General Gouvernement' in spring of 1940":

*"They had to live in barrack camps, which was, however, practically impossible to implement in the country side. They received lower wages, were not allowed to use public installations—from express trains to public baths [...]—they had to work longer hours than Germans. [...] Within a short period of time, a great number of Polish workers were brought to Germany against their will. [...] Until 1941/42, the proportion of 'voluntary' workers was relatively large in northern and western Europe."*

Especially bad were the conditions for the so-called east-workers:

*"[They] had to live in camps surrounded with barbed wire fences and guarded and were especially exposed to the unpredictability of the Gestapo and the company's security units. [...] Especially in the years 1942/43, the rations for the Soviet forced laborers, officially called 'east-workers,' were so low that they were massively malnourished and unable to work already a few weeks after their arrival. [...] The Soviet workers, however, received especially fixed wages, which were considerably lower than those of the German and foreign workers—nominally at about 40%, but in most cases probably even lower than that."*

Herbert does not give any evidence to support his claims.

In response to this, Dr. Heinz Splittgerber, author of several historic articles, writes about his personal experiences:

*“The Polish agricultural workers in central Pomerania, my home, were properly recruited. They received wages, accommodations, ration cards, medical treatment. They usually arrived ragged, outfitted themselves at our homes, and achieved a living standard which they could not achieve in eastern Poland and northern Ukraine—I know both regions—and which they could never have imagined.”* (personal communication to this author)

### Research Hurdles

When it comes to the historiography of the Third Reich period, freedom of speech and freedom of science as well as the equality before the law are no longer guaranteed in Germany, even though this is an open breach of German constitutional law and the U.N. declaration of Human Rights. Even non-public statements are nowadays threatened with severe legal penalties in Germany and the subsequent destruction of one’s professional career. A public prosecutor told the author of this article, an academic historian by profession, during a trial in Germany that he must just as well always follow the relevant latest jurisdictions in order to recognize what he as a historian is allowed to say.

As a result of this situation, only a few politically independent historians dare to walk on stony paths, through the mine fields of a persecutory judiciary. These few historians do not pay attention to expectation imposed onto them by highly questionable censorship laws, but are only bound by the law of truth in order to research with historiographic methods and in accordance with the late German historian Leopold Ranke, who once said that historiography is about describing events “as they actually were.” Nevertheless, surprisingly many corrections of the victor’s version of history have to be acknowledged, as they have become necessary in particular regarding the question of the ‘forced laborers.’

When dealing with historical questions, one has to check first what a common witness of that time with a critical attitude could know about the topic at hand without special knowledge and what is known about the topic today in a normal democratic society with an open exchange of views. Apart from wartime newspaper reports about the employment of foreign workers and their treatment within the framework of official instructions, the inhabitants of large cities, but also those living in rural districts, could observe foreign workers on a daily basis on their way to factories and at their workplace. They could observe the behavior of those workers and how they were treated in public, including their nutritional condition and their external appearance. Already in this regard, most eyewitnesses today vehemently contradict the propaganda picture of the allegedly inhumanely treated and exploited forced laborers. Significantly enough, not a single photo was ever submitted to substantiate such accusations. In June 1998, when the author of this article talked for the first time about the results of his research in a public lecture, more eyewitnesses than ever before during his lecture-activity of 22 years contributed their own experiences to the question of foreign workers, and some of them with remarkable details, confirming the basic content of the lecture.

### Contemporary Documents

Regarding documents as the basis for my elaboration, it ought to be mentioned that—apart from official German wartime instructions—there exists a ‘key document’ which was introduced into the proceedings of the International Military Tribunal of Nuremberg by the defence team. It basically refutes the allegations made by the victor’s version of history (KV Vert. P.L. 55). Through intensive search in the states archive in Nuremberg (*Staatsarchiv*), originals of sworn affidavits were found and could be evaluated in context. These affidavits represent an important supplement to the official German wartime instructions, enabling the development of a more realistic picture of the conditions at that time. The files of the “Gaugerichte” (district courts) which were referred to in the various testimonies, could not be found. These courts tried members of the National Socialist leadership who were accused of various crimes. If found guilty, these leaders were especially severely punished, because according to the opinion of the National Socialist German Workers Party (NSDAP), these leaders were supposed to be examples to the average citizen.

### LEGAL DEFINITIONS IN THE THIRD REICH

The existing instructions of the German wartime authorities do not confirm the negative picture of today’s media. For instance, a special printing of the *Reichsarbeitsblatt* (Reich Labor Paper) with the title “Der Einsatz ausländischer Arbeitskräfte in Deutschland,” (The employment of foreign workers in Germany), Berlin 1942, points out on page 22 about social security:

*“In principal, foreign workers and employees are entitled to the same German health insurance, accident insurance, and social security insurance (disability insurance, unemployment insurance, retirement insurance) in the same manner as comparable German workers are. Therefore, these insurance contributions have to be deposited following the general legal requirements.”*

According to a secret instruction dated from April 1, 1943, which was prepared by the Secret State Police (Gestapo) of Hesse, a special rule applied to workers from countries occupied by German troops. These workers needed some security screening. According to this 67 pages long document, of which only a few pages were submitted to the IMT (Doc. NO-2907), east-workers were allowed to leave their living-quarters only in order to go to perform their work within the work places:

*“East-workers, however, who display a good attitude inside of the camp as well as at work, can be allowed to leave. [...] the supervising member of the camp service has to be made responsible that [...] the east-workers behave themselves decently and reserved outside as well, and especially that they do not harass Germans and return back to the camp timely. [They are] to be accommodated in closed camps (barracks) with a suitable fence (but no barbed wire). [...] In contrast to this, female workers who are employed individually in agriculture or in households can be accommodated individually. [...] The use of public transportation as well as swimming pools, restaurants, movie houses, and theaters is not allowed [...] exceptions can [...] be made. [It] is allowed to listen to German music programs*

**AFFIDAVIT POLITISCHE LEITER-55**

EIDESSTATTLICHE ERKLÄRUNG VOM 30. JULI 1946 DES MASCHINEN-INGENIEURS JOSEF REINHART: ERGEBNISSE DER BEARBEITUNG VON 15433 EIDESSTATTLICHEN ERKLÄRUNGEN VON EHEMALIGEN POLITISCHEN LEITERN IN DEN INTERNIERUNGSLAGERN BEZÜGLICH IHRER STELLUNGNAHME UND HANDLUNGEN IM ZUSAMMENHANG MIT DER BEHANDLUNG AUSLÄNDISCHER ZIVILARBEITER UND KRIEGSGEFANGENER

BESCHREIBUNG:  
U'en und h's'es Ti

Nuernberg, Germany, den 30. July 1946

Betrifft: Behandlung auslaend. Zivilarbeiter  
und Kriegsgefangener.

Affidavit  
von

Herrn Josef Reinhart, geboren 29. 6. 1899  
in Sulzheim, Kreis Gerolzhofen,  
wohnhaft in Memmelsdorf Krs. Ebern  
Beruf: Maschinen-Ingenieur

z. Zt. Gerichtsgefaengnis Nuernberg,  
being duly sworn depose and say:

I. Nach Durchsicht und Pruefung der vorliegenden eidesstattlichen Erklaerungen, die von ehemaligen Politischen Leitern aus den Internierungslagern zu dem oben genannten Anklagepunkt eingereicht wurden stelle ich fest und bezeuge ich, dass mir

15 433 eidesstattliche Erklaerungen

zur Bearbeitung vorgelegen haben.

II. In den vorliegenden eidesstattlichen Erklaerungen haben

1. 9243 Politische Leiter versichert, dass die Unterbringung der auslaendischen Arbeitskraefte in ordnungsmaessiger Weise erfolgte.

2. 11421 Politische Leiter versichert, dass die auslaendischen Arbeitskraefte entsprechend den Kriegsverhaeltnissen ordnungsgemaess verpflegt und bekleidet wurden, die Verpflegung in vielen Faellen durch Gewaehrung von Zusatzen sogar guenstiger geregelt war, als fuer deutsche Normalverbraucher,

3. 12775 Politische Leiter versichert, dass die auslaendischen Arbeitskraefte von ihren Arbeit-

— Seite 2 —

gebern gerecht und anstaendig behandelt wurden, einzeln vorgekommene Uebergriffe mit Strafen gehandelt wurden, die aertzliche Versorgung, soziale und kulturelle Betreuung in der fuer deutsche Arbeiter allgemein ueblichen Weise geregelt war,

4. 179 Politische Leiter versichert, dass schwangere auslaendische Arbeiterinnen anstaendig behandelt und betreut wurden und dass ferner in weitgehendster Weise fuer Woechnerinnen, Saeuglinge und Kleinkinder gesorgt wurde.

In zahlreichen Erklaerungen haben Politische Leiter hervor- gehoben, dass die auslaendischen Arbeitskraefte

A. sich bei Luftangriffen durch freiwilligen Einsatz besonders auszeichneten,

B. Nach der Kapitulation aus Dankbarkeit fuer gute Behand- lung freiwillig weiterhin auf ihren Arbeitsplaetzen ver- blieben und ihre Arbeitgeber gegen Pluenderungen und Belaestigung schuetzten.

Die oeben angegebenen Tatsachen entsprechen der Wahrheit. Ich versichere ausdruuecklich, dass alle mir vorgelegten Erklae- rungen ausgewertet und beruecksichtigt sind.

Josef Reinhart

Signature of Affidavit

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 30th day of July 1946 at Nuernberg, Germany.

Francis Alix, Capt O-1180619  
Name — Grade — ASN

I, KVETA LIKOVSKÁ being thoroughly conversent with both in English and German certify that I have Acted as interpreter for this swearing.

Kveta Likovská

*Document PL(A) 55 of the International Court, Nuremberg (IMT Vol. 42, p. 350ff.)*

"[...] After reviewing and assessing the of sworn affidavits by former political leaders [...], I confirm that I was given 15,433 sworn affidavits. [...]"

1. 9243 Political Leaders assured that foreign workers were lodged in an orderly manner.

2. 11421 Political Leaders assured that foreign workers were fed and dressed orderly according to the war conditions, that provisioning was in many cases even better than that of the average German consumer due to the granting of supplements,

3. 12775 Political Leaders assured that foreign workers were treated justly and decently by their employers, that rare cases of transgressions were punished with penalties, that medical care, social, and cultural welfare was regulated as it was generally the case for Germans, [...]"

Political Leaders emphasized in numerous declaration that foreign workers

A. distinguished themselves especially by volunteering during air raids,

B. Remained at their working places after the surrender in order to protect their employers from lootings and harassments.

"[...]"

*as well as to German official news broadcasts in the Russian, Ukrainian, and White Russian languages. [...] the projection of [...] movies is allowed. [...] 3 camp newspapers appear for the east-workers [...] (Ukrainian, Russian, White-Russian)."*

Especially severe were the rules which forbade intimate relations between east-workers and German women under the threat of the death penalty:

*"There are no objections against sexual intercourse between male and female east-workers, as long as the discipline inside the camp is not disturbed."*

With restrictions, similar rules applied also for Poles. Poles were thus permitted to freely leave their accommodation during

summer time between 5 in the morning and 9 in the evening. The rules for recreation—"For Jews, socializing with the German population is forbidden"—is documentary evidence for the fact that even Polish Jews were employed as foreign workers in the Reich. Czechs were treated like Germans in all areas, with the exception that intimate relations with Germans were forbidden.

If the necessity of restricting measures in wartime is not denied, then neither these rules nor others presented during the Nuremberg trials will be considered to have been inappropriate restrictions. The severe penalties threatened exclusively for intimate relationships between Germans and foreigners become understandable, if one considers that it was pivotal for the

German war effort to have a strong link between the home front and the fighting front. One factor contributing to the German soldier's strong morale was that they could be sure about the rigorous moral integrity of their wives. Not a single testimony, however, came to the attention of this author indicating that even a single death sentence was ever meted out against a non-German offender. On the other hand, various statements report about intimate relationships between foreigners and unmarried German girls, which were tacitly tolerated by the German authorities and which were usually legalized by marriage after the war.

On March 23, 1943, the German authorities decreed a law about the employment conditions of the east-workers, which determined the wages in § 2:

*"The same wage and salary conditions apply for east-workers as for all other foreign workers. East-workers will be paid only for actual work performed."*

With this new law, former practices to pay east-workers less than others were outlawed, a fact which Professor Herbert evidently is unaware of. Even before this new law was enacted, the deductions made for east-workers were not as high as Herbert implies, as union representatives confirmed. §5 of the above law confirms that "east-workers receive vacation and home trips to their family", which by itself renders absurd the thesis of east-workers as 'slaves'.

#### WITNESS TESTIMONIES DURING THE POST-WAR TRIALS

The goal was clear, which the victorious powers of World War two pursued with the IMT trial and the subsequent trials, of which the Nuremberg Military Tribunal Case 4 was the most important, since it dealt with the crimes allegedly committed in the concentration camp system and by the SS. These trials were setup in order to depict the German government and its representatives in general as criminals—sentenced by an apparently irreproachably fair court—and to stifle any discussion of allied war crimes, which were still committed on a grand scale during the time of the trial itself. For this reason, all attempts of the Nuremberg defense team to compare alleged German transgressions with those of the judging allies were always rejected. The defense was allowed to interrogate the interned German Political Leaders (*Politische Leiter*, P.L.), who were automatically arrested at war's end, but the evaluation of these testimonies was never presented to the public. The trials were conducted following Anglo-Saxon law, which meant that the prosecution submitted only such evidence which they assumed to be incriminating. In order not to let 'unfavorable' facts become public, the defense was refused access to confiscated files and documents in archives under allied control. Thus, this trial was about the cementing of political 'truth' rather than about the investigation

of historical truth as the basis of a future peaceful European order. Thus, for example, the factual results of the proceedings during the Pohl trial, which was conducted in a basically objective atmosphere, was almost completely ignored in the written verdict.

The key document for our topic is, as already mentioned, Doc. P.L. 55, which is an evaluation of 15,433 sworn affidavits by former German Political Leaders. These documents indicate that the Allied's claims regarding the treatment of foreign workers in the Third Reich lacked any objective basis. Some of the individual affidavits were preserved through a fortunate coincidence: little more than 1,200 of these affidavits originate from the internment camp Darmstadt. Among other documents, the evaluation of these affidavits is the basis for the present article. In numerous affidavits, the names of the employed foreign workers are listed and it is pointed out that their exonerat-

**Sonderdruck aus dem Reichsarbeitsblatt**

## Der Einsatz ausländischer Arbeitskräfte in Deutschland

Berlin 1942

Die AA. überwachen die Durchführung des Lohntransfers laufend. Auch die Lagerführer und die Beauftragten des Amts für Arbeitseinsatz der DAF. kümmern sich darum, ob die Lohnüberweisungen pünktlich erfolgen.

**9. Sozialversicherung.**

Ausländische Arbeiter und Angestellte unterliegen grundsätzlich der deutschen Krankenversicherung, Unfallversicherung und Rentenversicherung (Invalidenversicherung, Angestelltenversicherung, knappschaftliche Pensionsversicherung) in derselben Weise wie die vergleichbaren deutschen Arbeitskräfte. Für sie sind dabei die Versicherungsbeiträge nach den allgemeinen gesetzlichen Vorschriften zu entrichten; eine Ausnahme gilt zur Zeit in der Invalidenversicherung für polnische landwirtschaftliche Arbeiter aus dem Generalgouvernement (s. unter c Abs. 1).

**a) Krankenversicherung.**

Die Gewährung von Leistungen der Krankenversicherung setzt regelmäßig voraus, daß der Versicherte und — soweit Leistungen für seinen Familienangehörigen in Betracht kommen — auch die Angehörigen sich innerhalb des Deutschen Reichs, des Protektorats Böhmen und Mähren nicht aufgehalten, aufhalten. Jedoch werden Arbeitern aus dem Protektorat Böhmen und Mähren, der Slowakei, Italien, Ungarn, Rumänien, Frankreich, Belgien, den Niederlanden und Dänemark die Leistungen der deutschen Krankenversicherung auch in ihrem Heimatland gewährt, wenn sie dort während eines Urlaubs erkranken oder wenn sie in ihre Heimat zurückkehren und die zuständige deutsche Krankenkasse der Rückkehr zugestimmt hat. Arbeiter aus den genannten Ländern müssen dabei im Falle der Erkrankung vor ihrer Rückkehr die Zustimmung der zuständigen Krankenkasse zur Rückkehr erwirken. Ausländische Arbeiter oder Protektoratsangehörige, die unter Bruch des Arbeitsvertrages in ihre Heimat zurückkehren, erhalten dort in keinem Fall Leistungen der deutschen Krankenversicherung.

Den in ihrem Heimatland zurückgebliebenen Familienangehörigen der Arbeitskräfte aus dem Protektorat Böhmen und Mähren, der Slowakei, Italien, Ungarn, Rumänien, Frankreich, Belgien, den Niederlanden, Norwegen und Dänemark werden im Falle ihrer Erkrankung oder ihrer Niederkunft bestimmte Familienhilfeleistungen auf Kosten der deutschen Krankenversicherung gewährt. Die Familienangehörigen im Protektorat Böhmen und Mähren, der Slowakei, Italien, Ungarn, Rumänien, Dänemark, Norwegen und dem unbesetzten französischen Gebiet haben sich wegen der Gewährung von Familienhilfeleistungen an den für ihren Wohnort zuständigen Träger der Krankenversicherung zu wenden. Familienangehörige aus den besetzten französischen Gebieten wenden sich an die Deutsche Krankenkasse für die besetzten französischen Gebiete in Paris, Avenue de l'Opéra Nr. 28, Familienangehörige in Belgien an die Deutsche Krankenkasse für Belgien in Brüssel, Rue Ravenstein 42, Familienangehörige in den Niederlanden an die Deutsche Krankenkasse in den Haag, Raamweg 90.

**b) Unfallversicherung.**

Ausländische Arbeiter sowie Protektoratsangehörige und ihre Hinterbliebenen erhalten die Leistungen der deutschen Unfallversicherung im allgemeinen auch beim Aufenthalt im Ausland; dies gilt insbesondere für Arbeiter und ihre Hinterbliebenen aus dem Protektorat Böhmen und Mähren, der Slowakei, Italien, Ungarn, Rumänien, Kroatien, Spanien, Dänemark, Schweden, Finnland, der Schweiz, Frankreich, Belgien, den Niederlanden und Norwegen. Auch bulgarische Staatsangehörige erhalten Leistungen der deutschen Unfallversicherung.

**c) Invalidenversicherung.**

Der Grundsatz, daß die in Deutschland beschäftigten ausländischen Arbeiter der deutschen Invalidenversicherung unterliegen, gilt nicht für polnische landwirtschaftliche Arbeiter, die im Generalgouvernement beheimatet sind und keinen Befreiungsschein besitzen. Diese Arbeiter hat der Betriebsführer binnen drei Tagen nach Beginn der Beschäftigung der zuständigen Landesversicherungsanstalt zu melden. Er hat für diese Arbeiter Zahlungen in Höhe des halben Invalidenversicherungsbeitrags an die Landesversicherungsanstalt zu leisten. Die in den eingegliederten Gebieten beheimateten polnischen Arbeiter unterliegen ebenso wie reichsdeutsche Arbeiter der Invalidenversicherung.

Die bisher bestehende Sonderstellung der italienischen Arbeiter in der deutschen Invalidenversicherung ist seit dem Inkrafttreten des deutsch-italienischen Vertrages über Sozialversicherung (1. September 1940) fortgefallen.

*Some legal rules of the Third Reich about the social insurance of the foreign workers during the war, generous as no other nation during this time.*

*From a special printing of the Reichsarbeitsblatt, Berlin 1942.*

*Copied from the brochure Deutschland—Schrift für neue Ordnung, 32(7/8) 1999, pp. 16ff.*

ing testimony about the actual conditions in Germany is also included in the files of the CIC (U.S. Counter Intelligence Corps). We know about their partial content only because some passages of them were quoted.

How little the Allies were interested in the preservation of these important documents of the defense becomes obvious from an internal letter exchange, in which the director of the government archives Dr. Solleder informed R. A. Gawlik, who participated in the Nuremberg trials, on August 7, 1951:

*“Among the waste paper, designated by the Military Government as trash, we found the original testimonials for the defense of the SS and the Political Leadership and transferred these to the State Archive. [...]”*

When evaluating the Allies' attitude toward the defense during these trials, it is not surprising to discover that the Allies intended to destroy undesired material of the defense, which contradicted the political goals of the Allies. It therefore has to be assumed that the important, confirming affidavits by foreign workers as quoted above did not find their way into the Allied archives.

With reference to their own observations, a few Political Leaders did also clearly express their views regarding attempts to twist the historic truth. For instance, the teacher Volkwein from the district of Melsungen in the then 'Gau' Kurhessen wrote on June 16, 1946:

*“In my opinion, the allegations that foreign workers were mistreated is without any legal basis and are made today only for convenient reasons of certain circles, without being able to prove them. The authorities organizing these trials should turn their attention to the honest part of those who stood in German service during the war. Then they would perceive a totally different picture than the one which is publicized in the world today for propaganda reasons. Those looking for the truth will find it, but those who do not want to see the truth will always be blind, no matter how obvious the truth is.”* (P.L. 173 Arb. 834)

Although the German laws and regulations for the employment of foreign workers did not violate any international laws, as even the victors' post-war trials had to conclude, it nevertheless has to be investigated if the implementation of these rules resulted in so-called crimes against humanity. Such a discrepancy between written rules and laws and their actual implementation is well known for the Soviet Union, where it was common that a humane treatment of prisoners and forced workers was intended by official regulations, but the Soviet camp-reality often was quite the opposite. It would be exactly in this regard that those affidavits would be of tremendous value, since this topic has been totally neglected by modern historiography.

The veracity of these individual affidavits, which were systematically evaluated for the first time, should be considered to be given for the following reasons: First of all, we are dealing with original documents and not with copies, which is quite unusual especially for those post-war trials, which heavily relied on copies and transcripts. Thus, an examination of authenticity is possible, which clearly exists here. Next, the credibility of the statements is very high because these affidavits are declarations made under oath by political leaders (P.L.) who at that time were prisoners of the victorious powers. These prisoners

had to expect high penalties in case they were suspected of having committed perjury—quite in contrast to witnesses of the prosecution, who were never accused of anything, even if they were proven to have committed perjury. Also, these prisoners were cut off from their accustomed surroundings. The details given in those affidavits about the local conditions could easily be checked at that time. Thirdly, there were obviously numerous confirmations by foreign workers who were called as witnesses as well, because many of these foreign workers were still in great numbers in Displaced Persons camps in Germany at the time. The declarations also show the official confirmation of an American officer and were prepared in the camp Darmstadt No. 91. In some few cases (P.L. 170 Arb. 1), the U.S. military—evidently often victims of their own propaganda—considered the contents of the sworn statements to be so unbelievable that the Political Leaders who had given these affidavits had to confirm—under oath—the correctness of their statements before a different U.S. officer a second time.

### **Voluntary Work Employment**

Contrary to concentration camp inmates and POW's, the foreign workers usually came voluntarily to Germany for work. This is not only evident from the official announcements, but also from the confirmation of Political Leaders who were taking care of foreign workers, as well as by statements from officials of the “*Deutsche Arbeitsfront*” (German Labor Front, DAF). This fact was also confirmed by the volunteers themselves in numerous statements. In over 1,200 testimonies, I found only one single vague indication of a forced work employment, while all the others, insofar as they commented on this question, clearly point out that all foreign workers were employed voluntarily. It was repeatedly stated that the labor efficiency could never have been achieved with forced labor. Dr. Seidl, a defense lawyer during the IMT in Nuremberg, explained in this regard:

*“The fact cannot be ignored that even today many hundred thousands of foreign workers live here, who were allegedly deported by force. They refuse now to return to their home lands, even though nobody stops them. Under these circumstances it has to be assumed that the force could not have been so big and the treatment in Germany not so bad as alleged by the prosecution.”* (IMT Vol. XVIII p. 172 ff.)

From numerous documents, only two will be quoted. First Oberreichsbahnrat Horn from Berlin:

*“That the people in general feel quite comfortable, can be realized by the fact that in railroad-works in Brandenburg, Potsdam, and Tempelhof Ukrainian, Belgian, and Dutch workers agreed to bring with them more voluntary workers after their home-vacation, which they were entitled to.”* (P.L. 174 Arb. 1142)

Mayor Kölsch of the German City of Stendal explained the development:

*“During the western campaign, I frequently heard the desire of the population in Holland, Belgium, and France to want to work in Germany. During the eastern campaign, the rush in the Caucasus and the Don area to work for Germany was greater than the need for foreign workers. The local employment offices tried [...] to stop illegal immigra-*



tions to Germany because many persons came secretly across the border on freight trains or with vacationers.” (P.L. 173 Arb. 761)

These are typical statements about this subject. Many witnesses commented, if the foreign workers were not recruited on a voluntary basis, they would have hardly returned from their home vacations back into the Reich, apart from the fact that they frequently brought with them further volunteers from their circles of acquaintances and friends, which contributed in an avalanche-like fashion to rapidly increase the number of foreign workers in Germany.

In order to fill millions of free work places, which became vacant by the widening of the war, the employment of millions of foreign workers was required. Reasonable working efficiency could only be achieved if the working conditions for foreign workers were better than in their home countries. The promises made in occupied countries in official German advertisements had to be kept if one wanted to obtain satisfied workers. And that is exactly what happened, as is shown in the testimonies with many details.

### Taking Care of the Foreign Workers

The care of the foreign workers was both in the hands of the DAF (German Labor Front), which made sure that the official promises were kept, and the trustees of the various nationalities, who discussed all occurring difficulties with the authorities and pushed satisfying solutions for their compatriots. The district administrator for work deployment of the DAF for the district Kurhessen, Karl Rulff, explained about this:

*“In case of all positions occupied in my district office, I had the following personnel at my disposal: 1 district administrator for work deployment, 1 district representative for camp care, 1 district representative for community supplies, 1 district cooking instructor, 1 district represen-*

*tative for leisure time activities, 1 legal advisor for foreign workers, 1 district representative for female community camps, also additionally office assistance staff and typists as German co-workers. The foreign liaison offices were occupied as follows: [...] e) district office for east-workers: 1 district liaison man, 1 woman in charge of female east-workers, and 1 German shorthand writer.”* (P.L. 170 Arb. 4)

The larger political goal of the foreign work deployment program was briefly described by *Regierungsrat* Fritz Neidhardt (among others confirmed by K. Knöchel, district office for ethnic questions in the district of Pranken):

*“The circular of the main office for ethnic questions of the Reich’s leadership of the NSDAP [...] contained [...] an instruction for the treatment of foreign workers. This directive decreed that foreign workers—under preservation of the dignity of their own people—shall be treated decently and justly so that they take back good impressions of the German people and its institutions when returning to their home country and informing their compatriots in this sense.”* (P.L. 204 o.Nr.)

Many restricting regulations were quietly ignored, because they burdened the good relationship between foreign workers and the German people; for example, visiting German leisure facilities and the use of German public transportation was soon permitted in wide parts of the Reich.

### The Sauckel Case

Although it certainly would have been advantageous for many party leaders after the war, while they were in allied custody, to blame everything on *Gauleiter* Sauckel, the Plenipotentiary for Labor Deployment (*Generalbevollmächtigter für den Arbeitseinsatz*, GBA), there is not in a single testimony saying anything negative. On the contrary, numerous testimony

		Foreign Workers in the German War Economy 1939 to 1944*					
		1939	1940	1941	1942	1943	1944
Agriculture	Germans	10.732.000	9.684.000	8.939.000	8.969.000	8.743.000	8.460.000
	Foreign Civilians	118.000	412.000	769.000	1.170.000	1.561.000	1.767.000
	POW’s	–	249.000	642.000	759.000	609.000	635.000
	Foreigners Total	118.000	661.000	1.411.000	1.929.000	2.230.000	2.402.000
	Foreigners in % of all Employed	1,1 %	6,4%	13,6%	17,7%	20,3%	22,1%
All Non-Agriculture	Germans	28.382.000	25.207.000	24.273.000	22.568.000	21.324.000	20.144.000
	Foreign Civilians	183.000	391.000	984.000	1.475.000	3.276.000	3.528.000
	POW’s	–	99.000	674.000	730.000	954.000	1.196.000
	Foreigners Total	183.000	490.000	1.659.000	2.205.000	4.230.000	4.724.000
	Foreigners in % of all Employed	0,6%	1,9%	6,4%	8,9%	16,5%	18,9%
Overall Economy	Germans	39.114.000	34.891.000	33.212.000	31.537.000	30.067.000	28.604.000
	Foreign Civilians	301.000	803.000	1.751.000	2.645.000	4.837.000	5.295.000
	POW’s	–	348.000	1.316.000	1.489.000	1.623.000	1.831.000
	Foreigners Total	301.000	1.151.000	3.069.000	4.134.000	6.460.000	7.126.000
	Foreigners in % of all Employed	0,8%	3,2%	8,5%	11,6 %	17,7%	19,9%

\* Klaus Barwig, Günter Saathoff, Nicole Weyde (ed.), *Entschädigung für NS-Zwangsarbeit*, Baden Baden 1998, p. 337; the title of the table in this book is both typical and false: “Forced Labor of German Prisoners of War and Civil Deportees[sic!]”

stressed that Sauckel constantly intervened to improve accommodations and provisions for foreign workers and that he threatened with severe punishments should foreign workers be mistreated. The testimony of Landrat Recknagel from Schmalkalden may be seen as representative for many other statements:

*"After Gauleiter Sauckel became GBA, during all official meetings in Weimar, where all office leaders and district officials as well as higher government officials were present, he made it compulsory that foreign workers are always treated and accommodated decently, and he demanded to immediately interfere against injustice or, if no remedy was possible, to inform him instantly so that he could interfere. When the east-workers arrived in large numbers, he declared during one meeting that east-workers,*

*who had committed a misdemeanor, must not be beaten under any circumstance, but that the concerned must be handed over to the police for an investigation. For every case of beating a foreign worker that came to his knowledge, he would demand the most severe punishment of those responsible for this mistreatment."* (P.L. 173 Arb. 828)

Only because of these measures, the recruitment of foreign workers from German occupied countries was such a success that at the end of the war there were more workers from abroad working in the Reich than there are foreigners in Germany today. It is indisputable that Sauckel was innocent; from today's perspective, his execution in Nuremberg clearly was a political murder, and his posthumous rehabilitation by the responsible powers should be a matter of course—similar to the abolition of unjust judgments of the Soviet Union in today's Russia.

Ausl

Arb. 21 CIE 91 DARMSTADT III den 10. Juni 1946

### Eidesstattliche Erklärung

Ich, der Unterzeichnete: WAGNER Wilhelm (Name) (Vorname)

Int. Nr. 5 183105 Beruf: Professor f. Chirurgie letzter Wohnort: Halle/Saale

erkläre, auf die Bedeutung einer eidesstattlichen Erklärung hingewiesen, an Eidesstatt was folgt:

Es ist mir bekannt, daß die Abgabe einer falschen eidesstattlichen Erklärung strafbar ist und daß diese Erklärung beim Internationalen Militärgerichtshof in Nürnberg vorgelegt werden soll.

I. Ich war von 1935-1945 Gaudozentenführer an der Universität Halle (Gau Halle-Merseburg) und bin in meiner Eigenschaft als Direktor der Chirurg. Univ. Klinik oft mit kranken und verletzten ausländischen Zivilarbeitern- u. Arbeiterinnen in Berührung gekommen. Diese wurden in dergleichen Weise wie deutsche Kranke, ja ohne Trennung von diesen und unter Anwendung aller diagnostischen und therapeutischen Möglichkeiten untersucht, untergebracht, versorgt und behandelt. Schwierigere operative Eingriffe wurden auch an Ausländern von mir selbst ausgeführt. Diese unterschiedslose Behandlung ist bei der Entlassung fast von jedem Ausländer anerkannt worden.

II. Um die graduierten Ausländer (Hochschulabschluß), die an Instituten der Universität, der Industrie und Wirtschaft zur Arbeit eingesetzt waren, haben sich Mitglieder des Dozentenbundes besonders bemüht. Diese Ausländer galten als gleichberechtigte Mitarbeiter und waren fast stets in die Institutsgemeinschaft mit eingeschlossen. In der Freizeit erfolgten gemeinsam Theater-, Konzert- und Kinobesuche mit deutschen Assistenten und Dozenten. Mehrfach habe ich in meinem Haus Ausländerabende mit musikalischen und künstlerischen Darbietungen veranstaltet, woran zur Hälfte Deutsche und Ausländer teilnahmen. An diesen Abenden nahmen neben den Angehörigen von 9-10 Nationen Parteigenossen und Nichtparteiengenossen teil. Auch darüberhinaus haben die in Halle und Umgebung tätigen graduierten Ausländer von dem Auslandsamt der Dozentschaft und von mir persönlich jede nur mögliche Unterstützung und Hilfe erfahren, was in Dankbriefen und Aufmerksamkeiten Anerkennung fand.

Als Zeugen zu I. nenne ich außer Ärzten und Schwestern meiner Klinik den damals in Halle/Saale, Schillerstr. 42 wohnhaften Lerguis Charles de ~~W...~~, 2nd Lieutenant, Trush off. of England u. USA, zu II. Prof. Ratschow, Halle, Leiter des Auslandsamtes der Dozentschaft und andere Dozenten.

Hier vorstehende "Eidesstattliche Erklärung" wurde nach ordnungsmäßiger Vereidigung von mir wiederholt und nochmals unterschrieben.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 10 day of June 1946

Prof. Wilhelm Wagner  
I (MARTIN H. WEIK) SECRETARY  
MARTIN H. WEIK  
12th St. INF.

15 JUN 1946

### Competing Foreign Workers

Although during wartime it became very difficult for companies especially in German cities to ensure suitable accommodations for the foreign workers as a result of the destruction of residences by the allied carpet bombings, the results of the joint efforts by the German authorities and company managements was astounding. Apart from a small fraction of workers who lived in private residences, most foreigners lived in barracks, which were established according to the camp-instructions of the Reich's labor minister of July 14, 1942. The district labor deployment administrator of that time, Karl Rulff, explained:

*"Despite some lack of material, the companies upgrade their camps in many cases better and more beautiful" than was prescribed by official directives. "A large part of the foreign workers was accommodated in huge camp complexes, for example in camp 'Herzog,' Hess. Lichtenau, about 2,000 workers—Germans and foreigners—resided in clean, first class rooms with bed and living rooms, large community and eating hall with canteen, theater and radio. A woman camp 'Waldof,' Hess. Lichtenau, for about 1,000 German and French women had the same arrangements. Camp 'Steimbel,' Neustadt, District Marburg, accommodated 1,400 foreign and German workers. There were similar accommodations, including an eating hall where everybody ate together, including the navy units which were stationed there. A large hall with a*

Declaration under Oath by Prof. Wilhelm Wagner (KV-Verf., P.L. 170). This is one example of the more than 15,000 affidavits assuring that foreign workers were treated decently in Germany during WWII.

stage was also available for running events. It was one of the most beautiful and largest halls in the district of Kurhessen. But also the barrack camps were often real treasure trunks." (P.L. 170 Arb. 4)

Several testimonies mention a camp contest, during which a prize for the most beautiful camp of the district and its areas was awarded on an annual basis. DAF-employee Walter Lotze in Thuringia reported:

"The camp of Zellwolle A.G. Schwarza—'Schwarza-Pearl in Schwarzburg,' could almost be compared with a vacation home, and the prize which the camp for east-workers 'Iwan' in Erfurt (Fa. BEM-Erfurt) received was a holiday for its foreign workers, who in return expressed their gratitude by giving presents to the camp leader and company supervisors." (P.L. 170 Arb. 3)

When camps were destroyed through air raids, government officials and the management of the firms, together with the foreign workers, tried to build new accommodations as fast as possible and to replace the goods lost by their workers. The gratefulness of those foreign workers was also expressed when they organized occasional collections for the National Socialist

People's Welfare (*Nationalsozialistischen Volkswohlfahrt, NSV*), which were handed considerable amounts.

### Food Rations

Concerning food rationing, foreign workers were basically equal to German workers, which lead in many cases to jealousy among the German population because the average German consumer did not obtain extra allocations, which foreign workers received due to special assignments. It is therefore not surprising that the German population noticed the well-nourished appearances of foreign workers who had been working in Germany for a while, a fact which must have been well known to the enemy as well through their spies. The firms attempted to give their workers additional food, which was often to a considerable extent successful in spite of official restrictions.

The situation of foreign workers in rural areas was of course especially good in this regard if they were assigned to farms, where they were rated as self-supporters, which means that they were much better fed than normal consumers. Especially in rural areas, efforts for good provisioning of foreign workers some-

Foreign Civilian Workers and POW's according to Nationality and Sector of Economic, Aug. 1944\*

Nationality		Agriculture	Mining	Metal	Chemistry	Construction	Traffic	Total
Belgians	total	28.652	5.146	95.872	14.029	20.906	12.576	253.648
	Civilian Workers	3.948	2.787	86.441	13.533	19.349	11.585	203.262
	POW's	24.704	2.629	9.431	496	1.557	991	50.386
	in % all Belgians	11,2%	2,0%	37,8%	5,5%	8,2%	4,9%	100%
French	total	405.897	21.844	370.766	48.319	59.440	48.700	1.254.749
	Civilian Workers	54.590	7.780	292.800	39.417	36.237	34.905	654.782
	POW's	351.307	14.064	77.966	8.902	23.203	13.795	599.967
	in % all French	32,3%	1,7%	29,5%	3,9%	4,7%	3,9%	100%
Italians	total	45.288	50.325	221.304	35.276	80.814	35.319	585.337
	Civilian Workers	15.372	6.641	41.316	10.791	35.271	5.507	158.099
	POW's	29.916	43.694	179.988	24.485	45.543	29.812	427.238
	in % all Italians	7,7%	8,6%	37,8%	6,0%	13,8%	6,0%	100%
Dutch	Civilian Workers	22.092	4.745	87.482	9.658	32.025	18.356	270.304
	in % all Dutch	8,2%	1,8%	32,4%	3,5%	11,9 %	6,8%	100%
Soviets	total	862.062	252.848	883.419	92.952	110.289	205.325	2.758.312
	Civilian Workers	723.646	92.950	752.714	84.974	77.991	158.024	2.126.753
	POW's	138.416	159.898	130.705	7.978	32.298	47.301	631.359
	in % all Soviets	28,5%	8,3%	29,2%	3,7%	3,6%	6,8%	100%
Poles	total	1.125.632	55.672	130.905	23.871	68.428	35.746	1.688.080
	Civilian Workers	1.105.719	55.005	128.556	22.911	67.601	35.484	1.659.764
	POW's	19.913	667	2.349	960	827	262	28.316
	in % all Poles	66,7%	3,3%	7,5%	1,4%	4,1%	2,1%	100%
Czechs	Civilian Workers	10.289	13.413	80.349	10.192	44.870	18.566	280.273
	in % all Czechs	3,7%	4,8%	28,7%	3,6%	16,0%	6,6%	100%
Total		2.747.238	433.790	1.691.329	252.068	478.057	378.027	7.615.970
	Civilian Workers	2.061.066	196.782	1.397.920	206.741	349.079	277.579	5.721.883
	POW's	686.172	237.008	293.409	45.327	128.978	100.448	1.930.087
	in %	36,1%	5,7%	22,2%	3,3%	6,3%	5,0%	100%

\* Klaus Barwig, Günter Saathoff, Nicole Weyde (ed.), *Entschädigung für NS-Zwangsarbeit*, Baden Baden 1998, p. 339

times resulted in odd excesses, when farmers had an ambition to ensure that ‘their’ foreign workers fared best within the village.

Contrary to the allegations of Prof. Herbert, east-workers in the Third Reich usually arrived in pitifully bad conditions, ragged, shabby, and poorly nourished, as is reported in the quoted testimonies over and over again, and they had to be nursed back first for several weeks before they could be reasonably employed. Workshop supervisor Wolf from the district Hammelburg describes the changes:

*“[...] thus, within a short period of time, the picture was quite different. Everyone gave clothes and shoes—myself also—and soon these fellows and girls could no longer be distinguished from the village youth. The girls either got urchin cuts or had their hair crimped.”* (P.L. 174 Arb. 1015)

Insufficient clothes, especially those of east-workers and Poles, were complemented by old clothes collected by local groups, companies, and private citizens. This was confirmed by mayor Slanina of the district of Rothenburg, among others, about a small town in Lower Silesia:

*“[...] As the leader of the district economy office of the district of Rothenburg I confirm also that large quantities of clothes and underwear from collections were given to the employed foreign workers.”* (P.L. 170 Arb. 1017)

## Wages

Foreign workers received the same wage for their work as their German colleagues, including all extra payments like separation pay and vacation pay as well as reimbursement of travel cost. When in some cases wages paid to foreigners in agriculture were somewhat lower than those paid to Germans, this was adjusted through additional benefits, like presents. Especially in rural areas, it turned out to be impossible to implement the initially existing reduced wages for Poles and eastern workers, similar as most companies operated according to the motto ‘equal wage for equal work.’ Thus, through their diligence in piece-work, many foreign workers earned more than German workers. By so doing, they pedantically obeyed the regulations of their recruitment contracts. In one case, for example, Dutch workers received higher wages than the Germans, as accredited engineer Paul-Hans Bonhagen described:

*“The Dutchmen were originally contracted to Wilhelmshaven, where a higher wage-rate was paid. When they were employed elsewhere, they kept the pay for which they had contracted.”* (P.L. 174 Arb. 1199)

A large part of the foreign workers transferred their wage in part or completely to their families abroad. The legal consultant Gössel explained:

*“The DAF always made sure that foreign workers regularly transferred certain amounts of money to their families at home. [...] Polish workers came regularly on Sundays in large numbers from the city and district of Hersfeld by railroad, bicycle, or by foot to Hersfeld for church service without being hindered.”* (P.L. 170 Arb.6)

The model character of the treatment and support of foreign workers in the Third Reich does not only emerge from the amount of existing testimony, documents, and photos, but even more so from the fact that in those few cases, where shortcomings were recognized, effective remedies were implemented

very quickly. The principal merit for this admirable performance is due to the DAF (German Labor Front), which, with great commitment and based on its experience gained during the years of peace, performed this gigantic task exceptionally well. In the existing documentation, no trace can be found of an alleged ‘master-race’ thinking, as the victors accused the Germans after the war, but a general social sensitivity in order make it easier for those foreigners to adjust to their new way of living. That still today these facts are stronger than the victor’s political propaganda, can be derived when former foreign workers revisit Germany, or when one gets a chance to talk to them abroad. For instance, a pharmacist from Aalen informed this author how he, in 1998 in Taganrog (Black Sea, Russia), was suddenly addressed by an unknown person who identified him as a German, based on an overheard conversation, and enthusiastically raved about his time as a foreign worker in Aachen during the war.

## Vacation, Health Care, Leisure Activities

The foreigners’ mail exchange with their home countries, their vacation trips, and last but not least their considerable possessions, which they proudly presented at home, ensured that contradicting propaganda by resistance fighters was generally ignored in the German occupied areas, especially in the far east, where the population knew how to assess the extent of the false propaganda of the Soviets. Until the end of the war, the announcement of special trains for foreign vacationers at the offices of the DAF was more convincing than the enemy propaganda.

When today Jewish professor Fritz Stern phantazises without proof about “almost 6 million murdered forced laborers” (*Deutsche National-Zeitung*, May 7, 1999), then this has nothing to do with reality. Numerous testimonies pointed out the severe penalties which were imposed by the German government upon those who transgressed against foreign workers. The commercial employee Gehlen reported for example about such a case in the company *Rheinmetall* in Sömmerda, where a warehouse supervisor and a shop foreman, who had beaten foreigners, were punished on March 17, 1943, with 5 and 2½ years imprisonment respectively, loss of honor, and expulsion from the NSDAP. Death cases of foreign workers, which were lower than the German civilian average, were usually caused by air raids, accidents, or severe illnesses.

It should also be mentioned that the medical care for foreign workers was the same as that enjoyed by the German population. During child delivery, pregnant foreign women received the same social benefits as German women.

It is surprising to read reports about leisure activities of foreign workers, which describe artistic and other events in detail, as they were performed by the DAF through a “*Kraft-durch-Freude*” program (strength through joy). Groups of artists from German occupied countries were contracted to offer their compatriots a cultural program in their own language. At times of war economy, goods, which were otherwise no longer available, were still distributed to those groups. The DAF employee Karl Carius confirmed such efforts:

*“I want to mention that I, among others, had the following musical instruments manufactured and distributed only*

to foreign workers: 5,000 guitars, 5,000 mandolins, 5,000 balalaikas, 200—300 violins.” (P.L. 170 Arb. 2)

This concerned the welfare office of the DAF in Berlin.

What is also forgotten in today’s descriptions—beyond those absurd assertions about the allegedly bad situation of the foreign workers at that time—is the immediate benefit which foreign workers received for their future life through their often expensive training in German factories.

When disregarding the minor daily irritations, especially when considering the difficult situation caused for the German economy during the war, one has to conclude that already in

those years a sense of a common destiny developed. This feeling was not formed by hate, but by mutual understanding and respect, by working together peacefully for years. This was also an essential part, which helped to establish today’s European Community.

---

First published in German as “Fremdarbeiter im Dritten Reich” in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 3(4) (1999), pp. 363-372. Translated by Fabian Eschen.

## Partisan War and Reprisal Killings

An attempt to organize German reprisals during the military campaign against the USSR

By Dipl.-Chem. Gernar Rudolf and Sibylle Schröder

Since the publication of Daniel Goldhagen’s book *Hitler’s Willing Executioners* and the general attention, which the Anti-Wehrmacht propaganda exhibition received in Germany,<sup>1</sup> the center of gravity of the discussion about the ‘Holocaust’ has changed. At least today the attention is directed less intensively to the alleged high-tech mass murder in “homicidal gas chambers,” which are in every regard still totally inconceivable even today, but considerably more to the actual or only claimed mass murder behind the eastern front, allegedly committed above all, but not exclusively, by the so called *Einsatzgruppen* and committed especially, but not only, against Jews residing in the then Soviet Union. Opinions about this subject vary widely within historical revisionism from positions, which are not very different from the established opinion, to those who deny such mass murders completely. The following article tries to summarize the current knowledge from one revisionist viewpoint, which revised exaggerated claims of mass murder and brings the issue into the context of wartime reprisals—and reprisal excesses—against illegal partisans. We hope that this may trigger a vivid discussion and a start into further, more detailed research into this field.

---

### Allied Reprisals against Germans

German newspapers rarely carry articles about reprisals threatened or implemented by the western Allies at or after the end of the war. However, the *Stuttgarter Zeitung*, for example, reported that the French had threatened reprisal executions at a ratio of 1:25 even in the event that shots would be taken at their soldiers at all, regardless of the actual outcome.<sup>2</sup> On April 4, 1992, the *Paderborner Zeitung* reported an incident where the Americans had taken harsh revenge for the death of their General Maurice Rose, who had been shot in regular combat: 110 German men not involved in the event were killed.<sup>3</sup> Probably there are a great many more such examples, where harsh reprisals or unlawful acts of revenge were inflicted on the German population. We know very little today about conditions prevailing from 1945 to 1947, especially in West Germany, since these actions on the part of the victors were never prosecuted. The Germans were forbidden to prosecute because of a law that is still in effect today, and the victors, naturally enough, had no particular interest in such prosecution.<sup>4</sup> The fact that East and Central Germany saw some dreadful excesses is somewhat more fully documented, on the other hand, since this was in the interests of the anti-Communist western powers.

---

### The Partisan War in the East 1941-1944

Dr. jur. Karl Siegert, Professor at the University of Göttingen, drew up a legal expert report shortly after the end of World War Two, in which he showed that reprisal killings were, to a certain degree, common practice and not against international law.<sup>5</sup> Hence, reprisals and shootings of hostages can be considered as tactically questionable and possibly as morally reprehensible, but strictly speaking this was not against the law at that time. This should always be kept in mind when the topic at issue is the reactions of German troops in Russia and Serbia, *i.e.*, in vast regions where a weak occupation power had to battle brutal partisans in order to facilitate the oft-disrupted flow of supplies to the eastern front. Partisan attacks began immediately following the start of the eastern war; certain partisan units deliberately let themselves be overrun, in order then to engage in sabotage behind the advancing German troops and to commit horrific atrocities against soldiers and civilians they caught unaware. Later on, partisan units as large as entire divisions were flown into the hinterland of the German troops, or smuggled in through the lines.<sup>6</sup>

Naturally, the data to be found in the subject literature about the numbers of partisans and the damage they caused vary

widely, since there are few reliable documents about this kind of unlawful warfare and since the Soviet Union also always had a strong propagandistic interest in the historiography of partisan warfare. The most reliable data seems to be that provided by Bernd Bonwetsch,<sup>7</sup> who gives the numbers of partisans as follows: late 1941: 90,000; early 1942: 80,000; mid-1942: 150,000; spring 1943: 280,000; by 1944, skyrocketing to approximately half a million. These figures are based both on Soviet and on contemporaneous Reich-German sources. The damage done by the partisans, especially in the area of Byelorussia, is considerably more difficult to quantify. Wilenchik tells of impressive quantities of weapons and ammunition that were allegedly at the partisans' disposal, as well as of extensive crippling of the German supply lines through paralysis of railway lines, especially in 1944.<sup>8</sup> In general terms, this is confirmed by Werner.<sup>9</sup>

Regarding the numbers of German soldiers and civilians killed by partisans, Bonwetsch contrasts the claims from Soviet sources—up to 1.5 million—with those from the German side: 35,000 to 45,000,<sup>10</sup> which he considers to be more reliable, since allegedly the German sources would have had no reason to minimize the figures. However, he overlooks the fact that it is generally customary in war to downplay one's own losses. Seidler<sup>11</sup> recently published a balanced up-to-date study about the Wehrmacht's struggle in the partisan warfare, showing not only the disastrous and probably decisive effects of the partisan's attacks against German units and especially their supplies, but he proves also that most of the German reactions were totally covered by international law—although not always most far-sighted. Furthermore, he shows that those orders from higher up which broke international laws (e.g., the infamous “Kommissar order”, which might be considered morally appropriate, but politically stupid and judicially untenable) were in most cases sabotaged by the front units, and that these orders, after long-lasting and massive protest, were eventually revoked.

In a book critically discussed by the renowned German historians Andreas Hillgruber and Hans-Adolf Jacobsen, Boris Semionovich Telpuchowsky writes:

*“Within three years of the war, the Byelorussian partisans eliminated approximately 500,000 German soldiers and officers, 47 Generals, blew up 17,000 enemy military transports and 32 armored trains, destroyed 300,000 rail-*

*way tracks, 16,804 vehicles and a great number of other material supplies of all kinds.”<sup>12</sup>*

The data also diverge greatly regarding the personnel (and concomitant costs) involved in the Germans' efforts to maintain security behind the frontlines: 300,000 to 600,000 persons were needed according to Soviet sources, vs. roughly 190,000 according to German sources.<sup>10</sup>

To what degree these data were inflated in order to glorify the partisans is not known, but there is no doubt that the policy of *scorched earth*<sup>13</sup> practiced by the Red Army in their retreat in 1941-42, together with the acts of sabotage and murder by

the partisans, were the major contributing factors in the defeat of the German army in the East. The brutality with which the Red Army and especially the partisans fought, right from the start of the war and on orders from the highest echelons, was described vividly by J. Hoffmann,<sup>14</sup> for example, and again recently by A.E. Epifanow<sup>15</sup> and Franz W. Seidler<sup>16</sup>; A.M. de Zayas, in his study of the Wehrmacht War Crimes Bureau, also confirmed and corroborated much of the material which the Reich government had already collected even in those days to document the atrocities committed by not only the Red Army.<sup>17</sup> De Zayas also reports that the German wartime leaders did not resort to reprisals as a standard matter of course, but rather for the most part after carefully weighing the pros and cons. Especially in Russia, however, this could not prevent the fact that lower-ranking units, acting on the basis of their own experiences with the Soviet manner of warfare, engaged in reprisals (and revenge) not ordered or approved by higher ranks.<sup>18</sup> Finally, it must be noted that since July 1943 both the German army and the SS agreed to treat partisans like regular combatants, which meant for example that they would not be executed if captured, which was permitted by international law and common practice, but that they would be treated as normal POWs.<sup>19</sup> This is a measure whose generosity and humanity is, to my knowledge, unheard of anywhere in world history.

As we know today, the German Wehrmacht deployed in the East fought not only for the survival of the Third Reich, but after they abandoned all illusions of imperialism, they also fought for the freedom of all of Europe from Stalinism,<sup>20</sup> and therefore, in light of Prof. Siegert's findings, we must observe that there was nothing unlawful and very little immoral about the merciless battle of the German security forces against unlawful



*Professor Franz W. Seidler from the University of Munich is one of the few historians who try to keep a balanced view on the events of World War Two and opposes in a very scholarly way. His book on the Wehrmacht in its war against partisans is an excellent example of a thorough refutation of many myths. Castle Hill Publishers will try to publish several of Prof. Seidler's books in English editions over the next years. Translators working for fair prices as well as financial support for these projects are more than welcome. Please get in touch with us.*

Soviet partisans, even if that battle did involve draconic reprisals. If the official Soviet information about the numbers of German soldiers and/or their allies killed by partisans should be accurate, then it must be noted that reprisal killings of several millions of people (ratio 1:10) would have been *theoretically* justified. But even the numbers given by German authorities (some 40,000 victims) could have resulted theoretically in reprisal killings of about 400,000 civilians. It goes without saying that such numbers are horrific, and we can just be thankful that reprisal killings are forbidden nowadays and hope that the law will be observed. We must, however, ask whether such killings actually took place in those days.

### Einsatzgruppen for the Fight against Partisans.

The so-called *Einsatzgruppen of the Security Police and the SD (Security Service)* were among others the units in charge of combating the partisans.<sup>21</sup> They started with not more than 4,000 men in summer 1941, but at the end of 1942 up to 15,000 Germans and 240,000 natives were involved,<sup>22</sup> an increase of manpower which indicates very well the parallel increase of partisan warfare at that time. Considering their relatively unsuccessful efforts at curbing partisan activity, we must note that these initially numerically weak troops were obviously entirely overwhelmed by their task of policing the enormous region (many hundred thousands of square kilometers), which they were in charge of and whose more remote areas were increasingly under the control of partisans.<sup>23</sup> Thus it appears a bit ridiculous when H. Höhne states:<sup>24</sup>

*“Heydrich’s Death envoys started their cruel adventure: 3,000 men were hunting Russia’s five million Jews.”*

Höhne omits to say that at the same time these troops were fighting against some 100,000 partisans. The allegations made against these troops today—namely, that, aside from their hopeless battle against the partisans, they also cooperated with many Wehrmacht soldiers to kill several million Jews as part of the Final Solution—beg the comment that, as Gerald Reitlinger says, this is absolutely unbelievable.<sup>25</sup>

As documentary evidence for the number of Jews shot by the *Einsatzgruppen* behind the Russian front, the so-called event reports (*Ereignisberichte*) are frequently quoted. These reports are said to have been prepared by the *Einsatzgruppen*, who also supposedly sent them to Berlin, where these documents were found after the war. One of the most well-known experts on the subject of *Einsatzgruppen*, however, Hans-Heinrich Wilhelm,<sup>26</sup> stated as early as in 1988 that he is not certain whether or not the event reports are correct. Because he could show that the statistics in these reports about the number of murdered Jews are unreliable, he warned his colleagues as follows:<sup>27</sup>

*“When the reliability [of these reports] in non-statistically areas is not greater, which can only be verified by comparing them with other sources from the same region, historical research would be well advised to be much more suspicious in future than it was so far when using any SS-sources.”*

This remark was only consequential, since he did express similar doubts about the reliability of these documents already in his first book, when he speculated:<sup>28</sup>

*“that here as well at least several ten thousand exterminated Jews were added to the report in order to ‘improve’ it, which was otherwise thought to be hardly justifiable, because the number of killed partisans was far too low.”*

Elsewhere he noted that one of the event reports of the *Einsatzgruppen* was evidently manipulated by adding a zero to 1,134, thus turning the total to 11,034.<sup>29</sup> The forgers—this is what we deal with here—evidently had an interest in suggesting victim counts as high as possible. In case the *Einsatzgruppen* were the forgers, then one would assume that they believed that somebody in Berlin desired to see as many Jews murdered as possible. But what if someone else was the forger?



*Partisans prepare to blow up a railway track leading from the West to Moscow: The delay and destruction of supplies results in the death of ten thousands of German Soldiers.*

### The Problem of the Event Reports in the Case of “Babi Yar”

Babi Yar is the name of an erosion ditch system in the vicinity of the Ukrainian city of Kyiv. After German troops had conquered Kyiv in September 1941, 33,771 Jews (men, women, and children) were allegedly shot in Babi Yar on September 29 and 30.

Sources for this are the *Ereignismeldungen* and *Tätigkeits- und Lageberichte* (action- and situation reports) of the *Einsatzgruppen*, as well as witness testimonies. Especially important is the Event Report No. 6, report time Sept. 1 to 31, 1941.<sup>30</sup> It states:

*“The bitterness of the Ukrainian population against the Jews is exceedingly high, because they are blamed for the dynamiting of Kyiv. They are also considered the informer and agents of the NKVD, who are responsible for the terror against the Ukrainian people. All Jews were arrested as reprisal for the arson in Kyiv and a total of 33,771 Jews were executed on September 29 and 30. Money, valuables, and clothing were secured and made available to the NSV<sup>31</sup> for the provision of local German civilians and also partly to the temporary city administration to help needy residents.”*

#### 1. DYNAMITINGS IN KYIV

At this point, a few explanations from established sources are necessary about the dynamiting mentioned in the above *Tätigkeits- und Lagebericht*. Wilhelm writes about this event:

*“When in the week after the occupation [of Kyiv] several explosions caused considerable personal and material*

damages, this was immediately used as a welcome pretext for ‘corresponding retaliatory measures’ [...]”<sup>32</sup>

Gerald Reitlinger explains:

“On the 24<sup>th</sup> [September 1941], an enormous explosion destroyed the Hotel Continental, in which the military command of the Sixth Army was stationed. The fire spread quickly, and Blobel, who had arrived on the 21<sup>st</sup>, had to vacate his offices. 25,000 people lost their homes, and hundreds of German soldiers were killed, mostly while attempting to extinguish the flames.”<sup>33</sup>

German General Alfred Jodl commented about this in Nuremberg before the IMT (June 4, 1946):<sup>34</sup>

“Shortly before that, Kyiv had been abandoned by the Russian armies, and we had barely occupied the town when one detonation after the other occurred. The larger part of the inner city burned down. 50,000 people lost their homes. We had considerable losses, because during this fire further huge explosives blew up. The local commandant of Kyiv first thought of sabotage by local residents until we captured a detonation chart. This chart listed about 50 or 60 objects of Kyiv, which had been prepared for a long time to be blown up. This was also verified right away by the results of investigations by our pioneers. There were at least 40 such objects ready to be blasted, and most of the detonations were to be ignited remotely through radio signals.”

## 2. RETALIATORY ACTION

It is therefore established that not only the inner city of Kyiv burn down as a result of these detonations—with corresponding losses of the local population—but also that the German troops lost hundreds of soldiers and almost their entire military leadership staff. Both the city’s military commandant as well as the Ukrainian population first thought of sabotage. Reprisal shootings for such partisan attacks would have been the normal—and justified—reaction during wartime. Hence, these attacks did not serve “as a pretext,” as Krausnick put it.

According to the event report 97 of September 28, 1941, a “public execution of 20 Jews” was planned.<sup>35</sup> In the following reports no. 98 (Sept. 29), 99 (Sept. 30) and 100 (Oct. 1)—exactly on those days when the executions were to have occurred—no references to such executions can be found.

Only the event reports no. 101 of October 2 and no. 106 of October 7 report of the alleged execution of 33,771 Jews. The description by Krausnick/Wilhelm is not quite clear.<sup>36</sup> They do not quote these event reports—something which should be at least expected for the proof of about 34,000 murders—but a quotation from an essay by Alfred Streim of the year 1972.<sup>37</sup> Why did they not use the original text of these event reports—if they exist at all? The conspicuous unclear note “ibid.” in Krausnick,<sup>38</sup> which may refer to event report no. 101 as well as event report no. 106, cannot be considered sufficient in this case as proof for 33,771 murders.

The question whether or not the report about 33,771 shootings can be found in event report no. 101 or in event report no. 106 is not answered uniformly in the literature, which is an indication that none of the authors really checked out the sources, but that one copies always from the other. Hilberg is for event report no. 101,<sup>39</sup> also Klee/Dreßen/Rieß,<sup>40</sup> Reitlinger decided

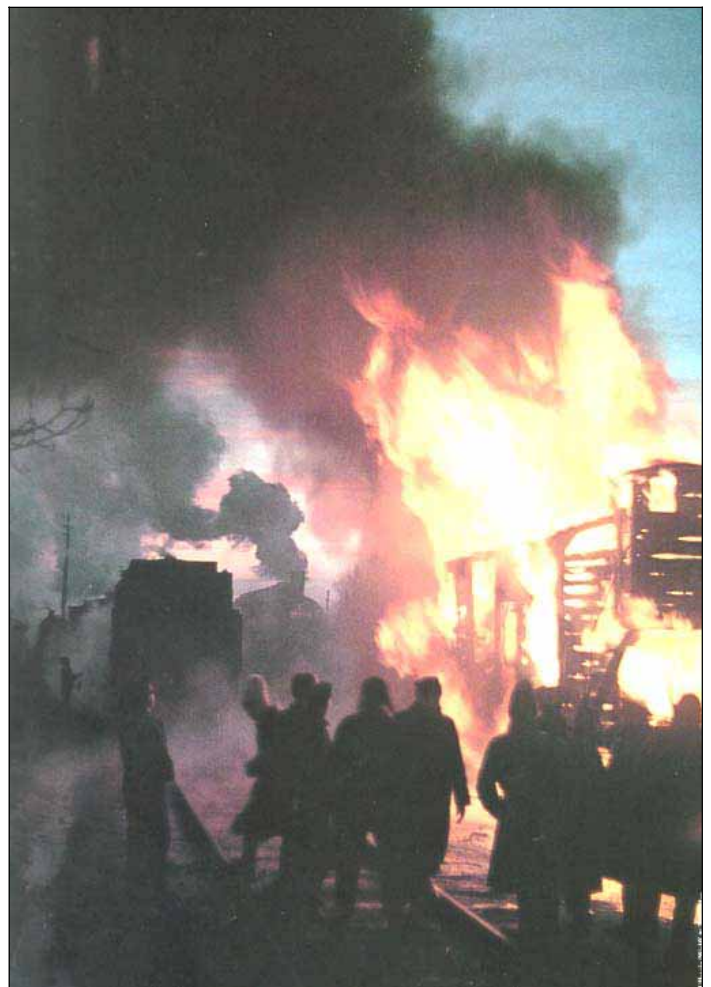
for event report no. 106,<sup>41</sup> as does Streim, to whom Krausnick referred.<sup>42</sup> By the way, Streim distanced himself completely from quoting an event report in a later work, but mentions as the only source the *Tätigkeits- und Lagebericht Nr. 6* (Activity- and Situation Report no. 6).<sup>43</sup> Krausnick refers also to this *Tätigkeits- und Lagebericht Nr. 6* for the month of October 1941.

That an event report, which among others lists individual arrests and shootings, does not report the execution of 33,771 Jews, is hard to believe, but that seems to be exactly the case.

## 3. SOURCE VALUE AND TRUTH OF THE EVENT REPORTS

The work by Krausnick/Wilhelm is the first and only thorough study about the activity of the *Einsatzgruppen*. The authors used as the main source for their work the *Ereignismeldungen UdSSR* (Event Reports USSR).<sup>44</sup> These event reports are only one part of a group of documents, which is labeled as follows:

1. “Ereignismeldungen UdSSR des Chefs der Sicherheitspolizei und des SD” (Event Reports USSR of the Chief of the Security Police and the SD) for the period from June 23, 1941, to April 24, 1942. 194 documents survived from a total of 195.
2. “Meldungen aus den besetzten Ostgebieten vom Chef der Sicherheitspolizei und des SD-Kommandostab” (Reports



*Burning German supply train in the Soviet Union.*



from the occupied eastern territories by the Chief of the Security Police and the SD command staff) for the time period of May 1, 1942, to May 21, 1943—there are 55 reports.

3. “Tätigkeits- und Lageberichte der Einsatzgruppen der Sicherheitspolizei und des SD in der UdSSR” (Activity- and Situation Reports of the Security Police and the SD in the USSR.)<sup>45</sup>

Hans-Heinrich Wilhelm declared the following about the “event reports USSR as a historic source:”<sup>46</sup>

*“These reports were received always several days later, and not three times daily or at least daily, as with military communications. Trained personnel for the preparation of these reports was not everywhere available. For the transmission via radio and telex, mostly third parties, like military units, had to be used, which caused bothersome problems due to the frequent change in location. Furthermore, the ‘reporting discipline’ was simply bad, and this did not change, no matter how much Heydrich fulminated. The simplest rules were not followed. For example, exact information like when and where a reported event occurred were quite frequently missing, which was unthinkable for a military report. Or the editor of the ‘event reports,’ who could always check back with the original notifications when in doubt, forgot to include the data from the message header into the text body, when the data received via telex was dictated to a typist, and those typed reports were left unchecked for misunderstandings and typos. Because the Einsatzgruppen and Kommandos worked at different speeds, messages frequently crossed each other or were frequently left unattended for extended periods of time because of their excessive length and low priority, some events were not only once or twice, but several times transmitted, and occasionally a backup message was sent days or weeks afterwards, it is not surprising that the editor at the RSHA<sup>[47]</sup> mixed up the chronology of events. It seems that they themselves could hardly keep an overview. Very soon, these reports were not complete anymore either. This impression quickly results when comparing, for example, the interim balances about the killing of Jews of some Einsatzkommandos, which came in on a fortnightly basis, with the corresponding individual reports about completed actions.”*

The last sentence could be an attempt of an explanation, why, for example, there is evidently no event report about the alleged shooting of 33,771 Jews in Kyiv (Babi Yar)—in case that there really is no such an event report—but only a mention of the execution in the “Tätigkeits- und Lagebericht Nr. 6”.

The opinion that there does not exist an event report about these shootings is backed by the explanations of Alfred Streim, which he made

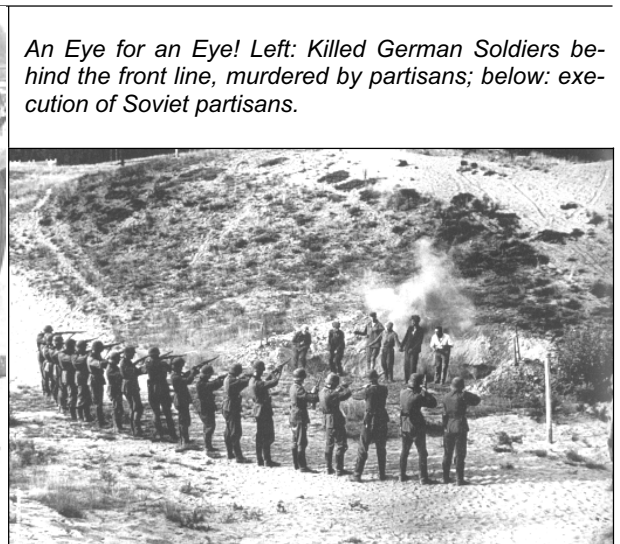
during the Stuttgart Congress from May 3 to 5, 1984, about the subject “The Murder of the European Jews during the Second World War”. While talking about the murders in the Babi Yar ravine, he did not refer to an event report, but to the “summary of the executions”, i.e., to the “Tätigkeits- und Lagebericht”.<sup>37</sup>

The event reports were transmitted from the front via radio or telex to a department of the RSHA in Berlin. The official in charge there, who was responsible for the final written form of the reports—as they exist today—was Dr. Günther Knobloch (born 1910). During a hearing by the Central Office Ludwigsburg in 1959 Knobloch gave the following description about the preparation of the event reports and the Activity- and Situation Reports:<sup>48</sup>

*“From the incoming flood of messages I always marked the interesting parts red and our secretaries knew exactly, in what form to bring these messages. [...] It was important at that time that the messages were quite voluminous. [...] Because of this I saved material from days, when we received many messages, for days with only a few messages. The messages from the individual Kommandos and Groups were always filed under these Kommandos and Groups, and an error can of course not necessarily be ruled out. [...] Practically no changes in content occurred. [...] I would like to add, however, that SS-Gruppenführer Müller [...] frequently made handwritten changes also to the actual content. [...] I also had often the impression that the information contained exaggerated events and numbers.[...]”*

*At some time in the year 1942, we had to summarize the daily event reports in fortnightly reports, and later these were even changed to monthly reports. But it is also possible that the sequence was reverse. These summaries were prepared by me as well. [...] These reports were based exclusively on the daily event reports.”*

The “time in the year 1942” mentioned by Knobloch is either a printing error in the book or Knobloch remembered it wrong, since these *Tätigkeits- und Lageberichte* exist since June 1941, that is since the very beginning of the Russian campaign. The meaning of these summaries, however, is not clear. Why these repetitions in the *Tätigkeits- und Lageberichte*,



An Eye for an Eye! Left: Killed German Soldiers behind the front line, murdered by partisans; below: execution of Soviet partisans.

which actually, as Wilhelm noticed while comparing them with the event reports, were often no repetitions but new reports?

From both Wilhelm's and Knobloch's descriptions the following can be deduced: reports from the front, prepared by non-qualified persons—some of them in double or even multiple versions—were received by the RSHA in Berlin by radio or telex, often with considerable delays. There they were reviewed by Knobloch, important parts highlighted, rewritten by secretaries and sent out unchecked and uncorrected as the final event reports. Later on, after weeks, summaries were prepared from these event reports, to which, however, new data were added while others were deleted on an unknown basis. These summaries were issued as *Tätigkeits- und Lageberichte* (Activity and Situation Reports).

Krausnick and Wilhelm call these reports with their dubious history "authentic" documents. According to the opinion of the same authors, this authenticity is further supported by the following:<sup>49</sup>

1. they were captured by the U.S. units;
2. they were cited in Nuremberg in all relevant trials;
3. no defense lawyer ever seriously attempted to question their authenticity;
4. the editors who were responsible within the RSHA for their preparation as well as numerous recipients of the report at that time did identify them.

Regarding #4, the responsible report editor Knobloch testified the following, when photo copies of these reports were submitted to him in Ludwigsburg:<sup>50</sup>

*"The photocopies of the reports submitted to me can be considered as the event reports issued at that time in regards to their form."*

"in regards to their form"—Knobloch said either nothing about their content or we are not told about it!

Although the above mentioned points made by Krausnick and Wilhelm do in no way prove the authenticity of the submitted documents, they still could be authentic. However the problem in this case is that the events reported in these presumably authentic documents are evidently incongruent with reality, as is clear from the descriptions of Wilhelm and Knobloch.

#### 4. Were 33,771 Jews Murdered?

The question of how many Jews were murdered in those two days in Babi Yar is controversial in the literature. Hilberg writes that "the success of the Kyiv action is difficult to evaluate".<sup>51</sup> According to event report no. 97 of Sept. 9, 1941, 50,000 Jews were intended for the shooting, but then 33,771 were reported. However, Paul Blobel, the leader of the Sonderkommando 4a, which was responsible for executions, maintained later in Nuremberg that no more than 16,000 were shot.<sup>52</sup>

As a matter of fact, event report no. 97 announced also that the city commandant recommended the public execution of 20 Jews.<sup>53</sup> The Soviet document USSR-9, which was submitted during the main trial in Nuremberg, even states that more than 100,000 men, women, children, and elderly people were shot in Babi Yar.<sup>53</sup> This number, however, was not mentioned anywhere else.

The number generally agreed upon seems to be 33,771. Krausnick maintains that this number was "reported several times",<sup>54</sup> namely in an event report, which he does not specify, and in the *Tätigkeits- und Lagebericht* no. 6. This would, of course, mean that this number was not reported several times, but maybe only once, and that it was then repeated in a transcript!

Reitlinger also quotes event reports and action reports, but he confuses their names. When talking about "Activity Reports," he actually refers to event reports and vice versa. He also claims that the number of 33,771 is verified, because the "activity report no. 106 and the event report No. 6 both contain the same number 33,771".<sup>55</sup> Here a transcript of a report is also



*Partisan warfare during the Russian campaign. Similar pictures became well-known in America only after the U.S. Army applied similar tactics during the Vietnam war.*

supposed to confirm the report itself. It is doubtful whether Reitlinger has even seen "event report no. 106," which he mentions only in his text, because if he had, he probably would have quoted the document correctly.

For Wolfgang Benz the "number of the murdered" (33,771) "is also corroborated by testimonies of perpetrators, spectators, and several survivors of the massacre".<sup>56</sup> Herbert Tiedemann reported extensively about the completely chaotic, arbitrary picture, which those alleged 'witnesses' and other reporters

drew about Babi Yar, and he has shown that these testimonies can in no way be accepted as proof for anything.<sup>57</sup>

But how could such a number erroneously slip into the reports? Could multiple reports about the same event and typos have led to it? The exact process of this possible number explosion can probably not be reconstructed.

There is, however, at least *one* example for a similar miracle of numbers in the reports of the *Einsatzgruppen*, which Wilhelm discovered. In a report of the outpost Dünaburg of the Commander of Security Police in Latvia dated Nov. 11, 1941, a number of 1,134 murdered Jews is mentioned. In a summary report of February 1942, the same number was—by typo?—inflated to 11,034.<sup>58</sup> A zero changed one thousand to ten thousand. However, Wilhelm thinks that the latter number is the correct one, because this number is also mentioned in an undated report of Einsatzgruppe A.<sup>59</sup>

In conclusion it can be said that a critical investigation of the documents referred to here has still to be done, not least in order to determine what their exact content is.<sup>60</sup> But based upon

Der Reichsführer-SS	Field-Command Post
Feld-Kommandostelle	December 29, 1942
Objekt: Meldungen an den Führer über Bandenbekämpfung.	Subject: Reports to the Führer about Combat against Bandits.
Meldung Nr. 51	Report No. 61
Ausland-Jüd., Ukraine, Bialystok.	Russia-South, Ukrain, Bialystok.
Bandenbekämpfungserfolge vom 1.9. bis 1.12.1942	Success of Combat against Bandits from Sept. 1 to Dec. 12, 1942
1.) <u>Banditen:</u>	1.) <u>Bandits:</u>
a) festgestellte Tote nach Gefechten (x)	a) Confirmed Deaths after Combats (x)
August: September: Oktober: November: insgesamt:	August: September: October: November: Total:
227 381 427 302 1337	227 381 427 302 1337
b) Gefangene sofort exekutiert	b) Prisoner immediately executed
125 282 87 243 737	125 282 87 243 737
c) Gefangene nach längerer eingehender Vernehmung exekutiert	c) Prisoners executed after thorough interrogation
2100 1400 1596 2731 7828	2100 1400 1596 2731 7828
2.) <u>Bandenhelfer und Bandenverdächtige:</u>	2.) <u>Bandit associates and bandit suspects</u>
a) festgenommen	a) Arrested
1343 3078 8337 3795 16553	1343 3078 8337 3795 16553
b) exekutiert	b) Executed
1198 3020 6333 3706 14257	1198 3020 6333 3706 14257
c) Juden exekutiert	c) Jews executed
31246 165282 95735 70948 363211	31246 165282 95735 70948 363211
3.) <u>Überläufer a.G. deutscher Propaganda:</u>	3.) <u>Renegades because of German Propaganda</u>
21 14 42 63 140	21 14 42 63 140
(x) Da der Russe seine Gefallenen verschleppt bzw. sofort verscharrt, sind die Verlustzahlen auch nach Gefangenaussagen erheblich höher zu bewerten.	(x) Since the Russians carry off or immediately bury their killed soldiers, the losses are much higher, even accord- ing to statements of prisoners.

Report no. 51: No letter head, no reference number, no author, no signature, just ink on paper...<sup>62</sup>

known information about the history and origin of these documents, it can be concluded that the *Ereignismeldungen* (event reports) and the *Tätigkeits- und Lageberichte* (activity and situation reports), even if they are authentic, do—according to scientific standards—not conclusively prove the reality of the event described in them. For this, other and qualitatively better evidence has to be presented.

### 5. Certainty Derives from Material Evidence and Unsuspecting Documents only

As a result of the discovery of air photos, we are in the fortunate position to prove beyond reasonable doubt that this alleged mass murder did at least not occur at that claimed location.<sup>61</sup> These pictures of Babi Yar, taken by German reconnaissance planes between 1939 and 1943, prove that this ravine never underwent any noticeable topographic changes, and by a lucky coincidence, a German reconnaissance air plane even made pictures of this area exactly at a time when—according to eye witnesses—the corpses of all the murdered Jews were allegedly exhumed from their mass graves and supposedly cremated on gigantic pyres. Nothing of this is shown on these pictures.

Another example of a sensational discovery which was not reported by the mainstream media has a similarly devastating effect upon the thesis of Goldhagen & Co: In the summer of 1996, the city of Marijampol in Latvia decided to erect a me-

morial in memory of the tens of thousands of Jews who were allegedly murdered by the *Einsatzgruppen*. In order to erect it at the proper place, an attempt was made to locate the exact position of the mass graves. Excavations were therefore carried out at those locations which were identified by witnesses, but—oh wonder—Not a single trace of any mass graves could be found.<sup>63</sup> Further excavations in the vicinity of the alleged locations of mass murder did not result in anything else but untouched virgin soil either.<sup>64</sup> Did ‘the Germans’ commit the perfect crime by succeeding to completely hide all traces of their mass murder and even restore the soil to its original layering? Could they commit evil wonders after all? Or were the witnesses wrong?<sup>65</sup>

### Causes of the East-European Anti-Semitism

Does this mean, that no Jew was ever shot by the SS in the east, the German Wehrmacht, or the *Einsatzgruppen*? Of course not. It is undeniable that German military units shot numerous civilians behind the front in connection with the “*Bandenkämpfe*” (combats against partisans), especially in the form of reprisal killings.<sup>66</sup> During the war in the east, which was fought with extreme brutality, it is furthermore likely that reprisal-excesses occurred occasionally, that is, where not only partisans and their supporters as well as criminal elements (and possibly also POW’s) were killed as reprisals in accordance with international law, but that it also came to killings of inno-

cent civilians with no connection to reprisals. If this would not have happened on the German side, the German army would be the first in the history of mankind who would consist only of angels, which can be ruled out.

Obviously, in selecting the victims of such reprisals, one would not choose Ukrainians, Byelorussians or members of the Balkan, Baltic or Caucasian peoples, of whom considerable numbers fought in German units. The fact that the Jews were predominantly unpopular amongst these peoples was mainly due to fairly recent causes. In the previous decades many people had had terrible experiences with Communist commissars, disproportionately many of whom were of Jewish descent, especially in the first few decades of Soviet Bolshevism. The Russian Jewess Sonja Margolina has made some interesting points regarding the involvement of the Russian Jews in the Bolshevik reign of terror.<sup>67</sup>

*“Nevertheless: the horrors of revolution and civil war, just like those of the repressions later, are closely tied to the image of the Jewish commissar.”* (p. 47)

*“The Jewish presence in the instruments of power was so impressive that even such an unbiased contemporaneous researcher as Boris Paramonov, a Russian cultural historian living in New York, asked whether the promotion of the Jews into leadership positions may perhaps have been a ‘gigantic provocation’.”* (p. 48)

Margolina has written a particularly detailed analysis of a book which appeared in 1924 under the title *Rußland und die Juden*. This book examines the causes of the Russian Jews’ conspicuously above-average participation in the excesses of the October Revolution and the dictatorship that followed it, and analyzed the consequences of this involvement. In their appeal *“To the Jews in all nations!”* the authors of this book discussed by Margolina wrote:

*“The Jewish Bolsheviks’ overeager participation in the subjugation and destruction of Russia is a sin that already bears within itself the seeds of its retribution. For what greater misfortune could happen to a people than to have its own sons engage in excesses. Not only will this be counted against us as an element of our guilt, it will also be held up to us as reproach for an expression of our power, for a striving for Jewish hegemony. Soviet power is equated with Jewish power, and the grim hatred of the Bolsheviks will transform into a hatred of the Jews [...] All nations and peoples will be swamped by waves of Judeophobia. Never before have such thunderclouds gathered above the heads of the Jewish people. This is the bottom line of the Russian upheaval for us, for the Jewish people.”* (p. 58)

Margolina quotes further from this anthology:

*“The Russians have never before seen a Jew in power, neither as governor nor as policeman, nor as postal official. There were both good and bad times in those days too, but the Russian people lived and worked and the fruits of their labors were their own. The Russian name was mighty and threatening. Today the Jews are at every corner and in all levels of power. The Russians see them at the head of the Czarist city, Moscow, and at the head of the metropolis on the River Neva and at the head of the Red Army, the ultimate mechanism of self-destruction. [...] The Russians are*

*now faced with a Jew as judge as well as executioner; they encounter Jews at every step, not Communists who are just as poor as they themselves but who nevertheless give orders and take care of the interests of the Soviet power [...] It is not surprising that the Russians, in comparing the past to the present, conclude that the present power is Jewish, and so bestial precisely because of that.”* (p. 60)

In the early 1990s, Professor Dr. Ernst Nolte also pointed out the Jews’ intimate entanglement in Communism, though naturally he rejects equating the Jews with Bolshevism. Nolte writes:<sup>68</sup>

*“For readily apparent social reasons, was not the percentage of persons of Jewish extraction particularly great among the participants in the Russian Revolution, different from the percentages of other minorities such as the Latvians? Even at the start of this century Jewish philosophers were still pointing with great pride to this extensive participation of the Jews in Socialist movements. After 1917, when the anti-Bolshevist movement—or propaganda—stressed the topic of the Jewish People’s commissars above all others, this pride was no longer expressed, [...] But it took Auschwitz to turn this topic into a taboo for several decades.*

*It is all the more remarkable that in 1988 the publication Commentary, the voice of right-wing Jews in America, published an article by Jerry Z. Muller who recalls these indisputable facts—though of course they are open to interpretation:*

*‘If Jews were highly visible in the revolution in Russia and Germany, in Hungary they seemed omnipresent. [...] Of the government’s 49 commissars, 31 were of Jewish origin [...] Rakosi later joked that Garbai (a gentile) was chosen for his post ‘so that there would be someone who could sign the death sentences on Saturdays’. [...] But the conspicuous role of Jews in the revolution of 1917-19 gave anti-Semitism (which ‘seemed on the wane by 1914’) a whole new impetus. [...] Historians who have focused on the utopian ideals espoused by revolutionary Jews have diverted attention from the fact that these Communists of Jewish origin, no less than their non-Jewish counterparts, were led by their ideals to take part in heinous crimes—against Jews and non-Jews alike.’”*

Referring to the causal nexus Nolte had postulated between GULag and Auschwitz, Muller concludes:

*“The Trotskies make the revolutions [i.e., the GULag] and the Bronsteins pay the bills [in the Holocaust].”*<sup>69</sup>

Thus it seems understandable that National Socialism, and the eastern peoples fighting alongside for their freedom, equated the Jews in general with the Bolshevik terror and the activities of the commissars—though such an identification, being sweeping and collective, was unjust. Nevertheless, it is therefore more than plausible that it was Jews, first and foremost, who were made to pay for the partisan warfare and other war crimes of the Soviets. Anyone who (rightly) criticizes this, however, should also not omit to consider where the blame for this kind of escalation of the war in the East was to be found. And clearly it was to be found with Stalin who, as an aside, had treated the Jews in his sphere of influence at least as mercifully ever since the war had begun, as Hitler had.<sup>70</sup>

## Notes

First published as "Partisanenkrieg und Repressaltötungen" in *Vierteljahresshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 3(2) (1999), pp. 145-153. Translated by Fabian Eschen. All but one picture reproduced in this article were taken from the book *Die Wehrmacht im Partisanenkrieg* by Franz W. Seidler (Pour le Mérite, Selent 1998).

- <sup>1</sup> Just recently, this exhibition has come to the U.S. as well, in a slightly revised version; cf. Johannes Heer, Klaus Naumann (ed.), *Verbrechen der Wehrmacht 1941-1944*, Hamburger Edition, Hamburg 1995; Klaus Sojka (ed.), *Die Wahrheit über die Wehrmacht. Reemtsmas Fälschungen widerlegt*, FZ-Verlag, Munich 1998; Franz W. Seidler, *Verbrechen an der Wehrmacht*, Pour le Mérite, Selent 1998; Bogdan Musial, "Bilder einer Ausstellung. Kritische Anmerkungen zur Wanderausstellung 'Vernichtungskrieg. Verbrechen der Wehrmacht 1941-1944'", *Vierteljahresshefte für Zeitgeschichte*, 47(4) (1999), pp. 563-591; Krisztián Ungváry, "Echte Bilder - problematische Aussagen", *Geschichte in Wissenschaft und Unterricht*, 50(10), (1999), pp. 584-595; Klaus Hildebrandt, Hans-Peter Schwarz, Lothar Gall, cf. "Kritiker fordern engültige Schließung", *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Nov. 6, 1999, p. 4; Ralf Georg Reuth, "Endgültiges Aus für Reemtsma-Schau?", *Welt am Sonntag*, Nov. 7, 1999, p. 14; Walter Post, *Die verurteilte Armee*, Pour le Mérite, Selent 1999.
- <sup>2</sup> hoh, "Die Franzosenzeit hat begonnen", *Stuttgarter Zeitung*, 25.4.1995
- <sup>3</sup> Cf. Heinrich Wendig, *Richtigstellungen zur Zeitgeschichte*, issue 8, Grabert, Tübingen 1995, p. 46. In fact, this has not been a reprisal, but merely a mass murder; cf. also *ibid.*, issue 2 (1991), pp. 47ff.; issue 3 (1992), pp. 39ff.; issue 10 (1997), pp. 44f.
- <sup>4</sup> One exception is a recently publicized case of the unwarranted murder of 48 German soldiers who had already surrendered: Michael Sylverster Kozial, "US-Kripo ermittelt nach 51 Jahren", *Heilbronner Stimme*, September 24, 1996; "Später Fahndung nach Mördern in US-Uniform", *Stuttgarter Zeitung*, September 27, 1996, p. 7.
- <sup>5</sup> Prof. Dr. jur. Karl Siegert, *Repressalie, Requisition und höherer Befehl*, Göttinger Verlagsanstalt, Göttingen 1953, 52 pp; English translation: Ernst Siegert, "Reprisals and Orders from Higher up," in: G. Rudolf (ed.), *Dissecting the Holocaust*, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed., Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago, IL, 2003, pp. 530-550.
- <sup>6</sup> Relevant orders were issued by Stalin and were broadcast via all Soviet Russian stations; cf. *Keating's Archiv der Gegenwart*, 1941, July 3rd + 21st 1941; cf. *Sowjetski Partisani*, Moscow 1961, p. 326.
- <sup>7</sup> Bernd Bonwetsch, "Sowjetische Partisanen 1941-1944", in Gerhard Schulz (ed.), *Partisanen und Volkskrieg*, Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, Göttingen 1985, pp. 99, 101.
- <sup>8</sup> Witalij Wilenchik, "Die Partisanenbewegung in Weißrußland", in Hans Joachim Torke (ed.), *Forschungen zur osteuropäischen Geschichte*, v. 34, Harrassowitz, Wiesbaden 1984, pp. 280f., 285, 288f. This chapter has a certain anti-Fascist undertone.
- <sup>9</sup> S. Werner, *Die 2. babylonische Gefangenschaft*, originally self-published by author, Pfullingen 1990; 2<sup>nd</sup> ed. Grabert, Tübingen 1991, pp. 88-93 (online: vho.org/D/d2bg\_I\_II.html); English online only (vho.org/GB/Books/tsbc).
- <sup>10</sup> B. Bonwetsch, op.cit. (note 7), pp. 111f.
- <sup>11</sup> Franz W. Seidler, *Die Wehrmacht im Partisanenkrieg*, Pour le Mérite, Selent 1998; cf. Hans Poeppel (ed.), *Die Soldaten der Wehrmacht*, 3<sup>rd</sup> ed., Herbig, Munich 1999.
- <sup>12</sup> B.S. Telpuchowski, *Die Geschichte des Grossen Vaterländischen Krieges 1941-1945*, Bernard & Graefe Verlag für Wehrwesen, Frankfurt/Main 1961, p. 284; comparable Seidler, op. cit. (note 11), p. 36f.; similar data may also be found in Heinz Kühnreich, *Der Partisanenkrieg in Europa 1939-1945*, Dietz, Berlin (East) 1965; for further interesting information, see I.I. Minz, I.M. Rasgon, A.L. Sidorow, *Der Große Vaterländische Krieg der Sowjetunion*, SWA Verlag, Berlin 1947; it is said that the Washington National Archive's document copies regarding partisan warfare in the former Soviet Union have recently been made unavailable to the public. This information and the preceding references are courtesy of Fritz Becker; cf. also Becker, "Stalins völkerrechtswidriger Partisanenkrieg", *Huttenbriefe* 15(4) (1997), pp. 3-6 (online: vho.org/D/Hutten/Becker15\_4.html).
- <sup>13</sup> Cf. Walter N. Sanning, "Soviet Scorched-Earth Warfare", in *The Journal of Historical Review*, vol. 6/No. 1, Spring 1985, pp. 92-116 (online (German): vho.org/D/DGG/Niederreiter29\_1.html).
- <sup>14</sup> J. Hoffmann, *Stalin's War of Extermination 1941 - 1945*, Theses & Dissertations Press, Capshaw, AL, 2001, pp. 305-327.
- <sup>15</sup> A.E. Epifanow, H. Mayer, *Die Tragödie der deutschen Kriegsgefangenen in Stalingrad von 1942 bis 1956 nach russischen Archivunterlagen*, Biblio, Osnabrück 1996.
- <sup>16</sup> Franz W. Seidler, *Verbrechen an der Wehrmacht*, Pour le Mérite, Selent 1998, pp. 5f. (online: vho.org/D/vadw/vadw.html); English in preparation.
- <sup>17</sup> A. de Zayas, *Die Wehrmachtsuntersuchungsstelle*, 4<sup>th</sup> ed., Ullstein, Berlin 1984, passim., esp. pp. 273-307.
- <sup>18</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 198-23.
- <sup>19</sup> Franz W. Seidler, op. cit. (note 6), p. 127
- <sup>20</sup> Cf. J. Hoffmann, "Die Sowjetunion bis zum Vorabend des deutschen Angriffs", in Horst Boog et al., *Das Deutsche Reich und der Zweite Weltkrieg*, vol. 4: *Der Angriff auf die Sowjetunion*, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed., Deutsche Verlags-Anstalt, Stuttgart 1987; Hoffmann, "Die Angriffsvorbereitungen der Sowjetunion", in B. Wegner (ed.), *Zwei Wege nach Moskau*, Piper, Munich 1991; V. Su-

- vorov, *Icebreaker: Who Started the Second World War?*, Hamish Hamilton, London 1990; Suvorov, *Der Tag M*, Klett-Cotta, Stuttgart 1995; E. Topitsch, *Stalin's War: A Radical New Theory of the Origins of the Second World War*, Fourth Estate, London 1987; cf. W. Post, *Unternehmen Barbarossa*, Mittler, Hamburg 1995; F. Becker, *Stalins Blutspur durch Europa*, Arndt Verlag, Kiel 1996; Becker, *Im Kampf um Europa*, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed., Leopold Stocker Verlag, Graz/Stuttgart 1993; W. Maser, *Der Wortbruch. Hitler, Stalin und der Zweite Weltkrieg*, Olzog Verlag, Munich 1994.
- <sup>21</sup> For more details about this combat cf. F. W. Seidler, op. cit. (note 11), pp. 69-132.
- <sup>22</sup> Cf. H. Höhne, *Der Orden unter dem Totenkopf*, Bertelsmann, Munich 1976, pp. 328, 339; cf. H. Krausnick, H.-H. Wilhelm, *Die Truppe des Weltanschauungskrieges. Die Einsatzgruppen der Sicherheitspolizei und des SD 1938-1942*, Deutsche Verlags-Anstalt, Stuttgart 1981, p. 147, cf. p. 287; Richard Pemsel, *Hitler - Revolutionär, Staatsmann, Verbrecher?*, Grabert, Tübingen 1986, pp. 403-407.
- <sup>23</sup> For more information about the partisan warfare cf., e.g., Erich Hesse, *Der sowjetrussische Partisanenkrieg 1941-1944 im Spiegel deutscher Kampfanweisungen und Befehle*, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed., Muster-Schmidt, Göttingen 1992; John A. Armstrong (ed.), *Soviet Partisans in World War II*, Univ. of Wisc. Press, Madison, Wisc., 1964; Tomas Nigel, *Partisan Warfare 1941-1945*, Osprey, London 1983.
- <sup>24</sup> H. Höhne, op. cit. (note 22), p. 330.
- <sup>25</sup> G. Reitlinger, *Die SS, Tragödie einer deutschen Epoche*, Desch, Munich 1957, p. 186; similar Efraim Zuroff, *Beruf: Nazijäger. Die Suche mit dem langen Atem: Die Jagd nach den Tätern des Völkermordes*, Ahriman, Freiburg 1996, p. 44, where he says that 3,000 men, "mobil killing units, whose task was to kill all Jews and communist officials in the area occupied by the Wehrmacht." This included the huge area "from the suburbs of Leningrad in the north to the Asov sea in the south. [...] Their weapons were conventional firearms. Nevertheless they succeeded in killing 900,000 Jews in 15 months." Zuroff wonders, but he has no doubts. This has been possible, according to Zuroff, because of the "fanatic support by the native population." (p. 47) That there has been a massive partisan warfare in the back of the fighting German army is either unknown to Zuroff or he is not interested in it.
- <sup>26</sup> Together with Helmut Krausnick co-author of the famous book *Die Truppe des Weltanschauungskrieges*, (The Troop of the War of Ideology) op. cit. (note 17).
- <sup>27</sup> H.-H. Wilhelm, lecture during an international history conference at the university Riga, September 20-22, 1988, p. 11. Based on this recital Wilhelm wrote the article "Offene Fragen der Holocaust-Forschung" (Open Question about the Holocaust Research) in U. Backes, E. Jesse, R. Zitelmann (ed.), *Die Schatten der Vergangenheit*, Propyläen, Berlin 1992 S. 403, which however does not contain this section. I obtained this information from Costas Zaverinos, who had the manuscript of Wilhelm's Riga lecture and who reported about this during the opening speech of the history conference on April 4, 1995 at the university of Natal, Pietermaritzburg.
- <sup>28</sup> H.-H. Wilhelm, op. cit. (note 17), p. 515.
- <sup>29</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 535.
- <sup>30</sup> Document R-102 in *Der Prozeß gegen die Hauptkriegsverbrecher vor dem Internationalen Militärgerichtshof (IMT)*, vol. 1 - XXXXII, Nürnberg 1947-1949, here vol. XXXVIII, 279-303, here p. 292f.
- <sup>31</sup> *Nationalsozialistischen Volkswohlfahrt*, National Socialist People's Welfare
- <sup>32</sup> H. Krausnick, H.-H. Wilhelm, op. cit. (note 17), p. 189.
- <sup>33</sup> Gerald Reitlinger, *Die Endlösung. Hitlers Versuch der Ausrottung der Juden Europas 1939-1945*, Colloquium Verlag, Berlin 1961, p. 262.
- <sup>34</sup> *IMT*, XV, p. 362; vol. XV, p. 363: "Es waren ganze Stäbe in Kiew [...] in die Luft geflogen."
- <sup>35</sup> H. Krausnick, H.-H. Wilhelm, op. cit. (note 17), p. 189, Fn 161.
- <sup>36</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 190.
- <sup>37</sup> Alfred Streim, "Zum Beispiel: Die Verbrechen der Einsatzgruppen in der Sowjetunion", in: Adalbert Rückerl (Hrsg.), *NS-Prozesse. Nach 25 Jahren Strafverfolgung. Möglichkeiten - Grenzen - Ergebnisse*, C.F. Müller, Karlsruhe 1972.
- <sup>38</sup> H. Krausnick, H.-H. Wilhelm, op. cit. (note 17), p. 190, note. 164, all sources are otherwise exactly quoted.
- <sup>39</sup> Raul Hilberg, *Die Vernichtung der europäischen Juden. Die Gesamtgeschichte des Holocaust*, Olle & Wolter, Berlin 1982, p. 213, FN 59.
- <sup>40</sup> Ernst Klee, Willi Dreßen, Volker Rieß (Hg.), "Schöne Zeiten". *Judenmord aus der Sicht der Täter und Gaffer*, S. Fischer, Frankfurt/M. 1988, S. 69.
- <sup>41</sup> Op. cit. (note 27), p. 263.
- <sup>42</sup> Op. cit. (note 31), p. 86f.
- <sup>43</sup> Alfred Streim, "Zur Eröffnung des allgemeinen Judenvernichtungsbefehls gegenüber den Einsatzgruppen", in: Eberhard Jäckel, Jürgen Rohwer (Hg.), *Der Mord an den Juden im Zweiten Weltkrieg. Entschlußbildung und Verwirklichung*, Deutsche Verlags-Anstalt, Stuttgart 1985, S. 114.
- <sup>44</sup> H. Krausnick, H.-H. Wilhelm, op. cit. (note 17), p. 336.
- <sup>45</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 649.
- <sup>46</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 335f.
- <sup>47</sup> Reichssicherheitshauptamt, *Reich Security Main Office*.
- <sup>48</sup> H. Krausnick, H.-H. Wilhelm, op. cit. (note 17), p. 337f.
- <sup>49</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 335.
- <sup>50</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 338.

<sup>51</sup> *Op. cit.* (note 33), p. 227, note 145  
<sup>52</sup> Affidavit of 6.6.1947, NO-3824.  
<sup>53</sup> See IMT, VII, S. 612.  
<sup>54</sup> *Op. cit.* (note 17), p. 190.  
<sup>55</sup> *Op. cit.* (note 27), p. 263.  
<sup>56</sup> Wolfgang Benz (Hrsg.), *Legenden, Lügen, Vorurteile*, dtv, München 1990, p. 40.  
<sup>57</sup> "Babi Jar: Kritische Fragen und Anmerkungen", in: Ernst Gauss (Ed.), *Grundlagen zur Zeitgeschichte*, Grabert, Tübingen 1994, p. 375-399.  
<sup>58</sup> *Op. cit.* (note 17), p. 535.  
<sup>59</sup> IMT, vol. XXX, S. 74.  
<sup>60</sup> U. Walendy pointed out that these reports could not possibly be designated as documents: no letter head, no signature, no file number or letter-diary number. It is simply a piece of paper written on it: U. Walendy, "Babi Jar - Die Schlucht 'mit 33.771 ermordeten Juden'?", *Historische Tatsachen* Nr. 51, Verlag für Volkstum und Zeitgeschichtsforschung, Vlotho 1992, p. 21, as usual written with a 'hot' pen, but still a good starting point; see also: *Historische Tatsache* Nr. 16 & 17, "Einsatzgruppen im Verband des Heeres", parts 1 & 2, *ibid.*, 1983.  
<sup>61</sup> See J.C. Ball, *Air Photo Evidence*, Ball Recourse Services Ltd., Delta B.C., 1992; ders., in: E. Gauss (Hg.), *Grundlagen zur Zeitgeschichte*, Grabert, Tübingen, S. 235-248.; vgl. H. Tiedemann, *ibid.*, p. 375-399.  
<sup>62</sup> From: G. Fleming, *Hitler and the Final Solution*, University of California Press, Berkeley 1984, ill. 6, pp. 92f. (source: The Nizkor Project: [www.nizkor.org/ftp.cgi/orgs/german/einsatzgruppen/images/Lietuvos\\_Rytas](http://www.nizkor.org/ftp.cgi/orgs/german/einsatzgruppen/images/Lietuvos_Rytas) (Latvian news paper), August 21, 1996.

<sup>64</sup> Personal message from Dr. M. Dragan.  
<sup>65</sup> I will not elaborate here on the equally problematic gas wagons allegedly also utilized by the Einsatzgruppen; see Ingrid Weckert in E. Gauss (Ed.), *op. cit.* (note 50), p. 193-218.  
<sup>66</sup> For the time between Jan. 1, 1943, and Oct. 31, 1944 (22 months), the German authorities have claimed 145,364 persons killed in the partisan warfare, 88,493 imprisoned, and 90,993 civilians "registered", *i.e.*, either sent into camps or otherwise punished; cf. F. W. Seidler, *op. cit.* (note 12).  
<sup>67</sup> S. Margolina, *Das Ende der Lügen*, Siedler, Berlin 1992.  
<sup>68</sup> E. Nolte, "Abschließende Reflexionen über den sogenannten Historikerstreit", in U. Backes, E. Jesse, R. Zitelmann (eds.), *Die Schatten der Vergangenheit*, Propyläen, Berlin 1992, pp. 83-109, here pp. 92f.  
<sup>69</sup> J.Z. Muller, "Communism, Anti-Semitism and the Jews", in *Commentary*, issue 8, 1988, pp. 28-39; for a more ideological approach to National Socialist anti-Semitism cf. Erich Bischoff, *Das Buch vom Schulchan aruch*, Hammer Verlag, Leipzig 1929; on this expert opinion one of the best known National Socialist anti-Semites, Theodor Fritsch, relied heavily: T. Fritsch, *Handbuch zur Judenfrage*, 31<sup>st</sup> ed., Hammer-Verlag, Leipzig 1932; a comparison to modern Jewish critics of Judaism is extremely revealing, cf. Israel Shahak, *Jewish History, Jewish Religion*, Pluto Press, London 1994 (online: [codoh.com/zionweb/zishahak/zishahakan01.html](http://codoh.com/zionweb/zishahak/zishahakan01.html)).  
<sup>70</sup> Regarding the question of the involvement of Jews in the soviet partisan warfare against German troops cf. E. Jäckel, P. Longerich, J. H. Schoeps (eds.), *Enzyklopädie des Holocaust*, Argon, Berlin 1993, p. 1348; cf. Nechama Tec, *Defiance, the Bielski Partisans*, Oxford University Press, New York 1993.

# The "Gassing" of Gypsies in Auschwitz on August 2, 1944

By Carlo Mattogno

## 1. The Historical Reconstruction by Danuta Czech

According to the official historiography, 2,874 gypsies, accommodated in the so-called "gypsy-family-camp" within camp BIIE, had been gassed, in Birkenau, on August 2, 1944.

Danuta Czech delivers a most detailed reconstruction of this alleged mass-murder in *Kalendarium*.<sup>1</sup> The structure of her argumentation is the following: There were 1,518 internees<sup>2</sup> in the camp BIIE on July 30<sup>th</sup>. On August 1, the corresponding number increased to 2,815. Danuta Czech comments:<sup>3</sup>

*"This is probably the total number of all men and women."*

On August 2<sup>nd</sup>, 1944, the population of the camp BIIE rose again, namely to 2,885 internees, yet the total number of the gypsies (including those in the camps BIIa, BIIb and BIIc) amounted to 2,898 persons, "probably men and women".<sup>3</sup> Danuta Czech goes on with her historical reconstruction as follows:<sup>4</sup>

*"In the afternoon, an empty train was made available on the railway ramp in Birkenau., 1,408 male and female gypsies, selected from camp BIIE and from the blocks 10 and 11 of the main camp of the KL [concentration camp] Auschwitz, were brought to the train. They were to remain alive, and transferred to other concentration camps. The people departing said good-bye through the fence to the gypsies staying behind at camp BIIE. About 7 p. m., the train left the ramp of Birkenau. On the train, there were 918 men, among them 105 boys between 9 and 14 years of age, and 490 women. The destination of the train was the KL Buchenwald. On the 3<sup>rd</sup> and 4<sup>th</sup> of August, the 1,408 male and female gypsies were still registered in the labor force lists of the KL Auschwitz II, with the remark that they are being*

*transferred to another camp. They would be struck out of the camp prisoner list only after the verification of having been taken in by camp Buchenwald. [...]*

*After the evening assembly, there was lockdown in KL Auschwitz II, and block-closure was organized in the gypsy-family-camp. The camp BIIE and some other dwelling barracks wherein gypsies were accommodated were surrounded by armed SS-personnel. Trucks, which were there to take 2,897 defenseless women, men and children to the gas chambers in the crematorium, would drive into the camp,*

Here it should be pointed out that the number of the allegedly gassed gypsies contains a glaring arithmetic mistake: if there had been altogether 2,898 gypsies, and 1,408 thereof have been transferred, it is completely impossible that 2,897 were "gassed"! The number of the "gassed" would rather amount to (2,898—1,408 =) 1,490.

## 2. The Documents

Other than this arithmetic blunder, Danuta Czech's reconstruction is based on indisputable facts, which follow the series of reports pertaining to the subject "labor-force" in the men's camp of Auschwitz II (Birkenau).

On July 30<sup>th</sup>, the population of the "gypsy-camp" was 1,518 persons.<sup>5</sup> On the 1<sup>st</sup> of August (the report of July 31<sup>st</sup> is not preserved), 2,815 persons were recorded,<sup>6</sup> on the 2<sup>nd</sup> of August 2,885 persons.<sup>7</sup> On August 3, the heading "gypsy-camp population" did not appear any more, and the 1,408 gypsies were registered in connection with camp BIIE under heading "transfer gyp.[sies]".<sup>8</sup>

Thus, apparently, on August 3<sup>rd</sup>, (2,885—1,408 =) 1,477 gypsies disappeared from camp BIIE. What happened to them?

Before answering this question, we must raise another, not less important question: Has D. Czech correctly interpreted the documents on the subject?

### 3. The Interpretation of the Documents

At the end of July and the beginning of August, 1944, the men's camp of Auschwitz II (Birkenau) included the following camps: BIa, BIIf, BIId, BIIf, BIIG. They figure under these designations also in the pertaining reports on "labor-force".

The camp BIIE accommodated male and female gypsies, therefore one also spoke of the "gypsy-family-camp". Logically, however, the men belonged to the men's camp, and the women to the women's camp, and therefore, the camp BIIE never appeared before August 3<sup>rd</sup> in the series of reports pertaining to the subject "labor-force". The male internees of this camp are registered under a special heading with the name "gypsy-camp population".

As we have seen, on the 1<sup>st</sup> of August, 1944, the population of the gypsy-camp increased from 1,518 to 2,815. Where did these (2,815—1,518 =) 1,297 new internees come from? D. Czech assumes that the ones in question were without exception gypsies. But, why should women have registered as residents of the men's camp? The hypothesis is not very thought out, and seems to be entirely unfounded.

As Gerald Reitlinger already has emphasized, the female gypsies of the women's section of camp BIIE were transferred to Ravensbrück on August 1<sup>st</sup>, 1944.<sup>9</sup>

The source, quoted by the British-Jewish historian for this statement, confirms factually, that the transport departed on August 1<sup>st</sup> from Auschwitz, and arrived on August 3<sup>rd</sup> in Ravensbrück; and explains:<sup>10</sup>

*"The transport, which arrived from Auschwitz on 8. 3. 44, was solely comprised of the still surviving female gypsies of the camp Birkenau."*

D. Czech's allegation, that 918 male and 490 female gypsies were transferred to Buchenwald, is wrong, as 918 male, but no female gypsies have been sent into that camp. The only documentary source quoted by D. Czech in this connection is a letter of the resident SS-physician of the Waffen-SS, on August 5<sup>th</sup>, 1944, concerning the theme "Gypsy-transport on 8. 3. 44 from KL Auschwitz", in which 918 gypsies are mentioned, 105 of them belonging to the generation 1930 to 1939 (hence, they were 9 to 14 years old), and two were over 65 years old.<sup>11</sup> By the way, one does not really understand how these children and old people could have escaped the "gas-chambers"...

Also, the "list of new arrivals from the 1<sup>st</sup> of July, 1944" of the KL Buchenwald mentions only one transport for the 3<sup>rd</sup> of August: that of 918 "gypsies from the KL Auschwitz".<sup>12</sup> Finally, the Report of the Netherlands' Red Cross confirms the arrival of one single gypsy-transport to Buchenwald on the 3<sup>rd</sup> of August, 1944. These gypsies have been allocated the internee-numbers 74084-74998, which corresponds to 915 persons. This provides further evidence that these internees came from the gypsy-camp of Birkenau, and that the female gypsies were not sent to Buchenwald, but to Ravensbrück.<sup>13</sup> Since in Buchenwald only this one transport with 918 gypsies arrived, it is clear

that a further transport with 490 gypsies must have been sent to another camp.

Of course, the fact remains, that from July 30<sup>th</sup> to the 1<sup>st</sup> of August, the gypsy camp population increased from 1,518 to 2,815. After we have established that the new arrivals could not be gypsies, the question is to clarify who they were.

The documents enable us to answer this question very clearly.

On July 30<sup>th</sup>, 1944 one transport with 1,298 Jews from Radom arrived in Birkenau, registered in the camp's population list, and allocated the internee-numbers A-18647 to A-19944.<sup>14</sup> Still, in the report pertaining to the subject "labor-force" from August 1<sup>st</sup>, every reference to them is missing, as well as under the heading "new arrivals", (that does not appear here at all), and under the heading "quarantine of new arrivals", under which only 968 internees in the camp BIIf are registered. (The last mentioned compose one part of the 1,318 internees, who appear in the report of July 30<sup>th</sup>.) The 1,298 newly arrived Jewish internees are not mentioned in the report of August 2<sup>nd</sup> either, in which there is talk of 965 internees, who dwell in the camp BIIf in "quarantine of new arrivals" (compared with the previous day when under the heading "new arrivals", two "newborns" were listed).

Also occurring for the first time ever in camp BIIE, 1,415 internees and also another 547 persons are listed under the heading "quarantine of new arrivals, internees" in the report of August 3<sup>rd</sup>. This heading furthermore includes 16 internees in camp BIa as well as 1,797 in camp BIIf.

The quarantine-list, compiled by the internee Otto Wolken, enables us to reconstruct the demographics of the internees, taken into the "quarantine of new arrivals" of the camp BIIf.

The 1,797 internees, registered on August 3<sup>rd</sup>, are categorized as follows:

- 1,614 from Blyzyn (July 31<sup>th</sup>), numbers of registration: B-110 to B-2902,
- 129 from Kaunas (August 1<sup>st</sup>), numbers of registration: B-2274 to B-2902,
- 54 from a mixed transport (July 31<sup>st</sup>), numbers of registration 190656 to 190707<sup>15</sup> and A-19945 to A-19946.

Those 547 internees, recorded in the category "new arrivals" in the camp BIIE, were Jews from Radom, who became registered on August 2<sup>nd</sup> in the camp population with the numbers B-2903 to B-3449.<sup>16</sup> Thereby is the "quarantine-list" corroborated: the above mentioned 1,298 Jews have not been placed in the quarantine-camp BIIf. Now, if they were with certainty registered in Birkenau, but are neither entered in the reports under the heading "new arrivals" nor under the heading "quarantine of new arrivals", what happened to them?

The final conclusion is unavoidable: they have been accommodated in the camp BIIE, the population of which accordingly rose to (1,528 + 1,298 =) 2,816. The difference of one person is explained by the fact that the number of gypsies for July 31 is unknown, but undoubtedly sank from 1,518 to 1,517.

Consequently, of the 2,815 internees to be found in the gypsy-camp on August 1<sup>st</sup>, 1944 were 1,517 gypsies and 1,298 Jews from Radom.

On August 2<sup>nd</sup>, the population of the camp BIIE amounted to 2,885 persons. In the other camps, there were altogether 13

gypsies: one in BIIa, five in BIIb and seven in BIIc. On August 3<sup>rd</sup>, only one gypsy stayed in camp BIIc.

Also on August 3<sup>rd</sup>, the heading “gypsy-camp population” disappears from the reports pertaining to the subject “labor-force”, and for the first time the camp BIIc appears there, in which those 547 deportees, whose identity we have already established, are registered under the heading “new arrivals”. Further, under the heading “quarantine of new arrivals” 1,415 deportees, neither coming from outside of the camp, nor from the quarantine-camp BIIa, are listed. It is therefore unambiguous, that these already lived in the camp BIIc, and belonged to the above-mentioned 2,885 deportees. Further, on August 3<sup>rd</sup>, there were 1,408 gypsies reported who are being “transferred”: they too, belong to these deportees. Finally, there are another 72 deportees registered in camp BIIc under the heading “employed”.

If we add up these numbers, we can ascertain, that on August 3<sup>rd</sup>, there were formally (1,415 + 1,408 + 72 =) 2,895 deportees in the camp BIIc, of which 1,408 (the transferred) actually existed only on paper.<sup>17</sup> On August 2<sup>nd</sup>, there were still 2,885, but 12 of the 13 gypsies, who stayed in other camps, were listed again in camp BIIc, so that the population of the camp on August 3<sup>rd</sup> should have been actually 2,897. Two residents of the camp BIIc have been presumably transferred, or died, because on the August 3<sup>rd</sup>, there were only 2,895 deportees.

Consequently, we can be certain that the story about the gassing of the gypsy-camp is not grounded in historical fact.

## Notes

First published as “Die ‘Vergasung’ der Zigeuner in Auschwitz am 2.8.1944” in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung*, 7(1) (2003), pp. 28f. Translated by Zoltan Bruckner.

<sup>1</sup> D. Czech, *Kalendarium der Ereignisse im Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau 1939-1945*, Rohwolt Verlag, Reinbek 1989, p. 837 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 833.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 837.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 838.

<sup>5</sup> APMO (Archiwum Panstwowego Muzeum w. Oświęcimiu), sygn. AUUI-3a/17, p.33a, “Arbeitseinsatz für 30. Juli 1944” (labor deployment for July 30, 1944).

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 35, as above, Aug. 1, 1944.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 37, as above, Aug. 2, 1944.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 39, as above, Aug. 3, 1944.

<sup>9</sup> G. Reitlinger, *Die Endlösung. Hitlers Versuch der Ausrottung der Juden Europas 1939-1945*, Colloquium Verlag, Berlin 1992, pp. 837f.

<sup>10</sup> Het Neederlandsch Roode Kruis, *Auschwitz*, Deel VI, (part 6), s-Gravenhage, Maart 1952, p. 107.

<sup>11</sup> This document has been published in the first German edition of the *Kalendarium*, *op. cit.* (note 1), in *Hefte von Auschwitz*, Verlag Staatliches Auschwitz-Museum, no. 8, 1964, p. 113.

<sup>12</sup> NO-1300.

<sup>13</sup> As note 10, pages 39f.

<sup>14</sup> APMO, Ruch oporu, T. XXc. Sygn. D-RO/123, list of the Jew transports, p. 18.

<sup>15</sup> The quarantine list mentions 53 deportees; numbers 190656 to 190706, but one deportee, who arrived from Majdanek, received the number 190707.

<sup>16</sup> APMO, sygn. D-AUII-3/4, quarantine list, p. 6.

<sup>17</sup> Deportees transferred to other camps were officially as parts of the camp-strength registered, until the camp, into which they were sent, their arrival reported.

## A Case Study of Holocaust Revisionism and the Mass Media

By Paul Grubach

*The Plain Dealer* (Cleveland), Ohio’s largest newspaper and one of the 20 largest in the country, typifies many big city newspapers in the United States—Jewish owned, pro-Zionist, and it aggressively promotes the traditional view of the Holocaust and a distorted image of Holocaust revisionism.<sup>1</sup>

In a recent issue there was an editorial attack upon myself and the Holocaust revisionist movement in general.<sup>2</sup> The article’s author, Elizabeth Sullivan, is *The Plain Dealer’s* foreign-affairs columnist and an associate editor of the editorial pages. Although my name was not mentioned, she was clearly referring to me. Let it suffice to say that the manner in which she deals with Holocaust revisionism typifies how the mass media in general deals with the subject.

Since 2000 I have carried on an on-going email exchange with her about political Zionism, war crimes trials, and the problems in the Middle East. The best way to deal with her claims about Holocaust revisionism is simply to list them along with my rebuttal. To ensure fairness, Sullivan was allowed to view many of the following rebuttals prior to publication, and if need be, correct any possible errors. Not surprisingly, she did not respond.

Sullivan begins the essay with the claim that Holocaust revisionists “deny that they deny.” In other words, we allegedly refuse to even admit that we deny the “reality of the Holocaust.” Nothing could be further from the truth. Holocaust revisionists simply reject those aspects of the traditional view of the Holocaust that are demonstrably false, such as the existence of homicidal gas chambers at Auschwitz.

She then quotes from an essay of mine that appeared in the online edition of the *Oregon Daily Emerald*, the University of Oregon’s student newspaper:<sup>3</sup>

“Holocaust revisionists do not deny that atrocities were committed against Jews during WWII. However, they contend there was no Nazi plan to exterminate world Jewry, the ‘Final Solution’ being no more no less than their expulsion from Europe. The Nazis did incarcerate Jews in concentration camps, but there were no ‘gas chambers’ for mass murder in them. And finally, the claim of 6,000,000 murdered Jews is an irresponsible exaggeration, as the number killed was far less.”

It is most interesting to note how Sullivan selectively quoted from my essay, and omitted to inform her readers of one



of the most powerful pieces of scientific evidence that supports the Holocaust revisionist position—*The Rudolf Report*. Written by the German chemistry expert Germar Rudolf who was supposed to receive his Ph.D. from the prestigious Max-Planck-Institute for Solid State Research in Stuttgart, Germany, it is a forensic report on the chemical and technical aspects of the alleged “gas chambers” of Auschwitz, and it quite persuasively demonstrates that these homicidal devices never existed.<sup>4</sup> I believe that Sullivan failed to inform her readers of *The Rudolf Report* because she denies the fact that there is hard scientific evidence that undermines her traditional view of the Holocaust, and she does not want her readers to know this. Thus, I believe that the charge of denial hurls right back into her face.

Sullivan continues:

*“I no longer answer this man’s e-mail. His extremism seems unbridgeable by reason or words.”*

This is false and defamatory and I think she knows it. It is a matter of public record that Paul Grubach condemned things like National Socialist extremism. You can read my article about this at <http://www.codoh.org/revisionist/tr08notnazi.html>. As a firm believer in the U.S. Constitution and Bill of Rights, I believe in working legally and peacefully within the American political system to attain my ends. I am not now, nor was I ever, a member of any extremist political organization (*i.e.*, any organization that advocates the violent overthrow of the government or illegal violence against any identifiable group). As an intellectual and scholar, I believe that controversial issues should be settled by peaceful debate. As one who is trained in the scientific method, I am more than willing to listen to the voice of reason and scientific method. If you can falsify my Holocaust revisionist beliefs with facts and evidence, I will be more than willing to give them up.

As one can see from this, there is nothing “extremist” about me. The reason that Sullivan resorted to the false canard that ‘Grubach is an extremist’ is because she is intellectually impotent and psychologically insecure. She cannot refute my arguments, so she resorts to fallacious *ad hominem* attacks in an attempt to ‘discredit the message by defaming the messenger.’ According to two experts on political extremism, a characteristic of a real extremist is that he or she indulges in irresponsible accusations and character assassination.<sup>5</sup> Thus, the label of “extremist” may very well apply to Elizabeth Sullivan.

Since the beginning of our correspondence, I have refuted some of her beliefs and exposed her hypocritical double standards over the internet. In one article I exposed her hypocritical double standard in regard to ‘war crimes’ trials. She was publicly in favor of another trial for accused ‘Nazi war criminal’ John Demjanjuk, but she refused to publicly advocate war crimes trials for Jews that committed war crimes against Germans.<sup>6</sup> In the fall of 2002, she tried to convince me that Jewish-Zionist forces were *not* trying to push the United States in a war with Iraq. Again, I publicly exposed the falsity of her beliefs, as Jewish-Zionist forces were indeed one of the forces pushing for war with Iraq.<sup>7</sup> In short, I suspect she is angry and embarrassed that I refuted her beliefs and exposed her questionable journalism.

Elizabeth Sullivan continues:

*“Like a gnat, though, he keeps disturbing me with his messages of hate and his denial of history. It even seems*

*that his messages have become more frequent and more imperious of late, as though it’s once again OK to be open about anti-Jewish feelings.”*

Sullivan, a journalist with a large readership, has written extensively about the U.S.-Iraq war, the Arab-Zionist conflict, Middle Eastern issues, at least one article about the Demjanjuk ‘Nazi war crimes’ trial, and now Holocaust revisionism. Since this is also my beat, it is only logical that I should attempt to correct her false beliefs and hypocritical double standards in the hope that she transmits these corrections to her numerous readers. I believe that Sullivan is secretly afraid that I am exposing her false beliefs and double standards, and thus, lessening her professional stature.

In addition, she is clearly accusing me of harboring an “anti-Semitic hatred of Jews.” The charge of “anti-Semitism” is the last refuge of a scoundrel—an ideological weapon used by the Jewish power elite and their gentile allies like Elizabeth Sullivan to silence all rational criticism of Jewish behavior and power. To call a spade a spade, the charge of “anti-Semitism” in the hands of a Jewish-owned, pro-Zionist newspaper is a method of waging intellectual terrorism. By employing this ideological weapon, they can strike fear in the minds of the readership, and decrease the odds that anyone will dare speak out against the lies and exaggerations in the Holocaust legend.

Furthermore, she confuses “hatred of Jews” with moral outrage directed against the negative and dark side of Jewish influence. I don’t hate Jews—but I do in fact feel a sense of moral outrage about the wrongs that certain Jewish groups commit.

If Sullivan wants to complain about messages of hate, she should condemn the open message of hate of one of the primary promoters of her traditional view of the Holocaust, Elie Wiesel. This hateful Holocaust guru wrote:<sup>8</sup>

*“Every Jew, somewhere in his being, should set aside a zone of hate—healthy, virile hate—for what the German personifies and for what persists in the German. To do otherwise would be a betrayal of the dead.”*

But she would not dare criticize Wiesel, for if she did condemn Holocaust promoter Wiesel for his message of hate, her career in journalism would be in serious jeopardy.

Sullivan continues:

*“Too many people in the world still believe in a Jewish conspiracy—and still deny that the Holocaust was what it was.”*

Certain groups of Jews do in fact engage in conspiracies. Let me give three simple examples. In his private journals, Moshe Sharrett, one of the founding fathers of the state of Israel, revealed the conspiratorial activities of the Israeli cabinet during the years of 1953 and 1956. Acts of terrorism were planned, the purpose of which was to intimidate and demoralize Middle Eastern Arabs, and to create a climate of fury and adventurism among Israeli Jews.<sup>9</sup> The ‘Lavon Affair’ is another classic example of a Jewish-Zionist conspiracy. In 1954, the Modiin, an Israeli military intelligence organization, activated a ring of spies in Egypt. These agents carried out acts of sabotage against certain British and American installations in the hope that the British and Americans would think Arab radicals were responsible. This would have helped to turn America and Britain against Egypt. The saboteurs were eventually captured. This

Israeli-Jewish conspiracy had a profound effect upon Middle Eastern politics.<sup>10</sup> Finally, as we shall see in a moment, during the founding years of Israel the Zionist military leadership consciously conspired to reduce the number of Arabs in the Jewish state to a minimum.

What proof does Sullivan offer that mass murders in ‘gas chambers’ took place in Auschwitz? She mentions the Auschwitz crematoria. They do not ‘prove’ that mass murders took place in ‘gas chambers.’ The crematoria were necessary to dispose of the bodies of inmates who died from typhus epidemics or other natural causes.

She then talks about the mountains of shoes, suitcases, eyeglasses, and artificial limbs of former Auschwitz inmates. In her own words:

*“When Soviet troops got to the camp on Jan. 27, 1945, they found 7,000 emaciated souls, and warehouses crammed with the detritus of lives snuffed out, including 7 tons of hair already baled for sale. There were 836,255 women’s outfits, according to USA TODAY, and 348,820 men’s suits. There were 43,525 pairs of shoes. And that was just in the warehouses the Nazis hadn’t burned.”*

Here she is saying that the Germans cut the inmates’ hair, took their clothes, and then murdered them in ‘gas chambers.’ This is not so. Each inmate had his or her head shaved because of the lice problem, so of course there would be piles of hair. Since all inmates were issued a camp uniform, their civilian clothes were confiscated. Glasses, shoes and artificial limbs of the deceased were also confiscated. All of these things were then used for the German war effort. The clothes, shoes, hair, glasses and artificial limbs do not prove that mass murders in gas chambers took place in the camp. (There was a high death rate though from typhus epidemics.)

Don’t misunderstand me. It was certainly wrong and evil for the National Socialists to incarcerate innocent Jews in concentration camps, and there is no doubt in my mind that many Jews and non-Jews did suffer horribly at Auschwitz. But it is also wrong for the Jewish-Zionist power elite and their gentile allies to promote false claims about the Jewish experience in those camps. Just because Jews and others suffered at Auschwitz, this gives them no license to promote falsehoods about their experiences in Auschwitz.

The *Plain Dealer* political pundit writes:

*“About 1 million Jews died at the camp, along with tens of thousands of Gypsies, Poles, Germans and others. That one complex accounted for 10 percent of the victims of the Holocaust.”*

What Sullivan fails to point out is that at the end of WW II, Soviet officials ‘authoritatively determined’ that approximately 4,000,000 people were murdered at Auschwitz.<sup>11</sup> This figure was based upon the evidence of hundreds of surviving prisoners and the opinion of experts. Now we are told that figure is incorrect, and in 1990, the ‘correct’ number of deaths at Auschwitz was alleged to be about 1.1 million,<sup>12</sup> a figure which has subsequently been reduced by various scholars, to reach a new minimum of about half a million in spring of 2002.<sup>13</sup> This is no small revision, as the Soviets exaggerated the ‘true’ figure by four to eight times. But most importantly, Israeli historian Yehuda Bauer said in 1989 that it is time to finally acknowledge

that the four million figure is a deliberate myth.<sup>14</sup> This shows that false evidence was used to ‘prove’ the traditional view of the Holocaust, and survivors and Holocaust experts can be wrong. Sullivan then points out that the Holocaust ideology was used by the Bush Administration to ‘justify’ the U.S. attack upon Iraq. Our *Plain Dealer* foreign affairs ‘expert’ quipped:

*“The intended political message was to underscore the rightness of what America did in uprooting the evil Saddam Hussein in Iraq.”*

Sullivan’s traditional view of the Holocaust is an ‘ideology’ in the Marxist sense of the term: a set of ideas and values, untrue in the main, that has the function of ‘justifying’ and ‘legitimizing’ some aspect of the sociopolitical order. At last count at least 3,240 Iraqi civilians were killed—the final death toll is sure to be significantly higher.<sup>15</sup> Bush invoked the Holocaust ideology in order to ‘justify’ and ‘legitimize’ the U.S.-Iraq war, and ‘console’ the masses about its negative consequences. After all, so the ‘reasoning’ goes: ‘Yes, the U.S. attack upon Iraq resulted in the deaths of thousands of innocents, but the U.S. had to do it in order to prevent another Nazi-like Holocaust. We are just going to have to accept the deaths of thousands of Arabs in order to prevent a far greater evil.’ What is ironic is that the Holocaust ideology is being used to ‘justify’ a war that Sullivan is on record as opposing!

In a direct, literal sense, the Holocaust doctrine has become a threat to human life, for it is an ideological weapon that ‘justifies’ war and ethnic cleansing. For this reason alone the Holocaust revisionist policy of subjecting it to intense scrutiny is wholly justified. If we Americans are going to send our soldiers off to kill and die on foreign soil, then we have the moral duty to publicly scrutinize all of those doctrines that are used to promote and ‘justify’ such actions. But I believe that neither Sullivan nor *The Plain Dealer* has the moral integrity to give Holocaust revisionism a fair and public hearing.

In Israel, Zionism created an Athenian democracy for Jews but second-class citizenship, even feudal servitude for non-Jews. Modern Israel is a racially segregated, apartheid state where Jews lord over non-Jews, especially Palestinian Arabs.<sup>16</sup> Indeed, Israeli Prime Minister Ariel Sharon virtually acknowledged that Israel is oppressing millions of Palestinian Arabs, as he stated:<sup>17</sup>

*“It is not possible to continue holding three and a half million people under occupation.”*

Sullivan must be aware of this quote, because it appeared on the front page of *The Plain Dealer* and she is the newspaper’s foreign-affairs editor.

As the Jewish scholars Ian Lustick and Uri Davis have shown, far from working for an integrated society in which Jews and Arabs functioned as social and political equals, the Jews who founded Israel created a society in which Israeli Jews dominate ‘Israeli’ Arabs, a separate and unequal society in which discrimination is part of the established social order.<sup>16</sup> For example, 93% of Israel’s territory had been (until the Supreme Court decision of March 2000) legally defined as land that can be leased and cultivated only by Jews—Israeli citizens of Arab descent need not apply. Key institutions such as the kibbutz (collectivist Jewish settlements, mainly agricultural) are reserved exclusively for Jews (Israel’s Arab citizen’s are ex-

cluded), as Israeli scholar Uri Davis has reminded us in his thorough study, *Israel: An Apartheid State*.<sup>18</sup>

Dr. Lustick has pointed out that the Israeli military is by and large a segregated institution. Most Muslim Arabs, who constitute the overwhelming majority of Israeli Arab citizens, do not serve in the armed forces—they are not conscripted nor are they permitted to volunteer for service. This has important social consequences. In Israel, participation in the armed services is a prerequisite to social advancement and mobility. Cut off from the military, they are cut off from access to one of the main avenues of social advancement.<sup>19</sup>

Christians and Muslims cannot marry Jews in Israel, and if they are married elsewhere the marriage is not recognized by the rabbinical court in Israel.<sup>20</sup>

Consider the following facts about Israel, which by contemporary definitions of ‘racism’, make Israel a racist state. The Law of the Right of Return grants any Jew, but no-one else, automatic Israeli citizenship. The Nationality Law discriminates against non-Jews so stringently that many Palestinian residents of Israel (stuck there when Israel captured their land in 1948) were denied citizenship even though their families had lived in Palestine for many generations.<sup>21</sup> As the late Israeli scholar Simha Flapan pointed out, the founders of Israel wanted to create an ethnically homogenous Jewish state that excluded as many native Arabs as possible. In his own words:<sup>22</sup>

“[...] they [the Zionist leadership] accepted Ben-Gurion’s view that the state of Israel should be demographically homogenous and geographically as extensive as possible.”

Flapan added that overwhelming circumstantial evidence strongly suggests that the Zionist military leadership, during the founding years of Israel, planned “to reduce the number of Arabs in the Jewish state to a minimum, and to make use of most of their lands, properties, and habitats to absorb the masses of Jewish immigrants.”<sup>23</sup> Ethnic cleansing, Zionist style.

Another Israeli scholar, Benjamin Beit-Hallahmi, who teaches at Haifa University, made perfectly clear the plight of Palestinian Arabs who are under the yoke of Jewish-Zionism. The moment a Jew from anywhere in the world gets off the plane in Israel, he already has “more rights than a non-Jew who had the misfortune to be born there. Under the Israeli system of government, a Mr. Cohen from Brooklyn (provided he can qualify as ‘Jewish’) has more rights than any Palestinian native the moment he steps off the plane at Ben-Gurion airport in Tel-Aviv.”<sup>24</sup> He added: “Arabs are not just inferior natives, they are foreigners in their homeland.”<sup>24</sup>

The pious Sullivan then engages in some oft-repeated political moralizing:

“It feels right that Bush chose to start his trip with a stop at Auschwitz-Birkenau, not just as a warning of what evil unchecked can do but also to underscore America’s commitment to the security of Israel.”

This is ironic and hypocritical. Our mass media (inclusive of *The Plain Dealer*) and U.S. government most vigorously condemn those who advocate or practice segregation, ethnic cleansing and racial oppression here in the US or anywhere else in the world. Yet, Bush employs the Holocaust ideology to ‘justify’ and ‘legitimize’ our commitment to an ethnically segregated, apartheid state where racial discrimination is enshrined

in the social order, the ethnic cleansing of the native inhabitants is an ongoing practice, and Jews dominate and oppress millions of Palestinian Arabs. Certainly, this is a tribute to how the Jewish-Zionist power elite and their gentile allies have corrupted our value system with the promotion of their Holocaust ideology.

Political columnist Sullivan is wrong, as there is nothing ‘extremist’ about the Holocaust revisionism that I presented here. “Revisionism—a key to peace,” so proclaimed a founder of historical revisionism, the late Professor Harry Elmer Barnes. If we are ever going to attain peace in the Middle East and justice for the Palestinian people, we are going to have to rid ourselves of this veil of illusions, the traditional view of the Holocaust. And in the end, I believe the revisionist view of the Holocaust will also help the Jewish people, for it will help free them from the paranoid delusion of the Auschwitz ‘gas chambers’ and enable them to live in peace with their Arab neighbors.

Holocaust revisionism, now more than ever!

## Notes

- 1 THE PLAIN DEALER is owned by the Jewish Newhouse family. Online: <http://www.newhouse.com/newspapers.html>
- 2 Elizabeth Sullivan, “Never again, for anyone, anywhere,” *The Plain Dealer*, 6/1/03; online: [www.cleveland.com/search/index.ssf?base/opinion/1054373752295662.xml?ocsul](http://www.cleveland.com/search/index.ssf?base/opinion/1054373752295662.xml?ocsul)
- 3 [www.dailymerald.com/vfeedback/frontend.v?ACTION=display\\_post&Post\\_ID=bb2fda62f67ee7a1dead6a31dd6adea6](http://www.dailymerald.com/vfeedback/frontend.v?ACTION=display_post&Post_ID=bb2fda62f67ee7a1dead6a31dd6adea6)
- 4 Germar Rudolf, *The Rudolf Report: Expert Report on Chemical and Technical Aspects of the “Gas Chambers” of Auschwitz* (Chicago, IL: Theses & Dissertations Press, 2003); online: <http://vho.org/GB/Books/trr/>
- 5 John George, Laird Wilcox, *Nazis, Communists, Klansmen, and Others on the Fringe* (Prometheus Books, 1992), p. 63.
- 6 Paul Grubach, “‘War Criminals’ and Justice: The Double Standard and the Ulterior Agenda”. Online: <http://vho.org/GB/c/PG/180900.html>
- 7 Paul Grubach, “The Zionist Campaign for War with Iraq in Revisionist Perspective”. Online: <http://www.vho.org/GB/c/PG/230103.html>
- 8 Elie Wiesel, *Legends of Our Time* (Avon Books, 1968), pp. 177f.
- 9 Livia Rokach, *Israel’s Sacred Terrorism* (Association of Arab-American University Graduates, 1986). Also, see the essay of William Grimstad in *The Journal of Historical Review*, 9(2) (Summer 1989), pp. 221-232.
- 10 Stephen Green, *Taking Sides: America’s Secret Relations with a Militant Israel* (William Morrow, 1984), pp. 107-114.
- 11 Robert Jan van Pelt, *The Case for Auschwitz: Evidence from the Irving Trial* (Indiana University Press, 2002), p. 106.
- 12 *Ibid.*, p. 116.
- 13 For the development of the victim numbers at the Auschwitz camp, see R. Faurisson, “How many deaths at Auschwitz?,” *The Revisionist* 1(1) (2003), pp. 18-23.
- 14 Y. Bauer, “Fighting the Distortions,” *Jerusalem Post* (Israel), Sept. 22, 1989.
- 15 Niko Price, “AP Tallies 3,240 Civilian Deaths in Iraq,” *Associated Press* Release, June 10, 2003.
- 16 Uri Davis, *Israel: An Apartheid State* (Zed Books Ltd., 1987); Ian Lustick, *Arabs in the Jewish State: Israel’s Control of a National Minority* (University of Texas Press, 1980).
- 17 *The Plain Dealer* (Cleveland, Ohio), May 27, 2003, p. A1.
- 18 U. Davis, *op. cit.*, (note ) passim.
- 19 I. Lustick, , *op. cit.*, (note ) pp. 93-94.
- 20 *Washington Report on Middle East Affairs*, June 1993, p. 75; Roselle Tekiner, Samir Abed-Raboo, Norton Mezvinsky (eds.), *Anti-Zionism: Analytical Reflections* (Amana Books, 1988), pp. 86-87, note 21.
- 21 See Donald Neff, “‘If It Walks Like a Duck...’: The Racism of Zionism,” *Washington Report on Middle East Affairs*, November 2001, p. 26; online: <http://www.wrmea.com/archives/november01/0111026.html>
- 22 Simha Flapan, *The Birth of Israel: Myths and Realities* (Pantheon Books, 1987), p. 88.
- 23 *Ibid.*, p. 89.
- 24 Benjamin Beit-Hallahmi, *Original Sins: Reflections on the History of Zionism and Israel* (Olive Branch Press, 1993), p. 91.

# Against the Revisionists, Argumentation *ad hominem*

By Dr. Robert Faurisson

At times, in a debate of ideas, an attack on the person of the adversary can be justified if, explicitly or implicitly, this type of attack is preceded or accompanied by an argumentation on the substance. On the other hand, a pure and simple *ad hominem* argument, without further ado, only betrays an inability to reply to the opponent's argument. Such is the case of those who, unable to refute the demonstrations of historical revisionism, verbally set about the person of the revisionists themselves. If need be, this form of cowardly combat may draw its ammunition from rumours, stories, and malicious gossip whose source is rarely given. It ranges from distortion of reality to pure fabrication. No revisionist, it seems to me, has been the object of as many inane rumours as the German-Canadian Ernst Zündel. In a burst of candour, the Jewish-American lawyer Robert A. Kahn has recently made something of an admission, albeit a cagey one. On the subject of what he calls the "legal strategy" adopted by E. Zündel's adversaries in their cases against him in Toronto (1984-1985, then 1988), he wonders what line of defence the Jews should take in the face of the revisionist onslaught: must they seek to refute the statements of those revisionists, or rather is it more fitting to unmask them, showing them to be nothing but racists and anti-Semites? He proceeds to write:<sup>1</sup>

*"The failure to address the specific factual claims of the Holocaust deniers leaves the unmasking approach open to charges of being an ad hominem attack"*

## Two Recent Attacks *ad hominem*

My lot is not to be compared to that of E. Zündel and, all in all, I am the better for it. Like anyone involved in such a lively debate, I have too often seen the opponent ascribe thoughts, words or actions to me, which bear little or no relation to reality. Still, I have until now been spared low-level rumour and gossip, at least in print. But, just recently, two books, one in English, the other in French, have filled that vacuum, and the absence of base attacks *ad hominem* is no more. If I have decided to give an account, it is not to complain but to instruct—and entertain—the reader by enlightening him on the methods to which the anti-revisionists are now reduced.

## A BBC Journalist: Nicholas Fraser

In December 1997, Nicholas Fraser, presenting himself as a journalist from BBC Television, asked to meet me. I made his acquaintance at the 17<sup>th</sup> chamber of the Paris criminal court where Roger Garaudy was being tried for writings of which, by all possible means, he sought to deny the revisionist nature; I made no secret to the British journalist of my attitude with regard to such conduct. Our second meeting took place on 13 February 1998 in Vichy, where I live. N. Fraser was preparing a film in which he was keen to see me appear. He assumed the appearance of an impartial investigator. He said that in his "documentary" he did not want to put forward revisionist ar-

guments, for that would entail the risk of legal proceedings, and that he wanted simply to show that a revisionist could bear human likeness. Unhappily for N. Fraser, if he was play-acting, he was going about it rather ham-fisted. It became obvious to me that his film was to deal with the European extreme right and that I was to have a mere walk-on part; revisionism, which is a matter of method and not of ideology, would thus be fused with a well-determined set of political ideas. After his short stay in Vichy, I let him know that I declined to receive him again at my house with his BBC team. I wrote:

*"In your film I would be seen, by and large, as having political opinions that are not mine and without the revisionist convictions that are indeed mine [but which I could not put forth without risking legal proceedings]. This, in my view, seems a bit too much like the story of the knife-without-a-handle-whose-blade-was-removed-beforehand."*

In effect, when the "documentary" was finished and shown, it revealed itself to be one of those firebrands that draw caricatures of the men and ideas of a certain right wing that it is deemed good to hate. It was on 25 March 1999 that the *Arte* channel broadcast "Voyage au bout de la droite" (Journey to the end of the right), presented as a production of Christian Poveda and N. Fraser. Of deplorable quality and near non-existent content, this "political documentary", as it termed itself, showed a feigned, gesticulating, tormented N. Fraser, a man of hollow words. The most amusing aspect of it was that, almost without fail, the journalist let himself be put in his place by his interviewees: a young Danish National-Socialist, then Jean-Marie Le Pen and, finally, David Irving. Without naming names, N. Fraser declared that he had met other "Holocaust deniers" and added, with regard to them:

*"They are crazy! They are crazy!"*

## After the Film, the Book

After the film, he published a book: *The Voice of Modern Hatred / Encounters with Europe's New Right*.<sup>2</sup> Fifteen pages of it are devoted to me (117-131), pages that leave me puzzled as to the gentleman's mental state and nervous wellbeing. In Paris as in Vichy, I had been struck by his unsteadiness. Tall of stature, bald, aged about fifty in 1998, married—as he divulged to me—to a Jewess and himself perhaps Jewish—as he let me understand—this son of an Englishman and a Frenchwoman had given me the impression of being, as the saying has it, not at peace with himself. Did my company make him uneasy? Was he on drugs? At one point, I went so far as to ask whether he was not feeling poorly. It will be seen further on that the question was warranted.

## Portrait of a Revisionist

In two passages of his book N. Fraser describes me as wearing a beret (p. 117, 127); he also states that I spent the war years in the deepest corner of the sleepy French provinces (119-

120). Strange! I have never in my life worn a beret and our BBC man can have seen me only in a blue Burton cap; as for my war years, I spent them at Angoulême, Marseille, and Paris, in that order, and stayed in the country only during the summer holidays.

He assigns me an elder brother (p. 120) whereas, at his request, I had specified that I was the eldest of seven children.

In Vichy, N. Fraser thinks he saw me living in a red-brick house (p. 129) but the said house is, in fact, rough-cast and white with green shutters.

It seems that, in my study, there are to be seen “photographs of Jews either dead, or about to be killed, or starving” (p. 130); in reality, no such photograph can be found there, except in the pages of the holocaustic productions that fill my bookshelves.

‘It seems as well that my wife, who has a talent for painting, depicts “small provincial scenes of eerily empty streets “ (p. 129), whereas in fact her canvasses are rather lively and bright.

Vichy is described as a deserted town whose population seems to have been annihilated by a neutron bomb in the 1950s (p. 121), but towards 1pm, that is at lunchtime and in particular on a February day, I suppose that many small French towns can give the same impression.

I learn in this book that Éric Delcroix, who is my lawyer, is also my son-in-law (p. 118), whereas we have not the least family tie, either direct or indirect; in two places in the text, the same barrister, who willingly received the journalist at his Paris office, finds himself being identified by the name Delcourt (p. 324, n. 8, twice).

Pierre Guillaume is described as a printer and a Trotskyist (p. 117-118), whereas he is a publisher and a libertarian of sorts. Paul Rassinier would seem to have been deported to Ravensbrück (p. 122); but Ravensbrück was essentially a women’s camp and Rassinier was deported to Buchenwald and Dora. While visiting Auschwitz, Majdanek, and Dachau, it seems that I took samples (for laboratory analysis, of stones, bricks, and plaster) (p. 121-122); here I am being mistaken for the American Fred Leuchter.

It appears that, speaking close to our journalist’s ear, I made “a hissing noise like a small snake” (p. 118); it would perhaps have been useful to point out to the reader that during the hearings of the Roger Garaudy trial, I merely happened to slip a few whispered words in the ear of my British neighbour, to whom I was striving to explain the anarchic procedure of a trial in the French manner.

I apparently complained of my lot in life, whining in the process (p. 129); actually I rather remember describing my tribulations in the tone of a certain Voltairian jollity.

I seem to have fatuously told him that the following inscription would be found on my gravestone: “Faurisson told the truth about something important—and he died of it” (p. 127); in fact, I am sure of having confided to him that my surname would never be inscribed on my gravestone; then, *cum grano salis*, I added that the anonymous epitaph could read: “He said a little exact thing—and he died of it”.

Finally, if I dropped the idea of appearing in the “documentary”, it was, according to the author, because I feared the possibility of being recognised in public and, as a result, physically beaten (p. 131). That is going too far. Here N. Fraser presents

me as a timorous being, which I am not, and, according to him, I would be fearful of a danger that was doubtless imaginary since, in the fifteen pages that he gives over to me, not once does he mention the ten assaults to which I have been subjected. These attacks, and the gravity of some of them, are known to him. Yet he makes no mention in this regard, most likely the better to suggest that I am nothing more than a coward.

As for the rest of the chapter, nearly all is tarnished with more or less serious errors. But for two or three exceptions, the remarks attributed to me, along with the indications of dates, places or figures are, with an amazing regularity, either mistaken or simply invented. Looking to prove that I do not know how to interpret a document and that I am unable to see that the German expression *Sonderaktion*, meaning “special action”, can designate only, as he will have it, a mass murder *inside* a “gas chamber”, our improvising historian omits giving any translation of the German word attached to “special action”, a word meaning “*out-of-doors*”. This “special outdoor action” amounted, in the circumstances, to a camp physician’s receiving a newly arrived convoy of deportees in the open-air.

#### N. Fraser Throws up his Meal

N. Fraser judges me to be “entirely perverse” or “worse than perverse” (p. 123f.). It seems that the calm with which I put forth my views or commented on documents made him sick. At one moment, near the war memorial square during the tour that I was giving him of 1940-1944 Vichy, I brought up the wish held by the majority of the French, in the late 1930s, to avoid a new Franco-German butchery. In answer to that desire, I told him, Jewish circles gave the clarion call for the anti-German crusade; I dared to voice the proposition that, often throughout their own history, the Jews, under the wrapping of maudlin speeches but beset by the restlessness of the prophet, had played the role of firebrand, inciting host populations to crusades, wars, revolutions. It was then that I noticed something like a physical malaise in my guest:

“[Faurisson] *asked me solicitously if I was feeling all right. ‘You don’t look at ease’, he said.*” (p. 129)

I can, I believe, honestly say that at table, an hour earlier, our Englishman had been properly treated. He had, particularly, enjoyed a cheese pie which, in his book, becomes a vegetable pie, and, at dessert, had partaken of a rare Sauternes wine. When, after that collation and the walk round Vichy, he got back to my house and been administered, at his request, a supplementary lecture on revisionism and when, after that session, a taxi took him to the station, I thought the matter finished. But not at all. On page 130 of his book, my visitor informs us that in the course of the day, more and more disgusted by my remarks, he had felt an irrepressible nausea rising. Having arrived at the station, he lets us know that he headed straight for the lavatory where, as he is keen to illustrate:

“*I got to my hands and knees, vomiting into the antiquated and picturesque stand-up toilet.*”

#### A Friend of P. Vidal-Naquet’s: Adrien Le Bihan

For his part, the Frenchman Adrien Le Bihan devotes a short section to me in the little book that he has just published

on the handwritten inscriptions found in the “Auschwitz visitor’s book”. Often in a weary and disabused tone, he picks out and comments on the thoughts of Charles de Gaulle, Helmut Schmidt, Jacques Chaban-Delmas, François Mitterrand, the Dalai-Lama, John-Paul II, and a good number of other famous or obscure visitors. Since I did not leave my signature in that “livre d’or”, it may well be asked on what account I should appear in his book. Furthermore, in a ludicrous manner, the passage devoted to me appears between two sections devoted respectively to Kurt Waldheim and Valéry Giscard d’Estaing. (The proximity of the latter, a pure show-off, rather annoys me). The pamphlet bears the title *Auschwitz Graffiti* and is prefaced with gushing praise by Pierre Vidal-Naquet.<sup>3</sup> A. Le Bihan, whose style is of a stale classicism, is said to have written a book on “De Gaulle, writer”. What he relates about me seems to result from an inquiry that he has apparently made into my second visit to Krakow and Auschwitz, in 1976.

### My Visit to Krakow and Auschwitz in 1976

In effect I had been to Majdanek and Auschwitz in 1975 and returned to Auschwitz the following year. I had managed, that year, to be sent on appointment to the University of Krakow to give some lectures and conferences on French literature. The young Polish woman to whom the Communist regime had given the task of accompanying me spoke a delightful French, full of finesse; she had married a Jew. In her company, after considerable difficulty, I came across Stanislas Mucha, the first photographer to have discovered the Auschwitz camp after the Germans’ departure and before the arrival of the Soviets (“All drunks”). He shared with me some interesting reflections on the possibilities of photographic fakery and on the transformation of the place by the Communists. Out of caution, I avoided revealing anything about the purpose of my investigation, so that neither S. Mucha, nor my charming interpreter, nor any of the other persons (French or Polish) with whom I came into contact throughout the whole time of my assignment could suspect my evil revisionist motives.

A young woman colleague at the University of Krakow, upon learning that I wished to make a visit to Auschwitz, offered to take me there and her father agreed to give me accommodation. The worthy man, a taxi driver, had just lost his wife. He was shattered. Sometimes I could hear him sobbing in his room. He went to great lengths to look after me, in the kindest ways. I was stricken with a bad cold for a few days: I received care from a female doctor. A gracious young Polish lady, whose acquaintance I had made at the Auschwitz museum and who worked there, offered to fetch me all of the documents that I was trying to find. My host had worked in the camp itself during the war but he preferred to tell me nothing about that. I noticed simply that he had in all likelihood seen nothing of the horrors attached today to the name of Auschwitz. Like all his compatriots, he lived in fear of the police and I decided to avoid asking any embarrassing questions. Once back in France, I tried to show him my gratitude for his hospitality by sending him a gift parcel, but do not know if he ever received it. My subsequent letters went unanswered. I had to wait a long time for some precious photographs from the museum for which I had paid in advance; I wrote to my guide asking her to inquire there

on my behalf, which, I reckon, she did, for in the end I received my order.

If I feel a need to go into such detail, it is so that the reader may imagine how much I was to be taken aback by the discovery of pages 48-50 of A. Le Bihan’s book.

### Strange and Disquieting “Testimonies”

According to the anonymous “witnesses” whom A. Le Bihan has met, I appear to have conducted myself in Poland like some satanic character, callous and ungrateful towards both my host and my guide, and dubiously gallant with the ladies.

“[One] evening, the taxi driver surprised Faurisson in his room in a curious posture. He had put out the electric lamp and lit candles. What sort of black mass was the literature professor holding? What sort of papers was he looking through in the candlelight? It has remained a mystery.” (p. 48)

I hope that the reader will be good enough to believe me if I say that I do not hold the key to this mystery either. The popular expression has it that “where there’s smoke, there’s fire” but I must admit that here I see not the shadow of a fire or a flame. What mind can have spawned such a delirium? And why? Is the intention to have people understand that, in most Catholic Poland, I was devoting myself to a satanic rite by deciphering some demonic scrawls? Or else—and this hypothesis comes to me from someone well acquainted with the country—had I been obliged, by one of the power failures so frequent in all of the ‘peoples’ republics’, to light a candle in order to get on with reading my documents? Twenty-four years on, I confess that I have no recollection of it. Still according to “witnesses”, it seems, for good measure, that I paid court to the ladies, doubtless as Faust did to his Margaret, and that I wrote... love poetry to them. In doing so, it is probable that, like Goethe’s hero, I harbored shadowy ulterior motives in their regard. But let us see for ourselves:

“Witnesses have stated that Faurisson, in Krakow, liked to pay court to the ladies, but up to a certain point. He wrote them love poems. The woman who accompanied him in Krakow recalls that ‘his conversation was brilliant and intelligent,’ although interspersed with anti-Semitic opinions such as ‘The Jews have a thick intelligence.’” (ibid.)

Thus, with a resemblance to Mephistopheles, I knew how to talk to the ladies, even to beguile them with spells of the Muse but not without decanting into their mind some ghastly remarks about the Jews. I must acknowledge here the likelihood that I did utter those comments on the sons and daughters of Zion; perhaps I even added that I believed that Louis-Ferdinand Céline who, of course, saw in them much sensitivity, but a “tinny sensitivity” (as opposed to one of bronze, which is profound), was right.

It seems that on my return from Auschwitz I described my host as a “primitive, dull-witted, coarse, and vulgar” man (p. 48) and that I set about “tormenting” my guide with endless requests that she contact the Auschwitz museum in order to obtain the promised documents (p. 49).

### The Polish Secret Service

A. Bihan does not know whether, at that time, I succeeded in getting the documents in question. He nonetheless ought to

know that they were indeed sent to me and that, thanks to them, I was the first in the world to publish reproductions of the German blueprints showing what the places at Auschwitz and Birkenau, re-christened ‘gas chambers,’ had actually been. His ignorance on this point does not prevent him from cooking up a theory: that of Faurisson’s manipulation by the Communist Polish secret service to anti-Jewish ends:

*“Did Faurisson obtain the documents that he desired? If so, that could mean that the Polish secret service had in mind a certain object, for it regularly engaged in the theft and confiscation of documents of all sorts. It is not implausible that, while their political rulers were condemning the German revanchists, these agents secretly promoted the theory according to which the gas chambers had not existed [...]”* (p. 49)

Diabolical to his claw-tips, Faurisson also managed to “evade the radar” of the cultural service at the French embassy in Warsaw. Disquieting, reckon A. Le Bihan and P. Vidal-Naquet, disquieting and unjust:

*“When one recalls that ten years or so after this journey [of Faurisson’s in Communist Poland], the cultural service at the French embassy in Belgrade [capital of Communist Yugoslavia] wanted to make Vidal-Naquet, in his conferences held in Yugoslavia, keep to the subject of the ancient Mediterranean world, thus to exclude the Algerian war from the programme, it is disquieting that a Faurisson should have succeeded, in Poland, in evading the radar of a cultural service of the same type.”* (p. 50)

### The Current Disarray of the Anti-Revisionists

As a French moralist assures us, one prefers to hear ill spoken of oneself rather than nothing at all. In my own case, this ‘ill,’ these slanders and calumnies do not bother me for they illustrate our opponents’ sheer inability to offer any counter-arguments. Argumentation *ad hominem*, especially on the level practised today by a N. Fraser, an A. Le Bihan, or a P. Vidal-Naquet, bolsters our view that the year 2000 will go down in

the history of the Big Lie as a bad vintage indeed. For P. Vidal-Naquet and his ilk, I see even darker times not far ahead. The revisionist Intifada is going to hurt.

### Nota Bene

A revisionist friend, G. D., observes that to the names of Nicholas Fraser, André Le Bihan, and Pierre Vidal-Naquet, I should do well to add that of Valérie Igounet who published an *Histoire du négationnisme en France*.<sup>4</sup> In it the young lady dutifully amassed disturbing reports about me, such as this one by the former Parisian bookseller Bela Elek:

*“I saw Faurisson once [circa 1979]. He came to my bookshop with Pierre Guillaume. I was very annoyed because I had a Jewish encyclopædia in Hebrew. It was on the floor. Faurisson took it in his hands but wrong side up. Which is not so bad. He started reading it wrong side up and cried out ‘Oh, how interesting!’ I wondered who this guy was. Afterwards we talked of other things. He acted in this silly way. He wanted to present himself as a big specialist on the Jewish question. It was ridiculous and, besides, not helpful. I told Guillaume that his pal was a bit weird. Guillaume was totally in awe. He had found an interesting explanation.”* (p. 343)

For my part, I do not remember the episode. I have checked with P. Guillaume, who sees in it merely one of those hallucinations “à la Bela Elek”, a distressed, if not disturbed, character.

© 30 October 2000

### Notes

- <sup>1</sup> “Rebuttal versus Unmasking : Legal Strategy in Regina versus Zündel”, *Patterns of Prejudice* (London: Institute for Jewish Policy Research), July 2000, p. 3.
- <sup>2</sup> Picador (MacMillan), 2000, 327 p.
- <sup>3</sup> Librio, Flammarion, June 2000, 128 p.
- <sup>4</sup> Seuil, March 2000, 701 p.

## Book Reviews

### Battlefield Patriotism

By Scott L. Smith

**Richard Holmes, *Battlefields of the Second World War*, BBC, London 2003 (c. 2001). Paperback. 222 pages. Photographs, inc. color, maps. Index. ISBN: 0563488123**

Professor Richard Holmes, Director of Cranfield University’s Security Studies Institute, presenter of the BBC TV series *Battlefields of the Second World War*, and author of the accompanying book of the same name, outlines four major battles significant to British participation in World War II: El Alamein, Monte Cassino, Market Garden, and the Bomber War.

Specialists will find little of interest in *Battlefields*, but it is not daunting for the novice and includes commentary for battlefield tourists. Holmes is fair to all participants in his study. The book contains a provocative introduction that justifies the bankrupting of a mighty nation to fight a legendary war. Holmes supplies no annotation, only an informal bibliography to suggest further reading.

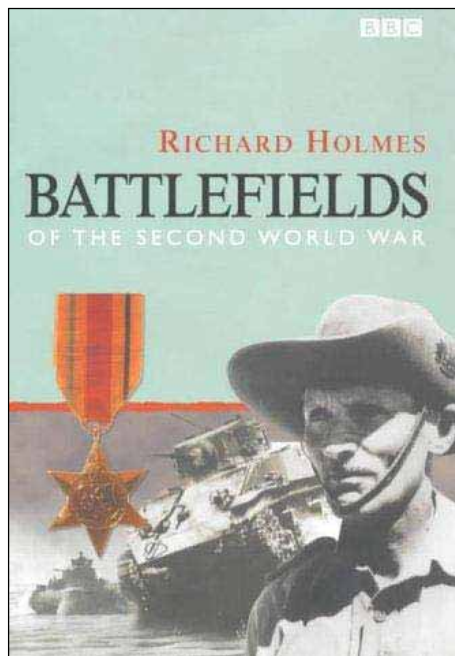
The historiography of the Second World War originally lauded the Churchillian significance of those who “shall fight on the beaches” until the mighty new world “steps forth to the

rescue and the liberation of the old.” Postwar historians tended to overemphasize the importance of the North African theater and virtually neglected the Russian front entirely—it being the proverbial “unknown war,” where eighty percent of the losses of the Wehrmacht were actually incurred.

In recent years, however, with the mining of Russian archives and mushrooming interest in the so-called genocidal war of ideologies, the eastern front has emerged in importance. By the same token, Hollywood has driven an increasingly smarmy America-centric view of the war as being won by jazzy companies of Yanks at places like Omaha and Bastogne.

Holmes calmly sets to reaffirm the Tommies’ contribution to the bitter crusade against the penultimate Axis of Evil, perhaps seeking to restore patriotic pride for a UK generation that knows the war only from movies and TV.

Holmes makes his best case for British relevance with Alamein. This was the theater that Hitler found an irreducible thorn in his side. It allowed the Allies to deconstruct the myth of German invincibility, despite the Wehrmacht’s superior military fighting power, usually calculated as a twenty percent advantage over their Allied counterparts. Furthermore, because the independent Royal Air Force was built for strategic bombing from its inception in 1918, it had to overcome a gauntlet of inter-service rivalry while forced to develop effective close-air support tactics, a tribute to crucial innovation in the desert war,



serves as a good introduction to the Bomber War from the viewpoint of the foremost firebrands of “taking the terror to the enemy.” Bomber Command’s aircrew attacked the most heavily defended airspace seen until Hanoi in 1972 and lost 55,500 lives, the surviving heroes bringing home a bitter legacy of moral uncertainty. Holmes sniffs at the conscience of David Irving, “part of his lonely campaign to show that the Nazis were not much worse than anyone else.”

All of this insouciant Churchillian patriotism begs the question, however, whether the Allies really were “much better” than anyone else. For Professor Richard Holmes in the UK, of *that* moral certainty there is no question.

## “Genocide” by Shovel and Sewing Machine

By Scott L. Smith

**Michael Thad Allen, *The Business of Genocide: The SS, Slave Labor and the Concentration Camps*, University of North Carolina Press, Chapel Hill, NC, 2002, 377 pp., hardcover, \$39.95.**

Michael Thad Allen is assistant professor of modern German history and the history of technology at the Georgia Institute of Technology in Atlanta. Despite its burlesque title, *The Business of Genocide* is an important study of the SS from a technocratic viewpoint and develops the existential conflicts within the WVHA (Wirtschaft- und Verwaltungshauptamt), thus providing a clearer picture of a neglected aspect of German National Socialist institutions and the evolution of inexorable wartime practices. Specialists should find plenty of interest.

The WVHA was the economic and administrative office of the SS, which Albert Speer notably accused of conspiring to “infiltrate” the supposedly apolitical German technical profes-

sions with National Socialist fundamentalists and hacks, only to wing profit and genocide from the exploitation of slaves. Allen undoes Speer’s shopworn thesis but attempts to paint an even darker picture of a German economy gearing for total war that instead came willingly to an eager SS to utilize its mushrooming pool of prison labor. Thus the SS is no longer the ‘alibi’ for a German nation now intent to distance itself from wartime extremes considered crucial at the time when the alternatives were victory or unconditional surrender. Allen’s Holocaust thesis is essentially functional, that the SS attempted to evolve a means for deriving production from the purgation of the State’s enemies, thus melding the seemingly divergent needs for forced labor and genocide, for an “extermination through work.”

*Arbeit macht frei* (work liberates) was the slogan of Theodor Eicke, founder of the first National Socialist *Konzentrationslager* at Dachau, subsequently brought by Concentration Camp Inspectorate disciples such as Rudolf Höß to Auschwitz; it represented both a sincere belief in manual labor for the



therapeutic incarceration of the German criminal or political prisoner and a cynical belief that many of the State's enemies were in need of such purification. Before the war, asocial prisoners were punished with desultory camp-keeping tasks or heavy labor in order to break the will of the hardened criminal and political prisoner. What Höß called the "Dachau school" of camp commanders never saw or quite understood the value of forced labor when it eventually became economically valuable and utterly essential to the war effort. When Eicke left "pencil pushing" for his real passion, raising the SS-Totenkopf division to fight the war with a cadre of "political soldiers," Richard Glücks succeeded him as head of the Concentration Camp Inspectorate, and remained perhaps the most incompetent and indolent of all the SS high-commanders.

Oswald Pohl, head of the WVHA, provides an example of the second of three groups of SS managers studied. Allen shows that the SS were mostly not opportunists, as has been voluminously said of them; however, SS managers in this second group were nevertheless generally inefficient hacks and often corrupt. Unlike Glücks, Pohl was a beehive of energy. A former navy paymaster, Pohl was overall competent but sometimes lacking in judgment when appointing subordinates, and not altogether competent technically for the tasks the WVHA increasingly found in its scope.

The National Socialist tended to be a lower middle-class movement which was enamored with technology and modernity for its own sake. If their *Führerprinzip* and anti-capitalist inclinations are judged as anti-modern by tendentious historians today, this is misleading, for theirs was only a *different* vision of modernity. The Weimar regime had only showed what could *not* be done with latent German professional talent; the National Socialist state showed the sky was the limit for the German engineer and architect of the future. They did not see themselves as un-modern, nor were they generally hypocritical opportunists and 'banally evil' yet perversely brilliant bureaucratic cogs. Most wives of SS technocrats, for example, were professionally educated themselves and shared NS political values. The SS elite were essentially "productivist" idealists who saw the role of the economy not as bringing profits to a plutocracy or adhering to the soulless dogmas of 'the salesman's point of view,' but instead as manufacturing German culture itself. They had great confidence in the virtue of German blood and German soil, however defined. Too much has been made of the 'polycratic' nature of the National Socialist government. Professor Allen shows that this hackneyed paradigm of bureaucratic chaos only underscores the variegated opportunities for National Socialist competitors to cooperate in realizing their shared ideals and common national goals.

Diverse SS experiments and enterprises would largely have failed without state support. The WVHA basically operated as a

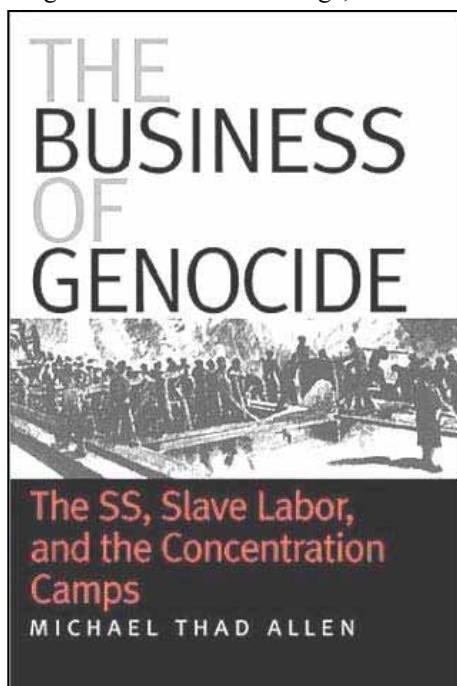
state corporation which generated bricks and stone for SS and Party construction projects—with dreams of utopian SS housing settlements in colonized lands. Most SS managers did not understand the nature of their own unskilled prisoner labor force and didn't care to. A project to install high-technology and process-sensitive kilns at Sachsenhausen, for example, was a spectacular failure. However, low-tech tools such as sewing machines at the women's camp of Ravensbrück, and rock hammers or even ordinary picks and shovels for quarrying (and later tunneling), were quite successful with the available prisoner labor force—these tools being developed for a labor-intensive and essentially unskilled piecework industry to begin with, rather than a highly motivated modern labor force with a low rate of turnover.

Before the war, the concentration camp population was low, rarely exceeding twenty-five thousand. But due to the increasing scale of German rearmament and the growing peacetime labor shortage, the SS found that its pool of prisoners had some value in a labor market that ordinarily would have been categorically rejected as 'slaves' competing with free German labor. The SS supplied its quotas of bricks and stone and garments more or less as needed. That it didn't really turn a traditional 'profit' with its prisons bothered few.

The war changed everything, and the labor-camp population exploded. In went a supply of prison labor and out came building materials for a war economy that couldn't get enough. When the SS wanted the gigantic bag of Soviet prisoners of war from the Barbarossa invasion, it found by the end of 1941 that those promised had largely already perished of exposure and neglect at the hands of the Wehrmacht and the General Staff, which had not planned for reversals and a long winter war. Yet the SS itself rarely proved creative except at radicalizing general sentiments, and never really came to grips with its own prisoner resources as it tried

during the subsequent years of "total war" to rationalize its impressed slave labor to victory. As long as a constant supply of prisoner labor from security sweeps or police intakes could be found, out came the "product," grimly or not.

The third group, and most interesting, are the extremely competent and highly motivated German engineers, led by Dr.-Ingenieur Hans Kammler, a military civil engineer who had been recruited from the Luftwaffe by Himmler to lead Amt-C, the WVHA's construction department. Dr. Porsche came enthusiastically to the SS looking for help building military Volkswagens. Even General Dornberger, inventor of the V-2 ballistic missile, which was later fired in combat by General Kammler's men, came humbly to the SS looking for miracles. Far from the Faustian bargain described by Speer and lamented by Dornberger, the SS generally delivered what was asked and then some. Eventually Kammler came to head all German secret weapons projects, including turbojets.



Dr. Kammler's office built the crematoria at Auschwitz, and, using prisoner labor, relentlessly dug the tunnels at Nordhausen in which the German secret weapons were mass-produced. He used skilled crews and high-tech equipment when he could get them, otherwise using unskilled labor gangs to greatest effect—his enemy being time itself. Excluding perhaps the Soviet atomic program, the V-2 rocket was possibly the most costly modern weapons system in terms of lives lost in its manufacture, about ten thousand, compared to the enemy lives it took in operational use, about 2,500. But in all fairness, the involvement of the SS in mass production of the weapon by digging tunnels for its assembly came only as a result of Allied bombardments, and the V-2 itself was built as a deterring payback to Allied bombing in the first place. Few prisoners died on the actual assembly lines, which were directed by Albin Sawatzki, Arthur Rudolph, and other capable industrial managers; the work was too precise for carelessness and even skilled 'slaves' had essential value and were treated accordingly by the SS.

Classification as "fit for work," using modern statistical accountability, was introduced by Gerhard Maurer. Though far

from meeting industrial standards, it kept intransigent commandants focused on the vital war effort, and could mean the difference between life and death for a prisoner. Competent or not, the SS was not inclined to properly feed and house "useless eaters." Kammler would not have needed gas chambers; he simply could not use those who could not work, and scarce rations were allocated accordingly. The Boelcke-Kaserne was essentially a death camp where the Dora-Mittelbau project's unfit for work were left to expire in short order. This begs the question as to why other SS commanders allegedly needed poison gas to kill unfit prisoners.

The history of the WVHA is one that shows the scope of ruthless wartime measures, but SS jurisdiction was only a small part of the German war economy, a quarter of which comprised labor-conscripts, mostly foreigners. The SS did not force slavery upon German industry, nor corrupt an apolitical technocracy with some sort of fundamentalist creed of killing. Allen predictably concludes, however, that the WVHA developed "extermination through work" in the fullest sense of the term, giving precedence to neither murder nor production, but insouciantly accommodating each in equal measure.

## Gestapo USA

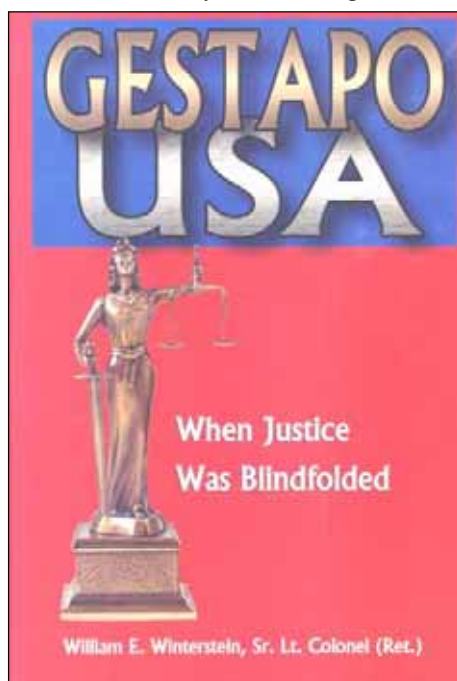
*By Germar Rudolf*

**William E. Winterstein, *Gestapo USA. When Justice Was Blindfolded*, Reed Publishers, San Francisco 2002, 261 pp. hc, \$25.95**

As part of "Operation Paperclip" shortly after World War II, the USA transported a number of captured German rocket scientists to Ft. Bliss, Texas, where they were kept under quasi arrest for almost two years. William Winterstein was the Army officer who served as steward of this valuable war booty. A close friendship developed between Winterstein and the leading personality of these German rocket scientists, Wernher von Braun, so that when the Apollo Moon Landing Program got under way, von Braun brought Winterstein to Huntsville, Alabama, as part of his team.

Winterstein begins his book with the triumphant story of the German scientists and technicians who gave the USA world supremacy in space exploration. Most of the book, however, is devoted to the scandal involving Dr. Arthur Rudolph, the manager of the Apollo Program. Early in the Eighties, Rudolf came under the crosshairs of the witch hunting Office of Special Investigation (OSI), which had been established in 1976 by President Jimmy Carter under pressure from the Jewish lobby. This was a special depart-

ment of the Department of Justice whose function was the discovery and deportation of former National Socialist criminals who had emigrated to the US. The OSI alleged that Dr. Rudolph had committed war crimes in the course of his activities as director of production of V2 Rockets at the Mittelbau facility. In addition, the OSI charged that he was a Nazi and a racist since he had joined the Party in 1931. The two Jewish inquisitors assigned to the case, Neil Sher and Eli Rosenbaum, decided against establishing direct contact with Dr. Rudolph, preferring to deal with his lawyer instead. They made concrete threats of attacking Dr. Rudolph in an expensive and long drawn out legal procedure designed to revoke his US citizenship. However, they hesitated to present the evidence which they allegedly had against him. In the Fall of 1983 they finally offered Dr. Rudolph a deal under which he would voluntarily renounce his US citizenship, leave the USA permanently, and plead guilty to having exploited slave labor. In return, they assured him that he would receive his full retirement benefits plus Social Security while his naturalized wife and children would be allowed to keep their US citizenship. Because Dr. Rudolph had recently undergone a bypass operation, was in a stressful situation and lacked financial means to protect himself from prosecution by a



branch of the federal government, he finally agreed to these conditions, albeit under protest. In 1984, Dr. Rudolf left the United States and returned to Germany as a visitor. In accordance with his agreement, he renounced his citizenship at the American Embassy. Since Dr. Rudolf was no longer a citizen of Germany, this caused a diplomatic protest on the part of the German government. That government, which emulated Washington's frenzied persecution of former National Socialists, had no desire to be seen as a dumping ground for unwanted US citizens. Washington paid no attention to the protests of its vassal state, however.

In view of the charges leveled by the OSI, Germany also pressed charges against Dr. Rudolf. These were soon dropped for lack of evidence. Furthermore, Germany's request for assistance in obtaining evidence disclosed that the OSI had been bluffing. There was no evidence of culpability on Rudolf's part. The OSI had gone so far as to advertise in newspapers for incriminating evidence, without success.

At a reunion of his old Apollo team, William Winterstein learned of the disgraceful affair and became involved in the

Rudolph case. Ever since then he has been active on Rudolf's behalf, seeking official rehabilitation and reinstatement of citizenship. Over a period of 15 years, he has collected a great deal of evidence and entered appeals of all court decisions. Despite clear and overwhelming evidence in support of Rudolf, his Sisyphus labors have remained without success at any level. This is a very sobering realization for anyone who still has faith in our system of government. Even the US Congress allowed itself to be misused by the OSI, as it sealed the Rudolf file. It will be many years before the public knows of the dirty tricks which the ISO used to assassinate the character of one of the greatest German American scientists and then deprive him of his citizenship.

Winterstein finishes off his fascinating story by exposing close collaboration between the OSI and the KGB in framing Rudolf. Perhaps this provides our best insight into the motivation and methods of the OSI.

---

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung*, 6(4) (2002), pp. 482f. Translated by James Damon.

### **SPECIAL OFFER**

***Gestapo USA* can be ordered from Castle Hill Publishers. Subscribers of *The Revisionist* receive a 10% discount of the list price and free handling and shipping within the US.**

**We would appreciate if our readers would honor this special offer, also as a support for Mr. Winterstein senior and junior for their ongoing efforts to help the Wernher von Braun rocket team and their families in their struggle to fight repeated attempts of well-known pressure groups to depict them as war criminals.**

## Indelible Shadows: Film and the Holocaust

*By Francis Dixon*

**Annette Insdorf, *Indelible Shadows: Film and the Holocaust*, 3<sup>rd</sup> ed., Cambridge University Press, Cambridge 2003, 430 pp., \$25.-**

*Indelible Shadows* is a rather idiosyncratic study of films, dramatic and documentary, that cluster around the Holocaust, narrowly defined by author Annette Insdorf as the "genocide of European Jewry." If the author is to be believed, the book, first published in 1983, is an attempt to evaluate Holocaust films above all from an ethical basis that prizes truth and earnestness and dismisses sensationalism and error. In this aim, *Indelible Shadows* fails rather badly; the interesting question is why.

One reason the book falls short is the author's puzzling eclecticism in her designation of Holocaust films. Perhaps the 1940 *Great Dictator*'s inclusion of concentration camps and the slapstick resistance of ghetto denizens justifies the six pages of text and stills devoted to it, but how to justify lengthy treatments of *Cabaret* (1972) or Ingmar Bergmann's *The Serpent's Egg* (1977), each set in the Weimar republic? Possibly the author subscribes to a particularly fervent belief in "intentionalism," the academic notion that the Holocaust was being

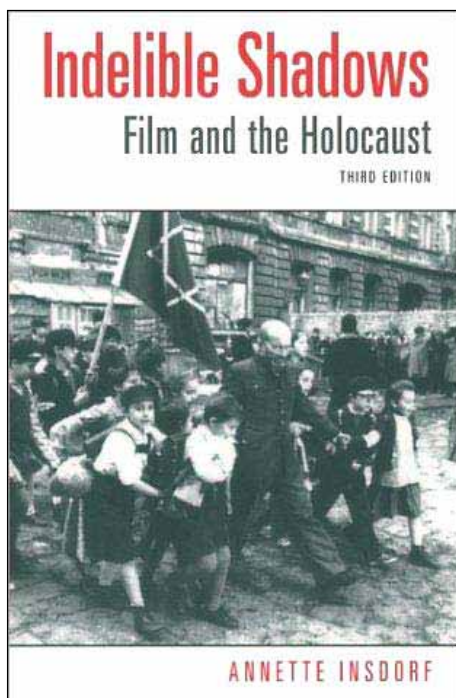
planned years, if not decades, before it is alleged to have begun; just as likely is both films' service as anti-Nazi and anti-German propaganda.

For all her moral earnestness, Insdorf, a professor of film studies at Columbia, is noticeably erratic in her sense of propriety. True, Mel Brooks's *The Producers* (1968) didn't quite make the cut—but *The Boys from Brazil* (1978), a fantasy in which Dr. Mengele (forgettably portrayed by Gregory Peck) unleashes several dozen Hitler clones on the world before being foiled by Simon Wiesenthal-figure Ezra Liebermann (played by a slightly miscast Lawrence Olivier), receives respectful consideration ("an entertaining thriller that raises some important questions of Nazi continuity," p. 10). Why, then, the omission of *The Odessa File* (1974) (more of Wiesenthal's Munchausen-esque derring-do), or, for that matter, *They Saved Hitler's Brain* (1963) ("a disturbing science-fiction evocation of the perversion of biology and medicine in the Third Reich," she might call it)? In any case, Professor Insdorf's opinion that "...for anyone who saw *Marathon Man*, in which Laurence Olivier portrayed a Nazi dentist on the rampage in New York City, his fine performance here as Liebermann suggests *too*

great a versatility” (p.11) will doubtless convince most readers of *The Revisionist* that too strenuous an attempt to divine her critical standards and method would be time wasted.

In her evaluation of films that attempt to depict aspects of the Holocaust, Insdorf is generally hard on Hollywood, faulting it for everything from Holo-kitsch to excessive blood and gore to oversensitivity about gentile concerns. While it is amusing to learn that objections from the American Gas Association resulted in the deletion of the word “gas” from a televised version of *Judgment at Nuremberg* on *Playhouse 90* in 1959 (p. 3), revisionist readers will be bemused to find out that it is the “Hollywood conventions of casting and scoring” that undermine the authenticity of *The Diary of Anne Frank* (1959) (p.7). Evidently the author is not troubled by the discrepancies between the various texts of the diary and its divergences from discernible reality unearthed by Robert Faurisson (condemned in the author’s 1983 introduction), or even by the re-jigging, as remarked by author Ira Levin, of the diary’s content to cater to the concerns of gentile theater and filmgoers.

Ranging through scores of films and hundreds of pages to pluck out such anomalies for examination is easy: Why isn’t the casting of Robert Mitchum in *War and Remembrance* (1989) (pp. 23) faulted in light of Mitchum’s revisionist and anti-Semitic comments (he wanted to visit Israel wearing an “I Like Ike [i.e., Eich]” button) at the time? How on earth does the story of an anti-Semitic Polish priest who died at Auschwitz (*Life for Life—Maximilian Kolbe* [1991]) qualify as a film about the genocide of the Jews? What, exactly, does ex-SS man Dirk Bogarde’s slathering his former concentration camp charge and sado-masochistic lover Charlotte Rampling with jam during a hearty coupling in a hotel in 1957 Vienna (in the *Night Porter* [1974], respectfully treated here [pp. 130-2]) have to do with the Holocaust? Yet, since *Indelible Shadows* carries



a foreword by the incomparable Elie Wiesel, to ask over many such questions would be cruel: it would mean watching the Holocaust cult’s thin-skinned St. Sebastian, as well as Ms. Insdorf, transformed first to pin-cushions, then to hedgehogs, by a hundred and one piercing barbs.

When it comes to authenticity, coupled with morality, in depicting the supposed genocide, author Insdorf places Alain Resnais’s 1954 *Night and Fog*, Claude Lanzmann’s 1985 *Shoah*, and Steven Spielberg’s 1993 *Schindler’s List* in the first rank of Holocaust films. She is evidently untroubled by *Night and Fog*’s claim that nine million people died at Auschwitz, and approves of its accusations, supported by lurid images, that corpses there were manufactured or crafted into soap, fertilizer, lampshades, handbags, and the like (p. 37). The talking heads and chugging choo-choos of *Shoah*

are proof enough for Insdorf of the gassing of up to three million Jews—but then, she is gullible enough to believe a claim, by one of Lanzmann’s interviewees, that while operating a locomotive which periodically took trainloads of Jews to Treblinka he was allowed by the Germans to assuage his massive guilt by freely guzzling vodka. As for *Schindler’s List* (passing over the film’s numerous deviations from historical fact and its refusal to moralize over its protagonist’s having been a war criminal, by Nuremberg standards, in half a dozen different ways), the author seems unperturbed that the film’s focus on individual sadism and its visual de-emphasis represents a reversion to the tabloid representations of the immediate postwar—plus cringing, subservient Jews and their Nazi savior, to boot.

Annette Insdorf makes much of searching for Holocaust films that are morally righteous as well as marketable. Her book more than hints, however, at a greater interest in movies that promote the Holocaust cult with a strong bias and a feeble regard for historical truth, to the largest possible audience.

## Raul Hilberg’s Incurable Autism

By Jürgen Graf

**Raul Hilberg, *Sources of Holocaust Research: An Analysis*, R. Dee, Chicago, 2001, hardcover, 218 pp., \$26.-**

### 1. The Destruction of European Jewry

Fifteen years ago, Robert Faurisson stated the opinion that Raul Hilberg was the only representative of the official version of the “Holocaust” for whom he felt a certain measure of respect, although only on the basis of the quantity of his work. In Faurisson’s estimation he “stood far above Poliakov, Wellers, Klarsfeld and their consorts.”<sup>1</sup> It is undeniable that this Jewish historian, who was born in Vienna in 1926 and emigrated to

America, has written a massive work on the history of the Jews during the National Socialist period,<sup>2</sup> the result of many years of intensive document study.

Based on the massive amount of documentary materials which he utilized, Hilberg could have written a book entitled “The Persecution of European Jews” which would have won him the reputation of a first rate historian. He squandered this opportunity because the title that he chose for his three-volume opus is not “The Persecution of European Jews” but rather *The Extermination of European Jewry*. Hilberg set out to prove, not only the persecution of the Jews, that is, the methodical depri-

vation of legal rights and deportations to camps and ghettos, but their actual *extermination* as well. He alleges this occurred primarily through mass killings in “homicidal gas chambers” which were constructed in “extermination camps.” However, in all the mountains of German documents from World War II he was unable to find any evidence whatsoever of such an extermination, and he found just as little material evidence.

In my book *Giant With Feet of Clay; Raul Hilberg and his Standard Work on the “Holocaust,”* I have demonstrated in detail the many ways in which Hilberg vainly attempts to prove that Jews were murdered in chemical slaughterhouses.<sup>3</sup> He ignores the principle, acknowledged in historiography and jurisprudence, that eyewitness testimony is the least credible kind, much inferior to both material and documentary evidence. He turns the hierarchy of evidence upside down, inevitably giving eyewitness evidence precedence over documentary evidence. As for material evidence, he does not deign to consider it.

While Hilberg easily establishes the *persecution* of Jews on the basis of an infinite number of wartime documents, he resorts exclusively to eyewitness testimony to back up his allegations of murders in gas chambers. In other words: without the testimony of a few eyewitnesses, we would have no “Holocaust.” There are few differences between the first English edition of his work, published in 1961, and the second edition, published in 1985.

The German version is based on this edition. For example, in his first edition Hilberg refers to two orders by Hitler for the extermination of Jews. The first order, allegedly given in 1941, concerned Soviet Jews. The second order, allegedly given after mass murder had begun in the USSR, was for the extermination of all Jews.<sup>4</sup> In the second edition of Hilberg’s major work, all reference to these phantom orders has disappeared without a trace. This obviously represents a great concession to the Revisionists, although Hilberg says not a single word about it. Revisionists have always emphasized the total absence of such orders; thus it seems very strange that Hilberg, who was just 59 at the time, would have been certain that his second edition was “definitive.” Did he really believe, in 1985, that his theses were so unassailable that no real changes would be necessary in future editions? Did he really believe that all significant “Holocaust” research had already been completed? Hilberg’s newest book suggests that the answer to both questions is “yes.”

## 2. *Sources of Holocaust Research; or the Tricks of a Paper Historian.*

Let me say at the beginning: *Sources of Holocaust Research* is a thoroughly wretched book. Its only virtue is that it again demonstrates the indefensibility of the official version of the fate of the Jews during World War II. Comparing it with *The Destruction of European Jewry*, we find that Hilberg presents not a single new argument worthy of the name. He practically ignores the investigations performed by other authors in the

course of the past fifteen years, and he still refuses to mention the name of a single revisionist historian. Furthermore he gives hardly any credit to the two most knowledgeable Auschwitz experts in the exterminationist camp, Jean-Claude Pressac and Robert Jan van Pelt: He refers to Pressac one time<sup>5</sup> and he finds van Pelt unworthy of even having his name mentioned. On page 243 Hilberg writes that there is “no finality” in Holocaust research and results are “constantly in flux” but he obviously is thinking solely of isolated, secondary questions and details to be clarified by future historians. He implies that in all its important points, the “Holocaust” has been exhaustively researched (by Raul Hilberg.)

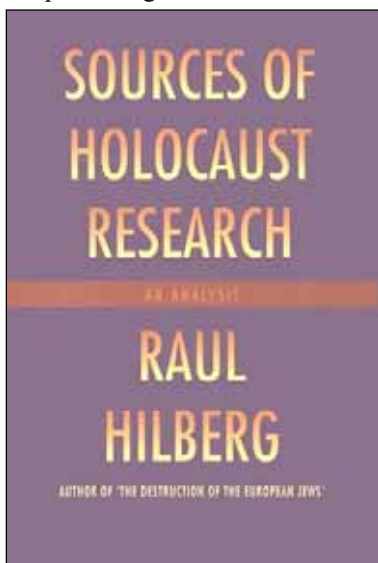
This leads us to ask: “Exhaustively researched on a basis of what evidence?” Hilberg admits at the beginning of the first chapter that there is very little material evidence for the alleged mass murder of millions.

*“Hardly anything remains of entire structural complexes such as ghettos, camps, or mass graves. Most of these no longer exist. [...] The complexes of the three extermination camps in Belzec, Sobibor and Treblinka were leveled to the ground before the advance of the Red Army. The bodies in most of the mass graves of Eastern Europe were systematically exhumed and burned by a special SS unit. Several sites, which were not destroyed by the Nazis, were immediately or subsequently redeveloped by the victorious Allies. [...] The mass graves at the Babi Jar gorge near Kyiv, where thirty thousand people were shot, are no longer in existence”* (pages 13f.)

Here, Hilberg is regurgitating the usual hackneyed excuse for lack of material evidence: He claims the Germans destroyed all evidence of their crimes. Everyone who is at all familiar with revisionist research knows how untenable this allegation is. Crematorium II of Birkenau, which according to official historiography was the principal murder

site of the Third Reich, is still sufficiently preserved to allow architectural and chemical investigation. The “gas chambers” of Auschwitz I and Majdanek can easily be inspected to ascertain whether it would have been possible for them to fulfill the alleged function. Furthermore, the existence of former mass graves can be established by air photos, ground penetrating radar, and other means. Hilberg, however, who is a “paper historian” to use Faurisson’s expression, is not the least bit interested in forensic procedure. The “complex of Holocaust events,” according to Hilberg, cannot be reconstructed by means of physical remains. He continues:

*“It is not different with items of various nature. There are locked boxcars like those used to deport Jews standing on the railroad tracks near Treblinka; another is found in the US Holocaust Museum in Washington, DC. There are some boards with which prefabricated barracks (similar to horse stalls) were constructed for the inmates at Auschwitz. There are bolts of yellow cloth with the printed black ‘Jewish Star,’ the so-called ‘Yellow Star’ on exhibit in the Jew-*



ish Museum in Vienna as well as the stars worn by individual Jews in various public exhibits. Coins and paper money, which circulated in the Lodz ghetto, are still in existence, as are banknotes from the Theresienstadt ghetto. At Auschwitz, Jewish luggage is displayed in showcases along with spectacles and long locks of women's hair.<sup>[6]</sup> In the Lublin camp there are barracks filled with shoes which were collected by the SS in the complex of Belzec-Sobibor-Treblinka.<sup>[7]</sup> There is also a gypsy caravan, a fishing boat that brought Jews from Denmark to security in Sweden, the rusty weapon of a resistance fighter—all objects which are still in existence; but except for these, there is hardly anything left." (page 14f.)

No logical person can fathom how boxcars, boards from horse stables, bolts of cloth, coins, luggage, shoes, fishing boats and rusty weapons establish genocide committed in homicidal gas chambers.

In contrast to *The Extermination of European Jewry*, which was published entirely without photographic illustrations, *Sources of Holocaust Research* contains three such illustrations (on pages 17, 58 and 59.) The first photograph shows a Jewish wedding in Holland in 1942. The second shows two bearded Hungarian Jews who had just arrived in Auschwitz in 1944, and the third a "bearded man in a fresco by Fra Angelico at the beginning of the 15th Century." If Hilberg had included an illustration of the ceiling of the morgue of Crematorium II at Birkenau, the observant reader would have noticed that those four rectangular openings through which, according to witnesses, Zyklon B granules were poured into the gas chamber, are nonexistent. Consequently poison gas could not have been introduced in the way witnesses have described. It is easy to understand why Hilberg chooses photos that are capable of arousing emotions but contribute absolutely nothing to understanding the "Holocaust."

*Sources of Holocaust Research* is more than 80% shorter than *The Destruction of European Jewry*, for which we are grateful; but even so, 255 pages of paper still had to be covered with printer's ink before they could be published as a book. In order to accomplish this, the author resorts to the same tricks he used in his main work: he overwhelms the reader with a flood of information that has nothing whatever to do with the Holocaust. Distracting the reader with such themes as the prehistory of aryianization, newspapers, pamphlets, cards, and tickets, he includes the expropriation of Jewish ski outfits as well as a discussion of the literary styles of documents and decrees. He even throws in an essay by a person named Wolf Gruner concerning "the exclusion of Jewish merchants from flea markets and the role of pawnshops in the expropriation of Jewish property."

In this way, he succeeds in filling his 255 pages without having to deal with sensitive subjects such as the known capacities of Auschwitz crematories. Any analysis of such chimeras as "assembly line murder in extermination camps" would collapse like a card house in the wind if its author dealt with significant topics.

### 3. Hilberg's Documentation Problems

On page 22, Hilberg attempts to explain the lack of documentation about Jewish extermination as follows:

"On 20th February 1945, Reich Propaganda Minister Joseph Goebbels ordered the systematic destruction of all secret and sensitive papers which had to do with Jews."

As his source for this he gives an "Order from Goebbels" with the following addendum:

"The original document was found at one time in the Federal Records Center in Alexandria."

From this formulation we perceive that the alleged order of Goebbels is not to be found. Its existence cannot be proven. If Goebbels really gave such a verbal order, it remained a dead letter. Documents relating the National Socialist Jewish policies have survived by the ton; in his opus magnum, Hilberg quotes thousands of these, including many which were rejected as evidentiary material during the Nuremberg trials. In addition, there are no fewer than 88,000 pages of documents of the Central Construction Office of Auschwitz Concentration Camp in a Moscow archive<sup>8</sup> that have been available to researchers since the early nineties. Not a single one of these documents provides any evidence of homicidal gassings whatsoever.

The total absence of documentary evidence for alleged mass murders in gas chambers presents a huge problem for all orthodox "Holocaust" historians. In an attempt to solve this problem, Hilberg resorts to the same kinds of tricks that he used in his main work.

He liberally supplies his readers with documents proving *deportation*, which nobody denies, but avoids the subject of *extermination*. An example of this is his printing of the timetable of the German Railway System dated 16th January 1943, beginning on page 86. We recall that in *The Destruction of European Jewry* he dedicated seven boring pages to the diabolical German Railroad.

To explain the lack of documentation, Hilberg alleges that extermination orders were given verbally. For example he says Odilo Globocnik, the SS and police commander for the Lublin district, imparted genocidal instructions to Sobibor commander Franz Stangl on a park bench. His source for this is Gitta Sereny's book *Into that Darkness*,<sup>9</sup> whose utter worthlessness is known to everyone familiar with it.<sup>10</sup>

In addition, Hilberg resorts to an ancient trick abandoned long ago by more versatile champions of Exterminationism such as Jean-Claude Pressac. This is the trick of "decoding" and "interpreting,"<sup>11</sup> that is, reading something into documents that is not there. Thus he writes on page 132:

"One frequently used prefix is 'Sonder-.' At Auschwitz, where the murders could not be concealed forever, an architect of the Central Building Administration designed three barracks for storage of the belongings of Jews who had been gassed. He called these buildings 'Three barracks to store the personal effects of Special Treatment.' Underground gas chambers became 'special cellars' and ground level chambers were designated 'bathing facilities for special treatment.'"

A close examination of the documents in which the prefix "Sonder" occurs shows that it was occasionally used to designate "execution," but in most instances had an entirely different meaning. As Carlo Mattogno has demonstrated, the "Barracks for Special Use" were simply barracks built for storage of the property of Jews who had been sent to the camp. The same was

true of the “Bathing Facilities for Special Purposes” which were planned but never completed. These were envisioned as special facilities to combat typhus epidemics.<sup>12</sup>

The situation with mass executions of Jews on the Eastern Front was quite different. The first thing to be noted is that these events are documented, thus nobody denies they happened. Debate over these shootings concerns the number of victims and nothing else. The second thing to be noted is that we are dealing here with suspiciously extensive evidence in the form of “action reports” in which numerous massacres are listed with five figure numbers of victims. That the Germans would have allowed such inculcating evidence to fall into the hands of their enemies has evoked commentary from the British-Jewish historian Gerald Reitlinger. Although he believes that exterminations of Jews were real, his capacity for critical thought is far greater than Hilberg’s. He makes the following observation:<sup>13</sup>

*“It is not easy to understand why the murderers would have left such bountiful evidence of their crimes behind.”*

The question of authenticity of the Einsatz reports has not been resolved. The alleged numbers of murdered Jews are often demonstrably false, as they contradict other documents as well as forensic investigations.<sup>14</sup>

On page 145 Hilberg reproduces a card sketch, which, along with other evidence, is intended to support his allegations concerning executions in the East. On this card the numbers of Jews shot by Einsatz Group A in various regions are represented by coffins. The highest number of shootings is given for Lithuania, where, he alleges, no fewer than 136,421 Jews had been murdered as of 1942. This number does indeed appear in one of the Einsatz reports, where it is reported:<sup>15</sup>

*“At the time of the Bolshevik invasion, according to a census made in 1923, 153,743 Jews were living in Lithuania. This represented 7.58% of the population... In numerous individual operations, a total of 136,421 Jews have been liquidated...”*

*Jews in Ghettos:*

*In Kaunas, around 15,000 Jews;*

*In Wilna, around 15,000 Jews;*

*In Schaulen, around 4,500 Jews.”*

Simple addition shows that the total number of allegedly liquidated Jews, when added to those still living in ghettos, is a great deal higher than the number of Jews present before the German invasion. This is only a part of the puzzling statistics, however.<sup>16</sup>

The same operational report for the adjoining country of Latvia states that around 25% of the Jewish population there had fled with the Bolsheviks. No corresponding exodus is mentioned for Lithuania, however. This is very puzzling because the Lithuanian Jews had as little reason to expect good things from the Germans as did the Latvian Jews. Jewish participation in the Bolshevik terror there had been proportionately much greater than in Latvia and had enraged the native population.

A large part of the Lithuanian Jews had lived in regions, which had been annexed to the Reich after the German conquest of Lithuania. At the time of the Einsatz report these Jews were still alive. According to Gerald Reitlinger, there were 40,000 such Jews in the area of Grodno at that time.<sup>17</sup> Accord-

ing to the Korherr report,<sup>18</sup> 18,435 Jews still resided in the Königsberg region at the end of 1942.

According to statistics prepared in Lithuania and based on original documents from the war years,<sup>19</sup> there were 3,693 children plus a large number of elderly persons (up to age 90) who were living in the ghetto of Vilnius at the end of May 1942. Since they were unfit for work, one would expect that these Jews would have been the first victims of any policy of extermination. In a report on schools in Vilnius, the Jewish American author Abraham Foxman points out that in October 1942, 1500 to 1800 children were receiving instruction there.<sup>20</sup>

Finally, material evidence of a mass murder of Jews in the alleged numbers is totally nonexistent. In the Lithuanian city of Marijampol in 1996, it was decided to erect a monument to tens of thousands of Jews who had allegedly been shot by the Germans. They began excavations at the site designated by eyewitnesses in order to locate the mass grave, but lo and behold, there was nothing there.<sup>21</sup> Even if the Germans had posthumously exhumed and cremated those tens of thousands of corpses, as Hilberg and his consorts allege, any mass grave would still be easily identifiable because of altered configurations of the soil.

Under these circumstances, a conscientious historian would not unquestioningly accept field reports as an infallible source.

#### 4. Eyewitness Accounts

Hilberg’s only evidence of mass murders in “death camps,” are eyewitness reports. Regarding these reports he feels compelled to make the following confession on page 55:

*“Among these witnesses there are persons who might possibly have harmed other victims and still others who did not want to be reminded of those situations of weakness, helplessness or humiliation. Still others might have finally concluded that they personally had nothing interesting to relate if they had not spent considerable time in Auschwitz or jumped from a moving train or joined a partisan unit in the forests.”* (emphasis added)

In other words, eyewitnesses have a tendency to make up stories. The logical conclusion would be that eyewitness testimony in principle should be approached with great caution. This is not Hilberg’s conclusion, however. He accepts the crudest nonsense that “Holocaust Survivors” can dish out, as long as it bolsters his contention.<sup>22</sup>

Three prominent examples of this are Filip Müller, Rudolf Vrba and Elie Wiesel. Vrba and Wiesel appear as crown witnesses of Jewish exterminationism just two times each in Hilberg’s major work, but he quotes Filip Müller’s book *Sonderbehandlung*<sup>23</sup> no less than twenty times, which is only six times fewer than the number of times he quotes the commandant of Auschwitz, Rudolf Höß.

In his disgusting bestseller, Müller relates that he nonchalantly ate cake in a cyanide drenched gas chamber. (This was no small feat since he would have to have been wearing a gas mask.) He also describes how “special unit” commandos gathered boiling fat from the burning bodies of gas victims with soup ladles and spread it over the bodies as a kind of supplementary fuel. At the beginning of his “Report of Experiences” entitled *I Can Never Forgive*,<sup>24</sup> Vrba describes the high points

of a visit by Himmler to Birkenau in January of 1943. He alleges that Crematorium II was initiated into service with the gassing of 3000 Jews. It has been firmly established that Himmler last visited Birkenau in July 1942 and Crematory II was not placed in service until March of 1943, but this does not bother Hilberg in the least.

It also does not bother Hilberg that Wiesel, in his depiction of mass murders at Auschwitz in his book *La Nuit*,<sup>25</sup> tells us that the murder weapon was not gas chambers at all. He claims that Jews were burned alive in fiery pits: still another gruesome fairy tale from orthodox Holocaust historiography. The only possible conclusion, which a serious historian can reach, is that Müller, Vrba and Wiesel are bald-faced liars and swindlers, but Hilberg treats them all as credible sources in *The Destruction of European Jewry*.

In his newer book Hilberg merely points out that none of the three authors wrote his book by himself:

*“Several authors, including the widely read Auschwitz survivors Rudolf Vrba and Filip Müller, have enlisted the services of journalists.<sup>[26]</sup> Elie Wiesel, likewise an Auschwitz survivor, has written an account which, with the assistance of public lecturers, has undergone two significant metamorphoses.”* (p. 76f.)

In Hilberg’s works Jewish witnesses never lie, although they do make mistakes now and then:

*“In addition to inexact numbers and narrative styles there are unfortunate errors caused by mistaken observations and lapses of memory. [...] In the US court case of the revocation of citizenship of John Demjanjuk by an Ohio jury, five surviving prisoners of the Treblinka camp testified against him. They mistakenly identified him as ‘Ivan the Terrible,’ a sobriquet which prisoners had given to a Ukrainian Kapo who allegedly drove Jewish deportees into gas chambers and turned on the gas. [...] It is true that Demjanjuk had been a guard in other camps, but he was not identical with ‘Ivan the Terrible,’ he merely resembled him. After his extradition to Israel, where he was condemned to death, the mistake was finally discovered during an appeal before the highest Israeli court, and he was returned to Ohio.”* (p. 209)

Hilberg fails to mention that a new suit to revoke the elderly Demjanjuk’s citizenship has been under way for several years. This time he is alleged to have committed crimes in the Majdanek, Sobibor and Flossenbürg camps. As usual, the charges were “proven” entirely on the strength of eyewitness accounts.<sup>27</sup> But this time, we can be certain that the witnesses will not make “erroneous observations” and there will be no “lapses of memory.” Right, Professor Hilberg?

In Hilberg’s universe, Jewish witnesses never lie; they just make honest mistakes. Likewise, German “perpetrators” never give testimony under coercion. Occasionally however they may be “possibly confused” or “indifferent to the accusations made against them.”

In Hilberg’s own words:

*“When Rudolf Höß, the former commandant of Auschwitz, was interrogated, he might possibly have been disoriented or indifferent to the questions put to him. In the sworn statement which he signed on April 5, 1946, the number of*

*persons killed at Auschwitz is given as three million, nearly three times the actual number.<sup>[28]</sup> Furthermore, one of the three extermination camps in the occupied area is erroneously identified as ‘Wolzek’”* (p. 209)

The truth is that Rudolf Höß had been beaten for three days by a British team of torturers under the command of the Jewish sergeant Bernard Clarke when he signed the confession,<sup>29</sup> as Hilberg very well knows.

The only two false witnesses to the “Holocaust” whom Hilberg identifies as such are non-Jews. They are the Catholic Pole Jan Karski and the Swiss “Binjamin Wilkomirski” (actually Brune Doessecker.) Karski, who was a courier for the Polish exile government in London, traveled to Poland during the war. After his return he described an alleged mass murder of Jews in Belzec camp. According to Karski, the Jews were crammed into boxcars partially filled with quicklime, which slowly ate the flesh from their bones. The train full of martyred human flesh rattled and shook with their bellowing, as though bewitched. Hilberg made the following commentary on Karski’s statement:

*“In these reports, as well as in his book published during the war,<sup>[30]</sup> he [Karski] describes a trip to Belzec, which he made in uniform. According to his testimony, Estonian guard units were stationed there and a train from Warsaw had just arrived. It departed again with a load of deportees who, as corpses, were later thrown into huge pits. The truth is that there were no Estonian guard units in Belzec; trains from Warsaw did not stop there; and trains of deportees never departed from there.”* (p. 215)

The assertion that trains of deportees never departed Belzec is unproven. Otherwise, Hilberg’s criticism of Karski is correct. However, the principal witness for the alleged annihilation of Jews in Belzec is not Karski but rather Kurt Gerstein. An honest historian might characterize Gerstein’s testimony as follows:

*“In his reports, Gerstein mentions a visit by Hitler and Himmler in Belzec, among other things. In reality, neither man ever visited the camp. Furthermore Gerstein’s testimony is filled with physical impossibilities, as when he says that 32 persons per square meter were packed into a homicidal gas chambers at Belzec.”*

Hilberg never criticizes Gerstein’s lurid fantasies, although he makes no mention of him in *Sources of Holocaust Research*. In his main work, he quoted him six times as a witness to exterminations of Jews in Belzec. Why does Hilberg reject the garbage of Jan Karski but not the equally malodorous garbage of Kurt Gerstein? Apparently it is for reasons, which have nothing to do with forensic verification. The “quicklime” method of mass murder has not been yet disavowed by orthodox historiography as has the “diesel exhaust” method described by Gerstein. Furthermore the Gerstein report is the corner stone of the orthodox conception of Belzec Camp, in which Hilberg claims that 550,000 Jews were murdered.

The second false witness placed in the stocks by Hilberg is the infamous liar Bruno Doessecker alias “Binjamin Wilkomirski.” This is what Hilberg says about Doessecker’s book *Fragments*:<sup>31</sup>

*“The memoirs of an author calling himself Binjamin Wilkomirski have been published in Germany and translated*



into several languages. In it, the author represents himself as someone who survived the “Holocaust” as a Jewish child. In reality he was neither a Jew nor a Holocaust survivor, and so under no conditions can the book be considered a “source of the Holocaust.” It is in fact a nonentity for researchers of the period from 1933 to 1945.” (p. 216)

In contrast with the falsifications of non Jewish Wilkomirski, the testimony of the hairdresser Abraham Bomba is anything but a nonentity for Hilberg:

*“In the course of the interviews, quite a few survivors fell into a dilemma whenever a particularly painful or depressing subject came up. Abraham Bomba was a haircutter in Treblinka who had to cut off the hair of Jewish women who were about to be gassed. During the filming of ‘Shoa,’<sup>[32]</sup> Claude Lanzmann asked him for an exact depiction of what happened while the women were being shorn: Did Bomba cut their hair with scissors? Was there a mirror? How many women were in the room? How was Bomba thinking while cutting their hair?*

*‘It was just too terrible...’*

*‘Please tell us, we have to do this. We know this.’*

*‘I can’t do this.’*

*‘But you must. I know it is difficult, I know, please forgive me.’*

*‘Let’s stop now...’*

*‘I beg you to continue.’*

*Then he continues with his story, after one of the longest pauses in the history of the movies.”*

Unfortunately, Hilberg spares us additional quotations of Abraham Bomba, for Bomba tells later that 60 to 70 Jewish women were crammed in a “gas chamber” of 16 square meters, and that they were sitting on benches as well—wasn’t that just a little crowded?

We have to ask ourselves: why does Hilberg withdraw credibility from the liar Benjamin Wilkomirski but continue to support the equally fantastic liar Abraham Bomba? Whatever his reasons, they cannot be scientific.

## 5. Hilberg’s Cheating Ways

Hilberg is not content with merely dropping embarrassing testimony of his star witnesses. In at least three places he resorts to outright deception:

a) Beginning on page 136, he writes:

*“In November 1942, Himmler again addressed the subject of shootings, after hearing of atrocity stories circulating in the US about soap being made from human bodies. Such reports had reached the US from Europe and caught the attention of the president of the World Jewish Congress, Rabbi Stephen Wise. Himmler was informed of a memorandum released by Wise. Although he knew the rumors to be false, Himmler could not simply ignore the matter. He wrote the following instructions to his Gestapo chief, Heinrich Müller:*

*‘Attached I am sending you an interesting report concerning a memorandum written by Dr. Wise which was released in September 1942. In view of the great tide of Jewish emigration, I am not surprised that such rumors could arise in the world. We both know that there is a high mortality rate among the Jews who are put to work. You must*

*guarantee me that in every case of death, the bodies of dead Jews are either buried or cremated, and that nothing else can possibly occur. I instruct you to make inquiries in all quarters as to whether such an offense as mentioned in Point 1 has actually occurred. In all probability this is a lie which is being circulated worldwide, but any such offense must be reported to me, on your oath as an officer of the SS.’”*

Hilberg’s cheating is evident in the first sentence, in which he claims that in this message Himmler is addressing anew the issue of the mass shootings. From the letter itself, however, it is entirely clear that Himmler is referring to the high death rate from natural causes which accompanied the “large scale emigration movement;” that is, deportations of Jews to the East. He is clearly ordering that the bodies of deceased Jews be either buried or cremated so that no rumors can arise, such as those about rendering bodies into soap.

b) In the section adjoining this passage, Hilberg further clouds his record with yet another dishonesty:

*“Auschwitz was a camp which served several purposes. One of these was industrial production, in which large numbers of prisoners were used as slave labor. Jews, who made up by far the largest part of the arriving prisoners, were destined to be gassed, however. This could occur either immediately after arrival, or else periodically, after selection from among the camp inmates. In August of 1943, the four newly constructed gas chambers with crematoria were in service; and by this time several hundred thousand Jews had been exterminated. It was in the interest of the directors of production facilities at Auschwitz to keep their Jewish work force, however. The following excerpt from the observations of an SS leader summarizes the content of this conversation at Auschwitz on the subject.*

*‘Director Wielam expressed a particular concern. It was rumored that, for reasons of politics or law enforcement, one might have to contend with the removal of the highly skilled prison workers, or even all the prisoners, thereby suffering delays in work schedules. [Hauptsturmführer] Schwarz promised priority consideration and assured him that the above mentioned disruptions would be unlikely.’”* (p. 137f.)

Here Hilberg is playing the trick of inventing something that does not exist. He is building a correlation between alleged mass gassings of Jewish prisoners and a topic, which he himself introduces.

The truth is that prisoners were constantly being transferred from Auschwitz to other camps. Naturally, the people responsible for production were reluctant to have their skilled workers taken away, and they did everything they could to hinder such transfers. It was for this reason and no other that the above mentioned Director Wielam expressed concern about a “removal of skilled prison workers.”

c) In conjunction with the loss of Jewish manpower, Hilberg writes on page 192:

*“One should know that [...] the SS statistician Korherr had released his total of Jewish dead without taking into consideration the 363,211 Jews who were shot under the direction of the leading SS and police chief for Southern Russia, Hans-Adolf Prützmann.”*

Everyone who has read the Korherr Report knows that it deals with Jews who were deported rather than “Jewish dead.” The reason why Korherr does not include “the 363, 211 Jews who had been shot” could be simply that the 363, 211 alleged murders do not exist.

## 6. The Ossified Historical Concept of Someone Afflicted with Autism.

If Raul Hilberg were not so deliberately deceitful, one could almost feel sorry for him. In 1961, when he published the first edition of *The Destruction of European Jewry*, it is possible that he might have believed his theses, by and large. The revisionist literature then in existence was of rather moderate quality, with exceptions such as Paul Rassinier’s *Le Mensonge d’Ulysses*. Revisionism was not yet able to seriously challenge the official version of the destiny of the Jews during the Third Reich. In the following years and decades, however, revisionists steadily gained ground. Then came the first Zündel trial in Toronto early 1985, shortly before publication of Hilberg’s second “final” edition of his opus magnum. Called as crown witness for the prosecution, Hilberg was caught in a murderous cross-examination by Zündel’s defense attorney Christie, who reduced him to a truly pitiable figure.<sup>33</sup>

More than fifteen years have passed since then, and orders from Hitler for extermination of Jews still have not been found. Exterminationist authors such as Gerald Fleming and Jean-Claude Pressac have burrowed through mountains of Auschwitz archives in Moscow without finding the slightest evidence for the existence of homicidal gas chambers. Meanwhile revisionist authors relentlessly continue to publish new books and articles, which expose the fragility of the orthodox “Holocaust.” Even the disciples of Jewish annihilation are forced to drastically reduce the numbers of victims. Raul Hilberg in his old age is forced to survey the ruin of his life’s work. He realizes that nothing except transient political connections keep him from being unmasked as a charlatan and pseudo scientist.

One would expect an appropriate silence from such a person in such a situation. But no: Hilberg writes a book entitled *The Sources of Holocaust Research* obviously expecting the customary acclaim from fawning journalists. Instead of praise, however, the book has been met with ridicule by investigative historians. Like an autistic child he clings to his ossified picture of history. He persists in “unlocking” and “interpreting” documents, meaning that he is still trying to impart meanings, which they never had.

At the very beginning of his book we encounter this amazing statement:

*“The extermination of the Jews on the European continent during the Second World War was a historical phenomenon which has inspired a growing army of academicians to investigate it in all its aspects. I am one of these: I have spent many hours in libraries and archives. Occasionally I have even visited the locations where the draconian deeds were done. Still, it is only late in my life that I have begun to analyze the sources I have used.”* (p. 9)

Wouldn’t Mr. Hilberg have done better to analyze his sources, before he committed his 1,300 page “definitive” work to paper?

## Notes

First published as “Der unheilbare Autismus des Raul Hilberg” in *Vierteljahrshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung*, 7(1) (2003), pp. 107-114. Translated by James Damon. Quotations retranslated from the German translation of this book: *Die Quellen des Holocaust. Entschlüsseln und Interpretieren*, S. Fischer Verlag, Frankfurt/Main 2002. All page numbers refer to this German edition.

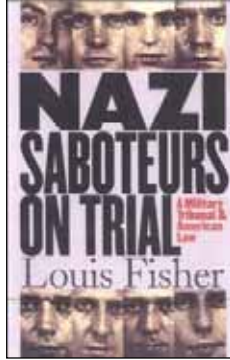
- <sup>1</sup> Robert Faurisson, *Écrits révisionnistes (1974-1988)*, four vols., private edition, Paris 1999, p. 954 (vol. III).
- <sup>2</sup> Fischer Taschenbuch Verlag, three vols., Frankfurt/M. 1997. The second and “definite” edition of his original English version *The Destruction of the European Jews*, from which the German version originates, appeared in 1985.
- <sup>3</sup> Theses & Dissertations Press, Caspaw 2001.
- <sup>4</sup> Raul Hilberg, *The Destruction of the European Jews*, Quadrangle Books, Chicago 1967, p. 177. The text of this edition is identical with the one of 1961.
- <sup>5</sup> On p. 60, where Hilberg endorses Pressac’s thesis, according to which the morgues of the crematoria in Auschwitz were converted into “gas chambers” only later on.
- <sup>6</sup> This “women’s hair” is a homogenous straw blonde color, which leads one to conclude that it is probably flax.
- <sup>7</sup> In reality, most of these shoes had been produced by Majdanek inmates, who were working in the workshops of the local fur and garment factories: J. Graf, C. Mattogno, *Concentration Camp Majdanek. A Historical and Technical Study*, Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago 2003, chapters I, V.
- <sup>8</sup> RGVA (Rossiskii Gosudarstvenni Vojenni Arkhiv, Russian State War Archive). This archive is located at the Viborg Street in Moscow.
- <sup>9</sup> Vintage Books, 1985; Ger: *Am Abgrund*, Munich/Zürich 1995, pp. 117ff.
- <sup>10</sup> See in this regard Carlo Mattogno, Jürgen Graf, *Treblinka: Extermination Camp or Transit Camp?*, Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago 2002, chapter I.
- <sup>11</sup> The subtitle of the German edition of this book is *Decipher and Interpret*, whereas the English subtitle is simply *An Analysis*.
- <sup>12</sup> C. Mattogno, „Sonderbehandlung“ ad Auschwitz. *Genesi e significato*, Edizioni di Ar, Padua 2001, as well as C. Mattogno: “Keine Extrawurst: Sonderbehandlung in Auschwitz”, *VffG* 5(4) (2001), pp. 452-454.
- <sup>13</sup> Gerald Reitlinger, *Die Endlösung. Hitlers Versuch der Ausrottung der Juden Europas*, Colloquium Verlag, Berlin 1992, p. 225; Engl: *The Final Solution*, J. Aronson, Northvale, N.J., 1987.
- <sup>14</sup> Cf. re. this chapter 7 in C. Mattogno, J. Graf, *Treblinka*, op. cit. (note 10).
- <sup>15</sup> “Einsatzgruppe A: Gesamtbericht vom 16. Oktober 1941 bis 31. Januar 1942.” RGVA, 500-4-92, pp. 57-59.
- <sup>16</sup> The arguments listed here were taken from chapter 7 of *Treblinka*, op. cit. (note 10), authored by C. Mattogno.
- <sup>17</sup> G. Reitlinger, op. cit. (note. ), p. 248.
- <sup>18</sup> NO-5193 as well as NO-5194.
- <sup>19</sup> *Vilnius Ghetto, List of Prisoners, Volume 1*, Lietuvos valstybinis zydu muziejus, Vilnius 1996.
- <sup>20</sup> Abraham. Foxman, “Vilna – Story of a Ghetto,” in: Jacob Glatstein, Israel Knox, Samuel Marghoses, *Anthology of Holocaust Literature*, Atheneum, New York 1968, p. 90.
- <sup>21</sup> Ernst Gauss, *Dissecting the Holocaust*, Theses & Dissertation Press, Caspaw 2000, p. 44. Gauss refers to an article in the Lithuanian newspaper *Lietuvos Rytas*.
- <sup>22</sup> For details I refer to my book *Giant With Feet of Clay* (see note 3).
- <sup>23</sup> Steinhausen, Frankfurt/Main, 1979.
- <sup>24</sup> *I cannot forgive*, Bantam Books, New York 1964.
- <sup>25</sup> Edition de Minuit, Paris 1958.
- <sup>26</sup> In a footnote, Hilberg indicates that Vrba wrote his book in collaboration with someone named Alan Bestic, while Müller wrote his with the help of someone named Helmut Freitag.
- <sup>27</sup> “Demjanjuk persecuted anew by US Jews,” *VffG* 2/2002, p. 239.
- <sup>28</sup> Actually, about twenty fold. Furthermore, Höß stated in his confession before the tribunal that in Auschwitz alone, as of the end of November, three million people had died (2,500,000 million from gassings and 500,000 from starvation and disease.) According to this confession, the total number of Auschwitz victims would have to have been much higher.
- <sup>29</sup> Rupert Butler, *Legions of Death*, Arrow Books, London 1983, pp. 235ff.
- <sup>30</sup> *Story of a Secret State*, 1944.
- <sup>31</sup> Frankfurt upon Main, 1995.
- <sup>32</sup> Motion picture by French producer Claude Lanzmann, nine and one half hours long. Its entire text was translated into German; published in book form, entitled *Shoa*, in Düsseldorf, 1986.
- <sup>33</sup> For this, see Barbara Kulaszka, *Did Six Million Really Die?*, Samisdat Publishers, Toronto 1992, pp. 22 ff.

## Book Notices

By Francis Dixon

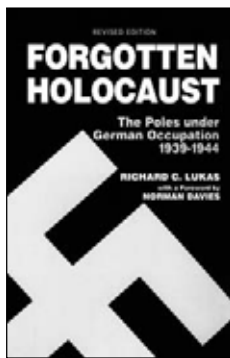
**Louis Fisher, *Nazi Saboteurs on Trial: A Military Tribunal and American Law.* Lawrence, KS: University Press of Kansas, 2003. Hardcover. 200 pp. \$29.95**

A new study of the trial of eight Germans captured while on a mission to sabotage U.S. industrial and civil facilities in 1942. Fisher finds that their conviction, and the speedy execution of six of the saboteurs, was enabled by serious abuses of due process, above all their trial in secret by a military tribunal after a hasty executive order from President Franklin Roosevelt (one that merits comparison with Adolf Hitler's "commando order"). An important book on an important case, more relevant than ever in light of post 9/11 measures that undercut due process in pursuit of security.



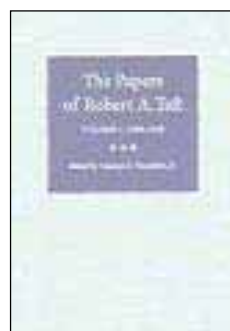
**Richard Lukas, *Forgotten Holocaust: The Poles under German Occupation, 1939-1945.* New York: Hippocrene, 2003. Paperback. \$14.95.**

An expanded edition of a standard work on the travails of the Poles at the hands of the Germans during the Second World War. Author Lukas never met an (anti-Polish) atrocity story he didn't like, and scrupulously omits any historical facts or considerations that tarnish Poland's World War II martyrdom. A champion of the Polish national cause, Lukas writes frankly of the role of Poland's Jews played in imposing communist rule on eastern Poland during the first Soviet occupation, 1939-41. A new foreword by historian Norman Davies updates the long simmering, occasionally boiling, controversies between Poles and Jews over their respective roles during the war.



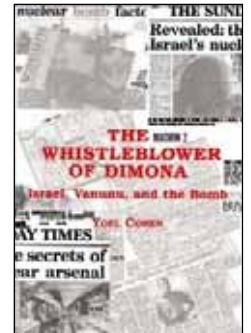
**Clarence E. Wunderlin Jr. (ed.), *The Papers of Robert A. Taft: Volume 3, 1945-1948.* Kent, OH: Kent State University Press, 2003. Hardcover. 584 pp. \$65.00**

It's often forgotten that Robert A. Taft, a conservative senator from Ohio who earned the sobriquet "Mr. Republican," won inclusion in John Kennedy's *Profiles in Courage* by his fearless and principled stand against the Nuremberg trials. This collection includes Taft's public statements and other source material on his stand against what he considered to be a travesty of justice and a betrayal of his own country's ideals and traditions.



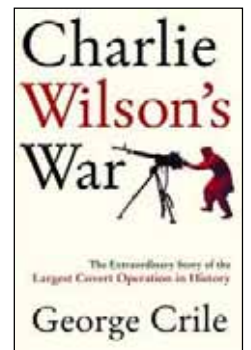
**Yoel Cohen, *The Whistleblower of Dimona: Israel, Vanunu, and the Bomb.* New York: Holmes and Meier, 2002. Hardcover. 352 pp. \$24.95.**

Seventeen years before America invaded Iraq to confiscate that country's still elusive weapons of mass destruction, a technician employed at Israel's nuclear research center revealed top secret information about Israel's flourishing (and illegal) nuclear weapons program to the London *Sunday Times*. Soon afterward, the whistleblower, Mordechai Vanunu, was kidnapped from England and returned to Israel, where he was sentenced to eighteen years in prison by a closed tribunal. While Cohen's book is far from an unqualified defense of Vanunu, any focus at all on this latterday Man in the Iron Mask, who continues to languish in miserable conditions, is to be welcomed at a time when world leaders publicly ignore the Zionist state's large and potent nuclear arsenal.



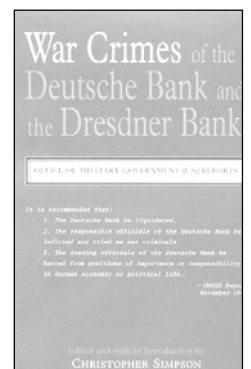
**George Crile, *Charlie Wilson's War: The Extraordinary Story of the Largest Covert Operation in History.* New York: Atlantic Monthly, 2003. 428 pp. \$26.**

An admiring tribute to the ability of a rather shadowy Congressman, Charlie Wilson (R-Texas), and a Greek-American CIA officer, Gust Avrakotos, to arm and fund the Afghan resistance to the Red Army's occupation of Afghanistan during the 1980s. The author's enthusiasm for the operation, in which Afghan guerrillas armed with Stinger missiles drove out the Soviets and hastened the collapse of communism, doesn't detract, for knowledgeable American readers, from a gradual awareness of nemesis, in the form of 9/11 and associated blowback at the hands of Islamic fanatics trained and armed by the U.S.



**Christopher Simpson (ed.), *War Crimes of the Deutsche Bank and the Dresdner Bank: Office of Military Government (U.S.) Reports.* New York: Holmes and Meier, 2003. Hardcover. 432 pp. \$45.00**

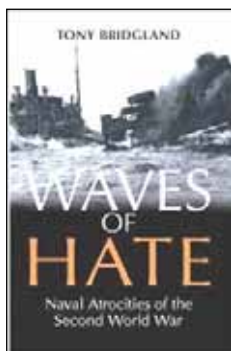
More Holo-hokum from frenetic Christopher Simpson, author of various books on the eternal 'Nazi menace.' Simpson has mined the reports and recommendations of the finance division of the U.S. military government—this book largely consists of reprints of these documents—and then glossed them



with his own lamentations over the failure of the occupation authorities to abolish Germany's most important financial institutions and hang their leaders as war criminals. That the political wind was changing in Europe even while the disproportionately leftist and Jewish investigators were writing their reports is blamed more on reactionary U.S. elements than on Uncle Joe. No new historical information here—only old accusations.

**Masao Shiosuki, *Doctor at Nagasaki: "My First Assignment Was Mercy Killing"*. North Clarendon, VT: Tuttle, 2003. Paperback. 191 pp. \$6.95.**

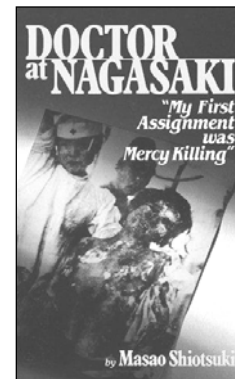
Most Americans continue to regard the atomic bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki as at worst a grim necessity, at best a humanitarian deed that "saved [American] lives." This book, written by a Japanese physician, will give pause to at least a few of those who defend history's only employment of nuclear weapons. It recounts his desperate efforts to treat the countless victims of terrible injuries from the detonation of "Little Man," as the nuclear bomb dropped on Nagasaki was engagingly named. A sobering ac-



count by a true medical hero, *Doctor at Nagasaki* also includes a record of Dr. Shiosuki's efforts to alert the medical profession to radiation sickness and other long-term effects of atomic weapons.

**Tony Bridgland, *Waves of Hate: Naval Atrocities of the Second World War*. Annapolis, MD: Naval Institute Press, 2003. Hardcover. 256 pp. \$32.95**

A rare study of World War II atrocities that deals with violations by all sides, *Waves of Hate* documents the sinkings of hospital ships and unarmed passenger liners, the machine gunning or abandonment of enemy lifeboats to their fates, and other departures from the code of naval warfare. Numerous long forgotten or suppressed Allied excesses are considered, while author Bridgland deflates victor propaganda regarding incidents such as the sinking of the *Laconia*, trumped up into a terrible German crime in postwar British courts. A useful addition to revisionist libraries.



## Research News

### From the Records of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, Part 3

*By Germar Rudolf*

#### 1. From Single Prosecution to Giant Trial

As the first two parts of this series reported,<sup>1</sup> the judicial investigations concerning crimes committed in concentration camp Auschwitz were initiated in early 1958 due to the accusation by Adolf Rögner, who was at that time in prison. Stuttgart prosecutor Weber had several times described Rögner as a "contradictory and psychopathic professional criminal" (v. I, p. 106r, also p. 85r).<sup>2</sup> For this reason the prosecutor's office was unwilling to request the arrest of Wilhelm Boger. Then, on the basis of the testimony of the witness Paul Leo Scheidel, they decided to go ahead. One week after Scheidel's testimony the request was made (v. I, pp. 128f.) and the following day it was approved by the court (v. I, p. 130).

In a conversation with Hermann Langbein, the president of the Communist-oriented Auschwitz Committee, on Nov. 4, 1958, which was a month after Boger was arrested, Stuttgart chief prosecutor Schabel indicated he would,

*"use every means to expand the investigation to all other members of the SS guard personnel of concentration camp Auschwitz who have made themselves liable for crimes for which the statute of limitations has not expired, so far as the German judicial authority can get its hands on them."*<sup>3</sup>

Parallel with the prosecution of Boger in Stuttgart, the reve-

lations by journalist Thomas Gnielka of the left-wing *Frankfurter Rundschau* brought about a gigantic judicial investigation in Frankfurt. On Jan. 15., 1959, Gnielka sent general prosecutor Fritz Bauer, in Frankfurt, documents from concentration camp Auschwitz, which recorded the dates when prisoners in Auschwitz had been shot by guard personnel while trying to escape and who they were, and also an (incomplete) list of the guard detachment at Auschwitz (v. 1a, p. 1, 2/1-2/20).<sup>4</sup>

At the request of Dr. Bauer,<sup>5</sup> the Federal high court decided that the prosecutions against 95 named former SS men who had served at Auschwitz should be combined and that all should be tried before the Land court Frankfurt.<sup>6</sup>

#### 2. The Boger Swing

A certain amount of space was devoted to the so-called "Boger swing" described by the witness Scheidel in the last part of this series. According to the statements of various former prisoners it was a torture instrument which the accused former Gestapo officer Boger used while interrogating prisoners to force them to talk. Although I have so far analyzed only three of the more than seventy volumes of the investigation for the Auschwitz trial, it is still worthwhile to make a small list of the characteristics of this instrument as they have been described by various witnesses, see the table below.

If one applied statistical methods to solve the puzzle of the Boger swing the most probable description would be that of Hugo Breiden. This is supported by the statement of the accused Wilhelm Boger, who confirmed during his first interrogation that during his period of service “intensive interrogation methods” had been used, including blows with a baton, hanging by the hands tied behind the back from a hook in the ceiling, and also the use of the “swing”, which Boger described almost the same way as the prisoner Hugo Breiden. Boger claimed that through his efforts the hangings from the ceiling were discontinued, and that he never administered more than 3 to 5 blows with the baton, so that the prisoners never suffered bodily harm.<sup>7</sup> He also disputed that he had ever participated in any killings.<sup>8</sup>

### 3. Unbelievable Statements

#### 3.1 GENERAL

Mere comparison of the diverse statements on the so-called Boger swing demonstrates that not all that the witnesses say can be taken at face value, even as to what they say is the source of their knowledge. In what follows, a number of statements that are unbelievable or at least suspect on various grounds are noted and briefly analyzed.

#### 3.2 JOSEF KRET

Volume 1 of the Auschwitz notebook, which deals with the history of the punishment bunker of the political detachment in the main camp of Auschwitz, was introduced as evidence in the investigations.<sup>9</sup> The second part of this notebook contains the report of Josef Kret on his own experiences. Part of this report was summarized as follows by the judicial chief investigator:

*“A particularly feared capo [camp term for inmate superior] would, for pure pleasure, throw a lasso around his victim, draw it tight and then swing the victim back and forth until he was dead.”*

When two bodies of approximately the same mass are tied together with a rope and then caused to rotate, they turn about a common center of mass which, depending upon the relative proportions of the masses, will be nearly in the middle of the rope. Therefore, as the said capo began to swing his victim around, he would himself be swung, since the same forces that act on his victim also act on him. If the victim were not a small child, the procedure described would be physically impossible and is proved to be a lie.

#### 3.3 WILHELM BOGER

During his first interrogation, Wilhelm Boger was asked about the events on the “ramp” in Birkenau. Boger described this ramp correctly as a railway siding leading into the camp. During an investigation against SS members who were suspected of misappropriating property of the incoming prisoners, he stated he had only occasionally had anything to do with the ramp in Birkenau. Boger testified as follows about the sorting of the incoming prisoners:<sup>10</sup>

*“Some prisoners were designated as able to work, and those not able to work were taken in goods trucks to the crematories for gassing. That was how the procedure worked with the incoming prisoner transports.*

*I observed the procedure in the course of my duty assignment.*

*I would like to emphasize that I was never involved in the sorting of prisoners.”*

It may be that Boger himself was never involved in the sorting, but what he describes here can not have taken place. The ramp in Birkenau was only completed in May 1944. Its head end ran between the two large crematories II and III, and it was only a relatively short distance on foot from the ramp to the crematories. It is unthinkable that goods trucks would have been used to carry incoming prisoners on the ramp to the crematories. Apparently Boger confused the sorting procedures in

WITNESS	DESCRIPTION OF THE BOGER SWING	KIND OF TESTIMONY	SOURCE
Paul Leo Scheidel	gymnastic horizontal bar, hands tied, drawn over knees, bar running between them, beating of naked buttocks	own experience	v. 1, p. 112
Orli Wald	wheel on which the prisoner was bound, rotated, beaten coming up, threat of head bumping on ground going down	eyewitness of the apparatus, not the torture	v. 2, p. 189r
Hugo Breiden	arms tied in front of legs, iron rod between backs of knees and arms, laid on two iron poles, like gymnastic horizontal bar	own experience	v. 2, p. 217
Erwin Bartel	consists of crank and shaft, prisoner chained onto them, beaten by turning the shaft	observation as recorder of the political detachment (Gestapo)	v. 2, p. 221
Anatol Indulski	hands tied together in back, hanging by the hands on a pole	drawing by third party	v. 2, p. 228
Feliks Mylyk	wooden horse with iron pipe, iron pipe ran between bound arms and backs of knees, prisoner turned around the pipe in a circle and beaten	eyewitness of the apparatus, not the torture	v. 2, p. 235
Adolf Rögner	head and feet tied together, stretched over gymnastic parallel bars, whipped	eyewitness of the apparatus and the torture	v. 2, p. 258
Ludwig Wörl	iron pipe runs between bound arms and backs of knees, shaft laid on wooden horses, prisoner was turned around on the pipe in a circle and beaten	hearsay	v. 2, p. 316

Birkenau with those done at the railway platform in the main camp at a time when the railway siding to Birkenau had not yet been completed. >From the main camp to the camp at Birkenau the distance was nearly 3 km. Prisoners who were weak or unable to walk may in that case in fact have been carried by goods truck. Because of the distance, it would have been impossible to know firsthand the exact destination of these goods trucks in the camp at Birkenau. Therefore, it is clear that Boger has confused his personal experiences with things he has heard.

It is also amazing that Boger was never asked anything further about the gassings he mentioned. Since the supposed mass gassings constitute a much greater crime than that of which Boger was accused, one must wonder at the lack of interest of the examining officials. This lack of interest, however, is typical, as most interrogators, whether police, prosecutors, defense attorneys or judges, were usually satisfied when their preconceptions were confirmed. No one had any interest in an investigation of what was stated.

### 3.4 CURT POSENER

At the request of the Communistic Auschwitz Committee, former Auschwitz inmate Curt Posener filed a complaint against Boger, who, Posener asserted from his own experience, tortured prisoner Walter Windmüller to death. Posener stated:<sup>11</sup>

*"After about three hours Bogner[sic] brought Windmüller, who staggered badly and from whose pants leg blood flowed, back to the standing place. Windmüller came to stand behind me again, and was able to whisper to me that Boger had smashed his testicles and kidneys."*

Any man will confirm without hesitation that no man would be able to stand up on the muster ground and whisper to the man in front of him when his testicles are crushed to the degree that blood flows from his pants. Posener did not write the truth.

### 3.5 HUGO BREIDEN

The witness Breiden, who has already been mentioned, reported frequently that there had been murders by shooting in the neck in concentration camp Auschwitz, and that in his opinion every officer in the camp was implicated in same, including Boger. He described such events as follows:<sup>12</sup>

*"Let me recall the case of the prisoner Jakob now. He was a Jew who was attendant in detention barracks 11. Whether Jakob participated in shootings is something I do not know. I do know, however, that he was present at shootings in the neck. With his powerful frame he knew how to hold those chosen to die by the arms, while the SS then administered the shot in the neck."*

Prisoners on their way to execution have always been bound for the simple reason that practically no one will go willingly to be executed. Therefore it is nonsense to state that some strongman had to hold the person to be executed by the arms. This is apparently an imaginary production.

Since 1928 Breiden had been punished by law frequently, the last time being a sentence of 18-months at the reform school and three years loss of civil honor for procuring. He was probably one of the common criminals who were sent to concentration camp Auschwitz.<sup>13</sup>

### 3.6 HERBERT KURZ

The following comment occurs in the interrogation transcript of this witness:<sup>14</sup>

*"In June and July 1943, from Block 21 of concentration camp Auschwitz on three occasions in all he personally saw Boger kill altogether 200 prisoners by shooting in the neck with a weapon specially adapted for short range use in front of Block 11, the bunker. In one case he counted the dead prisoners who had been killed by Boger in this way, and there were 98. On the other two times there had been fewer. Boger had carried out other shootings, but he had not been able to see them. He stated that a Jew who was also a prisoner was made to hold fast to two other prisoners with outstretched arms, so that Boger could shoot them in the neck from a distance of about 8 m."*

It is somewhat improbable that a middle-level interrogation officer should carry out such mass shootings, and would do so alone. It is also improbable that someone should remember the number of executions so closely after 15 years. Further, it is doubtful that a weapon would have been specially adapted for the purpose of such executions. It is also improbable that anyone would kill by shooting in the neck from a distance of 8 m., and it is especially improbable that anyone—how did this witness know that it was a Jew?—could or would hold the culprits tight with outstretched arms. People intended for execution are generally tied up securely and not held tight in such an absurd way—with outstretched arms! One can not kill 98 persons one after the other in this way. This testimony is false, and the witness is not believable.

### 3.7 ANATOL INDULSKI

This witness, already noted through his unorthodox testimony on the Boger swing, reported on his claimed experiences with Boger in his letter to the Communistic Auschwitz Committee. Probably truthfully, he writes that during his time at Auschwitz he had had an account at the camp commissary where he could deposit small amounts of money for safekeeping. Because at one point a sum was not paid out that he believed was owed him, he complained, whereby the political detachment was called in due to suspicion of misappropriation. Indulski then stated that Boger berated him without cause, yelled at him and brutally beat him, after which the money he was owed was paid to him.<sup>15</sup> If the disposition of the SS to this prisoner had been so brutal and reckless, how probable is it that he would have been paid his money? The two things do not fit together. The witness apparently thought he needed to clothe his positive experience—the political detachment made sure he received his money—with a negative experience in tune with the Zeitgeist.

### 3.8 ADOLF RÖGNER

After the prosecutor's office had gathered several witness statements from former Auschwitz prisoners incriminating Wilhelm Boger, they began to take even Adolf Rögner seriously and interrogated him. Rögner served up his colorful concoctions by the bushel:<sup>16</sup>

– He could make concrete accusations against 1,400 to 1,600 persons, of which he could name about 160. No man can

have so much particular knowledge over so many persons from his own experience. This demonstrates again Rögner's métier: professional accuser and perjured false witness.

- The small babies of incoming prisoners were supposedly ripped from the arms of their parents and thrown onto a pile—40-50 babies, whereby those on the bottom were crushed or suffocated. From there the babies were allegedly thrown onto a goods truck and then thrown still living into the booming crematory ovens. Every father and every mother will confirm that he or she would rather be shot than to permit such a treatment of his or her children. Such a treatment by the SS would have necessarily led to an uprising of the prisoners that could only have been bloodily suppressed by a massive use of firearms. Therefore, it can be completely excluded that any treatment even remotely like what was described ever happened.
- Rögner claims that he hid behind a tree near the ramp in Birkenau, from where he saw the following:

*"Therefore I kept myself hidden behind a big tree and watched what was happening. Then I saw how Boger went off to the side with a Jewish girl about 15 years old who had just come in on the last transport. [...] When Boger and the girl were about 150 m. from his other colleagues—I myself was about 15-20 m. from the scene of the incident—Boger spoke to the girl and right afterward hit her powerfully, causing her to fall to the ground unconscious. I could not understand what Boger said to the girl, but I assume that he wanted to use the girl for sexual purposes. After the girl had been stricken unconscious, Boger could no longer accomplish his shameful purpose, because the selection commando had come closer in the meantime and he would be afraid to be seen. Boger had torn some of the clothing from the girl's body, and some of it he had cut off with his pocket knife—or maybe it was a stiletto. After the girl was stripped down to her underclothes and stockings [...]. Then he drew his pistol and shot the girl once each in the left and right breast. Then he stuck the pistol barrel in the girl's genitals and fired one more shot."*

When the interrogating officer—who had evidently kept his head—commented that because of these shots Boger's activities would have been noticed, Rögner adjusted his statement by adding that in Birkenau "throughout the camp, every day at all times of the day and night" one heard shots, so Boger's murder would not have been noticed. Also no one would have noticed the corpse right away.

This is the sort of Nazi Sado-pornography that has become so successful. But there are two catches. First, not even in Auschwitz was there gunfire at all hours, and, in any case, three shots at the ramp would not have gone unnoticed. Second, there were no trees near the ramp in Birkenau near which Rögner could have hid.

- Rögner further asserts that children arriving at the ramp were so terrified by the brutality of Boger and other SS members that they clung to the legs of Boger and the SS members, whereon Boger shot them. As if children would cling to the legs of those terrorizing them.
- Rögner asserted further:

*"After the arrival of another prisoner transport in Auschwitz II Boger took one of the babies that lay on the floor, unwrapped it from its diapers, so that it was completely naked, took it by the legs and hit it by the head against the iron edge of the goods car, at first lightly and then with much greater force, until the head was completely squashed. Then he twisted around the arms and legs of the already dead child and threw it to the side."*

Rögner supposedly watched all this take place at the ramp while he hid behind a tree—but there were no such trees there.

- In addition, Rögner asserted he had witnessed approximately 30 further single murders committed by Boger, that they had been committed in a similar or more gruesome way, and that he had witnessed Boger's excesses of torture, which he observed "unnoticed through the keyhole or through the window"—how childish. Boger stated that the room in which he applied "intensive methods of interrogation" could not be seen into from outside.<sup>17</sup>

The greatest liar in all the land,  
the denouncer Rögner is that man.

This comment that the official who interrogated Rögner added to the transcript is especially shocking:

*"The interrogation record of Nov. 4., 1958, in which Rögner described new facts of the case with particularly sadistic features, on which he had previously made no statement, was taken after Rögner requested that he be allowed to consult the confiscated green notebooks with the inscription "KZ Auschwitz" to help his memory. Rögner is allowed the opportunity to inspect these notebooks before the interrogation. In the years 1945/46 Rögner wrote descriptions in these notebooks of such events in concentration camp Auschwitz."*

Thus Rögner's perverse brain-spooks quickly developed into "facts of the case" and it is openly admitted that Rögner was allowed to "refresh" his "memory" from the propaganda material he had assembled.

### 3.9. LUDWIG WÖRL

This witness stated that in Auschwitz 50 to 300 persons were shot per day, about 100 per day on average.<sup>18</sup> This would mean that practically all registered prisoners who died in Auschwitz were shot, which is clearly not the case.

## 4. Believable Statements

### 4.1 GENERAL

When he was confronted with the partly wild accusations of former prisoners, Wilhelm Boger made a significant point in his response:<sup>19</sup>

*"What kind of refutation can I make to accusations based on pure imagination? We, and especially former SS judge Dr. Konrad Morgen, can speak to my conduct, [...] In 1943 or 1944 Dr. Morgen was given the task of investigating cases of brutality and corruption in the concentration camp. [...] I worked for Dr. Morgen at the time as an investigating officer trying to uncover such illegal activity. I can produce prisoners who worked for my office, to testify to the way I performed my duties. [...] I find myself trapped, how-*

*ever, since I am certain that any one in this bunch of former prisoners who makes an exonerating statement is subject to the active hate and merciless revenge of his earlier fellow prisoners, and is marked as a collaborator and enemy of the common cause of revenge. In particular, I am certain that no governmental power is able to protect these people from the organized revenge of conspiratorial former fellow prisoners."*

While one can expect that accused persons will attempt to deny responsibility for or to minimize the crimes of which they are charged, at the same time one can expect the opposite behavior from the victims. That does not mean that anything an accused person says that is self-incriminatory must be considered true, but it should almost always be considered that whatever a former victim says that is exculpatory is true, assuming that the accused can no longer pose a threat to him. The last is certainly the case with respect to former SS members, who since 1945 have been generally subject to an open season worldwide without legal restraint. In contrast to the very influential and well-organized former prisoners' organizations, since the end of the war there has arisen not one organization that could represent the interests of former SS members in a political way.

The following passages and excerpts from witness statements are presented because they contradict the usual clichés with unusual honesty and credibility or merely because the witnesses have resisted the general hate hysteria that even then hung over the concentration camp system of the Third Reich.

#### 4.2 ARTUR HARTMANN

This witness was assigned to potato peeling duty because he suffered a foot injury when he arrived in the camp, which he remembers as the duty assignment given many sick or unfit-for-work prisoners—which contrasts with the standard cliché that such prisoners were gassed. Every week those who had become fit for work were reclassified and sent to other tasks. He reported the case of an SS man who had mistreated prisoners and who was later executed for this and other crimes. In any case, he was not mistreated by the concentration camp personnel.<sup>20</sup>

#### 4.3 HENRYK BARTOSZEWICZ

This witness worked in the leather works during part of his imprisonment in Auschwitz. He reports in emotional terms on the fact that Boger interrogated him and some of his comrades because of their membership in a resistance organization and kicked him. Amazingly, Bartoszewicz says nothing about the so-called "Boger swing" or about other worse tortures. Although a member of the underground, he was not mistreated any further and he was apparently even able to secure himself favored treatment through bribery. He erred however, in believing that Boger had ordered the execution of several of his partisan comrades. Boger was merely an interrogation officer.<sup>21</sup>

#### 4.4 ALEKSANDER GORECKI

This prisoner reported how Boger came into the infirmary quarters of the main camp of Auschwitz to fetch a prisoner who had just undergone bladder surgery and was scheduled to have prostate surgery. Setting aside whether Gorecki's statement

makes sense in detail, it is interesting to discover the noteworthy fact that prisoners in Auschwitz were given surgery to preserve or restore their health.<sup>22</sup>

#### 4.5 ADOLF RÖGNER

Even Rögner's testimony is not completely falsified. For example, with respect to his stay in concentration camp Dachau he reported that in May 1943 he was treated in the infirmary there with the result that he was later able to work again.<sup>23</sup>

#### 4.6 KONRAD LANG

Konrad Lang was an inmate of Auschwitz from 1940 to 1945 and in 1943 was chief capo in a plant of the German Armaments Works, where he supervised approximately 2,000 prisoners. He claims to have had dealings with Boger only once, with respect to an attempted sabotage investigation:

*"Lang has only heard secondhand that Boger was "very keen" and that the prisoners were afraid of him. Lang claims he has never heard of killings or shootings of prisoners by Boger or on Boger's orders."*

Apparently Lang was fairly high in the prisoner hierarchy in the camp and presumably came in contact with many prisoners as well as with many officials of the camp. This makes it utterly amazing that he knows nothing of murders by Wilhelm Boger. If Lang had something to hide (collaboration with the Germans, mistreatment of prisoners) he would have been blackmailable and would have done everything possible not to arouse the ill-will of the prisoner organizations—that is, he would have testified against Boger, even to the point of telling lies. But he says nothing accusatory about Boger. Apart from love of the truth, I can think of no reason why Lang would testify the way he did.<sup>24</sup>

#### 4.7 MORITZ SALOMON

Salomon claims that he was so badly mistreated by Boger that he was subsequently "fit for gassing". Nevertheless, a miracle happened and Salomon was sent to the infirmary and restored to health.<sup>25</sup>

#### 4.8 FELIX LUBECKI

"As I have already explained, I never witnessed mistreatment or other brutalities on the part of Boger. But he was generally feared by us prisoners in concentration camp Auschwitz and everyone stayed away from him. People said Boger hit people, but no prisoner ever told me he had been hit by Boger."

Witness Hugo Breiden said that Boger's methods of torture were "known worldwide."<sup>26</sup> How can it be then, that Lubecki knew nothing about them? Either he was grossly out of touch, in which case he was not fit to be a witness, or professional criminal Breiden and his ilk were not honest, which we have already shown to be the case elsewhere.

#### 4.9 JAKOB LEWINSKI

The testimony of Lewinski is unquestionably the most impressive that was made in 1958 during the investigations for the Auschwitz trial.<sup>27</sup>

According to his testimony, Lewinski, who was classified as a half-Jew by the Nuremberg Law because he was the son of a



Jewish father, was sent to Auschwitz because he had refused to divorce his wife, who was classified as a full-Jew. His wife was apparently deported at the same time he was, but not with him, and he never heard from her again. She was later declared legally dead, but no one ever knew what her fate had been.

Lewinski claims that it was only later that he heard that the sorting on arrival at Auschwitz was what meant the difference between life and death in the gas chamber. In any case, he does not say that he already knew that.

He described his living conditions in the work camp Auschwitz-Monowitz as “humane”.<sup>28</sup>

*“Inside the camp there was a bordello with 10 women, but they were only available to Reich German prisoners. The prisoners received up to 150 DM [should be RM—Reichsmarks] scrip per week for their labor, with which they could purchase mustard, sauerkraut, red beets and so on [...]*

*The camp had generally good sanitary facilities, bathing and showering rooms and an excellent health-care facility. [...] For provisions we received 1/3 [loaf of] commissary bread three times a week, 1/2 commissary bread 4 times, and additionally a bowl of coffee in the morning, 20 grams of margarine 5 times, one time a small amount of marmalade and one time a piece of cheese. In the afternoon at work there was the so-called Buna soup, nutritionally worthless. In the evening there was a thicker soup, partly beets, partly cabbage etc.”<sup>29</sup>*

Lewinski stated that because of the 12-hour workday with insufficient nourishment there was initially a high death rate, but conditions improved and the death rate was substantially reduced.

*“Our camp commander was SS Obersturmführer Schöttl, who was sentenced to death at Dachau, supposedly for crimes he had committed before he came to our camp, because as camp commander of our camp he would never have deserved the death penalty.”<sup>30</sup>*

Bear in mind: this prisoner was not only imprisoned for unjust cause, but also lost his wife because of this government. He must have possessed decency of high order to be able to make such a statement. One can only say, hats off!

Lewinski had a clash with the political detachment because he had bribed a civilian worker at Buna in order to receive larger amounts of money and packages from his mother in Berlin. He shared the contents of these packages with the aforesaid civilian worker, but word of this illegal arrangement leaked out and he was ordered to appear before Boger to be questioned. Because the money he was sent amounted to several thousand Reichsmarks, Boger suspected Lewinski of planning a large-scale breakout. Lewinski described how Boger questioned him. First he was made to stand at the camp gate where he watched the work commando march out, which they did “as if to the sound of a brass band”.<sup>31</sup>

Next he was “intensively” interrogated by Boger, that is, whipped on the seat of the pants to make him talk. Since Lewinski knew nothing about an escape attempt or other illegal activity, and denied having done anything wrong he irritated Boger to the point where the latter hit him with his fists. Finally Boger gave up and believed Lewinski that there was no con-

spiracy behind this case of corruption. Lewinski said the transcript of the interrogation that he was given to sign was exact and objective. Three SS members consulted together on what should be done with Lewinski:<sup>32</sup>

*“At this point in the proceeding one of the three told a funny story, which was not half bad [...] and made me smile despite my miserable condition.”*

That irritated Boger once more, whereupon he gave Lewinski five more strokes of the whip, which caused Lewinski to almost lose consciousness. Then supposedly Boger said:

*“Now, now, do not pretend, you have held up extremely well until now.”*

When Lewinski mentioned that he had had nothing to eat or drink the whole day, Boger fed him from his own provisions. As punishment for this incident of corruption Lewinski was given a week’s stay in detention barracks. Boger then designated Lewinski for “special treatment”—Lewinski stated Boger instructed the SS orderly as follows:<sup>33</sup>

*“Take this shitbird to the barracks, but tell the barracks capo he should treat the man especially decently and give him first-class grub.”*

The official interrogating Lewinski wrote this dry comment:<sup>34</sup>

*“Witness Lewinski knows nothing about the mass shootings or single murders with which the suspect Boger has been charged.”*

Consequently, Lewinski was classified as a “useless” witness for the purposes of the prosecution. From a historical viewpoint, however, Lewinski’s statement is a priceless example of truthfulness and decency.

## Notes

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung*, 7(1) (2003), pp. 95-101. Reproduction of the first two pages of the transcript of the interrogation of Jakob Lewinski are reprint there; more pages are posted on the internet ([vho.org/VffG/2003/1](http://vho.org/VffG/2003/1)). Translated by Michael Humphrey.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *TR* 1(1) (2003), pp. 115-118; 1(2) (2003), pp. 235-238.

<sup>2</sup> All volume and page numbers refer to: Staatsanwaltschaft beim LG Frankfurt (Main), Strafsache beim Schwurgericht Frankfurt (Main) gegen Baer und Andere wegen Mordes, ref. 4 Js 444/59.

<sup>3</sup> Memorandum of public prosecutor Herder, Nov. 5, 1958, Vol. 2, p. 243.

<sup>4</sup> Gnielka received the documents from Emil Wulkan, member of the community council of the Jewish community of Frankfurt. Wulkan had received them from an acquaintance, who claims to have salvaged them from the Lessing Lodge in Breslau shortly before this city was occupied by the Red Army; vol. 1a, pp. 24f. More documents were about the Auschwitz camp personnel was delivered on Jan. 29, 1959, by Dr. Franz Unikower, vol. 1a, pp. 5, 6/1-6/5.

<sup>5</sup> Feb. 15, 1959, vol. 1a, pp. 10f. On Jan. 29, 1959 (vol. 1a, p. 7), Erich Schüle from the *Zentralen Stelle der Landesjustizverwaltungen* (Central Office of State Judicative Administrations) in Ludwigsburg told Dr. Fritz Bauer that the investigation in this matter had been taken over by the *Zentrale Stelle*. The German Federal Supreme Court, however, reversed that decision. The cases pending in Stuttgart and in Ludwigsburg were subsequently transferred to Frankfurt; cf. letter Schüle/ZSt of June 19, 1959, vol. 1a, p. 32; letter OSTa Vogel, FFM, June 26, 1959, vol. 1a, pp. 41f.

<sup>6</sup> 2 Ars 60/59, in the files vol. 1a, pp. 15-19.

<sup>7</sup> Vol. 1, pp. 140f.

<sup>8</sup> Vol. 2, p. 266. Rudolf Aschenauer was Boger’s defense lawyer, cf. p. 269.

<sup>9</sup> Vol. 1, pp. 125f.

<sup>10</sup> Vol. 1, p. 142. Large parts of this protocol are illegible. Boger’s wife claims to be totally unaware of any crimes her husband was accused of and stated to have no knowledge at all about what was going on in the camp; vol. 1, pp. 206-213.

<sup>11</sup> Letter of Oct. 1, 1058, vol. 1, p. 144R.

- <sup>12</sup> Interrogation of Oct. 27, 1958; vol. 2, p. 218.  
<sup>13</sup> Memorandum of the interrogating officer Haug, vol. 2, p. 221.  
<sup>14</sup> Interrogation of Oct. 30, 1958; vol. 2, pp. 221a/b.  
<sup>15</sup> Letter of Oct. 22, 1958; vol. 2, pp. 228f.  
<sup>16</sup> Interrogation of Nov. 4, 1958, vol. 2, pp. 247-261.  
<sup>17</sup> Vol. 1, p. 141.  
<sup>18</sup> Interrogation of Nov. 25, 1958; vol. 2, p. 318.  
<sup>19</sup> Interrogation of Oct. 14, 1958; vol. 2, pp. 166f.  
<sup>20</sup> Vol. 1, p. 132. Date and second page of this interrogation protocol are illegible.  
<sup>21</sup> Copy of statement of Aug. 30 [1958]; vol. 2, pp. 223ff.  
<sup>22</sup> Letter to Auschwitz Comité, Oct. 20, 1958; vol. 2, p. 226.  
<sup>23</sup> Vol. 2, p. 250.  
<sup>24</sup> Interrogation of Nov. 7, 1958; vol. 2, pp. 279f.  
<sup>25</sup> Interrogation of Nov. 14, 1958; vol. 2, p. 283. Salomon further maintained that he was able to watch Boger's tortures from his hospital bed and that

- Boger was responsible for the alleged first gassing experiments with 38 inmates using Zyklon B in the basement of the arrest building, for which purpose Boger allegedly "had boards nailed over the windows", *ibid.*, p. 284. He did not explain which purpose this nailing of boards served. Those windows would not have become gas-tight by this.  
<sup>26</sup> Vol. 2, p. 217.  
<sup>27</sup> Interrogation of Nov. 24, 1958, vol. 2, pp. 305-310.  
<sup>28</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 305.  
<sup>29</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 305R.  
<sup>30</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 306.  
<sup>31</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 307R.  
<sup>32</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 310.  
<sup>33</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 310R.  
<sup>34</sup> Letter of Nov. 24, 1958, to public prosecution at the District Court Stuttgart; vol. 2, p. 304.

## Letters to the Editor

### In General

To the Editor:

World War II is the biggest war that has ever happened. Therefore it is necessary that an honest objective investigation be carried out by our government as to the true cause of this unfortunate war.

Everything that is taught about this war and all the material that is available to the public is only the one sided biased point of view.

Year after year after year, anti German movies are made. Even in movies and television shows that are not about World War II, there are anti German comments. There are almost no other movies made about World War II, except anti-German movies.

Hardly any movies have been made about the sufferings of American and allied prisoners of war, military and civilian under the Japanese. No movies have been made about communist atrocities and allied atrocities.

When Germany invaded Poland for good reason because of the Danzig Corridor, England and France declared war on Germany. When communist Russia invaded the eastern part of Poland, England and France did not declare war on communist Russia.

Then there is our alliance with communist Russia. Our alliance with communist Russia must be denounced, and all communist atrocities and allied atrocities must be made known.

It is time that the government of this country conduct an honest and objective investigation into World War II.

Charles E. Donner, USA

### Blame on You

Dear Germar:

Because you are now producing *TR* on a regular basis, I find that my German has gone down the toilet, since I no longer have to wade through tortured German sentences a kilometer long in order to find the separable prefix at the end of the string

of ten thousand nouns, adjectives, adverbs, prepositions, and participles!

So, I blame YOU for producing such a fine English language journal; my German was coming along rather well until you began to meddle with my progress.

Robert H. Countess, PhD

P.S.: Seriously: keep up the great work!

### Profound Criticism

Dear Germar,

I wish to congratulate you to the great achievement of having launched two revisionist "flagships," the *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* and *The Revisionist*. I have followed them from the beginning and find them unrivalled for profundity and criticism of the sources within the field of WW II history. The articles published in the 25 issues of *VffG* cover an admirable broad spectrum and it is hard to find any detail that has not been at least touched on. I can think of just one such theme, viz. the mass murder (decreed by Hitler) of mentally deranged patients and incurables suffering pain.

I guess that a comparison between the decision, the ordering, the equipment and the performance of this program with the same components of the alleged Holocaust program would be extremely elucidating.

With kind regards

Carl O. Nordling

**Re.: P. Grubach, "All Men Are Equal—But Are They Really?," *TR*, 1(2) (2003), pp. 139-150**

To the Editor:

As I noted in my article, one of the key arguments of the late Stephen Jay Gould and his colleagues that deny the reality of significant genetic differences between the human races, is that there are no genes unique to any race.

After the publication of my article, I read an important 1982 paper, "Genetic Relationship and Evolution of Human Races,"

by Masatoshi Nei and Arun K. Roychoudhury. *Evolutionary Biology*, volume 14, pp. 1-59. On page 12 we read:

*"In this connection it is worthwhile to note that the Ne-  
groid population has many unique alleles [alternative forms  
of a gene] at both protein and blood group loci."*

So, refuting the claim that there are no alleles unique to any race, the Black population does in fact have some unique alleles.

Furthermore, modern science can now determine with reasonably high confidence the race of an individual from a sample of his DNA. Indeed, a private genetics laboratory recently determined with reasonably high confidence the race of a south Louisiana serial killer suspect from a sample of his DNA, thus refuting the claim that "race is a biologically meaningless concept when applied to humans." You can read the entire article about this at

[www.2theadvocate.com/stories/060403/new\\_profile001.shtml](http://www.2theadvocate.com/stories/060403/new_profile001.shtml)

*The Revisionist* is to be commended for its courage to explore the race issue. Our world is plagued with racial and ethnic violence, and it is only by taking an honest look at racial differences will we ever be able to formulate rational, humane and just solutions to these racial problems.

Paul Grubach

**Re.: R.H. Countess, "A Provocative History of the Aryan Race," *TR*, 1(2) (2003), pp. 227-229**

Dear Germar!

It seems to me that Kemp's series is not meant to be a scientific work, but was written to create a myth supporting the self-understanding of the white race. Experts might complain about missing references and about simplification, but it is one characteristic of a work creating an identity that it offers an overview, yet does not address all objections discussed by experts.

Considering the blunt and huge lies dominating the minds of the masses (see the articles by Grubach and Whitney in the same issue), Kemp's book should be welcome. It emphasizes the history of the white race, and as such it is much better founded on facts than many other similar works, thus correcting our view of the history of mankind.

*The Revisionist* is a scholarly magazine, whose readers might not emphasize the need for belief and faith, but for seeking knowledge and facts. However, one should keep in mind that this attitude is the exception rather than the rule. Most people have a need to believe in something. They usually orient themselves according to what their environment, their community considers to be true. They feel secure in such a community. If their belief is refuted or shown to be untenable, they simply change their belief—yet again merely on a basis of faith. The desire for faith and belief cannot be satisfied with scholarly deliberations, but it can be satisfied with a work like Kemp wrote it. This is the importance of Kemp's book. His descriptions are easy to understand, yet despite their simplicity, the facts are presented much more accurately than in those flawed works, which were filled with just as many clichés. These flawed works are used to create guilt feelings and to make members of the white race susceptible for blackmailing. This political abuse alone justifies a book as Kemp wrote it, which appeals to sentiments supporting the identification of white people with their race. Scholarly works cannot achieve this. Whether or not we like such feelings is immaterial. Modern behavioral science has shown that unsatisfied emotions cannot simply be turned off. They will only get misguided. How huge emotional needs for group identification are can be seen in Germany during world cup soccer games, the only occasions where the German authorities permit the masses to live out their desire for group identification.

T. Pedersen, Denmark

## In Brief

### Atrocity Propaganda in U.S. Field Dispatch

On May 24, 1945, the following propaganda lie was published in the U.S. Army periodical *The Field Dispatch* about the concentration camp Dachau:

*"Although no torture chambers were seen, stories of cruelty were a dime a dozen. One prisoner, who had spent ten years in Dachau told of human cement mixers operated by SS guards up to four years ago. He said live prisoners were fed to these grinding machines to emerge as nothing more than human hash."* (20th Armored Division, Spring 2000, p. 11)

### Furniture Dealer Causes Uproar

Because a furniture dealer in the German city of Hildesheim gave his furniture items names like „Adolf“, „Hermann“, „Rommel“, „Paulus“, the local Jewish community filed a criminal

complaint for glorification of the Third Reich. The local Industrial and Commerce Chamber considered measures against its politically incorrect member as well. (*Stuttgarter Nachrichten*, Dec. 4, 2000)

### Führer Beetle Marked for Renaming

In the 1930s, a blind beetle feasting on insect larvae was discovered in Slovenian caves. The discoverer Oskar Scheibel gave the species the name „Anophthalmus Hitleri,“ and as such the beetle was classified internationally. Scheibel, who lived in the Slovenian City of Laibach, was apparently either an admirer or an adversary of the then German Reich Chancellor. Because of its name, this beetle is today traded for prices up to \$2,000.-. In order to erase any reference to Adolf Hitler, even in the hindmost caves of Europe, the beetle will now be renamed. (*Süddeutsche Zeitung*, Aug. 10/11, 2002)

### New York Revisionist Attracts Attention

Michael Santomauro owns the New York company Roommate Finders, an apartment referral service. But he is also a very active revisionist spreading his views by email and over his website (RePortesNoteBook.com). This news was worth a double column in the *New York Times*, because a few of Santomauro's roommate customers had complained about unsolicited emails with views "critical of Jews". (*NYT*, Jan. 20, 2003)

### Book Review Caused Uproar in England

Because the prominent British Journalist A.N. Wilson positively reviewed the book *The Israeli Holocaust Against the Palestinians* in the London *Evening Standard*, the *Jewish Chronicle* demanded that Wilson be sacked and an apology be issued by the paper's publisher. The latter came about instantaneously, including the deletion of Wilson's review from the newspaper's website. Co-author of the book and the reason for this uproar is U.S. citizen Michael Hoffman II, one of the most active revisionist writers of the last 20 years.

### Unprovoked Attack

*"U.S. presidents have a rich history of taking the truth and transforming it in the pursuit of foreign policy objectives they want to achieve. In 1941, Franklin Roosevelt took the 'fact' that a German submarine had fired on an American destroyer to issue a 'shoot on sight' order for all German submarines in the Western Atlantic. On September 11 of that year (yes, Sept. 11), Roosevelt addressed the nation, declaring this 'unprovoked attack' was like a sniper in a schoolyard. Just as Bush handled Iraq, Roosevelt argued the U.S. had to act and act quickly. The facts came later. Congressional hearings in 1941 proved the United States actually provoked the attack that caused the sub to fire. The truth hardly mattered. The Nazis then, like Saddam Hussein now, were the personification of evil."*

(*Chicago Tribune*, June 25, 2003) [www.chicagotribune.com/news/nationworld/chi0306250048jun25,1,5710743.story](http://www.chicagotribune.com/news/nationworld/chi0306250048jun25,1,5710743.story)

### Similar Lies—Similar Liars

In January 1944, President Franklin D. Roosevelt, manipulated by Henry Morgenthau, Jr., his Treasury Secretary, created the War Refugee Board (WRB), which fabricated its infamous report on the *German extermination camps—Auschwitz and Birkenau*.

In September 2001, President George W. Bush, manipulated by Paul Wolfowitz, his Deputy Defense Secretary, created the Office of Special Plans (OSP), which fabricated untrue reports about Iraqi Weapons of Mass Destruction (WMD). The OSP is headed by Abram Shulsky. Inside the OSP, the four people specifically in charge of the WMD dossier are called 'The Cabal', from 'Cabala'; even *Le Monde* mentioned it (Jacques Isnard, *Le Monde*, June 7, 2003, p. 7).

NB: On June 17, the French daily *Le Monde* published an ironic front-page article entitled (in French): "Saddam was evil, therefore he had prohibited weapons." Subsequently, Robert Faurisson sent a one-sentence letter to *Le Monde*, meant for publication: "Hitler was evil, therefore he had gas chambers and gas vans." This sentence was not published.

### Move to Revoke Pulitzer Prize

In 1932, the Pulitzer Prize went to a foreign correspondent who concealed a famine and the deaths of millions of Ukrainians. Walter Duranty, the *New York Times* Moscow correspondent from 1922 to 1941, once called Josef Stalin "the greatest living statesman." Malcolm Muggeridge, Moscow correspondent for the *Manchester (England) Guardian*, once called his colleague Duranty "the greatest liar I ever knew." Ukrainians now want this prize to be revoked. (*Chicago Tribune* June 25, 2003) [www.chicagotribune.com/features/chi-0306240411jun25,1,4041091.story](http://www.chicagotribune.com/features/chi-0306240411jun25,1,4041091.story)

### Ernst Zündel Treated as Terrorist

On May 1, 2003, German-born revisionist Ernst Zündel was officially declared a security threat to Canada by the Canadian authorities and subsequently transferred to an isolation cell of Ontario's high security detention center. The reason for this may be that Ernst Zündel tried to introduce documentary evidence for his defense proving illegal activities of the Canadian authorities. Zündel has appealed against the pending deportation order. This appeal will take place *in camera*, i.e., under exclusion of the public and partly even in the absence of the defendant and his legal representative. This appeal appears to be the last legal relief preventing Zündel's deportation to Germany. (*Toronto Star*, May 8, 2003)

Under pressure from supporters of Ernst Zündel to denounce his imprisonment, Amnesty International has instead issued a policy statement declaring it has no concerns over his incarceration and that it does not consider him "a prisoner of conscience:" (*National Post*, June 17, 2003)

*"Amnesty International has reminded the Canadian government that numerous allegations of possible commission of hate crimes have been made against Ernst Zundel, largely stemming from his position with respect to the Holocaust. Those allegations must be investigated, leading to charges if borne out by the evidence."*

### Austrian Engineer Fröhlich Arrested in Vienna

On Saturday, June 21, chemical engineer (Dipl. Ing.) Wolfgang Fröhlich (51) was arrested in Vienna, Austria, and taken to prison. For seven years, Fröhlich had sent to jurists, members of parliament, politicians and journalists, thousands of copies of his writings, in which he says that the alleged wartime extermination gas chambers are a lie. Remarkably, he suffered no real legal consequences for quite a while. Then, following the publication in 2001 of his 368-page file *Die Gaskammerlüge* (The Gas Chamber Lie), the authorities decided to arrest him. But he went into hiding, and the police apparently made no serious effort for three years to find him.

### One More Censorship Authority in Germany

Germany's authorities must have considered their country's tough censorship laws and regulations to be too mild, so the media surveying authority of the state of North-Rhine-Westphalia (*Medienaufsicht*) decided to force German internet providers to disable any access to right-wing internet sites. The Internet providers affected had to file a speedy complaint against this within a few weeks to be able to fight this administrative move. (*Süddeutsche Zeitung*, Sept. 14, 2002)

### **Escalation of Censorship and Surveillance in Germany**

Several years ago, the German authorities failed to enact a law permitting the wire-tapping of journalists. But now the German Constitutional High Court decided that such wire-tapping is permissible if done in an attempt to arrest criminals. According to a telecommunication expert testifying at the German High Court, half a billion(!) phone calls are being automatically monitored in Germany every day(!) in the search of wanted criminals. This amounts to eight phone calls daily for every adult in Germany. (*Spiegel*, March 7, 2003)

### **Three Years in Jail for Music CDs**

Because he produced and distributed music CDs with moderate and extreme right-wing songs, German historian and publisher Adrian Preißinger (38) was sentenced to three years imprisonment by the District Court of Dresden. Preißinger, who harbors revisionist views, had already spent ten months in pre-trial arrest. (*Neues Deutschland*, Dec. 21, 2002)

### **€1,200 Fine for Insulting German Authorities**

Because he accused the German government of black money crimes and corruption in a public speech, German citizen Gerhardt I. (45), a sympathizer of the right-wing National Democratic Party, was sentenced to pay a fine of €1,200 by Judge Christian Kropp of the County Court of the German town of Sondershausen. (*Thüringer Allgemeine*, March 20, 2003)

### **Starting in 2004, Revisionist are Fair Game in Europe**

In 2004, the new European arrest warrant will be in effect, allowing for the immediate arrest and transfer of citizens of any member nation of the European Union to another member nation of the EU. This ends the hitherto common and complicated practice of formal extradition requests for criminals residing outside of the country which seeks their arrest. With this, even those European countries become insecure for Revisionists who do not have laws outlawing controversial views on the 'Holocaust.' Since the German authorities for instance maintain that Internet 'thought crimes' are always committed where the illegal information reaches the consumer, any revisionist with publications posted online and residing or traveling within the EU may be in danger of getting arrested. (*Daily Telegraph*, Feb. 18, 2003) In the meantime, England has confirmed that it will not execute foreign arrest warrants against 'thought criminals.'

### **'Book Burning' at New Zealand University**

The academic journal *History Now* that contained an article by lecturer Dr Thomas Fudge, linking Holocaust Revisionist Joel Hayward's persecution to medieval religious dissent and witch-hunting, was pulped on orders of history department head Professor Peter Hempenstall. (*The New Zealand Herald*, July 22, 2003) [www.nzherald.co.nz/storydisplay.cfm?storyID=3513941&thesection=news&thesubsection=general](http://www.nzherald.co.nz/storydisplay.cfm?storyID=3513941&thesection=news&thesubsection=general)

### **Jews Prevent Film Screening**

Victoria's Jewish community has failed to stop the screening of a film by Holocaust revisionist David Irving but may appeal the decision. An application for an interim injunction preventing the screening of *The Search for Truth in History* at

Melbourne's Underground Film Festival was dismissed yesterday by the Victorian Civil and Administrative Tribunal. Festival director Richard Wolstencroft said the decision was a victory for the freedom to express unpopular beliefs. "We don't support David Irving's ideas but we do support his right to freedom of speech," he said. "Australians do have the right to hear his perspective." The Jewish Community Council of Victoria claims that the film promotes Irving's assertion that the Holocaust is a 50-year myth. (*Sunshine Coast Daily*, July 8, 2003) On the night of the screening of the film, the theatre owner cancelled the meeting because outside the venue about 150 Jewish thugs threatened physical violence if the screening went ahead.

### **Australia enacts Tough New Terrorist Laws**

The Senate approved sweeping new powers for Australia's security organization ASIO whereby anyone, from 16 years upwards, can be detained who is *not* suspected of committing any crime. Anyone thus detained will have immediate access to a lawyer. Greens Senator Bob Brown is unhappy: "As you're walking out the door from your first detention you can be arrested and brought straight back in again," he said. The Democrats' Brian Greig says the law is a radical departure from established legal principle. "The detained person will be required to prove that they do not have the information that ASIO says they have," he said. One redeeming feature of these draconian laws is the sunset clause that requires the laws to be re-submitted to Parliament after three years. (*Australian Broadcasting Corporation*, News, June 26, 2003.) Note on a WWII British Precedent: Regulation 18B: On May 23, 1940, Britain's war-time premier, Winston Churchill, enacted Regulation 18B whereby anyone could be arrested and imprisoned without an arrest warrant.

### **Government Sponsored Grave Desecration**

More than 50 years after the end of WWII, the name on the graves of those Germans are to be removed, who fell victim to the Allied post-war lynch justice during the Dachau and the Nuremberg trials and who are buried in Landsberg, Bavaria. This was decided by an "expert commission" in early summer of 2003 in the legal department of the Bavarian government. Due to the resistance of the Bavarian Greens, Landsberg's city authorities, a Landsberg citizen association, and several patriotic individuals of Landsberg, a complete destruction of the Landsberg graveyard was prevented for the time being. Paragraph 304 (1) of the German penal code reads:

»He who illegally [...] damages or destroys graves, will be punished with up to three years in prison [...].«

### **Jewish In-Fighting over Belzec Memorial**

Norman Salsitz of Livingston, N.J., has taken legal action in the US District Court in Washington against the American Jewish Committee. He claims that a \$4 million memorial being built to honor alleged 600,000 victims at the Belzec extermination camp in Poland is desecrating the remains of Jews that "the Nazis burned, ground up and mixed into camp soil in a ghastly cover-up effort".

The U.S. Holocaust Memorial Museum in Washington launched the Belzec project in the early 1990s to remember

camp victims. Polish authorities conducted test boring at the camp in 1998 in an effort to map out a grid around the mass graves that would enable construction to begin without disturbing Jewish remains. The test boring went into human remains, which is considered a grave desecration by certain Jewish groups. (*JTA*, June 25, 2003) So forensic investigations of crimes against Jews are not kosher?

#### Germany and the US Sign Holocaust Accord

The U.S. and German governments signed a joint agreement to preserve Holocaust sites in Germany. "The sites serve as a reminder of the atrocities committed by the Nazi dictatorship, something we must never forget and will not forget," German Ambassador H.E. Wolfgang Ischinger said at the signing ceremony in the Indian Treaty Room of the Eisenhower Executive Office Building. The agreement was negotiated by the U.S. Commission for the Preservation of America's Heritage Abroad

and was signed for the United States by Warren L. Miller, commission chairman. (*Washington Times*, May 20, 2003) How do German Holocaust sites constitute 'American Heritage Abroad'? Jewish, yes, but American? Or is there an identity?

#### Argentine President Orders Probe into Country's Nazi Past

Argentine President Nestor Kirchner on Wednesday ordered a probe into whether officials covered up the extent of exiled National Socialists' links to the South American country's government after World War II. Responding to requests from the Simon Wiesenthal Center and the U.S. Congress, the government launched an investigation into the history of National Socialists—such as Adolf Eichmann, who found refuge in Argentina after the war. (*Ha'aretz*, June 26, 2003)

Updated: July 25, 2003

## HOLOCAUST HANDBOOKS, A GROWING SERIES OF GROUNDBREAKING RESEARCH! Subscribers of *The Revisionist* receive a discount of 10% off the listed price (incl. s&h within the USA)

### HOLOCAUST Handbooks, Vol. 1: *Germar Rudolf (Ed.)*

# Dissecting the Holocaust

## The Growing Critique of 'Truth' and 'Memory'

"There is at present no other single volume that so provides a serious reader with a broad understanding of the contemporary state of historical issues that influential people would rather not have examined."

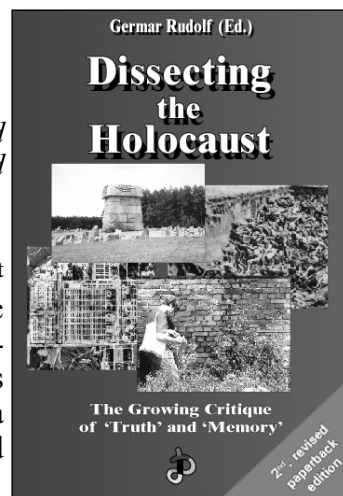
Prof. Dr. Arthur R. Butz, Evanston, IL

"There is much in the various contributions that strikes one as thoroughly convincing."

Historian Dr. Joachim Hoffmann, Expert Report

*Dissecting the Holocaust* applies state-of-the-art scientific technique and classic methods of detection to investigate the alleged murder of millions of Jews by Germans during World War II. In 22 contributions of each ca. 30 pages, the 17 authors dissect generally accepted paradigms of the 'Holocaust'. It reads as exciting as a crime novel: so many lies, forgeries, and deceptions by politicians, historians and scientists. This is *the* intellectual adventure of the 21st century. Be part of it!

2<sup>nd</sup>, revised paperback edition! 616 pp. pb, 6"×9", b/w ill., bibl., index: \$/€30.-, £20.-



### HOLOCAUST Handbooks, Vol. 2: *Germar Rudolf*

# The Rudolf Report

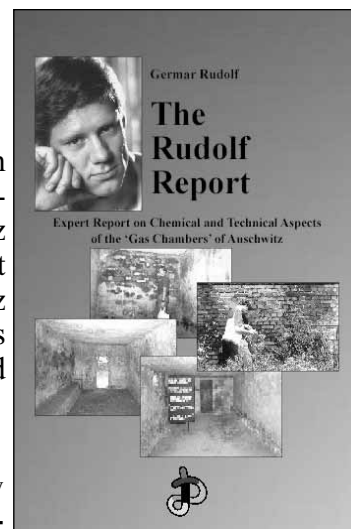
## Expert Report on the 'Gas Chambers' of Auschwitz

The so-called *Leuchter Report* about the alleged gas chambers of Auschwitz has been subject to massive criticism. In 1993, Rudolf, a researcher from a German Max-Planck-Institute, published a forensic study about the alleged gas chambers of Auschwitz which irons out the deficiencies of the *Leuchter Report*. *The Rudolf Report* is the first English edition of this sensational work. It analyzes the evidence on the Auschwitz gas chambers and exposes the fallacies of various failed attempts to refute Rudolf's Report. The conclusions are quite clear: The alleged gas chambers of Auschwitz could not have existed. In the appendix, Rudolf describes his unique persecution.

"These scientific analyses are perfect." H. Westra, Anne-Frank-Foundation,

"[T]he report must be described as scientifically acceptable." Dr. H. Ramuz, Professor of Chemistry

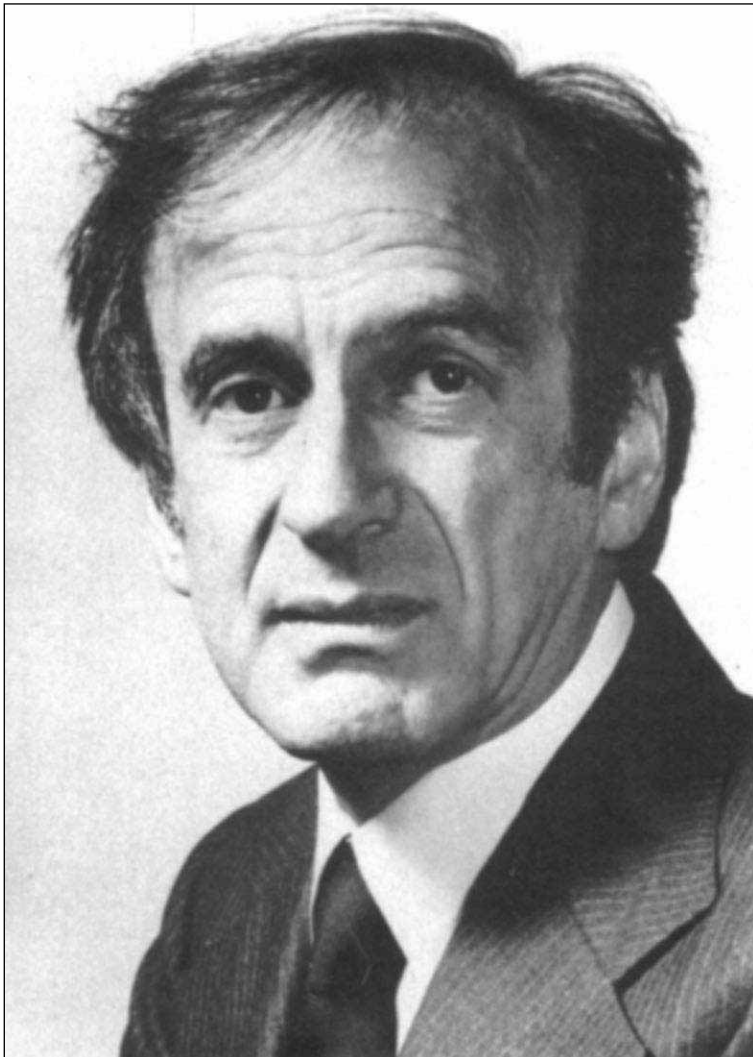
455 pp., b/w & color ill., bibl., index; pb: \$/€30.-/£20.-; hardcover: \$/€45.-/£30.-



# The Revisionist

## Journal for Critical Historical Inquiry

Volume 1 • Number 4 • November 2003



*eh wigt*

**Revisionism in Russia:**  
Toppling Taboos, p. 366

**100 Years of War against Germany:**  
British Aggression Exposed, p. 373

**Small Lies of Big Guys:**  
Dachau Horror-Tale Unmasked, p. 385  
A Deep-Frozen General, p. 386

**Auschwitz: 4,000,000 Figure:**  
The Roots of Soviet Propaganda, p. 387

◀ **Delusional Worlds:**  
Unreal Truth and Untrue Reality, p. 415

**Groupthink:**  
Herd Instincts and Revisionism, p. 422

**Death of Jean-Claude Pressac:**  
Anti-Revisionist Revisionist, p. 426-435

**New Zealand Revisionism Continued:**  
Scholars Show Solidarity, p. 435-448

**Show Trial in Canada Today:**  
The Ernst Zündel Ordeal, pp. 449-455

**False Memory Syndrome:**  
Weakness of our Memory, pp. 456-466



# The Revisionist • Journal for Critical Historical Inquiry

Publisher: Castle Hill Publishers, PO Box 257768, Chicago IL 60625, USA; [chp@vho.org](mailto:chp@vho.org)  
PO Box 118, Hastings, TN34 3ZQ, UK

Established: in Fall 2002, first edition in February 2003

Chief Editor: Germar Rudolf; [tr@vho.org](mailto:tr@vho.org)

Foreign Language Editor: Jürgen Graf

News & Civil Rights Editor: Dr. Fredrick Töben; [news@vho.org](mailto:news@vho.org)

Reviews: [reviews@vho.org](mailto:reviews@vho.org)

Copy Editor: Perry Huntoon; [proof@vho.org](mailto:proof@vho.org)

Customer Care, Subscriptions, Orders: [chporder@vho.org](mailto:chporder@vho.org)

Fax: USA: ++1(413) 778-5749; UK: ++44(8701) 387263 (faxes to both numbers reach us immediately by email)

Internet: <http://www.vho.org/tr>

Advertisements: price list from Jan. 1, 2003; please ask us for our Media Data ([www.vho.org/tr/MediaData.pdf](http://www.vho.org/tr/MediaData.pdf)).

ISSN: 1542-376X

Publication Dates: quarterly: February, May, August, November; each issue currently has some 120 pages, perfect bound.

Subscriptions (including shipping and handling):

- Normal: \$55 (3 years: \$150).
- Students: \$38 (3 years: \$96) (please send photocopy of ID).
- Supporter: \$100 (3 years: \$270).
- Free: donators with a yearly donation volume  $\geq$ \$55 receive *The Revisionist* for free for one year, but are then asked to convert this into a normal subscription.

Single Issues: \$15\*

Trial Issues: free. Just ask us for one!\*\*

Promotion Copies: We can send you free promotion copies as well as promotional material for *The Revisionist* on request. Please get in touch with us.

Shipping: *The Revisionist* is currently printed in, and shipped from, the UK; all subscription prices include airmail delivery worldwide. Single issues come with a shipping fee.\*

Payment terms: 60 days net.

- cash: preferably US\$; we can also accept € and GB£.
- checks: make payable to Castle Hill Publishers
  - in US\$ only if drawn on a Canadian or U.S. bank!

- in GB£ only if drawn on a British bank!
- in € only if drawn on a bank within the European Currency Union.

– online with credit card: [www.vho.org/chp](http://www.vho.org/chp).

– transfer: please contact us for our bank accounts in Germany, the UK, and the U.S.A.

Cancellation: 3 months before the end of your current subscription, otherwise the subscription will renew automatically for another (3) year(s).

Copyrights: Reprint of published articles only with written permission. All rights reserved.

Royalties: We pay scholars suffering persecution a royalty for contributions published in our periodical. This seems to be the most appropriate way to help them.

Support: Should you consider our work valuable, we cordially ask you to support us according to your possibilities, be it by subscribing to our periodical, by donating subscriptions to others, by hiring new (potential) subscribers, by volunteering for our editorial efforts (proof-reading, translations, marketing), or even by donating funds. Any financial surplus will flow 100% into researching important historical topics.

## Requirements for the Publication of Articles in *The Revisionist*

Requirements of Content:

Topics: History, especially modern history; also freedom of speech and freedom of science. If possible, new and hitherto unpublished reports, overviews, and research papers;

Style: Systematic structure; objective; backing up of factual statements with references; separation of opinion from factual statements.

External Requirements: For understandable reasons, we will also publish articles written under a pen name, which will, of course, be treated as highly confidential. Contributions sent in anonymously, which are also welcome, can only be published if their content is ready for print.

There is no restriction regarding the length of contributions. However, contributions which exceed 10 pages of our journal (some 50,000 characters or 9,000 words), may be split in several parts and published in consecutive issues. In such cases, the structuring of articles should allow such a partition.

Articles of two pages and more should include illustrations to break up the text (covers of works dealt with, document facsimiles, portraits of personalities and authors, pictures of historical events, maps, etc.).

Procedure: Except for articles sent in anonymously, proofs of all

articles considered for publications will be sent to the authors; no right for publication arises from this. The editors reserve their right to determine in which issue such articles will be published. Royalties are paid only in case the author(s) suffer under social and/or legal persecution for expressing her/his opinions. Authors receive only one proof copy. If expressively wished, we can send up to five proof copies.

Data: We prefer to receive contributions per email. We can process various data carriers (PC, 3.5"/1.44MB, and ZIP/100 or 250 MB, CD ROM). The file formats of all major type-setting and DTP programs can be read; for reasons of portability, file formats of \*.rtf (Rich Text Format), \*.html (HyperTextMarkupLanguage, *i.e.*, Internet files) and MS-Word files are preferred. Please do not send manuscripts by fax, as this renders optical character recognition almost impossible. Images can be sent in all usual data formats (\*.gif, \*.jpg, \*.png, \*.tif...) and also as hard copies.

3.5" floppy disks as well as unsolicited manuscripts will not be sent back; solicited manuscript as well as image hard copy only if expressively desired.

*Should you agree to these conditions,  
we are looking forward to receiving your papers.*

\* plus a shipping fee of \$1.- for each started \$12.50 of your entire order, if your order is not paid in advance. / \*\* Only one copy for each new customer



# Contents

<b>Revisionist Notebook</b> .....	364
<i>By Bradley Smith</i>	
<b>Revisionism in Russia</b> .....	366
<i>By Wolfgang Strauss</i>	
<b>Hundred Years of War against Germany</b> .....	373
<i>By Steffen Werner</i>	
<b>The Dachau Horror-Tale Exposed</b> .....	385
<i>By Baurat h.c. Dipl.-Ing. Walter Lüftl</i>	
<b>The General in the Ice-Block</b> .....	386
<i>By Baurat h.c. Dipl.-Ing. Walter Lüftl</i>	
<b>The Four Million Figure of Auschwitz</b> .....	387
<i>By Carlo Mattogno</i>	
<b>What Was Kulmhof/Chelmno?</b> .....	400
<i>By Ingrid Weckert</i>	
<b>Sir Henry Strakosch “a Jew”?</b> .....	412
<i>By Prof. Dr. Arthur R. Butz</i>	
<b>Delusional Worlds</b> .....	415
<i>By Ernst Manon</i>	
<b>Groupthink</b> .....	422
<i>By Germar Rudolf</i>	
<b>In Memoriam Jean-Claude Pressac</b>	
<i>Jean-Claude Pressac and Revisionism, by Jürgen Graf</i> ..... 426	
<i>My Memories of Jean-Claude Pressac, by Carlo Mattogno</i> ..... 432	
<b>The New Zealand Saga Continues</b> .....	435
<i>By Germar Rudolf</i>	
<b>The Fate of Joel Hayward in New Zealand Hands: from Holocaust Historian to Holocaust?</b> .....	439
<i>By Thomas A. Fudge</i>	
<b>Censorship in East and West – the Zündel Ad Campaign</b> .....	449
<i>By Dr. Ingrid Rimland</i>	
<i>Thanksgiving in Jail: Canadian Show Trial against Ernst Zündel Continues, by Paul Fromm</i> ..... 453	
<b>False Memory Syndrome</b>	
<i>False Witnesses, by David Irving</i> ..... 456	
<i>Dr. Elizabeth Loftus, Controversial Expert on Human Memory, by Caroline Song</i> ..... 456	
<i>My Critique of Dr. Loftus’ Behavior, by Robert H. Countess, PhD</i> ..... 459	
<i>False Memory Everywhere – Except in Modern History, by Germar Rudolf</i> ..... 460	
<i>Memories of a War that Never Happened, by Andrea Schneider</i> ..... 462	
<i>False Memories in Disneyland, by Ronald Reeves</i> ..... 463	
<i>Forced Confessions: Why Innocent Defendants Admit their Guilt, by Manfred Köhler</i> ..... 465	
<b>Research News</b>	
<i>Intelligence: Genetically Inherited or Learned Behavior?, by Andrea Schneider</i> ..... 467	
<i>From the Records of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, Part 4, by Germar Rudolf</i> ..... 468	
<b>Book Reviews</b>	
<i>Bulldozing the Façade of Israel As Victim, by Francis Dixon</i> ..... 472	
<i>Conspiracy – the Umpteenth, by John Weir</i> ..... 473	
<i>The Blind Spots of Mainstream ‘Holocaust Research’, by Germar Rudolf</i> ..... 474	
<i>Jewish Supremacism, by Germar Rudolf</i> ..... 475	
<i>Book Notices, by Francis Dixon</i> ..... 476	
<b>Letter to the Editor</b> .....	477
<b>In Brief</b> .....	478

# Revisionist Notebook

By Bradley Smith

## **Arnold Schwarzenegger's Father Was a Nazi Storm Trooper; Anne Frank's Father Was a Nazi Collaborator and War Profiteer; Why Is One of these Stories Being Suppressed?**

Arnold Schwarzenegger's father, Gustav, volunteered for the 'brownshirts' in May 1939 – about “six months after the storm troopers helped launch Kristallnacht [...] when Jewish homes, businesses and synagogues were attacked across Germany.”<sup>1</sup>

Anne Frank's father, Otto Frank, was a war profiteer who sold goods to the Nazi army as it 'freed' Europe of its Jews in a gigantic program of ethnic cleansing (see below for more details).<sup>2</sup>

Questions:

- How do we know that Gustav Schwarzenegger was a storm trooper?
- How do we know that Otto Frank collaborated with the Nazis?
- What 'goods' did Otto Frank sell to the German army?
- Why is the press covering the Gustav Schwarzenegger story now?
- Why is the press still covering up the Otto Frank story after half a century?
- How are we to judge men like Gustav Schwarzenegger and Otto Frank?
- Who benefits – profits – by 'outing' Gustav's story and attacking Arnold, while covering up Otto's story when Anne remains a great cultural icon?

## **The 'Hidden Life' of Anne Frank's Father, Otto. It's One Surprise after Another.**

I didn't know that Anne Frank's father, Otto, was a Nazi collaborator and war profiteer. Where have I been?<sup>3</sup> I didn't know that Otto manufactured and wholesaled materials to the German army while hiding in his notorious 'annex' in Amsterdam. I didn't know that he collaborated with the Dutch Nazis as well as with Germans. It's just one bloody thing after another.

This story was brought to my attention by Joe Orolin. Joe sends me news clippings from Pennsylvania papers and national media. A lot of the stories he sends I have already received via the Internet, but there are always others that I would never see because they originate locally, or they are distributed nationally but fall 'below the centerfold' of Internet distribution.

One afternoon I received a clipping from Joe released on 27 July, written by Ray Locker of the Associated Press. The article was a review of *The Hidden Life of Otto Frank* by Carol Ann Lee, published by HarperCollins/William Morrow. This is how the surprising review kicked off.

*“For a man forever tied to the Holocaust and the cause of world Jewry, Otto Frank – the father of Holocaust diarist Anne Frank – went through life carrying a sense of constant ambivalence. Now, with this probing and insightful book by Carol Ann Lee, we may know why.*

*While it would be going too far to call Frank a 'collaborator' with the Nazi government that eventually sent him and his family to concentration camps, he nevertheless did business with the German army occupying the Netherlands.*

*Frank also worked with Dutch sympathizers of Hitler's Third Reich and traveled in circles that ultimately led to his family's capture after almost three years in hiding in the annex above their Amsterdam business.”*

These observations astounded me. I hadn't even heard of this book. I did an Internet search and found that *The Hidden Life of Otto Frank* was published six months ago, in February. I searched for reviews of the book in *The New York Times*, *Atlantic Monthly*, and *The Wall Street Journal*. Major institutions that have forwarded the Anne Frank story for half a century. Nothing by the big boys.

I did find three additional reviews of the book, all by small publications. I found that the book had been published in England in 2002 – a full year earlier! I hadn't heard a word about it. In America the press, the business, about Anne Frank never ends. Never. Now we have a dramatic book about Anne's father by a respected writer, the book reveals very controversial information, and there is no interest in it. One wonders, why would that be?

On the Internet I went to Amazon.com, ordered *The Hidden Life* and received it five days later. I read through it in one night in our bedroom, and during one afternoon at an outdoor café in Tijuana while my wife and a lady friend were shopping. Otto appears to have been a good and decent man caught up in matters that were beyond him, as was most everyone else in those years in that part of the world.

I never thought much about Otto Frank. I never heard much about him. I knew more or less what most of us know. He left Amsterdam with his wife and two daughters under the supervision of the Germans, and when he returned to Amsterdam his wife and two daughters were dead. We've all lost family, many of us have half-lost dear family members, and I can imagine something of how Otto must have felt when Miep Gies first gave him Anne's diary pages, scavenged from the floor of the annex after the family was taken away.

Otto must have been near overcome with a tidal wave of memory, surprise, and then a kind of elation at finding that, at the very least, he had these pages, written in her own hand, while they were all living together. He had something of her. She wasn't entirely gone. He had something.

An earlier book by Carol Ann Lee, *Roses from the Earth: The Biography of Anne Frank*, was well received in Britain. Based on that work, she has a good deal to say in Otto's story about how the 'Diary' was put together. She is quite open about how Anne was rewriting her diary, the problems with the different translations contracted for by Otto, Otto's editing of the manuscripts, and so on. Essentially she supports the revisionist position, without saying so, codified in the 1970s and 80s, that the 'Diary' is a literary work based on diary entries, and edited by her father and others, not a diary.

Nothing wrong with that. Other than the fact that those fronting for the Holocaust Lobby lied about it for so many years.

The primary work of Carol Ann Lee's *The Hidden Life of Otto Frank*, is to find out who 'betrayed' the Frank's hiding place and the Frank family to the Germans. For myself, it's the least interesting part of the story. No accounting for taste. But along the way Ms. Lee documents the fascinating story of Otto Frank's wartime collaboration with the Nazi regimes, both in Germany and the Netherlands. She writes:

*"Otto Frank made a pact with the devil [...]"*

Here's what she's referring to. Otto manufactured and wholesaled pectin and other products to the German army.

*"Pectin was a preservative that could be put to many uses, depending upon the type of pectin it was. All pectin was useful for food production, but certain kinds could be applied as a balm for wounds and as a thickener for raising blood volume in blood transfusions. Other types of pectin were used in the steel industry as a hardener and in the oil industry as an emulsifier. Therefore, it is possible that the Wehrmacht used the pectin they bought from Otto Frank's company for the war industry."*

With regard to Otto producing and selling products to the German army, Lee writes:

*"The deliveries to the Wehrmacht (via brokers) ensured the survival of Otto's business. More than 80 percent of Dutch firms delivered to the Wehrmacht during the war, and one can hardly be shocked by the statistics of the fact that Otto did the same."*

Miep Gies, the lady who collected Anne's diary pages from the floor of the annex after the Germans took off the Franks, is quoted as saying:

*"[...] the circumstances of his [Otto's] company in wartime should be kept in mind. There was no choice – no delivery could mean the closing down of the company."*

Here is a 'revisionist' take on Otto Frank's life in Amsterdam during WWII. Otto Frank ran a business during the war, in the ground floor of the 'annex' where he hid his family, that delivered goods to the German army. He made a profit doing it. He paid a Dutch Nazi to keep his business 'secret.'

Otto then was a Jew, a Nazi collaborator, a war profiteer, and a good man with highly developed sensibilities. I would very much liked to have known him, to have been his friend, and to have done what I could to have saved his daughters from those who saw them as their enemy.

I should add that it appears very likely indeed that Otto paid blackmail to the Dutch Nazi factotum, Tonny Ahlers, after the war as well as during it, to cover up Otto's wartime collaboration with the Nazis. As a matter of fact it looks like Otto was still paying blackmail to Tonny Ahlers at the time of Otto's death in 1980!

In the first instance, what does all this mean to someone like me? The first thing it means is that collaborating with the Germans/Nazis was something very different than what the Holocaust Industry wants you to think, and very different from how the Office of Special Investigations use the word "collaboration" as it goes about its work of running down old European men who "collaborated" with the Germans during WWII.

Collaboration was a norm, though admittedly not for everyone. In the Netherlands, for instance, only 80% of Dutch businessmen collaborated with the Nazis. In the camps nearly all Jews whom the Nazis chose to work for them themselves chose to collaborate with the Nazis. It was the norm. There were some who chose not to collaborate. Same as with the Dutch businessmen.

And then we would want to ask how many Belgian companies helped the German war effort. How many French? Polish, Danish, Norwegian, Czech? And how many of the businessmen in those countries were run by Jews?

As to that: how many Jews served in the German army during the Hitlerian regime?<sup>4</sup> How many Jews continued to run their businesses in Germany throughout the war? Were there any? Is anything known about this? Are their histories being covered up like Otto's was covered up?

On August 1st, 2003, a 79-year-old suspected former Nazi camp guard now living in Queens, Jakiw Palij, was stripped of his citizenship by a federal judge. Federal prosecutors did not accuse Palij of personally committing any atrocities. But Brooklyn U.S. Attorney Roslynn Mauskopf said Palij has blood on his hands.

*"By guarding the prisoners held under inhumane conditions at Trawniki, Jakiw Palij prevented their escape and directly contributed to their eventual slaughter at the hands of the Nazis."*

Palij is 79 years old. In 1944, when he was "collaborating" with the Germans by working as a perimeter guard at Trawniki, he must have been about 21. In 1944, when Otto Frank was helping feed and perhaps arm the German army, he was 55 years old.

One would think that you are better equipped to judge the political and moral nature of the great events you are living through when you are 55 than when you are when you are 21. Maybe it is going to be argued by the ADL and the Industry in general that Otto, being a Jew, necessarily needed a few extra decades to grow a moral conscience. I don't think that was it.

When I was 21 years old, I was with the Seventh Calvary in Korea. I was a young man who, as the song had it a few years ago, just wanted to have fun. I was a volunteer. I had no politics. I didn't want to hurt anyone, but I would have done anything my superiors asked of me. As a matter of fact, that's what I did do. Anything I was asked (ordered) to do.

I can hardly imagine how a 21-year old Ukrainian or German or Dutch kid could have sorted out the 'moral' issues of WWII, and then acted upon them. Some did, to one extent or the other, but to judge them now, after sixty years have gone by, a lifetime, is an ugly, self-serving charade of self-promoting 'morality.' First published in *Smith's Report* (print edition) in August 2003

### **Brainwashing Student Editors**

Arthur Sulzberger of *The New York Times* and Abraham Foxman of the Anti-Defamation League have teamed up to personally put the kibosh on my campus work. Try to imagine it – Sulzberger and Foxman, two of the most influential men in American culture and politics, each with access to tens of millions of dollars, teaming up to kill a project run by one man with a couple volunteer helpers and no budget.

The story below appears in the 2003 special summer edition of *ADL on the Frontline* (the article does not appear on the ADL Website – if I’m wrong about this please forward me the correct URL).

“GUIDANCE ON EXTREMISM FROM THE NEW YORK TIMES AND ADL

*When a campus newspaper editor is asked to print an ad denying that the Holocaust took place – or calling for ‘open debate’ on the subject – can he or she say ‘no’ without compromising freedom of the press?*

*In the view of the ADL and The New York Times, the answer is yes. Both organizations have been disturbed by the continuing – and often successful – attempts by Holocaust deniers and other extremists to place advertisements and other materials in campus newspapers. Out of their common concern came an annual colloquium, ‘Extremism Targets the Campus Press: Balancing Freedom and Responsibility.’*

*‘We seek to educate campus journalists,’ said ADL Campus Affairs/Higher Education Director Jeffrey Ross, ‘to balance freedom of the press with responsibility of the press when responding to hate submissions.’*

*The third colloquium in the series, held in The Times’ headquarters in New York City, was attended by close to*

*100 student journalists and editors and administrators, including ten college and university presidents, representing 53 different academic institutions – the largest number to date. Participants came from all areas of the U.S., some from as far away as California.*

*ADL National Director Abraham H. Foxman and The New York Times publisher Arthur Sulzberger, Jr. addressed the gathering. A plenary panel discussion moderated by ADL Legal Affairs Director Steven Freeman featured Mr. Ross, Steph Jespersen, Director of Advertising Acceptability for The Times, and Dorothy Samuels, a member The Times’ Editorial Board. Mr. Freeman and Mr. Ross also led interactive breakout discussion sessions.”*

## Notes

<sup>1</sup> *LA Times*, August 23, 2003.

<sup>2</sup> Carol Ann Lee, *The Hidden Life of Otto Frank*, William Morrow, NYC, 2003.

<sup>3</sup> See the entry of April 1, 1943, in Anne Frank’s Diary; Robert Faurisson was the first to reveal this fact: “The Diary of Anne Frank: Is it Genuine?”, *Journal of Historical Review* 19(6) (2000), pp. 2-11, esp. pp. 5f.

<sup>4</sup> Bryan Mark Rigg, *Hitler’s Jewish Soldiers: The Untold Story of Nazi Racial Laws and Men of Jewish Descent in the German Military*, University Press of Kansas, 2002.

# Revisionism in Russia

*By Wolfgang Strauss*

## Russians Research into the ‘Holocaust’ Matter

A German order to destroy Novgorod did not exist. The population suffered under Soviet bombings. Novgorod’s church treasures were robbed by the retreating Soviet troops, and its artifacts were sunk on a ship in the Wolchow River. The world famous Novgorod monument “Thousand Year Russia” was saved by the Wehrmacht from destruction. Jasnaja Poljana, Tolstoy’s estate, was under the protection of the German *Panzergruppe 2* by order of General Heinz Guderian. The 49th German *Gebirgsjägerkorps* proceeded against the anti-Jewish pogrom in Lemberg on June 29, 1941. After the occupation of Smolensk in 1941, the population of the local district discovered 135,000 bodies in mass graves, Russians shot by the NKVD during the ‘Chistka.’ The cathedral of Smolensk, damaged by Soviet shells, was restored during the time of German occupation and was reopened for the orthodox believers. Against the advice of the German military leadership, the masses of the rural population attached themselves to the retreating German occupation troops, when in 1944 the big retreat started.

This can be read in the latest book about Russian historical revisionism: *The Great Civil War 1941-1945* (Moscow 2002, 642 pages, ISBN 5 941 38015 1). The volume, a collection of separate articles, published by the former Komsomol leader Igor Djakow, includes, among others, articles about the preventive war of June 22, 1941, in which German documents are also

quoted. The timeliness of the discussion about the thesis of the preventive war is further indicated in still other new books on the Russian book market, for example Mikhail Melityukhovs 544 pages volume *Stalin’s Missed Chances. The Soviet Union in the Fight for Europe 1939-1941*. It was published by the well-known national-liberal publisher “Vyeche” (Thing). Different perspectives about “Barbarossa” in Germany and in Russia: While in Germany the *raison d’être* of the regime defines the borderline of permissible thoughts regarding the research for the cause of the war, one can observe the opposite in Russia, as put forth in *The Big Civil War 1941-1945*. Yes, in Russia, where a refusal to crawl to foreign dogmas does not cost the head of an historian. Djakow dedicates the book “to all Russian and German soldiers, who were killed in a war that was unleashed by the enemies of the European culture.”

*“In Russia rules a freedom never known before.”*

This judgment by the author Leo Rubinstein applies especially to political-historical publishers; otherwise the printing and sale of the *Big Civil War* could not be imagined. In every chapter of this book, the taboos of the Allies (Dyakov: “The white spots in our history of lies”) are destroyed.

An order by the Wehrmacht to shoot the Jews of Kiev in Babi Yar does not exist (p. 57). Soja Kosmosdemyanskaya, a partisan fighting against the Germans, was arrested by Russian farmers and handed over to the Germans for punishment. It was a tragic fate that stood somewhere between obedience and

crime. In obeying a Stalin-directive, (“scorched earth”) this young partisan woman set fire to farmhouses in the district of Petrishchev. Before the eyes of these farmers, Soja was hanged. Stalin’s war propaganda made a heroine out of this arsonist (p. 444). In the district of Pskov with its two million inhabitants, religious classes took place in all elementary schools after the Wehrmacht entered; in the town of Pskov, the Russian-Orthodox church opened its own Sunday school for youths and adults (p. 504). On June 22, 1941, 5.3 million men were serving in the Red Army. By October of the same year, however, this army did not exist anymore: around 800,000 were killed and 4.5 million preferred German internment over fighting. Stalin ordered the forming of “blocking groups” (“sagraditelniye otryadi”) only a few weeks after the beginning of the war. Movie producer Alexander Ivanov-Sukharevski:

*“One has to pound it into the heads of the young people today: Nobody wanted to fight for the Soviet power, nobody wanted to go into the war. After the first blows of the Wehrmacht one threw the weapons away and fled into the hinterland, back into the home villages. In order for the Red Army not to completely disintegrate, blocking commandos with machine guns closed off the area between the front line and the homeland. Those who still wanted to flee, deserted forward, to the Germans.”* (p. 450)

From the co-author Ivanov-Sukherevski originates the following statement:

*“The Wehrmacht, i.e., the army of the Third Reich, was the best army in the history of the European civilization, especially in one area: The valuation of the life of the simple soldier.”* (p. 437)

A large part of this book deals with the ‘Holocaust’ and the “yevreiski vopros” (Jewish question). The common denominator of revisionist authors and publishers in the former eastern block is the “denial” of the Holocaust, alleges Mikha Shafir in the magazine *East European Perspectives* (June 12, 2002).

This is not the case with the authors of *Big Civil War*, since they neither deny persecution nor massacres against Jews. However, the concept of ‘Holocaust’ is given a different historical meaning; it is reported as a farmer’s holocaust, a Ukrainian holocaust, a Cossack holocaust (p. 206f.). He who wishes to deny the incredible dimensions of the “Cossack murders”, the “Ukrainian murders”, the “Slav murders”, the “farmer murders”, does not understand that the communist idea was an extermination strategy right from the start, and therefore a holocaust program.

Contradicting numbers about Jews before the war and after 1945 (based on statistics of various types) will not be mentioned here (pp. 43, 83, 90), however, on page 45 the “six-million myth” is mentioned. An article without a given author has the title “About the Holocaust Topic” (pp. 81-90).

“The western democracies refused to accept the masses of German Jews”, this contribution states. The Russian comment on Kurt Gerstein is very revealing. The SS disinfection technician boasted after his capture in 1945, according to a report by Raymond Cartier, the later chief editor of *Paris Match*, to have killed one million people (*Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung* of June 3, 2002); *Big Civil War* says that Gerstein confessed to the killing of even 25 million through poison gas. The “subject

Holocaust” is also based upon Gerstein’s self-accusation, although not exclusively, as one can read on page 89. The fact that all extermination camps were located in areas, which came later under the “control of the communists,” made it quite difficult to determine the number of the victims.

*“Up to today statistical acrobatics dominates. [...] The number of Auschwitz victims sank from 4 million to 400,000. [...] The camp Wolczek, in which supposedly one million people were killed until 1945, cannot not even be found on Polish maps.”* (p. 40)

Not four million, but “only” one tenth of this – is reducing already denial? Until recently, Fritjof Meyer did not belong to the protagonists of historical revisionism. That seems to have changed since May 2002. In the May-edition 2002 of the scientific magazine *Osteuropa*, an article was published by this leading editor of Germany’s largest newsmagazine *Der Spiegel* with the title “The number of Auschwitz Victims. New findings through new archival discoveries.” For the leftist editor it is about the numbers: about the Auschwitz numbers. The historical starting point in the number mess: A Stalinist investigating commission. The investigation culminated in the allegation blessed by the communist Politbüro:

*“During the time of the existence of the camp, 4.5 to 5 million people were exterminated.”*

This number is based on estimates of the gas chamber capacity and goes back to the declaration of Jewish inmate doctors Gordon, Shteinberg and Epshtein, as told to two Soviet officers on January 27, 1945.

Meyer quoted from the files of the International Military Tribunal and the central archive of the Soviet defense ministry of the Stalin time. And Meyer exposed the number of victims in the Soviet investigation report as “a product of war propaganda”. Therefore a lie, an Auschwitz lie? Meyer combines his refutation with sharp criticism of the German post war historians:

*“Since historiography, for understandable but inadmissible reasons, has not accepted Auschwitz as an object for research, propaganda naturally invaded the unoccupied field. Those of Soviet origin still control public opinion, as in the number of four million at Auschwitz or over 400,000 murdered Hungarian deportees, or mass gassings in the crematorium cellars.”*

Based on new documents about the capacity of the crematoria and based on the documents about the admissions to the camp, Meyer arrives at a surprising result in his study with reference to the number of the Auschwitz victims:

*“An estimated 510,000 dead, of these probably 356,000 murdered with gas.”*

This result does not diminish the weight of the crimes, but “verifies” them, writes Meyer. With the new number, Auschwitz “finally” moves within the range of the “imaginable”.

Meyer confides that his “new perceptions” are based on a recently found “key document” which gives information about “the capacity of the crematoria of Auschwitz/Birkenau”. According to Meyer, this “breakthrough” is owed to the Canadian Auschwitz expert Robert-Jan van Pelt. To formulate this in short: The important question for further historical research, that is, whether mass murders took place in the gas chambers of

the four crematoria, is answered by Meyer with a clear “No”:

*“The gas chambers of the Birkenau crematoria I and II were, except during the experimental phase, evidently hardly in operation, III and IV probably mainly only in the most horrible month of October 1944.”*

As shown in documents, the original plan was to use the morgues, after completion of the crematoria by early summer 1943, to store the great number of dead (where Meyer puts the key word “Vergasungskeller” in quotation marks). To this Meyer replies:

*“Apparently, the tests were not successful, both because the ventilation was counterproductive<sup>3</sup> and because the expected masses of victims did not arrive during the ensuing eleven months. The actually committed genocide probably took mainly place in the two converted farm-houses outside of the camp; the foundations of the first of these houses, the ‘White House,’ or ‘Bunker I’ has recently been discovered.”*

Polish farm houses as preliminary gas chambers: a provable fact, a Meyer-like “probably” or a mystery? Meyer admits that “revisionists” doubt the existence of “rebuilt farm houses” (Meyer mentions Jürgen Graf, among others).

There is no end to the mystery. Fritjof Meyer mentions Captain Shatunovski and Major Morudshenko of the Smersh-Department of the 8th Soviet Army, who allegedly interrogated, in March 1946, the German engineers of a crematoria as to their hourly capacity. Does the Russian expert Fritjof Meyer really not know what SMERSH meant in the years of Stalin’s war-terrors? SMERSH (acronym for “smertj shpionam” – “Death to the Spies”) raged between 1941 and 1953 as the most savage special department of the Stalinist Secret Police, under the defense ministry umbrella. The Ukrainian Gulag expert Borys Lewytzkij judges:

*“The SMERSH-officers, a gallery of fanatics, degenerates, and alcoholics, appear like a picture of horror before our eyes.”*

In practice, SMERSH exceeded all perversions of the Yeshovshchina: hunt down, torture, and liquidate. SMERSH killed right there, right then. Without SMERSH there was no “Soviet war propaganda” (as in Meyer’s criticism). It was a bloody joke in World History: While SMERSH researched in Auschwitz, it organized at the same time the Red Holocaust in Kolyma, Kingir, Vorkuta, Norylsk, and Karaganda.

The Communism researcher Meyer should actually know about these absurdities, since he quoted from the Central Archive of the KGB of the USSR, file 17/919, in the case SMERSH/Auschwitz. As a long time student, *i.e.*, internee of the Gulag camps, I claim that Meyer seems to try to cover up his “key documents”, which he received from the Central Archive of the KGB of the USSR as mentioned by him, because what other archive basements might store (or better: hide) the truth and nothing but the full truth in matters Auschwitz?

*Spiegel* magazine praises itself for its investigative journalism; why, then, could Fritjof Meyer, familiar with the Russian language, not have been lucky – of course with a little Russian help – in opening certain file basement? During the Yeltsin era, so-called death books of Auschwitz were released for publication. They were found in the Soviet archives and confirm the

death of some 69,000 camp inmates, of course only of the registered inmates “fit for work.”

(On Meyer’s article, read also the contributions in *The Revisionist* 1(1) (2003), pp. 23-37. The editor.)

© Sept. 28, 2002

### **Ehrenburg and the Figure of Six Million**

In the never-ending controversy over Auschwitz numbers, those provided by Fritjof Meyer are unlikely to remain the last word. At least, this is the opinion of Jerzy Wroblewski, director of the Auschwitz Museum, who wrote to the editor of *Spiegel* on 17<sup>th</sup> November 1999: “No camp documents have survived relating to victims sent to extermination immediately following selection.”

Meyer exposed as a lie the falsified figures furnished by Auschwitz Commandant Rudolf Höß while a prisoner of the British. He said the “confession” had been obtained under torture – “under evidentiary blows.” Höß later reported that alcohol and the whip “were too much for me, too.” At 2:30 am he signed the following sentences: “In Auschwitz alone, in my estimation, around 3,000,000 people died. I would estimate that around 2,500,000 of these were gassed.”

Ernst Nolte, whom Meyer calls a “respectable historian of philosophy,” enjoys great credibility in the area of myth demolitions. His recently released book on Auschwitz, *Der kausale Nexus. Über Revisionen und Revisionismen in der Geschichtswissenschaft* (The Causal Nexus: Concerning Revisions and Revisionisms in Historiography, Herbig, Munich 2002), states:

*“The statement of the commandant of Auschwitz, Rudolf Höß, which unquestionably contributed greatly to the collapse of the defense in the Nuremberg trials, was obtained by torture. Therefore, according to the norms of Western legal procedure, it was not admissible in court. The so-called Gerstein documents contain so many contradictions and physical impossibilities that they, too, should have been disallowed. Statements by witnesses at Nuremberg were based upon hearsay and unsupported assumptions, while reports of the few eyewitnesses contradicted one another. The result is that they evoke great doubt concerning credibility.”*

In contrast to the investigation of the Katyn Forest massacre organized by the Wehrmacht in 1943, a thorough investigation of Auschwitz by an international commission of experts was not carried out at the end of the War. It was clearly the fault of the Soviet and Polish Communists that this was not done. Says Nolte:

*“Release of photographs of crematory ovens and several cans bearing the words ‘Zyklon B. Poisonous Gas’ has no evidentiary value at all. Crematories were necessarily present in all typhus infested internment camps, and Zyklon B was a recognized medium of disinfestation. It was indispensable wherever large numbers of people lived under poor sanitary conditions.”* (page 96)

In these passages, Nolte is responding to the customary polemics, which Fritjof Meyer dutifully rolls out in support of “gas chambers.” But Nolte emphatically concludes:

*“The general conclusion that there were no mass exterminations by poison gas is obviously impermissible.”*

He then quotes the Jewish American historian Arno Mayer, according to whom materials for the investigation of gas chambers “are scarce and unreliable.”

It is surprising that Meyer does not mention Joachim Hoffmann, the military historian and Vlassov biographer. Hoffmann, who died on 8<sup>th</sup> February 2002 in Freiburg, succeeded in proving that the “Six Million Number” was introduced into Allied propaganda by Ilja Ehrenburg 23 days before the occupation of Auschwitz by the Soviet 60<sup>th</sup> Army.

“The passage listed below appeared in the weekly Soviet War News issue for 22<sup>nd</sup> December 1944, published by the Soviet ambassador in London. This was exactly five weeks before the liberation of the Auschwitz concentration camp with its alleged five million victims. The passage was contained in a seemingly objective essay written by the leading Soviet propagandist, Ilja Ehrenburg, under the headline ‘Remember, Remember, Remember.’ In it, the following was reported, apparently with the greatest naturalness:<sup>59</sup>

‘In regions they seized, the Germans killed all the Jews, from the old folks to infants in arms. Ask any German prisoner why his fellow countrymen annihilated six million innocent people, and he will reply quite simply ‘Why, they were Jews.’”

This article by Ehrenburg was reprinted on January 4, 1945, i.e., 23 days before the liberation of Auschwitz, under the headline ‘Once Again – Remember!’” (Stalin’s War of Extermination 1941-1945, Theses & Dissertations Press, Capshaw, Al, 2001, p. 189)

Is it possible that Political Scientist Dr. Fritjof Meyer did not read Hoffmann?

This is hard to believe, since Hoffmann’s definitive *Stalin’s War of Extermination 1941-45* has appeared in eight editions. It has become a standard work for the study of the causes of World War II even in the USA, and is required reading for students of history in post-Soviet Russia. Hoffmann repeatedly refers to the source of the Six Million figure:

“The six-million figure, stated exactly for the first time by Ehrenburg in the Soviet War News on December 22, 1944, at first inconspicuously, and then repeated by him once again on January 4, 1945, in the same Soviet propaganda newspaper, then appeared on March 15,

1945, in another article by Ehrenburg in the Soviet War News weekly under the headline ‘Wolves They Were – Wolves They Remain’ – in bold print, as a fact no longer to be disputed by anyone.” (p. 189f.)

Hoffmann concludes his chapter on Ehrenburg with the commentary:

“The stereotypical repetition of a total figure of six million murder victims, already claimed with precise clarity on December 22, 1944 – and this in the propaganda newspaper Soviet War News, intended for English-speaking readers – gives rise to the conclusion that the six-million figure, just like the Auschwitz figure of May 7, 1945, is a product of Soviet propaganda, intended to influence and indoctrinate public opinion, particularly, the thinking of the Anglo-Saxon countries. The evidence, from Soviet War News of December 22, 1944, January 4, 1945, and March 15, 1945, that it was Ehrenburg who introduced the six-million figure in the Soviet war propaganda, is not without importance to scientific discussion of this emotionally charged topic.” (p. 190)

Any one who seriously pursues the subject of Auschwitz and ignores Joachim Hoffmann invites doubts about his competence. So much for the subject of Fritjof Meyer.

Today, Russian revisionist historians are paying renewed attention to an important but inadequately researched chapter of the Auschwitz saga: the Stalinist persecutions and murders of Jews. Here again, the subject begins and ends with the question: How many victims were there? The latest example is an



## ILYA EHRENBURG, back from a two-weeks' visit to Germany, sums up his impressions

rifles, bombs and daggers at the order of some camouflaged oberleutnant or rottenfuehrer.

I have not met genuine remorse in a single German—only fear and pretence.

If there are any creatures at all to be pitied on the roads of Germany, it is only the tiny bewildered children, the crazed, unmilked cows, and the abandoned cats and dogs. These alone had no share in Germany's atrocities. All honour to the Soviet soldier who does not believe in the magic of blood, to whom an infant is an infant.

We are not fighting children and old women—we are not Fascists. We have come to Germany not to vent our feelings, but to eradicate the very memory of the vampire state.

The homes of the burghers are sumptuously furnished with portraits of Hitler and green goblets for Rhenish wines. The beer halls have special tables marked with flags for regular clients.

The Germans have always been in the habit of spending the greater part of their incomes on their homes. Even in peacetime they did not waste much on amusements. They dressed modestly. But they filled their homes with sofas and armchairs, vases and cushions, statuettes and "souvenirs."

During the war they have accumulated all sorts of knickknacks from Paris and Rotterdam, Florence and Warsaw and Kiev. Their homes are regular bric-a-brac stores. I heard a Red Army man's joke, looking into a typical parlour: "One could live all right in a den like that!"

But no. It was not enough for them. Greed drove them towards the Urals and Iraq. In the Graudenz punishment camp if they caught us at it. They said: "If you help Bolsheviks you are betraying the idea of the new Europe."

No. Germany cannot obliterate her crimes by putting the clock forward.

The world now knows that Germany has killed six million Jews. Do they think it is enough for them to take down the street signs, for their atrocities to be forgotten? They swear: "We knew nothing about it. We are innocent." But the evidence is there. They ran away from us in such a hurry that they discarded not only their city banners, not only their official seals and police records, but even their personal papers.

In Germany, side by side with prosperity, everywhere we find intellectual degradation. Every home has its collection of books, splendidly bound copies of "Mein Kampf," "The March into Poland," "Race Hygiene," "The Jewish Plague," "Russian sub-men," "Our Faithful Prussia." What intellectual poverty! However, these books weren't often opened, by the look of them. They were part of the furniture, like the vases and the porcelain cats.

### Kindergarten Songs

I looked in vain in Loetzeng, Rastenburg and Tapiaw for a public library. There wasn't such a thing. I found only one museum—in Bartenstein. What did it contain? Portraits of Hindenburg and the epaulettes of an officer of the tsarist army, labelled: "Victory at Tannenberg."

The other exhibits were the uniform of a Polish officer and a photograph of the ruins

# Wolves they were—

I HAVE spent two weeks in Germany—terror-stricken, flaming, smoking Germany, where hogs wander in and out of deserted town halls, and the wind ruffles the tatters of municipal banners emblazoned with eagles, lions and stags.

We might gloat and say: It serves them right—if malice were not beneath us. For us, this is the triumph of justice.

Many, when they talked of retribution, thought only of the clauses of some future treaty. One thing is certain. Fascist obscurantism will find its defenders, jealous champions of "equilibrium"—equilibrium between light and darkness.

### This May Teach Them

But whatever our ideas of the future peace may be, one thing is clear—retribution has begun. Germany has come to learn what war means. And who knows?—perhaps these weeks and months of war on German soil will make a far deeper impression on German memories than any treaty stipulations.

history. But don't ask her how she treated Galya, her Russian maidservant. The German advances: the hands of his watch two hours—"It is now exactly twelve minutes past three, Moscow time," he beams. He is prepared to live by Vladivostok time, so long as he isn't asked about the four Frenchmen who worked for him.

"I am a doctor, and therefore a humanist, whereas the Nazis are fiends," says a venerable physician, while the vicar-general rubs his hands and murmurs: "The Catholic Church always condemned Hitler. Of course, I couldn't condemn him openly, still, I condemned him in my own heart. But as for the Evangelicals—"

The Lutheran pastor, for his part, vows: "We also condemned the ungodly regime."

An Elbing engineer declares: "As a man of progressive views, I am against Hitler." Then, with a crafty smile: "And I'm

# Wolves they remain

small, provincial Rastenburg not only the wealthy, but even workers' families had their Russian servant. After all, there was no need to pay her

Atrocity propaganda by Ehrenburg: "The world now knows that Germany has killed six million Jews". "Wolves they were – Wolves they remain", Soviet War News Weekly, March 15, 1945.

article in the August 2000 issue of the Russian-Jewish magazine *Krug*, “Bloody Prolog to a New Holocaust.” In 1952, on the instructions of Stalin, the Jewish Anti-fascist Committee was annihilated. “Why were they shot?” asks the historian Alexander Borshchakovski. The answer: “Because they were Jews.” This is a quotation from the revelatory book by Borshchakovski published in Germany and Russia.

The Jewish Antifascist Committee (JAK) became active at the beginning of 1942, as Stalin’s regime had just survived the winter battle for Moscow. Without the aid of American capitalism, the defeated and much despised Stalinist regime could not have won the war. This was precisely the reason why JAK was founded. The head of the committee was the actor Solomon Mikhoels; the secretary (and therewith Beria’s man) was the author Isaak Feffer. JAK traveled extensively in the USA and collected many millions of dollars from Soviet sympathizers in press and radio, Hollywood, and the labor unions. As its heritage, it left behind an intellectual Fifth Column. After the war, this valuable service rendered to Stalin cost almost the entire JAK membership their lives. On October 12, 1946, the Ministry for State Security (MGB) presented the Central Committee a dossier on anti-Soviet activities of the JAK. A secret investigation of JAK activities came to the conclusion that they had greatly exaggerated their contribution to the achievements of the USSR in their coverage of the lives of Soviet Jews. This was all the more true since this coverage had appeared in the foreign, that is to say, American media. The Politburo decided to dissolve JAK on November 20, 1948. For Mikhoels, the MGB engineered a fatal automobile accident in Minsk, while JAK functionaries Feffer, Suskin and Gofshtein were arrested at the end of 1948. Stalin’s Holocaust plans were becoming reality.

On January 13, 1949, Georgi Malenkov, a close associate of Stalin who personally participated in executions during the 1930s, ordered the former head of the Soviet war propaganda bureau, Central Committee member Soloman Losovski (recte Dridso) to report to him so that he could listen to Losovski’s confession that he had engaged in a criminal activity as a Jew. Malenkov referred to a memorandum written for Stalin by Losovski on February 1944 and signed also by Mikhoels, Feffer and Epshtein. In the memo, which had been written at the height of the American-Soviet war alliance, it was suggested that the Crimean Tatars be removed and a Jewish Socialist State be established in the Crimea. In 1944, the international JAK were certain of success in the matter of the Crimea.

With the end of the war, however, a great change occurred. The Central Committee of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union voted to remove Losovski, and he was arrested on January 26, 1949. In that same month, the Jewish chief physician of the Moscow Botkin Hospital, Shimeliovich, disappeared in the Lubyanka, followed by JAK activists Kvitko, Perez, Marhish, and Bergelsson. In April of 1952, their files were made available to the military committee of the Supreme Court. Following

trial on May 8 to July 18, 1952, 13 defendants were sentenced to death before a firing squad. The remaining defendants were sentenced to concentration camp terms ranging from 10 to 25 years. The head of the Soviet Writers Association welcomed the executions of the thirteen, as did Central Committee member Alexander Fadejev (the “Young Guard”). “A new Holocaust was dawning” as the thirteen Jewish prisoners were being shot in the cellars of the Lubyanka, says Mikhail Nortshtein in the Russian Jewish émigré publication *Krug*, published in Cologne.

*“Only the death of Stalin in 1953 avoided that calamity.”*

© Sep. 30.,2002

### General Paulus Returns to Stalingrad

The last military headquarter of the commander of the 6<sup>th</sup> German Army was the cellar of the central mall “ZUM”. In July 2002, its present director and the management of the War Museum of Wolgograd decided to restore the original furnishings of the German Headquarters, complete with ammunition, military decorations, flags, charts, wireless sets, photographs. The Paulus cellar 1943, for whom? The restorers admit that a “Paulus” in the cellar is not only a tourist attraction, but addresses foremost the Russian youth. Communist veteran organisations protested against the project and called it a profascist fraud of actual historic events. Some even named it blasphemy. Officials of various antifascist committees in Moscow asked whether such projects intended to propagate ideals of the German army amongst the Russian juveniles. Newspapers aligned with Beresovski and Gusinski cited an American Jew, Susan Sontag, who introduced the term “fascinating fascism” into the international print media. This seems to hold true for post-Soviet Russia.

Mass production of books, picture books, videos, CD’s, all portraying the German point of view, *i.e.*, the reasoning of the German army and its millions of eastern European volunteers, aligns with Russian revisionism. To point out three illustrious examples from the spring/summer of 2002:

- the life-work of the scientist of human evolution, the social anthropologist Hans F.K. Günther;
- Konstantin Rodsayevskiy’s two volumes entitled “Testament of a Russian Fascist” (original title in 1943: “The Contemporary Judaisation of the Globe or the Jewish Question in the 20<sup>th</sup> century”);
- Igor Djakov’s omnibus volume “The Great Civil War 1941 – 1945”.

Compilation, print and distribution of such literature have an important prerequisite in Russia: the lack of political correctness. Wolfgang Kasack, Germany’s leading authority on Slavic Peoples, remarks:

*“Today, there is no state censorship, everybody can acquire books on world religions and philosophies of all colours, everybody can say, write or print whatever his convic-*



Generalfeldmarschall  
Friedrich Paulus

[www.twschwarzer.del/paulus.jpg](http://www.twschwarzer.del/paulus.jpg)



tion may be. The past ordeals of authors, having to consider whether their text might infringe their or their family's security due to political duress, or whether their typescript would pass either the editor's office or censorship, are obsolete." (Novalis 1/2 2002)

Two years ago, the St. Petersburg's organisers of the International Documentary Film Festival presented Leni Riefenstahl's soundtrack "Triumph des Willens" (1934) along with the Olympic epos "Fest der Völker" and "Fest der Schönheit" (1936). The Russian public spent minute-long standing ovations. The Riefenstahl films made their continuous debut. Only a few gazettes in Moscow criticized the St. Petersburg Riefenstahl fans. In this case, the liberal progeny of the Stalinist anti-Fascist movement lost their sovereignty over gist, and terrain over common sense. This point remains valid in spite of mounting cemetery desecrations. In June of this year, anonymous persons violated the cemetery for German POWs in Krasnogorsk near Moscow, whereupon the city council filed a criminal complaint. On the other hand, young Russian patriots are committed to the inauguration of German military cemeteries, as happened in Smolensk.

Over an extended period of time, the Anti-Defamation-League in the USA, the Centre for Antifascism in Moscow, the Wiesenthal Centre in Paris, the Jewish Society of the Russian Federation and multibillionaire George Soros' Moscow "Open Society" prepared a bill entitled "Countermeasures to Extremist Actions" (o protivodeystviy ekstremistkoi deyatelnosti) which landed on the agenda of the members of the Duma and in the Federal Council. The reading lasted the entire summer. On August 1<sup>st</sup> the law passed parliament. The publisher of the Guenther omni-book, Vladimir Awdejew, exclaimed:

"This law does not apply to us. The opus can already be purchased nation-wide, the Russian Institute for Anthropology welcomed the edition and ordered a larger quantity."

Three years ago, a similar bill was discussed in the Duma. From the very beginning, the communist fraction resisted the extremist bill, because in it they foresaw an attempt of public denunciation and state oppression of leftist opposition. Their member of parliament, Vladimir Ryshkov decreed that military action would suffice in containing juvenile extremism. The coordinator of that fraction feared that such a "spongy paragraph" would allow "any local village official" to accuse undesirable individuals or groups of extremism. The strongest "no" came from one of the very first human rightist, the Jewess Valeriya Novodvorskaya, who leads a non-parliamentary oppositional party, the so-called Demosojus (Democratic Bond). "There is no change in Russia" judges the old lady of the dissidents of the sixties. "One had a scaffold, one had a hangman's axe and there are always plenty of necks."

Proponents of the law argue that the bill is not directed against parties or opinions, but principally against "fascist skinheads". The German

newspaper correspondents in Moscow, Kerstin Holm from the *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung* and Jens Hartmann from *Die Welt* agree. According to Uwe Klußmann from *Der Spiegel* (American equivalent to "Time Magazine"), the skinheads' favourite lecture is *Mein Kampf*, which can be bought anywhere in Moscow, and: they fight to kill, their victims being mainly dark-skinned. (24/2002).

Ms. Holm states "wealthy clans" promulgated "fascist deeds," which were gaining popularity thanks to "martial, anti-intellectual traditions." Holms' insinuation of "wealthy clans" supporting fascist skinheads seems credible, since the Moscow Justice Department simply confiscated the rented institutional building from the "grand captain of capitalism" (Holm on Soros). Soros was quite literally thrown out; he lost his Centre for Global Propaganda and Neo-Liberal Education in the heart of Moscow.

One argument the Soros people have (they're maintaining student homes, libraries, and colleges) is that the military supports fascist skinheads. Actually, the special police force Omon (Otryad Miliziy Osobogo Nasmatsheniye) teaches young workers and juveniles of various national patriotic parties and movements. The armed wing of the Ministry of Internal Affairs has great interest in efficiently trained paramilitary recruits, and this is no secret in Putin's Russia. Thus, Omon officers train their recruits for close combat every Tuesday and Thursday in the Omon Complex in the Tallinn Street. Free of charge. Nobody contradicts this ever since the boulevard gazette *Moskovski Komsomolets* published an extensive report of this event on May 1<sup>st</sup> of this year.

According to the right-wing opposition, the law in question is the revenge of the Marxist cosmopolitan left for the collapse of communism. In their fight for historic relativity, the pursuers of extremists have taken blows. A wave of "fascinating fascism" is thundering against the predominance of anti-Fascist paradigms. The Rammstein affair best illustrates this phenomenon. A corresponding hard rock band from Germany played in the Moscow's Mammut Super Bowl before more than one hundred thousand fans coming all the way from Vladivostok and Irkutsk via airplane. Impartial Russian reporters mentioned that fascinated people wrote the word Rammstein in Cyrillic script onto Metro stations. Why?

Rammstein stands for 'Fascist' video-clips and stage performances, per the left-wing radical German newspaper *taz*.



Univermag building before the war and today. In this building General Field Marshal Friedrich Paulus surrender on January 31, 1943. ([www.stalingrad-info.com/patrikphotos.htm](http://www.stalingrad-info.com/patrikphotos.htm))

The “Pathos-Rockers” from Rammstein, according to *Der Spiegel*, worship a so-called “superior race aesthetic, in the very same mania as the Nazi-illuminated Leni Riefenstahl did.” (28/2002).

Enter the advent of Stalingrad’s Friedrich Paulus.

© Aug. 11, 2002

### Stalin’s War Effort

The Russian ‘Historikerstreit’ (row of historians) is gaining momentum. While Vladimir Dmitrev from the Moscow Cultural Film Channel shows never before seen documentaries lasting entire evenings concerning the active support between the Wehrmacht and the population of the USSR, war historian Andrey Cherkassov ascertains the validity of the German preemptive strike, whereby the astounding part being that Cherkassov is a member of the Communist Party in Russia. He does not belong to the growing number of historical revisionists, but his internet contribution on the home-page of the *Pravda* sustains the central thesis of the revisionists claim: long before June 22, 1941, Stalin was preparing a war of aggression against Germany.

Cherkassov, resident of Wolgograd, attacked a broadcast from *Radio Rossiy*, which mentioned that Stalin did not believe his foreign agents and was thus taken by “Barbarossa” completely by surprise. This is an absolute lie, so Cherkassov:

*“As far back as 1927, Stalin wrote about the inevitability of a war. Since 1927 Stalin invested one-half of the entire Russian revenue into the military. Yes, Stalin prepared his troops for final victory. Long before the beginning of the war, he called his sons to himself and told them: soon there will be war and you will be soldiers. On April 7<sup>th</sup> Franz Halder noted in his diary, ‘an analysis of the Russian military concentration compels us to consider that their troops are capable of performing an offensive strike at any time’.”* (<http://pravda.ru/main/2002/06/1142496.html>)

Russian historians like Suvorov, Meltyuckov, Danilov, Sokolov, searching for the causes of the war, agree on exactly this point. The communist Cherkassov does not object; Stalin was planning to ambush Germany, that’s his message. Vladimir Malyshev (author) and Vladimir Dmitrev’s (producer) destruction of the legend of the “Great Fatherland War” is a calculated paradigm breach. Following the German invasion, the majority of the population felt liberated and sought revenge. German soldiers were not only embraced as liberators in the Ukraine, but also in the Baltic States and Belarus, receiving as token bread and salt, and in the western part of central Russia itself – this is at any rate the notion of the film. The real enemy was neither Germany nor its Wehrmacht, nor the occupancy, but the communist regime all the more so, since victims of Stalin’s terror were exhumed under the protection of German guns. This film, sponsored by the independent Gosfilmfonds, shows disturbing scenes from Lvov liberated by German troops in July 1941, and photographed spontaneously by German soldiers. “Propaganda lies” is the term the two Russian film producers apply to the official version of the NKVD massacre in Lvov.

It’s quite a subversive film in the eyes of those historians and politicians, who regularly celebrate the triumph of the “Great Fatherland War” on May 9<sup>th</sup>.

In the era of the GPU, Stalin read the novels of Dostoyevski, drew caricatures and wrote comments on the books’ covers. The historian Boris Ilisarov comments on this in his newly published manuscript *In Stalin. A Portrait from his Library and Archives*, one finds indications that Stalin wanted to launch the “final solution of the Jewish question” by public mass executions on the Red Square (p. 142).

The philosopher and historian Alexej Kara-Mursa, a national liberal reform proponent, close to the “Bond for Rightist Power”, demonstrates Stalin’s anti-Semitic, Jew deploring character in his essay in the *Literaturnaya gazeta*. Stalin wanted to rid the world of the Jewish question (jevreiski vopros), identical to the foul cosmopolitanism as he saw it, the same way as Hitler did, so Kara-Mursa. He mentioned the great purge, where the elite of international-Leninist Jewry was liquidated. It was not Stalin who won the Soviet-German war, but the Russian people, who returned to their national religious fundamentals. The popular Russian intellectual and author leaves no doubt in his essay published in the *Literaturnaya gazeta* on January 23, 2002, that Stalin was the biggest criminal who ever lived.

Despite all criticism on Putin’s western policies – there is freedom of thought in Russia, quite in contrast to Germany and other western European nations. No forbidden discussions, no forbidden publishing. No suppression of historical revisionism. There is freedom for the Russian Noltes and Hoffmanns and no criminalization for the GULag lie, the ideological pendant to another “lie”. Workuta and White See Canalisation, Treblinka and Lubyanka, Solovetski and Vinnitsa, Auschwitz and Katyn, Norylsk, Kingir, Karaganda, the Bartholomew’s Night of Yekhtarinburg: all open in Russia for historic evaluation.

On January 26 and 27, 2002, an International Revisionist Congress took place in Moscow, where celebrities like Alexander Sinovjev, Roger Garaudy, Michael Piper, Oleg Platonov along with David Duke, Jürgen Graf, Fred Toben, Ahmed Rami, Boris Mironov, Russ Granata, Mikhael Kusnetsov, Richard Krege, René-Louis Berelaz, and Christopher Bolyn gave speeches. The publishing team of the *Encyclopaedia Russian Civilisation* was the organiser, the ensuing discussion was held in the Humanitarian Social Academy. Russian philosophers and sociologists term the Bolshevik seizure of power as the “greatest catastrophe of the occidental culture in the 20<sup>th</sup> century”. (Nikolai Simakov: “The Russian Golgatha is the martyrdom of all Christians. Since 1917, no real Christian monarchs exist in Europe any more, no nobility, no statesmen, they’re all but merchants.”). St. Petersburg’s philosopher Lyubomudrov condemns the capitalistic globalisation, being a facade of western liberalism and in this context cites Polish-American Zbigniew Brzezinski, the secret eminence of the American world strategy: “A good Russia is a Russia which does not exist.” This hatred of the Russian people is “satanic” says Prof. Ljubomudrov.

*“Here you’ll find the anti-Russian genocide, which has been in progress for a long time.”*

© June 25, 2002

---

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung*, 6(4) (2002), pp. 394-397. Translated by Fabian Eschen, James M. Damon, Harald Hortig, and Hans Rummel.

# Hundred Years of War against Germany

By Steffen Werner

In August 1895, a series of articles began in the British weekly *The Saturday Review*, which called for the annihilation of Germany and whose disastrous greed for German plunder still reverberates to the present day.

With the Second Reich, a German state came into being which was rapidly creating a modern economy which imperiled the economic predominance of Great Britain. Coal and steel were the two indicators by which national economies were measured prior to the First World War. The production of raw materials in Germany grew by 334% in the quarter-century before the First World War, from 4 million to 17.8 million tons, while the figures for Great Britain rose from 7.7 to 9 million, therefore an increase of 17%. During the same period the mining of coal in Germany increased from 76.2 to 255.8 million tons (240%) but in Britain only 60%, to 240 million tons. Germany's foreign trade was reaching proportions alarming to Great Britain. An investigation by the English Parliament in 1885 noted that the Germans produced more cheaply and their products were geared to the preferences of their buyers. Knowledge of languages, tirelessness and flexibility were considered to be the merits of the German commercial travelers. A trademark law was passed in England as a counter-measure, which prescribed that German products be marked "Made in Germany," yet the British middlemen and consumers nevertheless still often preferred the German goods, on which account the obligatory mark was modified to "Foreign made."<sup>1</sup>

That this new development was no accident was discovered by Paul Valéry in a British commissioned work from the year 1896, in which the reasons for this new development would be raised to a dogma:<sup>2</sup>

*"One learns that the military victories through which this [German] nation established itself are small when compared with the economic triumphs which it has already wrested; already their many markets in the world are more tightly held than the territories which it owes to its army [...] one grasps that Germany has turned to industry and trade as it once did to its military: with level-headedness and resolve. One senses that it is omitting no means. If one wishes to explain this new [...] greatness, then one should call to mind: constant hard work, most precise investigation of the sources of wealth and unrelenting manufacturing of the means for producing it; exact topography of the favorable sites and most convenient connecting routes; and above all, perfect obedience, a subordination of all motives under a sort of simple, exclusive, powerful thought – which is strategic in form, economic in purpose, scientific in its profound design and its realm of authority. Thus does the totality of the German enterprises have its impact upon us."*

The European upper classes saw their indolent life imperiled by this upswing of the German economy. They were living, according to Max Scheler, in a Paradise:<sup>3</sup>

*"For our Eastern neighbors there was more dreaming, plotting, feeling, praying, and quiet submission to the yoke of fate, but also the drinking of schnapps, strolling romanti-*

*cally through life, careless and illicit coarse enjoyment [...] For the English, it was easy to buy and sell, according to the old way, accustomed to winning, and in the manner of old grand merchants, proud of the old proven types of goods, without adapting to the needs of customers in the world market [...] it was also, however, to enjoy life in sports, wagering, gaming, country life, traveling, to end the week's work on Friday evening and to go to the sports stadium [...] – but to do all this with a matter-of-fact feeling, grounded in the situation and geography of the island, of having been divinely chosen to be Lord of the Sea [...] not as a member of Europe, but as a power equal to all of Europe, indeed, a power which was a match for the entire world, equal to guiding the nations outside of Europe, of leading them and of being their political arbiter. And the same paradise meant for France: increasing financial wealth with few children, pensions after 20-30 years of work, great colonial empire, time and idle leisure for luxury, intellect, outward appearances, adventures full of sensuality with beautiful women."*

The terror which the German power of achievement set loose in these European upper classes, was captured by Max Scheler in the parable:

*"There [...] appeared on their every horizon [...] the image of a new, strange archangel, the face [...] as severe and iron-like as the old one of the myth, but otherwise quite different [...] He bore the stamp of a plain workman, with good, tough fists, he was a man who labored and kept working, on and on, according to the inner testimonial of his own convictions, not in order to outdo or for the sake of some sort of renown, and not for enjoyment apart from or after the work, nor in order to contemplate and admire the beauty of the world in that spare time following work, but quietly and slowly, immersed in his labor, yet with a terror-exciting steadiness, exactitude and punctuality when seen from the outside, and wholly lost within himself and his task, he worked, worked on and kept working – and this the world was least able to grasp – out of pure joy in boundless work in itself – without goal, without purpose, without end. What will become of us, what shall happen to us – felt the nations [...] How shall we exist, faced by these new masses? Shall we change ourselves, seeking to emulate him? No and again no! We cannot obey this new demand! But we do not want it and shall not do it!"*

In 1895 these upper classes, beginning with Great Britain, formed a War Party against Germany which is still at work today and which will be documented by citations from the years 1895 to 1994.

## **Delendam, Delendam, Delendam!**

*The Saturday Review* of 24 August 1895:<sup>4</sup>

**"OUR TRUE FOREIGN POLICY.**

*[...] As we have before pointed out, the dominant fact of the situation with regard to our foreign policy is the stead-*

fast enmity of France. We can call this enmity unreasonable or untimely, but its existence is not to be doubted. Some papers, therefore, recommend that England should at once join the Triple Alliance; that Lord Salisbury should promise the German Emperor assistance and support in case of any attack made upon the estates or interests of the Allies in Europe, on condition that the Allies should support England in case of any aggression upon her territories in other parts of the world. For various reasons this policy, although eminently safe, does not altogether please us. First of all, we English have always made war hitherto upon our rivals in trade and commerce; and our chief rival in trade and commerce to-day is not France but Germany. In case of a war with Germany, we should stand to win much and lose nothing; whereas, in case of a war with France, no matter what the issue might be, we stand to lose heavily.”

*The Saturday Review* of 1 February 1896:<sup>5</sup>

“A BIOLOGICAL VIEW OF OUR FOREIGN POLICY  
BY A BIOLOGIST.

The record of the past history of life upon the catch has made us familiar with one phase in the drama of evolution. For countless generations a number of species may have been struggling on tolerably equal terms, now one, now the other, securing some little advantage, when suddenly a turn in the kaleidoscope of the world gives one of them an advantage of real moment. The lucky species multiplies rapidly; it spreads over the land and the seas, its rivals perishing before it or being driven into the most inhospitable corners; [...]

The great nations of the earth are local varieties, species in the making. It is not necessary that there should be anatomical distinctions among them; although, indeed, the English, Germans, French, Russians and Americans, Chinese and Japanese, have each their distinct groups of average characters. [...]

The world is rapidly approaching the epoch of these last wars, of wars which cannot end in peace with honour, of wars whose spectre cannot be laid by the pale ghost of arbitration. The facts are patent. Feeble races are being wiped of the earth, and the few great, incipient species arm themselves against each other. England, as the greatest of these – greatest in geographical distribution, greatest to expansive force, greatest in race-pride – has avoided for centuries the only dangerous kind of war. Now, with the whole earth occupied and the movements of expansion continuing, she will have to fight to the death against successive rivals. [...]

Of European nations, Germany is most alike to England. In racial characters, in religious and scientific thought, in sentiments and aptitudes, the Germans, by their resemblances to the English, are marked out as our natural rivals. In all parts of the earth, in every pursuit, in commerce, in manufacturing, in exploiting other races, the English and the Germans jostle each other. Germany is a growing nation; expanding far beyond her territorial limit, she is bound to secure new foothold or to perish in the attempt. [...] Were every German to be wiped out to-morrow, there is no English trade, no English pursuit that would not immediately expand. Were every Englishman to be wiped out tomorrow, the Germans would gain in proportion. Here is

the first great racial struggle of the future: here are two growing nations pressing against each other, man to man all over the world. One or the other has to go; one or the other will go. [...]

The biological view of foreign policy is plain. First, federate our colonies and prevent geographical isolation turning the Anglo-Saxon race against itself. Second, be ready to fight Germany, as *Germania est delenda* [Germany must be destroyed]; third, be ready to fight America when the time comes. Lastly, engage in no wasting tears against peoples from whom we have nothing; to fear.”

*The Saturday Review* of 11 September 1897:<sup>6</sup>

“ENGLAND AND GERMANY

Prince Bismarck has long recognised what at length the people of England are beginning to understand – that in Europe there are two great, irreconcilable, opposing forces, two great nations who would make the whole world their province, and who would levy from it the tribute of commerce. England, with her long history of successful aggression, with her marvellous conviction that in pursuing her own interests she is spreading light among nations dwelling in darkness, and Germany, bone of the same bone, blood of the same blood, with a lesser will-force, but, perhaps, with a keener intelligence, compete in every corner of the globe. In the Transvaal, at the Cape, in Central Africa, in India and the East, in the islands of the Southern sea, and in the fair North-West, wherever – and where has it not? – the flag has followed the Bible and trade has followed the flag, there the German bagman is struggling with the English pedlar. Is there a mine, to exploit, a railway to build, a native to convert from breadfruit to tinned meat, from temperance to trade gin, the German and the Englishman are struggling to be first. A million petty disputes build up the greatest cause of war the world has ever seen. If Germany were extinguished to-morrow, the day after to-morrow there is not an Englishman in the world who would not be the richer. Nations have fought for years over a city or a right of succession; must they not fight for two hundred million pounds of commerce?

[...] Our work over, we need not even be at the pains to alter Bismarck's words to Ferry, and to saw to France and Russia ‘Seek some compensation. Take inside Germany whatever you like: you can have it.’ [...] ‘*Germania esse delendam.*’ [Germany must be destroyed]”

Secret speech of Winston S. Churchill in March 1936 in the Lower House:<sup>8</sup>

“For four hundred years the foreign policy of England has been to oppose the strongest, most aggressive, most dominating Power on the Continent [...]. Faced by Philip II of Spain, against Louis XIV under William III and Marlborough, against Napoleon, against William II of Germany, it would have been easy and must have been very tempting to join with the stronger and share the fruits of his conquest. However, we always took the harder course, joined with the less strong Powers, made a combination among them, and thus defeated and frustrated the Continental military tyrant whoever he was, whatever nation he led. Thus we preserved the liberties of Europe [...].

Observe that the policy of England takes no account of which nation it is that seeks the overlordship of Europe. The question is not whether it is Spain, or the French Monarchy, or the French Empire, or the German Empire, or the Hitler régime. It has nothing to do with rulers or nations; it is concerned solely with whoever is the strongest or the potentially dominating tyrant. Therefore, we should not be afraid of being accused of being pro-French or anti-German. If the circumstances were reversed, we could equally be pro-German and anti-French. It is a law of public policy which we are following, and not a mere expedient dictated by accidental circumstances, or likes and dislikes, or any other sentiment.

The question, therefore, arises which is today the Power in Europe which is the strongest, and which seeks in a dangerous and oppressive sense to dominate. Today, for this year, probably for part of 1937, the French Army is the strongest in Europe. But no one is afraid of France. Everyone knows that France wants to be let alone, and that with her it is only a case of self-preservation. Everyone knows that the French are peaceful and overhung by fear. [...]

Germany, on the other hand, fears no one. She is arming in a manner which has never been seen in German history. She is led by a handful of triumphant desperadoes. The money is running short, discontents are arising beneath these despotic rulers. Very soon they will have to choose, on the one hand, between economic and financial collapse or internal upheaval, and on the other, a war which could have no other object, and which, if successful, can have no other result, than a Germanised Europe under Nazi control. Therefore, it seems to me that all the old conditions present themselves again, and that our national salvation depends upon our gathering once again all the forces of Europe to contain, to restrain, and if necessary to frustrate, German domination. For, believe me, if any of those other Powers, Spain, Louis XIV, Napoleon, Kaiser Wilhelm II, had with our aid become the absolute masters of Europe, they could have despoiled us, reduced us to insignificance and penury on the morrow of their victory."

Report of Carl J. Burkhardt of a conversation on 15 August 1938 with the Polish foreign minister Beck:<sup>9</sup>

"The Poles are waiting in apparent calm. Beck, during our nocturnal journey, made me privy to his plans to some extent. Furthermore, he is playing his double-game. It is no German game, as many French and the Polish opposition believe. It is a game in which the greatest profit is hoped for Poland, a profit which is supposed to come out of a final and unavoidable German catastrophe. For this reason, the Germans are being encouraged in their wrong actions, and in Danzig they are enjoying letting the extremists triumph while at the same time they repeatedly stress adherence to the outer form of the treaties. One day there will be a reckoning, interest and compound interest will be demanded. Already now, by collaborating in this way with the National Socialists, they have succeeded in creating a solidarity of aversion toward any revision of the treaties in the whole West, in France, England and America. [...] That was entirely different in 1932. At that time Western opinion in the

great democracies for the most part supported the German minorities. People got excited over badly drawn borders, over isolated provinces. Thanks to the excessive methods of Nazism, all of that has ended, and now in Warsaw they are hoping not only for the unconditional integration of Danzig into the Polish state territory, but for much more, for all of East Prussia, for Silesia, even for Pomerania. In the year 1933 they still spoke in Warsaw of Polish Pomerania, but now they say 'our Pomerania.' Beck makes a purely Polish policy, ultimately an anti-German policy, a policy of only a seeming Polish-German détente, since the occupation of the Rhineland and the French passivity at the occasion of this event. But they are making efforts to encourage the Germans quite methodically in their errors."

Note of Eduard Benesch of August 23/24, 1939, in London:<sup>10</sup>

"It was a properly tough tactic, to drive Hitler to war."

Report of Friedrich Grimm concerning a visit in May 1945:<sup>11</sup>

"In May 1945, a few days after the collapse, I had a memorable discussion with an important representative of the opposing side. He introduced himself to me as a university professor of his nation who wished to talk with me about the historical foundations of the war. It was a conversation on an elevated level that we were having. Suddenly, he broke off and pointed to the leaflets which were lying on the table in front of me, with which we were flooded in the first days after the surrender and which were mainly concerned with the concentration camp atrocities. 'What do you say to that?' he asked me. I replied: 'Oradour and Buchenwald? You're beating a dead horse with me. I am an attorney and condemn injustice wherever I meet it, but most of all when it occurs on our side. Nonetheless, I know how to make a distinction between facts and the political usage made of them. I know what atrocity propaganda is. After the First World War, I read all publications of your experts concerning these questions, the writings of the Northcliff bureau, the book 'From War to Peace' of the French finance minister Klotz, in which he describes how the fairy tales about the hacked-off children's hands were invented, and what use was made of them, the enlightening writings of the magazine *Crapouillot*, which compares the atrocity propaganda of 1870 with that of 1914/1918, and finally the classic book by Ponsonby: 'Falsehood in Wartime.' In it, it is revealed that in the previous war they already had magazines in which artificial mountains of corpses were arranged by means of a photo montage with dolls. These pictures were distributed. In doing so, the captions were left blank. They were later inserted telephonically by propaganda headquarters according to need.' My visitor exploded: 'I see I've come across an expert. Now I also want to say who I am. I am no university professor. I am from the headquarters of which you have spoken. For months I have been conducting what you have correctly described: atrocity propaganda – and with it we have won the total victory.' I replied: 'I know and now you must stop!' He responded: 'No, now we are just properly beginning! We will continue this atrocity propaganda, we will increase it until no one

will have a good word to say about the Germans any longer, until any of the sympathy you have had in other countries will have been destroyed, and until the Germans themselves will have fallen into such confusion that they no longer know what they are doing!' I ended the conversation: 'Then you will be taking a great responsibility upon yourself!'"

The British magazine *Sunday Correspondent* on September 17, 1989, for the fiftieth anniversary of the start of the Second World War and of the reunification marking it:<sup>12</sup>

"We must now be honest about the German question, as uncomfortable as it may be for the Germans, for our international partners and even ourselves [...] The question remains, in essence, the same. Not how do we prevent German tanks from rolling over the Oder or the Marne, but how Europe will deal with a people whose number, talent, and efficiency is allowing it to become our regional superpower. We did not enter the war in 1939 in order to save Germany from Hitler or the Jews from Auschwitz or the Continent from Fascism. As in 1914, we entered the war for the no less noble reason that we were not able to accept a German predominance in Europe."

Lech Walesa in an interview with the Dutch newspaper *Elsevier* of April 7, 1990:<sup>13</sup>

"I do not shrink even from making a declaration which makes me unpopular in Germany. If the Germans destabilize Europe anew in one way or another, one should no longer resort to a division, but rather simply eradicate the nation from the map. The East and the West possess the necessary advanced technologies to carry out this sentence."

Henry Kissinger in the *Welt am Sonntag* of November 13, 1994:

"President Clinton's idea of the USA and Germany as Partners in Leadership was not exactly very wise [...] Actually, this notion drives everyone to the barricades, for in the final analysis two world wars were waged in order to prevent just that, a dominant role of Germany."

The citations imply that all the wars, revolutions, persecutions and expulsions of the 20th century were matter-of-factly initiated by rationally planning nations or were tolerated, for the sake of power and money. In view of the apocalyptic terror and horror resulting from these undertakings, a clear analysis appears more practical than moral accusations.

For the British upper class – and their international partners – war is an entirely normal activity. The British pragmatically ask: How did our forebears hold it? What was their advantage? Did they not, for four hundred years, wage war against their main rival or the strongest continental power? One weighs, like a merchant: is it advantageous to wage war against France, can Austria hurt us? What will war against Germany bring us? 250 million pounds = 5 million marks per year? The security of our predominance? Must we fight against the USA later?

The thought of whether a war is morally defensible does not even occur! For it is, in any case, "tough" to drive someone to war. For war becomes a game, a double-game. For one places snares by quite methodically encouraging the opponent in his errors. In this 'game,' the 'greatest profit' entices. "Take inside

Germany whatever you like": that's how one buys allies; for oneself, one takes money. Is it not better that the other, the enemy, totally disappears? Does he not destabilize the situation, imperil the loot, if he has recovered? Is it not better to exterminate the Germans at once? Is it not smarter to eradicate Germany from the map? *Germania esse delendam!* One has the advanced technologies – by which the neutron bomb is probably meant: the Germans would be dead and the loot intact.

For there is no honorable peace permitted. For the atrocity propaganda is to be continued and increased until no one will any longer have a good word to say about the enemy. The enemy becomes Evil in himself. The objection of Friedrich Grimm, which generally applies to such actions: "Then they will take a great responsibility upon themselves" – fails here. Responsibility toward the enemy does not exist and guilt not at all. Guilt, in this system, is merely a question of power. God isn't needed here, there is no God permitted! "Thou shalt not kill" devolved into meaningless chatter. Man puts himself in God's place.

The sponsors embracing such ideas are: a high British politician, Navy Minister of the First World War and Prime Minister of the Second World War; a former Czech state President; a Polish foreign minister of the year 1938; a Polish President of 1990; and a former American Secretary of State.

The continuity with which these ideas are pursued from 1895 to 1994 is alarming, and the matter-of-fact attitude with which not only the ideas, but also their acceptance, are still presumed in 1989 by a probably broad public of a British weekly paper. Baffled, with Kissinger, that here it is no longer preventing a German predominance, which is discussed, since even the thought of a Germany as partner of the USA is pronounced dangerous.

### Winston Churchill and Thomas More

What is the intellectual-historical background of the continuity of British policy? The model can be found in *Utopia* by Thomas More. *Utopia*, misread as social design, is a state with an aristocracy of priests, in which the priests are subject to no public court but only to god and their conscience. The system of government of the Utopians encompasses, in addition to the much-cited social model, a model for world rulership as well. Through the over-valuation of the "utopian" social model, the significance of More's ideas for the British power policy has been misapprehended – and, at least in this century, forgotten.<sup>14</sup>

Machiavelli had the Prince rule over his people and maintain himself against his neighbors. The Utopians, however, have mastery over the world. They decide worldwide over what is just and unjust, so, if "their friend's merchants in any part of the world have been unjustly accused under some pretext of justice, either by using unjust laws speciously or by interpreting good laws perversely." The Utopians are the ruling economic power of their world.<sup>15</sup> They hoard and pile up money, for money is the source of their power, the breaking off of trade relations one of their preferred weapons. In case of war, they buy soldiers and traitors with money, or sow discord between their foes, without any kind of moral restriction: "So easy it is to get someone to commit any crime whatsoever by means of bribe." Thanks to their wealth, most nations are in debt to them.<sup>16</sup>

Along with Churchill, one can find in *Utopia* the foundations for a credo of Liberalism.<sup>17</sup>

*Utopia*, which appeared exactly 379 years before the first *Saturday Review* article, seems to have served British policy as a handbook. Even when it was published it was understood to be a political *roman à clef*: "In truth, the utopian flag marks British goods."<sup>18</sup> Set pieces from *Utopia*, which seem very familiar to the Germans, have left their imprint upon classical British policy: "[...] they stir up neighboring people and set them against their enemy by digging up ancient claims such as is never lacking to kings."<sup>19</sup> The mercilessness in conduct of war can also be found there. "Certainly, whether the cause was just or unjust, it was avenged by a hideous war, in which the surrounding nations also added their energy and resources to the hostile forces of the major opponents so that some prosperous peoples were ravaged, others were badly shaken."<sup>20</sup> Also from More came the advice of having others fight for one, for in addition to mercenaries "they use the forces of those for whom they have taken up arms, and after that the auxiliary troops of their friendly nations. As a last resort do they add their own citizens."<sup>21</sup> (There are still numerous other references here to British policy, to deal with which would lead us too far afield.)

When Winston Churchill, in his secret speech of 1936 – 420 years after More had written the first part of his *Utopia* – adduced, as a four-hundred-year British policy, the struggle against the ruling tyrant, and then went on to claim: "thus we preserved the liberty of Europe," he was arguing in the tradition of the Utopians:<sup>22</sup>

*"Therefore, [...] they are reluctant to go to war and also only [...] out of compassion and humanity, they use their force to liberate oppressed people from tyranny and servitude."*

Charles VIII of France was viewed as an actual tyrant by More. In *Utopia*, More discusses his concrete situation in a fictional discussion between Charles VIII and his counselors.<sup>23</sup> With the pretense of disgust, the utopian techniques are illustrated here of inflaming others toward the actual enemy by means of money and plunder. In 1511 England entered the Holy League, by which the beginning of this four-hundred-year-old British war policy invoked by Churchill was probably made.

### Common Sense...

The *Saturday Review* articles appeared anonymously between 1895 and 1897. But what sort of magazine was this? The German *Brockhaus* encyclopedia of 1908 mentions it as "imperialist 'magazine' published since 1855 with witty reviews of Engl., Fr. and German literature"<sup>24</sup> In accordance with its importance, it is found in many German libraries, and the annual series from 1855 are partially extant. There is not much that can be said about the readers, but they must surely have come from the educated upper class. A judgment concerning the contributors, among whom can be found many illustrious British names, is more easily made. Many of them published several times, a portion of them on a regular basis.

Many of the articles appear anonymously, which gives an even greater weight to the list of names, since it seems to have

been customary in England for high-ranking and wealthy persons to have others write for them.<sup>25</sup> But in the period between 24 August 1895 and 11 September 1897, in which this series of articles appeared, there are renowned British names: G. Bernard Shaw,<sup>26</sup> H. G. Wells,<sup>27</sup> Winston S. Churchill,<sup>28</sup> W. B. Yeats,<sup>29</sup> Conan Doyle,<sup>30</sup> Henry M. Stanley,<sup>31</sup> Rudyard Kipling,<sup>32</sup> and Algernon Charles Swinburne.<sup>33</sup> Four of those named received Nobel prizes and one was very influential in the First World War and was the key figure in British politics in the Second World War.

The reputation of many other contributors is so significant that they are still named even 70 years later in one other German encyclopedia,<sup>34</sup> from which also the information about the authors was taken: Sir Max Beerbohm,<sup>35</sup> English writer and caricaturist from the circle around Wilde and Beardsley; John Bagnell Bury,<sup>36</sup> classical philologist and historian, professor at Cambridge and one of the most important scholars in the field of late ancient and Byzantine history, editor of E. Gibbons' *History of the Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*; Stephen Crane,<sup>37</sup> American writer, a friend of J. Conrad, H. James and H. G. Wells; John Davidson,<sup>38</sup> Scottish poet and dramatist; Charles Wentworth Dilke,<sup>39</sup> editor of the periodical *Athenaeum* as well as Member of the Lower House 1868-86 and 1892-1911, in the Foreign Office under Gladstone 1880-82 (Bit.-Fr. Trade Agreement of 1882), publicist and representative of a liberal imperialism; Edward Dowden,<sup>40</sup> British historian of literature, professor in Dublin; Richard Garnett,<sup>41</sup> English writer and Librarian at the British Museum; Frank Harris,<sup>42</sup> American writer of Anglo-American descent and owner of *The Saturday Review*, who appointed G. B. Shaw as theater critic; William Henry Hudson,<sup>43</sup> English writer, whose books are distinguished by the exactitude of their descriptions of Nature; Sir Oliver Lodge,<sup>44</sup> British physicist, professor at Liverpool and first President of the University in Birmingham; Margaret Macdonald,<sup>45</sup> British proponent of arts and crafts, formed the Glasgow School in Birmingham with her sister and her husband, Ch. R. Mackintosh; Frederic William Henry Myers,<sup>46</sup> English writer, co-founder of the Society of Psychical Research; Coventry Patmore,<sup>47</sup> English poet; Sir Will(iam) Rothenstein,<sup>48</sup> British painter and graphic artist, influenced by Degas and Whistler, official painter of the war for the British and Canadian army in the First and Second World War; Arthur Symons,<sup>49</sup> English lyric poet and critic, most zealous advocate of Symbolism in England; Silvanus Phillips Thompson,<sup>50</sup> British physicist, Professor at Finsbury, made contributions to the history of Natural Science; Alfred Russel Wallace,<sup>51</sup> British zoologist and explorer; the impressions obtained from his journeys suggested to him the idea of natural selection by means of selection in the struggle for existence. Darwin intentionally beat him to publication and created with Bates the theory of mimicry; Sir William Watson,<sup>52</sup> English lyric poet, honored several times, yet not named "Poet Laureate," because he was an opponent of the policy of empire, from which an opposition to the above ideas may be deduced. The contributors were for the most part recruited from the wealthy educated middle class. I have scarcely found any well-known military figures, apart from two names: General Neville Chamberlain,<sup>53</sup> an old veteran of 70 from India, who does not appear in the above lexicon; in any case, he is

probably distantly related to the political Chamberlain family, and Admiral Colomb,<sup>54</sup> the inventor of the Colomb signal apparatus.

Not one of these authors and not any of the readers objected to the proposals in *The Saturday Review* for the destruction of Germany or dismissed them as insane ideas, not even after these ideas were repeatedly put forward. The global lay-out of the idea of destruction with the biological and historical recourse to Darwin's Theory of Evolution, the analogy of Rome = Great Britain and Carthage = Germany, and the reference to Cato with his inflammatory speech for war: "*Ceterum censeo Carthiginem esse delendam*" reveals the wire-pullers. Thus it was only consistent when further articles and letters to the editor were anchored upon the notion of destruction. The comparison of the British and the Roman Empire surfaced in a clear allusion to an appeal to destroy Germany in other texts in *The Saturday Review* in 1896. J.B. Bury<sup>55</sup> analyzed the causes of the fall of Rome through the invasion of the Germans, in which he ascertained that Rome fell, not because of a moral decline, but rather because it did not possess at least a small class with a pronounced will to power. But Great Britain – according to Bury – possessed this class! In an anonymous letter to the editor of a "GREATER ENGLANDER"<sup>56</sup> responding to the article by Bury, a superior fleet was promoted as the basis for the British world empire.

The growth of Germany's economic power was suspiciously observed. Above all, the increase in the German iron and steel exports was followed objectively in editorial articles<sup>57</sup> or excitedly in an anonymous letter to the editor from a "Perplexed."<sup>58</sup> But beyond this, a monster-image of Germany was also constructed. In order to prepare the path for replacing France with Germany as the arch-enemy, the English reader learned how unpopular the German and how well-liked the Frenchman was in England of those days, a fact that an Englishman who lived in England would not, however, have needed to learn from the newspapers. As another example, the war between Denmark and the German confederation in 1864 was falsified into an attack of Prussia against Denmark.<sup>59</sup> As one of the few strategically placed exculpatory articles, one can possibly name an essay on Martin Luther, which refers to the fact that Luther makes the individual obligated to God before anything else.<sup>60</sup>

### ...and its Antipode

Only George Bernard Shaw vehemently objected in the most manifold ways by word and deed to these ideas from 1898, although at first in a veiled manner, to the extent that he has become the chief witness for the prosecution against Great Britain. But in Germany the connection between Shaw's protests and the battle cry "*Germania esse delendam*" was not recognized.

Shaw's historical drama *Caesar and Cleopatra*, which appeared in 1898, is a unique answer to the insane ideas of the British middle class of *The Saturday Review*. The argument runs through the prologue, the drama and notes. In the play, Rome – analogous to Great Britain – stands at a crossroads. Shaw juxtaposes to the image of the old, power-hungry Rome which, like Pompey, claimed to "being himself a god",<sup>61</sup> the

other, new Rome of Caesar. By breaking with the old Rome, Caesar leads it to greatness and endurance.

Shaw glorifies Caesar as a duty-bound, kind and wise statesman. Thus, as if Shaw had had a presentiment of the Moscow show-trials, he has Caesar throw into the sea incriminating letters which his secretary Britannus (!), a repugnant character, proudly presented him because by using them Caesar would have power over his enemies. Caesar to Britannus:<sup>62</sup>

*"Would you have me to waste the next three years of my life in proscribing and condemning men who will be my friends when I proved that my friendship is worth more than Pompey's – than Cato's. [who at this time had been dead for 100 years and whose slogan "Cathago esse delendam" was annulled by Caesar] O incorrigible British Islander: am I a bull dog, to seek squarrels merely to shew show how stubborn my jaws are?"*

In another scene, in desperate straits, in the spirit of old Rome inevitably at the start of a chain of murders, Caesar opposes this path and prophetically warns:<sup>63</sup>

*"And so, to the end of history, murder shall breed murder, always in the name of right and honor and peace, until the gods are tired of blood and create a race than can understand."*

Instead of the statesman for Great Britain whom Shaw portrayed in his writing, Shaw found only Sir Edward Grey, "an unscrupulous imposter and fool, and worse [...] than Caesar Borgia",<sup>64</sup> and so twenty years later, he was no longer thinking of the welfare of Great Britain and the world, but only of that of his own soul. In *Heartbreak House*, which was written between the years 1913 and 1919, in imitation of Chekhov, he creates a portrait of the idle European society to which Scheler also makes reference. For Shaw, the attitude toward life of this class is typical for all nations of Europe:<sup>65</sup>

*"The same nice people, the same extreme superficiality [...] they hated politics, they did not want the land of Utopia realized for the common man. They wanted their pet fantasies and favorite verses realized in their own lives, and if they were able to manage it, they lived lightheartedly from an income which they did nothing to earn!"*

In *Heartbreak House*, an old seaman and a young girl – who, it seems to me, embody the young and the aging Shaw – encounter each other. The old man, paraphrasing *Matthew* 16:26, warns the young girl that she should be careful.<sup>66</sup>

*"It is clever to win the whole world and thereby lose your soul. But do not forget that your soul does not abandon you if you hold it firmly; only the world has its way of melting away in your hands."*

So much for the writer and his work. We will be returning yet to the politician and his words.

### The Tough Kernel

The authors of the three anonymous articles quoted in the beginning are partly known. Concerning the author of the first article of August 24, 1895: "The Proper Foreign Policy for Us English," Hans Grimm, who in 1895 was in Great Britain as a young businessman, learned this about his host:<sup>67</sup>

*"And it happened by chance that my boss, who himself belonged to the English Conservative Party, had been un-*



expectedly informed that that essay of August 24, 1895, on English foreign policy had originated from a quite definite faction in the English Foreign Office, directed by the half-German, Sir Eyre Crowe.”

Behind the biologist, the author of the article of February 1, 1896: “A Biological Perspective on our English Foreign Policy by a Biologist,” is concealed Sir P. Chalmers Mitchell, Professor of Astronomy and Biology at Oxford, as Hans Grimm likewise discovered.<sup>68</sup> According to Grimm, Mitchell was a Captain in the British General Staff from 1916 to 1919 and had connections to Crowe.

Information about the group around Crowe is given in a diary note of October 12, 1918, of First Lieutenant C. Repinton, in which he writes that Crowe, Mallet, and Tyrell will be going as negotiators from the Foreign Office to the planned peace conference. Moreover, he maintains:<sup>69</sup>

*“They joined the F.O. between 1885 and 1893, and, with Carnock and Bertie, were the head and front of the anti-German party all along, vexed at our surrenders to Germany and persuaded that Germany planned our ruin. Between them they made the German peril the central feature of our foreign policy.”*

There is still one more to be counted as belonging to this circle of the F.O., whose significance for the outbreak of the First World War can hardly be overestimated: Sir Edward Grey.

In 1892, Edward Grey became parliamentary Under-Secretary under Lord Rosebery, who took over the Foreign Office. In 1895 Rosebery is voted out and Grey loses his office. Grey writes that these years were “very important” for his life.<sup>70</sup>

To these experiences clearly belongs also the world-view that England must oppose Germany and turn to France. In his memoirs, couched in a very vague diplomatic language, we read:<sup>71</sup>

*“In light of after-events, the whole policy of these years from 1896 to 1904 may be criticized as having played into the hands of Germany.”*

Concrete criticism is expressed by Grey in this manner:<sup>72</sup>

*“We relied on German support and we received it; but we never could be sure when some price for that support might not be extracted.”*

The England of Grey wanted to remain the sole master of the world and not share the power with anyone, most certainly not Germany. This is the basic thought, which runs through Grey’s memoirs, and his joy when the British policy of 1904 draws closer to France expresses itself effusively in comparison with his otherwise dry text:<sup>73</sup>

*“The real cause for satisfaction was that the exasperating friction with France was to end, and that the menace of war with France had disappeared. The gloomy clouds were gone, the sky was clear, and the sun shone warmly. Ill-will, dislike, hate, whether the object of them be a person or a nation, are a perpetual discomfort; they come between us*

*and all that is beautiful and happy; they put out the sun. If the object be a nation with whom our interests are in contact, they poison the atmosphere of international affairs. This had been so between Great Britain and France. [...] That was all to be changed; it was to become positively pleasant, where we had seen before only what was repellent; to understand and to be understood where before there had been misrepresentation and misconstruction; to have friends instead of enemies – this, when it happens, is one of the great pleasures of life.”*

Of course, the price for this was “perpetual discomfort,” “poison,” “misrepresentation,” and “misconstruction” in the relationship to Germany, but that did apparently not let anything come between Grey and “all that is beautiful and happy.” In Grey’s eyes, France was no longer a match for England, whereas Germany was about to outperform England economically. In 1905, Grey took over the Foreign Office and subsequently surrounded himself with the gentlemen from the anti-German circle of the Foreign Office. Crowe, Mallet, Tyrell, and

Bertie all reached key positions and collaborated closely with Grey. Carnock is the only one about whom I did not find anything. Bertie had already previously been ambassador in Paris and in future formed one of the pillars of the new British policy.<sup>74</sup> According to Margaret Bovari, the ambassadors of the most important European nations were exchanged under Grey, but the Parisian embassy, with Sir F. Bertie, remained unchanged, and “it emerges from the private letters between him and Grey that close relations and an excellent accord must have prevailed between the two men.” From 1905 to 1906, Louis Mallet was Private Secretary to Grey, and from 1906 to 1907, he was Senior Clerk in the Foreign Office. From 1907-1913, he was Under-Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs and diplomat in Constantinople between 1913 and 1914. Margaret



Sir Eyre A.B.W. Crowe  
\* July 30, 1864; † April 28, 1925

Bovari sees the influence of Mallet upon Grey as having been “considerable” and numbers him “amongst the most zealous advocates of English-Russian friendship. Still more pronounced with him than this tendency is the anti-German attitude.” William Tyrell was Senior Clerk in the Foreign Office from 1907 to 1918 and from 1907 to 1915 he was Private Secretary to Edward Grey.<sup>75</sup>

In his memoirs, Grey especially emphasized Tyrell and writes in reference to him:<sup>76</sup>

*“The public little or no means of knowing how much it owes in public service to special gifts and qualities in individual civil servants in high positions in the Department of State. In each case, where such qualities exist, a man renders service peculiarly his own, besides taking an able part in the conduct of business in the Department. [...] I had the occasion, in office to know the great value of Tyrell’s public service; but the thing that is prize is our friendship, that began in the Foreign Office, and has continued uninterrupted and intimate after official ties ceased.”*

Eyre Crowe finally became Senior Clerk in the Foreign Office in 1906 and was Assistant Under-Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs from 1912 to 1920.<sup>77</sup> His role in the British policy toward Germany cannot be overestimated. For Hermann Lutz, expert in the investigatory committee of the Reichstag for the war-guilt question, Eyre Crowe is “the Evil Spirit of the Foreign Office.”<sup>78</sup> and Margaret Boveri confirms this:<sup>79</sup>

*“Although we [...] must assess his direct influence upon the daily decisions in the Foreign Office as small [because of his relatively low position; due to his German mother he presumably climbed only slowly], his fixed stance was however surely of enormous effect upon the shaping of the atmosphere which prevailed in the Western Department and from which policy was made.”*

It should be briefly remarked – this will be developed later – that from a subordinate position, as expert on Germany, Crowe decisively influenced official policy several times. Edward Grey himself gives Crowe prominent mention in his memoirs:<sup>80</sup>

*“It has been a great satisfaction since I left office to see great knowledge, ability and unsurpassed devotion to the public service recognized in the promotion of Sir Eyre Crowe to be head of the Foreign Office.”*

And he added as a footnote:

*“Since these words were written the public service of the country has suffered an irreparable loss in the death of Sir Eyre Crowe.”*

Under Grey, the anti-German circles which were behind the *Saturday Review* article of 1895, thereby ascended to key positions.

Grey knew portions of the pattern of thinking there and approved indirectly. Thus, Grey recorded a conversation of 28 April 1908 with Clemenceau and considered it to be so important that he included it as one of the few documents in his memoirs. There we read:<sup>81</sup>

*“M. Clemenceau had some conversation with me at the Foreign Office this morning.*

*He dwelt with great emphasis upon the certainty that we should have to intervene on the continent of Europe against any power which attained a position of domination there, just as we had had to do in the time of Napoleon.*

*He said we ought to be prepared for this. [...] He felt this to be most important. The fate of Napoleon had been decided not at Trafalgar but at Waterloo. And so it would have to be again, in the case of any Power which attempted to dominate the continent.”*

Clemenceau is consciously making use of those modes of thought from the *Saturday Review* articles in order to drive England into war against Germany, and Grey responds in such a way that not only are these modes of thought familiar to him, but he is also influenced by them. This is also shown by a quotation from Grey, which is found in Margaret Boveri:<sup>82</sup>

*“The Germans are not clear about the fact that England always has gotten into opposition to or has intentionally proceeded against any power which establishes a hegemony in Europe.”*

By his conduct, Grey deceived many Germans about his anti-German attitude, and not only diplomats but also scientists, to the extent that caused Hans Rothfels to derisively refer to the remark of a Prussian artillery lieutenant concerning Napoleon:<sup>83</sup>

*“A kindhearted fellow, but stupid, stupid.”*

As a contributor to *The Saturday Review* in the years from 1895 to 1897, G.B. Shaw was of course familiar with the anti-German development and surely knew the authors of the articles agitating against Germany. He tried to warn the German ambassador Lichnowsky in London about Grey and his policy. He laid out a proposal to Lichnowsky. Shaw:<sup>84</sup>

*“He rejected it without reflecting for a moment. It was inappropriate [he said], because Sir Edward Grey was one of the greatest living statesmen, moreover the most sincere friend of Germany. I could [...] not raise my hands to*

*heaven and, with Huss, cry out: Sancta simplicitas [holy simpleton]! Besides, it was of course Lichnowsky, not I, who was going to the stake. [...] It was not my task to enlighten the Duke about the fact that he was walking straight into a trap.”*

A trap so thorough in construction that Shaw writes concerning the British wirepullers on the occasion of the outbreak of the First World War:<sup>85</sup>

*“They felt in this important hour, as though England was lost if but a single traitor in their midst let out into the world a tiny kernel of truth about anything.”*

From 1905 onward, the Foreign Office begins systematically to construct a front with Russia and France against Germany. This development is proven on the basis of the public documents from the German side after the lost war. Crowe, but not only he, worked systematically against Germany

through numerous papers, but above all through his memorandum of January 1, 1907,<sup>86</sup> in which he claimed that Germany was striving for world rule and wanted to secretly attack England. In a counter-expert opinion, Sanderson, Permanent Under-Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs from 1894 to 1906, dismissed the worst distortions in Crowe’s memorandum. Grey passed the paper on only to his like-minded comrades; otherwise it went nowhere.<sup>87</sup>

It would lead us too far afield to present all the lies, distortions, misrepresentations and ploys with which Grey, Crowe, and Company prepared the way for a war against Germany. They have been thoroughly explored to the last detail in many investigations in Germany.<sup>88</sup>

G.B. Shaw has reduced the First World War to this nullity:

*“The present destruction of the German military power is [...] a completely regular operation of British foreign policy, which was executed according to plan with all the resolve, patience, cunning and power which we in England*



Sir Edward Grey

\* April 25, 1862; † Sept. 7, 1933

are accustomed to use, and with overwhelming success. But likewise also, however, with the amazing English talent of veiling from oneself what one is doing. The Englishman never knows what the 'Foreign Office' is up to; [...] An instinct tells him that it is better for him [...] not to know."

The whole text is rife with such quotations and others, which describe the techniques and partly the motive of British imperialism. Concerning the key role of Grey and his methods, one more citation:

"Grey was not ruined over his mistakes; rather, for him the fact became fatal that the necessity of feeding the British public a children's fairy-tale about the nature and causes of the war made it impossible for him to highlight his triumph; for this was of a kind which he himself had described as machiavellian."

There is also a solid fact, which proves that Shaw knew exactly what he was talking about, that he knew the fundamental ideas of Grey. In 1912, he made a public proposal for how the peace could be kept; that is what he had also laid out to Lichnowsky:<sup>89</sup>

"In order to avoid war, England would have to strengthen its army as guardian over the balance of powers and officially and unambiguously declare that in the event of a German attack on France, it will throw its sword onto the scales in favor of the latter. But on the other hand, it would have to give its assurance that it will defend Germany in the event the latter is attacked by Russia or France or by both."

According to all that is known today, the First World War of 1914 would not have happened. Germany would have been able to calmly put up with the parade from Russia toward its borders!

### The Enemy as Criminal

War as Armageddon, where the opponent is no longer only the opponent and, ultimately, the defeated party, but is, rather, absolute Evil, had already been prognosticated by the *Saturday Review* on February 1, 1896. After the Second World War this path was then consistently trodden by means of war crimes trials and more. That these trials were directed against Germany as such is shown by the Charter of the United Nations, which withholds human rights and the right to self-determination from Germany. Since the Charter is also directed against Japan, which is, however, not charged with 'unique' crimes, the true background becomes obvious: it was directed against the two great non-Western economic powers and therefore was about safeguarding the most sacred treasure of the West: the key to power and material wealth.

War crimes trials were already demanded by the victors at the end of the First World War. The behavior of Eyre Crowe allows us to presume that he was the political initiator of this demand, unusual in modern European history. Lutz writes:<sup>90</sup>

"It is typical that the statements of the German delegation in Paris regarding the extradition of the German 'war criminals' made a certain impression upon all, apart from the representative of England, Sir Eyre Crowe, who conducted himself in a completely negative way and was almost offensive."

Winston S. Churchill, who was connected to these circles and their activities not only through his collaboration at *The Saturday Review*, subsequently promote the continuation of this British policy; he also had an affectionate relationship with Grey, about which Wilfrid Scrawen Blunt reports in his diaries:

"Winston nevertheless wants nothing to be said about Grey other than that he is a shining example of an Englishman, the best of his type, and they are obviously good friends; in fact, Grey is the godfather of Winston's son."

His role as Navy minister is well-known, in which he brought about an assemblage of the British Mediterranean fleet by an order of July 30, 1914, that is, before the outbreak of the war, which, in case of a war between Germany and France, would have pulled England into the war under any circumstances, even without a marching through Belgium of German troops.<sup>91</sup>

"Quite a few things seem to have been handed down here due to the brisk-and-lively manner in which Churchill wanted to see foreign policy conducted," according to Margaret Boveri, who also cites a letter from Mallet to Grey, which warns against indiscretions which "will slip out of Churchill during maneuvers."<sup>92</sup> To this character weakness of Churchill we presumably owe knowledge of the secret speech of March 1936, which was cited above. The text of the speech was passed on in April 1936 to the German embassy in London.<sup>93</sup> After the Second World War, Churchill published the speech in *The Second World War – The Gathering Storm* in the Boston edition of 1948. Presumably there was some intervention, since in the London edition of 1948 and naturally, of course, in the German edition, it is missing!

Here Churchill declares:

"For, believe me, if any of these other powers, like Spain, Louis XIV, Kaiser Wilhelm, had become absolute ruler of Europe through our assistance, then they would have robbed us and on the morning after their victory have condemned us to insignificance and poverty."

Here it is once again, the void which is the gist of it all: power and money – the rest is window-dressing! Neither the victory over Spain, nor that over Louis XIV or Napoleon, which of course also belongs in this roll call, led to the triumph of democracy in these nations! How things went for the people in these systems was a matter of total indifference to the powerful in Great Britain – and democracy, which was allegedly so important according to Western propaganda, was not only withheld from the French and the Spanish, but also from their own subjects.<sup>3</sup>

For had the struggle really been waged against the tyrant and for democracy, then British policy would have had to vehemently and energetically oppose the Soviet Union, be it only by means of continuous massive support of the Whites against the Reds. In the 20th century, morality was discovered as a weapon and directed against Germany. By labeling the enemy a criminal, one justifies any crime against him! By raising his crimes to the status of 'uniqueness,' one relativizes and trivializes any other crime into insignificance!

### False Parallels

As is well known, Rome and Carthage fought three wars, Great Britain and Germany, so far, only two! Since Germany

has been reunified and Communism has collapsed, as a result of which German assistance against the Soviet Union is no longer needed, this Carthage Syndrome surfaced again. Kissinger and Walesa, whose greed for loot is immeasurable, were cited. But there are still other texts without aggressive background, which give reason for hope.

On March 12, 1948, a few days after the downfall in the CSR and the subsequent suicide of Jan Masaryk, the Chief Prosecutor for Great Britain at the Nuremberg war crime trials, Sir Hartley Shawcross, stated according to the *London Times*:<sup>94</sup>

*"Step by step I have been forced more and more to the conclusion that the aims of Communism in Europe are sinister and deadly aims.*

*I prosecuted the Nazis in Nuremberg. With my Russian colleagues I condemned Nazi aggression and Nazi terror.<sup>95</sup> I feel shame and humiliation now to see under a different name the same aims pursued, the same technique followed, without check."*

The international edition of the U.S. magazine *Newsweek* wrote on May 8, 1995, the 50<sup>th</sup> anniversary of the unconditional surrender of the German Armed Forces:<sup>96</sup>

*"The chiefs of state who are assembling this week for the solemn remembrance of the end of the Second World War, will formally dedicate themselves to the theme of reconciliation. The winners of the year 1945 showed toward the losers an unusual degree of generosity, as they had not done after the First World War — with disastrous consequences. However, the state which first brought about this reconciliation will not be taking part in the gathering. It is the Soviet Union, whose ideological menace caused the victorious Western powers to put Germany and Japan on their feet again in the framework of a free-market economy and political democracy. More closely considered, this war did not end even in 1945. Those who were waging war merely found them-*

## SINISTER AIMS OF COMMUNISM

### SIR H. SHAWCROSS ON WESTERN UNION

Sir Hartley Shawcross, the Attorney-General, speaking at Stourbridge last night, said that recent tragic events in Czechoslovakia had brought a new sense of urgency to the movement for western union.

I do not mean only the suicide of Jan Masaryk, he added, I was thinking rather of the attempted murder of democracy in Czechoslovakia. Overnight, without any election to indicate the people's will, the Communists have secured dominating power, not through the ballot box, not through Parliament, but through threats of force and fear.

And so the iron curtain is moved farther westwards. The lights of freedom go out; darkness and terror spread across the land. The peoples of western Europe ask themselves whose turn it will be next.

I do not greatly fear Communism in this island of ours, this fortress of freedom and democracy. But I do fear the danger that on the Continent of Europe one by one the democratic countries may have their economic systems so sabotaged, their industrial and trade union organizations so infiltrated, their politics so demoralized by Communist intrigues that the Parliamentary systems of government will break down.

### SAME NAZI TECHNIQUE

Believe me, three years ago, two years ago, I was violently pro-Russian—on the extreme left of my party. I still feel that it is of the utmost importance to secure cooperation with Russia involving a mutual respect for each other's rights, but in these last years I have seen what has been going on. Step by step I have been forced more and more to the conclusion that the aims of Communism in Europe are sinister and deadly aims.

I prosecuted the Nazis at Nuremberg. With my Russian colleagues I condemned Nazi aggression and Nazi terror. I feel shame and humiliation now to see under a different name the same aims pursued, the same technique followed, without check.

My belief is that two things only can secure peace in the world and economic and political stability in Europe: the close cooperation and powerful influence of the British Commonwealth of Nations, that great free association of free peoples; and the organization of western union, that grand conception of close economic and political collaboration which Mr. Bevin sponsored in his remarkable speech in January. . . . The time to defend our democracy and freedom is now by building up our own economic stability, by contributing all we can to the stability of western Europe.

Sir Hartley Shawcross, Chief Prosecutor for Great Britain at the Nuremberg war crime trials, feels ashamed for having been an accomplice with the Soviets in delivering Europe to Stalinism.<sup>94</sup>

*selves in new systems of alliances, and with modified tactics. The end did not come until 1990-91, when Germany was reunified and the Soviet Union imploded. According to this general view of the chronology, it can be said that the war lasted seventy-five years. The Kaiser and Hitler lost and Germany has won."*

And the German government? A small episode proves that those who govern there know much better than the governed what is going on globally. When then British Prime Minister John Major, in his address in Berlin for the 50th anniversary of the war's end, spoke of the second Thirty Years War from 1914-1945:

*"Fifty years ago Europe saw the end of the 30 Years War, 1914 to 1945. The slaughter in the trenches, the destruction of cities and the oppression of citizens: all these left a Europe in ruins just as the other 30 Years War did three centuries before."*

The Bulletin of the German government (No. 38, May 12, 1995) falsified the text of the speech into:

*"Vor fünfzig Jahren erlebte Europa das Ende der dreißig Jahre, die nicht einen, sondern zwei Weltkriege beinhaltet hatten. Das Gemetzel in den Schützengräben, die Zerstörung der Städte und die Unterdrückung der Bürger hinterließen ein Europa in Trümmern, gerade, wie es einige Jahrhunderte zuvor der Dreißigjährige Krieg getan hatten."*

In English:

*"Fifty years ago, Europe experienced the end of the thirty years which encompassed not one, but two world wars. The slaughter in the trenches, the destruction of cities and the oppression of citizens left behind a Europe in ruins, just as the Thirty Years War had done some centuries before."*

But still weeks after the speech, the British embassy sent the upper text with the clear formulation "the other 30 Years War"! By the will of the German Federal Government, the fact that Major sees the First and Second World War as parts of a single event,

was not allowed to become publicly known in Germany.

Berthold Brecht once wrote warningly, with an eye on Germany:<sup>97</sup>

“Great Carthage waged three wars. It was still powerful after the first, still inhabitable after the second. After the third, it could no longer be found.”

After the First World War, a foreign diplomat expressed to Churchill:<sup>98</sup>

“In the twenty years of my residency there, I was witness to a profound and total revolution in England, even as the French Revolution was. The ruling classes in your country have been almost completely robbed of their political power and, to a large extent, their prosperity and property as well; and all this [...] without the loss of a single human life.”

The European upper classes, the idle ones of Scheler and Shaw, who wanted to be “clever” as they went out of their way to start a war, they have paid! Anastasia, the wife of the Grand Duke Nikolai Nikolayevitch – who, in 1914 after a murder in Sarajevo, is supposed to have called out triumphantly to Poincaré: “War will break out. Nothing more will remain of Austria [...] Germany will be destroyed!”<sup>99</sup> – lost everything!

In 1947, after the Second World War, India, the Crown of the British Empire, became independent. Egypt freed itself from Great Britain and subsequently Great Britain had to cede the Suez Canal. In 1957 the Gold Coast became the first independent state of Black Africa, after which a large number of colonies followed. Churchill had yet to learn what Shaw knew: that the world for which one exchanged one’s soul, had its own way of melting in one’s hands. Not even the First, and most certainly not the Second World War, Great Britain was able to win by its own resources! From a position as master of the world, Great Britain was relegated to insignificance, and the descent seems not to have come to an end yet. New powers are arising. Their influence, by means of the modern terrorist techniques of war and the unhesitating way with which they are used, can easily grow to extreme proportions. They are staking claims and creating new centers of conflict. They threaten to unite the Islamic powers and Fundamentalism. A new war against Germany would propel their power into the stratosphere. It is to be feared that powerful groups will continue not to see that the world of today is much larger than the White man’s world.

In any case, the analogy of Rome = Great Britain and Carthage = Germany is false. For Carthage was the commercial and sea power and Rome the land power of antiquity! Brecht was a master of language, but had no head for politics. His history would tell a different story today: Great Britain won two wars. It was still powerful after the first, still inhabitable after the second. Does anyone seriously believe that Great Britain could dare to wage yet a third war against Germany?

## Notes

- <sup>1</sup> Heinrich Fried Jung, *Das Zeitalter des Imperialismus 1884-1914*, Vol. 1, Berlin 1919, p. 230, 80.
- <sup>2</sup> Paul Valéry, *Eine methodische Eroberung*, Zürich, New York 1946. p. 9; Cf. also: Hans-Dietrich Sander, *Der nationale Imperativ*, Krefeld 1980. p. 116ff.
- <sup>3</sup> Max Scheler, *Die Ursachen des Deutschenhasses*, Leipzig 1917. p. 61ff.

Concerning Great Britain, cf. also Winston S. Churchill, *Meine frühen Jahre. Weltabenteuer im Dienst*, Munich 1965, 4<sup>th</sup> ed., p. 79. There it says: “In those days English society still had kept its old form and tradition, a shining and impressive Whole, of a highly elevated standard of behavior and conduct, and with sure methods of establishing their general acceptance, as today they are completely forgotten. Thus each man quite knew each man, and knew who he was. The few hundred Great Families who ruled England for many generations and had experienced the ascent of the country to the zenith of its glory, were related by marriage to the utmost degree. Everywhere one went, one met friends or relatives. The leading personalities of Society were often at the same time the leading statesmen in Parliament and likewise the leading sportsmen on the turf. Lord Salisbury always carefully avoided summoning the cabinet when there was racing at Newmarket; and the lower House basically held no sessions during the Derby.”

This testimony of the British upper class reveals the talk of British democracy to be pure hypocrisy.

Editor’s note: In the English edition of this book, *My Early Years. A Roving Commission*, Butterworth, London 1930, I did not find the passages Werner quotes here and in note 98.

- <sup>4</sup> Quoted by Hans Grimm, *Warum-Woher-Aber wohin*, Lippoldsberg 1954. p. 33. For the original see “Our True Foreign Policy,” *The Saturday Review*, August 24, 1895, p. 228.
- <sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 46ff. For the original see “A Biological View of our Foreign Policy,” “by a Biologist,” *The Saturday Review*, 01 February 1896, p. 118ff.
- <sup>6</sup> Up to the headline, H. Grimm, *op. cit.* (note 4), p. 58f. For the original see “England and Germany,” *The Saturday Review*, 11 September 1897, p. 278f.
- <sup>7</sup> Editor’s note: These last three words of this article, meaning “Germany must be destroyed” do not appear in the microfilmed version in the Public Library of Chicago as well as in other libraries, as Mr. Werner was told be readers of his original German article. However, Mr. Werner sent me a copy of this article which *does* include these words. It seems that there are two different versions of this article, one of which had these words omitted/deleted (most likely those which were later microfilmed).
- <sup>8</sup> Winston S. Churchill, *The Second World War*, Vol. 1. “*The Gathering Storm*”, Boston 1948, p. 207ff.
- <sup>9</sup> Carl J. Burckhardt, *Meine Danziger Mission 1937-1939*, 3. rev. ed., Munich 1980, p. 156f.
- <sup>10</sup> Igor Lukes, “Benesch, Stalin und die Komintern 1938/39,” *Vierteljahrshefte für Zeitgeschichte*, 41(3) (1993), p. 325.
- <sup>11</sup> Friedrich Grimm, *Politische Justiz, die Krankheit unserer Zeit*, Bonn 1953, p. 146ff.
- <sup>12</sup> Retranslated from *Frankfurter Allgemeine*, September 18, 1989, p. 2. Since the 18th of September 1989 was a Monday, the day of appearance of the article is taken to be the 17th of September 1989.
- <sup>13</sup> Quoted by a letter to the editor from Ferdinand Otto Mischke, Officier de la Legion d’Honneur, Paris, *Frankfurter Allgemeine*, April 27, 1990, p. 14. For the original text see *Elsevier*, April 7, 1990, p. 45.
- <sup>14</sup> Thomas More, *Utopia*, Yale Univ. Press, 2001, p. 133. Also, in *Utopia* divorce is only a formality (cf. p. 98f). It can be assumed that *Utopia* inspired Henry VIII in several respects. In 1529 More became Lord Chancellor. In 1534 Henry VIII made himself Supreme Head of the Church and thereby to a certain extent its Chief Priest and – since he was also King – he, like the priests of the Utopians, was subject only to God and his conscience. In a letter Henry VIII describes himself as King and Sovereign, who recognizes above himself no one on earth save God alone and who is not subject to the laws of earthly creatures. Quoted by Winston S. Churchill, *A History of the English Speaking Peoples*, vol II: “The New World,” Dodd, Mead & Co., New York 1956, p. 61. In fairness to More it should be mentioned that he vehemently opposed this self-elevation of Henry VIII and for that reason was executed in 1535.
- <sup>15</sup> T. More, *ibid.*, p. 105. One should recall here the trade war between the USA and Japan which was beginning to develop in 1995 where the thinking was similar on the American side.
- <sup>16</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 74, pp. 106-109, esp. 108.
- <sup>17</sup> In Churchill one finds this sentence concerning the time after Henry VIII: “Thomas More’s definition of government as a conspiracy of rich men procuring their own commodities under the name and title of a commonwealth fitted England very accurately during these years,” *op. cit.* (note 8), vol. II, p. 93.
- <sup>18</sup> Hermann Oncken, in: Thomas Morus, *Utopia*, Darmstadt 1979, p. 32 (introduction). Oncken has also made detailed reference to the connection be-

- tween More and British colonial policy, p. 33.
- <sup>19</sup> T. More, *op. cit.* (note 14), p. 109.
- <sup>20</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 106.
- <sup>21</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 111.
- <sup>22</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 105. The contradictory absurdity is that the Utopians in their country know slavery quite well (p. 95f). When More introduced slavery into his ideal state, it had disappeared in the West. But of all things, such a model is chosen by the intellectuals of Modernism as namesake for their future plans!
- <sup>23</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 39-50, cf. also footnotes. That the discussion is fictitious is naturally an assumption for which, however, inspection speaks, since from where could More have been able to get his information?
- <sup>24</sup> *Brockhaus Konversations-Lexikon*, Leipzig 1908, Vol. 8, p. 374.
- <sup>25</sup> In a bitter comment on the death of Juárez, Shaw wrote, obviously out of knowledge of the practices of the English press:  
*"I once proposed a press law [...] each article printed in a newspaper should not only give the name and address of the author, but also give the sum which was paid for the contribution. If the miserable fool who murdered Juárez had known that the worthless articles [...] were not the voice of imperiled France, but instead the ignorant scrawling of some poor devil who no longer knew how to earn three francs for himself, he would hardly have thrown away his own life."*  
 Bernard Shaw, *Der gesunde Menschenverstand im Krieg* (Commons Sense in War), vol. II. Zürich 1919, p. 75. Editor's remark: I did not find an English version of this German book.
- <sup>26</sup> G. B. Shaw had taken over the theater paper between 1895 and 1898; cf. Hermann Stresau, *George Bernard Shaw*, Rowohlt, Reinbek 1962, p. 56.
- <sup>27</sup> For H. G. Wells, as with the names following, only one publication may be named: "The Well at the World's End," *The Saturday Review*, October 17, 1896, p. 413ff.
- <sup>28</sup> Winston S. Churchill published three articles, all about the war in Cuba. With his first article of February 15, 1896, his name is erroneously given as Winston L. Churchill, but Churchill repaired this in his next essay "American Intervention in Cuba", *The Saturday Review*, March 7, 1896, p. 244f.
- <sup>29</sup> W.B. Yeats, "The Twilight of Forgiveness," *The Saturday Review*, November 2, 1895, p. 573.
- <sup>30</sup> Conan Doyle wrote two reader letters: *The Saturday Review*, January 2, 1897, p. 15f.; January 9, 1897 p. 40f.
- <sup>31</sup> Henry M. Stanley, "The Recent Attacks on the Congo Administration," *The Saturday Review*, September 19, 1896, p. 307.
- <sup>32</sup> Rudyard Kipling, "The Vampire," *The Saturday Review*, April 24, 1897, p. 443.
- <sup>33</sup> Algernon Charles Swinburne, "A February Roundel," *The Saturday Review*, February 22, 1896, p. 194
- <sup>34</sup> *Meyers enzyklopädisches Lexikon*, 25 volumes, Mannheim 1971. Information about these persons also comes from this encyclopedia.
- <sup>35</sup> Max Beerbohm, "Madame Tussaud's," *The Saturday Review*, February 13, 1897, p. 165f.
- <sup>36</sup> J. B. Bury, "The British and the Roman Empire," *The Saturday Review*, June 27, 1896, p. 645.
- <sup>37</sup> Stephen Crane, "London Impressions," *The Saturday Review*, July 31, 1897, p. 105f.
- <sup>38</sup> John Davidson, "The Hymn of Abdul Hamid," *Saturday Review*, May 22, 1897, p. 570.
- <sup>39</sup> Charles Wentworth Dilke, "Lord Roberts, Lord Salisbury, and Russia," *The Saturday Review*, January 23, 1897, p. 83ff.
- <sup>40</sup> Edward Dowden, "Matthew Arnold's Letters," *The Saturday Review*, December 12, 1895, p. 757f.
- <sup>41</sup> Richard Garnett, "Recollections of Coventry Patmore," *The Saturday Review*, December 5, 1896, p. 582f.
- <sup>42</sup> For the latter information cf. Hermann Stresau *op. cit.* (note 26), p. 56.
- <sup>43</sup> W. H. Hudson, "London Birds in Winter," *The Saturday Review*, March 13, 1897, p. 264f.
- <sup>44</sup> Oliver Lodge, "Roentgen Radiography and its Uses," *The Saturday Review*, April 25, 1896, p. 422f.
- <sup>45</sup> Margaret Macdonald, Reader letter "Salvagia," *The Saturday Review*, October 24, 1896, p. 445f.
- <sup>46</sup> Frederic William Henry Myers, "A Cosmic Outlook," *The Saturday Review*, December 7, 1895, p. 758.
- <sup>47</sup> Coventry Patmore, "Mrs. Meynell's New Essays," *The Saturday Review*, June 13, 1896, p. 593f.
- <sup>48</sup> Will(iam) Rothenstein, "Goya II," *The Saturday Review*, September 19, 1896, p. 307.
- <sup>49</sup> Arthur Symons, "A Visit to Dumas fils," *The Saturday Review*, November 30, 1895, p. 724f.
- <sup>50</sup> Silvanus P. Thompson, "The Progress of Electric Traction," *The Saturday Review*, June 29, 1897, p. 600.
- <sup>51</sup> Alfred Russel Wallace, "Our Native Birds," *The Saturday Review*, September 14, 1895, p. 342f.
- <sup>52</sup> William Watson, "Estrangement," *The Saturday Review*, May 2, 1896, p. 451.
- <sup>53</sup> Gen. Neville Chamberlain, "Our Treatment of the Kafirs," *The Saturday Review*, May 16, 1896, p. 494ff. For personal data: *Meyers Konversations-Lexikon*, 5<sup>th</sup> rev. ed., Leipzig and Vienna 1897.
- <sup>54</sup> Admiral P. H. Colomb, "The Naval Programme," *The Saturday Review*, March 14, 1896, p. 268f. For personal data see previous note.
- <sup>55</sup> J. B. Bury, *op. cit.* (note 36), p. 64.
- <sup>56</sup> GREATER-ENGLANDER, "The British and Roman Empire," letter to the editor, *The Saturday Review*, July 11, 1896, p. 39.
- <sup>57</sup> "German Competition," *The Saturday Review*, January 25, 1896, p. 91, or "The German Menace," *The Saturday Review*, August 29, 1896, p. 208.
- <sup>58</sup> Perplexed, "The Spectator and Political Economy," letter to the editor, *The Saturday Review*, August 8, 1896, p. 137.
- <sup>59</sup> "The Failure of Germany," *The Saturday Review*, October 24, 1896, p. 434.
- <sup>60</sup> "Luther: Liberalism: Individualism," *The Saturday Review*, January 2, 1897, p. 6.
- <sup>61</sup> Bernard Shaw, "*Caesar and Cleopatra*," Appleton-Century-Crofts, New York, 1965, p. 5.
- <sup>62</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 78. In his character of Britannus, Shaw expressly maintains continuity of character between the inhabitants of the Great Britain in Caesar's time and that of today (cf. p. 123f). In his argument, he personifies the mind-set which is found in the essay by "a Biologist" (cf. footnote 5), as when he stresses the importance of the climate and of the forest for the character of Britannus and of present-day Britons.
- <sup>63</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 113.
- <sup>64</sup> Bernard Shaw, *op. cit.* (note 25), vol. I., p. 35.
- <sup>65</sup> Hermann Stresau, *op. cit.* (note 26), p. 126; retranslated.
- <sup>66</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 127; retranslated.
- <sup>67</sup> Hans Grimm, *op. cit.* (note 4), p. 33f.
- <sup>68</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 52.
- <sup>69</sup> Charles à Court Repington, *The First World War 1914-1918, Personal Experiences*, vol. II., London 1920, p. 463; cf. p. 478.
- <sup>70</sup> Edward Grey, *Twenty Five Years, 1892-1916*, Fredrick A. Sokes Company, New York 1925, p. 2; cf. p. 25.
- <sup>71</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 32.
- <sup>72</sup> *Ibid.* Editor's note: On pp. 9-11, Gray reports how Germany pressured competing England in the 1890s to withdraw its offer to build a railway through Minor Asia (Turkey) or Germany would stop supporting England in Egypt. England complied, but was mischievous ever since.
- <sup>73</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 50.
- <sup>74</sup> Cf. the detailed exchange of letters which Grey reproduces in his memoirs, *ibid.*, p. 70-74, 76-79, 102-107, 110, 139ff.
- <sup>75</sup> Margret Boveri, *Sir Edward Grey und das Foreign Office*, Berlin-Grunewald 1993, p. 134; 198; 105; 198.
- <sup>76</sup> Edward Grey, *op. cit.* (note 70), p. xviii.
- <sup>77</sup> Margret Boveri, *op. cit.* (note 75), p. 197.
- <sup>78</sup> Hermann Lutz, *Eyre Crowe, der böse Geist des Foreign Office*, Stuttgart and Berlin 1931.
- <sup>79</sup> Margret Boveri, *op. cit.* (note 75), p. 112.
- <sup>80</sup> Edward Grey, *op. cit.* (note 70), p. xviiif.
- <sup>81</sup> *Ibid.*, Vol. 2, p. 302.
- <sup>82</sup> Margret Boveri, *op. cit.* (note 75), p. 183.
- <sup>83</sup> Hans Rothfels, "Zur Beurteilung Greys," in: "Die Kriegsschuldfrage," *Berliner Monatshefte für internationale Aufklärung*, April 1927, p. 351f.
- <sup>84</sup> Bernard Shaw, *Winke zur Friedenskonferenz*, Berlin 1919, p. 22.
- <sup>85</sup> Bernard Shaw, *op. cit.* (note 25), p. 5.
- <sup>86</sup> Friedrich Thimme, "Das Memorandum E. A. Crowes vom 1. Januar 1907. Seine Bedeutung für die Kriegsschuldfrage," *Berliner Monatshefte für internationale Aufklärung*, August 1929, p. 735.
- <sup>87</sup> Hermann Lutz, *op. cit.* (note 78), p. 9.
- <sup>88</sup> Cf. e.g. Friedrich Thimme, *op. cit.* (note 86), pp. 732ff.; Hermann Lutz, *Deutschfeindliche Kräfte im Foreign Office der Vorkriegszeit*, Berlin 1932, p. 13ff.; Werner Frauendienst, "Crowe, der Deutschland-Referent des Foreign Office," *Berliner Monatshefte für internationale Aufklärung*, August 1931, p. 776ff.; Hermann Lutz, *op. cit.* (note 78), p. 10-55; Margret Boveri, *op. cit.* (note 75), p. 114ff.
- <sup>89</sup> Bernard Shaw, *op. cit.* (note 84), p. 8; 9; 20

<sup>90</sup> Hermann Lutz, *Deutschfeindliche Kräfte...*, *op. cit.* (note 88), p. 18, footnote 35.  
<sup>91</sup> Hermann Lutz, *Lord Grey und der Weltkrieg*, Berlin 1927, p. 48; 299 footnote 82a.  
<sup>92</sup> Margret Boveri, *op. cit.* (note 75), p. 53.  
<sup>93</sup> Fritz Hesse, *Das Spiel um Deutschland*, Munich 1953, p. 66.  
<sup>94</sup> *The Times*, March 13, 1948, p. 4.  
<sup>95</sup> Editor's note: Between these two sentences, one often finds quoted other sentences, the entire text allegedly stemming from an AP press release of that time (the date often quoted, March 16, 1984, is obviously wrong):  
*"Hitler and the German people did not want war. According to the principles of the balance of powers, we, goaded on by the 'Americans' around Roosevelt, declared war against Germany in order to destroy it. We did not respond to the various appeals for peace of Hitler. Now we must discover that Hitler was right. In place of a conservative Germany which he had offered us, stands the enormous imperialistic power of the Soviets."*  
 These sentences are, however, not part of the London Times article, which

does not claim to be based on an AP release. Associated Press informed me that they have no record of such a press release, which may or may not be result of AP archiving exclusively national U.S. news releases on microfilm at that time. I also did not find Shawcross' speech quoted in the *New York Times* or the then German-friendly/IMT critical *Chicago Tribune*. Since Shawcross always indicated his full and uncritical support for the IMT show trial and its judgment (cf. his memoirs *Life Sentence*, Constable & Co., London 1995), it is more than unlikely that these sentences were added by a third person.  
<sup>96</sup> Kenneth Auchincloss, "The Long Shadow," *Newsweek International Edition*, May 8, 1995, p. 11. [Although order via inter-library loan, I had to re-translate this quotation from German to keep the deadline. Editor.]  
<sup>97</sup> Bertolt Brecht, "Offener Brief an die Künstler und Schriftsteller vom 26. September 1951," in: Bertolt Brecht, *Gesammelte Werke*, Suhrkamp, Frankfurt/Main 1967, p. 496.  
<sup>98</sup> Churchill, *op. cit.* (note 3), p. 80.  
<sup>99</sup> Dieter Friede, *Das russische Perpetuum Mobile*, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed., Würzburg 1959, p. 181.

## The Dachau Horror-Tale Exposed

By Baurat h.c. Dipl.-Ing. Walter Lüftl

From the book *Einer aus dem Dunkel* (One out of the dark), which describes the work of the representative of the International Red Cross (IRC) Louis Haeflinger during the liberation of the concentration camp Mauthausen in May 1945 (how does one 'liberate' a camp, whose guards were already pulled out?), the following can be found on page 42:<sup>1</sup>

*"The textile industrialist [note: and later president of the Austrian Industrial Association] Franz Mayer-Gunthof remembers the beginning of the time of his internment in the concentration camp Dachau:*

*'...but at one time I lifted myself up to the window, and then I saw corpses and more corpses, and I realized with horror that we were directly above the gas chambers, and I saw how people were gassed and their corpses were cremated. The snowflakes, they were ashes from the crematorium...'*"

What is the truth?

Truth his, the future president of the Austrian Industrial Association is a storyteller of fairy tales, because:

1. Even the camp administration of the memorial concentration camp Dachau and the town Dachau explain that nobody was gassed in Dachau. The alleged 'gas chamber,' which now exists, is a fake, which was erected after the war. This was already reported by a former SS-man to the author in 1952, who met this man at a construction site in Vienna. The former SS-man worked there as a brick layer, while the author was a vacation trainee. The informant explained:

*"I helped erect the gas chamber as a prisoner of war."*

- This man also informed the author about the massacre by the US-Army of the arrested and un-armed guard personnel.
2. There was no room for inmates above the pseudo gas chamber – a one-story building with an unfinished gable roof. The 'eye witness' of the horrors, Mayer-Gunthof, could therefore not have been "directly above the gas chambers."



### One of these two is a Holocaust-Liar – or maybe both?

*Dr. Dr. h.c. Mayer-Gunthof, attorney, born August 18, 1894 in Mährisch-Trübau. In 1820, he took over the weaving mill Vöslauer Worsted Yarn Factory, which was founded by his great-grandfather. He was involved in the Association of Austrian Industrialists (Vereinigung österreichischer Industrieller). He died February 2, 1977 in Vienna.*

*Alphons Matt, born 1920, died Dec. 4, 2000. Since 1945 correspondent in Austria for various Swiss newspapers and for Radio Studio Zürich of the station Beromünster. In 1963 he joined the main editorial office of the newspaper Die Weltwoche. Later he became the political editor of the Swiss TV station DRS. Through his activity, Alphons Matt met many politicians and statesmen, national and international.*

3. He therefore could neither have observed how people were gassed nor where corpses were cremated.
4. The crematorium was located outside of the actual area of the camp.
5. As the cremation process was “free of dust and smell” according to Neufert, he therefore could not have seen particles of ashes from the crematorium (“always like snow flakes”).<sup>2</sup>

It can therefore be stated with certainty that all the statements of the ‘eye witness’ are from A to Z, at least to a large extent, objectively incorrect.

Therefore, if Herr Mayer-Gunthof is correctly quoted, he can report this only from hearsay. The local and technical circumstances permit quite a clear assessment: The statements of the ‘eye witness’ about the horror are false.

One asks frequently during the narratives of the ‘eye witnesses’, why otherwise honorable and trustworthy people relate so obviously the untruth. The author knew Herrn Mayer-Gunthof personally, but could not have asked about the above quoted fable because the author learned about this only after the death of the ‘eye witness’.

Is it the ‘Odysseus syndrome’? A psychologist should be consulted, unless already ‘Pseudologica phantastica’ is diagnosed, in which case a psychiatrist should be consulted.

Paul Rassinier already asked *What is the Truth?*<sup>3</sup> And he was, after all, interned for years as a French resistance fighter in the German concentration camp Buchenwald. When he tried to testify during the big Auschwitz-trial to inform the courts about the truth, his entry into the country was refused. But why? Because he knew the truth, which was probably ‘pedagogically undesirable’ or ‘social-ethically confusing’!

#### Notes

First published as “Dachau-Greuelmärchen bloßgelegt” in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 7(2) (2003), p. 165. Translated by Fabian Eschen.

<sup>1</sup> Alphons Matt, *Einer aus dem Dunkel. Die Befreiung des Konzentrationslagers Mauthausen durch den Bankbeamten H.* (One out of the Dark. The Liberation of the Concentration Camp Mauthausen by the Bank Clerk H.), SV Internat., Schweizer Verl.-Haus, Zürich 1988.

<sup>2</sup> E. Neufert, *Bauentwurfslehre*, (Textbook for the Building Design) Ullstein Fachverlag, Frankfurt/Main 1962, p. 423.

<sup>3</sup> In the German edition of his last book *Was ist Wahrheit*, Druffel, Leoni 1982.

## The General in the Ice-Block

By Baurat h.c. Dipl.-Ing. Walter Lüftl

The following passage, headed “East European Monuments in Austria,” has been taken from pp. 20 and 21 of the 1/2002 edition of the *International Municipal Forum Graz (Internationales Städteforum Graz)*:

*“Another type of East European commemorative plaques is that at locations of former concentrations camps set up by the Third Reich. In the former Mauthausen camp there exists the monument for Major General Karbyshev of the Red Army, which resembles a block of ice with a human face [...]. During an icy December, night he was drenched with cold water until he finally froze into a block of ice. The monument symbolizes this event.”*

This event cannot possibly have taken place in this way. On a living body, water will not freeze even at very low temperatures. It is only when the surface temperature has dropped considerably below 0°C that ice can form.

I have visited the Mauthausen camp in 1952 and 1991. In 1952, an obelisk had been erected there for General Karbyshev. At that time, I believed in the event thus depicted and took the inhuman deed of the SS to be an act of revenge. I knew then that on December 29, 1941, and for several days thereafter, Soviet troops had thrown wounded German soldiers from the windows of the army hospitals of Feodosia on the Crimea, leaving them on the beach to freeze until they were dead – to the extent that they had not previously been stabbed or bludgeoned to death. The freezing spray of the breakers eventually shaped the corpses of the 160 wounded soldiers into bizarre blocks of ice.<sup>1</sup> I could easily imagine that buddies or relatives of the victims of Feodosia wrought a brutal revenge on innocent people.

When I returned in 1991, I looked in vain for the obelisk. Instead, there was a commemorative plate on the inside of the

camp wall, mentioning the murder of General Karbyshev. Some time later, I learned that on January 9, 1993, the Austrian newspaper *Die Presse* had shown a painting by the artist Adolf Frohner, entitled “The Russian General,” illustrating a particularly cruel method of killing devised by the Nazis. The corresponding article stated:

*“Alfred Frohner has produced an artistic document depicting the death of General Karbyshev who, together with 200 other Russian PoWs, was doused with cold water when the temperature was minus 20°C cold until they had all frozen into a solid block of ice.”*

Meanwhile, I had developed some doubts on the technical feasibility of turning a living creature into a block of ice. Fire fighters whom I had questioned had expressed their own doubts on the subject of spraying from hoses, at a temperature of -20°C, sufficient amounts of water to turn 200 people into a mass of ice without having the water freeze in the hoses in turn.

Thus, it became necessary to do some fundamental investigation.

The book *Die Geschichte des Konzentrationslagers Mauthausen* (The History of the Mauthausen Concentration Camp) tells us:<sup>2</sup>

*“16 and 17 February 1945: More than 200 weak prisoners and all detainees from a Sachsenhausen transport were killed by having them stand naked (for three days and two nights) near the Wall of Lamentations and subjecting them to a ‘bathing action,’ at temperatures between -2 and -7°C. Among the 200 or 300 old and weak people selected at random there were members of all European nations, but primarily Soviet and Polish citizens, among them the Soviet Artillery General Dimitri Mikhaelovich Karbyshev.”*



Technically, we now approach feasibility, as it makes a great deal of difference whether the unfortunate people were effectively sprayed with water at -20°C or supposedly sprayed at -2°C. Meteorological data was needed for further clarification.

As it turned out, the Central Office for Meteorology and Geodynamics was able to shed light on the matter. The expert advice from the Central Office stated:

The weather at Mauthausen on February 16, 1945, was sunny. Air temperature in the afternoon rose to about 5°C, after an early morning reading of only 0°C. Between February 10 and 16, 1945, Mauthausen experienced rather mild winter weather. Morning temperatures were between -2 and +3°C, rising to 4 to 10°C at noon.

Hence, it is impossible for the “ice block event” to have taken place on the day mentioned.

It is quite possible that on that day, there were piles of corpses at Mauthausen, including General Karbyshev’s body; it is quite possible that victims indeed froze to death on account of inhuman treatment, but no living person could have been turned into a block of ice at that time.

Is this another legend, like Simon Wiesenthal’s “parachutists”? In his book *Denn sie wußten, was sie tun* (For they knew what they did), Wiesenthal has, after all, captioned a drawing showing men being thrown from a cliff, as follows:<sup>3</sup>

“It was rare for Jews to be shot at Mauthausen. They were destined for the ‘Wiener Graben’ [a street in Vienna,

transl.]. On a single day, March 31, 1943, 1000 Dutch Jews were thrown from a height of 50 meters before the very eyes of Heinrich Himmler. The SS called them ‘parachutists.’ The brown crowd was highly amused.”

The *Mauthausen* book tells us that in March 1943 there were altogether 850 deaths,<sup>4</sup> on March 31, 1943, the camp counted 13 Jewish detainees; for this month, only two Jewish deaths were recorded. The total number of Jewish detainees never rose above 16 throughout 1943, only from May 1944 would it suddenly jump from 78 to 2141.<sup>5</sup> Furthermore, Himmler was not at Mauthausen on March 31, 1943.<sup>6</sup>

Hence, either Wiesenthal is mistaken about the date or else he relates from hearsay, just like the *Presse* journalist with respect to the Frohner painting.

#### Notes

First published as “Der General im Eis” in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 7(1) (2003), pp. 43f. Translated by Thomas Dunskus.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Alfred M. de Zayas, *Die Wehrmachtsuntersuchungsstelle. Deutsche Ermittlungen über alliierte Völkerrechtsverletzungen im Zweiten Weltkrieg*, 4<sup>th</sup> ed., Ullstein, Frankfurt/Main/Berlin 1984, pp. 308-317.

<sup>2</sup> Hans Marschalek (ed.), *Dokumentation der Österreichischen Lagergemeinschaft Mauthausen*, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed., Vienna 1980, pp. 235, 238.

<sup>3</sup> *Zeichnungen und Aufzeichnungen aus dem KZ Mauthausen*, Deuticke, Vienna, 1995, pp. 63-65.

<sup>4</sup> Hans Marschalek (ed.), *op. cit.* (note 2) p. 157.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 282f

<sup>6</sup> Cf. Institut für Zeitgeschichte, Munich, Dok. NO-1025

## The Four Million Figure of Auschwitz

### Origin, Revisions and Consequences

By Carlo Mattogno

Although scientifically untenable, it passed for a long time, in public thought, as an irrevocable truth that four million prisoners perished in the concentration camp Auschwitz. When Fritjof Meyer, a leading editor of Germany’s biggest news magazine *Der Spiegel* reduced the death toll of Auschwitz to a new record low of just over 500,000 victims in May 2002,<sup>2</sup> *The Revisionist* reacted to this with the publication of three articles which dealt with the latest up-to-date state and development of victim numbers of Auschwitz.<sup>3</sup> However, the question as to how the figure of 4,000,000 victims – grossly exaggerated but spread dogmatically as true for decades – actually came into existence and what consequences would result from so many revisions of the past, was so far untouched. In these two papers, Carlo Mattogno investigates the two main causes of the false four million number: Soviet propaganda and the tireless propaganda activity of the Polish communist historian Franciszek Piper.

## I. Thrust to the Roots of Soviet Propaganda

### 1. The Origin of the Propaganda Figure of Four Million

The propaganda story of the alleged four million Auschwitz victims appeared first in the *Pravda* of May 7, 1945, as is generally known, and it received its official blessing at the Nuremberg trial during the court session on February 19, 1946, thanks to the Soviet prosecutor Smirnow.<sup>4</sup> But far less known is the origin of this story.

Within the framework of the investigations in Auschwitz between February 14 and March 8, 1945, by a Soviet investigation commission, four engineers, the Polish citizen Dawidowski and the Soviet citizens Dolinski, Lavrushins and Shuer, prepared an expert report about the “gas chambers” and crematoria of Auschwitz-Birkenau. In it is a short “Appendix 1” with the title “Calculations for determining the Number of Persons liq-

uidated by the Germans in the Camp Auschwitz”.<sup>5</sup> On these three pages we find the genesis of the four million number. The “expert report” starts with the following premises:<sup>6</sup>

*“Based on the investigated material it can be determined that the Germans, by carefully removing the traces of their crimes and misdeeds, destroyed all documents which would have made it possible to determine more or less accurately the number murdered by Hitler’s butchers in the camp.*

*Thus, the Germans removed, as an example, the documentation about the arrival of railroad transports carrying people; they destroyed the documentation about the quantities of women’s hair, eye glasses and dresses, as well as other evidence, which would have made it possible to determine, with the help of statistical calculations, the number of persons that perished in this camp.*

*Nevertheless, we think that it is possible to perform a calculation which would permit us to determine the order of magnitude of the extermination of camp inmates by the Germans.”*

Because they didn’t have any documents, the Polish-Soviet ‘experts’ used a completely unreliable method of calculation – the counting of the cremated corpses in the crematoria of Auschwitz – and made additionally grotesque exaggerations.

First they divided the time of operation of these installations into three periods:

First period: Beginning of 1941[sic! Correct: 1942] to March 1943; duration 14 months.

Second period: March 1943 to May 1944; duration 13 months.

Third period: May to October 1944; duration 6 months.

I quote:<sup>6</sup>

*“During the first period, the crematorium and the gas chambers<sup>17</sup> 1 and 2 were in operation as well as the pyres located next to them. During the second period the crematoria II, III, IV and V [were in operation]. During the third period the crematoria II, III, IV and V as well as the gas chamber 2 and the pyres next to it [were in operation].”*

All calculations about the cremations in ovens are based on the presumption that 9,000 corpses per month were cremated in Auschwitz I, while the crematoria of Birkenau had the following monthly cremation capacities:<sup>8</sup>

Crematorium II: 90,000

Crematorium III: 90,000

Crematorium IV: 45,000

Crematorium V: 45,000

TOTAL: 270,000 CORPSES PER MONTH

This cremation capacity corresponds to 9,000 corpses daily (3,000 each for crematorium II and III, 1,500 each daily for crematorium IV and V) and is in reality eight times higher than the theoretical maximum capacity of these installations!

The ‘experts’ inexplicably determined a capacity for crematorium I which is exaggerated by a factor of only two. From this it follows that the alleged hourly cremation capacity of a two-muffle oven (two corpses per hour) would have been four times less than a three-muffle oven as well as an eight-muffle oven (eight corpses per hour). This is absurd, because the two-muffle ovens were not only not inferior to the ovens of Birkenau, but actually superior.

The ‘experts’ calculated the number of the cremated bodies during the third period based on the following factors:

270,000 = monthly number of cremations in the crematoria of Birkenau;

6 = Number of months the crematoria were in operation;

0.9 = Utilization factor of the crematoria;

Therefore:  $(270,000 \times 6) \times 0.9 = 1,450,000$  dead.

For the second period of thirteen months the ‘experts’ assume a utilization factor of 0.5, so that their calculation appears as follows:

$(270,000 \times 13) \times 0.5 = 1,755,000$  corpses; this number is rounded down to 1,750,000.

Also for the first period of fourteen months, during which only the crematorium I was in operation, the ‘experts’ decided an utilization factor of 0.5 and came thus to:

$(9,000 \times 14) \times 0.5 = 63,000$  dead.

Accordingly the total number of corpses cremated in the crematoria as per commission during these three periods amounted to 3,263,000.

For the “gas chamber 2”, the so-called ‘Bunker 2,’ which was supposed to be in operation for six months during the third period, the ‘experts’ determined a daily killing capacity of 3,000 people, or 90,000 per month. They assumed an utilization factor of 0.5, which according to them will result in a the total number of the murdered in that location of

$(90,000 \times 6) \times 0.5 = 270,000$ .

According to the ‘experts,’ the “gas chamber 1,” i.e., the so-called ‘Bunker 1,’ was in operation during the first period for fourteen months and had a killing capacity of 5,000 per day or 150,000 per month. Using a utilization factor of 0.25 the ‘ex-



Photo 1: Soviet propaganda chiselled in stone – removed in 1990: “Site of martyrs and the death of 4 million victims killed by Nazi genocidal mass murderers 1940 - 1945”

perts' therefore calculated  $(150,000 \times 14) \times 0.25 = \underline{525,000}$  dead.

Under these presuppositions, the number of gassed in both 'bunkers' and then on pyres cremated would have resulted in 795,000. Adding this number to the murdered and cremated in the crematoria results in a number of 4,058,000, which was rounded off by the 'experts' to 4,000,000.

## 2. The Arrangements between 'Experts' and 'Witnesses'

It is not necessary to unleash too many words about the evidently outrageous character of this statistical method, which is based on gigantic exaggerations of the cremation capacity as well as on totally arbitrary utilization coefficients.

It has to be emphasized that the testimonies of 'eyewitnesses' fit seamlessly into the framework of propaganda claims. This 'expert report' as well as the 'eyewitness reports' support each other, which suggests that the witnesses were without any doubt instructed by the 'experts' before they made their statements. It is a fact, in any case, that the witnesses as well as the 'experts' made intrinsically incorrect statements. I am thinking primarily about the capacity of the crematoria as postulated by both.

Henryk Tauber, plainly the key witness, was questioned by the Soviets on February 27 and 28, 1945. He maintained that the two-muffle ovens of crematorium I operated at a muffle temperature between 1,200 to 1,500 degrees Celsius, which is absolutely absurd.<sup>9</sup> He further testified that within 20 to 25 minutes four to five corpses were cremated in one muffle in the five three-muffle ovens of the crematoria II and III – technically an impossibility. Finally, he testified that in the crematoria II and III 3,000 corpses were cremated per day, which corresponds exactly to the number as stated by the Polish-Soviet 'experts'.<sup>10</sup>

A coincidence? Certainly not, because the statements with regards to the functioning of the cremation ovens as made by Tauber and the 'experts' are practically identical. The 'experts' started from the hypothesis that three to five corpses were cremated in the three-muffle ovens at the same time, which took 20 to 30 minutes, and in an eight-muffle oven the cremation of a corresponding number of corpses lasted 30 to 40 minutes.

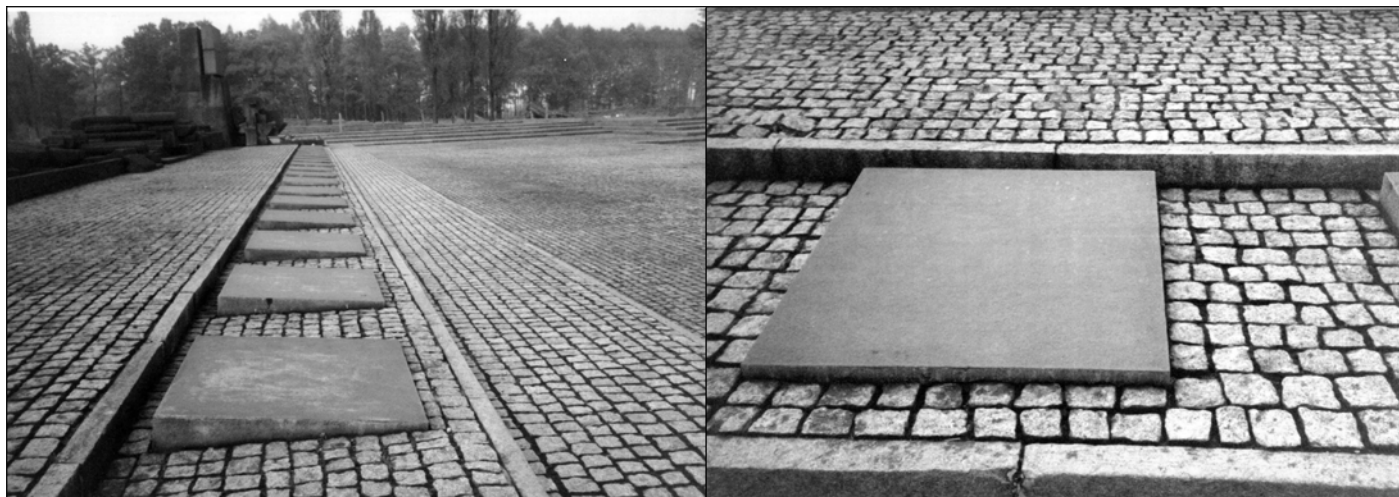
Any engineer, even having only a cursory knowledge of

thermo-dynamics, would laugh at such nonsense. The Polish-Soviet engineers, however, maintained with all their know-how that their statements were of scientific value! Any engineer with basic thermo-dynamic knowledge would dismiss as incompetent any witness coming up with such silliness, but the Polish-Soviet engineers were primarily the willing tools of Soviet propaganda, and at that time crude propaganda was in great fashion.

The Soviet-Polish commission, which inspected Majdanek in August 1944, 'calculated' a number of 1,380,000 victims for that camp;<sup>11</sup> but in May of 1945, it was necessary that Auschwitz should horrify the world, and for this a number of victims was needed that would exceed the one claimed for Majdanek – four million to be exact!

Half a year earlier, in August 1944, other Soviet 'experts', the engineers Krause, Telyaner, and Grigorev, prepared an 'expert report' about the cremation ovens of concentration camp Majdanek, which were constructed by the company H. Kori. In this report, among others a "schematic diagram for the determination of the cremation time of the corpses in different cremation ovens at different temperatures" was included. According to its authors, this diagram was based on operating temperatures measured for civilian ovens of the models Klingenstierna, Siemens, and Schneider. According to this, the cremation time at an operating temperature of 800°C was two hours, which is not below but actually above the actual time required. According to the diagram, the cremation of a corpse at an operating temperature of 1000°C – the temperature at those gigantic "hot air cremation ovens" – lasted 60 minutes, at 1200°C 50 minutes, at 1300°C 45 minutes, at 1400°C 30 minutes, and at 1500°C 15 minutes.<sup>12</sup> The temperature inside the muffle of ovens for civilians could actually reach only a maximum of 1100°C, and this for a few minutes only. Engineer Richard Kessler, one of the best-known German specialists in the area of cremation, said in this regard:<sup>13</sup>

*"Operating temperatures of 1200 to 1500°C, as they are frequently mentioned in reports about the operation of crematoria, [...] are probably only erroneously estimated but not measured temperatures. At these temperatures, the bones and the fireclay soften and weld together. The most*



Photos 2 & 3: Memorial plaques at the Auschwitz-Birkenau camp in October 1991: the old inscription with the Soviet propaganda figure of four million victims is removed © Carlo Mattogno

*practical operating temperatures lie between 850 and 900°C, according to tests in Dessau.”*

It is therefore clear that the Soviet ‘specialists’ who dealt with Auschwitz based their absurdly short cremation times of Topf ovens of 20 to 40 minutes on this diagram, according to which such cremation times could be reached at temperatures between 1200 and 1500°C.<sup>14</sup>

From this it follows easily that Henryk Tauber’s depositions, claiming that the ovens had an operating temperature between 1200 to 1500°C, were nothing else than the attempt to explain the claimed, impossibly short cremation times. The only logical conclusion is that these temperatures – as well as the alleged cremation times – were directly or indirectly given to Tauber by the ‘experts’ themselves!

Later, on May 24, 1945, Tauber (who understood very little of these questions), when questioned by the Polish judge Jan Sehn, testified that the operating temperature of the ovens was between 1000 to 1200 degrees Celsius,<sup>15</sup> but maintained his untenable assertions about the cremation capacity and expressively mentioned the Soviet figure of four million victims!<sup>16</sup> Tauber did not even understand that he contradicted himself with this, because according to the diagram mentioned, the cremation of a corpse at these temperatures lasts an average of 75 minutes!

### 3. The Reason and Meaning of Franciszek Piper’s Revision

It is generally known that the propaganda figure of four million Auschwitz victims, as propagated by the Soviets, was chiselled into the memorial plaques, which were erected not far from crematoria II and III of Birkenau as an ‘eternal’ warning for posterity. Until 1990, the plaques announced that four million people were murdered there by the “Nazis.” In that year – the Soviet system had just collapsed – the Auschwitz museum undertook a revision of the number of victims: Franciszek Piper, head of the historical department of the museum, established a new propaganda figure of 1.5 million.<sup>17</sup> Following this, the inscriptions on the memorial plaques were removed.<sup>18</sup> Several years later, new plaques with the following text were installed:<sup>19</sup>

*“May this place be a cry of despair and a warning to mankind. Here the Nazis murdered about one and a half million men, women and children. Most of them were Jews from different countries of Europe. Auschwitz-Birkenau 1940-1945.”*

In 1991, F. Piper wrote a long article about the number of victims of the camp, in which he announced the publication of another detailed study; in this article, he no longer spoke of 1,500,000, but only of 1,100,000 dead.<sup>20</sup> In the following year, this study was indeed published in the form of a small book,<sup>21</sup> and again two years later, in 1993, Piper published the ‘definite’ version of his study under the title *The Number of Victims in Auschwitz*.<sup>22</sup>

On what fragile foundation this new figure of 1.1 million is based and to what new revisions it was subjected during the last decade, is well known. But how was it possible that the Soviet propaganda figure of four million could stay valid in Auschwitz itself up to the year 1990? F. Piper wrote about this as follows:<sup>23</sup>

*“The number of four million victims was spread in the literature by Jan Sehn, who in 1945 and 1946 was head of the Polish commission for the investigation of crimes in Auschwitz. This number was mentioned in many publications in Poland (Auschwitz State Museum, Main Commission for the Investigation of Nazi Crimes in Poland), in Czecho-Slovakia and in the GDR [former communist East Germany]. However, this number of three to four million did not find greater resonance in publications of the West, regardless of the known testimony of Höß in Nuremberg. One of the first researchers who questioned this high, estimated number of victims in Auschwitz was the British historian Gerald Reitlinger. In his elaborate study on the destruction of the Jews during World War II, he wrote that in Auschwitz ‘considerably less than a million people’ died; of these about 550,000 to 600,000 were Jews who were murdered immediately after their arrival at the camp, and an unknown number of about 300,000 registered prisoners, who were no longer there on the day of liberation; the majority of them were Jews.”*

In reality, the propaganda figure of four million had been dictated by the Soviets and was maintained by the communist world for pure self-interest. The West, however, generally accepted the lapidary judgment of G. Reitlinger:<sup>24</sup>

*“The world became suspicious about such ‘estimates,’ and the round figure of 4 million cannot withstand a serious examination.”*

The Polish judge Jan Sehn was actually more Soviet than the Soviets themselves: In the known summary of conclusions of his investigation of the year 1946, which became the foundation of the indictment against Rudolf Höß the following year, he wrote of even five million victims (“*pięciu milionów*”)<sup>25</sup>

J. Sehn knew very well that the Soviet four million figure was an obvious lie. During his investigations prior to the Höß trial, he thoroughly reviewed the so-called transport lists. These were simplified transcripts of the original documents prepared secretly by inmates who were employed by the political department of the camp. In one protocol dated “Cracow, December 16, 1945”, Sehn transcribed and analyzed these lists; they included:

- a) 2,377 transports with male prisoners arrived between May 20, 1940, and September 18, 1944. The arrivals were assigned the registration numbers 1-199,531.
- b) 1,046 transports with female prisoners arrived between February 26, 1942, and March 26, 1944. These prisoners received the numbers 1-75,697.<sup>26</sup>
- c) 78 male transports ordered by the RSHA (*Reichssicherheitshauptamt*) arrived between May 12 and August 1944 (registration numbers A-1/A-20,000).
- d) 60 transports with male Jews arrived between July 31 and September 21, 1944, ordered by the RSHA (registration numbers B-1/B-10,481).
- e) 90 transports with female Jews arrived between May 15 and September 20, 1944, ordered by the RSHA (registration numbers A-1/A-25,378).
- f) 171 transports with prisoners for re-education arrived between October 21, 1941, and September 20, 1944 (registration numbers E/1/E-9,339).<sup>27</sup>

Although these lists are not complete, they allow us to determine roughly the order of magnitude of prisoners that arrived in Auschwitz. In fact, they also serve as the basis for the *Auschwitz Chronicle* by Danuta Czech published in the German language between 1959 and 1964.<sup>28</sup>

As is generally known, the French-Jewish historian Georges Wellers wrote an article in 1983 about the number of victims of Auschwitz, which is also based on the study by D. Czech.<sup>29</sup> Wellers came to the conclusion that 1,613,455 people were deported to Auschwitz, of which 1,334,700 were killed.<sup>30</sup> Although his calculations are full of mistakes (which I pointed out in a separate study<sup>31</sup>), his writing dealt a deathblow to the four million fairy tale. Why did the Auschwitz-Museum defend the four million figure until 1990, although the study, which formed the basis for their revision, existed since 1964? F. Piper gave the following explanation:<sup>32</sup>

*"The state-run Auschwitz museum in Oświęcim [Polish name of Auschwitz] started relatively late in the seventies to research the problem of the number of victims. At that time, the research did not give clear results and neither confirmed nor questioned the numbers of the Soviet and Polish investigating authorities."*

As already noted, this is completely wrong, because the primary instrument of the propagandistic four million figure – D. Czech's *Kalendarium* – was created by the Auschwitz-Museum itself, and this refutes that figure categorically, as G. Wellers proved later, regardless of his own mistakes. And although the *Kalendarium*, as already mentioned, existed since 1964, F. Piper wrote the following in 1978 in a French book, which was one of the first books published by the Auschwitz museum addressing the general history of the camp (chapter "extermination"):<sup>33</sup>

*"In the barely five years of the existence of the camp, about 4,000,000 people perished as the consequence of diseases and executions as well as from mass murders in the gas chambers."*

F. Piper states that he started working on the number of victims of Auschwitz in 1980 and came to preliminary conclusions in 1986,<sup>34</sup> but can one seriously believe that a researcher, who has been employed by the historical department of the Auschwitz museum since 1965<sup>35</sup> and is its manager today, took the Soviet four-million legend at face value? Should this really be the case, it would be proof of a tragic blindness, unworthy of a history researcher. But if it is not so, as I assume, then it is proof of indecent political and ideological opportunism, also not befitting of a history researcher.

It should also be mentioned that the so-called memoirs of the first Auschwitz commandant Rudolf Höß were first published in Poland, and that Höß speaks therein of two and a half million victims; he claims that Eichmann gave him this figure. Höß lists the "largest actions", from which a total of 1,130,000 deportees derives;<sup>36</sup> this would have been one more reason for the Auschwitz museum as well as F. Piper to check the four million figure.

In 1990, after the collapse of the communist regime in Poland, F. Piper made use of the favorable hour to ban the thoroughly discredited old figure into history's scrap heap: he pretends now to be a free and critical spirit who undertook a ma-

ior revision and therefore deserves the attention of the historians!

#### **4. The Consequences of Giving Up the Propaganda Figure of Four Million**

Whoever thinks that the propaganda figure of four million can be dropped without punishment deceives himself completely. This figure is closely connected with the thesis of mass extermination in Auschwitz and cannot be thrown overboard without bringing the whole artificial building into sway. Regardless of the futile efforts of Jean-Claude Pressac to prove this thesis of mass extermination by documents, it is up to this day based exclusively on statements of alleged eye witnesses, and Pressac himself had to make use of those when he tried to describe the first alleged homicidal gassing in crematorium II of Birkenau.<sup>37</sup>

As already said, the witness testimonies and the four million figure were intimately woven together right from the start, in a way that the refutation of the witness testimonies would have been equivalent to a refutation of this figure and vice versa; at the same time, the entire thesis of mass extermination in Auschwitz would become untenable.

Today, as the four million figure is finally off the table, the official history has in fact taken this irreversible path to refute the orthodox Auschwitz version. The investigation of the actual capacity of the cremation ovens of Auschwitz causes the inevitable breakdown of the thesis of mass extermination of human beings in Auschwitz, because the most important witnesses, whose testimonies are necessary to support this thesis, have in the meantime been exposed as vulgar deceivers. Without fear of refutation, it can be said today that *not a single one* of the key witnesses – the members of the so-called "Sonderkommando" – ever told the truth about the cremation ovens; they all lied shamelessly without exception. They lied in order to reinforce the thesis of mass extermination.

But if they lied in this key point, then what credibility can their testimonies have regarding the 'gassings' of humans?

An honest dispute of this question has to result necessarily in a radical reduction of the number of people allegedly 'gassed,' and the article published by Fritjof Meyer in the spring of 2002,<sup>38</sup> further reducing the number of victims in Auschwitz, is a writing on the wall for the official historiography.

This is of course only valid for those researchers who possess a minimum of honesty and critical spirit, and certainly not for the Auschwitz-museum: although its historians have abandoned the four million figure, they still quote the thermodynamically ridiculous testimonies of 'eye witnesses' as serious sources and could not care less about the obvious contradictions resulting from this.

In this sense, F. Piper was not ashamed to write the following as late as 1994:<sup>39</sup>

*"A letter of the Central Construction Office to Group C of June 24, 1943, states that the capacity of crematorium I was 340 bodies, 1,440 each for crematoria II and III as well as 768 each for crematoria IV and V.<sup>[40]</sup> Thus, the five crematoria could cremate 4,765 bodies daily. This estimate agrees with the descriptions of the capacity of a five muffle*

crematorium for POW's, according to which two bodies could be cremated within 30 minutes.<sup>[41]</sup> However, crematorium I was shut down in the following month, which reduced the capacity to 4,515.

In their attempt to increase the cremation capacity of the ovens, the camp administration recommended to cut down the cremation time to 20 minutes and to triple the number of corpses, depending on the size of the bodies. As a result, the capacity of the crematoria could almost be doubled and went up to 8,000 corpses within 24 hours, as an inmate of the Sonderkommando, Feinsilber, testifies."

Thus this 'critical spirit' of the Auschwitz museum, who reduced the number of victims of the camp to almost a quarter, opportunistically invented a cremation capacity, which was eight times above the actual capacity! F. Piper of course knows exactly that the credibility of his 'eyewitnesses' goes down the drain if he would state the true capacity of the ovens, and this would also render all the allegations about homicidal gassings from these same witnesses untrustworthy. This is the reason why the Auschwitz museum is and continues to be an authority on superstition and prefers fairy tales of 'eyewitnesses' over science.

#### Abbreviations

**AGK:** Archiwum Głównej Komisji Badania Zbrodni przeciwko Narodowi polskiemu (archive of the main commission for the research of the crimes against the Polish people, Warsaw)

**GARF:** Gosudarstvenni Archiv Rossiskoi Federatsiy (States archive of the Russian Federation, Moscow)

**RGVA:** Rossiiskii Gosudarstvennii Voyennii Archiv (Russian state archive of war, the former TCIDK - Tsentr Khraneniya Istoriko-dokumental'nikh Kollektssii, Center for storing historical-documentary collections, Moscow)

#### Notes

First published as "Die Viermillionenzahl von Auschwitz: Entstehung, Revisionen und Konsequenzen" in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 7(1) (2003), pp. 15-27. Translated by Fabian Eschen.

<sup>1</sup> Werner Rademacher, "Die Wandlungen der Totenzahl von Auschwitz", *VffG*, 3(3) (1999), pp. 256-267 and Robert Faurisson, "How many deaths at Auschwitz?", *TR*, 1(1) (2003), pp. 18-23.

<sup>2</sup> F. Meyer, "Die Zahl der Opfer von Auschwitz – Neue Erkenntnisse durch neue Archivfunde", *Osteuropa. Zeitschrift für Gegenwartsfragen des Ostens*, No. 5, May 2002, pp. 631-641. This article is available online at [www.vho.org/D/Beitraege/FritjofMeyerOsteuropa.html](http://www.vho.org/D/Beitraege/FritjofMeyerOsteuropa.html).

<sup>3</sup> "Auschwitz: The Dwindling Death Toll", *TR*, 1(1) (2003), pp. 18-37.

<sup>4</sup> *Der Prozeß gegen die Hauptkriegsverbrecher vor dem Internationalen Militärgerichtshof*, Nürnberg 1947, Vol. VII, p. 647.

<sup>5</sup> GARF, 7021-108-14, pp. 18-20.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 18.

<sup>7</sup> "Gasovye kamery": The so-called 'Bunker' 1 and 2 were thus labeled in all Soviet documents. This designation was introduced by Szlama Dragan in his following Polish statements of May 10 and 11, 1945.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 15.

<sup>9</sup> The operating temperature of the muffles went up to 800°C. Temperatures of 1,500°C were only attainable in the fire places of the gas generators.

<sup>10</sup> Protocol of the questioning of Henryk Taubers from Februar 27-28, 1945.

GARF, 7021-108-13, pp. 1-12.

<sup>11</sup> J. Graf, C. Mattogno, *Concentration Camp Majdanek. A Historical and Techni-*

*cal Study*; Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago 2003, p. 79. The actual number of victims from Majdanek was around 42,300 (*ibid.*, Chapter 4).

<sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 286.

<sup>13</sup> R. Kessler, *Rationelle Wärme-Wirtschaft in Krematorien unter besonderer Berücksichtigung der Leuchtgasfeuerung*, in: *V. Jahrbuch des Verbandes der Feuerbestattungs-Vereine Deutscher Sprache 1930*, Königsberg 1930, p. 136.

<sup>14</sup> Even more crazy were the statements of the Soviet 'experts:' according to them, four to five corpses could burn as quickly as one corpse. German law, by the way, prohibited burning more than one corpse in a muffle at a time.

<sup>15</sup> Höß Trial, Band 11, p. 133.

<sup>16</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 150.

<sup>17</sup> "Neue Zahlen über Auschwitz. Historiker: bis zu 1,5 Millionen Tote," *Frankfurter Rundschau*, July 18, 1990. This article expressly refers to a study by F. Pipers.

<sup>18</sup> See photos 2 and 3. © Carlo Mattogno 1991.

<sup>19</sup> See photos 4 and 5. © Carlo Mattogno 1997. The text is on 20 memorial plaques in 20 languages. In his book, *Die Lüge spricht zwanzig Sprachen*, V.H.O., Berchem 2000, Bruno Montoroli reproduces pictures of all 20 memorial plaques.

<sup>20</sup> F. Piper, "Estimating the Number of Deportees to and Victims of the Auschwitz-Birkenau Camp", in: *Yad Vashem Studies*, XXI, Jerusalem 1991, pp. 49-103.

<sup>21</sup> F. Piper, *Auschwitz. Wie viele Juden, Polen, Zigeuner... wurden umgebracht*. Universitas, Krakau 1992.

<sup>22</sup> *Die Zahl der Opfer von Auschwitz*, National Museum Publishing House, Oświęcim, 1993.

<sup>23</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 10.

<sup>24</sup> G. Reitlinger, *Die Endlösung. Hitlers Versuch der Ausrottung der Juden Europas 1939 – 1945*. Colloquium Publishers, Berlin 1992, p. 522.

<sup>25</sup> J. Sehn, *Obóz koncentracyjny i zagłady Oświęcim*, in: *Biuletyn Głównej Komisji Badania Zbrodni Niemieckich w Polsce*. Posen 1946, p. 128.

<sup>26</sup> These lists were put in order by K. Smoleń on December 16, 1947, at the American "Counsel for War Crimes" and presented at the Nuremberg follow-up process as Document NOKW-2824.

<sup>27</sup> AGK, NTN, 95, pp. 12f. The protocol spans p. 12 to p. 123.

<sup>28</sup> D. Czech, *Kalendarium der Ereignisse im Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau*, in: *Hefte von Auschwitz*, 2, 1959, pp. 89-118 (1940-1941); 3, 1960, pp. 47-110 (1942); 4, 1961, pp. 63-111 (January-June 1943); 6, 1962, pp. 43-87 (July-December 1943); 7, 1964, pp. 71-103 (January-June 1944); 8, 1964, pp. 47-109 (July 1944-January 1945). Wydawnictwo Państwowego Muzeum w Oświęcimiu.

<sup>29</sup> The second, revised edition of the *Kalendarium* appeared in 1989 by Rowohlt, Reinbek.

<sup>30</sup> G. Wellers, "Essai de détermination du nombre de morts au camp d'Auschwitz," in: *Le Monde Juif*, n. 112, Oct.-Dec. 1983, p. 153.

<sup>31</sup> *Wellers e i "gasati" di Auschwitz*. Edizioni La Sfinge, Parma 1987.

<sup>32</sup> F. Piper, *op. cit.* (note 22), p. 13.

<sup>33</sup> F. Piper, "Extermination", in: J. Buszko, *Auschwitz. Camp hitlerien d'extermination*, Editions Interpress, Warsaw 1978, p. 134.

<sup>34</sup> F. Piper, *op. cit.* (note 22), p. 13.

<sup>35</sup> Y. Gutman, M. Berenbaum (ed.), *Anatomy of the Auschwitz death camp*, Indiana University Press, Bloomington and Indianapolis 1994, p. XIII

<sup>36</sup> Główna Komosja Badania Zbrodni Hitlerowskich w Polsce, *Wspomnienia Rudolfa Hoessa komendanta obozu oświęcimskiego*. Wydawnictwo Prawnicze, Warsaw 1956, p. 193.

<sup>37</sup> Jean-Claude Pressac, *Die Krematorien von Auschwitz. Die Technik des Massenmordes*. Piper Verlag, Munich-Zürich 1994, p. 95; Pressac stützt sich hier auf die Zeugenaussage H. Taubers.

<sup>38</sup> "Die Zahl der Opfer von Auschwitz. Neue Erkenntnisse durch neue Archivfunde", in: *Osteuropa*, No. 5, May 2002, pp. 631-641. See also my article "Auschwitz. Fritjof Meyer's New Revisions", *TR* 1(1) (2003), pp. 30-37.

<sup>39</sup> F. Piper, "Gas Chambers and Crematoria", in: Y. Gutman and M. Berenbaum (ed.), *op. cit.* (note 35), pp. 165f.

<sup>40</sup> See also my article "'Schlüsseldokument' – eine alternative Interpretation," *VffG*, 4(1) (2000), pp. 50-56.

<sup>41</sup> F. Piper refers to *Erläuterungsbericht zur Vorentwurf für den Neubau des Kriegsgefangenenlagers der Waffen-SS, Auschwitz O/S (RGVA, 502-1-233, p. 20)*. This document was written at a time when the Topf tripple-muffle ovens did not yet exist and reflects the wishfull thinking of the Topf Company. The project planned at that time was different from the one later realized.

## II. Franciszek Piper and *The Number of Victims of Auschwitz*

### 1. Introduction

In the previous article “The Four Million Number of Auschwitz: Origin, Revisions and Consequences,” I described how Franciszek Piper, head of the history department at the Auschwitz Museum, let himself always be guided by political and ideological opportunism. During the time of the communist regime he accepted the four million figure faithfully and blindly according to the party instructions, but as soon as the regime broke down he freed himself from the rubble of the Soviet propaganda and published a pretentious ‘scientific’ piece with the title *The Number of Victims of Auschwitz*.<sup>1</sup> This study was highly regarded by official historians. In the following article I shall show what its real value is.

### 2. The Number of Deported Jews

F. Piper investigates the extent of the Jewish transportations to Auschwitz from the various countries and summarizes the results in tables, in which he enumerates the corresponding transports (p. 182-198). On page 199 he then represents the final result of his summaries.

In this section the veracity of these conclusions will be checked in detail.

#### 2.1. HUNGARY

Number of deportees: 438,000 (p. 182 and 199). A total of 437,402 Jews were deported from this country between May and July 1944; of these, however, at the most 398,400 arrived in Auschwitz according to current knowledge.<sup>2</sup> Therefore, the number quoted by F. Piper is too high by 39,600.

#### 2.2 POLAND

Number of deportees: 300,000 (p. 183-186 and 199). F. Piper notes for the time from May to August 1942 the following – allegedly all gassed – transports from Polish ghettos:

DATE OF ARRIVAL	PLACE OF ORIGIN	DEPORTEES
May 5, 1942	Dąbrowa Górnicza	630 G
May 12, 1942	Sosnowiec	1,500
May 1942	Zawiercie	2,000
May 1942	Bełżyn	2,000
June 17, 1942	Sosnowiec	1,000
June 20, 1942	Sosnowiec	2,000
June 1942	Biesko-Biała	5,000 G
June 1942	Olkusz	3,000 G
June 1942	Krzepice	1,000 G
June 1942	Chrzanów	4,000 G
August 1-3, 1942	Bełżyn	5,000 G
August 15, 1942	Sosnowiec	2,000
August 16, 1942	Sosnowiec	2,000
August 17, 1942	Sosnowiec	2,000
August 18, 1942	Sosnowiec	2,000
	TOTAL	13,000

These transports are pure inventions;<sup>3</sup> there is not the trace of an indication of these in the existing documentation, and in

her *Auschwitz-Kalendarium* Danuta Czech cannot furnish the slightest proof for the reality of these transports. The transports marked by me with a “G” are mentioned in the well-known *Atlas* of the British-Jewish historian Martin Gilbert,<sup>4</sup> a study without any sources, which therefore has no historical value at all, because it is impossible to separate reality from fantasy.

Information about the alleged transport of 1000 Jews from Grodno in November 1942 (Piper does not give the exact date), supposedly all gassed right after their arrival, is taken from D. Czech’s *Kalendarium*;<sup>5</sup> the same is true for the transport of 1000 Jews from Białystok of November 8, 1942. For both transports D. Czech quotes the diary of Dr. Johannes Kremer as a source:<sup>6</sup>

“*This is the 12th Sonderaktion, in which Dr. Kremer participates. (Auschwitz in den Augen der SS, op. cit. Diary Kremers, p. 232).*”

“*This is the 13th Sonderaktion, in which Dr. Kremer participates. (Auschwitz in den Augen der SS, op. cit. Diary Kremers, p. 232).*”<sup>7</sup>

However, the source quoted by D. Czech refutes her own claim: the corresponding part from Dr. Kremer’s diary as printed in the 1997 edition of *Auschwitz in den Augen der SS* actually read as follows:

“*November 8, 1942. Participated tonight in 2 Sonderaktionen<sup>[8]</sup> in rainy gray fall weather (12. and 13.)*”

Dr. Kremer neither mentions the arrival of those two transports nor the number of admissions, and both cases are therefore pure inventions by D. Czech.

In a footnote Jadwiga Bezwinska as well as Danuta Czech explain themselves (!):<sup>9</sup>

“*Jews from the concentration camp Lublin (Majdanek) arrived. 25 men were assigned as inmates to the camp; the others (number unknown) were gassed*”.

In other words: D. Czech never had in her possession any proof for the arrival of the two mentioned transports in Auschwitz, and therefore these are to be categorized as pure inventions. The same is true for the transport of 2,500 Jews from Chrzanów on February 18, 1943, for which Pipers again quotes Gilbert’s *Atlas*.<sup>10</sup>

The transport with 4,000 Jews from Łomża of January 14, 1943 is not even listed in D. Czech’s *Kalendarium*. The same for the transports with 1,000 Jews from Czestochowa on June 25, 1943, with 5,000 Jews from Tarnów on September 2, 1943, with 3,500 Jews from Przemyśl on September 2, 1943, with 1,000 Jews from Rzeszów in November 1943, with 600 Jews from Borysław on March 28, 1844, as well as finally with 700 Jews from Borysław on June 22, 1944.

Thus, the second group of transports comprises a further 20,300 fictitious deportees.

An even more characteristic example for F. Piper’s methods is the case of Lodz. The subtotal of his table about transports of Polish Jews to Auschwitz is 225,464 deportees. This table lists, among others, 11 transports from the ghetto of Lodz, to which F. Piper assigns an – incomplete – number of 4,818 deportees.



Photo 4&58: The 'new' memorial stones in the Auschwitz-Birkenau camp: again already invalid...

© Carlo Mattogno

He then adds further 55,000 to 65,000 Jews sent to Auschwitz from this ghetto for August and September 1944 and arrives thus at the already mentioned total number of 300,000 Jewish deportees who arrived from Poland.

However, subtracting the subtotal from the overall total results in  $(300,000 - 225,464 =) 74,536$  deportees. To these the 4,818, which were already included in the table, have to be added, which results in 79,354 Jews who were sent to Auschwitz from Lodz, but Piper specifies their number between 60,000 to 70,000, so that the resulting number from his table is 9,354 higher than the maximum number stated by himself. But this difference is not decisive; the reality actually looks quite different. As I described in my article "The Evacuation of the Ghettos of Lodz and the Deportations to Auschwitz (August 1944)",<sup>11</sup> the number of the Jews sent from Lodz to Auschwitz is approximately 22,5000, which shows that F. Piper pulled a further 56,854 deportees out of his hat.

In summary, the number of the Piper's fictitious Jewish arrivals from Poland is therefore  $(35,130 + 20,300 + 56,854 =)$  about 112,300.

2.3 FRANCE

Number of deportees: 69,114 (rounded to 69,000) (p. 187f.). Piper's source for this is the known documentation of Serge Klarsfeld,<sup>12</sup> in which the number of the French Jews deported to Auschwitz is listed as 68,921.<sup>13</sup> However, F. Piper did not consider the Jews, which were selected in Kosel, whose number according to Klarsfeld was between 3,056 and 4,000 (so we can use a average of 3,500). Therefore the number of Jews who arrived in Auschwitz is about  $(68,921 - 3,500 =) 65,400$ , and the number listed by Piper is too high by  $(69,000 - 65,400 =) 3,600$ .

2.4 HOLLAND

Number of deportees: 60,085 (rounded to 60,000) (p. 189f.). In this case as well, Piper ignores the Jews who were sorted out in Kosel, numbered by the Dutch Red Cross at 3,540.<sup>14</sup>

2.5 GREECE

Number of deportees: 54,533 (rounded to 55,000) (p. 191 an 199). In the corresponding table, a transport with 2,500 Jews is

listed, which arrived on August 16, 1944, from the Island Rhodos. But the same transport also appears in the table for Italy, except that the date of arrival is here July 23, 1944, and the number of deportees is listed as 1,805. As the Italian historian Liliana Picciotto Fargion explains, a transport with 1,820 Italian Jews left the Dodekanes (Rhodos and Koo) on July 23, 1944, made an intermediate stop in Athens on August 3, and arrived in Auschwitz on August 16.<sup>15</sup> F. Piper counts it, as we have seen, twice and gives a different number in each case. This transport has to be counted under Italy, since at that time those islands were Italian territory, and the number of deported Jews from Greece has to be reduced by 2,500.

2.6 THERESIENSTADT

Number of deportees: 46,099 (rounded to 46,000) (p. 192). According to the memorial book of the ghetto Theresienstadt, 43,454 Jews were transferred to Auschwitz between 1942 and 1944,<sup>16</sup> so that Piper's number is too high by approximately 3,400.

2.7 YUGOSLAVIA

Number of the deportees: 10,000 (p. 196 and 199). For the transports from Zagreb on May 7 and 13, 1943, F. Piper counts a total of 4,000 deportees, while D. Czech tallies these to 2,000.<sup>17</sup> This means that F. Piper had 2,000 deportees up his sleeve.

2.8 BELGIUM

Number of deportees: 24,906 (rounded up to 25,000, p. 197 and 199). Piper's source is a book by Maxim Steinberg, which actually mentions 24,906 Jews deported from Belgium to Auschwitz,<sup>18</sup> but also mentions that 1,380 of these were sorted out in Kosel.<sup>19</sup> Therefore, Piper lists an excess of approximately 1,400 deportees.

2.9 ITALY

Number of deportees: 7,422 (rounded to 7,500) (p. 109f.). 5,951 Jews were sent from Italy to Auschwitz, to which 1,820 Jews from the islands Rhodos and Koo (Dodekanes) have to be added.<sup>20</sup> Therefore the total is 7,711 and Piper's number is too low by 300.



## 2.10 CONCENTRATION CAMPS, AUXILIARY CAMPS AND OTHER PLACES

Number of deportees: 34,000 (p. 199).

Piper simply lists here the number without specifying the origin and number of transports. According to D. Czech's *Kalendarium* the number of deported under this category is about 12,500,<sup>21</sup> to which 7,500 Jewesses are to be added who arrived from Plaszow on August 6, 1944,<sup>22</sup> as well as 1,400 Jews who also came from Plaszow on May 14, 1944.<sup>23</sup> This results in a total of 21,400. Under these circumstances, Piper's number is too high by 12,600.

## 2.11 SUMMARY

In summary: F. Piper invented at least 180,600 Jews allegedly deported to Auschwitz. Thus, 180,600 have to be subtracted from his total number of 1,095,190 Jewish deportees as listed in his table 28 on p. 199, and the actual total is about 914,600, of which about 205,000 were registered (p. 103).

### 3. The Number of Registered, Non-Registered (Accommodated in the Birkenau Transfer Camp) as well as of Allegedly Gassed Deportees.

On p. 102, F. Piper includes a table, which indicates that a total of 400,207 prisoners were registered in Auschwitz. On p. 118 is another table with numbers assigned to the prisoners, according to D. Czech's *Kalendarium*. The listed total number – 390,500<sup>24</sup> – does not include the estimated 11,000 (11,186) re-education prisoners, so that the actual total number of the registered is about 401,500. The following table summarizes the numbers of the surviving inmates, as furnished by F. Piper:

YEAR	TRANSFERRED	RELEASED	ESCAPED	LIBERATED	P.
1940	92	?	3		152
1941	2,282	?	6		154
1942	2,916	997	48		156
1943	19,859	0	139		160
1944/1945	163,000	500	300	8,000	163
<b>Total</b>	<b>188,149</b>	<b>1,497</b>	<b>496</b>	<b>8,000</b>	

Adding in the re-education prisoners to this results in a total of 198,142 survivors. According to Piper, the “25,000 non-registered prisoners who were transferred to other concentration camps after a brief stay in the KL Auschwitz” (p. 163f.), have to be added to this total. This would therefore yield a total of about 223,000 survivors. Under these circumstances, the number of dead according to Piper would be (1,300,000 – 223,000 =) 1,077,000, but Piper rounds it up to a total of 1,100,000.

The total number of 1,300,000 deportees to Auschwitz as listed by F. Piper includes also groups of non-Jews, which were – according to his allegations – murdered in the camp without registration: 3,000 Soviet POWs, 1,700 gypsies, 10,000 Poles (p. 149f.), which is a total of 14,700, rounded up to 15,000 (p. 200). With the exception of a few dozen Poles, however, there is absolutely no documentary evidence for these allegations, so that these allegedly non-registered killed can be banned into the realm of fantasy as well.

The number of the non-registered admitted to the Birkenau transfer camp is considerably higher than F. Piper admits. To

this category belong at least 79,200 Hungarian Jews<sup>25</sup> and about 19,400 Jews from Lodz.<sup>11</sup> On October 2, 1944, there were 17,251 Jewesses still in the transfer camp who were then included with the camp population<sup>26</sup> without being assigned a registration number. The number of inmates who did not receive such a number was at least 98,600. Andrzej Strzelecki confirmed the probability of this number when he wrote:<sup>27</sup>

*“Between May and October 1944, several tens of thousands, most probably up to one hundred thousand Jewish prisoners went through the Birkenau camp without registration”.*

And finally F. Piper considerably underestimates the number of the Jews who were transferred out of Auschwitz in 1944 as well as in early 1945, because in reality this number was not less than 192,300 prior to January 17, 1945. At that time, there were still 67,000 prisoners in the camp; about 58,500 of them were transferred and 8,500 remained.<sup>28</sup>

## 4. The Number of Dead (Registered Inmates)

### 4.1. 1940-1941

For this period, F. Piper calculates 21,000 dead. Since the – incomplete – documentation begins on July 29, 1941 (death certificate No. 1 of the inmate Peter Pakosch),<sup>29</sup> F. Piper relies for his calculations on the difference between the numbers of registered inmates on one hand and those who were actually present, escaped, or had been dismissed on the other hand. A more exact calculation, which I will publish later, results in 19,500 victims during this period, including the Soviet POW's.

### 4.2. 1942

F. Piper says that the highest registration number, which appears in the (incomplete) last “Sterbebuch” (death book) of 1942, is 45,616. It was assigned to the female inmate Erna Haubenstock on December 31 of that year, but the document shows that this woman died on December 23. Since this “Sterbebuch” listed as an average 128 deaths per day, it stands to reason, according to F. Piper, that until December 31 1,000 more prisoners died and that the total number of dead according to the death books therefore is about 47,000 (p. 156). The highest registration number of a dead inmate is 47,020 (Jewish inmate Jacques Kaufman).<sup>30</sup> Not included in this number are 1,427 Soviet POWs who perished in 1942, whose death is separately listed in the “Totenbuch” (book of the dead).

F. Piper finally asks, whether this number is accurate, and negates it with the following argument:

From the opening of the camp until December 31, 1942, ca. 126,000 inmates were registered. Of these, 29,630 were still in the camp on January 1, 1943, and therefore about (126,000 – 29,630 =) 96,500 were missing. Of these, some 23,500 disappeared in the two previous years 1940 and 1941, and in 1942, 2,916 were transferred to other camps; 48 had escaped and 997 were discharged. Under these circumstances, Piper calculates that a total of about (96,500 – 23,500 – 2,916 – 48 – 997 =) 69,000 prisoners died in the year 1942, about 22,000 more than were listed in the “Sterbebücher.”

To explain this alleged difference, F. Piper refers to a former Auschwitz inmate Klari Weiß, who worked in the political department of the camp:

*“Because of my access to the files I can estimate that there were about 48,000 natural deaths in the camp in 1942. The natural deaths of Jews were not listed in 1943, however, the files of about 35,000 deaths of non-Jews were kept. The number of natural deaths of non-Jews in 1944 were about 30,000”* (p. 227).

F. Piper underlines that Klari Weiß talks only about “natural deceases;” he therefore calculates an additional 22,000

*“‘not natural’ deceases – these inmates were killed in the gas chambers and with phenol injections.”* (p. 158).

F. Piper’s calculations, however, are basically worthless, because it has to be shown first that two different books were kept for the deaths, an official book – the “Sterbebücher” for the registered inmates – as well as an unofficial book for those who died an ‘non-natural’ death. There are no documentary traces of the latter; there is not a single example of a decease other than those officially listed in all the documents about mortalities in Auschwitz – the “Leichenhallenbuch” (morgue book, 13,526 deceases), the “Stärkebuch” (number of inmates book, 22,168 deceases) as well as death certificates (4,839 deceases).<sup>31</sup> This information is on p. 155 of F. Piper. On the contrary: As Thomas Grotum and Jan Parcer emphasize, the “Sterbebücher” include indications about ‘non-natural’ deaths, like those 67 inmates who were “shot during an escape.”<sup>32</sup> The two authors even explained:<sup>33</sup>

*“Most death causes, as can be found in the death entries, were feigned. In order to cover up the true circumstances of the deaths of the Auschwitz inmates the clerks had instructions to choose possible reasons for the deaths from a prepared list.”*

In the following they add:<sup>34</sup>

*“Among the 68,864 death entries are 2,727, where ‘sudden heart failure’ is mentioned as the cause for death. In several of these cases it can be shown that these were unnatural death causes.”*

Thus, according to T. Grotum and J. Parcer, the ‘non-natural’ deceases were listed in the death books, either explicitly or implicitly, with false entries for the cause of death. On the other hand, the number of examples mentioned by them is so small that their allegation that “most causes of death” were false is not justified. It can be assumed that, if manipulations occurred, they were initiated by the desire to bypass the rigid bureaucratic routine, which was laid down in the regulations for the concentration camps in 1941. According to it, the following documents had to be prepared in duplicate “in cases of unnatural deceases and suicides:”

- 1 Interrogation protocol of the witnesses
- 1 Report for the commandant
- 1 Death certificate by the doctor
- 1 Autopsy report
- 1 Funeral certificate of the SS- and police court
- 1 Termination certificate of the SS- and police court.<sup>35</sup>

It may be that the individuals responsible in some cases thought that it would be easier to bypass the bothersome bureaucratic paperwork and to list a false cause of death instead.

In view of these facts the thesis of F. Piper has to be discarded as being unsound. Because, as is common knowledge, the documentation about Auschwitz is incomplete, there is no

reason to assume that the numbers of transferred, escaped, and released prisoners are complete, as they are listed by F. Piper with reference to D. Czech’s *Kalendarium*. For example: D. Czech listed less than half of the actual transfers from Auschwitz to other camps for the year 1944.<sup>29</sup>

For this reason, the exact opposite of F. Piper’s assertion is true: Because all death were entered into the death books, the missing 22,000 inmates did not die in the camp but belong to the other three categories, mainly of course the one of transfers.

#### 4.3. 1943

F. Piper indicates that the highest registration number in the last death book of the year 1943 is 36,991 and was assigned to the inmate Zelik Gieclik, who died on December 18. Because the average daily mortality during that period was about 105, 1,400 further inmates can be assumed to have died until December 31, so that the total number of deceased for 1943 is to be estimated at over 38,000 (p. 160).

However, this calculation is erroneous: While the last death book of the year 1942 (No. 31) only partly survived, this is not the case for the last death book of 1943 (No. 25); this one is complete, and the apparent discrepancy is because the numbering of the registrations was not handled in strict chronological order. The relevant death book actually covers the period until December 31, 1943, and the highest listed number of a deceased is 36,983; the dead is the inmate Stanislaw Domanski.

F. Piper refers a second time to Klari Weiß, who according to him said

*“that the deaths of Jewish inmates in 1943 were no longer registered, even in case of a ‘natural’ death (certainly not even death certificates were prepared in these cases). As Klari Weiß reports, the result of her evidence is that in 1943 a total of 35,000 non-Jews died.”* (p. 160)

However, this allegation cannot be backed by documents in any way either, and F. Piper’s hypothesis that Jewish inmates who died a natural (or unnatural) death could have disappeared without a death certificate (or with a falsified entry of the cause of death) from the camp’s population, is simply wrong.

F. Piper again took refuge in a awkward method of calculation in order to account for the difference between the number of dead as claimed by him and those listed in the death books. He emphasizes that ca. 282,000 prisoners were registered until the end of 1943, of which 85,298 were still in the camp on December 31, 1943, so that ca. 197,000 inmates were missing. Of these, he writes, about 96,500 disappeared in the previous years (1940 to 1942). In 1943, 19,859 prisoners were transferred to other camps and 139 escaped, so that the number of perished inmates in that year (197,000 – 96,500 – 19,859 – 139 =) is about 80,500 (p. 160ff.), which would be some 43,500 above the documented number. In reality, it is likely that most of these inmates were transferred to other camps.

#### APRIL 4, 1944 (-1945)

F. Piper maintains that no document at all exists today about the mortality in Auschwitz for this year, but D. Czech’s *Kalendarium* states that “in the year 1944 about 30,000 registered inmates were killed” (p. 162). In order to determine the number of victims for 1944, Piper uses the following method of calculation:

The total number of registered prisoners in the camp of Auschwitz since its existence is about 400,200, of these 197,000 disappeared from the camp population prior to the end of 1943. Of the remaining 203,000, 163,000 were transferred or evacuated, 300 escaped, about 500 were released and about 8,000 were liberated by the Soviets. Under these circumstances, argues F. Piper, the number of perished inmates in 1944 were to be estimated at  $(203,000 - 163,000 - 300 - 500 - 8000 =)$  30,000 (p. 163; 31,200 would be correct). He states

*“that the number of 30,000 deaths includes Jews as well as non-Jews, and those who died of a ‘natural’ death as well as killed inmates.”* (p. 163)

On the other hand, Klari Weiß explains that

*“the number 30,000 refers only to non-Jews and only to inmates who died of a ‘natural’ death.”*

In order to explain this contradiction, F. Piper resorts to the idea of a general falsification of the “Sterbefalldokumentation” (death case documentation), allegedly used by the SS for reasons of camouflage. This ‘explanation’ is simply nonsense, because if it is true that in 1944 a total of 30,000 prisoners perished, and if it is further correct that in the same year 30,000 inmates were gassed, it has to be concluded that in 1944 not a single inmate died of a natural cause, which of course is radically impossible.

Furthermore, F. Piper almost criminally underestimates the number of those, who were transferred or evacuated from Auschwitz. Because if the approximately 8,500 inmates, who stayed in the camp until the Red Army arrived, are allowed for, the actual number is about 250,000<sup>29</sup> and definitely not just 188,888 (163,000 registered as well as 25,000 non-registered).<sup>36</sup>

A correct calculation of the number of dead for 1944 is as follows:

The population of the camp on December 31, 1943, was 85,298.<sup>37</sup> 114,500 inmates were registered in 1944, while 98,600 went through the transfer camp in Birkenau. During that year, at least 250,800 prisoners were transferred or evacuated, 300 escaped, and ca. 8,500 stayed in the camp until the end. Of these, 536 died, and their corpses were autopsied by the Soviets.<sup>38</sup> Under these circumstances, the number of those who died in the camp cannot have been higher than about  $([85,298 + 114,500 + 98,600] - [250,800 + 300 + 500 + 8,500] =)$  ca. 38,500.

The order of magnitude of this number is in agreement with the one mentioned by Klari Weiß. The numbers of Klari Weiß agree, by the way, quite well with those documented, thus they can be considered reliable. Incorrect, of course, are her statements about the categories to which the deceased should be listed. The reason for her incorrect statements in this respect can be understood easily. In the verdict of the Höb trial, the allegation was arbitrarily made that 300,000 registered inmates died or were killed in Auschwitz,<sup>39</sup> so that Klari Weiß could, of course, not testify during the later Cracow trial against the camp personal that ‘only’ as many inmates died as were registered in the death books; she had to maintain that there were *additional* cases of death besides those registered.

F. Piper explains that the number of 340,000 dead among the registered inmates, a figure frequently mentioned in the Auschwitz-literature, is based

*“on an erroneous interpretation of the number mentioned by Sehn, which covers the transferred inmates in Auschwitz as well in other concentration camps”* (p. 164) Although it is true that the Polish judge Jan Sehn wrote:<sup>40</sup>

*“More than 400,000 inmates, listed in different registration series, arrived in the camp Auschwitz. Of these, 340,000 died in Auschwitz and other camps, to which they were transferred.”*

But if this statement is interpreted wrongly, than nobody else is responsible for this than F. Piper, since he himself claimed in 1978 that “about 340,000 of the registered inmates – men, women and children” died or were killed in Auschwitz.<sup>41</sup>

## 5. Conclusions

What has been explained so far permits one to come to the following (preliminary) conclusions:

1. The number of deportees to Auschwitz is about 1,111,100; of these 914,600 were Jews and 196,500 non-Jews.
2. About 401,500 prisoners were registered in the camp; of these about 205,000 were Jews, the rest non-Jews.
3. The number of Jews who were assigned to the “Durchgangslager” (transfer camp) of Birkenau and then transferred to other camps is not less than 98,600.
4. At least 250,800 prisoners were transferred or evacuated in 1944 as well as in January 1945.
5. The number of those who perished in Auschwitz is about 135,000. The breakdown of the deceased for the various years is listed in the following table:

1940-1941	19,500
1942	48,500 (48,447)
1943	37,000 (36,991)
1944	30,000
1945	500 (536)
TOTAL	135,500

6. The total number of released, escaped, and transferred inmates as well as inmates liberated by the Soviets is at least  $([401,500 + 98,600] - 135,500 =)$  364,600.
7. The difference between these numbers and the total number of the deportees to Auschwitz is a maximum of  $(1,111,100 - 364,600 - 135,500 =)$  about 611,000, or 55%. According to official history, these are the ‘non-registered gassed.’
8. A total of not less than 500,100 prisoners were admitted to the camp, of these ca. 401,500 were registered and ca. 98,600 were quartered in the transfer section of Birkenau.

## 6. The Fate of the Missing Jews

It is hardly necessary to emphasize that neither F. Piper nor any other historian has ever furnished even a trace of evidence for the gassing of the non-registered inmates, who are by and large probably identical with those unable to work. On the other hand, it can be proven without any doubt that two of the most widely exploited alleged gassings – the one of the Birkenau gypsy camp in Birkenau (2,897 inmates) as well as those of the inmates of the ghettos of Lodz (66,900 inmates) – were actually historiographic falsifications.<sup>11</sup> Not a single one of the other alleged gassings can be backed up with documents.

It is furthermore a fact that until 1989, official historiography considered at least 79,200 non-registered Hungarian Jews, who

were assigned to the transfer camp, as ‘gassed.’<sup>42</sup> F. Piper, however, still counts (79,200 – 25,000 =) 54,200 of them as gassed!

As far as the fate of the 611,000 missing Jews is concerned, there are various documents indicating that they were deported further to the east. Reichsminister Albert Speer talked about this in this connection with specific reference to Auschwitz in an important document of the “Ostwanderung” (eastward migration).<sup>43</sup>

## 7. Meaning and Importance of Jean-Claude Pressac’s and Fritjof Meyer’s Revisions as well as Future Revisions

In the first part of this article, I emphasize that an investigation of the number of victims of Auschwitz from a technical point of view must necessarily lead to a radical reduction of those allegedly ‘gassed’ in that camp. The currently accepted number of 1.1 million victims, as published by F. Piper, will doubtlessly be thrown into the garbage can of history very soon, as happened to the Soviet propaganda number of four million.

In fact, Piper’s number and the number accepted by official history were already drastically reduced by Jean-Claude Pressac and Fritjof Meyer. These reductions are without question a direct consequence of revisionist research.

Jean-Claude Pressac starts with 667,200-747,200 Jews who were sent to Auschwitz; he lists the number of dead among the registered camp inmates as 161,000 (including 15,000 Soviet POW’s and 20,000 gypsies) and believes that there were 470,000 to 550,000 non-registered Jewish gassed.<sup>44</sup>

For his calculations, Pressac refers to the study of F. Piper but reduces the number of admitted Jews from Poland and Hungary as well as the number of deaths among registered inmates. Regarding Poland, he believes that the number of assumed passengers riding on each individual train was exaggerated and reduces the total number from 300,000 to 150,000. He bases this mainly on the relation between those who can work (30 to 35 %) and those who are unable to work (65 to 79%); according to this, there were 50,000 employable (registered) Polish Jews against 150,000 non-employable (non-registered). However, in the case of deportations from Bendsburg and Sosnowitz, Pressac used a revisionist argument: He emphasizes that, according to D. Czech’s *Kalendarium*, 23,714 ‘non-employable’ Jews were sent to Auschwitz in the beginning of August 1943 within six days, in addition to one transport from France and one from Belgium. If all these Jews were really gassed, then the number of daily gassed would have been in the average 4,000. Pressac believes that the operating crematoria at that time – Krema I, III and V – had a daily cremation capacity of 1,750 corpses, and that this was reduced to 1,500 after shutting down Krema I at the end of July 1943. Thus, according to Pressac, the cremation of such a large number of corpses was impossible; he continues:<sup>45</sup>

*“It appears that the number of Jews per transport (2000 to 3000) –poorly estimated by the eye witnesses – was doubled.”*

Although Pressac uses an untenably high cremation capacity (the actual maximal capacity of crematoria III and V together was about 460 corpses per day), he uses a typical revisionist,

technical argument and therefore abandons the testimonies of the witnesses as unreliable.

In the case of Jewish transports from Hungary, Pressac made use of one of my arguments, which I had already made a long time ago; this was based upon a problem, which could not be solved at that time but could be explained subsequently.<sup>46</sup>

Pressac accepts the number of about 438,000 deported Hungarian Jews between May and July 1944, but he thinks that only between 160,000 and 240,000 of these actually arrived in Auschwitz.<sup>47</sup> He can unfortunately not explain where the remaining 198,000 to 278,000 went.

Regarding the number of deaths among registered inmates, Pressac accepts for 1942 and 1943 the data of the death books, uses for 1944 the numbers of Klari Weiß, and determines for the period from January 1 to 18, 1945, a number – certainly too high – of 1,500 dead, and posits for the period from May 1940 to the end of 1941 a number of victims of 11,988. He adds to this 15,000 Soviet POW’s and 20,000 gypsies and arrives at a total of 161,000 dead.<sup>48</sup> Since the number deceased among the gypsies is already included in the death books, 20,000 have to be deducted from Pressac’s total, resulting in a total of 141,000 dead, which is approximately identical with the figure I quoted in this article.

The weak point of the revision undertaken by Pressac is primarily the number of the Hungarian Jews sent to Auschwitz. (That the number of deported Hungarian Jews quoted by Piper is actually very inflated can be assumed as certain). There is no doubt that several transports with Hungarian Jews were sent to Austria (Straßhof and Gänserndorf), to Bergen-Belsen, to Latvia and to Estonia; further transports did probably arrive in Plaszow and Cracow without an intermediate stop in Auschwitz.<sup>49</sup> Still, according to today’s knowledge, the numbers as listed by Pressac cannot be proven with documents.

From a *statistical* point of view, future additional revisions of the deportees to Auschwitz will depend first of all on new findings about the deportations of Hungarian Jews to other places than Auschwitz.

In May 2002, Fritjof Meyer revised the number of victims even more radically than Pressac,<sup>50</sup> and not only with reference to the new reduction of the number (he mentions 510,000 perished inmates in Auschwitz, of these 356,000 allegedly gassed), but especially with regards to the method.

Meyer’s procedure is barely veiled revisionism. He approaches his issue not from a statistical, but from a *technical* point of view: His drastic reduction of the number of victims as quoted by Piper is based primarily on technical criteria, namely the capacity of the cremation ovens of Auschwitz-Birkenau. I indicated in an earlier article that Meyer’s choosing of this criterion is unassailable, but he uses it incorrectly, because the technical data, which he accepts is not in accordance with reality.<sup>51</sup> Nevertheless, F. Meyer dealt two deadly blows to official historiography, first by accepting the technical method of revisionists, concluding from it that no historic basis exists for the thesis of mass gassings, and second because any reduction of the number of Auschwitz victims lower than the number of missing inmates means *de facto* that a corresponding number of *non-employable* inmates were transferred from Auschwitz to other places.

By using the number of 356,000 gassed Jews in Auschwitz, as quoted by F. Meyer, one arrives at the conclusion that (611,000 – 356,000 =) 255,000 non-employable Jews left the camp alive and were transferred somewhere else. In this case, Auschwitz certainly could not have functioned as an extermination camp for all *non-employable* Jews deported to this camp, and this key argument of the official history collapses in itself.

## Notes

Translated from the Italian by Jürgen Graf.

<sup>1</sup> Verlag Staatliches Museum in Oświęcim, 1993. The following page numbers in parentheses refer to this work.

<sup>2</sup> See C. Mattogno, "Die Deportation ungarischer Juden von Mai bis Juli 1944. Eine provisorische Bilanz", in: *VffG*, 5(4) (2001), p. 389.

<sup>3</sup> For this see my study "Sonderbehandlung" ad Auschwitz. *Genesi e significato*, Edizioni di Ar, Padua 2001, p. 42f. Soon to be published as *Special Treatment in Auschwitz*, Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago, 2004.

<sup>4</sup> M. Gilbert, *Endlösung. Die Vertreibung und Vernichtung der Juden. Ein Atlas*. Rowohlt Verlag, Reinbek bei Hamburg 1995, pp. 100, 105.

<sup>5</sup> D. Czech, *Kalendarium der Ereignisse im Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau 1939-1945*, Rowohlt, Reinbek 1989, p. 335. D. Czech claims that this transport was received on November 8, 1942, coming "from the ghettos of the so-called administrative district Zichenau."

<sup>6</sup> *Auschwitz in den Augen der SS*, Staatliches Museum Auschwitz-Birkenau 1997, p. 164.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 335f.

<sup>8</sup> Regarding the actual meaning of this term see my study "Sonderbehandlung" ad Auschwitz. *Genesi e significato*, *op. cit.* (note 3), pp. 101-116.

<sup>9</sup> *Auschwitz in den Augen der SS*, *op. cit.* (note 6), p. 164.

<sup>10</sup> D. Czech, *op. cit.* (note 5), p. 416.

<sup>11</sup> See my article "Das Ghetto von Lodz in der Holocaust-Propaganda" in *Vierteljahreshfte für freie Geschichtsforschung*, 2(1) (2003), pp. 30-36; an English will soon appear in *The Revisionist*.

<sup>12</sup> S. Klarsfeld, *Le mémorial de la déportation des Juifs de France*. Edité et publié par Beate et Serge Klarsfeld, Paris 1978.

<sup>13</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 13 (my page numbers; the book has no pagination).

<sup>14</sup> Het Nederlandsche Roode Kruis. Auschwitz, Deel III. 's-Gravenhage, 1952, pp. 12-15

<sup>15</sup> L. Picciotto Fargion, *Il libro della memoria. Gli Ebrei deportati dall'Italia (1943-1945)*. Mursia, Milano 1991, pp. 62f.

<sup>16</sup> *Terezinská Pamětní Kniha*. Terezinská Iniziativa, Melantrich 1995, pp. 67-73 (transport list).

<sup>17</sup> D. Czech, *op. cit.* (note 5), pp. 488, 493.

<sup>18</sup> S. Klarsfeld, M. Steinberg, *Mémorial de la déportation des Juifs de Belgique*. The Beate Klarsfeld Foundation, New York 1994, p. 13.

<sup>19</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 45

<sup>20</sup> L. Picciotto Fargion, *op. cit.* (note 15), pp. 26, 32.

<sup>21</sup> The transfers took place on the following days: 22.5.1942, 30.6, 6.10, 21.10, 24.10, 24.10, 24.10, 25.10, 8.11, 26.6.1943, 1.7, 8.7, 11.7, 23.10, 17.12, 12.1.1944, 16.4, 29.4, 13.5, 29.7, 11.8, 22.8, 29.8, 11.10, 2.11. These transfers also included non-Jews.

<sup>22</sup> D. Czech, *op. cit.* (note 5), p. 842.

<sup>23</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 774. M. Kunicka-Wyrzykowska, *Kalendarium obozu plaszowskiego 1942-1945*, in: *Biuletyn Głównej Komisji Badania Zbrodni Hitlerowskich w Polsce*, XXXI, 1982, p. 68 (transport of 1,400 Jewesses).

<sup>24</sup> Rounded to 500.

<sup>25</sup> C. Mattogno, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 385.

<sup>26</sup> APMO, *Stärkemeldung*, D-AuII-3a, p. 53a.

<sup>27</sup> A. Strzelecki, *Endphase des KL Auschwitz*. Verlag Staatliches Museum Auschwitz-Birkenau 1995, p. 352.

<sup>28</sup> This figure results from a study of mine about Jews transferred to Auschwitz überstellten Juden, which will appear in a later issue of *The Revisionist*.

<sup>29</sup> *Sterbebuch* 1/1941, p. 1.

<sup>30</sup> RGVA, 502-4-48, p. 73.

<sup>31</sup> All these documents record deceased inmates in one way or another. First, a dead inmate would be listed as such in the "Stärkebuch" as a reduction of the camp's total inmate number. Next, this inmate would appear in the "Sterbebuch" or "Totenbuch," which lists all deceased inmates. The "Leichenhallenbuch" lists inmates as they are delivered and stored in a morgue before cremation. Death certificates, finally, are prepared by doctors and German registrar officials confirming the death and determining the reason of death for legal and general administrative purposes. Theoretically, each dead inmate should be mentioned in all of these documents. But since all of these documentations are fragmentary, they are often used for extrapolations to fill the gaps in the documentation. The editor.

<sup>32</sup> T. Grotum, J. Parcer, *EDV-gestützte Auswertung der Sterbeeinträge*, in: *Sterbebücher von Auschwitz*, edited by the State Museum Auschwitz-Birkenau, K.G.Saur; Munich/New Providence/London/Paris 1995, vol. I, p. 247.

<sup>33</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 242.

<sup>34</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 243.

<sup>35</sup> AGK, NTN, 131, p. 186.

<sup>36</sup> In the first edition of his book (*Auschwitz. Wieviele Juden, Polen, Zigeuner... wurden umgebracht*. Universitas, Krakau 1992, p. 45). F. Piper states that the Auschwitz Museum has three different calculations of the inmates transferred from Auschwitz in 1944 and 1945: the first is from A. Strzelecki (187,820 inmates), the second from L. Krysta (182,000 inmates), the third from S. Iwaszko (225,000 inmates). The third is closest to reality.

<sup>37</sup> AGK, NTN, 134, pp. 282 and 287.

<sup>38</sup> GARF, 7021-108-21.

<sup>39</sup> Verdict of the Höb trial (April 2, 1947). AGK, NTN, 146z, pp. 3, 6 and 29.

<sup>40</sup> J. Sehn, *Oświęcim-Brzezinka (Auschwitz-Birkenau) Concentration camp*. Wydawnictwo prawnicze, Warsaw 1961, p. 40.

<sup>41</sup> F. Piper, *Extermination*, in: J. Buszko (ed.), *Auschwitz (Oświęcim) Camp hitlerien d'extermination*, Editions Interpress, Warsaw 1978, p. 134.

<sup>42</sup> C. Mattogno, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 385.

<sup>43</sup> C. Mattogno, *op. cit.* (note 3), pp. 67-73; C. Mattogno, J. Graf, *Treblinka. Vernichtungslager oder Durchgangslager?* Castle Hill Publishers, Hastings 2002, pp. 312-315. This book will soon be published in English as *Treblinka. Extermination Camp or Transit Camp?*, Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago 2003.

<sup>44</sup> J.-C. Pressac, *Die Krematorien von Auschwitz. Die Technik des Massenmordes*, Piper Verlag, Munich-Zürich 1994, p. 202.

<sup>45</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 197.

<sup>46</sup> C. Mattogno, *op. cit.* (note 2), pp. 381f.

<sup>47</sup> J.-C. Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 44), pp. 200f.

<sup>48</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 195 and 202.

<sup>49</sup> C. Mattogno, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 387.

<sup>50</sup> F. Meyer, *Die Zahl der Opfer von Auschwitz. Neue Erkenntnisse durch neue Archivfunde*. In: *Osteuropa. Zeitschrift für Gegenwartsfragen des Ostens*, No. 5, May 2002, pp. 631-641

<sup>51</sup> See my article "Auschwitz. Fritjof Meyer's New Revisions", *TR* 1(1) (2003), pp. 30-37.

# SPONSORS WANTED DEAD OR ALIVE!

If you think that the entire content of **The Revisionist** should be made available **online** for the whole world to read and learn, and if you would be willing to donate for such an enterprise on a regular basis, we would very much appreciate if you got in touch with us:

Castle Hill Publishers, PO Box 257768, Chicago, IL 60625, [chp@vho.org](mailto:chp@vho.org), ph: (773) 769 1121



# What Was Kulmhof/Chelmno?

## Questions about a controversial extermination camp

By Ingrid Weckert

Up to now, no monograph has appeared about the alleged National Socialist 'extermination camp' Kulmhof/Chelmno. The reason for this may lie partially in the extremely difficult evidentiary situation, which relies exclusively on witness testimonies. The book *Nationalsozialistische Massentötungen durch Giftgas*, edited by Eugen Kogon, Hermann Langbein, Adalbert Rückerl et al. and published in 1983 by the S. Fischer Verlag in Frankfurt a.M., serves as a basis for the following description. This presentation is supplemented with quotations from other standard works of the 'Holocaust' literature. The author could not do her own research at the actual location. This article is therefore only a summary and critical review of published reports about Kulmhof/Chelmno. The main purpose is above all to show that the Kulmhof orthodoxy is quite needy for research and revision.

### A Note for the German Public Prosecutor

The following investigation is not 'pseudo-scientific,' as the works of Revisionists are usually rated by German public prosecutors, but a serious attempt to help clarify the events about the alleged 'extermination camp' Kulmhof/Chelmno. It is not my fault that I can only submit the questionable parts of the works existing so far on this subject. It is quite evident that historical research has so far neglected to seriously investigate Kulmhof/Chelmno. I hope that the summary of all unclear and contradictory witness testimony, of allegations and conclusions will encourage historians and other interested groups to try to find out the truth. If there was an extermination camp in Kulmhof/Chelmno where thousands of people perished, then the respect for these victims alone should be sufficient reason to fight through the undergrowth of uncertain memories, pure assumptions, rumors, and suppositions in order to find historical truth.

This article does not present revisionist research results. It merely repeats the reproaches and accusations, which are connected with the complex Kulmhof/Chelmno. Similar to the authors quote, I have no intention to deny or to minimize mass crimes. I simply conclude what every reader will understand after he has studied the arguments submitted: The research situation about this topic is still completely unsatisfying. Questions and doubts raised by the contradictory contents of the works published so far merely nurture the distrust of the skeptics in this type of description.

Historiography is about researching historic occurrences and courses of events. It is my desire that this should also apply to the events at Kulmhof/Chelmno.

### 1. Introduction

According to mainstream sources, a small town in Poland, about 50 km north-west of Lodz, was a terrible extermination camp of the National Socialists: Kulmhof, or Polish Chelmno. An unknown number of Jews were allegedly brought here for the sole purpose to be killed. Contrary to other German camps, the victims here allegedly did not even have the chance to survive in some work commando. The Jewish work commando, which existed here as well, had only the task to put the corpses of their murdered brothers into the ground in gigantic mass graves or to cremate them. After the work was finished, the so-called gravediggers were murdered themselves. The three or

four survivors of Kulmhof/Chelmno claim that they owe their survival to the fact that they could escape.

The scheme, as described to us in *Massentötungen*, is very simple: The Jewish population of Lodz and the surrounding area were transported via railroad to the vicinity of Kulmhof, then continued to Kulmhof itself by truck. At Kulmhof, an SS-unit had converted the former palace building into a killing station. The victims entered the building, undressed, and walked through a basement passage straight into a gas truck, which was parked close to a side exit. After the truck was filled with people, the doors were closed, the engine started, and the exhaust fumes, which were piped into the interior, killed the victims. Afterwards, the truck drove to a small forest, where a Jewish work commando emptied the truck and first stacked the corpses in large pits, but later cremated them in self-made 'ovens' erected just for that purpose. The ashes were scattered, buried, or poured into the rivers Ner or Warthe.

### 2. Planning and Early Phase of the Extermination Camp

The quoted sources do not agree whether Kulmhof/Chelmno or a similar installation in Semlin was the first death camp built by the National Socialists. Reitlinger<sup>1</sup> mentions both possibilities (p. 152). Other authors are certain: The first extermination camp was erected in Kulmhof/Chelmno, (Dawidowicz, *Krieg*,<sup>2</sup> p. 125; Sereny, *Abgrund*,<sup>3</sup> p. 98). While Dawidowicz emphasizes that the camp was for the destruction of the Jews from the ghetto of Lodz, Sereny and also Reitlinger think (p. 153) that it was originally planned as a euthanasia-institute.

#### 2.1. LETTER FROM ROLF-HEINZ HÖPPNER

In order to prove that Chelmno was a planned and carefully prepared matter, *Massentötungen* (p. 110f.) quotes a letter by the SS-*Sturmbannführer* Rolf-Heinz Höppner to Adolf Eichmann dated July 16, 1941, in which Höppner informs Eichmann of a danger that the Jews "will not all be able to be fed." He therefore thinks that it should be "seriously considered whether it would not be a more humane solution to finish off the Jews with some fast effective means, as far as they are not able to work." As a source for this document, *Massentötungen* quotes the "Archive of the Polish Main-Commission for the Investigation of National socialistic Crimes" in Warsaw, Vol. III.

The text of the same document, which is marked not as a letter but as a file memo, is found in Rückerl,<sup>4</sup> p. 256f. The source given is again the above-mentioned Polish Archive, except that it is now Volume XIII (instead of III). Although it is the same reference, the text is not the same. Besides of two missing lines, *Massentötungen* has seven linguistic and textual differences as compared with the Rückerl book. But what is more serious is that *Massentötungen* is completely silent about the fact that this note, including the accompanying letter to Eichmann, exists only in non-signed copies, and that Höppner firmly contested after the war that this note is from him (Rückerl, p. 256f.)

## 2.2. THE SONDERKOMMANDO (SK) KULMHOF/CHELMNO

The murders in Kulmhof/Chelmo were allegedly done by an SS-Sonderkommando, which is presented to us with the most diverse names. *Massentötungen* decided to call it “Sonderkommando (SK) Kulmhof/Chelmo” or also “SK Lange” or “SK Bothmann” after the *Kommandoführer* at the time (*Massentötungen*, p. 116). Other authors, however, know only “SK

Bothmann” (Reitlinger, p.153, 280; Nellesen,<sup>6</sup> p. 240). A former member of this Kommando, who should actually have known best, claimed that it was called “Einsatzkommando Heinrich Himmler” (Rückerl, p. 243).

*Massentötungen* writes that the first Kommandoführer was Hauptsturmführer Herbert Lange (p. 111). Other authors contradict this statement. One version says that the first Kommandoführer was Christian Wirth (Sereny, *Abgrund* p. 98, 127). Rückerl (p. 334) thinks that the Sonderkommando was directly under Artur Greiser, Gauleiter and Reichsstatthalter in the Reichsgau Wartheland.

The composition of the Kommando is as controversial as its name. Some see in it the group of people who are claimed to have already worked together in the so-called “Aktion T 4,” the killing of incurable mentally sick (Reitlinger, p. 153; Dawidowicz, *Krieg*, p. 126); others maintain that the crew received their “training for mass murder” in East Prussia, (Laqueur,<sup>7</sup> p. 159), while Hilberg found that the core of the Kommando was simply recruited from the Gestapo in Posen and Lodz, (Hilberg, *Vernichtung*,<sup>8</sup> p. 603). *Massentötungen*, on the other hand, says

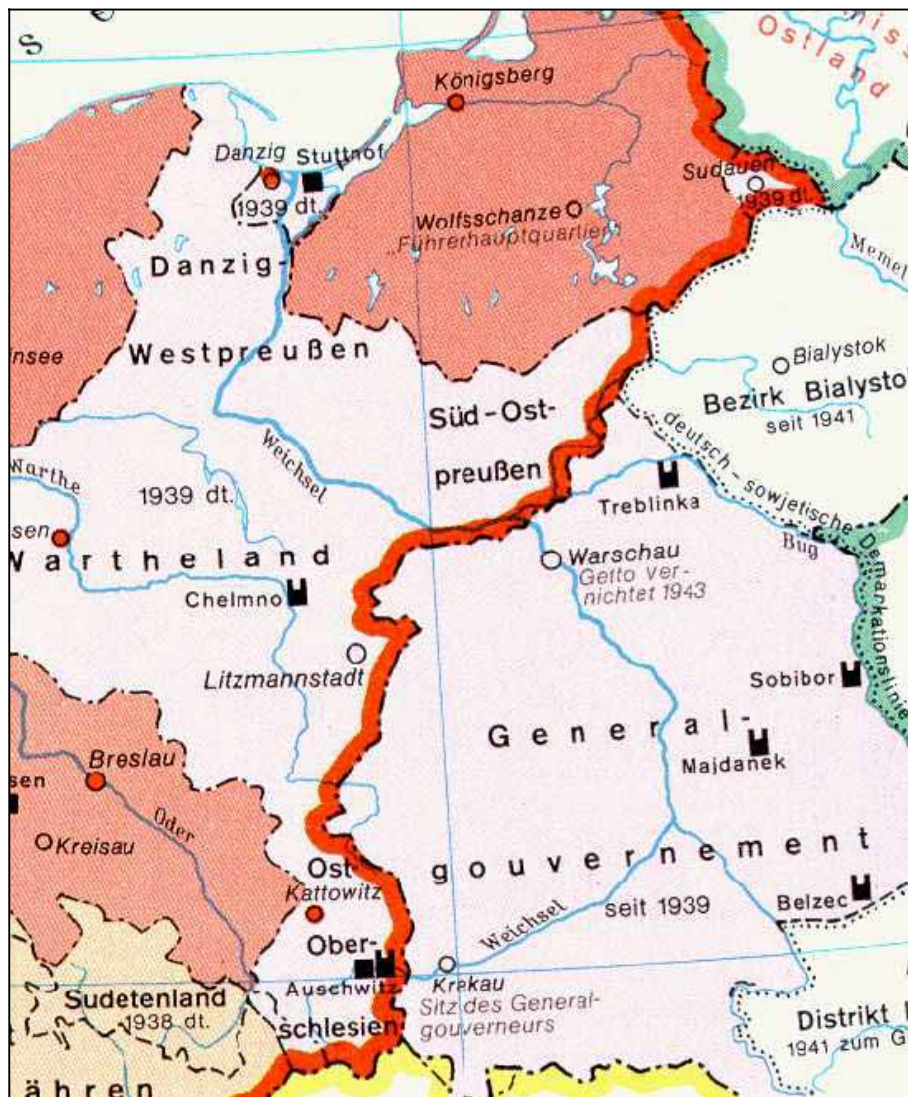
that the men of the Kommando consisted of members of the *Sicherheitspolizei* and of the *Schutzpolizeikommando* (p. 116).

The relations with the local population, mainly ethnic German settlers relocated from the Volhynia area, were evidently good, even friendly. Men worked for the SS unit and young women from the village were employed in the cafeteria (*Massentötungen*, p. 134; Reitlinger, p. 280).

During the Nuremberg Tribunal, however, it was maintained that the inhabitants of the neighboring village were evacuated before the erection of the extermination station. (*IMT*,<sup>9</sup> Vol. VIII, p. 363). But since the same residents of the village later appeared as witnesses who testified under oath, there is an unsolvable contradiction between this allegation and the witness testimony, because they could not have made any observations and later testified about them, if they had been evacuated.

## 3. The Town Kulmhof/Chelmo and its Palace

Kulmhof/Chelmo, as we read in the various Holocaust textbooks, was a small town at the river Ner, a tributary of the Warthe close to the direct railroad line Warsaw – Posen – Berlin. According to the declarations of various authors, it was 40, 55 or 60 km northwest of Lodz.<sup>10</sup> Other publications, however, claim that the horrific deeds did not occur in Kulmhof/Chelmo but in Cholm = Chelm, a larger town about 350 km east from it, south of Sobibor and east of Lublin.<sup>11</sup> Lichtenstein based his investigations on the plans of the *Deutsche Reichs-*



Location of the six NS camps generally designated as 'Extermination Camps': Chelmo, Treblinka, Sobibor, Majdanek, Belzec and Auschwitz; Chelmo allegedly was the smallest and 'most insignificant' one of all.<sup>5</sup>

*bahn* and the *Ostbahn* (the name for the *Reichsbahn* in occupied Poland) and tried to prove mass murder in Chelmno by pointing to its railroad connection to Cholm.

The center of the murder action allegedly was, as already mentioned, the former manor of the Polish domain Kulmhof/Chelmno, which was also designated as "Palace". According to sketches of the town, which Ruckerl published in *NS-Vernichtungslager* (p. 261), this building was in the center of the town at the crossing of two streets. Church, pub, school, and administration buildings were all in immediate vicinity.

Several authors had evidently a different idea on how such a building, "the first murder factory of human history" (Höhne<sup>12</sup>, p. 343), had to appear. Höhne, for example, looks for the palace "in the forests of Kulmhof [...] secluded, as if created for its bestial mission" (p. 343). Reitlinger talks of "an old building known as the 'Palace', of which exists an incredibly horrible photograph" (Reitlinger, p. 153). He unfortunately does not say where this incredibly horrible picture can be seen.

The SS had this old building with the attached park repaired by Polish prisoners. A wooden fence, taller than men, was allegedly erected around the whole area, so that nobody could look at the interior from the outside. Arriving vehicles had to stop before the wooden gate, the drivers had to get out, and men of the SS-Kommando drove the car into the fenced in area (*IMT*, VIII, p. 363; Klee, p. 371; *Massentötungen*, p. 114; Ruckerl, p. 266, 268).

#### 4. Beginning of the Extermination Actions in Kulmhof/Chelmno

Is evidently not exactly known when exactly the camp began with its extermination actions. Dawidowicz writes that gassing experts had already arrived in the early fall of 1941 and that there was at least one "gassing truck" in Chelmno. (*Krieg*, p. 126), but on a page before and after it she says that the gas trucks of Chelmno "started to operate" exactly on December 8, 1941 (*Krieg*, p. 125, 278). The Polish investigation commissions, however, came to the conclusion, that the extermination camp Chelmno had already started its sinister operation in October 1941 (Reitlinger, p. 274). Reitlinger does not offer any proof for this. Lichtenstein shares this opinion (p. 40). Laqueur (p. 159), Hilberg (*Destruction*, p. 604), Poliakov<sup>13</sup> (p. 192), Sereny (*Abgrund*, p. 113), Höhne (p. 343), Ruckerl (p. 268), and Klee (p. 371) asserted the beginning for December 1941.

Ruckerl writes:

"After Jews were taken by truck from the closer vicinity to Chelmno from December 5, 1941, to the middle of January 1942, the transports from the ghetto began on January 16, 1942" (p. 276)

That Jewish inhabitants were also taken from towns around Lodz to Chelmno is not uniformly reported, as the following American study proves. The New York magazine *Jewish Frontier* published an article in November 1942 with the title "The Extermination Center". The article is about Chelmno and is based on a document, which the magazine received from the Polish-Jewish worker's association *Bund*. This association claims that it received the document from the Jewish documentation center *Oneg Shabbat* in the Warsaw ghetto. There are two versions on how this center received its documentation on

Kulmhof/Chelmno: Either one refugee from the Kulmhof camp, Jakov Grojanowski, fled to the Warsaw ghetto and brought the report, which he wrote himself, completed in his pocket (*Massentötungen*, p. 131). Or several Kulmhof refugees arrived and reported their experiences to assistants of the head of this center, Dr. Emanuel Ringelblum (Laqueur, p. 139). They then prepared the report.

In this report, which was prepared by or according to eye-witnesses, it says that the Jewish population of the vicinity of Lodz was *not* transported to Chelmno, but to the forests of Zagorow in the time between October 1941 and the beginning of January 1942. There they disappeared without a trace. Only the Jews from Lodz came to Chelmno and were killed there. According to this description, these transports began on January 15, 1942.

Ruckerl, however, believes (in addition or in contradiction to his statement on p. 276, which was quoted above) that the Jews from the vicinity of Lodz were transported to Chelmno "a few in the month of March and a large quantity in the month of April 1942" (p. 278, note 72).

January 16, 1942, is the day when the first transport departed from the ghetto Lodz. All authors also agree that there is no documentary proof that the transports from Lodz actually went to Kulmhof/Chelmno.<sup>14</sup> This date is occasionally mentioned as the actual start of the murder actions in Chelmno (Nellessen, 57).

#### 5. Arrival of the Victims

According to the presented descriptions, the Jewish population was transported from Lodz and the surrounding areas to Kulmhof/Chelmno in order to be murdered there. The transportation routes were precisely but inconsistently described in the various studies.

The authors do not agree about where the victims were transported by railroad. Either to Warthbrücken/Kolo, a town on the main railroad line Lodz-Posen, and from there by truck to Kulmhof/Chelmno, or to Powiercie (German: Pauers), a small town on the secondary railroad line Warthbrücken – Dabie/Deuscheneck and from there by truck to Kulmhof/Chelmno (Hilberg, *Destruction*<sup>15</sup> (p. 625); Hilberg, *Vernichtung* (p. 656); *Massentötungen* (p. 116, 119, 120); Ruckerl (p. 277)), or directly by railroad to Kulmhof/Chelmno (Höhne (p. 343), (p. 277).

Ruckerl and Hilberg (in *Vernichtung*), who refers to Ruckerl, try to bring order to this mess by putting together a time schedule and listing the various transports for the various dates. But these efforts do not convince, because the dates, which the witnesses testified to, unfortunately contradict each other. Some stated that at the beginning of the transports in early 1942 the Jews were discharged in Warthbrücken and ten transports – either spent the night there in the Synagogue (Hilberg, *Vernichtung*, p. 656; Ruckerl, p. 277), or marched to the market place in Warthbrücken and there were picked up by trucks (Ruckerl, p. 277). *Massentötungen* for example alleges that the victims were actually driven up to Powiercie in January/February 1942, then marched to Zawadki and stayed there overnight in a mill (p. 120). However, four pages earlier (p. 116) it is stated that the transports did not spend the night in the mill in Janu-



ary/February but rather from March to July 1942, for which a separate “mill guard” was commanded. A witness quoted by Ruckerl, on the other hand (p. 277f.), says that the people stayed overnight only from March to May 1942, *i.e.*, not until July, in the mill of Zawadka (the name of this town is spelled differently by the various witnesses: Dawadki, Zawacki, Zawadki, Zawadka). Hilberg, however, thinks (*Vernichtung*, p. 656) that the Jews did not stay overnight in a mill but in a factory in Zawacki. There are clearly as many opinions as there are witnesses.

Gilbert describes the following events, which allegedly occurred in early December 1941:

*“The Jews were taken by narrow-track railroad from Kolo to Powierce, then driven with whips to the river, there locked into the factory of the village Zawadki [...] without food and water overnight, were taken the next morning with trucks to the forest of Chelmno and during the trip asphyxiated with exhaust fumes. [...] A total of five trucks were thus employed.”* (Gilbert,<sup>16</sup> p. 83)

This description, however, does not agree with the customary stories. According to them, the victims were murdered in the yard of the palace in 1941. And the number of gas vans was two or three, not five.

Just where in Kulmhof/Chelmno they finally arrived is not clear either. According to most allegations, they were driven by truck into the palace, but there are also reports according to which they were discharged in front of the church or the wheat silo (*Massentötungen*, p. 119).

One witness of the transports of Jewish victims to Warthbrücken/Kolo in *Massentötungen*, a Polish railroad employee, observed testified before a Polish court what he claims to have observed:

*“In the summer of 1942, a daily train (the same wagons) traveled for several months between Lodz and Kolo. This train consisted of twenty closed, mostly 15 tons freight wagons. [...] The wagons were jam-packed. [Could the railroad employee look into the inside of the closed wagons?] In the beginning I counted, how often the train of the described composition brought Jews to Kolo. I counted 101, [i.e. 101 days. During three months] but I stopped counting when I saw that the transports to Chelmno did not come to an end.”* (p. 121)

This recorded statement is contradicted by a table, which originates from the notes taken by the *Judenrat* (council of Jews) in Lodz and which shows that between May 15 and September 5, 1942, *i.e.*, during those summer months of which the railroad employee talked, the evacuations of Lodz were halted (*Massentötungen*, p. 132). Other publications dealing with the resettlement of the Jews of Lodz also refer to the notes made by

the *Judenrat* of Lodz and consider them as reliable (for example Ruckerl, p. 276f., 288; Hilberg, *Vernichtung*, p. 361).

## 6. Arrival of the Victims

According to explanations by witnesses, the discharge of the victims after their arrival in Kulmhof/Chelmno occurred in various ways. One witness could not remember:

*“I don’t know exactly where the trucks were unloaded. I believe that in the beginning the transports were discharged in front of the church in Chelmno and later in front of the silo.”* (*Massentötungen*, p. 119)

Others state that the arrival first gave a friendly appearance:

*“In order to enforce the impression that the arrivals would be treated well, they were also often assisted when leaving the vehicles.”* (Ruckerl, p. 269)

But this appearance was completely undone, because they “were driven by police officers with leather whips through the gate into the interior of the palace yard”, (*Massentötungen*, p. 119). Later the trucks drove right away through the gate of the wooden wall into the palace yard (*Massentötungen*, p. 119;

*IMT*, Vol. VIII, p. 363). Ruckerl combined both versions and thinks that always only one truck entered the palace yard, while the others had to wait outside (p. 269).

Assembled in the palace yard, they were greeted by the leader of the commando or his deputy or some other member of the commando with friendly words, who explained:

*“they were to work in Germany, but first had to take a bath and hand in their clothes for disinfections.”* (Ruckerl, p. 269)

The descriptions by Laqueur (p. 160), Nellessen (p.

56f., 139), Klee (p. 371), in *Massentötungen* (p. 122, 140f.) and in the documentations of the Nuremberg trials (*IMT* Vol. VIII, p. 363) sound similar. This is one of the few points in the history of Kulmhof, in which all depositions conform.

But in the continuation of the events the memories or the procedures varied continuously. The Jews were requested to take off their clothes and jewelries and to hand in their papers and valuables. For this they were brought a) “into a building” (Nellessen, p. 57); b) into the hall of the palace (*Massentötungen*, p. 123) or “into a hallway” (Nellessen, p. 139); c) “into a large well heated room” (Laqueur, p. 160), to the second floor of the villa (*IMT*, Vol. VIII, p. 363) or “in a higher located room” (*Massentötungen*, p. 117); d) “in a larger room in the back” (Ruckerl, p. 269); or e) in two rooms (*Massentötungen*, p. 122, 124)

## 7. Murdering the Victims

A ramp was allegedly built at a side exit of the palace, which was additionally obscured with a view-blocking wooden



*“Deported Jews at their arrival in the death camp Chelmno where many were killed in gas vans. Jewish Historical Institute, Warsaw, Poland.”<sup>17</sup> This is the only allegedly authentic photo document of Chelmno known to us.*

wall, although the whole area was already fenced in (Klee, p. 371; *Massentötungen*, p. 123, 125f.; Ruckerl, p. 266, 270). After the people were undressed, they marched under guard along a hallway in the basement of the palace, which led to a truck parked at the side of the palace at the ramp. When the truck was full, the rear doors were closed, the exhaust fume hose screwed to a special device and the motor started. The inmates were killed within minutes by the exhaust fumes, which were entering the wagon. (Nellessen, p. 139f; Ruckerl, p. 271, 291). Other authors, however, maintain that there were repeated breakdowns of the equipment and that the whole procedure was not very effective (Klee, p. 371; Höß, p. 162; Sereny, *Abgrund*, p. 127; Reitlinger, p. 154f).

*"The naked people then had to enter the gas trucks over the ramp. This was always backed-up by the driver against the opening at the ramp, so that after opening the wing doors a totally closed space was created on the ramp, with the floor at the same height with the gas truck floor, completely closed."* (Ruckerl, p. 270)

*"After the wing doors were opened, a completely closed space was created on the ramp, which could not be viewed from the outside."* (*Massentötungen*, p. 126)

Although the ramp could not be seen, *Massentötungen* and Ruckerl quote witnesses, who could observe from the outside events that occurred on the ramp.

*"I went to the right side of the palace, as I was ordered, where a gas truck stood at the already mentioned ramp. [...] I saw how the Jews were led into the basement and climbed over the ramp into the open gas truck."* (*Massentötungen*, p. 125)

Yes, a guard was even posted outside the ramp, although he could not see a thing from there and, as alleged by *Massentötungen*, the victims could not escape anyway. Where could they have gone, completely naked and inside of a fenced-in area guarded by the SS?

*"While the Jews walked over the ramp, they were, beside the Poles and police guards who accompanied them, supervised by another police guard, who stood outside the ramp next to the gas truck in order to encounter attempts to escape."* (Ruckerl, p. 270)

It is a riddle, how the guard could "supervise" something through view-blocking fence boards.

After all victims were dead, the truck drove to the forest, where the bodies were thrown into pits. During his trials in Jerusalem, Adolf Eichmann described the scene completely differently:

*"The Jews had to undress. A truck came, closed on all sides, the door opening in the front. The wagon drove to a*

*certain roadblock. There the naked Jews were forced to enter. The doors were closed and the truck took off."* (Hausner, *Justice*,<sup>18</sup> p. 89)

This was a completely new type of truck, which was loaded from the front – through the driver compartment? And the whole thing occurred evidently in the center of the town, "at a certain roadblock", where the naked Jews had to wait for the arrival of the wagon. In the German abbreviated edition of this work,<sup>19</sup> the translator (or the publisher) did not dare to present this unbelievable story to his readers. There the trucks drove to the "ramps" and let the Jewish victims enter there (p. 105). The version Eichmann told during police interrogations prior to his trial was again somewhat different. The interrogations were in German and the protocol tapes were published.<sup>20</sup> It says there:

*"In the fall of 1941 [...] I was sent to Chulm in the Warthegau. [...] I saw the following: A room, maybe if I remember correctly five times as large as this one here, with Jews inside. They had to undress and a truck came which was completely closed, the doors were opened and sort of pulled into a ramp. And the naked Jews had to enter.*

*Then the wagon was closed and took off."* (p. 71)

If Eichmann testified to this also during the trial, then serious translation errors must have occurred, that the Israeli general attorney Hausner could have misunderstood him so.

#### 7.1. THE GAS VANS OF KULMHOF/CHELMNO

It is reported about Kulmhof/Chelmno, that it was a "Gas van station". And it's gas trucks were those 'Sonderwagen' (special wagons) of the *Reichssicherheitshauptamt* (Reich Security Main Office, RSHA), which we already exposed several



*An alleged "killing gas van" of Chelmno.<sup>22</sup> This wrongful designation by Gerald Fleming<sup>23</sup> was already in 1988 corrected by Ingrid Weckert: There exists no source for this picture of a damaged German truck of unknown use.<sup>24</sup>*

times.<sup>21</sup>

Among others things, a document dated June 5, 1942, from the German *Bundesarchiv* in Koblenz with the archival number R 58/871 serves as proof for the gas van thesis. This is an 'Aktenvermerk' (file memo) of the RSHA. I showed elsewhere that this 'document' is a complete forgery.<sup>21</sup>

This note starts as follows:

*"Since December 1941, for example, 97 000 were processed with the use of 3 vehicles, without any defects in the vehicles becoming apparent. The known explosion in Kulmhof should be considered as an exception. Its cause can be attributed to incorrect operation."*

Ruckerl writes about this (p. 291):

*"This part of the secret note obviously refers to the camp Chelmno, because it correctly states the beginning of the extermination action (December 1941) as well as the number of gas vans (three deployed vans) and connects these statements directly with the explosion of a gas van in Chelmno."*

“Since December 1941 [...] with 3 deployed vans”. In the chapter about the origin of the gas trucks, *Massentötungen* explained that at this time, December 1941, the delivery of the Saurer-vehicle chassis was still being negotiated and were then, after delivery, to be equipped with a body by the firm Gaub-schat. The completed trucks could therefore not have been delivered prior to spring 1942. How was it then possible that three of these vans were already in operation since December 1941?

“97,000 were processed”. Even under the presupposition of a camouflage language, this formulation cannot imply a murder. The number of 97,000 furthermore contradicts the statistic by Rückerl as adopted in the conclusion of *Massentötungen* (p. 132) of the deportations from Lodz, which are generally equated with the murder victims of Kulmhof/Chelmno. Rückerl says (p. 276) that until the end of May 1942 some 55,000 Jews were deported from Lodz. This number should have been in the *Aktenvermerk* of June 5, 1942, if it is really about the murder victims of Kulmhof/Chelmno.

“The known explosion in Kulmhof”. As a matter of fact, there exists no information at all about such an explosion anywhere, except in this note.

*Massentötungen* does not doubt in any way that the gas trucks of Kulmhof/Chelmno are those ‘Sonderwagen’ (special vans) of the RSHA, which were thoroughly discussed elsewhere.<sup>21</sup>

“*The Kommando received gas vans from Berlin.*” (p. 114)

“*They appeared to be new and came to us [...] from the Reichssicherheitshauptamt.*” (p. 115)

The reader is quite surprised, when he learns between these two sentences:

“*The vans were medium Renault-trucks with gasoline engine.*” (p. 114)

How so? The RSHA had Saurer trucks with Diesel engines modified to gas trucks. Where do the Renault vehicles with gasoline engines come from so suddenly? By the way, Eichmann also said:

“*Experiments were made in the vicinity of Lublin [...] about killing people with the exhaust fumes of a U-boat Diesel engine. The latest inventions, which were used at that time, were movable gas trucks, which were first utilized in the extermination camp Chelm (Kulm).*” (Hausner, *Vernichtung*, p. 105)

## 7.2. MASS GRAVES AND CREMATION OVENS

In order to take care of the corpses, the SS had mass graves excavated. A certain area in a close-by forest was reserved. There the Jewish inmates, the so-called forest Kommando, had to do this work.

One of the survivors of Kulmhof/Chelmno reported about this as a witness during the Eichmann trial in Jerusalem:

“*There we had to dig trenches, about 25 people had to dig. We went out there early in the morning, it was still dark, at six-thirty, it was winter, you know, the end of 1941, two days before New Year.*” (Nellessen, p. 140)

The prosecutor did not like it that these were trenches. He suggested more precisely:

“*They dug graves.*”

The Jewish witness, survivor of terrible events, does not object. And why should he?

So they dug trenches in the middle of winter, when the earth was frozen hard like stone. Rückerl thought that that was not a reasonable job for the prisoners. Therefore he had large pits excavated with excavators (Rückerl, p. 268).

Krausnick/Wilhelm<sup>25</sup> explain that the idea of digging graves at that time is nonsensical: “The severe frost which soon after [November 1941] started” resulted in “the excavation of the mass graves being too difficult” and the actions had to be stopped (p. 547).

There is no agreement about how many such mass graves existed. One witness talks about two, another four, a third of three or four. They do not agree about length, width and depth of the graves.

One witness, whose testimony is quoted by *Massentötungen*, talks about graves each 10 m wide and 3 m deep; three pits were 30 m, one 12 m long (*Massentötungen*, p. 115). He also maintains that the graves were located in three different clearings of the forest; some were so narrow that the gas trucks could not even drive to the side of the pits in order to discharge their load.

Another witness thinks that the graves were about 6-8 m wide, but 4 m deep (Rückerl, p. 272); a third makes them 4 m wide, 3 m deep and 5 m long (Rückerl, p. 274). Laqueur (p. 160) talks of a pit almost 2 m wide and 5 m deep. Other authors abstain from any opinion about the size of the pits and only talk briefly about “mass grave” (Klee, p. 372) or “mass graves” (Reitlinger, p. 153, 279).

In the summer of 1942, the mass graves lead to serious difficulties:

“*At several places [...] blood bubbled out in thick streams [...] and formed large puddles near the grave.*” (Rückerl, pp. 273f.)

Gases from the corpses escaped from the graves, and a strong odor from the decomposing corpses was noticeable (Klee, p. 372; Rückerl, p. 273). The corpses were therefore disinterred and cremated, initially in open pits, later in self-made ‘ovens.’

“*In the summer of 1942, they began to open the graves and to cremate the bodies.*”

This according to an eyewitness of Rückerl (p. 273). Another witness, quoted by the same Rückerl a few lines earlier, thinks that this started only in the fall of 1942. Klee, who talks smartly of “*ausbuddeln*” (dig out) also is for the fall (p. 372), and so is Hilberg (*Vernichtung*, p. 661). Rückerl evidently concludes from the contradictory testimonies of his witnesses that they were both wrong and moved the disinterment of the corpses to the winter months. His notes are:

“*From the end of 1942 to the spring of 1943 [...] the corpses, which were buried in mass graves, were dug out again and cremated, the pits were then leveled in.*” (p. 280)

Next, the disinterred corpses had to be cremated. *Massentötungen* gives us the following version about this: In the forest camp

“*two cremation ovens were erected, which were designed by Polizei-Oberleutnant Gustav H. [...] The cremation ovens had a width of 10 m and a length of 5-6 m. They*

did not extend outside of the earth. They had no chimneys. They tapered downwards where the gratings were located, which consisted of railroad tracks.” (p. 115)

The co-editor of *Massentötungen*, Adalbert Rückerl tells us a completely different story in his *NS-Vernichtungslager*. Version number two: They did not build cremation ovens immediately, but the corpses were first burned in four pits, 5 by 4 m large.

“The corpses from the mass graves were placed in these pits in layers, covered with a powder and set on fire.” (p. 274)

Further, there was a cremation oven that consisted of an open pit with several railroad tracks as a grating (Rückerl, p. 273). A large oven was built later – one oven, not two – and this oven had a chimney 4 to 5 m tall (Rückerl, p. 274) contrary to the testimony of the witness from *Massentötungen*, who emphasized that there were no chimneys.

But there is still a third version about the cremation of the corpses: Here the main person is infamous SS-*Standartenführer* Paul Blobel with his “disinterment commando 1005”. This Kommando was allegedly created by Reinhard Heydrich shortly before his death (June 4, 1942) specifically for the purpose to eradicate all traces of mass graves and corpses in the occupied eastern territories (Reitlinger, p. 153).

Blobel with his men – Jewish forced laborers, which he continuously received from the Auschwitz camp, because those Jews were always shot after finishing a section (Höß,<sup>26</sup> p. 162) – started the job and began to “*ausbuddeln*” (dig out) the corpses in Kulmhof/Chelmno, according to Klee (p. 372), against Rückerl, who maintained that the Jewish Sonderkommando in the forest camp performed this work (p. 273). And then Blobel started to experiment.

“He erected pyres and primitive ovens and even tried it with dynamiting.” (Hilberg, *Vernichtung*, p. 661)

“But this was only partially successful” said Höß (p. 162), who nevertheless went to Kulmhof/Chelmno in order to “observe Blobel’s unsuccessful attempts to make the mass graves disappear with the help of dynamite” (Reitlinger, p. 153). Reitlinger continues:

“This method was used, because Himmler [...] gave Blobel the order to also destroy the ashes of the dead.”

Because evidently this method did not succeed and the corpses did not disappear completely:

“Blobel also used a bone grinder.” (Reitlinger, p. 153)

But eventually, one managed somehow to turn the corpses into ashes because these ashes were then

- a. “scattered in the extended forests” (Höß, p. 162);
- b. “buried in the pits or poured into the river” (Nellessen, p. 57) or
- c. “filled in large bags and buried or poured into the Ner” (Rückerl, p. 273) or
- d. “poured into the Warthe from a bridge at night” (Klee, p. 372)

After that, the forest was swept clean (Klee, p. 372).

### 7.3. CHILDREN AND RUSSIANS

*Massentötungen* reports about children transports to Kulmhof/Chelmno from Czechoslovakia, from Poland and from the

Soviet Union (p. 133). The two witnesses who are quoted, however, know of only one transport with children. There were three trucks with about 200 children, says one witness, and that happened in the summer of 1942. The other witness reports that the children did not look Jewish at all but rather Polish. Rückerl also mentions this transport. He estimates the number not at 200, but talks of 50-75 children at the age of 4-14 years:

“The children transport consisted allegedly, according to Polish investigations, of children from Lidice, who could not be Germanized.” (Rückerl, p. 280, Note 76)

He adds that proof for this does not exist.

The files of Yad Vashem, Jerusalem, actually contain a written correspondence dated from July 4 to 25, 1942, exactly within the time frame mentioned in *Massentötungen*, about a group of “children from the Protectorat Böhmen and Mähren who could not be Germanized.”<sup>27</sup> But this were neither 200 nor 75, but only 12 children at the age from 1 to 15 years, whose full names, date of birth, place of birth, and addresses were listed. These children were sent to the Gestapo in Litzmannstadt (Lodz) for further accommodation. No further information comes from the correspondence. A witness alleges in *Massentötungen* that these children were also killed in Kulmhof/Chelmno.

A group of Russian POW’s is mentioned also in the context of alleged murder of non-Jewish persons. One day, also in the summer of 1942, two trucks with “some military people” allegedly arrived, which the observing witness recognized as Russian POW’s by their light green uniforms. The trucks stopped in front of the fenced-in palace area. The soldiers stayed inside the trucks. Two drivers of the Sonderkommando replaced the truck drivers and continued driving the truck into the direction of the forest. After 25 minutes, the truck returned empty. So per the witness. *Massentötungen* concludes:

“The largest part of them was [...] gassed, the rest was shot.” (*Massentötungen*, p. 134f.)

The authors do not disclose the source of their knowledge.

The Polish witness who observed the arrival of the trucks was a resident of Warthbrücken and worked for a *Sonderkommando*: He filled straw bags. It is difficult to believe that he did this on the open highway. He probably performed this activity in the area of the palace yard, which was fenced-in with a very tall board fence, as we are told. The trucks with the Russians parked outside the gate. Under these circumstances, the witness could at best listen to the noises of the vehicles, but it would have been impossible for them to see anything because of the board fence. Nevertheless, he not only described the uniforms exactly, but claimed also to know that one of the soldiers seated in the truck and who did not leave the truck had only one leg. He could therefore not only look through the board fence, but also through the side walls of the truck. Could it be that he only gave his deposition because they were later useful to him, a Polish collaborator, when the times were different?

*Massentötungen* claims that the Russians were driven in their truck to the forest where some of them were ‘gassed.’ The authors do not explain how this was done, since the specially prepared gas trucks were parked at the palace and the Soldiers did not transfer the inmates from their truck into the

gas trucks. It is not clear, why only some of the Russians should have been ‘gassed,’ but the rest shot.

## 8. The Spoils

While undressing, the victims had to hand over their jewelry and other valuables as well as their money, so we are told. This was allegedly done under supervision. Finger rings were nonetheless removed later from the corpses (*Massentötungen*, p. 117; Ruckerl, p. 272; Nellessen, p. 57, 140).

Special Kommandos were deployed to count and sort the jewelry and valuables. Gold teeth, which were removed from the corpses, were carried in bags from the forest to the palace.

*“The collected valuables of the victims (jewelry, watches, coins, gold teeth, fur coats, and others) were sorted, registered, and then sent to the ghetto administration in Lodz, the same with the money, which at the end of the extermination activities amounted to a total of 2,650,000 Reichsmark.”* (Ruckerl, p. 272f.)

This large booty from the claimed murder actions is surprising, as the victims of the deportations from Lodz did not belong to the wealthier part of society. The head of the *Judenrat* (council of Jews) in Lodz, Chaim Rumkowski, who compiled the lists of deportations, followed the dictum: Away with the bad ones.

*“I solved the problem in such a way that I assigned that part for deportation which was a festering ulcer to the ghetto. The list contained convicts of the underworld,<sup>28</sup> the scum, and several individuals who were harmful to the ghetto.”* (Dawidowicz, *Krieg*, p. 279)

After criminals and ‘undesirable persons’ had been deported, the resettlement commission checked the files of the Social Office under the supervision of Rumkowski and discovered that 80% of the 160,000 ghetto residents received welfare support. From them the next victims were selected for deportation (Dawidowicz, *Krieg*, p. 279f.).

Always assuming that the deportees were actually taken to Kulmhof/Chelmno and murdered there, one should ask oneself under these circumstances, where the wealth came from which fell into the hands of the alleged murderers. Even Ruckerl noted:

*“The people who arrived in Chelmno were throughout poorly nourished and clothed.”* (p. 280)

Dawidowicz talks of “poor, badly dressed men, women, and children” (*Krieg*, p. 279), and Poliakov calls the deportees the “useless eaters” (p. 152).

Elsewhere we are told that the pieces of clothes of the victims of Kulmhof/Chelmno were sent to various places, which returned them partly because those clothes were too shabby and therefore useless (Hilberg, *Vernichtung*, p. 644).

But even if all the victims had been millionaires, the alleged spoils of the murder action do not fit into the picture. The quantities mentioned do not relate to the number of people allegedly murdered. For instance, we are told about a telex of the ghetto administration Lodz to the office of rationing in Posen on May 27, 1942:

*“The Sonderkommando Lange has approximately 370 railroad cars with pieces of clothes stored, which requires for its transportation about 900 trucks with trailers.”* (quoted by Ruckerl, p. 275)

The Sonderkommando Lange was the commando Kulmhof/Chelmno under its first Kommando leader. Up to May 1942, the time of this telex, about 55,000 people had been deported from the ghetto Lodz (*Massentötungen*, p. 132; Hilberg, *Vernichtung*, p. 361). 55,000 people would fill 1,100 trucks, each with 50 persons. How could it be that for the transportation of the clothes, which these 55,000 people brought with them, almost twice the space was required, *i.e.* 1,800 trucks (or 900 trucks with trailers)? The deportees had to leave their dwellings with a minimum of luggage.

## 9. Twice Extermination Camp Kulmhof/Chelmno

In order to understand the various allegations about Kulmhof/Chelmno, it is important to know that this camp is claimed to have had two “Action Phases”.

### 9.1. THE FIRST ACTION PHASE

The first one lasted from the end of 1941 to April 1943. During this first period, the extermination process is claimed to have been as described: trip of the victims to the palace in Kulmhof/Chelmno; killing of the victims in gas trucks parked there; transportation of the corpses – inside the gas trucks – to the forest area close-by; burial, later cremation of the corpses in the forest; return of the empty gas trucks to the palace, where they were cleaned. According to Klee (p. 372), however, the trucks were cleaned in the forest.

At the end of the first action phase, the mass graves were opened and the corpses cremated. This happened in the summer or fall of 1942 (according to Ruckerl, p. 273; Klee, p. 372; Hilberg, *Vernichtung*, p. 661). At another place (p. 280), Ruckerl dated the cremation of the corpses to the time period from the end of 1942 to spring 1943.

The SS blew up the palace in April 1943, destroyed the cremation ovens, and erased all traces (*Massentötungen*, s. 135; Nellessen, p. 57; Ruckerl, p. 281). Klee, who not only read Ruckerl but also studied Polish files, does not know anything about blowing up the palace in this time period. According to him, the murders of the second action phase also occurred within the area of the palace (p. 371).

Next “the Kommando Bothmann left Chelmno, to go to Dalmatia” (Reitlinger, p. 279; similar Klee, p. 371; *Massentötungen*, p. 135; Nellessen, p. 57; Ruckerl, p. 280, 281; the dates in the various publications do not match).

### 9.2. THE SECOND ACTION PHASE

One year later, in 1944, the Kommando Bothmann returned surprisingly to Kulmhof/Chelmno in order to start a new extermination action. Either in February 1944 (Reitlinger, p. 161, 279), or in April 1944 (Ruckerl, p. 283; *Massentötungen*, p. 138; Hilberg, *Vernichtung*, p. 604) they came back and continued with their murder business anew.

Surprisingly, *Massentötungen* thinks that the new season in Kulmhof/Chelmno started by erasing all traces of the first action phase and by opening the mass graves and cremating the corpses:

*“In April 1944, a telex arrived in Weimar from Bothmann in Posen, in which he requested us back again to the extermination camp Kulmhof/Chelmno. We took off to*

*Kulmhof/Chelmno. Bothmann welcomed us in Kulmhof. Bothmann explained to us that all traces in Kulmhof have to be erased according to an order by the Reichsführer of the SS Himmler. The mass graves in the forest camp were opened. The corpses in these graves were cremated in a previously built oven with the help of Jewish work commandos.*" (*Massentötungen*, p. 142)

But according to what we reviewed above, this had already been completed a year earlier. There were no more mass graves, the corpses had disappeared a long time ago, the ashes were scattered or buried.

Further allegations of the second camp period are as follows: Two wooden barracks were erected in the forest after the arrival of the SS-Kommando. A "path, fenced-in with boards taller than man" (Rückerl, p. 283), led from one barrack to a ramp, which in turn was connected to a gas truck parked there. This is, as we remember, similar to the description of the installation at the palace during the first camp period. But Rückerl used it once more for the second camp period.

The victims were transported by railroad to Kulmhof/Chelmno and stayed there overnight in the church. The next morning, they were driven into the forest, had to undress in the barracks, and walk into the gas trucks. After the murder, the corpses were cremated in one or two ovens. During this period, SS-Hauptscharführer Walter Piller was deputy camp commander. In a 'voluntary' statement, which he made as a POW of the Soviets,<sup>29</sup> he declared:

*"The two barracks in the forest, where the Jews were cremated, were being erected at the time when I arrived in Kulmhof. The two ovens, which were used to cremate the corpses, did not yet exist. Only after the two barracks were finished did SS-Hauptscharführer Runge build the two ovens with the help of Jewish workers from the ghetto Litzmannstadt [...]. I would assume that it was the beginning of June or end of May 1944, when the extermination of the Jews from the ghetto Litzmannstadt began, and [it] lasted until the mid of August 1944."* (*Massentötungen*, p. 138f)

Rückerl maintains, however, that there was only one oven (p. 283). Piller explains the purpose of the two barracks:

*"For example, half of the 700-person transport, i. e. 350 persons, if possible grouped by families, were brought by trucks to the already mentioned forest. At one of the wooden huts, which were erected by the SS-Sonderkommando and which were divided in two rooms, one for men and women each, and equipped with hooks and shelves to hang clothes, the people were requested to exit and to line up in front of the hut, which was surrounded with a wooden fence. Only two huts were built in the forest, with a length of 20 m and a width of 10 m."* (*Massentötungen*, p. 140)

A gate of the fence had a sign "Zur Badeanstalt" (to the bath) and another sign in front of the center of the hut reading "Zur Arzt Baracke 9" (to the doctor hut #9).

*"After everyone was completely naked, they had to go in line through a door with the mentioned sign 'Zur Badeanstalt' – the women first, closely followed by the men. Behind the door was a 20-25 m long 1½ m wide pathway, obscured with a board fence. This pathway ended in a 90-degree turn into a ramp. In front of the ramp was a closed truck (special*

*van), the Jews had to enter this truck. The door was closed after about 70-90 persons were inside the truck, and the truck drove to the ovens, about 200 m away. The driver Laab opened a valve during the trip, which discharged gases. These were gases produced by the gasoline engine. [...]"* (*Massentötungen*, p. 141)

Different from Piller, who alleges that the victims were killed with gasoline engine exhaust fumes, Rückerl writes:

*"Two gas trucks were alternatively deployed, which were the same vehicles already earlier used in Chelmno."* (p. 285)

And the vehicles were, as is known from other sources, Saurer trucks with Diesel engine. (see Section 7.1).

Piller continues:

*"After the special truck arrived at the oven, it was opened by Laabs, and the corpses were thrown into the oven, where they burned to ashes in a short time (about 15 minutes)." (Massentötungen, p. 142)*

Besides the installations in the forest, there were other facilities erected in the former palace yard for the second action phase: one hut to store the valuables taken from the victims; next to it a tent with a shredder for clothes, which could not be used anymore. During this second phase, the Jewish *Arbeitskommando* was accommodated in a wheat silo, while the Polish prisoners had to stay in the basement of the palace, of which remnants survived the dynamiting (Rückerl, p. 283). *Massentötungen* contradicts this and describes a jail with upper and lower cells (p. 143). Nellessen (p. 141) quotes the statements of one of the four escapees, who were brought to Kulmhof/Chelmno in the beginning of 1944 – long before the time, which most authors indicated as the beginning of the second action phase. This escapee belonged to the "Hauskommando", which worked within the area of the palace. During the Eichmann trial in Jerusalem, this witness testified that he observed how people entered the gas trucks:

*"They received soap, a towel, and were told that they would go to take a shower. Between 80 to 100 persons had to enter into the trucks. After the doors were closed, the gas was discharged; thus they were destroyed."*

But he could not have made such observations with the "Hauskommando" during the second camp period, because the trucks allegedly picked up with the victims from the church, where they had stayed overnight, and from there they were driven directly to the forest. The filling of the gas trucks with 80-100 or 70-90 persons, as claimed by Piller, is contradicted by other descriptions, which listed the capacity of the trucks with 30, 35, 40, 50, but at a maximum of 70 persons, (*Massentötungen*, p. 122f., 128; Rückerl, p. 272).

According to Hilberg (*Vernichtung*, p. 604), the murder actions of this second phase had already ended in July 1944. Other authors put the end of the "death business" (Nellessen) several months later (Nellessen, p. 57), to the middle of August (*Massentötungen*, p. 139), or to the "end of the occupation time" (Klee, p. 371). After that the Jewish workers had only the clean-up work to do (Rückerl, p. 286). "The SS-Sonderkommando stayed until the beginning of February 1945" in Kulmhof/Chelmno (*Massentötungen*, p. 139).

The SS Sonderkommando started to shoot the surviving Jewish workers in the night from January 17 to 18, 1945,

(Rückerl, p. 287; *Massentötungen*, p. 143; Poliakov, p. 197). Two prisoners succeeded to escape at this occasion: Shimon Srebnik and Mordechai Zurawski.

### 9.3. THE NUMBERS OF VICTIMS OF THE SECOND ACTION PHASE

The deportation lists from Lodz are usually the basis for the numbers of the transports to Kulmhof/Chelmno in the year 1944, but there are also different victim numbers.

Rückerl refers to the information from the *Judenrat* (Jewish council) of Lodz. According to this, a total of 9 transports with 7,176 persons left Lodz from June 23 to July 14, 1944.

Piller, on the other hand, writes that the extermination of the Jews from the ghetto Litzmannstadt began at the end of May or the beginning of June and lasted until the middle of August. Each week three transports arrived, allegedly with 300 or 700 persons. "But I will consider as the basic number 700", he continues, defying all statistical rules. By backdating the beginning of the transports to the middle of May – although he talked earlier about end of May or beginning of June –, he arrives at a total number of 25,200 victims who were allegedly murdered during the time of his substitute commando.

*"I cannot state the exact number. But the error can only be a small differential number of more or less Jews."* (*Massentötungen*, p. 139)

## 10. The Witnesses

I already mentioned in the beginning that the events in Kulmhof/Chelmno became known only through testimonies of witnesses.

Some of these witnesses were the defendants of the Kulmhof trial at the Landgericht (district court) Bonn in 1962/1963<sup>30</sup> and the escapees from the first and the survivors of the second action phase of the extermination camp. The results of this criminal trial were used by Rückerl in his study. The files of the trial are not accessible, but the written verdict was published and can be reviewed.<sup>31</sup>

Besides those individuals directly involved, two more persons are to be mentioned in this context: Rabbi Schulman from Grabow, a town about 15 km east of Kulmhof,<sup>32</sup> and Dr. Emanuel Ringelblum, who headed an underground archive in the Warsaw ghetto. Both played important roles in spreading 'news' about Kulmhof.

On January 19, 1942, Rabbi Schulman wrote a letter:

*"An eyewitness visited me, who was saved through God's grace. [...] I learned everything from him. The town where they were exterminated is Chelmno. [...] The men are killed in two ways: either shot or gassed. [...] For several days now they have been taking thousands of Jews from Lodz and did the same with them."* (Laqueur, p. 163f.;<sup>33</sup> Poliakov, p. 153f.<sup>34</sup>)

It does not seem to be certain if this letter was really written by Rabbi Schulman, because Laqueur put his name in brackets, which indicates that his document is not signed. It is also uncertain, to whom the letter was addressed. Laqueur maintains that it was to Schulman's brother in law and used the address: "My dear"; Poliakov instead writes (p. 153): "My very dear friends", because he believes that the letter went to Schulman's friends. The document is evidently not clear about it.

Dawidowicz, on the other hand, has a completely different opinion. She knows only about a postcard instead of a letter, which Schulman allegedly sent to an acquaintance in Lodz. In it he wrote about three Jews who escaped from Chelmno and reported to him about it:

*"These were the first news in Lodz about the death camp."* (Dawidowicz, *Krieg*, p. 281)

A third version sounds completely different. According to it, Rabbi Schulman turned to Chaim Rumkowski, the oldest of the *Judenrat* in Lodz, and asked for information. Rumkowski then informed him about the Chelmno camp (Laqueur, p. 160).

It is also uncertain, if Schulman was visited by only *one* escapee, as is claimed for the letter, or by several. Laqueur (p. 160f. footnote) and Dawidowicz (*Krieg*, p. 281) think that there were three.

We can find different opinions about the Kulmhof escapees in various documentations. *Massentötungen* claims:

*"Only few inmates succeeded to escape from the 'Arbeitskommando'. The first was Jakov Grojanowski."* (p. 131)

His date of escape is stated to be January 19, 1942 (p. 328). He arrived in Warsaw and made contact with Ringelblum. He handed him a "report written by himself about the killing installation Kulmhof". Grojanowski later perished in the ghetto, but his report was found in the ruins of the ghetto among the files of Ringelblum (*Massentötungen*, p. 131). However, in the German edition of Ringelblum's "Diaries,"<sup>35</sup> Grojanowski is not mentioned at all and Chelmno only in one listing (Ringelblum, p. 23).

According to other authors, the report about Chelmno, which allegedly was given to Ringelblum by Grojanowski, came from a "small group of grave diggers," which escaped in January 1942 from Chelmno and gave it to Dr. Ringelblum and his secret documentation center in Warsaw.

*"Their statements were put in writing by friends of Ringelblum. The report probably came to London by courier and then to the United States, where it appeared in many news papers."* (Laqueur, p. 139; also p. 132, 136, 160-164, 273; Poliakov, p. 153)

Dawidowicz contradicts the allegation that Grojanowski was the first escapee from Chelmno (*Krieg*, p. 282). She reports about two Jews who escaped from the death camp at the end of 1941 or the beginning of 1942 and contacted the *Jewish Society for Social Welfare* in Warsaw.<sup>36</sup> There their statements were recorded, but not forwarded, because they appeared to be too unbelievable to the assistants of the *Jewish Society for Social Welfare*.

Another witness, who allegedly escaped before Grojanowski, is Michael Podchlebnik, (*Massentötungen*, p. 145; Rückerl, p. 274; Nellessen, p. 139-141; Hausner, *Vernichtung*, p. 236). Podchlebnik appeared as a witness during the Eichmann trial in Jerusalem on June 5, 1961, and reported there the following: He was brought to Chelmno on December 28 or 29, 1941 (Nellessen, p. 139; the date can be derived from the following described events). At first he worked in the palace Kommando. But already "on the next day" ("it was two days before New Year"; Nellessen, p. 140 – therefore December 30, 1941) he reported for duty at the forest Kommando. They exca-

vated graves or trenches in the forest. After having worked in the forest for a “few days” (Nellessen, p. 140), a car came “on Tuesday” (this Tuesday was January 6, 1942), which brought the corpses of his family. Three days later, he succeeded in escaping (Hausner, *Vernichtung*, p. 236). This was therefore January 9, 1942.

Besides the names of the two escapees Grojanowski and Podchlebnik, we also learn the names of those who survived the alleged massacre of the final camp dissolution on January 18, 1945: Shimon Srebnik, then 14 years old (Poliakov, p. 197; Ruckerl, p. 287; Nellessen, p. 141-143) and Mordechai Zurawski, (Poliakov, p. 197; Ruckerl, p. 287). Srebnik was also a witness during the Eichmann trial in Jerusalem.

## 11. Controversial Numbers

The number of people who fell victim to the extermination actions in Kulmhof/Chelmno is not known. The various statements differ by hundreds of thousands and are as follows: 11,000 (Reitlinger, p. 101), 34,000 (Delarue,<sup>37</sup> p. 257); 54,990 (*Faschismus – Getto – Massenmord*,<sup>38</sup> p. 285); at least 100,000 (Klee, p. 371); more than 100,000 (Hilberg, *Destruction*, p. 572); 150,000 (Hilberg, *Vernichtung*, p. 604); at least 152,565 (*Massentötungen*, p. 145); 300,000 (Höhne, p. 431); more than 300,000 (*Massentötungen*, p. 145); 349,000 (Dawidowicz, *Krieg*, p. 139; Nellessen, p. 57); at least 340,000 (*IMT*, Vol. VI-II, p. 364); 360,000 (Gilbert,<sup>16</sup> map p. 169). There are certainly more numbers in other works, but the selection shown here is sufficient to prove that one cannot talk about certainty of knowledge. Most of the numbers are accompanied with notes stating that these are only estimates. Most authors think, however, that the actual number of victims could also be many times higher.

The basis for these estimates is the deportations of the Jewish population of Lodz and the surrounding areas. The literature assumes that the evacuees were brought to Kulmhof/Chelmno and were killed there.

## 12. Evacuation of the Jewish Population

Various documents can be used to calculate the number of Jews the evacuated. First, there is a statistic of the *Ältestenrat* (Senior Council) of the Jews in Lodz, which is in the archive of the Jewish Historical Institute in Warsaw and was reproduced in *Faschismus – Getto – Massenmord*, p. 285.

One column of the table, which was published by the Jewish Historical Institute, is titled “Resettled to Kulmhof/Chelmno”. But it is impossible that this title originates from original documents of the Jewish Council, because other sources indicate that the name Kulmhof/Chelmno is never mentioned in any lists:

“*The statistical lists do not indicate that these transports went to Chelmno.*” (Ruckerl, p. 293)

Additionally, the Seniors of the Jewish community were evidently not suspicious that the deportations went to death camps:

“*Even at the very end of the resettlement, in September 1942, the president of the Jewish Council in Lodz, Chaim Rumkowski, did accompany the children on their march to the railroad station without fears because his own orphanage was spared.*” (Reitlinger, p. 279f.)

The total number of Jews deported as listed in the statistic is 54,990.

Further documentary evidence reproduced in this publication of the Jewish Historical Institute are reports of the Gestapo in Lodz, which talk about “evacuations” of the Jewish population, (*Faschismus – Getto – Massenmord*, p. 285f, 292f). The name Kulmhof/Chelmno does not appear in these reports anywhere either. The editors nevertheless chose to add the following title on top of the first of these reports:

“*Abstract of a situation report of the Gestapo in Lodz about the mass deportations of the Jews from the district Lodz to the extermination camp Kulmhof (Chelmno).*”

The originals of these Gestapo reports are supposedly stored in Polish archives. Other publications, however, stress over and over:

“*The Jews were deported to an unknown destination*”, (Dawidowicz, *Krieg*, p. 279, 283; Reitlinger, p. 101)

Some of the deportees were “transferred to work camps and to vacated ghettos of the district of Lublin”, (Reitlinger, p. 279). Others were deployed “for the reclamation of the Pripjet swamps and to the Jewish agricultural colonies close to Kriwoi Rog in the Ukraine”, (Reitlinger, p. 101).

Reitlinger says at another point:

“*During their march from Kriwoi Rog to Dnjepropetrowsk, the Einsatzgruppe C found a large Jewish agricultural settlement, which was established during the time of the Czar but was now a collective. [...] The number of Jews in this settlement presumably increased in 1942, when Jews from the Warsaw and Lublin ‘resettlement actions’ were sent to the village to help with the harvest. Three of these Jewish collectives between Kriwoi Rog and Cherson were large enough to form a ‘National Precinct’ of the Soviet Union – Stalindorf, Kalinindorf, and Nowo Zlatopolje.*” (Reitlinger, p. 265)

Even though Reitlinger then continues that “the entire surviving Jewish population was liquidated towards the end of May 1942” according to the evidence collected by Salomon M. Schwarz, 300 pages later he shows that the allegations by Schwarz cannot be trusted: “Schwarz arrives with the help of a completely arbitrary method” to his conclusions; he “pays absolutely no attention to the German police reports”; “he discards the official reports” and also rejects other believable sources (Reitlinger, p. 571). Reitlinger even deemed it necessary to add similar comments about the dubious statements by Schwarz in his bibliography (p. 617). We must therefore ask, how he can consider Schwarz’ claims about the alleged total liquidation of all surviving Jews “towards the end of May 1942” trustworthy, if he considers Schwarz’ credibility to be very poor.

According to a study about the fate of the Jews in European areas occupied by German troops, which was published in August 1943 by the American Jewish Congress together with the Jewish World Congress,<sup>39</sup> the Jews of Lodz were resettled in 1941/1942 to various areas and to work in the swamps of Pinsk and Rokitno, unless they found accommodations within the ghettos of other Polish towns. If one does not assume that the two Jewish organizations lied, this study proves that up to August 1943 either nothing was known about an “extermination



camp Kulmhof/Chelmno” or the messages delivered to the outside world were not believed.

### 13. Summary

According to all existing documents, it is only certain that the Jewish population of Poland was first resettled from the countryside to major cities, where the ghettos became hopelessly overcrowded. Men and women who were able to work were then selected from the ghettos, while the rest were deported to unknown or uncertain destinations. Whether or not the ‘extermination camp’ Kulmhof/Chelmno was one of these destinations cannot be proven with certainty with the compiled documentary evidence in the literature examined here.

The former Chief Public Prosecutor of the “Zentralen Stelle der Landesjustizverwaltungen zur Aufklärung nationalsozialistischer Verbrechen” (German Center of the judiciary administration for the investigation of National Socialist crimes) in Ludwigsburg, Dr. Adalbert Rückerl, noted after the completion of the Kulmhof trial:

“Because of the long time that has passed since the events occurred, the ability to remember of most witnesses is considerably diminished and errors of memory become frequently quite evident. [...] The three survivors of this horrible event<sup>[40]</sup> – the fourth one passed away – are simply overburdened to give a reliable description of their experiences concerning the logical sequence of events (accusations of specific crimes) and the error-free identification of the defendants. In some cases, they had to experience and undergo such a variety of horrible events for several months at a very young age that it is beyond the limits of their capabilities, when they had to go back in time for their descriptions.” (Rückerl, p. 253)

Considering these circumstances, the findings made in the courtroom at that time cannot be considered to be an unalterable base for historiography, which is obligated to truth and reality anyway and cannot be based on “errors of memory.” According to my knowledge, no efforts were undertaken after the Kulmhof trials to subject the claimed events to a thorough investigation. An extermination camp, which arguably caused the death of up to several hundred thousand victims, had to leave traces behind, which can be found. The purpose of this essay was to point to this gap in historiography.

© Ingrid Weckert, Munich, 1999

### Notes

First published as “Wie war das in Kulmhof/Chelmno?” in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 3(4) (1999), pp. 425-437. Translated by Fabian Eschen.

<sup>1</sup> Gerald Reitlinger, *Die Endlösung. Hitlers Versuch der Ausrottung der Juden Europas 1939-1945*, (The Final Solution. Hitler's Attempt of the Ausrottung of the Jews in Europe 1939-1945) Berlin: Colloquium 1961; Bernd Nellessen, *Der Prozeß von Jerusalem. Ein Dokument* (The Trial of Jerusalem. A Document), Düsseldorf/Wien: Econ 1964.

<sup>2</sup> Lucy S. Dawidowicz, *Der Krieg gegen die Juden 1933-1945* (The War against the Jews), Munich: Kindler 1979.

<sup>3</sup> Gitta Sereny, *Am Abgrund: Gespräche mit dem Henker. Franz Stangl und die Morde von Treblinka*. (Engl. Original title: *Into That Darkness: From Mercy Killing to Mass Murder*, London 1974.) Translated from English by Helmut Röhring, 3<sup>rd</sup> revised edition, Munich: Piper 1997.

<sup>4</sup> Adalbert Rückerl (ed.), *Nationalsozialistische Vernichtungslager im Spiegel deutscher Strafprozesse. Belzec, Sobibor, Treblinka, Chelmno* (National

Socialist Extermination Camps Reflected in Criminal Trials. Belzec, Sobibor, Treblinka, Chelmno). Munich: Deutscher Taschenbuch Verlag 1977.

<sup>5</sup> From: Christian Zentner, *Der große Bildatlas zur Weltgeschichte* (The Great Pictorial Atlas of the World History), Stuttgart: Unipart 1982, p. 522.

<sup>6</sup> Bernd Nellessen, *Der Prozeß von Jerusalem. Ein Dokument* (The Trial of Jerusalem. A Document), Düsseldorf/Wien: Econ 1964.

<sup>7</sup> Walter Laqueur, *Was niemand wissen wollte. Die Unterdrückung der Nachrichten über Hitlers ‘Endlösung’* (What Nobody Wanted to Know. The Suppression of the News of Hitler's ‘Final Solution’), Frankfurt/M.: Ullstein 1981.

<sup>8</sup> Raul Hilberg, *Die Vernichtung der europäischen Juden. Die Gesamtgeschichte des Holocaust* (The Destruction of the European Jews. The History of the Holocaust), Berlin: Olle & Wolter 1982.

<sup>9</sup> *Der Prozess gegen die Hauptkriegsverbrecher vor dem Internationalen Militärgerichtshof (IMT)* (The Trial of the Principal War Criminals before the International Military Tribunal), Nürnberg, 14. November 1945 - 1. Oktober 1946, Nürnberg 1947

<sup>10</sup> Ernst Klee, “Euthanasie” im NS-Staat. Die “Vernichtung lebensunwerten Lebens” (“Euthanasia” in the NS-State. The “Destruction of Unworthy Life”), Frankfurt/M.: S. Fischer, 1983, p. 371, talks of 40 km; Laqueur, p. 159, estimates the distance to 60 km; Rückerl, *Vernichtungslager*, states first 55 km (p. 259), but then quotes from court files which mention 60 km (p. 334).

<sup>11</sup> Gitta Sereny, *Into that Darkness. An Examination of Conscience*, New York: Vintage Books 1983, p. 139, 373; Heiner Lichtenstein, *Mit der Reichsbahn in den Tod. Massentransporte in den Holocaust 1941 bis 1945* (With the Railroad into the Death. Mass transportations in the Holocaust, 1941 to 1945), Köln: Bund-Verlag 1985, p. 88, 91, 145, 158. Sereny as well as Lichtenstein list in their indices the towns Chelmno and Cholm as identical.

<sup>12</sup> Heinz Höhne, *Der Orden unter dem Totenkopf. Die Geschichte der SS* (The Order under the Skull. The History of the SS), Munich: Bertelsmann 1976.

<sup>13</sup> Léon Poliakov, *Harvest of Hate. The Nazi Program for the Destruction of the Jews of Europe*, New York: Holocaust Library 1979.

<sup>14</sup> Editor's note: On the deportations of Jews from Lodz, see also C. Mattogno, *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 7(1) (2003), pp. 30-36. This paper will soon be published in *JR*.

<sup>15</sup> Raul Hilberg, *The Destruction of the European Jews*, New York: Harper & Row 1983.

<sup>16</sup> Martin Gilbert, *Endlösung. Die Vertreibung und Vernichtung der Juden. Ein Atlas* (Final Solution. The Expulsion and Destruction of the Jews. An Atlas), Reinbek: Rowohlt 1982.

<sup>17</sup> Michael Berenbaum, *The World Must Know: the History of the Holocaust as Told in the United States Holocaust Museum*, Washington D.C. 1993, S. 84.

<sup>18</sup> Gideon Hausner, *Justice in Jerusalem*, New York: Holocaust Library 1968.

<sup>19</sup> Gideon Hausner, *Die Vernichtung der Juden. Das größte Verbrechen der Geschichte* (The Destruction of the Jews. The biggest Crime in History), Munich: Kindler 1979 (includes chapters 2, 4-12 of *Justice in Jerusalem*).

<sup>20</sup> Jochen von Lang, *Das Eichmann-Protokoll. Tonbandaufzeichnungen der israelischen Verhöre*, (The Eichmann Protocol. Tape recordings of the Israeli Interrogations) Berlin: Severin and Siedler, 1982.

<sup>21</sup> Cf. Ingrid Weckert, “*The Gas Vans: A Critical Assessment of the Evidence*” in: Germar Rudolf (ed.), *Dissecting the Holocaust. The Growing Critique of ‘Truth’ and ‘Memory’*, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed., Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago, IL, 2003, pp. 215-241.

<sup>22</sup> From the Website of Nizkor: <http://www2.ca.nizkor.org/ftp.cgi/camps/chelmno/images/chelmnovan.jpg>.

<sup>23</sup> Gerald Fleming, *Hitler und die Endlösung*, (Hitler and the Final Solution) Berlin: Limes 1982, after p. 128.

<sup>24</sup> Compare the letter from Yad Vashem to the author on 3/16/88, without opening address, printed in: Pierre Marais, *Les camions à gaz en question*, Paris: Polémique 1994, p. 300.

<sup>25</sup> Krausnick, Helmut/Hans-Heinrich Wilhelm: *Die Truppe des Weltanschauungskrieges. Die Einsatzgruppen der Sicherheitspolizei und des SD 1938-1942*, Stuttgart: Deutsche Verlags-Anstalt 1981.

<sup>26</sup> Martin Broszat (ed.) *Rudolf Höß, Kommandant in Auschwitz. Autobiographische Aufzeichnungen*, Munich: Deutscher Taschenbuch Verlag 1963.

<sup>27</sup> Sign.: Eich 936-939, Copy in the Münchner Institut für Zeitgeschichte.

<sup>28</sup> In the English version of her book, the text quoted by Mrs. Dawidowicz is: “the poor workers, the scum of the underworld” (Lucy S. Dawidowicz, *The War Against the Jews 1933-1945*, New York: Bantam Books 1975, p. 394).

<sup>29</sup> The following quotes from Piller's explanation are translations of the origi-

nal text as printed in *Massentötungen*.

<sup>30</sup> First Kulmhof trial from Nov. 26, 1962 – March 30, 1963, LG Bonn, against 12 defendants, former members of the SK Chelmno; six received prison terms between three and thirteen years, six were acquitted. After appeal, a new trial, from July 5, 1965 – July 23, 1965, LG Bonn, against 11 defendants was held; eight prison terms between 13 months and 13 years, three acquittals. Separate trials against Günter Fuchs and Dr. Bradfisch in Hannover, sentencing on Nov. 18, 1963; sentence against Fuchs: lifelong, against Dr. Bradfisch: 13 years imprisonment.

<sup>31</sup> Published in: *Justiz und NS-Verbrechen: Sammlung deutscher Strafurteile wegen nationalsozialistischer Tötungsverbrechen 1945-1966*, Amsterdam: University Press 1968, vol. XXI: Massenvernichtungsverbrechen in Lagern. KZ Kulmhof (Chelmno) (Polen).

<sup>32</sup> Gilbert, *Endlösung*, p. 41. (Final Solution)

<sup>33</sup> N. Blumental (ed.), *Dokumenty i Materialy*, vol. I: Obozy, Lodz 1946.

<sup>34</sup> Source: “*Aus der Sammlung von Frau Novitch*”. (From the Collection of Mrs. Novitch).

<sup>35</sup> Emanuel Ringelblum, *Ghetto Warschau. Tagebücher aus dem Chaos*, Ghetto to Warsaw. Diaries from the Chaos), Stuttgart: Seewald 1967.

<sup>36</sup> Polish abbreviation ZTOS, Dawidowicz, *Krieg*, p. 234.

<sup>37</sup> Jacques Delarue, *Geschichte der Gestapo* (History of the Gestapo), Königstein/Ts.: Athenäum 1979.

<sup>38</sup> Jüdischen Historischen Institut Warschau (ed.), *Faschismus – Getto – Massenmord. Dokumentation über Ausrottung und Widerstand der Juden in Polen während des zweiten Weltkrieges* (Fascism – Ghetto – Mass Murder. Documentation about the Extermination of the Jews in Poland during the Second World War), Frankfurt/M.: Röderberg-Verlag 1962.

<sup>39</sup> *Hitler's Ten-Year War on the Jews*, New York 1943, p. 30.

<sup>40</sup> They were Mordechai Zurawski, Michael Podchlebnik, and Simon Srebnik.

## Sir Henry Strakosch “a Jew”?

By Prof. Dr. Arthur R. Butz

In vol. 5 of his biography *Winston S. Churchill*, published in 1976, historian Martin Gilbert relates the working relationship that existed during the 30s between Churchill and the South African economist and gold mining executive Sir Henry Strakosch. Most of the figures on German armaments that Churchill brought to the House of Commons and publicized elsewhere were supplied by Strakosch, who wished anonymity in the affair.

Strakosch eventually had to pay heavily for such services. Gilbert relates that Strakosch saved Churchill from financial ruin in 1938 when, due to declines in the New York markets, Churchill's brokerage account went into debt in the amount of £18,000 (\$90,000), which Churchill could only begin to cover by selling his house Chartwell. Strakosch picked up the tab for this fancy sum, at a time when a decent American salary was perhaps \$2,000 per year. In addition, Strakosch bequeathed Churchill £20,000 when he died 5 years later.<sup>1</sup>

In vol. 1 of his *Churchill's War* (1987), David Irving repeats this story but adds that “Strakosch was a Jew born in Moravia, Czechoslovakia.” While Strakosch was not born in Moravia, a book by Marie-Theres Arnbom published in Austria in 2002 has made it clear that he was at least half Jewish in terms of ancestry.<sup>2</sup> The purpose of this note is to revise, in consideration of the subsequent Arnbom book, my earlier remarks on this problem<sup>3</sup> and to explore whether the classification “a Jew” was appropriate in the context. By that I mean several questions. Did the Jewish aspect motivate Strakosch in this involvement with Churchill? Was Strakosch considered a Jew during his life? Did he so consider himself?

### Strakosch was not Considered a Jew

Strakosch died near London on Saturday Oct. 30, 1943, and *The Times* (London) published a long obituary on Nov. 1, eulogies on Nov. 2, and on Nov. 4 a report of a memorial service for Strakosch. It was clearly a Christian service, held at St. Michael's, Chester Square. Thus Strakosch died a nominal Christian.

From several routine sources we learn the following about Strakosch.<sup>4</sup> He was born May 9, 1871, in Hohenau, Austria, son of Eduard Strakosch and Mathilde Winterberg.<sup>5</sup> Hohenau is on the Austria-Moravia border, and Eduard Strakosch was a pioneer in the Austrian beet sugar industry. Henry was educated at the Wasa Gymnasium in Vienna and then privately in England. He joined the Anglo-Austrian bank in London in 1891, rising quickly to become foreign exchange manager. He then became interested in gold mining and finance and emigrated to South Africa in 1895, joining the gold mining enterprise Goerz and Co. in 1896 as assistant managing director.

The founder of the company, Adolf Goerz (1857-1900), was an immigrant from Germany and not a Jew.<sup>6</sup> Although the company had maintained close relations with Germany and in particular the Deutsche Bank in Berlin, Goerz had incorporated it in England. On the outbreak of war in 1914 five of the eight directors were German subjects. The British forced them off the board and by 1918 both the name of the company (now Union Corp.) and the character of the board had changed.<sup>7</sup> The British would not have distinguished in this purge between Germans and German Jews, and Austrians would have been considered Germans, but Strakosch had become a British citizen in 1907 and survived,<sup>8</sup> rising to chairman in 1924, a position he held until his death. Strakosch was known as “keen on polo, an inveterate motorist, and a bachelor.”

He was adviser to the government in the drafting of the South African Currency and Banking Act of 1920, which led to the establishment of the South African Reserve Bank. From 1925 on, India retained him for similar purposes. He was knighted in 1921, and became K.B.E. in 1924, G.B.E. in 1927.

He got married late in life, in 1941, to the widow Mrs. Mabel Elizabeth Vincent Temperley, in a Christian ceremony at St. Andrew's in Kingswood, Gloucester. His wife and Churchill were not the only beneficiaries of his will when he died two years later, as there were bequests to several others,<sup>9</sup> e.g. Field Marshall Smuts and Brendan Bracken, and also an interesting trust fund that he set up to be<sup>10</sup>

“applied by my trustees to a fund for any purpose which in their opinion is designed to strengthen the bonds of unity between the Union of South Africa and the Mother Country and which incidentally will conduce to the appeasement of racial feeling between the Dutch and English speaking sections of the South African community.”

The Boer War (1899-1902) had no doubt left a lasting impression on Strakosch.

None of the sources on which the above summary is based, except for Arnbohm who is cited only in the matter of Strakosch's British citizenship, gives any indication of a Jewish connection for Strakosch.

The *Jüdisches Biographisches Archiv*, 1994, a massive database available on microfiche, cites two sources that suggest he was a Jew. The first is a book or pamphlet entitled *The Jews' who's who. Israelite finance. Its sinister influence.*, Judaic Publishing Co., London, 1920. It seems very unreliable because its accusations are based on the character and name of Strakosch's company in 1914, before the changes forced by the British (I have not been able to get a copy of this publication but the *Jüdisches Biographisches Archiv* quotes from it).

The second source mentioned by the *Jüdisches Biographisches Archiv* is more credible. In a 1949 article Albert M. Hyamson, a leading Jewish biographer, listed about 2,500 prominent “Anglo-Jewish” people, each getting one or two lines in his 69 pages. One of them was<sup>11</sup>

“Strakosch, Sir Henry (1871-1943). *Economist & banker; The Times*, 1.11.43; *Ann. Reg.*; ‘Randlords.’”

The first two references are to Strakosch's obituaries, already cited here, which do not say he was a Jew. The third is to the book *Randlords*, by Paul H. Emden, Hodder and Stoughton, London, 1935. The Emden book merely gives some biographical information about Strakosch and mentions his relation to Adolf Goerz thus:<sup>12</sup>

“One of the earliest collaborators of Adolf Goerz (from 1896 on) was the present Sir Henry Strakosch, whose influence and importance extend far beyond the limits of gold production. He is recognized the world over as an authority on monetary matters and exchanges; his influence on the development of currency and the organization of Banking in South Africa was so great that the objection was expressed that ‘the Commission seems to have been clay in the hands of Sir Henry Strakosch.’”

Emden does not say that Strakosch was a Jew.<sup>13</sup>

Two more observations should be made on Hyamson's listing of Strakosch. In his introduction to his list Hyamson writes:

“The term Jew has been interpreted in the following list in the widest sense, to include not only men and women connected with the Jewish community, but also those only of Jewish parentage, or half-Jewish parentage, and in a few exceptional instances of more remote Jewish origin.”

That is, a person need not have been “Jewish” to appear in the list. Second, Hyamson also published a general (not specifically about Jews) reference work, *Dictionary of Universal Biography*, issued in 1915, 1950 and (in the USA) 1951. His entry for Strakosch in the last is:

“Strakosch, Sir Hy.; *Hung.-Eng. econ. and financ.*, 1871-1943. S”

The “S” signifies that his obituary is to be found in the *Annual Register*. In accord with his general objectives in this work, Hyamson does not declare Strakosch to be Jewish, but he does declare him to be Hungarian-English. None of the other sources indicates he was Hungarian and to so classify him is wrong.

Hyamson seems not well informed about Strakosch and his rule of classification begs the question in any case.

Two books that ought to have much about an important man such as Strakosch, if he had been Jewish, do not list him in their indices. They are *Jewish Roots in the South African Economy*, by Mendel Kaplan, C. Struik Publishers, Cape Town, 1986, and *The Jews in South Africa. A History*, editors Gustav Saron and Louis Hotz, Oxford Univ. Press, London, 1955.

The *Encyclopaedia Judaica* (1971) mentions two Jewish Strakosches, but not Sir Henry. The death and obituary notices in the four issues of the London weekly (Fridays) *Jewish Chronicle* for November 1943 do not mention Strakosch.

I conclude that Strakosch did not consider Strakosch a Jew, and neither have the Jews.

### The Arnbohm Book

In the absence of the Arnbohm book, I saw no significant grounds for classifying Strakosch as a Jew. The book establishes that Strakosch was at least half Jewish in terms of ancestry, but does not show that he should be considered “Jewish” or “a Jew” according to my understanding of the meanings of such terms.

The general aim of the Arnbohm book is to demonstrate the great business and professional accomplishments of the five named Austrian families. At the outset, the author is evasive or unclear on whether these families should be considered “Jewish”, presenting them as having been strongly committed to assimilation, many members sincerely converting to Christianity.<sup>14</sup> Assimilation and religious conversion were commonplace in Germany in the 19<sup>th</sup> century, and about 60,000 German Jews out of a community of less than 200,000 converted.<sup>15</sup> Arnbohm suggests a similar trend in Austria.

Arnbohm's history of Sir Henry's line of the Strakosches starts with his grandfather, Salomon Strakosch (1795-1867), and ends with the rise of the National Socialists in the 1930s. The Strakosch family members in Austria, long assimilated and religiously converted, did not initially see any threat to their position but were forced to leave the country after the National Socialist Anschluss of 1938. Sir Henry helped some of them move to England.<sup>16</sup>

The emphasis of the Arnbohm book is on the business and professional achievements of the five families treated and not on social history, though the latter seems more interesting and even tantalizing, in view of the remarks about their progressive assimilation. Specifically, assimilating Jews interact with gentile society at all levels (otherwise they wouldn't be assimilating), and yet we are told little of these interactions.

Most important, intermarriage with gentiles is inadequately treated for the Strakosches. For example Arnbohm remarks, very briefly, that the opera impresario Karl Strakosch was “manager of, and in 1887 married, one of his singers: Clara Louise Kellogg of the later distinguished American industrial dynasty.”<sup>17</sup>

In fact Kellogg (1842-1916) was a famous singer in her own day, and Arnbom does not tell us she was not Jewish.<sup>18</sup>

Another example is that of Moritz Strakosch, who managed the even more famous singer Adelina Patti and married her sister Amalia.<sup>19</sup> Arnbom notes these facts but does not tell us that the Patti family was not Jewish.<sup>20</sup>

Sir Henry was born Heinrich in 1871, son of Eduard Strakosch and Mathilde Winterberg.<sup>21</sup> Eduard was 100% Jewish in ancestry but of Mathilde Winterberg I know nothing. The various biographical indices list both Jewish and gentile Winterbergs.

Under the circumstances the problem of whether Sir Henry was “a Jew” or “Jewish” depends on definition. Jews are always quarreling among themselves on this problem of definition, and I am not inclined to try to settle the issue for them, or gainsay them where they agree.

Rabbinic law is clear that failure to practice the Jewish religion has no impact on the Jewish status of a person; a non-observant Jew is still a Jew. A principle Jews traditionally use in their definitions is matrilineal descent: a Jew is somebody with a Jewish mother. That breaks the rules of definition by defining the noun in terms of the corresponding adjective, but is useful anyway. If Mathilde Winterberg was not Jewish (which may or may not be the case), and if Sir Henry was not raised in a Jewish environment (which seems indicated by the Arnbom book) then I do not think anybody should consider him a Jew.

If Mathilde Winterberg was Jewish, then either Eduard and Mathilde converted and raised Heinrich as a Christian, or Heinrich or Sir Henry converted later in life. Under generally accepted rabbinic standards, a Jew who voluntarily converts to Christianity ceases being a Jew.<sup>22</sup> By this standard Sir Henry would not have been considered a Jew by the Jews, and the sources I cited imply that the Jews have not in fact considered him a Jew and neither did he.

That the Jews do not consider him a Jew is a weighty con-



Sir Henry Strakosch

sideration, but it does not quite settle it for me because I am not inclined to accept that a person can stop being Jewish via a religious conversion. It takes more. For example, I consider the French Cardinal Jean-Marie Lustiger to be still a Jew, and evidently so does he.<sup>23</sup> I doubt that the Jews agree.

### Then What Was he up to, and Why?

The only significance of the question of Sir Henry Strakosch's Jewish status is in assessing the forces that were at work, during the Thirties, in organizing a war against Germany. While this status remains to be definitively established, it is not correct to designate Strakosch, simplistically, as “a Jew”, and Arnbom's book clearly presents his relatives as long assimilated Austrians. Such designation in this context would imply Jewish motivations in his campaign against Hitler.

If he was not acting from Jewish motivations, then what were his motivations? Why was he out to get Hitler? An answer is given in a booklet he published in 1935, in which the gold miner argued for the restoration of an international gold standard for currency.<sup>24</sup> He considered that the cooperation of Britain and other “Sterling countries” was attainable, but it was not possible to<sup>25</sup>

*“attain a full measure of recovery unless America and Germany are also brought into the fold [...]. Substantial progress in this direction has already been achieved in America [...]. The German situation, on the other hand, remains hopelessly confused, not so much because her problems are fundamentally so very different and so much more difficult, but because of the manner in which they are being faced. There is hardly a single one of the many and varied measures she has taken which can be said to be of real value for her restoration – indeed, most of them tend to impede it [...].”*

It is well known that this judgment of the efficacy of Hitler's economic policies was wrong. The National Socialist economic policies were notoriously successful, and have been called “The Nazi Miracle” which Hitler performed knowing at the outset that “The international financial world would stand on its head and attack our currency with all the means at its command.”<sup>26</sup>

The important point is that we see the motivations that Strakosch brought to the campaign against Germany. Hitler was on the way to proving him wrong. Thus to describe Strakosch as “a Jew” in this context is to do more than make a mistake about ethnicity. It is to camouflage a very important dimension of the background to, and causes of, the Second World War. Strakosch should, rather, have been described as “a South African gold miner campaigning for restoration of the international gold standard”. If he had been a full Jew, then I still would not have described him as Irving did. I would have written “a Jewish South African gold miner campaigning for restoration of the international gold standard”.

### Notes

<sup>1</sup> *The Times*, Feb. 7, 1944.

<sup>2</sup> Marie-Theres Arnbom, *Friedmann, Gutmann, Lieben, Mandl und Strakosch, Fünf Familienporträts aus Wien vor 1938*, Böhlau Verlag, Vienna, 2002.

<sup>3</sup> Arthur R. Butz, “Was Churchill's Gold Bug Jewish?,” *Journal of Historical*

- Review, 21(1) (2002), pp. 9-13; Also in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung*, 6(2) (2002), pp. 212-215.
- <sup>4</sup> *Annual Register* (London, 1943); *The Times*, August 15, 1941; John F. Rickard, *Who Was Who in British India*, Greenwood, Westport, Connecticut, 1998; Eric Rosenthal, *Encyclopaedia of Southern Africa*, 6<sup>th</sup> edition, Frederick Warne, London and New York, 1973; C.J. Beyers, *Dictionary of South African Biography*, Tafelberg-Uitgewers, Cape Town, 1977; Walter H. Wills and R.J. Barrett, *The Anglo-African Who's Who and Biographical Sketch-Book*, George Routledge & Sons, London, 1905.
- <sup>5</sup> In my earlier papers on this subject (note 3) the spelling was "Winterburg" because my sources used that form. Arnbohm uses "Winterberg" and that appears to be the correct spelling. Also I use the correct "Eduard" rather than "Edward".
- <sup>6</sup> Robin McGregor, *McGregor's Who Made South Africa*, vol. 1, Purdey, Saxonwold, 2000, pp. 138-141. As the Preface explains this is vol. 1 of a projected series on "the positive contributions made by each of South Africa's twenty five odd cultural groups to its development [...] the Jewish contribution [...] comprises the first part of this volume. As a significant number of Jews are of German origin, it seemed appropriate to relate the contribution made by the Germans as the second part."
- <sup>7</sup> Geoffrey Wheatcroft, *The Randlords*, Weidenfeld and Nicholson, London, 1985, pp. 118, 244.
- <sup>8</sup> M.-T. Arnbohm, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 118.
- <sup>9</sup> *The Times*, 7 Feb. 1944, p. 6.
- <sup>10</sup> *The Times*, 17 May 1949, p. 6.
- <sup>11</sup> Albert M. Hyamson, "Plan of a dictionary of Anglo-Jewish biography," in *Anglo-Jewish Notabilities. Their Arms and Testamentary Dispositions*, The Jewish Historical Society of England, London, 1949. Hyamson was president of this Society.
- <sup>12</sup> Paul H. Emden, *Randlords*, Hodder & Stoughton, London, 1935, pp. 217, 342.
- <sup>13</sup> This remark is based on the listings of Strakosch in the index of the Emden book.
- <sup>14</sup> M.-T. Arnbohm, *op. cit.* (note 2), pp 11, 16.
- <sup>15</sup> Rabbi Arthur Hertzberg, Professor Emeritus of Religion at Dartmouth College, in the Jewish weekly *Forward*, 30 Aug. 2002, p. 12. Hertzberg continues with comments on Jewish history in the USA: "Nearly 40 years ago, I was asked to do a study of the founding fathers of the major Jewish institutions. I went back to the 1840s when B'nai B'rith was founded, along with such bastions of Reform Judaism as Temple Emanuel in New York. I could find hardly a single family among the charter members still represented in the Jewish community through their descendants." In a related way, Hilaire Belloc remarked on the ephemeral nature of Jewish dynasties in comparison to the gentile (*The Jews*, 3<sup>rd</sup> ed., Houghton Mifflin, Boston, 1937, pp. 77, 86f). Such ephemerae should be contrasted to the millennial durability of the Jews. A resurrected ancient Roman would consider déjà vu much of what is said of the Jews today, but Rome is long gone, and the Jews are still here.
- <sup>16</sup> M.-T. Arnbohm, *op. cit.* (note 2), 132-135.
- <sup>17</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 111, 230.
- <sup>18</sup> Clara Louise Kellogg, *Memoirs of an American Prima Donna*, Putnam, NY, 1913. When she was a young girl her family celebrated Christmas and she sang in the church choir (p. 8).
- <sup>19</sup> M.-T. Arnbohm, *op. cit.* (note 2), 109, 230.
- <sup>20</sup> John Frederick Cone, *Adelina Patti: Queen of Hearts*, Amadeus Press, Portland, Oregon, 1993, pp. 12, 267.
- <sup>21</sup> M.-T. Arnbohm, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 118.
- <sup>22</sup> Rabbi Allan Nadler, director of the Jewish studies program at Drew University, writing in the Jewish weekly *Forward*, 19 Oct. 2001, p. 10.
- <sup>23</sup> On a visit to Australia Lustiger was quoted in *The Weekend Australian*, 4-5 August 2001, p. 9, thus: "I was born Jewish and so I remain, even if that's unacceptable for many. [...] For me, the vocation of Israel is bringing light to the goyim. That's my hope and I believe that Christianity is the means for achieving it."
- <sup>24</sup> Sir Henry Strakosch, *The Road to Recovery. With Special Reference to the Problem of Exchange Stability and the Restoration of the International Gold Standard*, Economic Forum, New York, and *The Economist*, London, 1935. 70 pages, of which 27-36 were missing from the copy I read.
- <sup>25</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 51.
- <sup>26</sup> Alan Milard in the *London Review of Books*, January 23, 1986, p. 21. Milard reviews several books on the subject.

## Delusional Worlds

By Ernst Manon

In *The Revisionist*, No. 1/2003, we published the first of Ernst Manon's observations on problems relating to Jewish 'memories' of the 'Holocaust' along with observations on the German compulsion to self-accusation. In the present article, Ernst Manon extends and deepens his observations, analyzing tendencies to mistake delusion for reality, which are common among Mosaic fundamentalists. He demonstrates how these delusional worlds are created and describes their significance for the phenomenon of "Vergangenheitsbewältigung" (Coming to Terms with the Past).

In the psychiatric journal *Der Nervenarzt* (the Psychiatrist), as mentioned in *The Revisionist* No. 1/2003, Drs. L. Wilkes and R. Albert of the Department for Juvenile Psychiatry at the University of Erlangen discuss the case of young Heinrich Heine:<sup>1</sup>

"Heine grew up in Düsseldorf, the son of a Jewish merchant. [...] His mother a staunch follower of the Enlightenment and the pedagogical ideals of Rousseau. [...] 'Her enlightenment and sensitivity were the very essence of conventionality, and so it was not from her that I inherited my penchant for the romantic and fantastic. She had a great fear of poesy and took away every novel she found in my hands. She would not allow me to visit the theatre and even forbade me to participate in Folk Theatre. She monitored housemaids who she thought might be inclined to tell ghost

stories; in short, she did everything in her power to protect me from fantasy and superstition.' All her efforts were in vain. Young Heine listened spellbound when his nurse told fairy tales and ghost stories. [...] He was especially attentive when elderly aunts would relate scary family tales or resurrect long dead ancestors with their oral histories. [...] Stories about his great-uncle Simon de Geldern were the most prominent of all. [...] He was called 'the chevalier' or 'the Asian' because he had traveled extensively in the Orient and used to return from lengthy voyages garbed in exotic oriental dress. [...] It was said that a tribe of Bedouins, who feuded constantly with neighboring tribes and were the scourge of the caravans, chose him as its sheik. In Heine's words: 'In European terms, my venerable great-uncle became a robber chieftain.' [...]

Young Heine's fascination knew no bounds. While rummaging through a dusty trunk in the attic he found a notebook written in the hand of his great uncle, which he always considered his greatest and most precious discovery. Although he could not gain certainty about what he was reading [...], its very vagueness and mystery cast a magical spell over him and stimulated his fantasy. [...] Everything he learned about his great-uncle made an indelible impression on his young mind, 'I immersed myself so deeply in his devious ways that sometimes, in the middle of the day, an eerie feeling would come over me. It seemed that I had become my fantastic great-uncle, my own life a continuation of the life of this long dead relative.'<sup>[2]</sup>

Here we have a classic example of a developing Pseudologia Phantastica, as the psychiatrist Anton Delbrück first termed the condition around the end of the 19<sup>th</sup> Century.<sup>[3]</sup> It describes a convergence of fantasy and reality which is so intense that the daydreaming subject is no longer able to distinguish fiction from reality. This condition can be temporary or it can coalesce and control the subject's thought for prolonged periods. It is a characteristic of this abnormal condition that an assumed role not only captures the subject's fantasy, but also actually intrudes into his reality because of its vividness and subjective nature.

There is evidence of such intrusion in Heine's memoirs, in which he describes his lifelong practice of blaming mistakes on 'my Asiatic Doppelgänger.' His parents were well aware of his delusional fantasies and identification with his great-uncle; his father reacted humorously, telling young Heinrich that he hoped great-uncle had not gone about writing IOUs which he might have to pay. Heine recalled that this 'wondrous condition' lasted a whole year. Sources suggest that he must have been 13 at this time. 'In my dreams I totally identified with my great-uncle. I shuddered to think I was someone else, living in a different time. I would find myself in places that I had never been before and in situations of which I had no inkling, yet I moved about with a firm step; I knew just how to conduct myself. I would meet strange people with wild visages in dazzling costumes, but shake hands as though we were old acquaintances; I could understand their strange and outlandish language even though I had never heard it before. To my own amazement I would answer them in their own language, accompanied by violent gesticulations which were completely foreign to me; and say things which completely contradicted my usual thinking.'<sup>[4]</sup>

Even if Heine wrote that after one year he recovered normal integrated consciousness, he admitted that mystic traces of delusion remained in his subconscious.

Factors that triggered Heine's infantile pseudologica phantastica were an uneventful existence combined with a lively imagination. Like many youngsters today, young Heinrich saw himself and his daily life as dull and petty. What rich compensation he found in the world of ghost stories and fairy tales! Without doubt, the power of his imagination (an indicator of his primary personality) was a necessary precondition for the creation of this abnormal psychological event. Thus the exotic setting of the tales from

the journal of his great-uncle, combined with the atmosphere in which Heine was reading the mysterious lines, played an important role.

[...] Certain indignities to which young Heinrich was exposed, including pranks by his schoolmates and insults by street urchins, should be named as additional factors.

Heine reported a number of incongruous idiosyncrasies, sympathies and antipathies, as delayed effects that his abnormal condition had on his subsequent life. Even insignificant acts which contradicted his normal habits seemed to him delayed effects of that dream period in which he had been his own great-uncle."

So much for excerpts from *The Psychiatrist*. "Wondrous conditions" similar to Heine's pseudologia phantastica abound in the area of religion. The magazine *Spiegel* recently printed an article entitled "Das Testament des Pharaos" (Pharaoh's Testament) based on the research of Rolf Krauss, a specialist with the Egyptian Museum in Berlin. Mr. Krauss gives us the following insight:<sup>5</sup>

"Under a barrage of scientific research, the historical basis of the Old Testament has been unmasked as a fantastic potpourri in which real persons haunt illusory and pseudo-historical worlds while truth and fiction are inextricably intertwined. [...] The Heidelberg theologian and academic dean Prof. Diebner, among others, has drawn rigorous conclusions from the new state of scientific knowledge: 'The Old Testament functions as a fairy tale,' he says, 'it is of no help whatsoever as a guide to history.' [...] Bottom line of the debate: the Books of Moses are 'literary fiction.'"

It is religious fiction, and this realization is not altogether new. Several years ago the theologian Thomas Thompson of Copenhagen published a work similar to Prof. Diebner's study, which is based on archeological research. When asked about his opinion concerning authenticity, a prominent rabbi remarked that the important thing is not historical factuality, but rather the "wisdom" behind it. Thus we have a conflict between the "Wisdom of Fiction" and the "Factualism of Actuality." During a convention of biblical archeologists in San Francisco, Harvard Professor Lawrence Stager attacked Thompson on grounds that a critical attitude toward the historical correctness of certain Old Testament reports bolsters the arguments of Revisionists who deny that homicidal gas chambers were used during the "Holocaust."<sup>6</sup>

"I reject such a confusion and collapse of scientific standards with total revulsion of my heart, soul and mind."

Thompson views the process of biblical creation as a discussion about tradition.<sup>7</sup> He goes so far as to challenge the existence of a United Kingdom of David and Solomon in the 10<sup>th</sup> Century BC,<sup>8</sup> and his colleague Niels Peter Lemche of the University of Copenhagen even questions the existence of David.<sup>9</sup> The myth of Masada also began to waver a bit several years ago, when pork bones were found there; nevertheless, recruits for the Israeli Army are still taken there every year for their "Never Again" oath. Larry Williams claims to have localized Mt. Sinai in southern Arabia, which would of course present the "Exodus from Egypt" in an altogether different light.<sup>10</sup>

Concerning the myths that underlie fundamentalist belief in the Bible, the Jewish linguistic philosopher Fritz Mauthner wrote:<sup>11</sup>

*“It is difficult to remain serious when investigating the concept ‘Word of God.’ Consider: In the Beginning was the Word, and God was a word. Gods are words. Soon that group of religions which we call monotheistic began putting words into the anthropomorphic mouth of the most exalted word of all: God. These were man’s words of wisdom and ignorance, and for a long time they looked like other words in books by old authors. However, when Heresy began to doubt authenticity, they became stamped as authentic words of God. [...] Jews and Christians have been attempting to establish the authentic text of the word of God for 2000 years. [...] If we want to know what the church means by ‘authentic,’ then we have to disregard fairy tales which confuse the minds of our children such as the Finger of God. According to the Jewish tale, this divine digit chiseled the 10 Commandments into tablets of stone. We must also disregard the ever-present Holy Ghost of the Christian tales. Beginning with Moses and continuing until the time of the Evangelists, this supernatural spirit was present when mortal men wrote each of the canons. The Holy Ghost was also present when a different man translated it and likewise when his translation was retranslated into Latin, which became the official language of the Catholic Church. With subsequent appearances of new languages, however, the Holy Ghost ceased supervising. And what did it mean when the Council of Trent declared the Vulgate to be the authentic word of God, in 1546? We can not overlook the grotesque fact that this text was not even produced until several decades after it had been declared authentic – that the Holy Ghost allowed the members of the Council to authenticate words which, for philological reasons, were not found to be correct until a generation had passed.”*

Germany’s biggest daily newspaper, the *Süddeutsche Zeitung*, provides the following gloss by Nikolaus Cybinski:<sup>12</sup>

*“The idea that the Holocaust might be a Hollywood invention is becoming more and more difficult to refute; one need only watch Schindler’s List often enough.”*

In 1990, a leading orthodox rabbi in Israel announced that the Holocaust was God’s punishment of the Jews for eating pork.<sup>13</sup> According to Yehuda Bauer, Professor of Holocaust Studies at the University of Jerusalem:<sup>14</sup>

*“Poles and Jews alike are supplying Holocaust deniers with the best possible arguments.”*

In the words of Benjamin Netanyahu:<sup>15</sup>

*“Israel was born of the Holocaust.”*

As Ignatz Bubis, the late president of the Central Council of Jews in Germany, said on the 60<sup>th</sup> anniversary of the so-called “Crystal Night”:<sup>16</sup>

*“Whoever forgets the Shoa, murders them all over again.”*

The Freiburg professor of psychology Franz Buggle recently completed a comprehensive study of literal belief in the Bible in his book *Denn Sie Wissen Nicht, Was Sie Glauben* (For They Know Not What They Believe).<sup>17</sup> An additional problem is that the original language of the Bible was a very impoverished one. According to Prof. Y. T. Radday, it had only 56,000 different words;<sup>18</sup> according to Richard Wurmbrand, 65,000.<sup>19</sup> For this reason, most words have numerous meanings; thus, it is unavoidable that every text is based on arbitrary interpretations. For today’s reader, this is true even when working with the original text. This fundamental realization takes away all factual background from most Biblical literature as well as centuries of religious strife, for these have ultimately depended on words and concepts. By pointing out that Hebrew used the same word for “son,” “descendant,” “follower” and other of our words, Wurmbrand relativizes even the concept of ‘Sonship’ (Son of God), placing Jesus’ relationships to God the Father and the Holy Ghost in a different perspective.

In his discussions of God and the world, the Israeli philosopher Jeshajahu Leibowitz sees the matter in this light:<sup>20</sup>

*“The foundation of our faith is our oral Tora, written by men. However, this is also the divine Tora, which obligates us to our faith. This is the dogma of Judaism. [p. 124...] The oral Tora, which man created, has decreed that the written Tora is the divine word. On one hand we acknowledge that the oral Tora is a product of man; on the other hand, we accept it as divine, and so the Tora that we ourselves wrote, is the divine Tora! [p. 125...] Empirically speaking, the Tora is a Tora only to the extent that the Jewish people accept it. In response to the pronouncement of Jesaja (Jes. 43, 12) ‘Ye are my witnesses, sayeth the Lord, and I am God’ Midrash<sup>[21]</sup> dares to reply: ‘If ye are my witnesses, then I am God; if ye are not my witnesses, then I am in a manner of speaking, not God.’” (p. 133)*

He despises Christianity, because it dares to imply that the Hebrew bible is a Christian book! (p. 80) Tales of fiction cannot stand solidly on one leg alone:

*“Are there not enough historians, sociologists and other intellectuals – in the world and in Israel as well – who deny the existence of a Jewish nation? [p. 16...] The most glorious prophecies for future existence were given to the ten tribes of Israel by Jeremia, Ezekiel and Hosea. Then these ten tribes promptly disappeared without a trace. [p. 141...]”*



#### **Concerning Untruthful Happenings and Truths Which Never Happened**

“What are you writing?” the Rebbe asked. ‘ – Stories,’ I said. He wanted to know what kind of stories: true stories. ‘About people you have knew?’ Yes, about people I might have known. ‘About things that happened?’ Yes, about things that happened or could have happened. ‘But they did not?’ No, not all of them did. In fact, some some were invented from almost the beginning to almost the end. The Rebbe leaned forward as if to measure me up and said with more sorrow than anger: ‘That means that you are writing lies!’ I did not answer immediately. The scolded child within me had nothing to say in his defense. Yet, I had to justify myself. ‘Things are not that simple, Rebbe. Some events do take place but are not true; other are – although they never occurred.’”

*Elie Wiesel in Legends of Our Time, Schocken Books, New York, 1982, p. viii of introduction.*

*The only genuinely Judaic content which many Jewish intellectuals find in their Judaism is a preoccupation with Shoa: 'We are the nation to whom this was done!' These Jews have replaced Judaism with the Shoa.*" (p. 98)

The Germans are confronted with the mirror image of this: their Germanness is defined by what they allegedly did to Jews. Germany has become the inheritor of biblical Amalek, the nephew of Esau and brother of Jacob, who is later called Israel (1 Moses 36, 12). According to the account of Moses Maimonides, it is the 189<sup>th</sup> Commandment for Jews, derived from the Tora, to remember what Amalek did to them (5 Moses, 25, 17). The 59<sup>th</sup> Commandment reiterates that they must never forget this (5 Moses, 25, 19), while the 188<sup>th</sup> Commandment instructs them to wipe out the memory of Amalek (5 Moses, 25, 19):<sup>22</sup>

*"Maimonides expostulates that the people must constantly talk about this, in order to cultivate hatred and incite the people to holy war. [...] In support of this admonition to self-righteousness and glorification of the victor, it is of decisive importance to destroy the memory of the vanquished. Transcribing it in 'death letters' was annihilating it in effect."*

When Helmut Kohl congratulated Simon Wiesenthal on his 85<sup>th</sup> birthday several years ago, he expressed thanks for "the path which we are allowed to take." Perhaps his implication was that the gradual self-extermination and self-incrimination, like that of Amalek, is appropriate as "the final solution for Germany." Perhaps the Germans are supposed to be grateful for gradual extermination, as opposed to the originally planned total annihilation through war.

Concerning the pseudological fiction of the so-called Jewish nation, in his 1976 book *The Thirteenth Tribe*,<sup>23</sup> Arthur Koestler popularized the well-known thesis that most of the Ashkenazi Eastern Jews are descendants of the Khasars. This was a Caucasian Turkish people that converted to Judaism in the 8<sup>th</sup> Century for purely pragmatic reasons. They, in turn, brought Judaism to the surrounding nations:<sup>24</sup>

*"Many Polish, Bessarabic, and Ukrainian Jews descended from Slavs or Tatars, who had converted to Judaism under the military and political influence of the Khasars. The Khasars, originally Turanides, had ruled over a mighty empire on the Dnieper from the 6th to the 10th centuries and had in their turn been converted to Judaism."*

This theory had been published in Hebrew early in the 1940s by Abraham N. Poliak, a professor at the University of Tel Aviv (*Khazaria*, Tel Aviv). Koestler later called the story of the Khasar empire "the most cruel hoax which history[?] has ever perpetrated."<sup>25</sup> It is no wonder that many believe he did not voluntarily leave this life. Viewed from his subjective position, it is understandable that he considered this "deceit" the most cruel of all.

The circumstances surrounding the death of another author, Erwin Soratroi, who was mortally injured in a Turkish sauna, are likewise unexplained. He had just finished elucidating the Khasar story under the graphic title *Attilas Enkel auf Davids Thron* (Attila's Heirs on David's Throne).<sup>26</sup> Koestler's book is now out of print, and Soratroi's book has been banned in Germany, even though there have long been anthropological investigations by Jewish scientists in support of the Khasar theory.<sup>27</sup>

Such suppression of scientific knowledge is all the more astounding since Zvi Ankori of the Department of Jewish History at Tel Aviv University in the above mentioned work<sup>28</sup> writes that, as far as the racial purity of this or that branch of Judaism is concerned, Koestler merely opened a door that had long stood open anyway!

*"But even if we assume that the original Israelites of biblical times constituted a 'hebraic race' – a highly unlikely assumption – the proselytizing and acceptance of non-Jews at various times was in itself enough to hinder racial homogeneity."*<sup>29</sup>

*"Thus the quality of being Jewish was for a long time not a question of genes, but of 'mindset'."*<sup>30</sup>

In other words, it was a mental attitude, a matter of one's worldview. A large part of this attitude is the belief that the Jews are God's chosen. In 1938, Ben Chaim directed a proclamation to the Jewish nation: *Juda erwache!* (Judea Awake! Zürich):<sup>31</sup>

*"Ultimately, the suffering of the Jews has its origin in the 'chosen people' belief proclaimed by the Jewish religion, which has been drilled into our people for millennia, to the extent that it has become part of our flesh and blood. Even today, even among irreligious or antireligious Jews, the belief persists that we are special and chosen. [p. 9...] The world, however, has little respect for 'God's Chosen People.' This is because of the perception that a people who subordinate duty to fellow men to duty to God, cannot possibly be a Chosen People. [...] Millions of Jews still repeat this prayer every day: 'Ato bochartonu mi kol ho om' (God, Thou hast chosen us from among all peoples). Even if many are unaware of the monstrosity, criminality and ridiculousness of the utterance, it is still an expression of the basic attitude of our people, revealed in everything we do or fail to do. This attitude confronts us in every area of our life, hindering and separating us from others in our morality, our dealings with our fellow citizens, our hosts, etc. During thousands of years of wandering and humiliation, this delusion of grandeur has deformed and ruined all the noble characteristics of our people."* (p. 13)

Hannes Stein of Jerusalem, formerly with the German newspaper *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung* and Germany's largest newsmagazine *Spiegel*, and today a writer for the *Berliner Zeitung*, informs us in all seriousness that

*"when Moses received the Ten Commandments on Mount Sinai, accompanied by thunder and lightning, the free individual was born. Since that time, man has been responsible for his own actions. Christianity carried this Jewish insight over the entire world, sometimes voluntarily and sometimes involuntarily."<sup>32</sup> Among the joyous revelations of the Bible are the glad tidings that it is possible to break with inherited tradition. [...] Europe provides the best example for this possibility of escaping from our own origins. After all, what did European culture have to do with Christianity? Nothing at all! The genuine, original European culture was pagan: Europe was where people ate porridge and drank beer. [...] The triumph of Christianity in Europe was also the triumph of Mediterranean culture."<sup>33</sup>*



In point of fact, the “triumph of Mediterranean culture” was the triumph of Judaism! Ankori, quoted above, clearly formulated this last idea:<sup>34</sup>

*“The Jewish Diaspora was successful in that it prepared the way for the dissemination of monotheism. All the non-Jewish peoples of the Mediterranean adopted it, albeit this was done in the form of its Christian variant rather than its original Jewish form.”*

As Shimon Peres expressed it:<sup>35</sup>

*“The whole world has become Jewish.”*

David Feuchtwanger had already informed us that democracy is a Jewish innovation.<sup>36</sup>

*“There is absolutely nothing which is democratic which is not Jewish, because all things democratic flow from Jewish springs.”*

Should we laugh or cry about so much *Chutzpa*? We leave it to the (healthy) imagination of the reader to decide what analogies should be drawn from the following examples, and whether he perceives a pathological syndrome that might be called “collective-hereditary pseudologia phantastica judaica.” In addition, the question arises as to whether, as Hermann Schaber believes,<sup>37</sup> an actual, even messianic solution of an age-old conflict can be derived “from the overall teachings of the Bible.” Again we refer to Leibowitz:<sup>38</sup>

*“As for the coming of the Messiah, the most significant aspect of the messianic idea is that it is always a future coming. This means that every Messiah that actually arrives is of necessity a false Messiah.”*

The messianic concept, at least in its worldwide form, is a purely Jewish innovation. It is an Asiatic myth, if you will. I have already referred to the first ‘humorous’ anti-Jewish pamphlet in the Book of Esther, written by the Jews themselves as a parody.<sup>39</sup> In the same way that Haman and his ten sons were hanged, so were “on the 16<sup>th</sup> and 17<sup>th</sup> of October 1946, in the Year of Creation 5707, in Nuremberg, 11 leading Nazis hanged (the 12<sup>th</sup>, Hermann Göring, committed suicide).” Thus writes Dr. Daniel Krochmalnik, an expert in the area of Jewish history and historical transmission. Through rabbinical hermeneutics, computation of the date 5707 can be achieved by naming the sons of Haman.<sup>40</sup>

*“Thus a Happy End was pre-programmed in the Bible.”*

*“While many Christians as well as some Jews take the Book of Esther to be aggressive in nature [...], most Jews consider it ‘fun and fantasy.’ [...] Jews, having endured cruel whims and persecutions by non-Jews, indulge in the fantasy of role reversal, of placing themselves in the role of non-Jews and vice-versa.”<sup>41</sup>*

The function of such humor is to deconstruct a world, which just a short time before, had seemed immutable; the victim becomes the victor, and the fool becomes the wise man. Laughter leads to healing and

emotional transcendence of the world. Just as the pious Jew Mordechai replaces the anti-Semitic tyrant Haman in the Persian court, Jews in their fantasy replace non-Jews in the world hierarchy. Such a jovial ignoring of reality, as occurs during the festival of Purim, shows how easily a Haman can emerge from a Mordechai – how easily a warrior for righteousness can turn into a plain killer. The authoritarian nature of this goal has to be acknowledged.<sup>42</sup>

Irit Ciubotaru stresses the contemporary nature of the Esther story:<sup>43</sup>

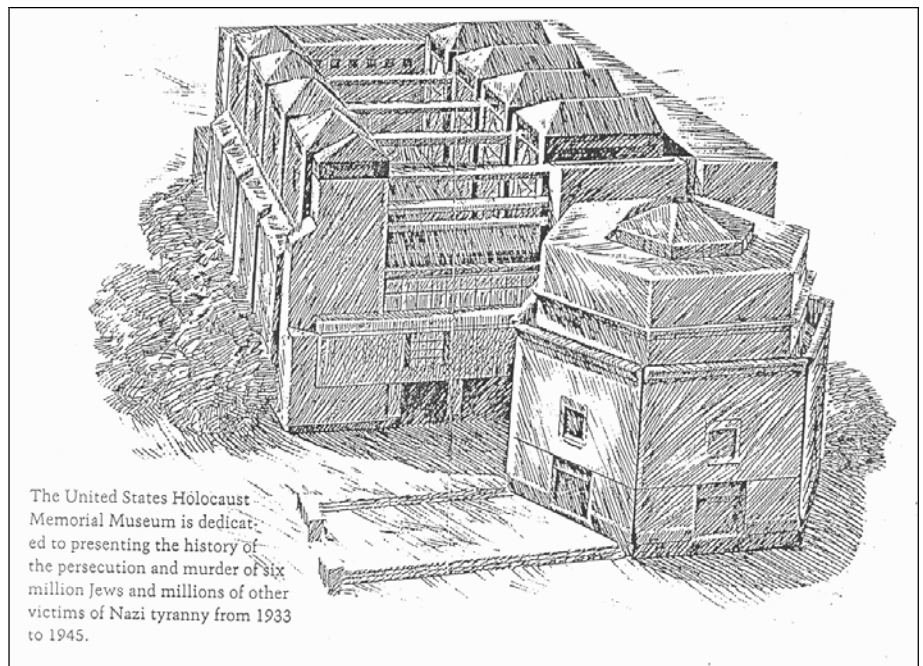
*“The symbolism of this story concerns Jews today as well as then. Conformity, invisibility and humility cannot permanently conceal Jews from evil intentions. Circumstances will always be such that, in one way or another, the Jews in their uniqueness will expose themselves and tear away the veil of assimilation. What makes this hidden miracle so important for us is the message that God ever and again, in His way, leads us back to our true identity.”*

The carnival like character of the Purim festival invites comparison with Fasching, Fastnacht (Shrovetide), Carnival, and Mardi Gras, which leads the Swiss cultural anthropologist Peter Weidkuhn to the conclusion

*“that Shrovetide represents an archaic form of political class struggle, in that it is a cultural institution which ritualizes the permanent social struggle. It allows the politically exploited to indulge in a kind of revolution without really making revolution; that is, to temporarily ‘improve’ his social position without taking risks involved in challenging the existing class structure.”<sup>44</sup>*

It reminds us of the ancient Roman festival of Saturnalia and related Greek Kronian festivals, in which slaves were served by their masters and free men could be whipped by slaves. In Babylon there was even the festival of Sakkaen, in which a slave assumed the role of the king (p. 300). Modern

#### UNITED STATES HOLOCAUST MEMORIAL MUSEUM



The United States Holocaust Memorial Museum is dedicated to presenting the history of the persecution and murder of six million Jews and millions of other victims of Nazi tyranny from 1933 to 1945.

Temple of Idolatries of the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> Centuries

English social anthropology has created the concept of the “ritual of rebellion” or ritualized rebellion.

*“Ritual anarchy allows society to recover from itself. [...] In the process, society quickly learns again just how important social norms really are. The Shrovetide-anarchistic dissolution of social structure quickly demonstrates to everyone the necessity of them.”*

At the end comes the “Signal for the anti-Shrovetide Counterrevolution.”<sup>45</sup> The effect of this is twofold: On the one hand, there is reconciliation and re-enforcement of the existing order until next year; on the other hand, a gradual re-evaluation of “ritualistic” rebels.

Weidkuhn, who based his study on the Paris student revolt of 1968, next discusses the “most modern form of Shrovetide chaos,” German philosopher Herbert Marcuse’s slogan of the “Great Refusal”.<sup>46</sup>

*“What in the case of Marcuse is masked as Philosophy of Revolution is, underneath the mask, a philosophy of permanent Shrovetide.”*

From the outset, this movement was set up as double strategy; a make-believe terrorist revolt on the one hand and a “March through the Institutions” on the other. In the Germany of today, the latter has been realized to the extent that the first half of the strategy has become obsolete, or else transferred to other groups.

One of the leading spokesmen of the late 60s, Jean Paul Sartre, expected the ultimate solution of the Jewish question to be assimilation of the Jews into a “classless society.” According to Sartre, the Jew is the human being who is considered as such by others. That is to say, the anti-Semite creates the Jew.<sup>47</sup> In his last interview with Sartre in 1979, Benny Uvy protested against this way of considering the matter. Instead, he wanted to “liberate Judaism from anti-Semitism.”<sup>48</sup> Sartre, however, exhorted the former Maoist to remain true to the world revolution as a Jew. The former militant atheist now relativized his former position and described Jewish identity in a positive light, emphasizing a special relationship to God. His life’s companion Simone de Beauvoir, who conducted the interview, remarked:<sup>49</sup>

*“What a sw...!”*

Let us return to the Purim festival. The “social-hygienic” function which it long shared with Shrovetide and Carnival has probably become obsolete. In 1945, the March Through the Institutions reached its “happy ending.” The humor of Tora became cruel and bloody for those hanged at Nuremberg. Julius Streicher’s last words are said to have been:<sup>40</sup>

*“This is my Purim festival for 1946.”*

It is more likely that the words were posthumously put in his mouth to make the executions appear to be fulfillments of prophecy. Harlan Fiske Stone, the Chief Justice of the US Supreme Court, dubbed the Nuremberg Tribunal a “high class lynching party.”

More recently, “The [first] Gulf War, which Saddam wanted to turn into an annihilation of Israel, came to an end on Purim.”<sup>40</sup> In view of such semi-official disclosures, we are not resorting to dubious conspiracy theories when we point out that American and allied war machinery follow Toranic and Cabalistic timelines.

Today quite a few people are reading (assisted by computer analysis) the prophesy about “Holocaust in Israel” into the Bible, which comes complete with the nickname of the recent prime minister, “Bibi”.<sup>50</sup> Christian and other non-Jewish readers of the Bible normally do not have access to such lore, because they are unfamiliar with the Hebrew language, the numerical values of Hebraic letters, and the occult interpretations that can be drawn from them.

Taking all this into consideration, do we not now have access to previously unknown aspects of Jewish humor? George Tabori was the only one “who could allow himself the cruel wisecrack of saying ‘the shortest German joke is Auschwitz.’” On this subject he “once wrote that only he who remembers with his belly, his ass, his colon and his sex organ is capable of remembering anything.”<sup>51</sup> So now we know:

*“The secret of redemption is memory.”*

It matters not whether our memory is retained in our belly or in our posterior. In a footnote on the Jewish expulsion from Spain in 1492, which was carried out by the converted Jewish grand inquisitor Torquemada, Walter Benjamin pointed out that, according to cabbalistic notation, “salvation means liberation as well as catastrophe.”<sup>52</sup>

Does this mean that catastrophe can also be salvation and that memory can be the secret of catastrophe as well as salvation?

*“In order for the past to remain alive, and not petrify into mere thought, it is necessary for the collective to constantly reinvent it. [...] Metaphysical hatred, when there is no immediate cause for it, [...] must emphatically be produced. [...] With both the above mentioned commands to hate in the Tora, a kind of commemoration is demanded which corresponds to neither experience nor memory. It is a kind of ‘counter-present’ commemoration. [...] Remember that the assault by Amalek did not come from the clear blue sky, but because of Israel’s massive loss of faith. [...] It was not Amalek but Israel herself who was to blame.”<sup>53</sup>*

### **The Real Victim of Holocaust Veneration is the Truth**

“According to one of the worldwide leading Holocaust scholars, Yad Vashem Prof. Yehudah Bauer [right]: ‘The story of the 93 girls in the Beis-Yaacov Girls School in Krakow, who in 1942 preferred suicide over falling into the hands of the Nazis, is not necessarily a lie. It just didn’t happen.’ [...] However, no explanation about the origin of the myth of ‘the 93’ will satisfy Mr. Leathon. ‘It is extremely important that the story of the Holocaust not be sullied by absurd untruths’ he writes to the synagogue in protest. ‘If we want the world to believe the testimony of the survivors, we have to make certain that we do not allow sensationalistic myths to continue.’”

*Simon Rocker and Joseph Millis, writing in “Is truth the real sacrificial victim?”, Jewish Chronicle, April 23, 1999, p. 31 (Retranslated from German)*



It is all really quite simple. Remember that Elie Wiesel himself, the premier “Holocaust Survivor” and winner of the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1986, wrote the following in *Legends of Our Time* concerning Holocaust tales:<sup>54</sup>

“In fact, some some were invented from almost the beginning to almost the end. [...] ‘Things are not that simple, Rebbe. Some events do take place but are not true; other are – although they never occurred.’”

And in the same vein, Dieter Lattmann wrote:<sup>55</sup>

“There is the paradox of creative ‘authenticity,’ which continues to fantasize from the vantage of a post-experiential reaction, half a century later.”

Can self-referential delusion also be a *raison d’être*? As Weizman said at the end of his speech to the German Bundestag:<sup>56</sup>

“We are a people of prayer and remembrance. We are a people of Hope and the Word. We have created no great empires, castles or palaces; all we have done is string words together. We have laid up courses of ideas, constructed houses of memories, and dreamed towers of longing.”

In Hannes Stein’s words, “breaking with hereditary fictitious traditions and escaping from one’s fictitious origins” apparently does not apply to Judaism.

*Jehovah before Absolute judgment:  
Such hollow bombast! “I am who I was  
And will eternally remain who I am!”  
You should say: “I will never change!”*  
(Friedrich Hebbel)

“A religion which causes inner unrest, war and disunity can not be the true religion.” (Michael Hospitalius, 1560)

This is true of Judaism’s daughter religions as well, one might add, including Marxism, the “fourth Judaic religion, in which Yahweh, the god of Jews, Christians and Muslims, is replaced by ‘Historical Necessity.’”<sup>57</sup> To this, one hundred million humans were sacrificed, of whom Alexander and Margaret Mitscherlich opined that they would be “somehow compensated.”<sup>58</sup> Most certainly not by that fifth Judaic religion, which is built on artificially induced metaphysical hate. At present, this is being pursued under great pressure as “counter-present commemoration.”

## Notes

First published as “Wahnwelten” in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung* 3(3) (1999), pp. 307-313. Translated by James Damon.

<sup>1</sup> May 1998, pp. 437f.

<sup>2</sup> H. Heine, *Sämtliche Schriften*, Ullstein, Frankfurt 1981, pp. 562f.

<sup>3</sup> A. Delbrück, *Die pathologische Lüge* (The Pathological Lie), Enke, Stuttgart 1891

<sup>4</sup> H. Heine, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 573

<sup>5</sup> No. 26, 23. June 1997, p. 190.

<sup>6</sup> *Biblical Archaeology Review*, March/April 1998, p. 61.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, July/August 1997, p. 32.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 34.

<sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 40.

<sup>10</sup> *The Mountain of Moses*, CTI Publ. Co., Solana Beach, CA; Reference in: *Biblical Archaeological Review*, Nov./Dec. 1996.

<sup>11</sup> *Wörterbuch der Philosophie* (Dictionary of Philosophy), 9, Vol. 1, “Gotteswort” (“Word of God”), Georg Müller, Munich und Leipzig 1910, pp. 458ff.

<sup>12</sup> *Süddeutsche Zeitung* (South German Newspaper), 23. November 1996, “Krimi Spezial” (Special Mystery).

<sup>13</sup> From Alan M. Dershowitz, *Chutzpah*, Little/Brown, Boston 1991, p. 132, Footnote.

<sup>14</sup> *The Jerusalem Post - International Edition*, 30. September 1989, p. 7.

<sup>15</sup> *Weser-Kurier*, 24 April 1998, p. 3.

<sup>16</sup> *Süddeutsche Zeitung*, 10 November 1998, p. 5.

<sup>17</sup> Rowohlt, Reinbek, 1992.

<sup>18</sup> Yehuda T. Radday, *Auf den Spuren der Parascha* (On the Trail of Parascha), Diesterweg, Frankfurt/Main and Sauerländer, Aarau.

<sup>19</sup> *Jesus, Freund der Terroristen* (Jesus the Friend of Terrorists), Stephanus, Uhlidingen 1994, p. 78.

<sup>20</sup> Dvorah, Frankfurt/Main 1990.

<sup>21</sup> Homiletische, erzählerische und rechtliche Auslegung und Erklärung der hebräischen Bibel. (Homiletic, Narrative and Legal Description and Explanation of the Hebrew Bible)

<sup>22</sup> Daniel Krochmalnik: “Amalek - Vernichtung und Gedenken in der jüdischen Tradition” (Amalek: Annihilation and Commemoration in Jewish Tradition) in: *Der Landesverband der Israelitischen Kultusgemeinden in Bayern*, no. 65, March 1995, p. 6.

<sup>23</sup> *The Thirteenth Tribe*, Random Hous, New York 1976; German Edition: Luebbe, Bergisch Gladbach 1989.

<sup>24</sup> Georges Friedmann, *Das Endes des jüdischen Volkes?* (The End of the Jewish Race?), Rowohlt, Reinbek 1968, p. 209.

<sup>25</sup> See the back cover of the Arthur Koestler’s *The Thirteenth Tribe*, *op. cit.* (note 23): “The story of the Khazar Empire, as it slowly emerges from the past, begins to look like the most cruel hoax which history has ever perpetrated.”

<sup>26</sup> Grabert, Tübingen 1992.

<sup>27</sup> R. M. Goodman, A. G. Motulsky, *Genetic Diseases Among Ashkenazi Jews*, New York, 1979, pp. 19f., 171f., 296f.

<sup>28</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 22.

<sup>29</sup> Raphael and Jennifer Patai, *The Myth of the Jewish Race*, Detroit 1989, p. 51.

<sup>30</sup> *Ibid.*, p. xiv.

<sup>31</sup> Reprint: Ben Chaim, *Juda erwache!* (Judea Awake) Proclamation to the Jewish Nation, Faksimile-Verlag, Bremen 1983.

<sup>32</sup> *Moses und die Offenbarung der Demokratie* (Moses and the Revelation of Democracy), Rowohlt, Berlin 1998, p. 9.

<sup>33</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 49f.

<sup>34</sup> Goodman & Motulsky, *op. cit.* (note 27), p. 23.

<sup>35</sup> *Spiegel-Spezial* (Special Issue) 2/1989, p. 80.

<sup>36</sup> Quoted in *Jewish Community*, Vol. 1, Issue 24/25, Vienna.

<sup>37</sup> *Sleipnir*, 6/98, pp. 40f.

<sup>38</sup> Leibowitz, *op. cit.* (note 20), p. 148.

<sup>39</sup> *The Revisionist*, 1(1) (2003), p. 91.

<sup>40</sup> Landesverband..., *op. cit.* (note 22), p. 5.

<sup>41</sup> Edward Greenstein, *The Jewish Holidays*; quoted in Svi Shapiro: “A Life on the Fringes” in: *Tikkun*; vol. 14, no. 1, Jan./Feb. 1999, p. 25.

<sup>42</sup> Svi Shapiro, *Purim: Humor in a Bitter World*, *ibid.*, p. 25.

<sup>43</sup> Landesverband..., *op. cit.* (note 22), p. 3.

<sup>44</sup> Weidkuhn, “Fastnacht - Revolte - Revolution” (Shrovetide - Revolt - Revolution); in: *Zeitschrift für Religions- und Geistesgeschichte*, Vol. XXI, Issue 4, 1969, pp. 297f.

<sup>45</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 302.

<sup>46</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 303.

<sup>47</sup> *Réflexions sur la question juive* (Reflections on the Jewish Question), Paris 1954; German: *Drei Essays*, Ullstein, Frankfurt/Main 1985.

<sup>48</sup> In: *Histoire*, No. 3, 1979, p. 175.

<sup>49</sup> Daniel Krochmalnik, “Die letzten Worte des Jean-Paul Sartre” (The Last Words of Jean-Paul Sartre), in: *Landesverband der Israelitischen Kultusgemeinden*, No. 60, Dec. 1993, pp. 20ff.

<sup>50</sup> Michael Drosnin, *Der Bibel Code* (The Bible Code), Heyne, Munich 1997.

<sup>51</sup> *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, Sept. 1, 1998, p. 41.

<sup>52</sup> Footnote No. 61 in H.-D. Sander, *Die Auflösung aller Dinge*, (The Dissolution of All Things), Castel del Monte, Munich undated, p. 92.

<sup>53</sup> Krochmalnik, in: Landesverband..., *op. cit.* (note 22), p. 6.

<sup>54</sup> Schocken, New York, 1982, p. VIII.

<sup>55</sup> “Lügner haben kurze Beine” (Liars Have Little Legs), in: *Süddeutsche Zeitung*, 26 Feb 1999, p. 13.

<sup>56</sup> See *The Revisionist*, 1(1) (2003), p. 84.

<sup>57</sup> Arnold Toynbee, *Menschheit und Mutter Erde* (Mankind and Mother Earth), Vienna 1982, p. 485.

<sup>58</sup> *Die Unfähigkeit zu trauern* (The Inability to Grieve), Piper, Munich 1969, p. 333.

# Groupthink

## Lemming-Like Thinking as Reason for Political and Scientific Fiascos

By Germar Rudolf

### 1. Introduction

Homo sapiens is a social animal, equipped with herd instincts, thus susceptible to mass and group psychological effects. Our social nature can have positive consequences, for example symbiotic and synergetic effects, but also negative consequences, like uncritical conformism and lemming-like loyalty.

In order to prevent negative consequences of group psychology, group dynamic effects influencing a group of humans must be understood. Next, it requires courage and stamina to name problems and to keep pointing them out even if the group pressures to ignore them. Research has shown that only a small percentage of any group of humans has the skill to step out of the group's bias and observe and analyze its own group objectively with a mental and emotional distance. And after having gained the necessary insight, an even smaller percentage of humans has the strength and character to act accordingly, which might be helpful to the group in the long run, but which is very often detrimental for the acting individual.

The most important feature of a group caught in negative group dynamic is that it has turned self-referential. Information from the outside no longer reaches the group, or only in a reduced way. Instead of objective input from the outside, it receives biased information mainly from and about itself; it consists of informational feedbacks. When such a system gets out of balance, it frequently does not tend to recognize and correct mistakes, but to sweep them under the carpet or to simply repeat or even increase them. In technology, the result is called a resonance catastrophe, which, under certain circumstances, can lead to the total destruction of the observed system.

Irving Janis coined the term *groupthink* for the group dynamic behavior of social groups of humans as discussed here. The basis of this behavior is the tendency of every human group to exert pressure on its members to conform to the group's norms. In the eye of its members or its leaders, these norms define the group, and in their mind, these norms thus create group cohesion and subsequently improve the group's capability to compete with other groups.

Tensions within the group occur, if a minority of group members violates these written or unwritten norms, which may be consciously defined or only subconsciously assumed. Initially, the conforming majority tries to convince the heretics to abide by those norms. If this does not succeed, a process of ostracizing and exclusion commences. The more severe the norm violation is or the more important the violated norm is for the subjective self-understanding of the group, the earlier and the more intensive this process will be. The highest priorities have those norms which are considered untouchable taboos of a society.

However, the social censorship of non-normative or non-conformist views starts much earlier, namely in the mind of the potential dissident who, already prior to any possible ostracism, has moral scruples to oppose the group majority, knowing that this act would be considered as non-conformist/non-normative,

or in other words: as outrageous and immoral. In his novel *1984*, George Orwell described these 'scissors in the head' in an extreme way with terms like "Doublethink" and "Crimesthink." The first term refers to the difference between what a potential dissenter really thinks and what he dares to explicitly think through in view of the consciously as well as subconsciously perceived conformity pressure. "Crimethink," on the other hand, is the well formulated thought or even the expressed thought violating norms, paradigms or taboos.

### 2. Symptoms

#### 2.1. SELF-OVERESTIMATION OF THE GROUP

Synergetic effects result in a group that can perform better than the sum of each individual member could, if they were by themselves, because the awareness of not being alone, but to fight for a 'common cause,' has a motivating effect on most group members, driving them to higher performances compared to a scenario where they all were mavericks.

On the other hand, the same effect may also result in the group overestimating its capabilities up to the point of a feeling of invulnerability of individual members. This is accompanied by uncritical optimism, self-destructive, sacrificial courage and a dangerously high preparedness to take risk on an individual level.

Another negative group dynamic effect is an uncritical assumption which is especially modern in democratic societies: that the majority is always right, in particular when it comes to moral assessments. The more dominant a majority is in a controversial matter, the less the majority opinion will be questioned by its members. This can lead to a point where the individual member no longer considers the moral consequences of its decisions and actions.

#### 2.2. NARROW-MINDEDNESS AND PREJUDICE

Because what cannot be true is not true, group members often collectively try to hush up or explain away statements deviating from their norms, in particular warnings about detrimental developments and information, which run contrary to their views.

Very often, stereotypical views about the carriers of different ideas prevail, especially about members and prominent personalities of competing groups. These views are dominated by negative, often malicious judgments, in which the weakness and inaptitude of the adversary is put in contrast to their own (overestimated) strength just as much as their own alleged moral superiority is contrasted by the claimed moral inferiority or even evilness of the adversary.

#### 2.3. CONFORMITY PRESSURE

I already mentioned the tendency of group members to be obediently submissive, to censor themselves even before any reprisals become effective or even before they are consciously aware of possible reprisals. Believing that the opinion of the

group or at least the majority of its members are right has as a consequence that doubts are already blocked when they have barely come to mind; that the doubter does not spell out his doubts, because he tends to underestimate the justification and importance of his arguments.

This swallowing down of contradicting opinions results in a lack of objections, which the entire group misinterprets as a tacit agreement, which in turn increases the impression of conformity, thus enhancing the conformity pressure – a fatal vicious circle.

If the self-understanding of a group is challenged in spite of this conformity pressure, in particular if central dogmas and taboos are attacked with strong, rational arguments, this usually does not result in objective discussions of these arguments, but in accusations against the dissident to be disloyal to the group or that he has malicious or immoral motives.

The next step in increasing conformity pressure is reached when a group develops self-assigned “Guardians of Virtue,” who make sure that all members abide by the group’s norms and that information running contrary to the group’s paradigms are kept away from the group, so that nobody doubts the objective and moral correctness of the group’s actions. In extreme cases, larger groups even institutionalize such censorship by assigning individuals or even entire departments with the task to ensure that the group’s norms are respected by all members, and that offenders are reported and subjected to disciplinary measures, which are often defined in meticulous detail.

### 3. Consequences

In exceptional cases, Group Think may well have positive effects, for example if a group is in deep crisis, the only way out of which is extreme cohesion of its members to prevent disintegration of the group and when extreme, self-sacrificial efforts of individual members are the only hope for success. But even in these exceptional cases, Group Think has a series of negative effects, which may even increase in a crisis:

#### 3.1. POOR COLLECTION AND PROCESSING OF INFORMATION

The result of a wrong confidence in possessing the absolute truth is often that only such information is sought or taken seriously which fits into the preformed opinion. Intentional searches for information challenging preconceived views do not occur or are ostracized or suppressed as an unwanted “heresy”.

Even if information contradicting preconceived views is gathered, it is frequently not objectively interpreted. It is simply forced into the existing image, often contrary to its obvious meaning.

#### 3.2. INCOMPLETE SURVEY OF ALTERNATIVES

Because of the group’s bias, alternative objectives and courses of action are ruled out dogmatically when operative goals and strategies are set, which means that alternative scenarios are not even assessed for their potential qualities. Thus, potentially better goals and strategies are rejected out of hand.

#### 3.3. FAILURE TO REVIEW OLD DECISIONS

Even if strategies agreed upon encounter enormous difficulties, and even if the initial objective seems to be unreachable, a

critical reassessment of old decisions is often avoided, because doubts about the correctness of old decisions is considered a lack of loyalty and any alternative suggestion is considered to be a heresy.

#### 3.4. FAILURE TO EXAMINE RISKS

False information and examination of the reality necessarily results in a faulty assessment of risks involved in suggested courses of action. Group Think thus results in careless action, aggressive, conflict-prone economic or political behavior. Economic and political disasters are very often provoked by such behavior.

#### 3.5. NO ALTERNATIVE PLANS

Believing in the group’s infallibility results in a lack of finding and surveying all reasonable alternatives, so that the group has backup plans in case it turns out that the initial evaluation is wrong. Thus, once agreed upon, plans without alternatives are being pursued even if they have already failed.

### 4. Antecedent Conditions

Group Cohesion: A trivial condition is of course that the group has any kind of identity giving it cohesion.

Insulation from Criticism: Decision makers of groups tend to insulate themselves from criticism coming from the outside. Outsiders are usually not taken seriously or are even rejected as hostile to the group.

Hierarchy: Authoritative hierarchical structures prevent or impede the forwarding of criticism from the bottom to the top.

Faulty Decision Making Procedures: No formalized procedures are implemented, which renders it unlikely that critical views from inside and outside reach the decision makers without negative consequences for the critics.

Homogeneity of the Group: One major factor for a group’s cohesion, its homogeneity, is at the same time its weakest spot, if this homogeneity is also given for views decisive for the decision making process.

Stress: Threats against the group from outside – even if only perceived subjectively – increase the tendency for Group Think, because conformity pressure grows in such situations.

### 5. Remedies

The first step in avoiding Group Think and the failures regularly resulting from it is to prevent the conditions listed above – except, of course, for group cohesion, which should just be kept at a reasonable level.

A culture of open and objective critique has to be cultivated, which includes the repeated encouragement to critique. A system must be implemented which channels such critique effectively to the decision makers, surmounting all the hierarchical hurdles.

Such an institutionalization of critique must not only include internal critics, but also critics from outside of the observed group, who are to be invited regularly to the decision making procedures or whose views should at least be presented and explained on a regular basis.

*Advocati diaboli* are especially effective, that is, individuals who intentionally take positions in opposition to – or even hos-

tile against – views and strategies agreed upon, and who try their best to defend these positions. This forces the decision makers to convincingly harden their views against such argumentative critic or, if this is not possible, to revise their views.

It has to be pointed out and stressed over and over again that all analyses and all research is initially open to all results. This means that those results which are most radical and diametrically opposite to the expected results should be defined and discussed. Under no circumstances should they be excluded *a priori* from consideration or marked as objectionable. For each of the case scenarios under consideration, courses of action are to be outlined, preferably by different, independent groups, whose different results are henceforth to be discussed.

Searching information about an objective must be an ongoing process and has to include in particular such information which contradict hitherto held views, because only this information are able to reveal dangers resulting from decisions already made.

## 6. Group Think and Revisionism

### 6.1. THE ANTI-REVISIONISTS AS A GROUP

#### 6.1.1. DEFINITION OF THIS GROUP

The group dealt with here consists of 95 to 99% of the entire population of all western societies, that is in an order of magnitude of probably up to one billion people. The only factor that defines the cohesion of this group is their sometimes fanatical opposition to fascism, racism, anti-Semitism, and National Socialism. Leading members in the hierarchy of this group, that is in media, politics, and academia, may each have other individual reasons, which contribute to their identification with this anti-group, like scholarly, economic and political aspects, but these reasons will not be considered here.

Fact is that almost all attempts to subject German history of the years 1933-1945 and those aspects of general European history entangled with this era of German history to a critical revision, encounter sometimes fanatical resistance by this group with the declared reason that such endeavors are an attempt to revive or rehabilitate fascism, racism, anti-Semitism, National Socialism and so on.

#### 6.1.2. STRUCTURE AND SYMPTOMS

Leading Jewish organizations like Yad Vashem, the Anti-Defamation League and the Simon Wiesenthal Center are on top of the anti-revisionist Hierarchy. Whatever these organization declare is taken as sacred law by their group. Ideologically seen, we deal here with Jews, committed Zionists, and dedicated German-Haters. This is the absolute, impenetrable hierarchical top of this group. Historians, political scientists, sociologists, and religious scholars, who have dedicated their career to the Holocaust dogma, define the correctness of factual statements. Politicians of many nations define the rules – sometimes only by setting school curriculums and memorial days, but sometimes even by enacting penal laws. These rules define what is to be believed, what has to be commemorated and honored and how. Finally, the media – in some countries together with the public prosecutors – watch with eagle eyes that announced truths are accepted and behavioral rules are obeyed. Ideologically seen, this elite is essentially – at least subcon-

sciously – anti-racist/egalitarian on one hand, but anti-German as well as philo-Semitic/racist on the other, two irreconcilable ideological poles, to be sure, which is, however, typical for this worldview.

The almost unassailable power of the upper hierarchical level has led to a hubris when it comes to defining alleged historical truths, which is then abused to deduct a political pseudo-wisdom that has become as widespread and universally accepted as nothing else in mankind history. This absolute power has led to a moral overestimation, in which “Auschwitz” is defined as the absolute zero on the moral scale, the absolute evil. As a result of this, victims of “Auschwitz” as well as all activities apparently in opposition to “Auschwitz”, are considered to be absolutely good.

This moral hubris and extreme power resulted in a worldwide conformity pressure. Revisionist periodicals like *The Revisionist* are full of examples about the legal and social repressions of individuals who dared to criticize dogmatic views of this group. This is not restricted to Holocaust revisionists, who challenge the central taboo of this group head-on, but also for critics who merely scrutinize more marginal issues, like the “race question,” the “Jewish question,” or similar topics.

Insulation from criticism is total. Everybody who opens his mouth, within this group or outside of it, will be socially ostracized and may even end up in prison. Internal critics are silenced, if need be with threats of violence, as was shown by the example of the Jew David Cole. Academic critics lose their job, their career, their academic degrees, and sometimes even their freedom (Stäglich, Faurisson, Reynouard, Plantin, Walendy, Witzsch, Rudolf...). These opponents of this group’s views are dehumanized and depicted as devils incarnate and treated accordingly.

Dissenters within this group are not accepted at all, not even for a second. A critical review of reigning views and decisions is not only not encouraged, but also expressively condemned and punished.

If this group gets into a precarious situation due to obvious failures uncovered by daring dissenters, rather than admitting mistakes, a wave of propaganda is unleashed against these evil dissenters in order to increase the coherence of the group and to reinforce the uncritical belief of all members in the moral superiority and objective correctness of the group’s views and dogmas: media campaigns are launched, movies are made, museums built, memorial days announced, Holocaust education made compulsory, etc... The resulting extreme hysteria of the group’s members leads to an extreme form of Group Think, against which only a tiny minority can resist. Under such hysterical and threatening conditions, 99% and more of all humans start cutting out thoughts in their minds already at such an early point that they consider mere doubts about the correctness of the prescribed truth already as worthy of condemnation and punishment. Thus, a potential doubter develops guilt feeling already before he has even finished his heretical thoughts.

All symptoms and conditions listed above are given for the group under consideration, some of them to an extreme degree. I therefore conclude that this group has indeed developed an extreme form of Group Think, as it can hardly be found with any other group on this planet.

### 6.1.3. CONSEQUENCES

Since the end of World War II, entire academic schools in history, sociology, political science, and also in other affected areas (like human biology), whose views could or can somehow be associated with fascism, racism, anti-Semitism or National Socialism – no matter if justly or unjustly so – have been prevented from participating on an equal level in scholarly discussions and controversies. This led unavoidably not only to scientific imbalances in those areas, but also to imbalances in the affected societies, because essential aspects and facts have been excluded from the decision making process. It is hard to determine how much this fact contributes to today's problems of mainly western societies, but in some areas an influence can hardly be ignored, for instance in analysis and controlling the middle east conflict, the worldwide migration, collapsing birth rates of Caucasians with resulting instability of pension systems, the increasingly desolate condition of western educational systems, as well as the effect of international mega-capitalism and neo-imperialism under the cover of the term "globalization."

In the meantime, the decision makers in Jewish lobby groups and in science, politics, and media have maneuvered themselves into a position, where an admission of profound mistakes is no longer possible without a fundamental destruction of their credibility. This would resemble a social suicide of this group. It can therefore not be expected that these power elites will ever stop pursuing the strategy of inducing hysteria in the masses in order to keep up the conformity pressure. Thus, as a result of increasingly uncontrollable political, social, and economical imbalances, this system will have to collapse on a worldwide basis before any fundamental change seems to be possible.

## 6.2. THE REVISIONISTS AS A GROUP

### 6.2.1. DEFINITION OF THIS GROUP

I define as members of this group all those who are seen as adversaries or even enemies by the first group discussed above, which includes: Biologists who are convinced that human characteristics and behavior is mainly genetically determined; political scientists who prefer national values over international ideologies; sociologist and pedagogues who reject egalitarian views on education; opponents of the Jewish faith and of Zionism; historians who view the German-European history in a more balanced, differentiating way. These subgroups are necessarily very heterogeneous, thus having only a very low group cohesion. Although some representatives of these subgroups are aware that all of these different subgroups are in a mutual, though involuntary confrontational position against the worldwide dominating ideology of the first group discussed above, only the subgroups develop group structures, which usually do not differ from the structures of any other average group. No structure exists that would give those subgroups a common basis to form a super-group, thus no Group Think can develop either.

In a more narrow sense, I define as members of the revisionist group all those individuals who have a critical attitude towards the dogmatic core of the first group, that is Holocaust revisionists, a subgroup of the before mentioned critical historians. This group has a structure that is quite different from

"normal" social groups, mainly as a result of measures of persecution, repression, and ostracism to which the members of this subgroup are exposed. Subsequently, I will therefore focus on this subgroup.

### 6.2.2. STRUCTURE AND SYMPTOMS

Although the ideological make-up of this subgroup is anything but homogeneous, the proportion of individuals who have anti-Semitic, racist, or National Socialist views or who at least do not have any problems in associating with such individuals, is many times higher within the group of Holocaust revisionists than in the average population. To a certain degree, this unbalanced consistency is a counterpart to the ideological bias of the anti-revisionist group. The possible danger emanating from this reduced heterogeneity is thus similar in both groups.

Stress is the main factor causing symptoms of Group Think in this subgroup, which has its origin in social persecution as well as sometimes legal prosecution. Members of this subgroup tend to generalize morally reprehensible behavior of some members of the anti-revisionist group, thus accusing all members of the anti-revisionist group to be morally inferior, which can, in an extreme case, lead to the confrontation with almost the entire rest of the world. This subgroup as well develops a sense for loyalty and exerts conformity pressure, leading to non-objective attacks against dissident members of this group who dare to criticize group specific behavior. However, since this subgroup lacks any organizational structure and executive powers – both prevented by permanent persecutory intrusions by the anti-revisionist environment – such attacks are only verbal and do not last very long.

Dealing with arguments and views of the anti-revisionist school of thought is the main focus of revisionist activity. Hence, an insulation of this subgroup from external criticism and a restriction of the search for, and interpretation of, information cannot occur categorically for principal reasons. Such a restriction can, however, occur on a lower level, that is when certain details are discussed, which still can be decisive. In this regard, the revisionist school of thought is not any different than any other normal school of thought, which all have the tendency toward a certain academic self-satisfaction.

### 6.2.3. CONSEQUENCES

With its persecutory pressure, the anti-revisionist environment tries to push the revisionists into total social isolation. This isolation results in a lack of *objective* criticism rendered against revisionist theories. For mere self-protection, non-revisionists try to avoid being brought into context with revisionists, even if they consider revisionist views to be partly intriguing or even convincing. This tendency of outer isolation is increased by an inner tendency of this subgroup to suppress internal dissidents, whose dissent is seen as a threat to the group's cohesion, which isn't that strong anyway due to this subgroup's heterogeneity and the permanent social pressure it faces. Both bear the danger that revisionists turn into a group of self-referential researchers and writers, or, as mainstream writers express it sometimes, that they develop a "cartel of self-quoters". Active resistance and counter measures are necessary to fight this tendency.

## 7. Observations

As all schools of thought, so does historical revisionism need critical, unconventional thinkers as well as individuals who are eagerly prepared to assume and introduce controversial or opposing standpoints into any discussion. It is necessary to break through the walls of social isolation, which the environment keeps building around the revisionist group. This can be done first of all by cultivating a culture of discussion, which does not only accept *advocati diaboli*, but gladly welcomes them. This is so because only if revisionist theories can withstand the critiques of its harshest opponents, can it be considered fit to convince the world – at least theoretically.

There are sometimes attempts within revisionism to exclude from a scholarly debate critical, unconventional thinkers who have accepted the revisionist challenge and want to answer on an objective, factual basis. Such a behavior is not only detrimental to the revisionist group at large, but even more importantly to the entire process of researching the truth.

Despite all the stress this group is subjected to and which should be taken seriously, controversies are the extra something in any scholarly discourse and the key to the truth. For this reason, papers should continue to be published in revisionist periodicals, which challenge revisionist views. As the editor of two such periodicals, I am sometimes criticized for opening the col-

umns of my journals to contributions which appear to contradict “our” philosophy or whose lack of scholarly value appears to be “self-evident”. It is exactly such dogmatic judgments *ex cathedra* which define Group Think and which are thus so dangerous. If a discussion shows that a certain view is untrue or untenable, it is much better to expose this fact to the world rather than to stay silent, and thus to give the impression that one has run out of arguments. And if it turns out that opposing arguments aren’t completely untenable after all, they will help to render our research result even more accurate.

As long as such an exchange or arguments is objective and is dealing with facts, it is worth a discussion. Everything in moderation, of course.

### Further Reading

- Irving L. Janis, *Groupthink. Psychological Studies of Policy Decisions and Fiascoes*, Houghton Mifflin, Boston 1982
- Paul ‘t Hart, *Groupthink in Government. A Study of Small Groups and Policy Failure*, Johns Hopkins University Press, Baltimore 1994
- Paul Kowert, *Groupthink or Deadlock. When do Leaders Learn from their Advisors?*, State University of New York Press, Albany 2002

## In Memoriam Jean-Claude Pressac

### Jean-Claude Pressac and Revisionism

By Jürgen Graf

When Jean-Claude Pressac suddenly died at the early age of 59 on the 23<sup>rd</sup> of July 2003, I was deeply moved. I had never met him personally; however, on account of his important role in the ‘Holocaust’ controversy, I had been involved with him since 1991, when I began my own research into the subject. Like other revisionists, I was challenged by his ideas. Of all the champions of tales of Jewish exterminations and homicidal gas chambers, Pressac, together with the long dead Jewish-English historian Gerald Reitlinger, was the only one whom I could regard with any degree of respect.

Pressac was a pharmacist by profession, and like nearly all writers who support the ‘Holocaust’ tale he had no formal training as a historian. This is true of most of those who subscribe to the official version of the fate of the Jews during the Second World War, as well as most revisionists. Pressac was not Jewish and he stood on the right politically.

In his youth, Pressac read a novel by the French author Robert Merle entitled *La mort est mon métier* (Death is My Profession). This was a gruesome tale about Rudolf Höß, the first commandant of Ausch-

witz, and had strong emotional impact on the impressionable child. For the rest of his life, Pressac was haunted by the thought of Auschwitz. At some point in his adult life he began to have doubts about the accuracy of official horror stories concerning ‘extermination camps,’ however, and so began to investigate revisionism.

He made the acquaintance of Robert Faurisson, Pierre Guillaume and other French revisionists, whom he assisted for some time. The collaboration with Faurisson ended in personal animosity, which characterized all their subsequent relations.

Pressac then rejected revisionism and set out to disprove its arguments. His willingness to engage revisionists in open debate distinguished him from orthodox ‘Holocaust’ historians such as Raul Hilberg, Leon Poliakov or Lucy Dawidowicz, who categorically refused to consider scientific objections to the official version of ‘Holocaust.’ Thanks to his earlier collaborations, Pressac was intimately familiar with revisionist arguments, which he realized could be refuted only by proving the *technical feasibility* of alleged exterminations of Jews in homicidal gas



Jean-Claude Pressac



chambers. This became the precise goal that he set for himself.

During his collaboration with Faurisson, Pressac had visited Auschwitz several times and gained the trust of the staff of the Auschwitz Museum. He was allowed admittance to the archives, where he examined and copied a great many documents and construction plans.

He soon became one of the best-informed authorities on the subject of Auschwitz. In the eyes of the defenders of orthodox lore, he was the ideal person to scientifically refute Revisionist views. Since the late 1970s revisionism had made tremendous progress, thanks to the investigations of Arthur Butz,<sup>2</sup> Wilhelm

Stäglich,<sup>3</sup> Robert Faurisson,<sup>4</sup> Henri Roques,<sup>5</sup> and other researchers<sup>6</sup>. The 'Holocaust' profiteers and other defenders were greatly upset. In addition, in the Spring of 1988, the Leuchter reporter was released.

Looking for someone who could refute Leuchter, the opponents of revisionism settled on Pressac. Late in 1988 he published an article identifying several weak points in the Leuchter article, although his arguments also contained mistakes.<sup>7</sup>

The article was impressive for two reasons. In the first place, it proved that Pressac was undeniably talented and well informed. On the basis of construction plans, without having visited Majdanek concentration camp, he undertook an incisive

## The Double Agent

By Germar Rudolf

In May of 1993 great doings were afoot at Max-Planck Institute for Solid State Physics in Stuttgart. One of the young PhD candidates there had become involved in a scandal, which was making news throughout Germany. The name of the PdD candidate was Germar Rudolf, the author of these lines. My scandalous activity consisted of having prepared, at the request of the legal defense of Major General Otto Ernst Remer, an expert report on the so-called 'gas chambers' of Auschwitz, in which I arrived at the conclusion that it was physically impossible for mass gasings to have taken place as reported by eyewitnesses. Shortly after Easter of 1993, Gen. Remer had sent thousands of copies of this report to prominent politicians, jurists, historians, chemists and the various media in Germany. As a result of this, every lobbyist and pressure group imaginable demanded that my activities as expert witness be suppressed by every means available. In that memorable springtime I received a number of telephone calls from various news media at my worksite, which displeased the business office of the Institute. The identities of the various callers and contents of conversations are of no interest here, with one exception: when the gentleman on the other end identified himself as Jean-Claude Pressac. He asked for my private telephone number, which I politely declined to give him.

I suggest that he communicate with me in writing. To this he replied that, for reasons of security, he preferred to not communicate with me in writing, because it would be dangerous for him to do so. Then he warned me that I too should be on guard. Concerning the 'Holocaust' in particular, he advised me to avoid challenging every aspect of it at one time. He said that in dealing with 'Holocaust' the only hope for success without risking personal danger was to attack it piecemeal, one aspect at a time.

Since that telephone conversation, I have been convinced that Jean-Claude Pressac believed that we revisionists are correct in principle. In view of the overwhelming might of the exterminationists, however, he arrived early at the conclusion that the 'system' had to

be fought from within. His apparent defection to the ranks of 'the enemy' and service to the cause of exterminationism was his version of salami tactics. His plan was to use the 'system' in order to extract one concession after another.

If we consider his publications in chronological order, it is obvious that with each publication, Pressac came closer to one or another aspect of revisionism. His first step was simply to make public discussion of the subject possible; his second, to make the 'system' acknowledge the priority of scientific evidence over eyewitness testimony; his third, to force it to acknowledge the contradictions inherent in such testimony. With every new publication he also reduced the number of victims, while his evaluation of eyewitness testimony grew more critical. Finally, after attacking the very foundations of the 'Auschwitz Myth,' he turned upon the other so-called 'extermination camps' (see page 431.)

After the publication of his second book in 1993, he must have gradually grown frightened, since subsequent revisions of the book made him many enemies. His telephone conversation with me was not the only place where he revealed his fears. Carlo Mattogno reports that he broke off all contacts with him at that time. Prof. Faurisson reports that he suffered a near collapse during Faurisson's trial in 1995, begging the judge to excuse him from answering Faurisson's questions:<sup>1</sup>

*"You must understand that I have only one life. You must understand that I am alone in my battle."*

He refused to testify because he clearly saw that he was completely isolated and his life was in danger. The only explanation for this is the fact that a candid statement before the French court would have had severe consequences since it would have been revisionist in nature.

And so, even though his writings are scientifically suspect, Pressac was without doubt the most politically successful revisionist to date. He was in fact our double agent.

Many thanks, Jean-Claude!

analysis of its alleged homicidal gas chambers. According to official views, Jews had been murdered there primarily with Zyklon B and to a smaller extent with carbon monoxide. Pressac proved indisputably that, because of camp design and construction alone, Zyklon B could not have been used to commit murder. He continued to argue that homicidal gassings were committed using carbon monoxide, however.

Ten years later Carlo Mattogno, in his book on Majdanek,<sup>8</sup> which he co-published with me, relegated the carbon monoxide theory to the realm of legend alongside Zyklon B. With his article on Majdanek, Pressac opened to debate a central point of orthodox 'Holocaust' concepts. He also showed that the supporters of Jewish annihilation theory were as annoyed with him as were the revisionists.

I do not know whether the 'Nazi Hunters' Serge and Beate Klarsfeld initially contacted the maverick researcher or whether he first approached them. At any rate, collaboration now came about. The Klarsfelds provided Pressac with the necessary financial support to produce a book, which was supposed to squelch revisionism for all time, by scientifically proving beyond all doubt that exterminations of Jews really took place in the fabled gas chambers of Auschwitz.

By the end of 1989 Jean-Claude Pressac's *Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers* was finally completed and published in English by the Beate Klarsfeld Foundation in New York. The French version was never published. The work, massive in its size and tremendous in its scope, was never available from book dealers, but was privately distributed by Pressac himself. It did not deliver what its title promised. The mammoth work did indeed provide a tremendous amount of information about Auschwitz; but the new information did not concern the technique and functioning of the alleged homicidal gas chambers.

*Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers* is a truly exceptional and puzzling book, a treasure trove of unpublished wartime German documents, which give new insight into numerous heretofore unknown aspects of camp history. There can be no doubt as to its scientific significance.

The Klarsfelds had paid Pressac to prove the reality of Jewish exterminations in gas chambers, but this is not what he did. To the contrary: As far as the 'death factory' myth was concerned, *Technique and Operation* represented an interception and touchdown for the revisionist side.

Pressac was honest enough to concede that he had discovered no actual documentary evidence for the existence of homicidal gas chambers. Instead, he presented his readers with "39 criminal traces" which, in their entirety, were supposed to abolish all rational doubt about homicidal gassings. These "traces" were goof-ups by the SS, especially the Central Building Administration. Despite strict orders to leave behind no documentary evidence of homicidal gassings, according to Pressac, they had been unable to avoid having indirect references to such crimes make their way into the written record. As evidence of this, he referred to an order for 'gastight doors' as a "criminal trace," because to his mind a gastight door could be used for only one thing: homicidal gas chambers.

The fact that Pressac, in order to 'prove' the reality of mass gassings on a gigantic scale (at this time he was still speaking

of a million to a million and a half victims at Auschwitz) was forced to resort to such flimsy evidence, speaks volumes about the shaky foundations on which was constructed the orthodox concept of Auschwitz. If mass exterminations in gas chambers had really taken place, they would have left behind so much evidence that resorting to "criminal traces" would have been superfluous. Faurisson hit the bull's-eye when he called the book a "stroke of good fortune for the revisionists and a catastrophe for the exterminationists." In a superb review, he used biting irony to totally demolish Pressac's arguments for the existence of gas chambers.<sup>9</sup>

In contrast to practically all orthodox 'Holocaust' writers, Pressac possessed enough of the scientific spirit to reject unquestioning acceptance of the statements of Auschwitz 'gas chamber witnesses.' In *Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers*, however, he neglected to take logical consequences into consideration. He picked and caviled at eyewitness testimony, pointing out inaccuracies here and contradictions there, but ultimately treated most testimony as credible. In most cases he was content to arbitrarily reduce the numbers of victims claimed.

It is impossible to determine what criteria Pressac used to judge the credibility of 'gas chamber witnesses.' In one instance he included without commentary a long extract from a book by a mentally disturbed man named Moshe Maurice Garbaz who claimed that an excavation unit dug, *in a single night*, a mass grave measuring 50 to 60 meters long by 20 to 30 meters wide and one and a half meters deep.<sup>10</sup> He lauded as "95% credible" a report by the Polish Jewish shoemaker Henryk Tauber, who described such things as prisoners in a large pit being basted with boiling human fat. Tauber also related that, as allied airplanes neared, the members of a cremation unit stuffed more than the usual number of bodies in the furnace muffles, causing huge fires to shoot out of the chimneys in an attempt to call attention to mass murders in progress.<sup>11</sup> Pressac also included the notorious 'Franke-Griksch Report,' one of the most flagrant falsifications in all 'Holocaust' literature. This report, allegedly written by SS Col. Alfred Franke-Griksch on the occasion of his visit to Auschwitz on 4<sup>th</sup> May of 1943, describes the ramp at Birkenau, which was not built until a whole year later.<sup>12</sup>

Pressac's tendency to 'correct' eyewitness reports not only did not improve the credibility of orthodox historiography, it made it shakier. One example: Pressac doubted the authenticity of the statement of Rudolf Höß in which he stated that in June of 1941 he had been informed by Heinrich Himmler of the secret planned extermination of Jews and given the task of setting up extermination facilities. Höß stated that at the time of this meeting with Himmler there were three extermination camps: Treblinka, Belzec and "Wolzek." Since Belzec was not completed until March of 1942 and Treblinka until July of 1942, and since there was never any such camp as "Wolzek," the entire story collapses. Pressac should have concluded from this and other obvious impossibilities that Höß was an unreliable witness whose statements were *a priori* suspect. After all, Pressac was aware that Höß had been tortured for three days by a British team headed by the Jewish sergeant Bernard Clarke.<sup>13</sup> Höß' subsequent statements to Polish Stalinists were also made

under coercion. Pressac, however, concluded that Höß had merely confused the dates and had actually received Himmler's order in the summer of 1942. This version also collapsed very quickly. How could 'extermination camps' have been constructed *before* orders went out to exterminate Jews? According to 'Holocaust' literature, Chelmo had begun operations around the end of 1941 and Belzec in March of 1942. In Auschwitz-Birkenau, exterminations are said to have begun in the spring of 1942 in two farmhouses, which had been converted to homicidal gas chambers. The problem is: this was before the crematoria were built. How could mass murders have been already underway in the farmhouses that were allegedly converted into gas chambers? It is obvious that orders from the highest authority would have been required for the construction of these alleged extermination facilities. It is equally obvious that orders for mass murder would have been required before the facilities began committing such atrocities. Thus, Pressac's new version was no more convincing than the old; it merely added to the confusion.

This is not the end of his inconsistencies, however. Pressac had studied the blueprints of the crematories carefully and had arrived at the same conclusions as the revisionists, namely that the crematories were constructed for normal sanitary purposes with no criminal intent. He decided that it was not until later that the administration of Auschwitz decided to convert them into 'death factories' by converting the existing morgues into homicidal gas chambers.

Apparently this theory is still prevalent in official 'Holocaust' literature. Raul Hilberg includes it in his book<sup>14</sup> in spite of its obvious illogicality. The first problem with the theory is that there is not a shred of documentary or scientific evidence to support farmhouse conversions. Even more significant than the lack of documentation is the following consideration: if in the summer of 1942 Himmler had entrusted Höß with organizing exterminations of Jews at Auschwitz and had also chosen Auschwitz as the location for future morgues for the planned crematories at Birkenau, why did the Auschwitz Central Construction Office not design the crematories as extermination facilities from the beginning? Why did they wait until they were already completed and then make necessary alterations by primitive manual means? One must be exceedingly naïve to believe such nonsense.

Is it possible that Pressac did not notice the obvious impossibilities that he was perpetuating? And what demon possessed him when he wrote that 97 to 98 percent of Zyklon B was indeed used to exterminate lice at Auschwitz and only 2 to 3 percent for exterminating Jews; yet Höß and consorts, when ordering Zyklon B to combat lice, pretended that they were using the poison to murder Jews? In his own words:<sup>15</sup>

*"The truth is that the SS used exterminations of Jews, about which their superiors had a general knowledge, without being informed of the practical details, to hide the terrible hygienic conditions in the camp, and to cover up their enormous consumption of gas for disinfection purpose. If knowledge of the disastrous state of affairs had reached Berlin, this would have had unfortunate consequences for Hoess, who had recently been congratulated by Himmler and promoted in rank, and for his entourage. [...]* So the SS

*made the Jews take the blame (the usual practice) for the huge Zyklon-B requirements, in order not to be accused of incompetence in the running of the camp and lack of control over the conditions obtaining their."* (emphasis in original)

Pressac certainly blundered with his description of gassings in Crematories IV and V, which according to him took place as follows:<sup>16</sup> an SS man climbed onto the roof over the gas chamber in order to drop Zyklon B granules through holes that had been made for this purpose. He used a ladder to do this. Since the openings were far apart and the SS man could carry only a limited amount of Zyklon B, he had to climb down after each insertion and get more Zyklon B.

Then he would climb up the ladder again. Altogether this SS man had to climb up and down the ladder a total of 18 times. The men assigned to this task began complaining about the "circus act." They demanded that changes be made to the gas chamber in order to rationalize the process of mass murder. The camp leadership then agreed to increase the size of the holes by 10 centimeters but rejected the idea of altering the gas chamber because, in Pressac's words:

*"[...] the camp authorities considered that a little physical exercise would do the medical orderlies responsible for gassing a world of good."*

Whatever possessed Pressac, a trained and gifted scientist (among other things, an excellent draftsman and photographer), to put such claptrap down on paper? Could it have been, in the final analysis, intended as irony? Was Pressac subtly exposing exterminationist theory to ridicule by demonstrating the absurdities inherent in official depictions of homicidal gassings? Perhaps this question will remain forever unanswered. At any rate, *Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers* was totally useless as a weapon against revisionism. For this reason the media ignored it whereas revisionists studied it closely.

It was a different story four years later, in September 1993, when Pressac's second and last book appeared, *Les crématoires d'Auschwitz. La machinerie du meurtre de masse*<sup>17</sup> (The Crematories of Auschwitz: Machinery of Mass Murder). This time, publication was accompanied by a noisy and well-orchestrated propaganda campaign coming from Frankfurt. The media were delirious with enthusiasm, tirelessly repeating that revisionism had been vanquished for all time. Even before release of the German translation in the spring of 1994,<sup>18</sup> the 'free press' of the 'freest state in German history' joined the howling chorus of triumph west of the Rhine. Writing in the *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung* on October 14, 1993, Joseph Haniman announced:

*"This book, complete with building plans and photographic materials, reads like an engineer's handbook. [...] Technical details, such as cremation capacity and fuel consumption per body, coldly document the horrendous subject matter."*

Any observant reader could see that this was not the case. Pressac's new work was anything but a scientific study, as it contained no references whatsoever to scientific literature on the subject. The 'Holocaust' propagandists were undeterred by such minor details, however. One of the most primitive of these, Eberhard Jäckel, blathered in *Die Zeit* for March 18, 1994:

*"Pressac's book is so scientific that it is well nigh boring, and for this reason is particularly valuable. [...] Pressac contradicts the anti-Semitic liars with their own scientific arguments. We are very curious to see what they will do now."*

The "anti-Semitic liars" responded with a book entitled *Auschwitz: Nakte Fakten* (Auschwitz: Bare Facts), in which "Manfred Köhler" (Germar Rudolf), Serge Thion, Robert Faurisson and Carlo Mattogno uprooted Pressac's arguments point by point.<sup>19</sup> Neither Pressac nor Mr. Eberhard Jäckel responded to the rebuttal.

In comparison with Pressac's first book, his second (which was about a tenth as long) was a scientific step backward. There was at least a trace of the critical spirit glimmering through *Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers*, despite all the inanities, but there was hardly anything in *Les crématoires d'Auschwitz* that could be called critical. In his introduction, Pressac promises us that this time, he will not rely solely on eyewitness reports to prove that mass murders took place, since these are "always unreliable." This time, he assures us, his arguments will be bolstered by documents. Unfortunately he promptly forgot his promise. Every time he described a gassing, he 'documented' it with an eyewitness report!

The "39 criminal traces" of *Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers* have shrunk to a quarter of the original number in *Les crématoires d'Auschwitz*. As Faurisson masterfully points out in his review, this means that Pressac "had now found harmless explanations for 30 details which four years earlier had seemed evidence of frightful atrocities." As replacement for the disappearing "traces" Pressac now introduced "definitive proof" of the existence of homicidal gas chambers. This consisted of a letter dated 2 March 1943 from the Topf company, addressed to the Central Building Administration at Auschwitz. The letter, concerning an order for "10 indicators of hydrogen cyanide residue" for Crematory II, initiated a lively discussion among revisionists. Robert Faurisson, "Werner Rademacher" (Walter Lüftl) and Carlo Mattogno provided differing explanations for the letter, but all agreed that it did not provide evidence of homicidal gassings.<sup>20</sup>

*Les crématoires d'Auschwitz* strongly resembles a novel. As a framework for narration, Pressac used documents, which had recently been discovered in Moscow's Central Archives for Collections of Historical Documents. He relates the story of how an engineer named Kurt Prüfer "with pretended concern" determines that a warranty for an oven has expired. Then the author describes how the SS personnel stationed at Auschwitz are mobilized for combat duty at the front and cancel their requisitions "with noisy protestations of disappointment" which "barely disguise their cowardly general relief." Next he describes how Oswald Pohl, after observing sick gypsy children at Auschwitz, "cursed the day" that he made the acquaintance of Heinrich Himmler. The obvious question for the serious researcher: how could Pressac have possibly known all that?

This kind of narration has very little in common with scientific research. Pressac then goes on to commit particularly grave scientific sins with statements concerning the capacities of the crematories, which he grossly overstates for reasons that are all too clear. At the end of his critique of Pressac,<sup>21</sup> Carlo

Mattogno vividly describes the dilemma in which the French scientist found himself, along with the entire 'Holocaust' elite:

*"In an article which appeared in 'Le Monde' on 21 February 1979, 34 French historians published a statement which ended with these words: 'One may not ask oneself whether such mass murder was technically possible. It was technically possible because it happened.' Jean-Claude did not abide by this principle. He was determined to scientifically challenge the question of the crematories of the alleged gas chambers of Auschwitz even though he lacked the competence to undertake such a task. Thus he was forced to acknowledge the methodological principle of revisionists that, when a contradiction arises between witness statements and empirical science, the latter is definitive. He made this acknowledgment by relating the numbers of 'gassing victims' to the capacities of the crematory ovens, even though he greatly overstated this. Thus he made an irreparable breach in exterminationist historiography, because science clearly proves the impossibility of mass exterminations at Auschwitz."*

The fact that Pressac had challenged the revisionists on their own turf and in effect given them the choice of weapons was unacceptable to many followers of orthodox 'Holocaust' lore. The Jewish-French movie producer Claude Lanzmann commented angrily that he preferred "the tears of the barber of Treblinka" to Pressac's gas testers. In "Barber of Treblinka," Lanzmann refers to Abraham Bomba, a character in his melodramatic film *Shoa*. Between sobs, Bomba describes how, preparatory to every gassing, he, along with sixteen other barbers, was obliged to shear the hair of seventy naked women sitting in a gas chamber which measured four meters square.<sup>22</sup> Lanzmann was right: the 'Holocaust' can survive only as myth and melodrama. Any attempt to prove it scientifically must end in catastrophe for true believers.

Another reason why exterminationists were horrified with Pressac's second book was because he massively reduced the number of Auschwitz victims. In the French version he mentions a total of 775,000 to 800,000 victims; in the German version, 630,000 to 710,000 (still an exaggeration of around 400 percent.) At that time the Auschwitz museum was no longer claiming four million, but rather one and a half million. With this reduction in numbers by the worldwide leading 'Auschwitz expert,' the number of six million 'Holocaust victims' was less defensible than ever. For this reason, Pressac fell into disgrace. After the brief storm of propaganda that accompanied publication of *Les crématoires d'Auschwitz* died down, his name quickly disappeared from the headlines. At the defamation trial *Irving versus Lipstadt*, which took place in London in 2000, Lipstadt called as expert witness, not Pressac, but rather the Dutch Jew Robert Jan van Pelt, who was clearly less informed than Pressac.<sup>23</sup>

According to his interview, Pressac had planned to publish a book on the Topf & Sons factory of Erfurt, which had been responsible for the construction of the crematories at Auschwitz. This will not happen now. However, the restless interloper between exterminationism and revisionism did leave behind an article following *Les crématoires d'Auschwitz*, as well as an interview. They are both challenging.

In 1995, an article by Pressac dealing with the “pure extermination camps” Auschwitz, Treblinka, Sobibor, and Belzec appeared in the French magazine *Historama*.<sup>24</sup> In contrast to official historiography, according to which these camps were supposed to have been designed exclusively for exterminating Jews, Pressac believed they were originally established as transit and delousing camps. He pointed out that, according to eyewitnesses, three adjacent barracks had originally been built in Belzec. The first barracks had served as a waiting room, the second as a bathhouse, and the third as homicidal gas chamber. The gas chamber was said to have contained three ovens. Pressac logically argued that it would have been pointless to build bathhouses in a facility designed for mass murder: why bathe your victims before killing them? Furthermore, he pointed out, ovens would not function in a chamber designed for carbon monoxide. Eyewitnesses had stated that Treblinka contained a furnace room with water boiler to produce steam in addition to the ‘suffocating chambers.’ Pressac pointed out that the only explanation for this was that “between the end of 1941 until middle of 1942 in Belzec, Sobibor and Treblinka, three steam delousing facilities were constructed.” He went on to explain:

*“The Wannsee Conference on January 20, 1942, established a program for the deportation of Jews to the East, which necessarily included processing the deportees in these three sanitary facilities.”*

Subsequently, as Pressac wrote in the article, the delousing facilities were converted to extermination facilities, that is to say homicidal gas chambers. It is unclear whether he actually believed this or simply made a tactical concession in order to have his article published. At any rate, his revelation that the “eastern extermination camps” had been constructed as transit and delousing facilities shook official ‘Holocaust’ lore to the core.

In June of 1995, Pressac granted an interview to Valérie Igounet, which, along with post-interview changes as stipulated by Pressac, was not released until 2000.<sup>25</sup> In this interview, Pressac drastically reduced the number of victims as postulated by the official historiography for ‘extermination camps’ with the exception of Auschwitz:

*“Chelmno: 80,000 to 85,000 instead of 150,000  
Belzec: 100,000 to 150,000 instead of 550,000  
Sobibor: 30,000 to 35,000 instead of 200,000  
Treblinka: 200,000 to 250,000 instead of 750,000  
Majdanek: fewer than 100,000 instead of 360,000.”*

Pressac based his numbers not on documents, but rather on private computations of the capacity of the ‘extermination facilities,’ which were not explained in the interview. Since the existence of these ‘extermination facilities’ is unproven and we would not know, even if they had existed, to what extent they were used, Pressac’s figures have no scientific value whatsoever. In the case of Majdanek, the only one of these camps for which documentary evidence is available, Pressac’s figures are more than double the real number of victims, since we can tell from existing documents that around 42,300 persons died in Majdanek camp.<sup>26</sup> But still, based on the lowest of his estimates, he has reduced the total number of victims of the five camps to 510,000, which is just one quarter of the official number. For the keepers of the official ‘Holocaust’ grail, this must have set off all kinds of alarm bells. It got even worse, how-

ever. In his interview with Igounet, Pressac said things, which must have made the blood run cold in the veins of the exterminationists:<sup>27</sup>

*“Concerning the massacres of Jews, several basic conceptions must be thoroughly revised. The expression ‘genocide’ is no longer appropriate. Every epochal change leads to a new evaluation of rigid canons of memory which we have heretofore been taught to regard as eternal. However, new documents inevitably surface which increasingly upset official certainties. Thus, today’s depiction of the system of concentration camps, while still triumphant, is doomed to collapse. What can be salvaged from it? Very little. The truth is that exaggeration of the extent of the concentration camp system is like squaring the circle – it means declaring that black is white. The truth is that national conscience does not care for sad stories. The life of a zombie is not inspiring, since pain suffered is exploited and converted into jingling coins: Medals, pensions, public office, political influence. Thus it becomes possible to be simultaneously victim and privileged individual, even executioner.”*

No revisionist could have expressed it better! Serge and Beate Klarsfeld thought they had found an invaluable asset in Jean-Claude Pressac in the struggle against “anti-Semitic liars.” After falling out with Faurisson, he had become a specialist on Auschwitz and turned his back on revisionism. They provided him massive financial backing to produce a book which was intended as a springboard against revisionism, but which produced a colossal backfire instead. Pressac, a chaotic and inconstant spirit, had too much self-respect to allow himself to be dominated by the Klarsfelds and their clique. By his constant reductions of the number of victims, his critiques of eyewitness accounts, and his treading on the core belief of orthodox ‘Holocaust’ lore, he caused immense damage to everyone who tried to hitch him to their wagon. As the premier champion of Jewish genocide and gas chamber theories, he entered into a debate about the scientific feasibility of the ‘Holocaust’ as suggested by the revisionists. He did this without first obtaining the necessary scientific and technical armor plating, and the discussion turned into a debacle for orthodox historiography. Facts are lethal enemies of the ‘Shoa’ legend, and every discussion of scientific details of the alleged genocide is a step further into the abyss for followers of the politically correct version of history. It is now too late to turn the rudder about. Since the exterminationists presented Pressac to the world as a genius who checkmated the revisionists with scientific evidence, it is no longer possible for them to hide behind the argument of the 34 French historians that “the Holocaust was scientifically possible because it happened, and no further discussion is allowed.”

No doubt the Klarsfelds rue the day that they were taken in by Faurisson’s rogue student. We revisionists, on the other hand, have every reason to wish that Jean-Claude Pressac may rest in peace.

## Notes

Translated from German by James M. Damon.

<sup>1</sup> R. Faurisson, “My Revisionist Method,” *Journal for Historical Review* 21(2) (2002), p. 7.

<sup>2</sup> A.R. Butz, *The Hoax of the Twentieth Century*, Historical Review Press, Brighton 1977; updated 3<sup>rd</sup> edition: Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago

- 2003.
- <sup>3</sup> W. Stäglich, *Der Auschwitz-Mythos*, Grabert, Tübingen 1979; Engl.: *The Auschwitz Myth*, Institute for Historical Review, Newport Beach, CA, 1986.
- <sup>4</sup> Faurisson, R., *Mémoire en défense*, La Vieille Taupe, Paris 1980; S. Thion, *Vérité historique ou vérité politique?*, La Vieille Taupe, Paris 1980.
- <sup>5</sup> H. Roques, *The Confessions of Kurt Gerstein*, Institute for Historical Review, Costa Mesa, CA, 1989.
- <sup>6</sup> Primarily: W.N. Sanning, *The Dissolution of East European Jewry*, Institute for Historical Review, Newport Beach, CA, 1983; Carlo Mattogno, *Il mito dello sterminio ebraico, Sentinella d'Italia*, Monfalcone 1985 (Engl.: English: "The myth of the extermination of the Jews: Part I," *Journal of Historical Review* 8(2) (1988) p. 133-172; part II: *Journal of Historical Review* 8(3) (1988) p. 261-302; Mattogno, *Il rapporto Gerstein: Anatomia di un falso*, Sentinella d'Italia, Monfalcone 1985; Mattogno, *La risiera di San Sabba. un falso grossolano*, Sentinella d'Italia, Monfalcone 1985; Mattogno, *Auschwitz: Due false testimonianze*, Edizioni La Sfinge, Parma 1986 (Engl.: "Two false testimonies from Auschwitz," *Journal of Historical Review*, 10(1) (1990), pp. 25-47); Mattogno, *Auschwitz: Un caso di plagio*, Edizioni La Sfinge, Parma 1986 (Engl.: "Auschwitz: A case of plagiarism," *Journal of Historical Review*, 10(1) (1990), pp. 5-24); Mattogno, *Wellers e i "gasati" di Auschwitz*, Edizioni La Sfinge, Parma 1987; Mattogno, *Auschwitz: Le confessioni di Höss*, Edizioni La Sfinge, Parma 1987; Mattogno, *"Medico ad Auschwitz": Anatomia di un falso*, Edizioni La Sfinge, Padua 1988; Mattogno, *Come si falsificava la storia: Saul Friedländer e il "rapporto Gerstein"*, Edizioni La Sfinge, Padua 1988.
- <sup>7</sup> Jean-Claude Pressac, "Les carences et incohérences du rapport Leuchter," *Jour J*, December 1988.
- <sup>8</sup> J. Graf, Carlo Mattogno, *KL Majdanek*, Castle Hill Publisher, Hastings 1998; Engl.: *Concentration Camp Majdanek*, Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago 2003.
- <sup>9</sup> Robert Faurisson, "Bricolages et 'gazouillages' à Auschwitz et Birkenau selon Jean-Claude Pressac," in: *Revue d'Histoire Révisionniste*, No. 3, November 1990; Engl.: *The Journal of Historical Review*, 11(1) (1991), p. 25-66; 11(2) (1991), p. 133-175.
- <sup>10</sup> Jean-Claude Pressac, *Auschwitz. Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers*, New York 1989, p. 164. Garbarz' Report was published under the title *The Survivor* in 1984 by Editions Plons, Paris.
- <sup>11</sup> J.-C. Pressac, *Auschwitz. Technique...*, p. 481. Taubers testimony is found in Appendix 18 to Volume XI the Höß Trial in Krakau (1947).
- <sup>12</sup> On this subject see also Brian Renk, "The Franke-Gricksch Resettlement Action Report: Anatomy of a Fabrication," *Journal of Historical Review*, Fall 1991, pp. 261-279.
- <sup>13</sup> Rupert Butler, *Legions of Death*, Arrow Books, London 1983, pp. 235ff.
- <sup>14</sup> Raul Hilberg, *Die Quellen des Holocaust. Entschlüsseln und Interpretieren*, Fischer Verlag, Frankfurt/M. 2002, p. 60; Engl.: Hilberg, *Sources of Holocaust Research: An Analysis*, R. Dee, Chicago 2001
- <sup>15</sup> J.-C. Pressac, *op. cit.* (note 10), p. 188.
- <sup>16</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 386.
- <sup>17</sup> Published by CNRS, Paris 1993.
- <sup>18</sup> J.-C. Pressac, *Die Krematorien von Auschwitz*, Piper Verlag, Munich/Zürich 1994.
- <sup>19</sup> H. Verbeke (ed.), *Auschwitz. Nackte Fakten. Eine Erwiderung an Jean-Claude Pressac* (Auschwitz: Bare Facts. A Response to Jean-Claude Pressac), V.H.O, Berchem 1995.
- <sup>20</sup> Robert Faurisson in: *Auschwitz. Nackte Fakten* (see preceding footnote), p. 76. Werner Rademacher, "The Case of Walter Lüftl," in: G. Rudolf, *Dissecting the Holocaust*, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed., Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago 2003, pp. 78-80; Carlo Mattogno: "Die 'Gasprüfer' von Auschwitz," *VffG* 2(1) (1998), pp. 13-22; Engl.: "The 'Gasprüfer' of Auschwitz," <http://codoh.com/gcgv/gcgvpruf.html>.
- <sup>21</sup> Carlo Mattogno, "Auschwitz. Das Ende einer Legende", in: *Auschwitz. Nackte Fakten*, *op. cit.* (note. 19), p. 162; Engl: *Auschwitz: The End of a Legend*, Granata Publishing, Palos Verdes, CA, 1994.
- <sup>22</sup> See B. Smith, "Abraham Bomba, Barber of Treblinka," *TR* 1(2) (2003), pp. 170-176; an older version of this article appeared in *Journal of Historical Review* 7(2) (1986), pp. 244-253.
- <sup>23</sup> See C. Mattogno, "Architektonische Stümpereien zweier Plagiatoren," *VffG* 4(1) (2000), pp. 25-33; G. Rudolf, "Gutachter- und Urteilsschelte", *VffG* 4(1) (2000), pp. 33-50; Engl.: "Critique of Claims Made by Robert Jan Van Pelt," <http://www.vho.org/GB/c/GR/RudolfOnVanPelt.html>.
- <sup>24</sup> "Enquête sur les camps de la mort," in: *Historama*, No. 34, 1995.
- <sup>25</sup> "Entretien avec Jean-Claude Pressac réalisé par Valérie Igounet" (Interview with Jean-Claude Pressac, Conducted by Valérie Igounet), in: Valérie Igounet, *Histoire du négationnisme en France*, Editions du Seuil, Paris 2000.
- <sup>26</sup> J. Graf, C. Mattogno, *Concentration Camp Majdanek*, *op. cit.*, (note 8), Chapter 4.
- <sup>27</sup> V. Igounet, *op. cit.*, pp. 641, 652.

## My Memories of Jean-Claude Pressac

By Carlo Mattogno

In spring of 1987, the first issue of the journal *Annales d'Histoire Révisionniste* appeared in France, containing, *i.a.*, a long article authored by me, "Le mythe de l'extermination des Juifs. Introduction historico-bibliographique à l'historiographie révisionniste".<sup>1</sup> Other articles contributed by me appeared in the issues no. 3 and 5.<sup>2</sup> The latter issue also carried a French translation of the *Leuchter Report*.<sup>3</sup>

In March 1989, Jean-Claude Pressac sent me a brief letter, in which he wrote that he had read the articles referred to above "with interest" and that he wanted to show me his response to the Leuchter Report. Enclosed with his letter was a photocopy of a study with the title "Les carences et incohérences du 'Rapport Leuchter'" (the deficiencies and incoherences of the Leuchter Report), which had just been published in the French periodical *Jour J*. The subtitle was given as "A scientific study against the gas chamber deniers," but it had been replaced with pencil by "A scientific study in view of the gas chamber deniers". This correction indicated – as I understood later – Pressac's honest desire to discuss with (at least some of) the revisionists and to let arguments decide the outcome of this discussion.

In his letter, Pressac mentioned a work on Auschwitz-Birkenau, which he had concluded in 1988, and he invited me to meet him in Camaiore, a fabulous tourist town in France, where he had rented a mansion during August of that year.

At that time, Pressac had already finished an article with the title "Les Krematorien IV et V de Birkenau et leurs chambres à gaz" (The crematoria IV and V of Birkenau and their gas chambers).<sup>4</sup> A summary of it appeared with the headline "Étude et réalisation des Krematorien IV et V d'Auschwitz-Birkenau" (Study and realization of the crematoria IV and V of Auschwitz-Birkenau) in the French anthology *L'Allemagne nazie et le génocide juif*.<sup>5</sup> Additionally, Pressac had supplemented the *Auschwitz Album*<sup>6</sup> with appendices about the crematoria of Birkenau as well as with explanations and comments.

Although I did not agree with his conclusions, it was obvious to me that Pressac was one of the most knowledgeable scholars in the field of Auschwitz. I was therefore glad to accept his invitation, and in August 1989 I finally had the pleasure – if not the honor – to meet him personally.

Pressac and his family welcomed me warmly and let me enjoy their hospitality, of which I have nice memories to this day.

Our discussions unfolded in a very relaxed atmosphere. They mainly revolved around his then upcoming book *Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers*.<sup>7</sup> With great enthusiasm, Pressac showed me the most important sections of his work. He had written down the French text on huge, 50 cm × 66 cm sheets, which carried photocopies of the documents reproduced for this book. Pressac gave all these sheets to me as a gift, but asked me not to talk about it prior to the release of his book.

The documentation prepared by Pressac was truly impressive, and I diligently started to study it. Pressac was honestly interested in a constructive critique of his book, and shortly after its publication, in March 1990, he invited me again, this time to his home in La Ville du Bois, a small village not far away from Paris. As before in Camaiore, he and his family welcomed me again very cordially.

Pressac lodged me in a small apartment located on top of his pharmacy, which he had turned into his study and where I was allowed to review thousands of documents in his possession. I always felt honored by the faith that Pressac had in me. He also dedicated one copy of his big book to me with the

handwritten entry "*Pour M. Carlo Mattogno. Le 8 Mars 1990. Jean-Claude Pressac,*"

During our lengthy discussion, my astonishment about his attitude grew steadily: it was apparently not important to him to convince me, and once he even recommended that I should remain a revisionist. His sincerity cannot be doubted, and it seemed to me that he was more interested in free spirits, who are capable of objective criticism, than in uncritical followers. He was, of course, himself very much a free spirit, perhaps a little bit too much – in contrast to those official historians, who still cling to the outdated Auschwitz image of 1945. He told me that the Jewish translator who translated his book from French to English interrupted his work several times threatening to reject this project because some of Pressac's "revisionist" views tasted bitter to him.

Pressac's sincere desire for a dialog with those revisionists he considered respectable was also the basis of his friendship with Michel Sergent, a retired teacher who, in the late 1980s, had established an "Association for the Defense of free Historical Research" and promoted a dialog between revisionists and representatives of the official version of history. I had the

## Jean-Claude Pressac: In Memoriam

By Robert H. Countess, PhD

On February 17th, 2001 I drove my rental car from Le Vesinet – where I was visiting friends – down to La Ville du Bois, about a two hour drive on a nice, sunny afternoon to drop in at Jean-Claude Pressac's pharmacy and hope to find and meet him at the close of the day's business. It was Saturday and I calculated that I might succeed better by not calling in advance.

It worked wonderfully.

He closed the pharmacy about seven o'clock and I arrived about fifteen minutes beforehand, introduced myself to a clerk who then brought me to Monsieur Pressac. I began in English, but he preferred German, since my French is almost non-existent. Immediately, I made reference to my friend David Cole's visit to the pharmacy some years earlier and that I would like a few minutes, if possible.

Then I showed him a copy of our Theses & Dissertations Press book *Dissecting the Holocaust*, but I quickly opened to the Index and pointed to the many references to "Jean-Claude Pressac," thinking that he, like the rest of us, might be influenced positively out of an Ego-interest – he was indeed!

I told him I had an extra copy in case he might want to purchase it, and he paid me in French Francs. I recall asking to see the pharmacy and he showed me around, then excused himself to call his girl friend and invited me to join them for dinner – to my pleasant surprise, of course.

His girl friend arrived wearing a short fur coat and nicely dressed, while he was already attired in a dark suit. I then followed them several kilometers to their home, parked my car, and then rode with them to, I thought, a restaurant, but we arrived fifteen minutes

later at the nice but modest home of a retired French military professor where a full five-course French meal – sumptuous and most delicious – was served over the next two hours. Most of the conversation was in French with Pressac occasionally explaining something to me in German. We men toured the host's wine cellar where I saw an enormous collection of fine and ordinary wines.

At one point during the meal, Pressac brought out the *Dissecting the Holocaust* book and showed it to his host, particularly pointing to the Index entries for Pressac himself.

I must say that the entire evening was quite enjoyable and the Pressac and his friends were most hospitable to me and made me feel as comfortable as possible. I departed around midnight from their home, heading back to Le Vesinet, fully intending to visit again one day to discuss our book.

Of course, Jean-Claude Pressac was a controversial figure for his research and writing what Professor Faurisson calls "the Big Book". I got my copy of this "Big Book" and worked through it over a two-month period of intense reading and concluded that Pressac had obviously produced a major work that his sponsors – the Klarsfelds – seemed not to have read, or at least not to have read with careful understanding, since Pressac's "Big Book" contained enormously important documents and photographs that caused great problems for the traditional Jewish Holocaust Story.

I am grateful to Pressac and his friends for their warm, French hospitality shown to me – a complete stranger who simply showed up unannounced – on that Saturday evening in February 2001. His contributions to revising the Jewish Holocaust Story will, without doubt, continue to be felt for decades to come.

pleasure to meet Michel Sergent in Pressac's house; Pressac had invited him in order to solve a logistic problem. I had the opportunity to stay at Sergent's home for several days; he treated me with utmost courtesy and gave me all the support I wished for. He also accompanied me on a very revealing visit to the crematoria ovens of the Parisian cemetery Père Lachaise. I recall Michel Sergent as a man sincerely engaged for the concerns of his association.

In 1991, Pressac announced to me that he would travel to Moscow in order to evaluate documents captured by the Red Army in 1945 in Auschwitz. His research in Russia's capital initiated his second book *Les crématoires d'Auschwitz. La machinerie du meurtre de masse*, which was published in 1993<sup>8</sup> and of which I received a dedicated copy as well. I assume that he thought to have finally proven the existence of gas chambers in Auschwitz. My subsequent merciless response to his second book, *Auschwitz: Fine di una leggenda*,<sup>9</sup> of which I sent him a copy in March 1994 – the book was also published in English and German<sup>10</sup> – was most likely the reason for the sudden deterioration of our relationship. Pressac never responded to my critique, neither in writing nor privately. In an interview given to French journalist Valérie Igounet on June 15, 1995 (he later changed the wording of this interview), he expressed the following bitter and unfair judgment about me:<sup>11</sup>

*"I met Carlo Mattogno several times. Our discussions were interesting and instructive. After I noticed that, instead of taking notice of the undeniable documents of the Topf company that I had published, he had resorted to dishonest arguments in order to reject them, I ended all dialog with him."*

If I really had resorted to "dishonest arguments," it would have been a breeze for Pressac to publicly destroy me. But I was – and still am – absolutely convinced that I had written a technical critique, which objectively investigated all essential arguments brought forward by Pressac and refuted them with technical arguments. I showed for instance that the alleged gas chambers of the crematoria II and III at Birkenau were equipped with a ventilation system allowing just as many air exchanges as it was (and is) common for normal mortuaries and that the ventilation systems of the alleged undressing cellars were even slightly more powerful than those of the claimed gas chambers – a fact which finally clarifies the unsuspecting nature of these ventilation systems. I also proved that those famous "Gasprüfer" (gas testers) were nothing but plain normal instruments to analyze exhaust gases and that the device to measure remnants of hydrogen cyanide were actually called "Gasrestnachweisgerät für Zyklon" (gas residue detection device for Zyklon).

Apart from general technical literature quoted, all of my arguments rest exactly on those documents of the Topf company, which Pressac called "undeniable," but what he really meant with "undeniable" was his flawed interpretation of these documents. Facing such a well-founded and well-documented criticism as mine, one can understand Pressac's bitterness, although it cannot be justified.

His bitterness might also have been increased by the fact that his second book shattered the foundations of the official Auschwitz image even more than did his first book, so that the

Guardians of the 'Holocaust' Grail finally stated turning against Pressac. After the initial praise accompanying the launch of his book had subsided, Pressac was more and more ostracized. He was no longer a valuable goldmine to the guardians of the 'Holocaust' orthodoxy, but had turned into a more and more rebellious and uncontrollable *Goy*, jeopardizing the official historiography with each new publication. An Italian Shoah-Pharisee called him "reductionist", which reminds us in a fatal way at the term "negationist" used for all revisionist scholars by the most imbecile under the polemicists. Thus, Pressac had been banned to the purgatory of historiography, located somewhere in the middle between the revisionist hell and the 'Holocaust' paradise.

For this reason, the position as the "world's leading Auschwitz expert," until then occupied by Pressac, was taken by a trustworthy *Yehudi*, who was to take Pressac's theses – cleaned from all revisionist waste – and embed them into an unalterable, definitive version of Auschwitz.

The new rising star on the Holocaust firmament was Robert Jan van Pelt, a scholar who is clearly inferior to Pressac both intellectually as well as regarding his critical attitude, but who brings with him the prerequisites necessary to play the role assigned to him. I remember my disappointment and even anger after I had read the book *Auschwitz 1270 to the present*, which was authored by him and Deborah Dwork.<sup>12</sup> Van Pelt was so brazen as to repeat Pressac's essential arguments as if he had invented them, and reproduce the plans as if he himself had discovered them. Beyond that, he mentions Pressac only once in his 403 pages book (on page 304), and then only in a totally irrelevant context!

The anthology *Anatomy of the Auschwitz Death Camp*,<sup>13</sup> which was edited by Y. Gutman and M. Berenbaum and was published in 1994, contains an article with the title "*The Machinery of Mass Murder at Auschwitz*" with Pressac and van Pelt given as the authors, even though it is merely a summary of Pressac's book *Les crématoires d'Auschwitz*. It is a riddle to me what van Pelt's contribution to this article is and why Pressac agreed to this kind of procedure.

The most positive aspect of Pressac's personality was his passion for research. This passion was genuine through and through and led him to obtain new documents and to make new discoveries, most recently in the archives of the German company Topf in Erfurt.

The Pressac of the 1980s was critical and open to a debate with persons of different views. This openness was most intensively expressed in *Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers*. His second book, however, published four years later, displays an uptight and dogmatic Pressac. Little was left of his original critical spirit, and at that time he handled documents far less carefully than he did in 1989. In my introduction to *Auschwitz: The End of a Legend* I wrote accordingly:<sup>14</sup>

*"But in fact, reading his Les crématoires d'Auschwitz [in comparison to his prior work], one senses an uncomfortable reversion: Jean-Claude Pressac returned to the worst clichés of the worst traditional historiography."*

The author had changed his style from writing a critical history of the camp to writing novel-like stories.



In my eyes, Pressac's most severe mistake was that he never seriously studied the structure and operation of crematory ovens in general and those installed in Auschwitz by the Topf company in particular. This restricted his research tremendously and distorted his assessment of witness testimony and interpretation of documents. I remember the difficulties I had while staying at his house to convince him that corpses in a coke-fired furnace are not incinerated directly by the flames produced by the fuel, but by burning gas produced in the gas generator (the fireplace) by the process of gasification of coke (resulting mainly in a mixture of oxygen and carbon monoxide). If Pressac had acquired the knowledge needed to understand the cremation ovens of Auschwitz-Birkenau, his interpretation of documents and his assessment of witness counts would have been totally different.

Pressac's impact on the historiography of the Auschwitz camp is well known, so I will not repeat this here. But to be quite honest, I have to point out that the main aspects of his research (the so-called "criminal traces," which in his opinion prove the existence of homicidal gas chambers at Auschwitz) go back to Roman Dawidowski, who listed most of those "traces" and quoted many of Pressac's documents in his expert report concluded on September 26, 1946, in preparation of the Höß-Trial.

Pressac also had some influence on revisionist scholars. In my case Pressac stimulated me to widen the horizon of my research, which was still quite narrow at the time of our meetings. He initiated my love for archival research and therefore paved the way for me in this regard. My first visit to the archive of the Auschwitz museum took place in summer 1990, after my second visit to Pressac, and his personal dedication in the book he gave me served quite well as a door opener.

In 1995, when I traveled for the first time to Moscow to-

gether with Jürgen Graf and Russell Granata, I was still following Pressac's trail, but after that Jürgen Graf and I took the initiative in that field of research. We have visited archives that Pressac never entered: in Russia, Poland, Lithuania, Czechia, Slovakia, Hungary, Ruthenia, Ukraine, and the Netherlands, and we discovered a huge amount of hitherto unknown documents.

Official historiography owes Pressac many reviving impulses, keeping it afloat at least for a while; but even those impulses can no longer prevent its fossilization and internal crumbling, to which it has been condemned as a result of the dull dogmatism of its proponents.

## Notes

<sup>1</sup> An English version "The Myth of the Extermination of the Jews" appeared in two installments in the *Journal of Historical Review* vol. 8(2) (1988), pp. 133-172, and 8(3) (1988), pp. 261-302.

<sup>2</sup> "Comment on falsifie l'histoire", "Reponse à Jean-Amrie Braitenberg", *AHR*, 3 (1987), pp. 89-95; 96-101; "Auschwitz: Un cas de plagiat", "Auschwitz: Deux faux témoignages", *AHR*, 5 (1988), pp. 119-140, 141-165; for the latter two, cf. "Two false testimonies from Auschwitz", "Auschwitz: A case of plagiarism", *JHR* 10(1) (1990), pp. 5-24, 25-47.

<sup>3</sup> "Fred A. Leuchter. Rapport technique", *AHR* 5 (1988), pp. 51-102.

<sup>4</sup> *Le Monde Juif*, No. 107.

<sup>5</sup> Gallimard-Seuil 1985.

<sup>6</sup> *L'album d'Auschwitz*, Seuil, 1983.

<sup>7</sup> Beate-Klarsfeld-Foundation, New York 1989.

<sup>8</sup> CNRS, Paris. Germ.: *Die Krematorien von Auschwitz*, Piper, Munich 1994.

<sup>9</sup> Edizione di Ar, Padua 1994.

<sup>10</sup> *Auschwitz: The End of a Legend*, Granata Publishing, Palos Verdes, CA, 1994 (online: [vho.org/GB/Books/anf/Mattogno.html](http://vho.org/GB/Books/anf/Mattogno.html)); Germ.: in: Herbert Verbeke (ed.), *Auschwitz: Nackte Fakten*, Vrij Historisch Onderzoek, Berchem 1995.

<sup>11</sup> V. Igounet, *Histoire du négationnisme en France*, Seuil 2000, pp. 645f.

<sup>12</sup> W. W. Norton & Company, New York-London 1996.

<sup>13</sup> Indiana University Press, Bloomington 1994.

<sup>14</sup> C. Mattogno, *Auschwitz: The End of a Legend*, op. cit. (note. 10), first chapter; Germ.: p. 102.

## The New Zealand Saga Continues

By Germar Rudolf

In issue No. 2/2003 of *The Revisionist* (pp. 197-202), Dr. Fredrick Toben reported on the case of Joel S.A. Hayward, who in 1993 had completed a master's thesis at the University of Canterbury in Christchurch, New Zealand, on revisionist writings about the alleged extermination of European Jews by National Socialist Germany. Because Hayward not only concluded that revisionist writings on this topic are scholarly contributions to historiography that ought to be taken seriously, but also agreed with some revisionist conclusions on the matter itself, various pressure groups demanded that his master's degree be revoked. Although the University of Canterbury did not go that far, the actual actions taken were severe enough to cause opposition by some scholars who felt that academic freedom was at stake.

Two of those scholars are Dr. Thomas A. Fudge and Prof. Dr. Ian Campbell, historians at the University of Canterbury where Hayward had earned his master's and PhD degrees.

Campbell, who at that time was also the editor of his university's small history journal *History Now*, asked Dr. Fudges to write an article on the Hayward affair, which was published in the May issue of that magazine. When the magazine was released, however, the history department withdrew and pulped this issue and sacked Prof. Campbell as the journal's editor. As a reaction to this academic book burning, an uproar went through the academic world on almost a worldwide level. To counter this act of censorship, the *New Zealand Herald* reprinted Dr. Fudge's article in two installments on the 23<sup>rd</sup> and 24<sup>th</sup> of July 2003, albeit without footnotes. Thus, the attempt of the university to prevent Fudge's article to be published in 500 copies – the actual print-run of *History Now* – resulted in it being published in tens of thousands of copies. Parallel to this act of media solidarity, Dr. Martin Lally, Associate Professor of Finance at Victoria University, Wellington, organized a petition

to the University of Canterbury, signed by many scholars from all over the world, which was published on Aug. 26, 2003, in *The Dominion Post* (Wellington) and *The Press* (Christchurch, see separate text box). Both dailies later also published brief articles supporting the view that what was going on at the University of Canterbury was censorship unworthy of an academic institution.<sup>1</sup>

As a reaction to Dr. Fudge's and Prof. Campbell's article as well as to Prof. Lally's involvement on behalf of academic freedom and the right to ask critical questions regarding the 'Holocaust', Philip Matthews wrote an article which was published by the New Zealand newspaper *Listener* on September 20, 2003, under the headline "Canterbury Tales" (pp. 26-29). In it, Matthews asks:

*"Is Canterbury University in the business of suppressing academic freedom? Or is this issue really about academic standards?"*

This is of course a valid question. But before addressing it, Matthews first reveals that Prof. Dr. Vincent Orange, who was Dr. Hayward's supervisor during his studies, had written in a letter to Canterbury University Chancellor Phyllis Guthardt in April 2001, that Dr. Fudge had expressed "His warm approval of the [Hayward] thesis" and that Dr. Fudge "finds much merit in the work." Both Dr. Fudge and Prof. Campbell had offered support to Prof. Orange and Dr. Hayward while the university was investigating this case in 2000. Matthews juxtaposes these statements with Dr. Fudge's refusal during an interview with him to assess the quality of Hayward's thesis. Matthews then quotes Prof. Dr. Richard Evans, who not only appeared during the infamous Irving vs. Lipstadt trial in 2000 as an expert witness for the defense (Lipstadt and Penguin books), but who also wrote an expert report on the Hayward thesis during the same year. In Evans' eyes, Hayward's thesis is "a thoroughly tendentious, biased and dishonest piece of work." Evans recommended that Canterbury University strip Hayward of his master's degree. In a more recent comment, Evans is quoted by Matthews that this is not about academic freedom, but:

*"It is rather the upholding of academic standards. Nobody has stopped Hayward or Fudge from publishing what they have written."*

Reasons given for the withdrawal of Dr. Fudge's article were not only that the history department disagreed with it, but also that Dr. Fudge allegedly misused personal and interdepartmental communications and breached an informal agreement to stop discussing the Hayward affair in public. Considering the severity of the intrusion into Dr. Hayward's academic freedom, it does not appear to be all that important to find out whether or not these claims are true. It is, however, quite comical that an act of censorship is justified with the fact that the victim of censorship had ignored an earlier "agreement" of censorship.

In his article, Matthews does not properly address the questions he himself posed at the very beginning of his article. All he has to say about it is that Prof. Evans, a real expert in Matthews' eyes, made the above quoted statement, which Matthews accepts uncritically. I wonder if Matthews has read Prof. Evans' expert report and if he has any idea what "academic standards" are in the first place. Let us examine this question.

First of all, Matthews should have noticed that no thesis could ever be "dishonest". If Prof. Dr. Evens really said this, it shows some problems he has with expressing himself. Whereas a thesis cannot be dishonest, a scholar writing it can very well be dishonest, but such dishonesty cannot be proven by examining a thesis (except for an admission of dishonesty being found in it, which is not very likely to occur). Thus, Prof. Dr. Evans, who has never met Dr. Hayward personally, cannot possibly know whether Dr. Hayward is dishonest or not. It therefore cannot surprise that Canterbury University did not follow Dr. Evans' conclusion in this regard. What can be stated here, however, is that making such *ad hominem* attacks on other scholars without knowing them is very much an indication of lack of academic standards!

Next comes the question whether or not Hayward's thesis is tendentious and/or biased. Since Hayward takes revisionist arguments seriously and endorses some of them, it can come as no surprise that Dr. Evans, who is one of the most ardent declared adversaries of all revisionist viewpoints, labels such an

## THE PRESS

### History lessons

**I**t is time to close a troubling chapter in the history of the University of Canterbury. The Hayward-Fudge affair has festered for three years and is damaging all involved. Beginning with a complaint about a Master's thesis, the issue has been allowed to develop into a many-tentacled incubus that refuses to die. It is dragging down what was once the university's unsullied reputation for promoting free thought, encouraging fearless investigation, and protecting its members.

This sorry state of affairs is partly the result of good intentions. The university has consistently sought to address fairly the issue of the disputed thesis. It listened to the deeply felt complaint of the Jewish Council and responded with a working party of distinguished and independent people who carried out a thorough investigation. The university accepted their advice. Even in the latest round of the affair — the suppression of Dr Thomas Fudge's article defending Joel Hayward — the university sought to maintain the standard of publications issued under its imprimatur.

The trouble is that these good intentions have not converged with common sense. A more vigorous application of the principle that lies at the heart of its being — that those within its walls must be allowed maximum freedom of thought and expression — would have prevented the issue developing.

Joel Hayward and his thesis, while being subjected to the full blast of criticism some thought they

deserved, should not have been subjected to what amounted to censure from the university. It had, after all, accepted Dr Hayward as a suitable candidate for a Master's degree, supervised his work, and accepted his examiners' assessment. To renege — to open the thesis to a second assessment — was to be seen as craven at worst and confused at best, and fed the embers of the affair.

That they have now burst into flame was inevitable, but that they have burned so bright was not. By accepting then rejecting Dr Fudge's article, the history department underscored the perception of repressive incompetence. By withdrawing and destroying the publication containing the article, the university literally became that odious thing, a burner of books.

That is the public's damaging perception and it will be difficult to change. By reversing its stand, the university would reinforce its reputation for ineptitude. The best course would be for the university to reassure the public that it has learned lessons from the affair — that it recognises the need to appear fair as well as be fair, and that its defence of academic freedom will be more forthright. That would help it close an unsavoury chapter and move on.

So would the prompt resignation of Dr Fudge. He is out of sympathy with the university and unforgiving of its behaviour. For its sake and his, he should sever his employment. His staying does not further his cause or the university's.

*The Press* (Christchurch), Sept. 3, 2003

attitude as tendentious and biased. However, isn't an attitude that rejects opposing viewpoints out of hand, attacks their supporters as dishonest, and asks for the destruction of their livelihood (by withdrawing their academic degrees) by itself an indication of tendentiousness and bias?

The question could be easily answered if we could come to a conclusion that revisionist arguments are factually correct or at least scholarly valid. Since I am a revisionist myself, it can be argued that I am biased in this regard, so I won't argue along this line, as the other side would not accept it, and I have no intention to convince those who are already convinced. I therefore would like to concentrate on formal issues.

First, let me try to summarize what academic standards for any scholarly work are, to which Prof. Evans refers:

- Systematic organization.
- Clear separation between facts and opinions.
- Factual claims are backed up with any or all of the following:
  - sources proving the facts, quoted in a way that the source can be found by others,
  - experiments described in a way that they can be repeated by others.
  - logical reasoning/deduction which can be followed by others.
- Opposing arguments taken into consideration to the extent they were accessible at that time.
- Depending on the faculty involved, the observance of certain faculty-specific evidentiary or methodic rules (if they are not themselves the subject of scrutiny).

Prof. Evans' accusations against Dr. Hayward concentrate primarily on the claim that Dr. Hayward did not take opposing arguments into consideration or at least did not give them the consideration they deserved. This is what Prof. Evans calls bias and tendentiousness. In his 1999/2000 apologies, Dr. Hayward recognized that he learned about opposing arguments after he had finished his thesis in 1993, and that he now, with his knowledge of the late 1990s, would write and conclude his thesis differently. In my correspondence with Dr. Hayward starting in 1998, I told him that certain parts of his thesis were built on weak arguments and would attract partly justified criticism. This is primarily true for his relying on the accuracy of the so-called *Leuchter-Report*, which was both a groundbreaking work but also a work with many deficiencies. There is no doubt that Dr. Hayward got carried away by revisionist enthusiasm in the wake of the *Leuchter-Report*, which might have made him a little careless by adopting revisionist viewpoints too eagerly. Though this may be bias, it is still within the normal and acceptable range of what can happen to all of us.

One also has to take into consideration that Hayward was a mere student in a master thesis program doing his work at the other end of the world. With his limited budget and the huge distances involved to access source material, it was not easy for him to collect all the information he needed, and his own supervisor was not an expert in this field either. This is why Dr. Hayward emphasized the fact that he had no funds available during his research, whereas Dr. Evans is equipped with a generous salary and is also well paid for the expert reports he writes. For instance, Dr. Evans received ca. \$100,000 for his

expert report in the Irving trial alone. With such payments, it is of course easy to do a much better job, and it is cheap to criticize others who are pauper students *down under* (as does Mr. Matthews). It may therefore be stated that Evans' expectations as to the completeness of Hayward's survey of opposing arguments is a bit unrealistic.

## THE DOMINION POST

Thursday, September 4, 2003

# Academic freedom must apply to all

**L**AST week, 63 signatories from New Zealand and overseas paid for half-page advertisements in daily newspapers to excoriate Canterbury University. They are affronted by a series of decisions taken by university management that started 10 years ago. In 1993, student Joel Hayward wrote a master's thesis that questioned the validity of Holocaust history during World War II. Instead of being advised by his thesis supervisor to think again, Dr Hayward was awarded his degree with first-class honours. Before long, however, he realised his mistake and repudiated the conclusions he had reached.

The controversy that surrounds Dr Hayward's work refuses to die. Last May, university historian Thomas Fudge wrote an article for a departmental publication, *History Today*, that reviewed the uproar over the Hayward thesis. The article was published but the university ordered that edition of *History Today* be destroyed, in what some see as akin to book-burning. Nonetheless, the university council has backed its employee. Last week, it reiterated its confidence in vice-chancellor Roy Sharp — formerly at Victoria University — and said that an inquiry into his actions revealed no failure to protect, promote or enhance academic freedom.

Professor Sharp will welcome that reassurance. But the council's view is not shared by the advertisement's signatories and their view is worth consideration. Some — maybe many — of the academics, think-tank inhabitants and others who put their names to the petition to the university council, might well have had to swallow hard in involving themselves with the unlovely conclusions Dr Hayward drew in his benighted

ed treatise. But they have shown more courage than the university council, Professor Sharp and reportedly some at Massey University, to which Dr Hayward subsequently moved.

Last October, he resigned from Massey, apparently after what he regarded as harassment of himself and his children. Today, he lives with his family in Palmerston North penning books and poetry, well removed from the maelstrom his ill-conceived academic work has caused in the south.

Such controversy is not confined to Canterbury. Waikato University has encountered a similar row. But it duck-shoved student Hans Kupka's questioning of the Holocaust to the Human Rights Commission. And last October, political science professor Dov Bing, who was involved in the Kupka controversy two years ago, claimed he had uncovered another thesis from 1994 that also denied the Nazi pogrom. New Zealand's Jewish community is as sensitive as its counterparts anywhere to suggestions that the suffering of their forebears did not amount to much.

Academic freedom is jealously protected by those who inhabit the hallowed halls of academia. However, if it is to mean anything, it must apply to those who are plain daft as well as to those who are merely conventional.

Like press freedom, it demands that scholarship be free to investigate and explore the highways, byways and narrow lanes of an issue, even those that a majority deem offensive and repugnant. It surely means the right to be wrongheaded and downright stupid, as well as the right to espouse an orthodoxy that a majority believe simply because they agree with it.

But let us push this a little further. In all of his writings, Prof. Evans considers the thesis that the ‘Holocaust’ did not happen (whatever this implies) to be evidence for bias by itself. For him, the documentation proving the factuality of the ‘Holocaust’ is irrefutable. When so doing, does he stick to his own rules, that is, does he take opposing viewpoints into consideration? I am not talking here about David Irving’s writing, as David Irving has never been a Holocaust revisionist as such. He has never written a single article, not to mention an entire monograph, on this topic. He might have made remarks during some of his speeches, but it is an undeniable fact that he is not a scholar in this field. The question is: do we find references to the finest revisionist scholars and their works as well as refutations of their arguments in Evans’ writings? Let us take only one example: is the name Carlo Mattogno mentioned in Evans’ expert reports? As a matter of fact, in his report on Irving, Mattogno’s name appears on page 182, footnote 173, and on page 189, footnote 293. But not as a reference to arguments put forward by Mattogno, but only as a means to prove that already with the headlines of their articles revisionists prove that they “deny the Holocaust”<sup>2</sup> (as if that would be denied by anybody). In other words: Evans doesn’t care at all to even address revisionist arguments. It suffices for him to prove that revisionists “deny” to make his point about the alleged morally inferiority of revisionists.

Maybe Prof. Evans did not know about any other writings by Carlo Mattogno (most of which were in Italian at that time), but considering his vast resources and knowledge of the “denial movement,” that is not an excuse that could be accepted. That is the difference between the poor student Hayward *down under* and the abundantly equipped expert in London. Thus, it is not Hayward whose potential bias is unacceptable, it is Prof. Evans’ ignorance that indicates massive bias to a point of intentional omission.

Next comes the question about the nature of science and its role in human society. The reader will agree with me that scientific knowledge is not a static thing but that it is permanently evolving, mostly toward more accuracy and completeness. As trivial as this may sound, this simple truth was forgotten in Hayward’s case. What happened to Hayward is that his thesis, mainly written in 1992, was measured with the knowledge of the years 1999/2000, a point in time when both revisionists and their adversaries had made tremendous progress (and had, for instance, both stepped far beyond the *Leuchter-Report*). If such a retrospective method of evaluating the quality of a thesis were to be applied in general, the result would unavoidably be that every thesis ever written would be found wanting. This is simply an unfair and profoundly flawed method.

The reader will hopefully also agree that scholars aren’t angels either. They all are influenced by their social environment, which unavoidably leads to certain biases. To a certain degree, we all are products of our environment. The bias resulting from it is not intentional, and as such it is acceptable. As long as we are aware of this fact and as long as we can assess the social influence a scholar was and is exposed to, this should not be an issue. A bias is often followed and/or caused by an agenda. Reading Evans’ writings, for example, easily exposes his agenda as a crusader against “deniers.” Evans perceives them as evil

persons, and he tries everything to prove this (and so does Deborah Lipstadt, who called Prof. Evans to her defense). His agenda is that of a professional character assassin, a man who focuses on *ad hominem* attacks against scholars with viewpoints he considers as morally reprehensible. Prof. Evans might not have noticed it, but he will sooner or later find out that the veracity of factual claims are independent of the moral standing of the person making such claims. It is only the investigation of the claim itself that can solve the points at issue, not any alleged revelation of the claimer’s character or political opinions. This is also the reason why I will not descend to Prof. Evans’ level by trying to dig out some ideological dirt he or any of his supporters are possibly involved in. It does not solve any historical issue and is a waste of time and resources.

I am far from saying that having an agenda is necessarily a bad thing. Quite to the contrary. As long as such an agenda does not interfere with academic standards, this is perfectly legitimate. After all, every scholar needs a motivation to do the sometimes exhausting research on his topic, and the mere love for accuracy is only one of the motivations that are usually involved. Honor and pride as well as materialistic hopes are very often involved, too, and as soon as we turn to the humanities, ideological agendas unavoidably play a major role for almost all parties involved in a controversy, whether they are aware of it or not.

It is quite funny to see how Dr. Evans and his friends try to find an anti-Semite and neo-Nazi behind everybody involved or somehow associated with revisionism, while at the same time they accuse revisionists and their defenders as “paranoid” when those people, in turn, see left-wing radical and/or Jewish/Zionist motivations behind their adversaries’ and oppressors’ actions. The fact is that both sides have developed a mirror-symmetrical paranoia in suspecting the other side of inverted agendas.

As deplorable as the emotions and the resulting bias are that often result from such ideologically overheated topics as the ‘Holocaust,’ this has nevertheless an advantage, and that is the tenacity with which all sides try to prove their point. There is no other single topic in historiography where so much research has been done and is still ongoing. No single village in mankind history has ever attracted so much scholarly attention as Auschwitz. Whether Prof. Evans likes it or not, without the revisionists permanently pushing for answers to uncomfortable questions, the progress done over the last three decades would have been impossible – despite the fact that Prof. Evans and his friends try to suppress such revisionist inquiry and any news about it. Neither Prof. Evans’ work would exist nor that of Deborah Lipstadt, Jean-Claude Pressac, Michael Shermer, Wolfgang Benz, or Jan van Pelt, to name only a few. These works with all their insight (or lack of it) as well as their biases are the result of revisionist publications.

It may therefore be summarized that an agenda, always coming with a certain bias, is the main driving force behind ‘Holocaust’ research. This is not necessarily a bad thing, as long as we do not try to persecute each other for our dissenting views. And it sure isn’t decided yet which side of this scholarly struggle is more tendentious. However, looking at the way establishment authors are still ignoring (and trying to suppress)

the finest of revisionist works indicates that they are still limping behind.

In a reaction to Matthews' article, *The Listener* published several letters to the editor the following week, of which the one by Dr. Tom Ryan from the Anthropology Department of the University of Waikato (Hamilton, NZ) is arguably the most controversial. Dr. Ryan basically supports Matthews' view and adds that it is morally reprehensible to support Dr. Hayward or Dr. Fudge, as this amounts to indirect support to "the international Holocaust denial movement." He also makes demands to "stop representing Hayward as an innocent martyr caught up in some great Jewish conspiracy."

First, it must be emphasized that there is no attitude more hostile to academic standards than the one asking for censorship of certain views or facts because it allegedly helps some perceived political enemy. This is Stalinist-like totalitarianism. Dr. Ryan exposes here his own lack of *any* scientific or scholarly standards. As such, it is not Dr. Hayward and Dr. Fudge, but rather the unfathomable clown-like behavior of Dr. Ryan and his ilk that helps revisionism tremendously in discrediting and unmasking those scholars as the hypocrites they really are.

Next, if Hayward is not innocent, as Dr. Ryan implies, where is the proof for his guilt? All one can say is that he didn't know better when he wrote his thesis. But that is true for *all* scholars at the time they write their papers. We all are prone to err. If this is guilt deserving punishment, I am sure Dr. Ryan should start with himself, whipping himself every morning in front of his mirror, before pointing at others.

The ball is now back in the court of those 'established' historians, and it is up to them to try to get it back to us revisionists. And we revisionists will sure keep the heat on to make them move!

With this in mind, we dare to publish Dr. Fudge's defense of Dr. Hayward's academic freedom, because it is a defense of everyone's academic freedom, and we see it as our duty to defend the most fundamental human right to doubt and question. This academic freedom mandates that any kind of initial thesis may be chosen for a scholarly work – even that the 'Holocaust' did not happen – and that no power other than evidence may

ever be allowed to force us to come to certain conclusions. And when the evidence suggest that there was no 'Holocaust', so be it. The earth will still be revolving around the sun.

Prof. Evans and with him Mr. Matthews, on the other side, suggest that such a thesis should not be allowed in academia. While it is true that, after Joel Hayward and Dr. Fudge had written what they wrote, nobody prevented them from publishing it, this is not the main point. The message sent out by Canterbury University is a different one: Should any scholar ever dare to come up with conclusions which some authorities – university or government – emphatically disagree with, he is in danger of losing (or never gaining) his reputation and his academic degree. And once it has been accepted that suppressing revisionist views on an academic level is admissible, the door is open for the government to introduce suppressing measures on a general level as well. Where this leads to at the end can be seen in Europe, where people with dissenting views on the Holocaust go to jail with no right to defend themselves.<sup>3</sup>

What the actions of Canterbury University boil down to is punishment of scholars for coming to unwanted conclusions. If such an attitude prevails, this would be the death of science. And even more: If we are forbidden to doubt and question, then we are denied our most profound human dignity, for the only thing that separates us from the animal world is that we do not have to take our sensory impressions for granted, but can doubt and question them. As such, revisionism is the most human activity of all. To outlaw or ostracize revisionism is equivalent to outlawing or ostracizing humanity.

#### Notes

- <sup>1</sup> "Academic Freedom must apply to all," *The Dominion Post*, Sept. 4, 2003; "History Lessons," *The Press*, Sept. 3, 2003.
- <sup>2</sup> "Expert Report by Professor Richard Evans", Royal Courts of Justice, Strand, London, David John Cawdell Irving vs. (1) Penguin Books Limited, (2) Deborah E. Lipstadt, Ref. 1996 I. No. 113. Evans refers to Mattogno's article "The Myth of the Extermination of the Jews", *The Journal of Historical Review*, Vol. 8 (1988), pp. 133-72 and 261-302, simply because of the word "myth" in the title.
- <sup>3</sup> For this, see my contribution "Discovering Absurdistan", *The Revisionist*, 1(2) (2003), pp. 203-219.

## The Fate of Joel Hayward in New Zealand Hands: from Holocaust Historian to Holocaust?

By Thomas A. Fudge

For the past three years, newspapers, national periodical publications and television programmes have intermittently provided coverage about the Joel Hayward affair: a story of a New Zealand student who wrote a controversial thesis. Contestable work and arguable conclusions are not uncommon in modern universities but Hayward's unpublished work as a student seems to remain, after ten years, a point of unusual and continuing interest.

Late in 2002 the New Zealand *Listener* ran a "special report" on what is popularly termed holocaust denial.<sup>1</sup> Juxtaposed photographs of David Irving, Adolf Hitler and Joel Hayward on page 28 provide adequate summary of the article's focus. When asked why he was putting forth another piece on Hayward the author Philip Matthews replied that nothing had appeared for a while. The *Listener* article says little new or relevant and the questions of motivation might be raised. Is Canterbury Univer-

sity supportive of holocaust denial? The university answers no.<sup>2</sup> Is Hayward a denier? He claims he is not. Does his thesis constitute holocaust denial? His critics say yes (though some without having read it), while others (who have read it) answer in the negative.

### The Story so far

In June 2002, Joel Hayward resigned from his position as senior lecturer in history at Massey University where he had been respected as an effective teacher and productive scholar. His departure generated applause from some quarters. Others lamented academe's loss. "[S]hame on the scholarly community for not rallying behind the universities' necessary freedoms."<sup>3</sup> What brought Hayward, a year and a half after the Hayward affair, still in the early stages of a potentially distinguished career, to this act of professional extinction? The protracted "facts" in the so-called Hayward affair may be distilled briefly.

In 1993 Hayward was awarded a Master of Arts degree with First Class Honours in History by the University of Canterbury for a thesis on the historiography of the holocaust. He later wrote a PhD thesis and in 1996 was appointed to a lectureship at Massey University. In late 1999 the MA thesis was publicly denounced. The New Zealand Jewish Council alleged that the work amounted to historical revisionism constituting holocaust denial, and called on the University of Canterbury to revoke the degree.<sup>4</sup>

Hayward repeatedly apologized for any harm or distress his thesis might have caused, agreed to the extraordinary step of including an appendix to his thesis modifying his findings, cooperated with the subsequent investigating Working Party and appears to have made efforts to distance himself from holocaust denial.<sup>5</sup> Under pressure, the University appointed an independent Working Party to investigate the claims against the thesis.<sup>6</sup> This committee consisted of retired High Court judge Sir Ian Barker and academics Professor Ann Trotter and Professor Stuart Macintyre to look into the matter and make recommendations.<sup>7</sup> The lengthy report concluded the Hayward thesis was "seriously flawed" and that Hayward "should not have essayed a judgment in such a controversial area..."<sup>8</sup> The report did not recommend withdrawal of the thesis by the University and did not agree with the allegations that Hayward's argument was racist or motivated by malice. While the opinion that the thesis did not deserve the high marks it received was widely publicized in the media, no fewer than six serving or retired members of the History department persisted in their own judgment that it was a first-class effort.

Notwithstanding the apparent finality of the report and its qualified exoneration of Hayward, during 2000, 2001, and 2002 Hayward received hundreds of pieces of "hate" mail, abusive telephone calls, threats against himself, his wife and small children, harassment at Massey University and continued negative media attention.<sup>9</sup> Further attempts to publish as well as efforts at finding other employment have been unsuccessful. The issue therefore goes beyond the apparent concern over alleged flawed (but unpublished) research. Is this issue really about academic values and freedom?

Animosities towards Hayward arose not in 1999 but several years earlier.<sup>10</sup> The subject of Hayward's thesis was controver-

sial before he wrote it and there were attempts to censure Hayward at the time.<sup>11</sup> Aware of these factors, Hayward embargoed the thesis for three years as soon as it was examined. When the embargo expired, he notified the University Library that the thesis could be made available to researchers. The library replied that it had decided to restrict the thesis so that it could be consulted only with Hayward's permission until January 1999.<sup>12</sup> Almost immediately allegations were published about his alleged "holocaust denial." That someone should have chanced upon the thesis so promptly seems an unlikely coincidence. Rather, events were to show that there were good reasons for the embargo on access. Was this because Hayward had written things that he knew to be reprehensible? The Barker enquiry found no evidence of malicious intent, dishonesty or deliberate efforts to circumvent the truth on Hayward's part. Is it possible that the outrage over the thesis itself was also a device for attacking Hayward?

### Academic Values

One of the complexities of the Hayward affair is its apparent relation to issues of academic freedom and intellectual fashions. Hayward's detractors claim that he is wrong in terms of both. One of his critics stated that "academic freedom cannot exist without academic responsibility."<sup>13</sup> However, considered legal opinion concluded that the interpretation of academic freedom being applied in the Hayward affair permitted a "very limited right to academic freedom."<sup>14</sup>

Proponents of academic freedom insist that universities should be great storehouses of wisdom and learning, and students ought to be able to go there, learn and choose. Academic freedom implies there are no taboo subjects, no off-limits topics.<sup>15</sup> The fuss made about this obscure piece of work fits rather awkwardly with the position taken by New Zealand academic libraries. Official statements read, "No library materials should be excluded... because of the... views of their authors [and] no library materials should be censored, restricted or removed from libraries because of partisan or doctrinal disapproval or pressure."<sup>16</sup>

International intellectuals also defend the right of dissidents to say things they disagree with. Noam Chomsky defended the right of "holocaust denier" Robert Faurisson to say what he thought about "Zionist lies."<sup>17</sup> Raul Hilberg objected when St Martin's Press cancelled David Irving's contract for his book on Goebbels, saying, "If these people want to speak, let them... I am not for taboos and I am not for repression."<sup>18</sup> Universities and other institutions of higher learning are regarded as marketplaces for the exchange of ideas; as forums for discussion; as venues for critical thinking, honest enquiry and the challenging of *status quo*.<sup>19</sup> In this context, the Hayward thesis was a legitimate academic exercise. Others argue that Hayward was simply wrong, his judgements flawed, his conclusions erroneous, his methodology ill-conceived and his entire MA thesis a sustained exercise in egregious violation of scholarly procedure. Amid such extreme position, one might ask whether the significance of the Hayward matter is an issue of truth? Is it a crucial indictment of education in general? Does it have to do with accountability within institutions of higher education? Or, is it about the limits of toleration in New Zealand society?

Just as there is no such thing as a perfectly free market, similarly academic “freedom” operates within a framework partly determined by non-academic considerations. Senior academics within New Zealand universities are often sensitive to public opinion and political moods. They may actively discourage graduate students from investigating certain topics. There are other topics that although encouraged or permitted, are sometimes subject to constraints on arguments that may be employed, evidence that may be weighed and conclusions reached. This is especially the case in areas that touch on contemporary political or ethical concerns. Many people do not regard these strictures as problematic but rather praise them as virtuous.<sup>20</sup> The Jewish holocaust is one of those delicate topics about which certain beliefs have become so fashionable as to be unsailable regardless of intellectual considerations. The Hayward affair elicited the pronouncement “that at least in this country anyone wanting to... question received notions about the Holocaust is controlled by accepted truth standards.”<sup>21</sup> The danger in this thinking lies in the ambiguity of the term “truth standards”. Does it mean “standards for establishing truth” or “propositions proclaimed to be true”? Some insist that the religious significance of the holocaust is equal to the revelation on Mt. Sinai to Moses.<sup>22</sup> Is that a “truth standard”?

### What Did Hayward Say?

The major issue appears to be the belief that Hayward rejected well-established facts about the holocaust.<sup>23</sup> His thesis examined the writings of some of those who question the holocaust industry which has reached significant political proportions in the past thirty years.<sup>24</sup> Setting aside the question of whether Hayward’s conclusions were really so exceptional, is it not the duty of universities and researchers to challenge conventional understandings? Modern philosophy teaches that all theories worth defending must be continuously subjected to re-evaluation and retesting.

In his MA thesis titled “The Fate of Jews in German Hands: An Historical Enquiry into the Development and Significance of Holocaust Revisionism” Joel Hayward investigated holocaust historiography, especially that branch thereof regarded as revisionist.<sup>25</sup> He concluded that some of the revisionist literature was unworthy of sustained scholarly consideration.<sup>26</sup> Other approaches within the genre he found to be significant and worthy. He came to three principal conclusions from the historiography, the weight of historical evidence and his own discernment: first, that there is no unimpeachable evidence that Adolf Hitler personally ordered the physical extermination of Jews. Second, that it is impossible to know how many Jews were killed and third, that gas chambers were not used systematically to murder Jews in European concentration camps. Do these conclusions make Joel Hayward a “holocaust denier”?

This allegation that he is can be easily evaluated. *First, there is no document which has yet come to light to prove that*

*Hitler gave a “final solution” order.* That Hitler was anti-Semitic is beyond denial. That Hitler wished for Jews to be subjugated is without argument. Hayward makes these points. That Hitler gave an order for Jews to be exterminated cannot be proven.<sup>27</sup> *Second, Hayward agrees that millions of Jews perished during the ravages of the Second World War.*<sup>28</sup> He regards the figure of 6,000,000 murdered as symbolic and impossible to actually prove on the basis of documentary evidence. There are no reliable or comprehensive records available to establish the exact number of those who perished during the Nazi era. Projections must be calculated guesses which necessarily have variation.<sup>29</sup> The traditional figure of 11 million killed by the Nazis (Jews and others combined) is essentially the invention of Simon Wiesenthal, the famous hunter of Nazi war criminals. This speculative figure has attained virtual canonical status in holocaust historiography.<sup>30</sup> In 1986 Shmuel Krakowski, then archives director of Yad Vashem, the international center for holocaust documentation in Jerusalem, told the *Jerusalem Post* that of the 20,000 testimonies he had on hand from

alleged “survivors” of the holocaust most of them were untrustworthy, fraudulent, lacking support or in some way untruthful.<sup>31</sup> Although this statement is at least as “revisionist” as anything Hayward wrote, Krakowski is not regarded as a holocaust denier. Wiesenthal admits that he manufactured figures but appears to have escaped censure; Hayward merely questioned other suggested figures and was denounced for it.

*Third, it was once held that concentration camps in Germany were used to gas Jews en masse. That hypothesis has now been abandoned by most historians of the Second World War without this being condemned as holocaust denial.*<sup>32</sup> (See map, and the distinction made on it between “death [extermination] camps” and “concentration camps”.) There is stronger evidence for the use of gas

chambers in Polish camps. Hayward relied upon certain studies (now regarded as highly controversial or discredited) to question the extent of the use of Polish gas chambers and for his skepticism was labeled a “holocaust denier” although he unequivocally states that millions of Jews perished under the Nazi regime through various means.<sup>33</sup> He wondered merely what contribution gas chambers made to these results. Some of his detractors, however, claimed that he denied the existence of gas chambers altogether.<sup>34</sup>

That the historic Jewish community has been subjected to various measures of discrimination and persecution must be acknowledged, but that does not mean that there might not be new understandings of that experience. It does not therefore provide that same community or any of its representatives with immunity to investigation. Nor is it true that what happened to Jews historically is fundamentally different from atrocities perpetrated against native Americans, Africans, Gypsies, the victims of the witch hunts in early modern Europe, those trapped



Listener, September 20, 2003, p. 26

in the Stalinist purges in Russian lands, the fate of Iraqis in the hands of Saddam Hussein, heretics hunted by crusaders, and indigenous peoples around the world throughout human history, in which large numbers of people have been subjected to campaigns of mass extermination. There is a great difference between anti-Semitism and arriving at research-based conclusions which do not support or conform to values, ideas and interpretations held by Semitic peoples and cultures.

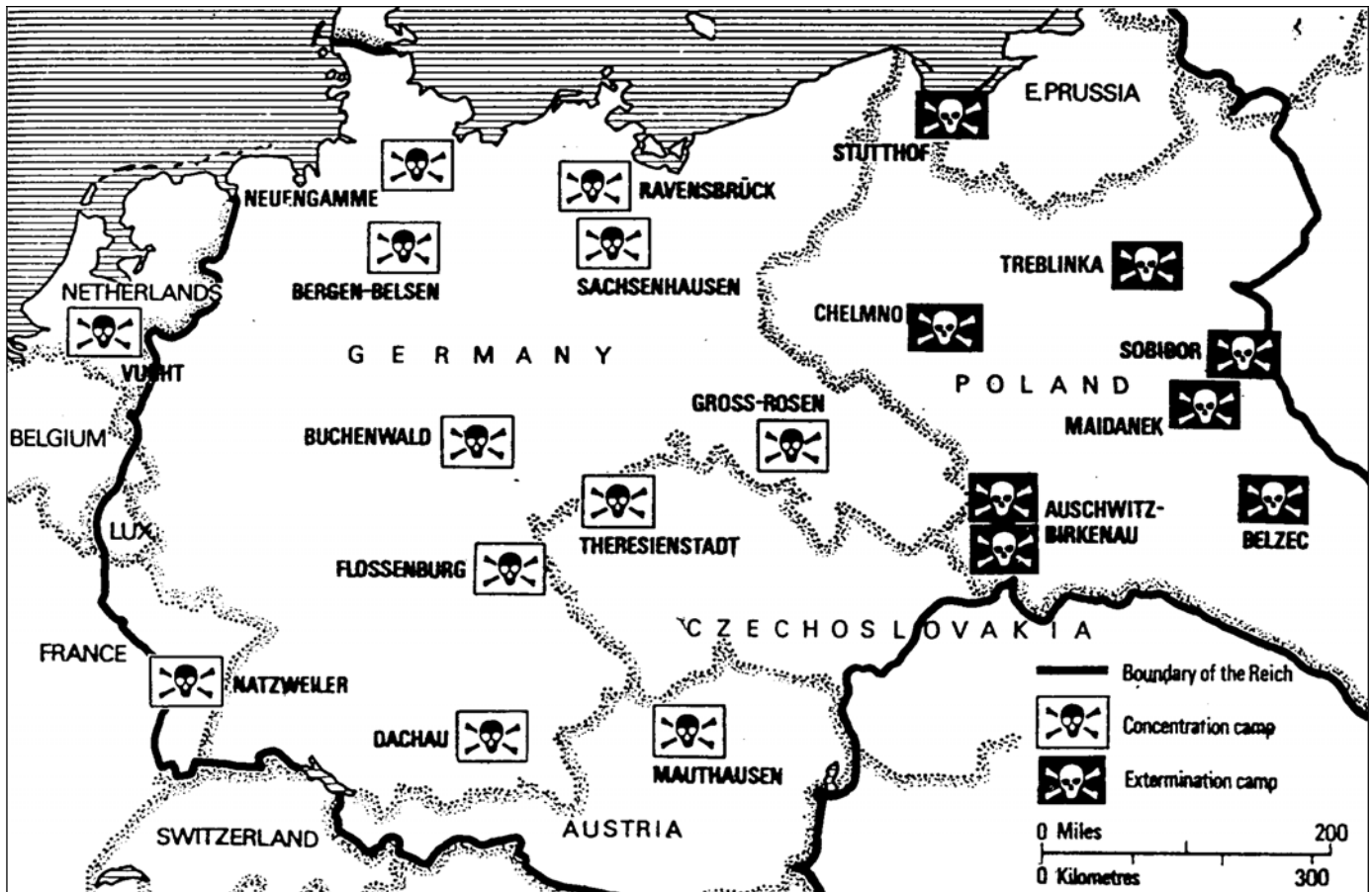
Diversity of interpretation is not the same thing as discrimination. To contest common opinion is not racism. To argue against or disagree with conventional wisdom, regardless of the subject, cannot, *ipso facto*, be characterized as cultural or religious insensitivity. Even Jewish communities cannot stand detached from intolerance, violence and destruction against others. The conquests recorded in the Hebrew Bible are one example. To argue that the holocaust is in some way culturally specific or historically significant in unique ways on a universal level is opinion, neither binding, necessarily persuasive, nor intellectually obligatory. To insist that it is amounts to "intellectual terrorism".<sup>35</sup> A holocaust of those dimensions is less about history and more about myth. To say so does not constitute a "total betrayal of Jewish history."<sup>36</sup> Whether Nazis were engaged in the "banality of evil" or in displaying collective consciousness is a matter to be investigated not legislated.<sup>37</sup> There may be good reasons for preferring Stanley Milgram over Daniel Goldhagen.<sup>38</sup>

The Working Party found that Hayward was not guilty of

racism or anti-Semitism, or of deliberately falsifying data. Nevertheless, the report was critical of the quality of Hayward's work, and dissented from the grade that it was awarded.

Hayward's novice research exercise however, became widely regarded by academics, university administrators, news media persons and members of the general population, as the product of a contemptible scoundrel, a man lacking in probity, unfit to influence impressionable minds, and indeed unworthy of being employed even in non academic circles and whose writings, even though he has written nothing on the holocaust since his MA thesis, should be suppressed.<sup>39</sup> It should be borne in mind that unlike many ambitious young academics, Hayward made no attempt to publish any aspect of his MA thesis.<sup>40</sup> Nor was it the basis of his employment as an academic. Its only role in his career was to qualify him to proceed to the PhD degree, for which he undertook research on an unrelated topic.

Judging from the essays in *The New Zealand Jewish Chronicle*, the report issued by the Working Party in December 2000 and the articles appearing in the New Zealand news media, the Hayward affair might seem to be a rather straightforward case of incompetent research and defective supervision.<sup>41</sup> There are other details which have been less publicised if at all. While some voices have condemned the lack of balance in the Hayward affair,<sup>42</sup> others have dismissed it all as a "hysterical diatribe."<sup>43</sup> Continuing publicity indicates that important parts of the story are not known.



Widely used map of Germany and Poland during World War II depicting National Socialist concentration and (alleged) extermination camps.



## The Working Party Report and the Reaction

In December 2000 the Working Party established by the University of Canterbury in April that year, to investigate the Hayward thesis released its report totalling 296 pages including supporting materials.<sup>44</sup> This report was received by the administration, adopted by the University council on 18 December and no public contest was offered to its findings.<sup>45</sup> However, the report was not accepted unanimously. Several senior Canterbury University historians took the view that their institution had been far too apologetic.<sup>46</sup> Vincent Orange, Hayward's thesis supervisor, contested a great deal in the report by the Working Party and that of Richard Evans (see below).<sup>47</sup> Professor John Jensen of Waikato University likewise did not accept these reports as fundamentally accurate.<sup>48</sup>

Other academics considered the report's verdict to have been "pre-determined", to have exceeded its own legal advice, and upon which the University of Canterbury assumed an official position "on a matter that seems to be the province of individual academics."<sup>49</sup>

In February 2001, the History Department at Canterbury took the report under consideration and concluded its deliberations by affirming that it "supports the broad thrust of the recommendations of the Barker inquiry..."<sup>50</sup> The vote was overwhelmingly in favor of this ambivalent motion but not unanimous. Three members of the department (besides Orange) put forward arguments in opposition to the report and to the nature of the enquiry. One member of the department insisted on being named in the minutes of the meeting as opposing both the report and the departmental support for it.<sup>51</sup> Among those who supported the motion were some who admitted having read neither the report nor the thesis. One senior member argued that the department should not be seen as being in opposition to the university.<sup>52</sup>

Vincent Orange, who absented himself from the February meeting submitted to the department for consideration a dossier consisting of thirty-one documents titled "A Case for the Defence of Dr. Joel Hayward."<sup>53</sup> The dossier included submissions from academics who had read Hayward's thesis, documents presenting another side of the matter and related materials. These materials had been submitted to the Working Party but appear to have had no significant influence on the ultimate report.<sup>54</sup>

The dossier was prepared for three reasons: first, for consideration by the Working Party, second, that it might be attached to the Working Party report as an extended appendix (to provide balance) and, third, so that it might be placed in the university library where scholars or students in the future considering this matter might have access to both sides of the story. The Working Party Report did not respond to the contents of the dossier. Efforts to have the dossier appended to the report itself were unsuccessful, and the other objectives were not attained. This casts doubt on the statement of the Working Party that it had "fully and properly considered the matters at issue" and on the corroborating comment by Vice-Chancellor Daryl LeGrew that the report submitted by the Working Party was "an open and thorough academic review."<sup>55</sup>

Why was this body of material not made more widely available to those actively involved or interested in the Hayward af-

fair?<sup>56</sup> Vincent Orange or other members of the History Department opposing the submissions of the New Zealand Jewish Council could very well have distributed the dossier on their own. The apparent reason that they did not do so appears to be that they agreed to acquiesce in repeated requests by university officials that no comment be made to the media and that the university administration be responsible for comment on the Hayward affair.<sup>57</sup> The university administration, though aware of the dossier, elected not to publicize it.

For this reason, the public has not been able to form a balanced judgment informed by testimony on both sides.

The Barker committee, however, did rely heavily on a report, noted above, by Cambridge University Professor Richard J. Evans who was engaged by the New Zealand Jewish Council (NZJC) to provide comment on Hayward's thesis.<sup>58</sup> The NZJC originally presented a fourteen page submission to the Working Party on the Hayward thesis which summarized their concerns and specified their wishes about the enquiry.<sup>59</sup> It submitted that the thesis was dishonest, the award of Hayward's MA should be revoked, and all University of Canterbury endorsement of Hayward's work towards the MA be withdrawn and by implication that the Hayward thesis be removed from the university library.<sup>60</sup>

Fresh from his very public victory over David Irving (a controversial figure in the German historiography of the 1930s and 1940s) in a high profile London court case in April 2000 wherein Irving was found to have falsified historical evidence, Evans submitted a 71 page report trenchantly condemning the thesis. Professor Gerald Orchard, one of New Zealand's most highly regarded lawyers, in turn denounced this report to the Working Party as "adversarial", the work of a "partisan advocate," and not an "objective expert", who engaged in exaggeration, omission of material and misrepresentation, and whose opinions in the Hayward case could not be relied on.<sup>61</sup> The Working Party acknowledged that Evans "appeared to diminish the objectivity required of an expert witness", submitted unwarranted allegations, and was "highly antagonistic." It professed to have "made every effort to discount Professor Evans' tendency to intemperate expression" but accepted the report as authoritative and seems not to have been influenced markedly by the sustained responses to Evans' report included in the "Dossier for the Defence".<sup>62</sup> But faced with the profound disagreement on the merits of Hayward's thesis between its official examiners (Orange and Jensen) and Evans, the Working Party had received legal counsel that preference for one perspective over the other was "a question for appropriate expert historians."<sup>63</sup> Macintyre and Trotter were historians but not "appropriate expert historians". No "appropriate expert historians" were approached. Why, on such a critical point supported by legal advice, did the Working Party not take this step? Vincent Orange and Joel Hayward made a strategic error in not also contracting an expert on holocaust historiography to review the Hayward thesis and submit a report. This step apparently did not occur to them at the time and the *faux pas* proved costly and monumental in its eventual implications. The willingness of the Working Party to accept a partisan opinion commissioned by an interested caucus is curious and places the enquiry itself in a troubling light.

Notwithstanding the Working Party's remarks on Evans's intemperate language and lack of objectivity, he appeared both to the Jewish Council and the Working Party as a witness otherwise above reproach. Evans is an excellent scholar but published reviews of his own books accuse him of sometimes "going over the top in ways that are unnecessary to his argument"; of engaging in "gratuitous speculation"; in certain cases of not having "studied the primary sources... under discussion"; elsewhere that he often misses the point, resorts to intemperate attack and is often confused.<sup>64</sup> In other words, in the opinion of some of his peers even Richard Evans violates many of the sound principles of historical method that he considered defectively employed in Hayward's thesis.

Evans is also curiously inconsistent in his attitude to scholars who have erred. In the 1980s a scandal arose over a book written by a young political scientist, David Abraham, and which Evans had reviewed favourably. When it was revealed that Abraham was guilty of egregious errors he was hounded out of the academic profession. Evans writes of how unfair this was even though, as he points out "the book was so riddled with errors" that Abraham was sometimes contradicting his own thesis. "My own view is that while Abraham did not deliberately falsify evidence, he was extremely careless with it, far more than is permissible in a work of serious historical scholarship." Nevertheless, he concluded, "To deny Abraham the... chance of making amends... was surely wrong."<sup>65</sup> In support of this conclusion Evans cites the case of Lawrence Stone whose early published work was exposed as fundamentally flawed and yet he subsequently spent a long and productive career engaged in highly regarded scholarship. His early work is barely recalled. Abraham's work was on the Weimar Republic, Stone's on early modern England. Hayward's alleged shortcomings were not of the same order as Abraham's, and were not published as Abraham's were, but Evans's report makes no reference to extenuating circumstances, qualifications about the nature of Hayward's preliminary research exercise go unnoted and Hayward is treated as though the thesis in question was the culminating work of a long career rather than an inaugural effort. Why? At the same time as Evans was recommending Hayward's censure and the revocation of his MA degree, he was also reflecting again on Abraham's situation with the comment, "this fate is also thankfully extremely rare."<sup>66</sup>

### **Continued Dissent**

The Working Party Report satisfied neither of the protagonists. It appears to have been intended to soothe by offering a compromise solution: it agreed with the Jewish Council and Richard Evans that there were serious flaws in the Hayward thesis, but not that it was either dishonest or fraudulent, or that it was unworthy of being awarded a master's degree, or that the degree should be withdrawn or that the thesis itself should be removed from library collections.<sup>67</sup> On the other hand, the report was not the exoneration of the thesis that Hayward and Orange had hoped for, and the university's examination procedures were severely criticised. Consequently both parties were embittered; neither could claim victory, and indeed, everyone seemed discredited by the whole affair: the academics felt betrayed and the NZJC felt that its cause had been frustrated. The

official Jewish view was that the outcome of the enquiry was unacceptable.<sup>68</sup> David Zwartz told a newspaper, "We must take it further."<sup>69</sup>

However, the University of Canterbury was unprepared to invest further time or financial resources on the Hayward affair which it considered resolved.<sup>70</sup> Since the university clearly was not going to revoke Hayward's degree, excoriate him any further, censure Vincent Orange (the thesis supervisor whom some regarded as ultimately responsible for Hayward's work) or keep the matter at the forefront, one might have expected that the Hayward affair had run its course. Hayward continued with his duties at Massey University and press releases seemed to indicate that his tenure there was secure and the university had no intention of withdrawing support.<sup>71</sup> The affair was closed at last.

It did not, however, end. There were people whose passions had evidently been aroused by the affair and the extensive publicity it had received, and these had recourse to informal and sinister methods of expressing their anger. In early 2001 Hayward began to receive even more vitriolic hate mail along with obscene and disturbing telephone calls. More than a year after the report by the Working Party became public, Hayward received death threats directed at his children. He continued occasionally to issue apologies for any unintended consequences created by his MA work and tried to get on with his life and career. Feeling ridiculed and harassed, and believing that even among his colleagues at Massey sentiment had turned against him, Hayward suffered an emotional breakdown. He spent over two years under medical care.<sup>72</sup>

More than that he became disenchanted with the world of higher education. He no longer believed universities (at least in New Zealand) were places for the free exchange of ideas. He had come to regard the exalted virtue of academic freedom as an illusion now sold out to considerations of expediency. He became convinced the ideals he had been taught by his professors and lecturers at Canterbury were simply rhetorical. He no longer believed in the alleged ideals of the academy. In brief, he no longer wished to be an academic. He regarded higher education irreparably soiled by "indifference and moral cowardice."<sup>73</sup> In December 2001, in deep depression, Hayward tendered his resignation from Massey University effective in June 2002. Massey appears to have made no effort to assess Hayward's condition or provide support of the kind usually available to distressed employees.

With Hayward out of Massey and his academic career at an end was the Hayward affair now truly over and done with? Efforts were made to link another Canterbury thesis to Holocaust denial and to Hayward but came to naught,<sup>74</sup> but for Hayward there was more to come. In early December 2002 he was informed by HarperCollins, a major international publisher, through their Auckland office, that they wished to withdraw from publishing a book of which Hayward was co-editor. The volume in question was a collection of essays about New Zealand airmen.<sup>75</sup> The book was fully prepared and ready for printing. Hayward was shocked at the news and pressed for an explanation. A volume of essays about New Zealand airmen seems innocuous enough. HarperCollins was reluctant to provide Hayward with an explanation for their eleventh-hour decision apart from saying they had been put under considerable pressure not to

associate with Hayward on account of the negative publicity surrounding him.<sup>76</sup> Somehow, the matter had been taken far beyond the question of whether a thesis had been honest.

Nor is HarperCollins alone in shunning Hayward. People fear being seen in a café with him. Others are afraid that emails might be monitored and association with him might have serious consequences for their own careers. They no longer converse with him for fear of being linked to him. Some of his former associates suspect their own work has been scoured for traces of “heretical” thinking about topics on which freedom of thought and independence of expression are unwelcome. Was this a consequence that could have been imagined when the Working Party submitted its report a year earlier?

Shortly after the HarperCollins shock, Hayward was hired by Fonterra, the large dairy and meat company as Communications Coordinator with responsibilities for writing the company’s internal communications, information and training documents.<sup>77</sup> His employment with Fonterra, however, ended the day he began when the company decided to terminate the position having been advised that employing him was a very risky proposition.<sup>78</sup> Was this commensurate with what Hayward was alleged to have done ten years before?

### Why Won’t the Hayward Affair Come to an End?

Apologies have availed nothing. Resignation has been for naught. Passivity has been unproductive and the Hayward affair continues. One feature which has been entirely overlooked in all the publicity is why an unpublished, embargoed, research-training exercise should have been given such notorious publicity. Do the alleged (but contested) deficiencies of the thesis justify the chain of events from the unauthorised copying of a thesis, to a highly publicised but not public inquiry, to nation-wide ridicule and humiliation, personal threats, isolation and termination of a career? What good was it thought was being served by this action? Relatively early in the story, some senior New Zealand academics wanted to know why the issue was pursued, and called for an enquiry into the “motives for such activities.”<sup>79</sup> On the most recent publicity, even a senior Canterbury University official wondered what the motivation could be in keeping the Hayward affair at issue.<sup>80</sup> Another opinion was blunt: “There seems to be a determination both to break Joel’s career and to silence enquiry into the facts about the Holocaust.”<sup>81</sup> On the latter, the implications are precipitous. Dogmatic emphases on the holocaust only “reinforces and legitimates closedmindedness, unrealistic foreign policies and barbaric behaviour.”<sup>82</sup>

Further, why has Joel Hayward been frustrated in attempting to publish or work even in fields totally unrelated to his MA research exercise? These are questions the media have not asked. Do they deserve an answer? What specifically constitutes denial of the holocaust? Is it as simple as questioning whether less than 6,000,000 Jews died? Does it extend to expressing sympathy for Germans in Dresden in 1945? Questioning testimonies of survivors? Alleging that countries other than Germany committed war crimes? Denying that Jewish suffering during the Second World War was somehow unique?<sup>83</sup> Is it anti-Semitic to try to remove the element of “sacred myth” from 1940s Jewish history? Is it really so intolerable to deny

that the holocaust “transcends history”, that it is “the ultimate event” or the “ultimate mystery”? Is it truly obligatory to acquiesce in the view that “any survivor has more to say than all the historians combined about what happened?”<sup>84</sup> Alternatively, to express sympathy with the Palestinian cause in the contemporary Middle East in some quarters suggests hostility to the Jews and to argue that Palestinians perhaps should be accorded their own autonomous territory free from Israeli oppression is regarded as anti-Semitic. Such arguments are as specious as they are jejune but the shackles of a new orthodoxy suggests universities can not allow certain assumptions to bear the weight of enquiry. Can morality be that flexible?

There is nothing redemptive about the holocaust and arguably less redemptive value in the pursuit of Joel Hayward along a journey from holocaust historian to the fate of personal holocaust. A consideration of the larger story suggests quite clearly that the Hayward affair is not just “a storm in a teacup.”

What is the motivation for keeping Hayward on the front burner? Justified comeuppance? Malice? Witch hunting? Witch hunters in early modern Europe were renowned for tenacity, success and ruthless application of their programme. Would their successors be any less vigilant? Are there “witch-finder generals” in New Zealand? Has the ghost of Joseph McCarthy appeared again? Is Joel Hayward a victim of outlooks analogous to these? If so, how should New Zealand society respond?<sup>85</sup>

### Notes

- <sup>1</sup> Philip Matthews, “In Denial: The continuing story of why a New Zealand university refuses to dishonour thesis denying the Nazi Holocaust” *Listener* (2–8 November 2002), pp. 26–30.
- <sup>2</sup> “We do not endorse or in any way condone Holocaust revisionism...” Daryl LeGrew, letter to university staff, 20 April 2000 and “Audit pans thesis on Holocaust” *The Press* (21 December 2000).
- <sup>3</sup> Tania Hinehou Butcher, “Relentless persecution of a respected academic” *Manawatu Evening Standard* (2 November 2002), p. 8.
- <sup>4</sup> Dov Bing, Professor of Political Science at Waikato University, raised the alarm as early as 14 December 1999 in an email to Vincent Orange. More specifically, *The New Zealand Jewish Chronicle* 56 (April 2000), pp. 1, 6. The New Zealand Jewish Council subsequently obtained official university documents that enabled it to make a formal submission on the thesis. David Zwartz made a formal request to Alan Hayward, University Registrar (and no relation to Joel Hayward), under provisions of the Official Information Act 1982 on 4 April 2000. In reply, Alan Hayward declined to release some materials. Acting on a request from the New Zealand Jewish Council, the Office of the Ombudsmen twice contacted Vincent Orange about the same materials on 19 June and 14 July. Orange declined to make public the requested documents. However, in his reply of 17 July 2000, Orange wanted to know how David Zwartz had knowledge of a letter dated 21 April that Orange had sent to the University Chancellor. Request for documents was again raised by the law firm of Macfarlane, Dougall, & Stringer, in a letter to Gerald Orchard, 9 August 2000, pp. 1–2.
- <sup>5</sup> *The New Zealand Jewish Chronicle* 56 (No.6, 2000), p. 6; *Sunday Star-Times* (28 May 2000); *The Press* (31 May 2000); letter to the University of Canterbury Working Party, 25 September 2000, 29pp, *passim*; *Listener* (24 June 2000), pp. 5–6; *Listener* (9 November 2002), p. 8; Report by the Joel Hayward Working Party (University of Canterbury, December 2000), p. 34.
- <sup>6</sup> Dame Phyllis Guthardt, Chancellor of Canterbury University, letter to university staff, 20 April 2000; “Holocaust thesis investigated” *The Press* (27 April 2000); “Former High Court judge to chair Holocaust thesis inquiry” *The Press* (16 May 2000).
- <sup>7</sup> Barker: Chancellor of Auckland University from 1991 to 1999 and former Senior Puisne Judge of the High Court of New Zealand; Trotter: Emeritus Professor of History at the University of Otago; and Macintyre: Professor of History at the University of Melbourne. Suggestions were made that the Working Party permit observers at its proceedings, but they were held in private.

- <sup>8</sup> Report by the Joel Hayward Working Party, p. 86.
- <sup>9</sup> Some of that negative reporting is referred to in the notes of this essay. Telephone calls have caused Hayward several times to have his home telephone number changed and at times has received threatening or abusive email on a daily basis. Vincent Orange, letter to Miles Fairburn, 10 February, 2001, p.3.
- <sup>10</sup> Detailed in various documents and correspondence. For example, Joel Hayward, letter to Vincent Orange, 22 April 2000, pp. 1–2; W. David McIntyre, letter to Ian Barker, undated [2000], p. 2; W. David McIntyre, letter to Alan Hayward, 25 May 1992, p. 1; Kingsley McFarlane, letter to Alan Hayward, 5 May 1992, pp. 1–2; McFarlane, letter to Alan Hayward, 9 September 1992, p. 1; Ian Catanach, letter to Vincent Orange, 30 December 2000, p.3; and Report by the Joel Hayward Working Party, pp.17–19, 73.
- <sup>11</sup> The head of the History department at that time refused to consider the matter. W. David McIntyre, letter to Alan Hayward, 25 May 1992 wherein McIntyre stated “the interference they have attempted is intolerable.”
- <sup>12</sup> Joel Hayward, Letter to the University of Canterbury Working Party, 25 September 2000, p. 3.
- <sup>13</sup> “Submission to the University of Canterbury Working Party on the Joel Hayward MA Thesis,” by the New Zealand Jewish Council, undated, paragraph 40, p. 8.
- <sup>14</sup> L.L. Stevens, QC, “Memorandum for Members of the Working Party,” 15 September 2000, p. 15.
- <sup>15</sup> Part XIV of the Education Act 1989 underscores the essential principles of academic freedom. Section 161(2) (a) states that students and academics have the freedom, within the law, to query and test received wisdom, to advance new ideas and to state unpopular or controversial opinions. *Reprinted Statutes of New Zealand* (Wellington: New Zealand Government, 1996), volume 34, p. 167. Other relevant canons include the New Zealand Bill of Rights Act 1990, Section 14. Grant Huscroft and Paul Rishworth, eds, *Rights and Freedoms: The New Zealand Bill of Rights Act 1990 and the Human Rights Act 1993* (Wellington: Brooker’s, 1995), pp. 500–4 at p. 501.
- <sup>16</sup> Statement adopted by the Council of the New Zealand Library Association, 15 May 1980. <http://www.lianza.org.nz/censorship.htm> and commented upon favorably by library personnel. For example, John Redmayne, letter to Daryl LeGrew, 20 April 2000.
- <sup>17</sup> Noam Chomsky, “The Faurisson Affair: His Right to Say It” *Nation* (28 February 1991), p.231. Chomsky is a prominent Jewish intellectual.
- <sup>18</sup> Quoted in D. D. Guttenplan, *The Holocaust on Trial: History, Justice and the David Irving Libel Case*, (London: Granta Books, 2001), p. 302. Hilberg is a well-respected Jewish historian.
- <sup>19</sup> These principles are urged for example by Frank Haden, “Holocaust denier should have freedom to upset” *Sunday Star-Times* (21 May 2000) and Tim Darlington, “Politics has no place in thesis arguments” *Sunday Star Times* (4 June 2000). After the Working Party Report was released supportive letters to the editor were published in *The Press* (21 December 2000) and (26 December 2000). Hayward’s students likewise expressed their support for him. “Backing for controversial ex-lecturer” *Evening Standard* (31 October 2002).
- <sup>20</sup> There are academics who oppose this. For example, Chris Connolly, “Submission on Joel Hayward’s Thesis,” [undated, ca. July 2000] p. 4 where he states, “We have no business trying to “neuter” history at the postgraduate level, turning out students who shrink from controversy.”
- <sup>21</sup> “Submission to the University of Canterbury Working Party on the Joel Hayward MA Thesis” by the New Zealand Jewish Council, undated, paragraph 23, p.5.
- <sup>22</sup> Elie Wiesel, “Words from a Witness,” *Conservative Judaism* 21 (Spring 1967), p. 43.
- <sup>23</sup> David Cohen, “Revisionist history casts campus shadow” *The National Business Review* (22 November 2002), p. 4.
- <sup>24</sup> An irrefutable historical, social and political phenomenon. See for example the thorough and dispassionate treatment in Peter Novick, *The Holocaust in American Life* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1999) and Norman G. Finkelstein, *The Holocaust Industry: Reflections on the Exploitation of Jewish Suffering*, (London: Verso, 2000).
- <sup>25</sup> J.S.A. Hayward, “The Fate of Jews in German Hands: An Historical Enquiry into the Development and Significance of Holocaust Revisionism,” unpublished MA thesis, University of Canterbury, 1993, 360 pp.
- <sup>26</sup> Hayward, “The Fate of Jews in German Hands,” *passim* but especially pp. 143–260.
- <sup>27</sup> See Christian Leitz, “Holocaust Research: The Current Position,” *History Now* 6 (1) May 2000, p. 28: “the search for a written order from Hitler will continue as long as there are still files of the Third Reich hidden away in the archives of Russia and elsewhere.”
- <sup>28</sup> Hayward, “The Fate of Jews in German Hands,” p. 336.
- <sup>29</sup> Israel Gutman, ed., *Encyclopedia of the Holocaust*, 4 volumes (New York: Macmillan, 1990), vol. 4, pp. 1797–1802 projects a figure between 5.6 million and 5.9 million while stating the figures are “estimates,” Estimated total deaths during and as a result of the Second World War are commonly estimated at between 50 and 60 million.
- <sup>30</sup> Yehuda Bauer, “Don’t resist: A Critique of Phillip Lopate,” *Tikkun* 4 (May–June 1989) p.67.
- <sup>31</sup> Cited in Barbara Amouyal, “Doubts over Evidence of Camp Survivors” *Jerusalem Post* (17 August 1986), p. 1.
- <sup>32</sup> A standard reference work, however, lists Neuengamme, Sachsenhausen and Ravensbrück as German camps where gas was used, but does not mention camps such as Dachau and Buchenwald which were formerly thought to have been primarily extermination centres. *Encyclopedia of the Holocaust*, vol. 2, pp. 539–41.
- <sup>33</sup> Hayward, “The Fate of Jews in German Hands,” p. 336 and Appendix to the thesis, p. 2.
- <sup>34</sup> Hayward’s discussion of gas chambers has sometimes been presented as concluding that no gas chambers existed at all. “POW angry over thesis” *The Press* (20 December 2000); “Audit pans thesis on Holocaust” *The Press* (21 December 2000) and “MP wants choice of tutor probed” *The Press* (9 January 2001).
- <sup>35</sup> Jean-Michel Chaumont, *La Concurrence des Victims*. (Paris: Editions le Doucouverte, 1997), pp. 137, 148–49, 156.
- <sup>36</sup> As argued by Elie Wiesel. See Irving Abraham, ed. *Against Silence: The Voice and Vision of Elie Wiesel*, 3 vols. (Washington: Holocaust Library, 1995). Others argue the uniqueness doctrine amounts to “intellectual sleight-of-hand”, fetish and cult characteristics (Peter Novick, *The Holocaust in American Life*, pp. 9, 198) just plain silly (Jacob Neusner, *The Public Side of Learning* (Chico, CA: Scholars Press, 1985), p. 128) or “sterile” (Finkelstein, *The Holocaust Industry*, p. 47). The most systematic treatment of the doctrine of uniqueness is Steven T. Katz, *The Holocaust in Historical Context*, vol. 1. (New York: Oxford University Press, 1994) esp. pp. 28, 58, 60.
- <sup>37</sup> A reference to the outrage prompted by Hannah Arendt, *Eichmann in Jerusalem: A Report on the Banality of Evil* (London: Faber, 1963). It is noteworthy that “almost all scholars have come to accept Arendt’s thesis,” Novick, *The Holocaust in American Life*, p. 137.
- <sup>38</sup> Goldhagen says institutionalised hatred of Jews among Germans produced the holocaust. Daniel Goldhagen, *Hitler’s Willing Executioners: Ordinary Germans and the Holocaust* (London: Little, Brown & Co. 1996). For a robust critique see Miles Fairburn, *Social History: Problems, Strategies and Methods* (London: Macmillan, 1999), pp. 263–80 and Raul Hilberg, “La Phénomène Goldhagen,” *Les Temps Modernes* 592 (Feb-Mar. 1997), pp. 1–10. On the other hand, Stanley Milgram, a Yale psychologist, in the early 1960s carried out experiments which suggested that ordinary moral people under dictatorial influence could easily engage in atrocities. Stanley Milgram, *Obedience to Authority: an Experimental View* (London: Tavistock, 1974).
- <sup>39</sup> For example, “Hayward lacks the integrity necessary to hold a position of trust in the academic world,” Comment by David Zwartz cited in “Thesis supervision angers Jewish group,” *The Press* (3 March 2001), p. 1.
- <sup>40</sup> Hayward was criticised for having disseminated his thesis, while others condemned him for having embargoed it. It is true that Hayward did give copies of his thesis to two or three individuals. That does not constitute academic publication. While he has been criticized for this there is nothing unusual in it. Whether or not he was naive is hardly relevant. It is a common practice for people assisting research scholars with information to expect or even require a copy of the thesis in return for their cooperation. Hayward gave copies in this manner. “But I expressly forbade any use or publication of the thesis, in part or in whole, and even attached a clearly worded statement to the inside cover, which read: Copyright 1993 J.S.A. Hayward All Rights Reserved No reproduction, copy or transmission of any part of this MA thesis may be made without written permission from the author,” Hayward goes on to say that as far as he was aware only Frederick Töben of the Adelaide Institute made any effort to further “holocaust denial” by using his thesis. As soon as this came to Hayward’s attention he “took immediate and successful steps... to prevent any mischievous or harmful use of my thesis being made by that man.” Joel Hayward, letter to the University of Canterbury Working Party, 25 September 2000, pp. 3–4. It came to wider attention only after a copy apparently was removed from the Canterbury University library, illegally photocopied and distributed. This act of theft was apparently never investigated by the authorities.

- <sup>41</sup> David Zwartz, president of the New Zealand Jewish Council put it bluntly: "We lay full responsibility on the experienced professional historians at the university whose job was to guide and assess his [Hayward's] work," "Making History" *The Press* (20 May 2000), p. 2. Astonishment later was expressed that Orange had been appointed convener of the History department Research Committee which oversees all thesis proposals. "Historian in the-sis post" *The Press* (10 June 2000), p. 8. Elsewhere, Orange's resignation was called for. "Shonky thesis a dire scandal" *Sunday Star-Times* (14 January 2001), p. A8. See also the *New Zealand Jewish Chronicle* 56 (No. 6, 2000), pp. 1, 6, 7–8.
- <sup>42</sup> Lyall Lukey, letter to the editor of the *Sunday Star-Times* (19 January 2001).
- <sup>43</sup> Frank Jones, "Rabid Attack" *Sunday Star-Times* (21 January 2001).
- <sup>44</sup> *Report by the Joel Hayward Working Party* is 89 pages in length but also includes over two hundred pages of supporting materials.
- <sup>45</sup> A news media report claimed "amid tight security" the University Council "debated for two hours the findings..." *The Press* (19 December 2000). According to the Vice Chancellor, "At its meeting on Monday 18 December 2000 the Council adopted the... Report from the Working Party and approved its public release," Daryl LeGrew, letter to Vincent Orange, 19 December 2000.
- <sup>46</sup> For example, Ian Catanach and Marie Peters to Vincent Orange, 30 December 2000. A dozen other scholars from around the country expressed their disapproval, some in strident terms.
- <sup>47</sup> Vincent Orange, letter to the Working Party, 18 October 2000, 7pp and Orange, letter to Miles Fairburn, 10 February 2001, 18pp.
- <sup>48</sup> "A tale [...] full of sound and fury, signifying nothing!" "Comments by Professor (retired) John H. Jensen on 'Submission to the University of Canterbury Working Party on the Joel Hayward thesis' by the New Zealand Jewish Council and 'Report' by Professor Richard J. Evans," undated, 5pp.
- <sup>49</sup> For example, Martin Lally, Victoria University, letter to Daryl LeGrew, 1 February 2001, p. 3 but *passim*. On legal advice, L.L. Stevens, QC, letter to Ian Barker, 10 October 2000, pp. 1–2.
- <sup>50</sup> <http://www.hist.canterbury.ac.nz/news/index.htm>
- <sup>51</sup> Minutes of Special Departmental Meeting, 21 February 2001, p. 2.
- <sup>52</sup> At least three New Zealand academics (outside Canterbury) publicly calling for Hayward's disgrace admitted not having read the thesis. Certain individuals appeared on national television decrying the thesis but only afterwards read it. Elsewhere, "I have no hesitation in endorsing the New Zealand Jewish Council's condemnation of [Hayward's] University of Canterbury MA thesis," Greg Ryan, letter to the editor, *The Press* (5 May 2000), p. 4. A month later (6 June), Ryan, a lecturer at Lincoln University, admitted to a member of the Canterbury History department he had not read the Hayward thesis. See also Chris Connolly, "Submission on Joel Hayward's Thesis," p. 5.
- <sup>53</sup> Miles Fairburn, memorandum to History Department, 8 February 2001 and Vincent Orange, letter to Miles Fairburn, 10 February 2001, pp. 2–16. The dossier assembled formally by Orange in February 2001 consists of approximately 144 pages.
- <sup>54</sup> Vincent Orange, letter to Ann Trotter, 25 May 2000, pp. 1–2 referring to many of the documents eventually included in the dossier and attaches copies in advance of his own meeting on 26 July. Receipt of the documents also acknowledged by Stuart Macintyre, letter to Vincent Orange, 12 June 2000, p. 1. The documents again are referred to in some detail in Orange's letter to "Ian Barker and Colleagues" on 16 July 2000, pp. 1–4.
- <sup>55</sup> *Report by the Joel Hayward Working Party*, p. 86 and Daryl LeGrew, letter to the academic community, 21 December 2000.
- <sup>56</sup> The materials evidently were placed in the University archives. Chancellor Phyllis Guthardt, letter to Vincent Orange, 30 April 2001.
- <sup>57</sup> "We feel that the Department should be 'closed lip' if approached by any media. Also we should wait until we have heard from the VC [vice chancellor], as to what we should say to the media," Judy Robertson (on behalf of Miles Fairburn, head of the department of history), letter to all history staff, 20 April 2000. This was the basis for Orange declining to appear in a proposed segment of the *60 Minutes* television programme. Vincent Orange, letter to Melanie Jones, 5 August 2000. A similar communiqué was circulated throughout the History Department on 2 February 2001 and again on 23 October 2002: "We are to give 'no comment' and if anyone is persistent refer them to... the Registry."
- <sup>58</sup> Evans was supplied with the examiners' reports on Hayward's thesis as well as Vincent Orange's letter to the Canterbury Chancellor (21 April 2000) by Macfarlane, Dougall, Stringer, barristers and solicitors, and asked by David Zwartz to examine and comment on them. Richard J. Evans, letter to David Zwartz, 19 September 2000, p. 1. Evans concluded that all three documents are problematic, essentially repeating his arguments detailed in his report on the thesis.
- <sup>59</sup> "Submission to the University of Canterbury Working Party on the Joel Hayward MA Thesis," (undated) consisting of seventy statements.
- <sup>60</sup> There is some dispute over this last point. "Holocaust thesis investigated" *The Press* (27 April 2000) stated the Jewish Council wanted the thesis removed from the library but Mike Regan of the New Zealand Jewish Council denied it (*Canta* 3 May 2000), as did David Zwartz. "Flawed arguments" *Sunday Star-Times* (28 May 2000) and in his letter to Chancellor Phyllis Guthardt, 4 April 2000, p. 2.
- <sup>61</sup> Gerald Orchard, "To the Working Party inquiry into JSA Hayward's MA Thesis," 13 October 2000, 4pp.
- <sup>62</sup> See *Report by the Joel Hayward Working Party*, pp. 36–37.
- <sup>63</sup> L.L. Stevens, QC, "Memorandum for Members of the Working Party," 15 September 2000, p. 21.
- <sup>64</sup> *Journal of Social History* 32 (No. 4, 1999), pp. 941–2; *History and Theory* 39 (No. 2, 2000), pp. 218–29; *The Times Literary Supplement* no. 4935 (31 October 1997), p. 10; *History – Reviews in History* (October 1999), and others.
- <sup>65</sup> Richard J. Evans, *In Defence of History* (London: Granta Books, 1997), pp. 121, 123.
- <sup>66</sup> Richard J. Evans, *Lying About Hitler: History, Holocaust, and the David Irving Trial* (New York: Basic Books, 2001), p. 248.
- <sup>67</sup> *Report by the Joel Hayward Working Party*, pp. 3, 57, 70 and 86.
- <sup>68</sup> "An odious decision" *The New Zealand Jewish Chronicle* 57 (No. 3, 2000 [sic]), pp. 1, 7.
- <sup>69</sup> Comment by David Zwartz in *Sunday Star Times* (28 January 2001).
- <sup>70</sup> The cost of the enquiry has been reported at \$200,000. "Thesis casts shadow" *The Press* (20 December 2000). Also in Daryl LeGrew, letter to Vincent Orange, 19 December 2000, p. 2 estimated at between \$150,000 and \$200,000 and in "An open letter to our community from the University of Canterbury", 22 December 2000.
- <sup>71</sup> "Varsity leader defends historian" *The New Zealand Herald* (15–16 April 2000) wherein Pro Vice Chancellor Barrie Macdonald of Massey University affirmed the high regard the university had for Hayward.
- <sup>72</sup> Joel Hayward, letter to Vincent Orange, 9 May 2000, p.1 wherein he refers to specific treatment by a physician. In 2002 Hayward again referred to continuing care.
- <sup>73</sup> Joel Hayward, letter, 6 December 2002, read publicly at Orange's retirement function at Canterbury University on the same day. The letter was an expression of gratitude and congratulations to Orange who devoted forty years to Canterbury.
- <sup>74</sup> "Second Holocaust thesis controversy" *The Press* (24 October 2002) and "Essay was revisionist" *Waikato Times* (23 October 2002). The suggestion was advanced by Dov Bing. Ironically, an editorial shortly thereafter dismissed Bing's suggestions as "Trivial to-do" *The Press* (29 October 2002). One wonders why editors of a leading newspaper permitted a "trivial" matter to appear on the front page or composed an editorial on the same "trivial" subject?
- <sup>75</sup> Glyn Harper and Joel Hayward, eds, *Born to Lead: New Zealand Military Commanders and their Style of Command*.
- <sup>76</sup> Tony Fisk, letter to Joel Hayward, 29 November 2002. Fisk is the managing director of HarperCollins in New Zealand.
- <sup>77</sup> Joel Hayward, letter to Vincent Orange, 4 December 2002.
- <sup>78</sup> Joel Hayward, letter to Vincent Orange, 5 February 2003.
- <sup>79</sup> John H. Jensen, submission to the Working Party, p. 8; Hayward, letter to the University of Canterbury Working Party, p. 25 and Hayward, letter to Melanie Jones, 6 October 2000 declining to participate in the proposed *60 Minutes* programme.
- <sup>80</sup> Alan Hayward, letter to Vincent Orange, 17 October 2002.
- <sup>81</sup> Vincent Orange, letter to Alan Hayward, 7 May 2000, p. 4.
- <sup>82</sup> Charles Liebman, "What should have been done?" *Jerusalem Report* 2 (9 January 1992), p. 37.
- <sup>83</sup> All of these are considered constituent aspects of holocaust denial in Deborah E. Lipstadt, *Denying the Holocaust: The Growing Assault on Truth and Memory* (New York: The Free Press, 1993). On what basis can these criteria be considered binding?
- <sup>84</sup> Elie Wiesel, "Trivializing the Holocaust," *New York Times* (16 April 1978), p. 2:1; Harry J. Cargas, "An interview with Elie Wiesel," *Holocaust and Genocide Studies* 1 (1986), p. 5.
- <sup>85</sup> Neither Joel Hayward nor Vincent Orange has been associated with the preparation of this article and neither has seen it prior to publication.

## PETITION: TO THE UNIVERSITY OF CANTERBURY

**In relation to the master's thesis of Joel Hayward at the University of Canterbury, we note the following events, of which the first five are detailed on the University's own website:**

1. Joel Hayward was awarded a Masters degree by thesis, with first class honours, by the University of Canterbury in 1993, in accordance with the procedures that the University employed at the time.
2. It was subsequently argued by an external party that the degree should be revoked.
3. The University of Canterbury established a Working Party in 2000 to examine this claim.
4. The Working Party concluded that the thesis was not dishonest, and therefore could not be "amended, removed, downgraded or altered". It further concluded that the thesis was flawed and did not deserve the award of first class honours.
5. The University accepted these conclusions, apologised to those who were offended by the thesis, and stated that it did not support holocaust revisionism.
6. Dr Hayward resigned from his position at Massey University in 2002, apparently as a result of the ongoing hostility towards him arising from the previous events.
7. Recently, Dr Thomas Fudge of Canterbury's History Department wrote a review of these events, for inclusion in the University's journal 'History Now'. Although the journal was printed with this article, the Head of the University's History Department (Professor Peter Hempenstall) destroyed copies of the journal, with the concurrence of the University's Vice-Chancellor (Professor Roy Sharp). As a result of this action by the University, the editor (Associate Professor Ian Campbell) has now left that position, and Dr Fudge has indicated his intention to resign from the University.

Our views on these events are as follows. Notwithstanding any personal misgivings or objections that individual signatories may have as to the content of the thesis, we believe that certain fundamental principles have been breached by the University. First, we accept that a University has both the right and the obligation to revoke any thesis on the grounds of proven dishonesty. However, in the event of it not revoking a thesis on those grounds, we believe that it is totally inappropriate for any university administrator or sponsored body to issue negative public judgements about it, or to apologise to anyone who may be offended by it. No student should be subject to a de facto second round of assessment as to the quality (as opposed to the honesty) of their thesis, particularly after having just been exonerated of the charge of dishonesty.

Secondly, we believe that the Working Party's actions in criticising the quality of the thesis, and the University's public reiteration of that, constitutes the very 'downgrade' that the Working Party asserted to be unwarranted. We consider it inconceivable that the University and the Working Party did not understand the contradiction involved here.

Thirdly, we do not believe that it is the business of any university administrator to issue public pronouncements upon any historical issues that are unrelated to the University. This is a matter for individual academics in the relevant area, in the normal exercise of their professional duties.

Finally, whilst there may be a range of opinions concerning the University's action in destroying copies of 'History Now', we view the destruction of any published academic work with considerable concern. These concerns are not ameliorated by the University's earlier and clear breaches of the fundamental rights of a thesis student, of its own judgement that the thesis could not be downgraded, and of the proper boundary between academics and administrators in the issuing of public statements.

We further consider that the effect of the University's actions has been to send a clear signal to potential students and other researchers at the University as to the acceptable conclusions to be reached in a particular area of enquiry, and this is antithetical to the proper function of any university. Furthermore, the effect of the University's actions is likely to have contributed to the general climate of hostility towards Dr Hayward, and therefore to his subsequent resignation from Massey University.

These University actions are improper, and place an obligation upon the University of Canterbury to acknowledge its errors and to offer appropriate remedies to Dr Hayward.

### Signatories

- Martin Lally, Associate Professor of Finance, Victoria University, PhD (Victoria University)
- Glenn Boyle, Professor of Finance, University of Otago, MA (Canterbury), PhD (University of Texas, Austin)
- Beverley McNally, MBA (Henley), PhD student
- Tim Beal, Senior Lecturer in Marketing, Victoria University, DBA, PhD (Edinburgh)
- Benoit Julien, Assistant Professor in Economics, University of Miami, PhD (Western Ontario)
- Vincent Orange, Reader in History (ret), Canterbury University, PhD (Hull)
- Stephen Brewster, Accountant, Ministry of Economic Development, CA, BCA MBA (Victoria University), MTax student
- Scott Chaput, Lecturer in Finance, University of Otago, MBA (UIC), PhD (Oklahoma)
- Robert Mann, Senior Lecturer in Environmental Studies (ret), University of Auckland, PhD (University of California, Berkeley) Geoff Bertram, Senior Lecturer in Economics, Victoria University, D Phil (Oxford)
- Bryce Wilkinson, Capital Economics, BSc Hons, MCom, PhD (Canterbury)
- Rodney Hide, Member of Parliament, MSc (Canterbury and Lincoln), MSc (Montana State)
- Richard Marriott, Managing Director, Altair Financial Consulting Pty Ltd, formerly Senior Lecturer in Finance at Victoria University, MCom, MBA, B.Eng (elec)
- Alan Wilkinson, Company Director, BSc Hons, PhD (Canterbury)

- Richard Martin, Lecturer in Economics, Victoria University, PhD (Simon Fraser University)
- Stephen Burnell, Senior Lecturer in Economics, Head of School of Economics and Finance, Victoria University, PhD (Cambridge)
- Clare Gardner, Lecturer in Accountancy, University of Otago, MCom
- Arie Brand, Associate Professor, Dept of Sociology and Anthropology (ret), University of Newcastle (NSW), MA, PhD (Leiden)
- Charles Corrado, Professor of Finance, University of Auckland, PhD (University of Arizona)
- Anna Carr, Lecturer in Tourism, University of Otago, Postgraduate Diploma in Tourism Studies, PhD student
- Bryan Sinclair, Strategic Adviser, LLB, BMS
- Jerry Bowman, Professor of Finance, University of Auckland, PhD (Stanford)
- Michael Naylor, Lecturer in Finance, Massey University, MSc (University of London)
- Matthew Ryan, Senior Lecturer in Economics, University of Auckland, PhD (Yale)
- Andrey Ivanov, Research Assistant, Dept of Economics, University of Auckland, BCom Hons, PhD student
- Roger Kerr, MA (Canterbury)
- Rhema Vaithianathan, Lecturer in Economics, University of Auckland, PhD (University of Auckland)
- Stephen Poletti, Senior Tutor, Dept of Economics, University of Auckland, PhD (University of Newcastle, England)
- Maureen Coulter, Teacher, MA, PhD student in English and French
- Tony Chad, Musician/Poet/Editor
- John Randal, Lecturer in Finance, Victoria University, MSc PhD (Victoria University)
- Katie Drake, Postgraduate Diploma in International Relations and Security Studies, MA student
- Andrea Bennett, Lecturer in Finance, Massey University, BSc Hons (Canterbury), MBS Hons (Massey)
- John Jensen, Professor in History (ret), University of Waikato, MA, PhD (University of Pennsylvania)
- Francis Jensen, BEd (University of Waikato)
- Trevor Reeves, writer/publisher, Dunedin
- Christopher Milne, BComm LLB (University of Otago), CA
- Jeff Sluka, Associate Professor, Social Anthropology Programme, Massey University, PhD (University of California, Berkeley)
- Tania Hinehou Butcher, Poet, GradCert ResAn, BA, PGmd Cert Def Start Studs
- Mary Beth Taylor, Language Education Consultant, MA (University of Washington)
- Rick Boebel, Senior Lecturer in Finance, University of Otago, MBA (Chicago), PhD (University of North Carolina) Blair Simpson, Student Teacher, BA (Massey University)
- John Ross, Hon Research Fellow in English, Massey University, MA (VUW), PhD (University of London)
- Joseph Tanner, Engineer, MA in Philosophy
- John Irvine, Poet, Writer and Editor, Coromandel
- Adrian Phillips, Director, Kanuka Grove Educational Resource Centre, Massey University
- Carl Bradley, Masters student in Defence Studies, Massey University
- Emma Hamilton, BSLT, Masters student in Speech and Language Therapy, University of Canterbury.
- Doreen D'Cruz, Senior Lecturer in English and Media Studies, Massey University, PhD (University of Michigan) Brendan Judd, Engineer, BA Hons, MA (Massey University)
- Ananish Chaudhuri, Senior Lecturer in Economics, University of Auckland, PhD (Rutgers)
- Roger Openshaw, Professor of Social and Policy Studies in Education, Massey University College of Education, MA, D.Phil (University of Waikato)
- Cary Naderman, Professor of Political Science, Texas A&M University, formerly lecturer in Political Science at Canterbury, MA, PhD (York University, Canada)
- James Corum, Professor of Comparative Military Studies, School of Advanced Air and Space Studies, MA (Brown), M.LITT (Oxon), PhD (Queen's University)
- Simonne Walmsley, Legal Secretary, BA (History) student
- Alan Papprell, Teacher, Auckland, BA, Dip TCh
- Kris Vette, General Manager in the National Health Service, UK, BSc, Dip Bus, Dip Bus. Admin, MPhil (Massey University)
- Lazar Drazeta, PhD (Massey University)
- Garth Martin, Manager, Rotorua
- Paul Dunmore, Associate Professor of Accounting, Victoria University, BSc Hons, PhD MBA (McMaster University, Ontario)
- Judith Lawrence, Copy Editor, formerly librarian at Massey University, MA Hons in English (Massey University)
- Tania Lamb, Counsellor, B.Ed, MPhil, M.Management
- Philip McGuire, Senior Lecturer in Economics, University of Canterbury, MBA PhD (University of Chicago)

**Petition Organiser:** Martin Lally, Associate Professor, School of Economics and Finance, Victoria University of Wellington, PO Box 600, Wellington (martin.lallyt@vuw.ac.nz). Further signatories are very welcome, and should if possible be communicated to me by email. Contributions to the cost of this advertisement are also welcome."

# Censorship in East and West – the Zündel Ad Campaign

By Dr. Ingrid Rimland

As reported in *The Revisionist* No. 2/2003 (pp. 183-196), Ernst Zündel was arrested and deported from the U.S. to Canada in February 2002 for allegedly overstaying his visitor visa waiver. In Canada, he is being held in a maximum security prison under inhuman circumstances and being subjected to Kafkaesque secret hearings, the purpose of which is to try to categorize him as a security threat to Canada. The ultimate goal of the Canadian authorities is to deport Zündel back to his native Germany, where political trials and a long prison-term await him.

In the meantime, his wife Ingrid has launched an advertisement campaign in an attempt to gain public attention for the massive breach of human rights being perpetrated against her husband. A one-page ad appeared on June 12, 2003, in the *Washington Times*, a smaller, less well-known competitor of the *Washington Post*. A second ad was published in September 2003 in the *Washington Times* (Sept. 7) and in the Russian newspaper *Zavtra*. This time, however, the *Washington Times* decided to heavily censor the ad by removing any revisionist

argument and viewpoint and by totally omitting the call for help in an Open Letter to Vladimir Putin, the president of Russia.

The following text is a reprint of the ad as it was published in the Russian newspaper *Zavtra*. We have underlined those passages that the *Washington Times* omitted. It is a lesson on censorship. Once the media in Russia were well-known for their massive censorship. As the saying went, there was no *Pravda* (truth) in the *Isvestiya* (news), and no *Isvestiya* in the *Pravda*. Today, however, this cold war reality has turned upside down. Today, there is not much left of the truth in the news spread by U.S. mainstream media, and even the little bit of truth that does get published is objected to by many pressure groups, as the letter to the editor reproduced after this article shows.

Following this is a short report by the Director of the Canadian Association for Free Expression (CAFE), Paul Fromm, who is attending the show trial against dissident Ernst Zündel and does everything possible to help him. It speaks for itself.

The Editor

---

## An American Refusenik Story

*“There are a thousand hacking at the branches to one who is striking at its roots.”* (Henry David Thoreau, 1817-1862)

Herewith I alert the Russian people and, specifically, the Russian leadership to one of the most dictatorial events that happened in America. It is an intensely personal story.

For three years, I was happily married to a kind, gentle man with politically incorrect views – until, in broad daylight on American soil, my husband was brutally kidnapped by agents of the American government and taken away in leg irons.

The claim is that my husband was “deported” because he “overstayed his visa” We have the evidence to prove this allegation is untrue. We intend to prove in court that American law enforcement agencies were used unwittingly as opportune “enforcement squads” for a nasty political lobby with an agenda of muzzling free speech.

### Brief Background Information

I am a United States citizen, of German background, born in the Ukraine, having lived in the U.S. since 1967. My husband, Ernst Zündel, is a high-profile activist best known for various highly publicized Free Speech Holocaust trials in several countries. For decades, Ernst Zündel has fought for his right to challenge the orthodox Holocaust tale, which claims relentlessly the “gassing of six million Jews”, allowing no debate.

Ask yourself this: Who is powerful enough to dictate what shall be heard or not heard, spoken or not spoken, written or not written? Truth does not fear investigation. A lie must be investigated and disarmed.

To accept without doubt, to accuse without trustworthy evidence, to intimidate without proof, to lie without punishment,

to censor with impunity was unthinkable in the Western democracies in ages past. In the case of the ‘Holocaust’, the “murder weapon” is missing, Jewish casualty numbers are highly inflated, and the tales of the “witnesses” are unverifiable and often grossly bizarre. For instance, Elie Wiesel, by universal acclaim a remarkable Holocaust Survivor deserving of the Nobel Prize, wrote this:

“I learn from a witness that, for month after month, the ground [of an alleged Jewish mass grave at Babi Yar in the Ukraine] never stopped trembling; and that, from time to time, geysers of blood spurted from it.” ( Paroles d’étranger, Editions du Seuil, 1982, p. 86.)

In practically all Western countries, self-serving fictionalizing about the Holocaust proceeds untouched by common sense and forensically verifiable science. Why? It is really very simple: Certain enormously powerful interests, Jews and non-Jews alike, benefit handsomely from a simplistic view of history nobody is allowed to question – especially since taxpayers are willingly footing the bill.

World-wide, the ‘Holocaust’ has grown into a secular religion. To question the new dogma makes one a heretic, subject to vicious persecution and even prosecution. Russian-born Israel Shamir, a noted Israeli journalist and courageous critic of the current Israeli government, defined the problem well: “...the Holocaust is not a Jewish religion; it is a religion par excellence for goyim” – a disrespectful Hebrew word for non-Jews.

The ‘Holocaust’ must be examined, and questions must be

asked. It is not un-American to want to know the facts and to make known those facts, once found and carefully examined.

Ernst Zündel did just that – for decades! As a German descendant, Ernst Zündel refuses to live on his knees. For his responsible activism on behalf of his forebears' maligned generation, he has been targeted for assassination – twice by parcel bomb, once by arson, and once by a young woman posing as a journalist who was put on an airplane to Israel by Canadian authorities before she could do mischief with a microphone disguising a gun.

Because of his insistence to check out the 'Holocaust' claims, Ernst Zundel has made powerful political enemies at the highest levels of governments in various Western countries. Follow what happened recently:

#### ERNST ZUNDEL – PRISON MEMOIRS, FEBRUARY 5 TO FEBRUARY 19, 2003

I lived for more than 40 years in Canada. After my marriage to Ingrid, I had applied for my papers so I could live with her in Tennessee. My application had been accepted by Immigration authorities. I had been fingerprinted, given a work permit, a social security number, a medical. I was waiting for an interview with Immigration officials which I understood to be the last step before being granted permanent resident status. Since our first interview had to be canceled due to a time schedule conflict, our attorney requested a new date. We have in our possession a return receipt that our request to be re-scheduled had been received by INS.

We waited for that interview in the belief that we had done everything we knew how to do, according to government regulations. In our lawyer's opinion, the overwhelmed Immigration and Naturalization Service checking into thousands of illegal immigrants in the United States simply had not come around to looking at the file of two pension-aged Whites setting up residence in Tennessee and bothering no one. We had purchased an art gallery and planned to open it in weeks. One of my handy-men was helping me frame some of my water colors, oils and line drawings which I intended to hang that very afternoon. All this came to an abrupt end when a virtual posse of police cruisers and paddy wagons materialized in our driveway at about 11:00 a.m., February 5, 2003.

I was dressed in my work outfit, blue jeans, mountain hiking boots, colorful carpenter's suspenders and casual flannel shirt. I inquired what brought them there as they surrounded me menacingly. They told me to put my hands on the hood of a truck in the driveway. They said that they were Immigration Service Enforcement Officers who had come to take me into custody because I had failed to keep a court date.

There was no "court date" that we knew of. We were waiting to be notified of our re-scheduled interview. I was stunned – as was Ingrid. The five officers had no arrest warrant. I asked to call my attorney. The request was denied. Ingrid, too, was told no call to our attorney was allowed. I asked Ingrid to get my jacket, passport and medication, since I was not permitted to go back into the house. Ingrid was later told that this was deemed to have been a "civil" arrest and no arrest warrant was needed. There was nothing "civil" about this arrest!

Within minutes, I was in handcuffs and leg irons in a prison

van, escorted in a police convoy down our mountain road, past our art gallery, into our little town where Ingrid and I did our shopping, and onto highway I-40 to the Knoxville Immigration Office, where I was processed, finger printed, and photographed. A Polaroid photo was taken of me against the wall of some garage, part of a hollow block-type building. This photo was then trimmed and later on stapled onto a document. I was given some documents to sign, which were lying on the desk of one of the bureaucrats when I came in. They had yellow post-it notes, and one clearly said in someone's handwriting, "Add today's date here". One Immigration officer, not directly involved in my case, had his wall decorated with a 2 × 4-foot large Israeli flag. Needless to say, I found this somewhat of an odd wall decoration in a U.S. Immigration Office!

I was then put again into a prison van in handcuffs and leg irons and driven for approximately 1¼ to 1½ hours through heavy traffic from Knoxville to a nearby jail, a cold, unfriendly place. The processing there took over four hours. I was kept in an ice-cold, all-concrete holding cell – even the seats and floors were concrete – until well after midnight. The medication I had brought with me to jail was disallowed. As a result, my blood pressure began to act up. I was told by the nurses, to whom I was taken – still in handcuffs and leg irons – that it was dangerously high.

I was housed in a two-man cell, in 24-hour lockup, only allowed a brief shower after two to three days and a short call to Ingrid – I don't remember when. My cell-mate was an engineer in chemistry, a manic depressive who hallucinated, talked to unseen people all day and jumped up and down and out of bed all night long, hollering orders to persons unseen, thinking he was in charge of the CIA and talking loudly to "the President" on his make-believe telephone. He smelled awful, obviously not having showered in weeks. He annoyed the guards repeatedly in the middle of the night by using the in-cell intercom. Finally, the guards came, six or seven of them, and told me to get off my top bunk, grab my mattress and sheets and get out of the cell. I stood in the hallway where I heard hollering, screaming, and punching. I saw blood squirting against the wall as my crazy cell-mate was dragged on one leg across the floor into a different area of the prison. I saw him a few days later. He was bruised, all black and blue over his eyes and head as guards led him past me from the doctor's office.

I was put into a two-man cell with a gentle, soft-spoken 65-year-old barber who had tried to shoot his mother. He was kind and helpful to me. I was now briefly with the general population, half Black, Mexican and Indian, the rest being Whites, mainly from the Smoky Mountain area. Most were hardened criminals, murderers, bank robbers, car thieves. Almost all were repeat offenders. Many had 25 to 30 year sentences. There was anger, frustration and rage in that place that was palpable.

Guards were unfriendly, cold, abrupt. One guard woke me up in the middle of the night by poking me into the ribs with a flashlight because I had left a book on the window sill.

Come Sunday, I heard dogs barking. We were all ordered into our cells while black-uniformed SWAT teams with dogs went systematically from cell to cell, threw us on the floor face down, hand-cuffed, arms twisted behind our backs. They dragged us outside the cells like sacks of potatoes while hel-



meted, visored, New World Order-type cops hollered commands at us. They searched our pockets, beds and plastic bins. The dogs, dripping saliva from their snapping jaws, were mainly Dobermans and German Shepherds and were kept on chain leashes two feet away from our bodies and faces. Young, pretty women in skin-tight uniforms and tightly-fitting flak jackets, all black in color, kept climbing over the men who were curled up, face down, shaking, frightened out of their wits. Some had tears streaming down their faces. The women filmed these hapless prisoners with mini-camcorders close up, laughing and joking, having themselves a ball. Why were those videos taken?

I was there on two weekends, and this terrorizing of the prisoners happened on both weekends. I was lucky to miss it the second time because my American attorney, whom Ingrid had in the meantime engaged, had come to see me and I was in the visitor meeting area of the prison. He had found out by the grapevine that I was going to be deported from the USA to Germany where I was born, even though I lived in Canada for over four decades.

This lawyer filed a request with the District Court that I be permitted to see a judge to tell him what happened – a request that was denied the same day. We challenged that decision the very next day in the Cincinnati Sixth Circuit Court where a law suit is still pending. According to procedural court rules, I should not have been taken out of that prison and deported without having seen a judge – yet that is exactly what happened a few nights later, February 17, 2003 – a national holiday in America, “President’s Day”.

I was awakened by pounding on my cell door at 2:30 a.m. and told to get ready. By 4:30 a.m., the guards came to get me for “processing out”. I was given a shower, ice cold, and changed back into my civilian clothing. Because of the holiday, the guards could not let me have my medication and the U.S. \$400 I had brought with me to prison. To this day, that money has not been returned.

I was taken to the Knoxville Airport without a single cent in my pocket and without my medication. We boarded a plane to Atlanta, Georgia shortly after 7:00 a.m., landing there after 9:00 a.m. I was not told where we were going, but I saw a sign at the airline counter: Buffalo, New York. I realized they were shipping me to Canada, not to Germany.

I had had no opportunity to let Ingrid know where I was and what was happening to me. To this day, not one agency has contacted Ingrid – either by phone, letter or visit – explaining, much less justifying the arrest.

We arrived in Buffalo, New York at 11:30 a.m. in a bad snowstorm. There I was told I was banned from the United States for 20 years, which meant Ingrid would be 87, and I would be 84 years old before I might have my first chance to see her again. I was taken across the Canadian border and kept in a locked room at Canadian Immigration offices at the Peace Bridge. There was lots of gesticulation and loud talking. The end result was that I was taken back across the U.S. border, still in a snowstorm. We seemed to slide and slither for hours until I finally spotted a sign saying “Attica, New York, Maximum Security Prison”. Luckily, the vehicle turned into Batavia and we finally arrived there at dusk.

That prison was way out in a wind-blown farming area. It was a flat-roofed facility, surrounded by high barbed-wire fences and search lights with a small guard hut and a barrier, reminiscent of the Dr. Zhivago film. A huge six-foot guard, dressed in a Russian-type fur hat and a dark green greatcoat, came to check papers and cargo. It was a seemingly new, very clean, well-organized facility. Unfortunately, I was only there for not quite two days before I was taken back to Canada, this time for good.

I was deported via the Peace Bridge at Fort Erie on February 19, 2003. I was interrogated for about seven or eight hours off and on. I was allowed to call Ingrid, my lawyer and, within two hours, some Scottish friends from Hamilton, Ontario. They came to bring me some much-needed money.

I was “arrested” again – I thought I had already been arrested! – and taken to Thorold, the Niagara Region Detention Center where, a few weeks later, I was “arrested” for the third time, this time right in my cell.

I have been labeled a “security risk” for Canada by ministerial decree – NOT for what I have done in 42 years of responsibly living in that country, where I have no criminal record, but for what somebody else in the future “might” do by reading what I have discovered about the murky business called the ‘Holocaust’.

I came to Canada in 1958 – a nineteen-year-old kid in search of a productive life. I will be judged at age 64 by secret hearings where neither I nor my attorneys will know what is being said about me, much less who the witnesses are. No way can I defend myself – except by raising public awareness.

---

Can this be happening in America – the Land of the Free and the Brave?

Since my husband’s arrest, six months have gone by. He is still in maximum detention. He is not allowed a chair, a pillow, or a pen. Yet there are no criminal charges.

With this ad, I am pleading for public awareness.

If somebody smashes my window, I can go to the police and complain – and can expect that someone will investigate. If somebody smashes my life, is there no recourse because my husband holds politically incorrect views backed up by solid research about the so-called ‘Holocaust’?

Holocaust Revisionism is not a cult or a subversive ideology. It is a scientific methodology to sort out truths from falsehoods. Research has shown the ‘Holocaust’ is not “self-evident” – yet it is shielded by practically all Western governments. The term has the power to hurt, and it has the power to silence. It is the central taboo of our time.

I say the ‘Holocaust’ has grown into a cult and a subversive ideology!

Recently, I paid for an ad in one of the major American papers. The question I put to my country’s elected officials is simply: Exactly, what is meant by ‘Holocaust’? HISTORY? OR DOGMA?

- If the Holocaust is history, it MUST be open to investigation, like any other historical claim.
- If, on the other hand, the Holocaust is a religious dogma, it has no place in law enforcement training manuals, supported by taxpayers’ money.

In my young years, I lived under four dictators – Stalin and Hitler in Europe, Peron and Stroessner in South America. When I came to America, I thought that I had entered paradise, where there was justice, where there was law and order. I willingly and proudly became a US citizen. I'd like to think that this is still America where dissident views have a place.

Or am I wrong?

Does my own government approve of American law enforcement officers to act as hit squads for alien interests, dragging a law-abiding man of retirement age away in handcuffs and leg irons to be dumped in maximum detention for months on end with no relief in sight – because he questions claims that demonize his people, the Germans of the World War generation?

A taboo has bitten into America's soul – a taboo that is pose and pretense. It seems to get a free pass from the American government. And yet its claims have no foundation in reality. Those claims must be checked out. It's time to check them out. It's time to ask hard questions.

I will ask the members of my Congress and my Senate to take swift, concrete steps to have my husband be returned to me, replete with his politically incorrect views. I ask that men of principle and courage stand up to the abuses of the Holocaust Lobby – and do so with verve and conviction. I ask that men of honor, elected to serve the American people, not dive for the politically correct fig leaf the moment the Holocaust Lobby says "Boo!"

But I will do more! I am asking the Russian President, Wladimir Putin, to take a stand, condemning this abuse by government – exactly as America, in past years, condemned the dictatorial actions in Soviet Russia. I ask the Russian people to cut out the letter below and send it to the Kremlin. Please do that for a man who has done nothing wrong – who merely followed his conscience!

Dear President Putin:

You probably are not aware of my husband, Ernst Zündel – but hundreds of thousands of people all over the world know his name. Ernst Zündel is the man who, under vicious siege by a powerful political lobby, sent an investigative team from Canada to Auschwitz in 1988 to test forensically if "gassings" really happened – and found that they did not. Science does not lie, and scientific findings can be verified. His evidence must stand or fall in the free market of ideas. My husband has pleaded for a safe, impartial global forum ever since to make his findings known.

The Canadian Holocaust Lobby has never forgiven Ernst Zündel. Recently, he was arrested on US soil – allegedly because he missed an interview with Immigration and Naturalization Services officials. No judge. No hearing. No recourse. Instead, leg irons and handcuffs – and brutal incarceration in four maximum detention prisons, first in America and now in Canada. False news was spread in mainstream media that he had "overstayed his visa". Not so. He was married to a U.S. citizen, and we have irrefutable documentation that he was legally entitled to be here. His "punishment", just for a starter? Banned from the U.S.A. for 20 years!

My husband's brutal treatment by government officials in what many vainly hope are still two of the West's most law-

abiding democratic countries is reminiscent of the darkest days of Soviet Russia. I know whereof I speak. At the age of five, I lost my father in a very similar arrest in 1941 – never to see him again!

I am a Russian-born, German-descendant, award-winning novelist, best known for an early novel, "The Wanderers", a fictitious account of the life of my Russian-born Mennonite grandmother. More recently, I wrote a trilogy, spanning seven generations and 200 years and all the major political upheavals of the last two gruesome, bloody centuries.

My people, living peacefully in the Ukraine since 1789, were ethnically cleansed in the political purges of 1938-1941, and only a handful of us could save ourselves, escaping with the retreating German Army in 1943 to Germany and, then, in 1948, to South America.

I grew up in the jungles, functionally illiterate and knowing little of the political realities of dictatorships that transformed and decimated countries like Russia and Germany. As an adult, I emigrated to Canada and then to the United States, always thinking of the country of my birth, Russia, as a place out of the depths of hell – until I learned about an intellectual movement called Revisionism.

My now imprisoned husband is globally known as a Revisionist pioneer. Ernst Zündel has a profound geopolitical understanding of the moneyed interests setting brother against brother, causing rivers of blood and tears for the gains of a handful of oligarchs who fattened themselves on our pain. Today I know that Russia was as horribly victimized as Germany was. Russia suffered as much as Germany did – and as America will suffer, unless America wakes up and comes to understand today's events in light of what was done so cruelly to law-abiding people yesterday.

Referring to my husband's brutal arrest, one of my Russian Revisionist correspondents called Ernst and myself "America's Refuseniks" and pledged his intellectual solidarity. It is an apt description of who we are and what we do. We refuse to believe in historical lies. We refuse to be dictated to and told who are our friends and who should be our enemies. We refuse to surrender our Freedom of Speech. We refuse to swallow manufactured history such as the "Holocaust by gassing" – a lie that has become an intellectual stranglehold on every Western country. If our findings are deemed "wrong", then let's have a civilized debate in a respectable national forum where both sides can offer arguments and evidence – and let the people judge!

Recently, I read an essay by Russian General Anatoly Wolkow, titled "People, Listen To The Signals!" Here is a former enemy of Germany who stretches out a hand of friendship to soften the political mistakes of the past and bring long-needed healing to both Germany and Russia. I believe there are millions of Russians who would identify with what he says. I know there are millions of Germans all over the world who would like nothing better than to bury the hostilities of World War II and once again be known as Russia's partners, friends and scientific benefactors. America would benefit from such a reconciliation. America is not in need of yet another war.

We need to find ways to each other!

I plead with you to send a message to those millions, Germans and Russians alike, as well as millions in America and

Canada, that we are kin, not enemies. A Russian leader of courage and vision could tell the Western world that the Russia of today has finally become autonomous, living by democratic principles, abhorring censorship.

There is a way to shame short-sighted Western bureaucrats for their repressive laws – and wake up people globally to the realities of vested interest power plays that move us ever closer to a frightening abyss. A simple gesture, even if only symbolic,

would telegraph around the world that Russia, emerging out of decades of repression, has thrown away her dictatorial shackles:

Declare Ernst Zündel, Prisoner of Conscience, in broad daylight kidnapped “legally” by his nefarious enemies on U.S. soil, to be the West’s most notable “Refusenik” – and offer him asylum and a passport.

Sincerely,

Ingrid Zündel, Ed.D.

## Aftermath

Letter to the Editor, *The Washington Times*, Sept. 10, 2003:

*“Wrongheaded advertisement*

*While paid advertisements may be the financial life-blood for many newspapers, I would have hoped that The Washington Times would have displayed more selectivity when confronted by an advertisement from a Holocaust denier [page A7, Sunday]. Convicted of that crime in Germany and guilty of spreading his message of hate throughout the world, Ernst Zundel is not misunderstood and a victim, but instead an advocate of religious and racial hatred. He supports the extermination of not only Jews, but blacks and any other members of so-called inferior races.*

*It is disappointing that this modern exponent of Hitlerian hatred and mass murder would be allowed to use the pages of this newspaper to convey his message. Certainly, this full-page advertisement places your newspaper, or at least the individual who decided to run the advertisement, in a different and certainly not a favorable light.*

*When I brought a much smaller advertisement, an advertisement for a Holocaust denial book, to the attention of your rival newspaper, the individual in charge of that sec-*

*tion ceased to run any further advertisements from that Holocaust denial source and an apology was forthcoming from the head of that newspaper.*

*Ernst Zundel does nor deserve any space in your newspaper. To have printed this travesty was a disgrace to your reputation of journalistic integrity.*

NELSON MARANS

*Silver Spring”*

It is amazing how so many lies can be packed into such a short letter to the editor. In the context of his own society, “Holocaust denial” is not “a crime”, but the prosecution of such “deniers” would be of crime; Zündel’s message is the message of love for his German people and his fatherland, which people like Mr. Marans might hate, but that does not make Zündel’s views hate. Most outrageous is the claim that Zündel “supports the extermination of not only Jews, but blacks and any other members of so-called inferior races.” This is one of the most evil lies I have ever heard about Ernst Zündel. If the *Washington Times* would objectively follow Mr. Marans demand to not publish anything from persons spreading hateful messages, Mr. Maran would be the first censorship victim. For he does not know what he is doing...

## Thanksgiving in Jail: Canadian Show Trial against Ernst Zündel Continues

*By Paul Fromm*

On Wednesday, the final day in this round of Revisionist publisher Ernst Zündel’s detention hearing before Mr. Justice Pierre Blais, Donald MacIntosh, the Crown Attorney, talked out the clock, ensuring that Mr. Zündel will remain in prison for another 13 weeks until the hearings resume for three days on December 10.

Hour after hour, MacIntosh picked away at Mr. Zündel with an ever more obscure series of questions about people he might have interviewed at some time or known slightly. Allegations, often from hostile Jewish sources and sometimes third- and fourth-hand hearsay, were put to him for his agreement or comment.

Political prisoner Ernst Zündel arrived in court with five plainclothes guards. Two sat near him beyond the barrier separating the court officials and lawyers from the spectators; three more sat among the spectators or stood along the walls.

While the lawyers toted their piles of legal volumes on suitcase-like carts with wheels, Mr. Zündel had to haul his legal papers in two white pillow-cases.

The day opened with a testy exchange between defence

lawyer Douglas H. Christie and the judge. The judge expressed unhappiness that Mr. Christie had had a number of meetings with Mr. Zündel while he was under cross-examination. On July 30, it had been agreed that Mr. Christie could phone or visit Mr. Zündel to get instructions or to discuss other aspects of the case, provided he did not discuss Mr. Zündel’s evidence.

“I didn’t hear a caveat that each and every time I wish to talk to my client I must inform or ask the Court,” Mr. Christie snapped. When agitated, the judge pronounces “asked” with an aspirate: thus, “hasked”. At the end of the exchange, it was agreed that Mr. Christie could continue to consult with Mr. Zündel as long as he is under cross-examination – at least until December 10 – provided he does not discuss his evidence or coach his responses.

Then Crown Attorney MacIntosh commenced a long and laborious series of questions about Tom Metzger. Hovering, crow-like in his black robe, his nose an inch or two above the document on the podium, MacIntosh would spend long minutes searching for a quotation. More time would be wasted each time the judge and Mr. Christie, with Mr. Zündel on the witness

stand, had to locate the often unnumbered page being referenced. After each answer, Mr. MacIntosh would painstakingly make notes of the answer, despite the fact that he had three legal assistants backing him up. It was a classic time-waster, like a veteran hockey player who hogs the puck while his team is ahead to run out the clock.

In the fishing expedition about Tom Metzger, Mr. MacIntosh quoted from an author named Kaplan, who wrote *The Encyclopedia of White Power*, and quoted Morris Dees quoting Harold Covington's brief quotation of something Tom Metzger allegedly said. An angry Douglas Christie objected:

*"My position on all these documents is that they're all inadmissible hearsay. You have allowed the process to degenerate into a political inquisition and filibuster. It's creating a prejudicial record of guilt-by-association. This is prejudicial hearsay. It's bad enough that we have to deal with secret hearings. This is fourth-hand hearsay."*

MacIntosh argued:

*"The statutory scheme of Section 78 [of the Immigration and Refugee Protection Act] clearly states that you can rely on evidence you might not otherwise."*

Then, in a remarkable one liner indicating how slight the Crown's burden of proof is, he reminded Mr. Justice Blais:

*"The case law is the reasonableness, not necessarily the correctness, of the certificate."*

The whole sinister process then became clear as a mountain pool. CSIS's case is a wild series of guilt-by-associations. Mr. Zündel knows or knew a series of people, some of whom at some time or other may have made an extreme statement, or are alleged to have done so. Under questioning, he admits he knew these people. Often, he is called on to acknowledge that he disagrees with a statement he never knew they'd made or to acknowledge that, if they did or advocated what a third party says they did or advocated, they might be considered a terrorist. Then, with this record, the Crown will argue that the CSIS accusation that Mr. Zündel is a terrorist is "reasonable" – even if it isn't true. After all, he admits knowing all these extreme people. Once again, truth will be no defence.

Outside the Court, Mr. Christie said:

*"This is like a Soviet show trial. It's a process of guilt-by-association. The condemned man is forced to disown or denounce all his friends or associations [like Terry Long, Tom Metzger, Ewald Althans]. That doesn't save him. The Court then says that his denunciations are untruthful and just calculated to save himself. Then, all alone now, the prisoner is found guilty and shot."*

This is Canada. Canada ostensibly does not have capital punishment. However, it condemns a man who is seriously ill to solitary confinement and denies him proper herbal medication, where the reasonable likelihood of the State's action is the prisoner's death or incapacity.

In answering Mr. Christie's objection, Mr. Justice Blais was a study in apparent fairness and convoluted expression.

*"Mr. Metzger is not here. He is not the object of this case. The problem I have is that we have 1,806 pages of documents filed by the Crown. [Ernst had counted them and told the Court the number the day before.] When he [Mr. Zündel] says 'I don't know or have any relation with this individual,' that's it. I take very seriously Mr. Christie's objection. Anyone can make speeches, but it does not mean he's responsible for others' actions. In a sense, we must be careful about guilt-by-association. We're here to trial [sic] Mr. Zündel's certificate."*

So far, so good. Then, with a verbal pirouette, the Judge said that, as these documents were before the Court, the interrogation could continue, and Mr. MacIntosh was off again.

When questioned on passages from the book *The Encyclopedia of White Power*, Mr. Zündel said:

*"Mr. MacIntosh, I sent a researcher to the University of Toronto Library to get a copy of this book. I'm not even in the glossary. Yet, I'm supposed to be the guru of the White racist right."*

In the morning session, a *Globe and Mail* reporter complained to both the Crown and Mr. Christie that his tape recorder had been confiscated by the Court security guards. After the break, Mr. Christie argued:

*"The Ontario Court of Justice Act permits the bringing of recorders into Court for note taking. My position is that we should allow the widest latitude for recording."*

No, said Mr. Justice Blais:

*"I don't think our rules allow that."*

A casual observer might have concluded that Tom Metzger was on trial in Courtroom 1 in Toronto on September 24. Mr. Zündel was asked if he knew of a publication called *White Berets*, published by a branch of the Ku Klux Klan. Mr. Zündel said he didn't know the publication, but was sent some Klan literature from time to time by supporters. "You never asked anyone not to send you Klu[sic] Klux Klan literature!" Mr. MacIntosh said triumphantly, as if he'd scored a knock out point.

Douglas Christie leaped to his feet objecting:

## If you want to help

**We're heading into another costly round of hearings and, so, we need your continued financial support for Mr. Zündel's defence.**

**We have a number of delicate color-pencil sketches by Ernst Zündel done in prison. Each is dated and signed. Each is a nature study. Mr. Zündel has long been a paint and sketch artist. He had returned to his love of art before the U.S. INS picked him up and deported him. If you send us a check for \$100 or more, we'll send you one of these collector's items, a thank you sketch by political prisoner Ernst Zündel.**

**Mail your donation today to CAFE, Box 332, Rexdale, ONT M9W 5L3, Canada, or e-mail us your VISA number and expiry date to paul@paulfromm.com. On your check or an accompanying piece of paper, note: "For Zündel Defence Fund."**

**Paul Fromm**

**Director**

**CANADIAN ASSOCIATION FOR FREE EXPRESSION**

*"The Ku Klux Klan literature is another prejudicial document thrown into the hopper. Mr. Zündel didn't recognize it, hadn't received it and didn't adopt it."*

Now, Mr. Justice Blais admonished Mr. Christie for objecting so often:

*"Talking about a filibuster, but I don't want to stop any objection. I try to be flexible pursuant to Section 78.j."*

He then ruled:

*"The Klan document will be admitted."*

In the afternoon, the Crown played a portion of a video entitled *Hearts of Hate* produced with buckloads of Canadian taxpayers' money. The video seemed to show Ernst Zündel singing "Happy Birthday" in a pub on the occasion of the birthday of Toronto skinhead Chris Newhook. Mr. Zündel had earlier testified that he could not recall singing "Happy Birthday" on that evening almost a decade ago.

Douglas Christie objected:

*"What is the relevance and purpose of the T.V. tape? If it shows Ernst Zündel involved in violence, okay. If it shows him singing 'Happy Birthday,' it's collateral and should not be allowed."*

Although he permitted showing of the propaganda video, it was too much even for Mr. Justice Blais:

*"Section 78.j allows flexibility, but we should apply it in good faith. No one will be deported for singing 'Happy Birthday.' Frankly, Mr. MacIntosh, it happens to everyone. People start singing 'Happy Birthday' in a bar and everyone joins in."*

Then Mr. Zündel was questioned about Church of the Creator founder Ben Klassen, whom he had never met and didn't know, and his alleged sale of property to William Pierce. Again Mr. Christie objected:

*"Guilt-by-association is what this is all about. The wit-*

*ness was asked whether he knew Mr. Klassen. He said 'No.' Then he was asked if he knew of a connection between Mr. Klassen and Mr. Pierce. I just point out that it's like asking whether person A, whom I don't know, has any connection with person B, whom I don't know. Where's the relevance to actions?"*

The later part of the afternoon was taken up with setting the agenda for the next round of hearings to be held December 10-12. Mr. MacIntosh said he would need another hour and a half to complete his cross-examination. Both lawyers will prepare written submissions as to whether Mr. Justice Blais has jurisdiction to decide Mr. Christie's constitutional challenge to the Immigration and Refugee Protection Act, particularly the sections surrounding the CSIS certificate, which allow no appeal of the judge's decision and which permit secret hearings. The jurisdictional question will be argued. If the judge decides he has jurisdiction, the constitutional question will be argued. Both parties are preparing written submissions on this point as well. Finally, Mr. Zündel's detention will be argued.

Optimists feel there's a chance Mr. Zündel will be free for Christmas. Despite the incarceration, which will be 10 months come December, Mr. Justice Blais said:

*"The personal question for Mr. Zündel is important, but we're breaking new ground with a new law. So, we must take our time. I'm pre-occupied by this point, by Mr. Zündel's detention."*

Later that night, speaking to the Alternative Forum in Toronto, Mr. Christie praised those loyal 25-30 people who had filled the courtroom each day in support of the dissident publisher. Mr. Christie said:

*"Every minute you're in the court bears witness to the fact that you have not surrendered to a corrupt government. It's a political inquisition."*

## False Memory Syndrome

Assessing the reliability and accuracy of witness testimony is probably one of the most difficult tasks both in jurisprudence as well as in historiography. Although it is generally acknowledged by experts that witness testimony is the least reliable type of evidence and must be critically and carefully scrutinized before any of its contents can be accepted as facts, most people are unaware of this. For them, witness statements carry enormous weight, in particular if seemingly corroborated by other witness statements of similar content.

Prof. Elizabeth Loftus is one of the most prominent scholars in the field of human memory and the way it can be manipulated and distorted. Although her field of expertise is mainly the court of law, where witness testimony can decide the fate of defendants, the relevance for historiography is all too obvious, since many historians seem to rely primarily on witness accounts to write history.

John Cobden was the first to make revisionist scholars aware of Prof. Loftus' research on the unreliability of human

memory in his review<sup>1</sup> of her book *Witness for the Defense*.<sup>2</sup> Although Cobden focused on those parts of Loftus' book where she describes her experiences with a court case involving an alleged event of the 'Holocaust' – the infamous Demjanjuk case<sup>3</sup> – there is much more to Loftus' work that is of enormous importance to revisionist scholarship. The following contributions inform about the progressing research results of Prof. Loftus and her co-workers during the past ten years and highlight the relevance of these results for revisionism. The Editor

### Notes

<sup>1</sup> J. Cobden, *Journal of Historical Review*, 11(2) (1991) pp. 238-249 (online: [vho.org/GB/Journals/JHR/11/2/Cobden238-249.html](http://vho.org/GB/Journals/JHR/11/2/Cobden238-249.html)).

<sup>2</sup> E. Loftus, K. Ketcham, *Witness for the Defense*, St. Martin's Press, New York 1991.

<sup>3</sup> See Arnulf Neumaier, "The Treblinka Holocaust", in: G. Rudolf, *Dissecting the Holocaust*, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed., Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago, IL, 2003, pp. 471-500; cf. also Yoram Sheftel, *The Demjanjuk Affair. The Rise and Fall of the Show Trial*, Victor Gollancz, London 1994.

# False Witnesses

By David Irving

The world of medical science has produced another stunning book about the phenomenon first identified as “Holocaust Survivor Syndrome” – the manner in which groups of people genuinely and honestly come to believe over the years that they have witnessed episodes which are, in fact, largely products of trauma and fantasy: Prof. Dr. Elizabeth Loftus, *The Myth of Repressed Memory* (St. Martin’s Press, New York, 1994, 290 pp.).

“It is possible,” writes Elizabeth Loftus, then a psychologist at the University of Washington, in what *Newsweek* magazine calls a disturbing new book, “to create an entire memory for a traumatic event that never happened.”

According to her some of the best neuro-scientific brains are trying to find out how this can happen: this may throw light on the current bitter debate about “recovered memory,” which ranges across cases of Satanism, childhood sexual abuse, and UFO abductions; and, as may fairly be pointed out, otherwise inexplicable and unsubstantiated Holocaust eye-witness survivor stories – the kind that were nearly the nemesis of Cleveland auto worker John Demjanjuk.

Summary: hundreds of experiments have shown that people easily slip false details (from a TV report for example) into their recollection of an event they witnessed. “They even ‘remember’ events they have only heard about,” wrote *Newsweek*, reviewing the 290-page Loftus book.

In May 1994, Harvard Medical School hosted a conference on the neurological bases of false memories. James McClelland, of the Center for the Neural Basis of Cognition at Pittsburgh, provided one explanation; Michael Nash, of the University of Tennessee, another.

Nash calls it chilling that “there may be no structural difference” between a true memory of an event and a false one. The problem is similar to distinguishing a remembered dream from a recollected factual event: some people, says Daniel Schacter of Harvard, cannot distinguish:

*“You could be remembering a dream, a fear, or something someone talked about. What gives the memory a feeling of authenticity is that authentic parts are included.”*

Only one person in four appears, from Loftus’ studies, prone to this disorder. But others can be conditioned by events. “Severe emotional stress overcomes internal checks on plausibility,” states neuro-scientist Marsel Mesulam of Northwestern University, “and you are left with a false ‘memory.’”

In the United States a False Memory Syndrome Foundation has been set up to represent the interests of the victims of such retrieved “memories;” some people have been sentenced to forty years in jail on this evidential basis alone. Harvard psychiatrist Judith Herman is however angry:

*“Scientists have no business using the term false memory.”*

First published in *Action Report*, no. 11. Dec. 18, 1996

## Dr. Elizabeth Loftus, Controversial Expert on Human Memory

By Caroline Song

Professor Elizabeth Loftus holds the title of distinguished professor of psychology, social behavior, criminology, law and society at U.C. Irvine and has recently been nationally recognized for her findings in a study that proves memories could not only be distorted, but also completely reconstructed. Professor Loftus is considered an expert in the medium of memory research and is the author of nineteen books, has lectured all over the world, and has testified in over two hundred court cases in which she testified about her skepticism of the repressed memory theory. Loftus evokes intense criticism because she testifies on the side of the defense, and as a result there is a chance that she may be helping to free guilty perpetrators.

The study in which Dr. Loftus proved impossible memories could be constructed is known as the Bugs Bunny study. In this study the subjects were asked to examine three advertisements that had a pictures of Bugs Bunny standing next to the magic castle at Disneyland. They were then asked to recall any memories at Disneyland that included meeting Bugs Bunny. 36% of the subjects recalled meeting Bugs Bunny and some included specific sensory details such as shaking his hand and touching his fur. The 36% of subjects who say they do remember meeting Bugs Bunny prove Loftus’ theory that memories not only can be distorted, but completely made up. It is impossible to

meet Bugs Bunny at Disneyland because Bugs is a Warner Bros. Character.

When asked what prompted her to do the Bugs Bunny study, Professor Loftus said, “We often get criticism that maybe what our techniques are doing are reviving a real memory instead of planting a false one. We had to come up with something impossible. [...] We know that when our subjects are now telling us they remember Bugs, it’d have to be a false memory. [...] For years I’ve been doing studies where we distort people’s memories in crimes and accidents and other simulated events that they witness, [...] but in the 90’s we wanted to see whether we could plant wholly false memories. Not just a distorted memory here or there, but a complete false memory. [...] And this newer study shows you that when you get a false memory going, people can be really detailed about it.” When asked if it was the false advertisement that may have prompted the subjects to recall this false memory, Loftus said, “Yes, I think it was the visual presentation of the ad with Bugs at Disney. Essentially it was telling people that it was plausible. That Bugs could have been there. And that is the first step down the road to developing a false memory.”

The results of this study show how unreliable a memory can be. The unreliability of memories can cause problems when

they are relied upon during court cases in which people testify according to what they remember. When asked if eyewitness testimony, should not be used in a trial, Loftus says, "I don't think they're useless because we have to rely on eyewitness testimony to catch guilty people. The problem is that eyewitness testimony of faulty memory is the major cause of wrongful conviction. So we just have to be more careful in how we evaluate it. And not just believe every single claim because it's detailed."

One of the cases done by Professor Loftus is important not only for it's research, but also because it may have been a primary factor in why she moved from the University of Washington to U.C. Irvine. The Jane Doe case was about a six-year-old

girl who claimed to be sexually abused by her mother. Psychiatrist David Corwin interviewed Jane when she was six years old, and then again when she was seventeen. Eleven years later, Jane had trouble remembering the abuse she received when she was six years old. The fact that Jane did not fully recall her memories of abuse supported the views held by supporters of the repressed memory theory, who believe that traumatic memories can be buried deep inside the mind, and with the use of counseling and therapy these memories can be remembered. But Dr. Loftus disagreed. On the subject of memory repression she says, "The idea that you could be raped for ten years and be completely unaware of it, bury it in the unconscious, I say there's no concrete evidence for it." Loftus learned the identity

## "Scientists" at Work

Since end 1994, reports were published in the media that Steven Spielberg has launched a project to archive the testimony of "Holocaust survivors" (cf. *Newsweek*, Nov. 21, 1994 (right); *Stuttgarter Zeitung*, Dec. 28, 1994; *New York Times*, Jan. 7, 1996; *Geschichte mit Pfiff*, 11/1996, p. 37; *Welt am Sonntag*, Nov. 17, 1996). Apart from Spielberg, the Moses-Mendelsohn-Center in Potsdam (a suburb of Berlin, Germany) is also engaged in archiving "survivor" testimonies.

Steven Spielberg has found helpers who volunteer to conduct these interviews. They have been prepared by an introduction seminar lasting 20 hours to do this job. It can be rule out that these helpers received a thorough education in the relevant sections of history in this short period of time. It is also unlikely that they were trained to the point to conduct non-suggestive and highly critical interviewed. The fact that most of these volunteers were themselves affected by the 'Holocaust' in one way or another, almost excludes the possibility that they can deduct objective interviews (cf. *Stuttgarter Zeitung*, Dec. 28, 1994).

It is also very enlightening, how the topic is approaches by the Moses-Mendelsohn-Center, as directed by Prof. Julius Schoeps and Geoffrey Hartmann (Yale University):

### "Questions without Guideline

*As hard as it is to scientifically evaluate individual memories, it is exactly the subjectivity of the accounts which promises to record historical experience, which evades the brittle factuality of the usual historization. Similar to psycho-analytical interviews, one tries to leave room to the witness' own memories by a very unobtrusive interview technique, in order to guarantee the authenticity of the accounts.*" ("Archive der Erinnerung", *Süddeutsche Zeitung*, July 3, 1995)

The generally accepted view of scholars is totally ignored here that most witness testimonies are distorted beyond repair after more than 50 years – all the more so when dealing with a topic which has been treated in public in a very one-sided and sometimes hysterical way. But even worse: this subjective distortion is not only ignored, it is actually presented as a promising quality. One is furthermore proud to avoid any critical investigation and questioning of the witness accounts, and claims brazenly that this would guarantee the authenticity



Welcoming the liberators: Recording the memories of Dachau prisoners (above, 1945)

## 'A Race Against Time'

History: Holocaust survivors tell their own stories

**I**N A MOVING PASSAGE AT THE end of Steven Spielberg's 1993 film "Schindler's List," a long procession of elderly men and women make their way haltingly across the screen. These Holocaust survivors, whose stories inspired the film, have now inspired a second Spielberg project. Last spring the director set up a new non-profit foundation dedicated to collecting and preserving Holocaust testimony. By the end of 1998 he plans to have assembled about 50,000 videotaped interviews, each two hours long, with survivors all over the world. The project will be the largest oral-history archive in existence. "The stories were too valuable to be told just to me and not shared with the rest of



New list: Spielberg

be developed is the next step video on demand exists only in prototype. But Spielberg's team expects the technology to be refined within three years. Total costs may reach \$65 million—about \$13 million—enough for the first year—has already come in. Contributors include MCA/Universal, MCA chairman Lew Wasserman, Time Warner, NBC and Spielberg.

The money, the moguls and the high-speed mobilization are making scholars in the field a little nervous. "This is such a vast project," says Geoffrey Hartman, project director of the Fortunoff Video Archive for Holocaust Testimonies at Yale, which houses 3,000 survivor videotapes. (He estimates that about 6,000 such videotapes

of the witness accounts. Such interviewing techniques, however, have nothing to do with science. The accounts recorded with this method are not only worthless, but have a negative value! They consist of an inseparable mishmash of facts, confusions, errors, and lies labeled as "scholarly," presented as "authentic" truth, and abused to cement a historical dogma which becomes increasingly codified by penal laws in many countries of the world. Future scholars will rub their eyes in disbelief if confronted with such unprofessional incompetence and dogmatic blindness.

Germar Rudolf

of Jane Doe and began work on an article regarding the case. In 1999 Doe complained to the University of Washington and claimed that her privacy was not being observed. As a result, the University of Washington placed a gag order on Dr. Loftus, restricted her from any continued contact with those in the case, and she was only allowed to publish the information she had gathered up to that time. About the restriction Loftus says, “After I got the UCI offer I said ‘you cut those strings or I’m leaving’ [...] then they cut them but it was too late.” After being a professor at the University of Washington for nearly 30 years, Dr. Loftus came to UC Irvine this past fall.

Dr. Loftus’ participation in trials on the side of the defense has raised criticism from those who believe that she is ignoring the repression that occurs in our minds. Her testimonials also raise concern that she is helping guilty perpetrators avoid conviction. However, Dr. Loftus’ purpose is to protect the falsely accused. When a confession is extracted from a suspect, police officers are known to lie and use force during the questioning of the suspect. It is this kind of conduct that Professor Loftus tries to protect the falsely accused from. She says, “Police do lie to people. And they’re allowed to. And they do it, they say, to extract a confession. [...] I worry about that practice. Because when they lie to people and they say, ‘by the way someone saw you do this,’ that’s a very strong suggestion and it can make people believe they did things they didn’t do. [...] That’s one cause of most confessions, [...] the bit about false confessions I’m really interested in is when they come to believe they really did it, [...] People get very excited and worked up over the poor or the sick or the disabled, or whatever their cause is. But mine is the falsely accused. I just think it is horrible when it happens to people.”

Dr. Loftus has had the bomb squad at her house and she has had armed guards accompany her to lectures. Her critics are so resolute in their opposition that on more than one occasion her safety has come into question. When asked what she is criticized about, Loftus says, “They don’t like my false memory work. They think it’s going to be put in the hands of pedophiles and they’ll use it to get off. [...] Sometimes people fight dirty. If they want to fight it out intellectually that’s one thing but when they start with the threatening letters. [...] I went to give a lecture at the University of Michigan and there were some threats that were made so the administration assigned a police officer to accompany me all day.”

One critic of Dr. Loftus is Robert H. Countess, Ph.D. In chapter nine of her book, “Witness for the Defense: The Accused, the Eyewitness, and the Expert Who Puts Memory On Trial.” Dr. Loftus writes about the John Demjanjuk trial, which occurred in 1987. During the Holocaust there was a death camp called Treblinka. At Treblinka there was a Ukrainian guard who was known as Ivan the Terrible who committed horrifying acts on the prisoners of the death camp. John Demjanjuk was identified by five survivors of Treblinka as Ivan the Terrible. Demjanjuk’s defense attorney, Mark O’Connor, pleaded with Dr. Loftus to testify in the trial on the side of the defense, saying, “We need your help. [...] You’re [...] the world’s expert on eyewitness memory, and without your testimony it’s conceivable that an innocent man will be sentenced to die.” (Wit-

ness For the Defense: The Accused, the Eyewitness, and the Expert Who Puts Memory on Trial. Elizabeth Loftus, p. 211). John Demjanjuk was stripped of his U.S. citizenship, and was expatriated to Israel, where the trial was held in a converted theater. As Mark O’Connor is quoted in the chapter, “the U.S. government pasted Demjanjuk’s 1951 immigration picture on a sheet of cardboard along with photographs of sixteen other Ukrainians suspected of war crimes and sent the sheet of photographs to the Israeli government.” (p. 213). Eugen Turowski, Abraham Goldfarb, Elijah Rosenberg, Josef Czarny, Gustav Boraks, Pinchas Epstein, Sonia Levkowitz, Chil Meir Rajchman, and Abraham Lindwasser all identified John Demjanjuk as “Ivan the Terrible,” but by the time of the trial, Turowski, Goldfarb, and Lindwasser passed away and Levkowitz withdrew her identification. Thus remained the five witnesses. There were discrepancies regarding Demjanjuk’s guilt/innocence such as several witnesses testifying after the war that Ivan the Terrible was killed in an uprising in Treblinka in August 1943. But on April 18, 1988, John Demjanjuk was found guilty, and on April 25, 1988, he received the death penalty.

Dr. Loftus refused to testify in the trial because, “If I take the case, [...] I would turn my back on my Jewish heritage. If I don’t take the case, I would turn my back on everything I’ve worked for in the last fifteen years. [...] I didn’t have the heart to take the case. Or perhaps I didn’t have the courage.” (p. 232)

When asked why he criticizes Dr. Loftus for choosing not to testify, Robert Countess says:

*“She with the Demjanjuk case was willing to let an innocent man be put to death and found guilty when her own expertise could have perhaps given this man life. And I say that she chose to collaborate with her own Ethnic religious brethren rather than use her considerable talent and skills in support of justice.”*

Countess also says that Dr. Loftus, “seemed to believe there was quite a bit of mistaken identity. And [...] I think this chapter is included because she got criticism and she’s trying to justify her coming down on the side of her fellow Jews rather than helping this Ukrainian American who had been taken over there to Israel for this show trial.” When asked what convinces him of Demjanjuk’s innocence, Countess said:

*“I don’t think he’s guilty of anything, but on the other hand I’m willing to say he’s guilty of something if the evidence can show it.”*

Robert Countess also says:

*“My criticism of her is not personal [...] she may be fine, wonderful, true and good, decent mother, daughter, and wife [...] but I’m saying professionally for her to be called distinguished professor raises enormous questions about the wisdom of the University of California system.”*

In response to Countess’s criticism, Dr. Loftus said:

*“I did the best thing I could. [...] I found a perfect expert.”*

On Dr. Loftus’ recommendation, Willem Wagenaar testified at the Demjanjuk trial as the expert on memory.

---

First published in *New University* newspaper, University of California, Irvine.



# My Critique of Dr. Loftus' Behavior

By Robert H. Countess, PhD

On February 20, 2003, I received an email request from a University of California at Irvine student newspaper reporter, Caroline Song (horseycow@hotmail.com), in which she asked me to comment on Professor Elizabeth Loftus and the John Demjanjuk Trial that took place in Israel during 1987.

Loftus is "Distinguished Professor of Psychology and Social Behavior, Criminology, Law, and Society" at UCI and can be reached at eloftus@uci.edu or 2393 Social Ecology II, Irvine, California 92697-7085, and (949) 824-3285, Fax: (949) 824-3002.

My interview with *New University* reporter Song focused on Loftus' book *Witness for the Defense* (New York: St. Martin's Press) and chapter nine, "Ivan the Terrible: John Demjanjuk," where she revealed – in my opinion – an amazing disregard for this innocent American citizen of Ukrainian background whose life was about to be snuffed out by a *Rache* [German for revenge] obsessed Israeli court system with its unhealthy fixation on the Jewish Holocaust Story.

Professor Loftus has been paid enormous sums of money to testify in courts in the USA and to defend all sorts of defendants accused of horrible criminal deeds and she has enjoyed great publicity and wealth from her creating doubts about witnesses for the prosecution – her focus of expertise being that witnesses "remember" events and conversations that simply did not happen.

In chapter nine of the book, Loftus states clearly that the Israeli case against Demjanjuk lacked believable witnesses, that is, that certain Jews who testified about Demjanjuk had either created their stories or had acquired them from other witnesses or from newspaper stories or books. She also wrote that Demjanjuk's attorney, Mark O'Connor, asked her to help with the defense for Demjanjuk. O'Connor flew out from New York to Seattle, Washington, to meet with Loftus and explained the case up to that point.

Loftus wrote:

"[...] an eyewitness identification, positive or negative, doesn't actually prove anything. A positive identification only tells us that the person believes that he recognizes a face or that he believes a certain person is guilty of certain crimes. A belief is not absolute proof." (page 219)

Sitting in her living room with O'Connor, "She wanted to say, 'Yes, of course, I'll take the case.'" Loftus indicated that she was aware of Israeli police interrogation practices and that these could be "questionable" in terms of fairness and brutality (page 223).

"But in those long hours spent listening to Mark O'Connor talking about the Treblinka death camp and the aging memories of the victims of the Holocaust, something cracked my cool, professional exterior. Inside, like one of those Russian folk toys that pull apart to reveal a slightly smaller version of the same figure, was Beth Loftus, wife of Geoffrey Loftus, best friend of Ilene Bernstein, niece of Uncle Joe Breskin. Beth Loftus' fear for her friendships, for the personal price that she would pay if she testified for John

Demjanjuk. Beth Loftus kept thinking about Uncle Joe, a survivor of anti-Semitic pogroms in Russian and the only relative of her parents' generation still alive. 'What would Uncle Joe say if I took this case?' Beth Loftus asked herself over and over again. 'What would Geoff say, what would Ilene say?'" (pages 222f.)

Professor Loftus, in my opinion, has amazingly and honestly demonstrated in what follows that she surrendered her professional ethics and, instead, chose to side with narrow-minded, sectarian Jewish interests and, thereby, to become a collaborator with Israeli Holocaustian fanaticism that would have murdered an innocent man.

"But Beth Fishman couldn't stop with the file. Thirty years earlier I had turned my back on my Jewish heritage, pretending it didn't exist, pretending it was just one of those things you're born with, like a mole or big feet, or blond hair. Pretending it didn't matter. I had ignored the Holocaust for years, shoving it out of my mind. [...] I read Anne Frank again, and Elie Wiesel, Hannah Arendt, Aaron Applefeld. I stalked the library shelves, searching for the answer to one particular question – who was Ivan and what did he do? [...] I found some answers. Jankiel Wiernik, a Warsaw building contractor deported to Treblinka on August 23, 1942, wrote [...]" (pages 224f.)

For me, as one who has read the Wiernik book and can readily grasp some of the anti-intellectual ravings of his factually unbelievable stories, I knew that Loftus was a Kindergarten in the field of Holocaustology – Anne Frank, Elie Wiesel, Jankiel Wiernik; some of the most unreliable writers ever to get wealthy (Otto Frank as Anne's father) from the Holocaust Story! Loftus amazed me that she could be so proficient in her narrow specialized field of witness psychology and yet so profoundly ignorant about the Jewish Holocaust Story.

She told her friend David Sucher:

"'If I take the case,' I explained, having talked this out with myself hundreds of times, 'I would turn my back on my Jewish heritage. If I don't take the case, I would turn my back on everything I've worked for in the last fifteen years. To be true to my work, I must judge this case as I have judged every case before it. If there are problems with the eyewitness identification, I must testify. It's the consistent thing to do.'" (p. 232)

Dr. Loftus flew to Israel to attend the trial in an old theater – how fitting indeed! – converted into a courtroom and big enough for large numbers of school children bussed in to watch this "Show Trial" drama. When asked there by a friend, Margaret, why she was not testifying for Demjanjuk, she said:

"As I looked around the audience filled with four generations of Jews – little children, their parents, grandparents, and great-grandparents – I tried to explain to Margaret that it was as if these were my relatives, and I, too, had lost someone I loved in the Treblinka death camp. With those kinds of feelings inside me, I couldn't switch roles and become a professional, an expert." (page 237)

It was all this in mind that I gladly made a small contribution to the UCI *New University* student journalist article on the famous Jewish expert, Professor Elizabeth Fishman Loftus. If I had it to do all over again, I would have been even more forceful in my criticism of this hypocrite who was willing to collaborate with a Jewish “Show Trial” where an innocent man might

have been hanged until he gasped his last breath – all because Loftus had surrendered her professional principles for the unethical, the shameful, and the propagandistic program required by the Jewish Holocaust myth.

The author, residing in Huntsville, Alabama, can be contacted by email at [boblbpinc@earthlink.net](mailto:boblbpinc@earthlink.net)

## False Memory Everywhere – Except in Modern History

By *Germar Rudolf*

There is currently no topic of human history that is treated more emotionally and one-sidedly in public than the Holocaust. It represents the central taboo of western civilization, and to question it is the epitome of heresy, punishable by imprisonment in many western ‘democracies.’

Given this state of affairs, the expert on the evaluation of eyewitness testimony, Professor Elizabeth Loftus, pointed out in 1991 that, for many different reasons, testimony pertaining to actual (or merely alleged) National Socialist atrocities, witnessed in a particularly high stage of emotion, is less reliable than almost any other testimony. Elaborating, she observes:

- a) The time elapsed since the end of World War II has contributed to an inevitable fading of recollections.
- b) In trials of alleged National Socialist criminals pre-trial publicity has meant that witnesses had generally known the identity of the defendants and the crimes they were charged with already before the trial.
- c) Prosecutors have asked witnesses leading questions, such as whether they could recognize the accused as the perpetrator. Witnesses have rarely been called on to identify the accused from a number of unknown people.
- d) It is fairly certain that witnesses have discussed identifications among themselves, which facilitated subsequent ‘identifications’ by other witnesses.
- e) Photos of defendants have been exhibited repeatedly, each additional showing of the pictures making witnesses more familiar with the face of the accused, and thus increasingly certain.
- f) The extremely emotional nature of these cases further increases the risk of a distortion of memory, since the accused to be identified by the witnesses were more than alleged tool of the National Socialists – they were devils incarnate:

said to have tortured, maimed and mass-murdered prisoners. They were allegedly responsible for the murder of the witnesses’ mothers, fathers, brothers, sisters, wives and children.<sup>1</sup>

- g) Professor Loftus, herself Jewish, uses her own experience to describe how a false sense of loyalty to her heritage and her people and “race”, as she puts it, prevented her from taking a stand against the obviously false testimony of her fellow Jews. It is safe to assume that this is a widespread, common reflex among Jews.<sup>2</sup>

### Unwelcome Applause

It cannot surprise that Prof. Loftus’ research was highly praised and welcome by revisionist scholars – except for the aspects exposing Prof. Loftus’ apparent moral deficiencies in handling the Demjanjuk affair. After all, she confirms what revisionists have claimed for decades: that witness testimonies about the ‘Holocaust’ are unbelievable to an extent that one has to ignore them totally in research on this topic, if one intends to come to scholarly tenable conclusions.

Of course, this confirmation by the world’s foremost expert in witness testimony critique was neither intentional nor welcome, but this is a different matter. When Michael Shermer, a dedicated adversary of revisionism, directed Prof. Loftus’ attention to the fact that her work was intensively quoted and used by revisionists, her reaction was indicative:<sup>3</sup>

*“She was shocked and had no idea about what was going on.”*

This shows clearly that Prof. Loftus is obviously still not prepared to apply the consequences of her own research to those court trials, from which her own people (or “race,” as she puts it) benefits enormously politically, socially, and financially.

**Reminiscences of events, which did not happen that way or did not happen at all, can be planted into memory by suggestion and imagination. It is therefore appropriate to be skeptical about some statements of traumatic experiences – for example regarding early childhood abuse.**

Elizabeth Loftus, *Spektrum der Wissenschaft*, January 1998, p. 62.

Worldwide renowned and highly praised expert on eyewitness testimony

**Reminiscences of events, which did not happen that way or did not happen at all, can be planted into memory by suggestion and imagination. It is therefore appropriate to be skeptical about some statements of traumatic experiences – for example regarding gas chamber experiences during the ‘Holocaust.’**

Revisionist Standard Statement

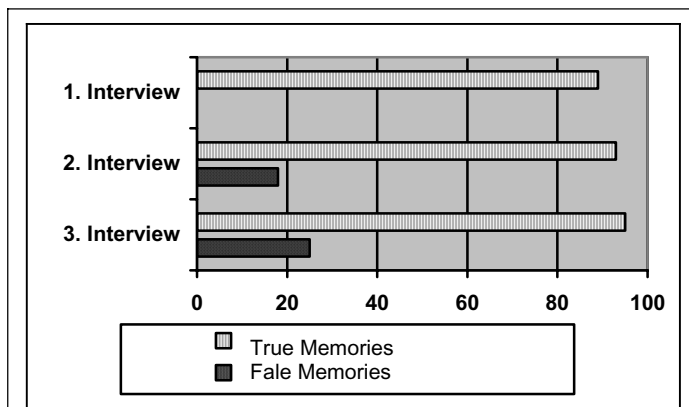
Punishable with up to ten years imprisonment in countries like Germany, Austria, Israel, France, Belgium, Poland, Czechia, Switzerland, the Netherlands, and others.

## Loftus' Assessment Generalized

Objectively seen, there are not many differences between the trial against John Demjanjuk on one hand and almost all other trials conducted against hundreds and thousands of other defendants accused of having committed crimes during the 'Holocaust' on the other hand, particularly those, which attracted considerable media attention, like the Jerusalem trial against Adolf Eichmann, the Frankfurt Auschwitz trial, the Düsseldorf Majdanek trial, the trials against Klaus Barbie, Maurice Papon, Erich Priebke and many others more.

It is also revealing that in her list of factors potentially distorting and manipulating the memory of witnesses involved in such trials, Prof. Loftus omits (or suppresses?) three very important and unique factors which are almost never present in any other case:

- a) Accounts of witnesses' alleged personal experiences during the 'Holocaust' have always – and not only during criminal



**Graph 1:** It apparently becomes progressively easier to recall merely suggested childhood experiences as time goes by, because the details of what is suggested becomes more and more familiar and because the original source for this information is forgotten. American researcher Ira Hyman confronted the persons involved in these experiments not only with several real events of their childhood – confirmed by their relatives – but also with an embarrassing event which was actually freely invented: It was claimed that during a wedding they had poured a bowl of punch over the dress of the bride's parents. During the first interview, not a single participant accepted this story as true; during later interviews, however, some 18% and later even 25% claimed to be able to recall this event.

Graph, text and photos according to Spektrum der Wissenschaft 1(1998)



trials – been widely disseminated by word of mouth, print and broadcast media, and particularly among the witnesses themselves through personal correspondence and all sorts of relief organizations.

- b) Since at least the late 1970s, the topic of the 'Holocaust' has been ever-present – and increasingly so as time passed by – in the mass media, and in an extremely one-sided manner, so that memories inevitably become standardized.
- c) Where the 'Holocaust' is concerned, it is not only unforgivable but at times even a criminal offense not to know, not to admit, or perhaps only to doubt, certain things. There is thus a very strong social (or even legal) pressure on witnesses in particular to recall certain 'facts' and to repress others. This highly effective social pressure was even admitted by the expert witness Prof. Loftus, and she caved in to this pressure! How many of her colleagues, and how many non-expert witnesses gave in just like she did?

All three factors are much more 'persuasive' than those already listed by Prof. Loftus, leading to an additional tendency of memories to become deformed.

## Popular Criticism of Testimony

In its September issue of 1997, the popular scientific magazine *Scientific American* published an article by Prof. Loftus with the title "Creating False Memories".<sup>4</sup> As already mentioned in earlier articles in this issue of *The Revisionist*, one of the focuses of Prof. Loftus' research is the attempt to verify, under which circumstances and to which extent false childhood memories can form. The background of these efforts was a steeply rising number of alleged childhood abuse cases primarily in the United States, but also in Europe, in the 1980s and early 1990s. These trials, which led to the destruction of many individual lives as well as entire families, caused many headlines in the media at that time due to their very controversial nature. They were sometimes reminiscent of show trials, in particular after it had become apparent during some of these cases that the testimony of witnesses involved had been manipulated by suggestive interview techniques of psychologists and psychiatrists. As a result, modern criticism of witness testimony was booming during those two decades.

The main obstacle to psychologically investigating false memory is that one cannot apply techniques while experimenting with humans which would lead to mental suffering, as this is of course morally unacceptable and legally prohibited. Thus, Prof. Loftus and her co-workers always had to apply rather mild methods and deal only with such (invented) events, which would not lead to traumatic experiences. It is needless to say that the results of such experiments are not equal to what could be expected with false memories formed by suggestive techniques dealing with factual (or only alleged) traumatic events like childhood abuse or an orgy of mass slaughter.

## About the Ease to Manipulate Human Memory

Graph 1 shows the results of experiments presented in Loftus' article. From this and other experiments, she concluded that freely invented events put into a framework of real events are increasingly accepted as true and part of the subject's memory, the more often they are suggested to be real and the more

one forgets about the true source of this ‘information.’ Whereas all persons subjected to this experiment insisted during the first interview that the suggested event did not occur, the percentage of persons accepting the invented event as true and part of their memory rose from 18% during the second interview up to 25% during the third. It would be interesting to find out how high this rate of manipulated memories would grow if these persons would be subjected to hundreds or perhaps even thousands of such interviews, a number which can be easily assumed for so-called ‘Holocaust’ witnesses, who have been exposed to a steady flow of many interrogations, interviews, story telling, anecdotal exchanges, and media reports for six decades.

It clearly results from Prof. Loftus’ work that a considerable number of all humans are susceptible even to the most simple manipulations of their memory. Manipulating factors are omnipresent in our environment, in particular in the form of mass media and all other forms of communication, of which we draw many bits of information on a daily basis. But we hardly ever memorize the original source of this information alongside with the information.

Unfortunately, Prof. Loftus’ work does not contain any statements as to how the manipulation of human memory increases with the rise of emotional pressure. Since experiments with humans are limited in this regard, we probably must depend on real cases to investigate this question.

The case of the trial against John Demjanjuk, however, has shown that the susceptibility of our memory for manipulation rises with the increase of emotional stress we are exposed to, which is in accordance with the predominant view.

Because the ‘Holocaust’ is an event of permanent emotional stress especially to witnesses, we have to expect a massive susceptibility for memory deformation in this field. It must remain open just how much of the stress perceived by those witnesses is a result of real memory and how much is the result of memories merely induced by an uninterrupted feeding of suggestive ‘information’ leading to hysterical responses of the subject.

### **Lack of Psychological Critique of Witnesses to History**

It would be worthwhile if finally experts on witness testimony would dedicate some of their time and resources to investigate the topic “witness testimony in modern history.” This does not even have to start with the hot potato Holocaust, be-

cause for general reasons all witness accounts relating to events of modern history are problematic, as they are often tainted by political interest and social paradigms and pressures.

When doing such research, one could proceed as follows:

Such a project would do research on various different events in modern history involving a broad variety of emotional ‘ballast.’ One could pick various recent historical events with different emotional impacts on witnesses. The range would start with events which would not cause any considerably emotional involvement of witnesses to such events where most witnesses are emotionally touched in a massive way, for instance: The visit of a U.S. president to European countries; the uprising of Hungarians in 1956; the expulsion of fifteen million Germans from eastern Germany and eastern Europe.

Similar research could be done for events which were similarly traumatic for participants, but which received different degrees of media coverage, like a plane crash; a minor local war, and a major war getting broad media attention lasting even after the war is over.

It would be interesting to find out, whether or not the observation already made in other contexts could be confirmed that memories of witnesses are more susceptible to manipulation with an increasing emotional impact of the witnessed event and with an increased reporting about this event in the media.

Needless to say that for the witnesses concerned, the ‘Holocaust’ will always be at the top of the scale of emotional stress and trauma, with which we have finally determined what it really is that makes the ‘Holocaust’ unique: The mind and memory manipulating emotions linked to it.

### **Notes**

- <sup>1</sup> E. Loftus, K. Ketcham, *Witness for the Defense*, St. Martin’s Press, New York 1991, p. 224; cf. review in J. Cobden, *Journal of Historical Review (JHR)*, 11(2) (1991) pp. 238-249 (online: [vho.org/GB/Journals/JHR/11/2/Cobden238-249.html](http://vho.org/GB/Journals/JHR/11/2/Cobden238-249.html)). The author thanks R. Faurisson for the latter reference.
- <sup>2</sup> E. Loftus, K. Ketcham, *ibid.*, pp. 228f.
- <sup>3</sup> M. Shermer, *Why People Believe Weird Things*, Freeman, New York 1997, p. 183.
- <sup>4</sup> vol. 277, no. 3, pp. 70-75; <http://cogprints.ecs.soton.ac.uk/archive/00000597/00/199802007.html>; the article also appeared somewhat revised in German language as “Falsche Erinnerungen” in: *Spektrum der Wissenschaft* no. 1, 1998, p. 62-67.

## **Memories of a War that Never Happened**

*By Andrea Schneider*

On June 28, 1998, Joe Sharkey reported in *New York Times* about a phenomenon that is well-known to revisionists. It all started with a documentary on CNN on June 7, 1998, by the veteran CNN war correspondent Peter Arnett and producer April Oliver. In it, Vietnam War veterans claimed that certain units of the U.S. Armed Forces where they served had applied the nerve gas Sarin. A follow-up article about this topic appeared the next day in *Time* magazine. As a result of the report, the Pentagon began an investigation.

But it quickly turned out that the central allegation of the

report was largely based on a disputed interviewing technique involving recovered memories that the American Psychiatric Association has condemned. This technique to “recover” forgotten “memories” is based upon highly suggestive interviewing of patients. This results in “memories” of events, which the patients never experienced or which actually never occurred, being planted into their brains.

Recovered memories – suppressed horrors dredged up under therapy – drew attention in the 1990 when they became the basis of a spate of charges of incest, satanic-ritual abuse, and

sexual abuse at child-care centers. They were discredited when investigators determined that many of them had been implanted by zealous therapists determined to find a cause for a patient's emotional distress.

More recently, experts have discovered that some Vietnam-era veterans under psychiatric care in Veterans Administration Hospitals are especially suggestible. Recovered memories have made a comeback, and veterans, they say, find themselves "remembering" events that never happened. Neither the CNN report nor the *Times* article mentioned that the central accusation was based on recovered memories.

General Smith said last week that several other veterans who had been interviewed for the report told him Ms. Oliver "planted" the notion that Sarin had been used in the commando raid. CNN has denied that. But experts in the field of false

memories say it is not difficult to manipulate a susceptible subject, given the right conditions.

Pamela Freyd, the executive director of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, a national organization of doctors and researchers that has worked to identify false memories, said:

*"Recovering a false memory as a war atrocity is not as unusual as you might think."*

Of course, this applies also to many memories of witnesses of atrocities alleged committed by Germans during World War II, all the more so because there is nothing in our world, which has been more massively and in a one-sided manner propagated for almost 60 years now, 24/7 by all means and channels of all mass media, than the highly suggestive claim that these atrocities are 'a given fact.'

## False Memories in Disneyland

By Ronald Reeves

Prof. Elizabeth Loftus is permanently under pressure to justify her thesis that human memory can easily be manipulated to 'recall' events that actually did not take place. In June 2001, she published more recent findings, which indicate that human memory is even less reliable than she had already found in earlier studies. To make her research understandable to everybody, Prof. Loftus chose a background to which Johnny Doe can easily relate: Disneyland. The following report was taken from the Internet:<sup>1</sup>

### False Memories Easily Created, Researchers Discover

About one-third of the people who were exposed to a fake print ad describing a visit to Disneyland and how they met and shook hands with Bugs Bunny said later they remembered or knew the event happened to them.

The scenario described in the ad never occurred because Bugs Bunny is a Warner Bros. cartoon character and wouldn't be featured in any Walt Disney Co. property, according to University of Washington memory researchers Jacquie Pickrell and Elizabeth Loftus.

Pickrell will make two presentations on the topic at the annual meeting of the American Psychological Society (APS) on Sunday (June 17) in Toronto and at a satellite session of the Society for Applied Research in Memory and Cognition in Kingston, Ontario, on Wednesday.

Pickrell, UW psychology doctoral student, said:

*"The frightening thing about this study is that it suggests how easily a false memory can be created. It's not only people who go to a therapist who might implant a false memory or those who witness an accident and whose memory can*

*be distorted who can have a false memory. Memory is very vulnerable and malleable. People are not always aware of the choices they make. This study shows the power of subtle association changes on memory."*

The research is a follow-up to an unpublished study by Loftus, a [former] UW psychology professor who is being honored by the APS this week with its William James Fellow Award for psychological research; Kathryn Braun, a visiting scholar at the Harvard Business School; and Rhiannon Ellis, a former UW undergraduate who is now a doctoral student at the University of Pittsburgh.

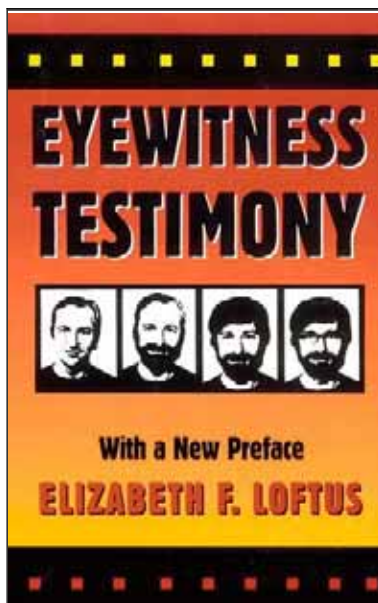
In the original study, 16 percent of the people exposed to a Disneyland ad featuring Bugs Bunny later thought they had really seen and met the cartoon rabbit.

In the new research, Pickrell and Loftus divided 120 subjects into four groups. The subjects were told they were going to evaluate advertising copy, fill out several questionnaires and answer questions about a trip to Disneyland.

- The first group read a generic Disneyland ad that mentioned no cartoon characters.
- The second group read the same copy and was exposed to a 4-foot-tall cardboard figure of Bugs Bunny that was casually placed in the interview room. No mention was made of Bugs Bunny.
- The third, or Bugs group, read the fake Disneyland ad featuring Bugs Bunny.
- The fourth, or double exposure group, read the fake ad and also saw the cardboard rabbit.

This time, 30 percent of the people in the Bugs group later said they remembered or knew they had met Bugs Bunny when they visited Disneyland and 40 percent of the people in the double exposure group reported the same thing.

Pickrell explained:



“Remember’ means the people actually recall meeting and shaking hands with Bugs. ‘Knowing’ is they have no real memory, but are sure that it happened, just as they have no memory of having their umbilical cord being cut when they were born but know it happened.

Creating a false memory is a process. Someone saying, ‘I know it could have happened,’ is taking the first step of actually creating a memory. If you clearly believe you walked up to Bugs Bunny, you have a memory.”

In addition, Pickrell said there is the issue of the consequence of false memories, or the ripple effects. People in the experiment who were exposed to the false advertising were more likely to relate Bugs Bunny to other things at Disneyland not suggested in the ad, such as seeing Bugs and Mickey Mouse together or seeing Bugs in the Main Street Electrical Parade. Pickrell said:

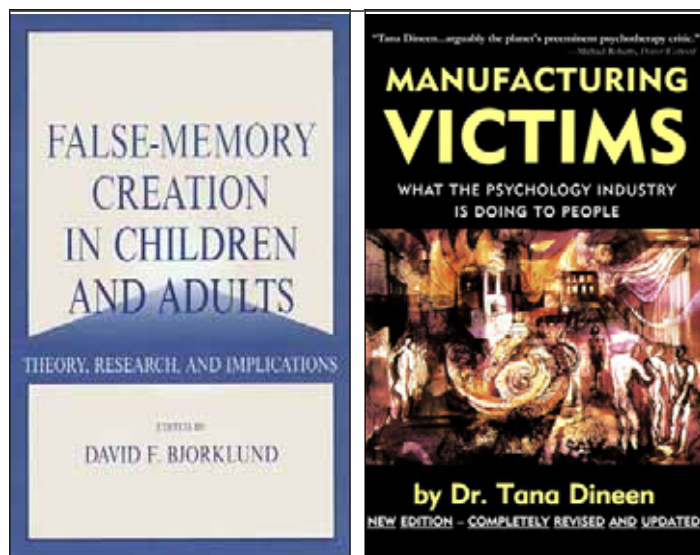
“We are interested in how people create their autobiographical references, or memory. Through this process they might be altering their own memories. Nostalgic advertising works in a similar manner.

Hallmark, McDonald’s and Disney have very effective nostalgic advertising that can change people’s buying habits. You may not have had a great experience the last time you visited Disneyland or McDonald’s, but the ads may inadvertently be creating the impression that they had a wonderful time and leaving viewers with that memory. If ads can get people to believe they had an experience they never had, that is pretty powerful.

The bottom line of our study is that the phony ad is making the difference. Just casually reading a Bugs Bunny cartoon or some other incidental exposure doesn’t mean you believe you met Bugs.

The ad does.”

In earlier works, Prof. Loftus focused mainly on the influence of real or invented traumatic events on human memory, as shown in preceding articles.<sup>2</sup> This new study shows how media products like ads, intruding into our world of experience, have a manipulating effect. It is obvious that the power of the media to manipulate human memory is considerably larger than the



influence of personal interviews. Whereas not even 20% of all persons exposed to two suggestive interviews claimed false, implanted information to be part of their own memory,<sup>3</sup> this latest example shows that already on single intensive exposure to a fake media advertisement by a trusted source can suffice to deform the memory of 30 to 40% of all persons subjected to such an experiment.

This reflects the faith most people have in the media – including advertisements as long as they stem from well-known and trustworthy companies, all the more so because in our times, commercials make up the majority of all contents transported by the media, particularly in most mainstream printed periodicals.

What, then, can we expect when basically all trustworthy and renowned media of the world have been exposing everybody on this globe with an ever increasing shower of one-sided, distorted, and even fabricated ‘information’ about the ‘Holocaust,’ including of course those who witnessed these (alleged) events? How reliable can testimony from such witnesses possibly be today? What is therefore the value of all those projects focusing for several years now on uncritically recording witness accounts of ‘survivors’ on tape and video?<sup>4</sup>

#### Further Reading

- David F. Bjorklund (ed.), *False-Memory Creation in Children and Adults: Theory, Research, and Implications*, Lawrence Erlbaum Ass., Mahwah, NJ, 2000
- Terence W. Campbell, *Smoke and Mirrors: The Devastating Effect of False Sexual Abuse Claims*, Insight Books, New York 1998
- Tana Dineen, *Manufacturing Victims: What the Psychology Industry Is Doing to People*, R. Davies, Montréal 1996
- Hans Jürgen Eysenck, *Decline and fall of the Freudian empire*, Penguin Books, Harmondsworth 1986
- Eleanor Goldstein, Kevin Farmer (ed.), *True Stories of False Memories*, Social Issues Resources, Boca Raton, FL, 1993
- Elizabeth F. Loftus, James M. Doyle, *Eyewitness testimony: civil and criminal*, 3rd ed., Lexis Law Pub., Charlottesville, VA, 1997
- Elizabeth Loftus, Katherine Ketcham, *The Myth of Repressed Memory: False Memories and Allegations of Sexual Abuse*, St. Martin’s Press, New York, 1994
- Richard Ofshe, *Making Monsters: False Memories, Psychotherapy, and Sexual Hysteria*, 3<sup>rd</sup> ed., University of California Press, Berkeley, CA, 1996
- Mark Pendergrast, Melody Gavigan, *Victims of Memory: Sex Abuse Accusations and Shattered Lives*, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed., Upper Access, Hinesburg, VT, 1996
- Gary L. Wells, Elizabeth F. Loftus (eds.), *Eyewitness testimony: psychological perspectives*, Cambridge University Press, New York 1984

#### Notes

- <sup>1</sup> <http://unisci.com/stories/20012/0613011.htm>
- <sup>2</sup> See David Irving’s review “False Witnesses,” this issue, as well as Germar Rudolf, “False Memory Everywhere – except in Modern History,” this issue.
- <sup>3</sup> See G. Rudolf, *ibid.*
- <sup>4</sup> See G. Rudolf, “Scientist at Work,” this issue, p. 457.

# Forced Confessions: Why Innocent Defendants Admit their Guilt

By Manfred Köhler

The series of articles in this issue of *The Revisionist* addresses the question how it could be explained that many witnesses to the so-called 'Holocaust' testified about events that did not take place in the way described or not at all.

From a psychological standpoint of trying to make the revisionist position understandable to Johnny Doe, it is even more important to explain how defendants, who are accused – whether in trials or only in public – to have participated in, or merely been indifferent to, certain crimes, could confess their guilt even though it can be shown that they are innocent – most radically because the reported crimes did not happen at all.

In my analysis of "The Value of Testimony and Confessions Concerning the Holocaust,"<sup>1</sup> I pointed out several factors, which can lead a defendant to believe against his own recollection that he is guilty for a crime he did not commit or which did not happen in the first place. Third degree torture, that is the infliction of painful physical injuries, is only one means to this end. Although it certainly was occasionally applied during interrogations in the early years after the war – Rudolf Höß<sup>2</sup> and the infamous Dachau trials<sup>3</sup> being the most prominent examples – it is correct to conclude with Arthur Butz<sup>4</sup> that physical violence is hardly ever capable to changing the mind and mindset of a defendant permanently. He might sign a statement right after the torture, but he is not likely to support it once he is out of reach of his torturers.

Much more effective are various brain washing techniques – also referred to as second degree torture – which change the memory and the mindset of the defendant. If not treated psychologically, this can have dramatic lasting effects. The following example, taken from a recent media report, highlights that such techniques are quite frequently used and have little to do with sophisticated psychological techniques or psychopharmaceuticals – quite contrary to popular belief. All that is needed is to isolate the defendant for an extended period of time from the outside world, to put him under emotional stress, and to expose him repeatedly to the stories he is supposed to endorse.

If we consider the situation of almost all defendants involved in trials of so-called National Socialist Violent Crimes, then it can easily be seen that in these cases the situation of the defendant was as extreme as it could get, whether it was during the trials in Dachau, Nuremberg, Krakow and elsewhere in 1945-1948, or during all the post-war trials held since 1949 in West Germany, or the Eichmann and Demjanjuk trials in Jerusalem: All defendants were locked away for years prior to the actual start of the trial proceedings. They were for years exposed to massive accusation of involvement of the most atrocious crimes, facing the destruction of their lives, either by capital punishment or by high prison sentences, and heard 'Holocaust' stories from public prosecutors, police officers, witnesses, the media, and sometimes perhaps even from their own defense lawyers. It would have required an enormously strong will and psychological resistance to withstand such tremendous mind-mending pressure.

Most defendants, of course, were not that strong. Eichmann, for example, succumbed totally. Others, like most defendants of the Auschwitz, Treblinka, and Majdanek trials, did not dare or could not imagine to contest the general story, but merely tried to save their own skin as good as possible, which was the only realistic defense strategy anyway, objectively seen, since trying to contest the entire story would have brought the wrath of the entire world upon both defendants and – more importantly and effectively – the defense lawyers.<sup>5</sup>

Reading the following dramatic story of everyday life in the United States should make everybody think twice before taking confessions of defendants in 'Nazi' trials at face value.

---

One night in April 1993, someone slit the throats of Gary Gauger's elderly parents on their farm near Richmond, Illinois. It was bad enough for Gauger to learn of his parents' violent death, but it turned out that his nightmare was just beginning.

Gauger told police that he was asleep on the property when his parents, Morris, 74, and Ruth, 70, were killed. But the police didn't buy it, and brought him in for interrogation. After 21 hours of questioning, Gauger broke down and confessed to a crime he did not commit.

Though police had no physical evidence against him, the confession was enough to persuade a jury to convict him of double murder. He was sentenced to death.

Two years later, in an unrelated federal investigation, surveillance tapes captured a member of a motorcycle gang bragging about how he and another gang member had killed the Gaugers. The gang members were later convicted of the murders and other crimes, and Gauger was freed in 1996, after spending three years behind bars.

Every year, thousands of criminals are convicted on the basis of confessions obtained from police interrogations. Experts say law enforcement interrogation techniques are so effective that they can break down the most hardened criminal – and even people who are innocent of the crime they are being accused of. Experts believe there have been hundreds of cases where innocent men succumbed to interrogation and confessed to crimes they did not commit.

"You take someone who is vulnerable, like a grieving family member or someone who isn't used to being confronted by police," says Rich Fallin, a former Maryland police officer who specialized in interrogations, "If interrogated long enough, they'll probably confess."

## Assuming Police Tell the Truth

During his interrogation, Gauger says, he kept denying any involvement with the murders. But he says police told him they had evidence. He mistakenly assumed police would not lie to him, an assumption often made by innocent people undergoing interrogation, according to experts.

"They told me that they had found bloody clothes in my bedroom; they found a bloody knife in my pocket," says Gau-

ger, who never asked for an attorney, because he felt he had nothing to hide.

At about 1 a.m., he says, the interrogation turned ugly. Police showed him gruesome crime scene photos of his dead parents, sending him into an emotional freefall. The combination of losing his parents and being told by police repeatedly that he was a liar and killer was just too much.

"I was emotionally distraught, looking at these people for help," he says. "They wouldn't stop the interrogation. I was exhausted. I gave up." Though Gauger had no memory of the crime, he ended up believing what police told him. "I thought I must have done it in a blackout," he says.

None of what Gauger described surprises Fallin. "They're kept in an interview room, in a cold interview room, with very little clothing on for hours and hours," he says, adding that people are often not given anything to drink or allowed to use the bathroom while being interrogated.

The detectives who interrogated Gauger refused to be interviewed by ABC NEWS, but their lawyer in Gauger's ongoing lawsuit denied that police lied. "I believe that the circumstances surrounding the interview of Gary Gauger were completely appropriate," says Jim Sotos, a defense attorney for the police, who is still trying to raise doubts about Gauger's innocence, even though another man is in jail for the crime.

### Psychological Warfare

Allen Chestnet says he also fell victim to "thorough investigation." In May 1998, the developmentally disabled man, then 16, cut his hand at his home in Maryland. As he was sitting on his front porch, local reporters covering the murder of Chestnet's neighbor saw him. After noticing blood on his hand, they called state police.

Chestnet, who had no violent history, was picked up and interrogated for hours.

During the interrogation, he says, police seemed to have no doubts about his guilt.

"He was like, 'I know you did it, so why are you lying to me?'" says Chestnet. "They had me so upset, I wasn't thinking right."

For hours, he says, his interrogators told him he was a killer and said his denials were lies that were only getting him in deeper. He says he was desperate to appease the cops, who offered him an easy way out: by confessing.

Even after authorities determined that his DNA did not match traces found at the crime scene, Chestnet was kept in jail until November 1998, where he says he was stabbed and raped twice by other inmates. Authorities contend they still had reason to suspect his involvement in the murder.

To this day, Chestnet says he's afraid of the police. He is suing authorities over his arrest and incarceration.

In both the Chestnet and Gauger cases, police initially refused to admit they had coerced a confession from an innocent man, despite evidence clearing the suspect. According to Fallin,



Raymond Wood's interrogation was videotaped

this kind of attitude is pervasive among interrogators.

"Some of the detectives are hot shots. Some of them know they're good, know they can get a confession," he says. "Nobody tells them what to do or how to do it."

### "They Wore Me Down"

In Raymond Wood's case, detectives in Maine had nothing more than suspicion that he had hit his girlfriend with a car and killed her. But police turned up the heat to entice him to confess.

Wood had argued with his girlfriend, Bessie Seleck, when he says he got fed up and drove to a store. Bessie, according to witnesses, left home soon after with a blood alcohol level of 0.28, walking in the opposite direction on a dark, remote road. She was hit by a car and killed.

"You have no idea how much evidence I have, Raymond, do you hear me?," one of the cops said during the interrogation, which was videotaped.

In fact, witnesses reported seeing a van with a broken headlight speeding from the scene. Wood's van had two working headlights. Also, a shattered bug shield at the scene didn't match the van Wood was driving.

Wood repeatedly denied any involvement in his girlfriend's death, but the police pressure was too much for him. After about six hours in police custody, he gave in.

"They literally, they wore me down. I was going through emotional torture by these people," he says. "They convinced me that I had to have done it."

After seeing the videotape, a judge threw out his confession and police dropped all charges, but not before Wood spent a year in jail. Police declined to be interviewed, citing an ongoing investigation into Seleck's death. But in a statement, they stood by their detectives.

Wood is free, but says it won't really be over until there's an apology from police.

"It would take them down off their God-like pedestal, that [they] can make no mistakes," says Wood, who would prefer an apology to financial compensation. "It would make them human again."

ABC News, March 15, 2003

### Notes

[http://abcnews.go.com/sections/2020/2020/2020\\_020315\\_falseconfessions.html](http://abcnews.go.com/sections/2020/2020/2020_020315_falseconfessions.html)

<sup>1</sup> In Germar Rudolf (ed.) *Dissecting the Holocaust*, Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago, IL, 2003, pp. 85-131.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 96

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 92ff.

<sup>4</sup> Arthur R. Butz, *The Hoax of the Twentieth Century*, 3<sup>rd</sup> ed., Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago, IL, 2003, pp. 235f.

<sup>5</sup> The only lawyer who ever went a little into that direction while defending an alleged 'perpetrator' by challenging witness testimony in general was defense lawyer Ludwig Böck during the Majdanek trial, and he subsequently felt the heat of public outrage, cf. M. Köhler, *op. cit.* (note 1), pp. 109f. Today, it is illegal in Germany even for defense lawyers to challenge the 'Holocaust' as such, cf. *ibid.*, p. 110.



# Research News

## Intelligence: Genetically Inherited or Learned Behavior?

By Andrea Schneider

The following is a press release recently issued by Dr. Paul M. Thompson about recent findings of his research team at the University of California in Los Angeles (UCLA) about the influence of genetics on human intelligence. This information is one more argument fueling the long-lasting debate between the so-called behaviorist (egalitarian) school and the genetic school of sociology about the question whether intelligence and other personality traits are primarily inherited or formed by environmental influences. This research is one more piece of evidence putting more weight on the scale of the genetic school, although this school has been vilified and ostracized successfully since the end of World War Two, because it is being accused of assisting racist arguments, thus helping ideologies, which, as we all know, led directly to the gas chambers of 'Auschwitz.'

Of course, the evidence proves not only the average historian's concept of 'Auschwitz' to be wrong, but also the average sociologist's concept of the nature of homo sapiens. Thus, we have to face the fact that the entire egalitarian ideology of today's western societies is built upon sand – historically as well as bio-sociologically.

---

Brain mapping researchers at the UCLA have created the first images to show how an individual's genes influence their brain structure and intelligence.

The findings, published in the November 5 issue of the journal *Nature Neuroscience*, offer exciting new insight about how parents pass on personality traits and cognitive abilities and how brain diseases run in families.

The team found that the amount of gray matter in the frontal parts of the brain is determined by the genetic make-up of an individual's parents, and strongly correlates with that individual's cognitive ability, as measured by intelligence test (IQ) scores.

More importantly, these are the first images to uncover how normal genetic differences influence brain structure and intelligence. Brain regions controlling language and reading skills were virtually identical in identical twins, who share exactly the same genes, while siblings showed only 60 percent of the normal brain differences. This tight structural similarity in the brains of family members helps explain why brain diseases, including schizophrenia and some types of dementia, run in families.

Paul Thompson, Ph.D., the study's chief investigator and an assistant professor of neurology at the UCLA Laboratory of Neuro Imaging, said:

*"We were stunned to see that the amount of gray matter in frontal brain regions was strongly inherited, and also predicted an individual's IQ score. The brain's language*

*areas were also extremely similar in family members. Brain regions that were found to be most similar in family members may be especially vulnerable to diseases that run in families, including some forms of psychosis and dementia."*

The scientists employed magnetic resonance imaging (MRI) technology to scan a group of 20 identical twins, whose genes are identical, and 20 same-sex fraternal twins, who share half their genes. Using a high-speed supercomputer, they created color-coded images showing which parts of the brain are determined by our genetic make-up, and which are more adaptable to environmental factors, such as learning and stress.

To make the maps of genetic influences on the brain, the UCLA scientists teamed up with the National Public Health Institute of Finland, and the Finnish Universities of Helsinki and Oulu. In a national initiative, the Finnish team tracked all the same-sex twins born in Finland between 1940 and 1957 – 9,500 pairs of twins – many of whom received brain scans and cognitive tests. Their genetic similarity was confirmed by analyzing 78 different genetic markers. These individual pieces of DNA match exactly in identical twins, and half of them match in siblings.

Recent research has shown that many cognitive skills are surprisingly heritable, with strong genetic influences on verbal and spatial abilities, reaction times, and even some personality qualities, including emotional reactions to stress. These genetic relationships persist even after statistical adjustments are made for shared family environments, which tend to make members of the same family more similar. Until this study, little was known about how much individual genotype accounts for the wide variations among individual brains, as well as individual's cognitive ability.

The UCLA researchers are also applying this new genetic brain mapping approach to relatives of schizophrenic patients and individuals at genetic risk for Alzheimer's disease to screen them for early brain changes and help understand familial risk for inherited brain disorders where specific risk genes are unknown.

### Further Reading

Paul M. Thompson *et al.*, "Genetic Influences on Brain Structure," *Nature Neuroscience*, 4(12) (November 2001). ([www.loni.ucla.edu/~thompson/MEDIA/NN/Nature\\_Neuro2001\\_genetics.pdf](http://www.loni.ucla.edu/~thompson/MEDIA/NN/Nature_Neuro2001_genetics.pdf)).

Contact Information:

Prof. Dr. Paul Thompson, Laboratory of Neuro Imaging, UCLA Medical Center, 710 Westwood Plaza, Westwood, Los Angeles, CA 90095, USA.; [thompson@loni.ucla.edu](mailto:thompson@loni.ucla.edu); ph: 310-206-2101; fax: 310-206-5518

# From the Records of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, Part 4

By Germar Rudolf

In late 1958 and early 1959, public prosecutor Weber of the Public Prosecutor's Office in Stuttgart, Germany, received a large number of witness statements, mainly consisting of accusations against Wilhelm Boger, who was already in custody at that time for crimes allegedly committed by him in the former concentration camp at Auschwitz.<sup>1</sup> Some of these witness statements will be investigated more closely in this article.

## 1. Lack of Knowledge = Lack of Credibility?

Gerhard Grande was incarcerated at the Auschwitz main camp between Easter 1943 and April 1944, where he served as a report secretary. In this position, he had some 80 inmates working for him as typists in the administration of the camp. There can be no doubt that he was thus in an excellent position to know what was going on in this camp. Although Grande confirms that W. Boger was known as a rough person, he claims to remember only one incident of corporal punishment: Early in 1944, an inmate with the name Osterloh had been punished for stealing a pair of shoes: he was put on the "swing bow" and received several blows with a stick:<sup>2</sup>

*"As far as I know, however, Osterloh did not sustain any physical injuries."* (p. 358R)

Grande also remembers that in the Fall of 1943 several inmates who had worked outside of the camp were executed. They had murdered one of their guards. As a reprisal measure, some 20 Polish inmates had been executed as well. Grande attributes his inability to recall details to the amount of time that has passed since then and also to the fact that, as he claims, "such crimes were daily events" (p. 359R). At the end of the interrogation protocol, the interrogating officer Schubert wrote that Grande was unable to remember anything specific (*ibid.*).

It is noteworthy that Grande was only interrogated about alleged crimes committed by Boger, although Grande, as a report secretary, would have certainly been able to testify about many more issues of the camp's organization and administrative procedures and events. But at the time of his interrogation, apparently nobody was interested in learning about general conditions and events in Auschwitz.

Whereas the interrogating officer abstained from making any comment about Grande, it was entirely different regarding the witness Jakob Fries, a criminal inmate who had been transferred to Auschwitz for a work assignment. In 1952, Fries had been sentenced to 14 years in prison for crimes not mentioned in the files. In contrast to the professional liar Rögner, however, Fries was not very cooperative. Because he could not contribute anything that would incriminate Boger, the interrogating officer simply refused to make a protocol of this interrogation:

*"Fries did not make a credible impression and was not eager to testify. One could get the impression that he made no effort to clarify the matter at hand. Apart from this, he made only general statements, which is why it was decided not to protocol his interrogation."* (p. 437)

We therefore depend on the interrogating officer Weida's summary of Fries' statements. According to Weida, Fries was

head of all inmate labor commandos in the Auschwitz main camp, but regarding alleged crimes:

*"He claims not to have heard anything about shootings in Auschwitz. [...] He merely remembers that in Auschwitz inmates, who had tried to climb over the fence, were shot by guards. He also claims to have heard nothing about other crimes against inmates. He claims to have learned only after 1945 and through media reports what had been going on in Auschwitz and especially in Birkenau."* (p. 437R)

Here we have a witness who is either unable to distinguish between what he experienced himself and what he learned only after the war, or a witness who, as the person responsible for the organization of forced labor, was himself so involved in criminal activities that he did not want to remember anything for tactical reasons. The interrogating officer probably assumed the latter. It must, of course, be assumed that Fries knew very well what was going on in Auschwitz, since his direct superior was none other than *Hauptsturmführer* Aumeier, who was then the head of the "Protective Custody Camp" (*Schutzhaftlagerführer*) and deputy commander of the entire camp.

Unfortunately, the interrogating officer did not explain why he considered Fries to be an unreliable witness. The lack of specific memories could not, by itself, prove him unreliable, because if the interrogating officer considered only testimony that confirmed a predetermined claim to be credible, this would indicate that the purpose of the entire proceeding was not to find the truth, but to find evidence for a foregone conclusion. And this would prove that the interrogating officer was not objective and that his entire legal case was legally unsound.

## 2. Rumors and Hearsay

*"But gruesome things are supposed to have happened there, as I have heard."* (p. 393)<sup>3</sup>

This seems to be the main characteristic of an entire series of testimony that impresses with its wealth of detail about alleged events in the Auschwitz camp; but how the witnesses gained their knowledge is unclear. As unyielding and unsatisfying as the testimony of Grande and Fries may be, at least these two witnesses were honest to the degree that they did not invent things or declare as firsthand knowledge that, which they learned from hearsay from unnamed sources. The remaining testimonies in this file read more like horror fables. It seems incredible that anyone can remember events in utmost detail after fifteen years.

The account of former SS-Mannes Emil Theodor Gehri is particularly enlightening in this regard. He was employed in the administration of inmate funds, which paid a small salary to all inmates. Gehri remembers that larger amounts of coins and valuables were sent to Berlin as time went by. He cannot testify about any mistreatment by SS-members (pp. 433, 435R), yet he states:

*"Of course I know that essential portions of newly arriving transports were gassed immediately since 1942."* (p. 434R)

The protocol does not reveal how he could know this, since he vehemently claims to have neither participated in it nor witnessed it:

*"I myself was never present at a gassing [...]. It was prohibited for us under threat of the most severe punishment to enter the crematoria and the area belonging to it."* (p. 433)

One possible source of his 'knowledge' is revealed at the very beginning of his interrogation, where he mentions that he had been put on trial in 1946 in Krakow, where he was sentenced to eight years imprisonment by the Polish authorities for his activities at the Auschwitz camp (p. 432). One page later, he reports about the source of his knowledge:

*"It is said that those unfit for labor were separated immediately and came to Birkenau, where they were gassed."*

"It is said" – in other words: it was claimed or rumored...

But Gehri also testifies about exonerating details, probably more accidentally and most likely without the interrogating prosecutor noticing it: He describes how he, as the administrator of the inmate bank, needed to update his inmate lists with that of the political department of the camp each time an inmate had died. On each occasion, he also learned about the cause of death (p. 433R). He elaborates on this as follows:

*"The number of deaths rose only when a typhus epidemic broke out in 1942 and later several times again. Each time after the epidemic waned, the number of deaths receded as well."* (p. 434R)

Gehri is unaware of either the "Boger swing" or the "Black Wall" (p. 434R), but he mentions fistfight contests (p. 435).

The testimony of Jakob Sebastian is a particularly extreme case of hearsay. The most dramatic parts of his statement read as follows:

*"It then became known to the inmates within the camp that the relatives of the escaped inmate are said to have been executed by SS-Oberscharführer Palitzsch. The 3 year old child is even said to have asked innocently what would happen there. Palitzsch is said to have grabbed the infant at its legs and battered it against the wall with the remark: 'We do not shot such a thing!' At that time, it was an open secret in the camp that this event had happened under the direction of Boger. [...]"*

*In this case as well I have to declare that I myself did not see Boger committing any cruel acts or being involved in the shooting of the relatives of the escaped inmate. I know this only due to what other inmates told me and due to the general mood and views that Boger was at least responsible for these things."* (p. 489)

The interrogating officer Matthäus added:

*"Kronauer made his statement freely and repeatedly indicated that the events are also reported in the book 'Mützen ab' [hats off] by Zenon Rozanski – Eine Reportage aus der Strafkompagnie des KZ. Auschwitz [A report from the penal company of the Auschwitz camp] – published in 1948 by 'Das andere Deutschland', owned by Fritz Küster, in Hanover. Kronauer owns this book. [...]"*

*In September 1958, Jakob Kronauer had been put into the Psychiatric Clinic Heppenheim, because he had uttered suicidal intentions after a nervous breakdown [...]"*

*Already on Nov. 24, 1945, Kronauer was interrogated about his incarceration. He then basically made the same statements as those made above, without giving any details about the behavior of the guards. This interrogation, however, was only about the duration of his incarceration and was initiated by the Association of Former Political Prisoners in Hesse.*

*On June 24, 1946, the former landlord, at whose house Kronauer lived, the late Jakob Kling, Sedanstrasse 36, stated on request that Kronauer had been a 'Kapo' at Auschwitz. Because Kronauer had disappeared for two days, he assumed that former Displaced Persons – at that time residing in Lampertheim – might have recognized him and might have caused his arrest. On June 26, 1946, Kronauer reported to the local police and stated that he had been interrogated for two days in Bensheim, but had been released thereafter."* (pp. 493f.)

I have quoted this as extensively as I have because these statements emphasize four points:

1. As Kronauer admits himself, he did not report from his own experience but from what he had learned otherwise.
2. Kronauer was obviously mentally unstable, which might have made him susceptible to suggestive, memory-distorting influences of dramatic stories.
3. In an interrogation performed only ten months after the end of the war, he apparently did not see any reason to make any statements about misbehaviors of former camp guards, even though his memory was still quite fresh at that time and the interrogating inmate organization was certainly open for such reports.
4. "Kapos" or inmate supervisors were very often the main culprits for cruelties committed against other inmates in German concentration camps. It is therefore possible that Kronauer himself did not have a clear conscience, i.e., that he had a vested interest in accusing others in order to distract attention from himself and in order to secure the goodwill of former inmates and their organizations.

### 3. Testimony Manipulated by the Auschwitz Committee

In two instances in the file investigated here, the influence of the communist-dominated Auschwitz Committee under the leadership of former Auschwitz inmate and longtime active communist Hermann Langbein can be proved:

On January 21, 1958, Public Prosecutor Weber wrote about the situation of the defendant Boger:

*"it cannot be ignored that the defence situation of the defendant is unfavorable, because accusations are systematically filed by the Auschwitz Committee, which has its headquarters in Krakow [Poland]. The incriminating material includes, among others, written statements of individuals from communist countries who can neither be reached nor verified."* (p. 477)

In the 1950s, an organization could only have its headquarters in Poland if it was Stalinist and radically anti-German in nature, or in other words: if it was willing to continue the Ilya-Ehrenburg-style atrocity propaganda started during World War II. By juxtaposing two of the written testimonies filed by the Auschwitz Committee with the Public Prosecution of Stuttgart,

it can be shown that there is something fishy about these testimonies (see table).

Both witnesses lived in the same town, dated their statements with the same day, and sent it to Stuttgart at roughly the same time as all the other Polish witnesses, obviously encouraged by the Auschwitz Committee. It can easily be recognized that the style and content of the two testimonies are so similar that one has to assume that the witnesses prepared their testimony together or that they were instructed by the Auschwitz Committee, or both.

#### 4. Böck and Rögner: Two False Witnesses

Parts of Richard Böck's testimony, written down during the investigations for the Auschwitz trial, are sometimes quoted by revisionists and used as evidence of the lack of credibility of this and other similar testimonies.<sup>5</sup> The statements quoted stem from an interrogation of Nov. 2, 1960. Böck had, however, already been interrogated much earlier: on February 5, 1959.

Böck was a driver in the car pool of the Auschwitz camp, where his primary duty was to organize the transport of supplies for the camp.<sup>6</sup> Both the style and the content of his testimony clearly indicate that he identified much more with the former inmates of the camp than with his former SS comrades – at least during the time of his interrogations. For example, he claims that he smuggled mail in and out of the camp over an extended period of time (pp. 447, 461, 463). Although an investigation by the political department (Gestapo) was initiated as a result, there were no consequences for Böck (pp. 449-451). And even though he had been arrested for a short period of time in the context of those investigations, he claims to have never heard anything about the “Boger swing” (p. 450). His comical descriptions of his alleged resistance activities are a clear indi-

cation that his hero stories are either not true or that the Gestapo in Auschwitz was utterly harmless.

Due to his intensive contacts with the inmates, Böck also had contact with inmate Adolf Rögner, who, according to Böck, was a “Kapo” in Auschwitz and a member of the so-called camp underground, which even owned its own radio transmitter (p. 446). It is thus quite possible that Rögner belonged to that circle of inmates described by Bruno Baum as being proud to have put into circulation the Auschwitz propaganda, which is now spreading all over the world.<sup>7</sup> As a member of an “Inmate Investigative Commission,” Rögner also managed to liberate Böck from Allied post-war incarceration by organizing several affidavits of former inmates who testified on behalf of Böck (pp. 443, 459-465). During his second interrogation, Böck mentions further that Rögner was employed in the electrical department of the car pool (p. 6879). In other words: Böck and Rögner were obviously friends. This is also the only explanation for why Böck repeatedly mentions Rögner in his testimony without having any reason to do so.

The first three installments of this series reported in detail about the perjured liar and professional denunciator Rögner.<sup>8</sup> Böck's relationship with Rögner raises the suspicion that something other than dedication to the truth was hiding behind Böck's eagerness to testify, as was the case with Rögner. I therefore will analyze Böck's statements in more detail.

During his first interrogation, Böck claimed that he had witnessed a gassing “once myself. That must have been in summer of 1943” (p. 453). During his second interrogation, this gassing suddenly took place “in the winter of 1942/43” (p. 6881). Even though it was “strictly prohibited” for him as an unauthorized person, he easily managed to get to the gas chamber by getting

---

#### ‘Witness’ Testimony – ‘Organized’ by the Communist Auschwitz Committee

---

“Henryk Wysoczynski [...]

*Together with 400 other inmates, I arrived at the concentration camp Auschwitz from the Gestapo prison in Lodz on February 28, 1943. Only seven of these 400 survived the hell of Auschwitz.*

*I was accused to be a member of the resistance movement, and was forced to do heavy work in the commando ‘fish ponds.’ After the quarantine during May, I worked in the commando ‘fish ponds Raysko’ until May 5, 1943. [...]*

*In August 1944, the soldiers of the Soviet army, who were incarcerated at Birkenau, fled. Four of them were arrested and brought back to Birkenau, were they were supposed to be executed. One day (I cannot recall the exact date) they were supposed to be hanged after the roll call.*

*Accompanied by SS men, they were led into the camp. Prior to the execution, which took place in front of the kitchen, one of them attacked SS-Oberscharführer Boger. The SS men threw this inmate on the ground and SS-Oberscharführer Boger beat him and kicked him with his feet. Then Boger put the noose around the neck of all four and hanged them. I have seen this and all comrades had to watch this execution.*

*I was in Auschwitz until January 18, 1945, and I had the inmate number 97,640.” (p. 425)*

“[...] Windyslaw [<sup>4</sup>...]”

*I arrived at the concentration camp Auschwitz on February 28, 1943, coming from the Gestapo prison together with 400 other inmates. As a political prisoner I had the inmate number 97,673. I was assigned to the working commando ‘kitchen’ in Auschwitz Birkenau.*

*I was from February 28 until January 18, 1945, in Auschwitz, i.e. until the evacuation of the inmates.*

*The prisoners of the Soviet Army were also in this camp. In the month of August 1944, some of these prisoners fled from the camp. Within a short while, four of them were recaptured by the SS and brought back to Birkenau. They were supposed to be punished with death.*

*The gallows were erected in front of the kitchen and after the roll call, I forgot the date of this day, the soldiers were supposed to be executed by hanging.*

*SS men led the soldiers, tied with wire, [illegible...] after the roll call. When they stood already before the gallows, one of the soldiers broke loose and attacked Boger. SS men threw [illegible...] soldier down and Boger beat [illegible...] and he kicked him with his feet.*

*[illegible...] all four soldiers hanged [illegible...]” (p. 426)*

a ride in the ambulance car (*ibidem*). Similar to this is another statement in his first interrogation, where he secretly witnesses an execution in a gravel pit by simply “following” the column of the executee and his SS guards “in a few meters distance” (p. 451). According to Böck, the command for the execution of inmates was: “Ready, set, go!” (p. 452).

There are three options: a) the gassings/executions were not secret (that is, Böck is lying in this regard); b) the SS consisted of dim-witted morons who did not follow the most primitive security measures and did not even notice it when somebody followed them only a few meters away into a gravel pit; or c) Böck is lying about these events. Since an execution is not a 100 meter sprint – execution commands are something like “Ready, aim, fire!” – the reader can figure out by himself which case is most likely given regarding Böck.

Another of Böck’s allegations fits perfectly into this picture: He claims that one day he was ordered to come with a truck-load of sandwiches to the railroad ramp at Birkenau, where a selection of incoming inmates was taking place, but he eventually had to return again with all of his sandwiches (p. 6884). According to Böck, the reason for this was:

*“Because they wanted to be prepared if a commission would come from Switzerland to observe the ‘resettlement of the Jews’.”* (p. 6883)

Böck speculates that those sandwiches were meant to make the commission of the International Red Cross believe that the inmates were treated well. For the same reason, the van used to transport Zyklon B to the gas chamber had allegedly been camouflaged with a Red Cross symbol (*ibidem*). As if the mighty SS was not in control of whether or not a delegation of the Red Cross would enter the camp, and as if anybody would have been fooled by a few sandwiches into ignoring the allegedly atrocious general conditions in the camp!

On pages 6882f., we find those statements that have been frequently quoted and interpreted as indications that this witness makes false claims:

*“Finally, an SS man came, I believe it was a Rottenführer, to our ambulance and got out a gas canister. With this gas canister he then went to a ladder, which stood at the right side of this building, seen from the gate. At the same time, I noticed that he had a gas mask on while climbing the ladder. After he had reached the end of the ladder, he opened the circular tin lid and shook the contents of the canister into the opening. I clearly heard the rattling of the canister against the wall, as he hit it while shaking it out. Simultaneously I saw a brown dust rise through the wall opening. When he had closed the little door again, an indescribable crying began in the chamber. I simply cannot describe how these humans cried. That lasted approximately 8-10 minutes, and then all was silent. A short time afterwards, the door was opened by inmates and one could see a bluish cloud floating over a gigantic pile of corpses.”* (p. 6882)

*“At any rate, I was surprised that the inmate commando which was assigned to remove the bodies, entered the chamber without gas masks, although this blue vapor floated over the corpses, from which I assumed that it was a gas.”* (S. 6883)

Since Zyklon B does not produce a brown dust when poured out of its cans, and hydrogen cyanide gas is colorless, and the inmate commando cannot have been immune against the same poison gas that killed the victims within a few minutes just a few moments earlier, it is obvious that Böck cannot have seen what he claims to have seen.

But this is not yet all. In the fall of 1941, Böck claims to have accidentally witnessed, how 60 prisoners were gassed in the crematorium I, located in the Auschwitz main camp:

*“In the fall of 1941, I observed one evening after my shift at the car pool was over how Ustuf. [SS Untersturmführer] Gr abner stopped in front of crematorium a, main camp, with some 60 male Jews, coming from the direction of the train station Auschwitz. Then he drove all Jews into the crematorium by ordering them to go in there. After all Jews had entered, I saw how another SS man stepped onto the crematorium and opened some kind of a shutter. At the same time I heard terrible screams, but this lasted only a short while. Then it was silent.”* (p. 6886)

This statement is problematic for several reasons:

1. According to official historiography, there was only one gassing during the fall of 1941, and it allegedly took place in the basement of camp building no. 11 with several hundred Russian POWs as victims.<sup>9</sup> It is the general belief that the mortuary of the old crematorium of the main camp has been redesigned for use as a ‘gas chamber’ in 1942, hence could not have been used for gassings in late 1941.
2. The alleged gas chamber of the old crematorium was a relatively large mortuary by its design. According to established historiography, several hundred victims were murdered in it, not just 60.
3. Böck himself admits that the car pool at Auschwitz, where he worked day in day out for several years, was located just on the other side of the road, near the old crematorium – Böck even added a hand drawn map to this effect to the protocol of his interrogation (p. 6887, map p. 458). How is it that he neither witnessed nor even heard anything about the mass gassings, which allegedly took place in that crematorium during the years 1942-1943 according to orthodox historiography?

Böck tries to balance his general lack of knowledge about what was going on on the other side of the road by claiming that he made the following observation:

*“In any case, during the entire time of my presence in Auschwitz I could observe that inmate corpses were cremated in the old crematorium. This decreased somewhat only toward the end of 1944. I could see every day how the flames shot two meters high out of the chimney. It also smelled intensively like burned flesh.”*

The following comments have to be made about these claims:

1. The old crematorium in the main camp was taken out of operation after the new crematoria in Birkenau went into operation in spring 1943. In early 1944, the old crematorium was converted into an air raid shelter. Thus, Böck cannot possibly have witnessed cremations at the main camp until the end of 1944.
2. For technical reasons, no flames can come shooting out of a crematorium chimney. Either Böck lied, or he hallucinated,

or he talked himself into believing things he heard from elsewhere.

3. Coke-fired crematorium chimneys might emit the smell of burning coke, but certainly not the smell of burning flesh.

A repetitive theme is the claim that SS men participated at selections for mass gassings because they were rewarded with allowance of schnapps (p. 393, Böck, p. 6884). Additional allowances of food and liquor for difficult tasks may actually have existed, but the allegation that the SS was an accumulation of drunkards raises the suspicion that the source for such a cliché are Polish propagandists and vodka lovers, projecting from themselves onto others.

I want to mention only as an aside that Böck shifts the construction of the Birkenauer railway ramp to the year 1943 (p. 6880) – it was constructed in 1944. But here he might for once have just erred. The remainder of Böck's Statements are basically nothing else but – well, I cannot hold it back, so please forgive me – B.S. ☺

## Notes

First published in *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung*, 7(2) (2003), pp. 224-229. Reproductions of Public Prosecutor Weber's assessment of Boger's defence situation as well as six pages of Richard Böck's testimony are print there.

- <sup>1</sup> Cf. *TR* 1(1) (2003), pp. 115-118; 1(2) (2003), pp. 235-238; 1(3) (2003), pp. 352-358.
- <sup>2</sup> All vol. and page nos refer to: Staatsanwaltschaft beim LG Frankfurt (Main), Strafsache beim Schwurgericht Frankfurt (Main) gegen Baer und Andere wegen Mordes, ref. 4 Js 444/59; vol. 3, pp. 325-494, vol. 29, pp. 6677-6903.
- <sup>3</sup> The first 17 pages of this interrogation protocol are illegible so that the name of the witness is unknown.
- <sup>4</sup> Name hardly legible.
- <sup>5</sup> Cf. G. Rudolf, *The Rudolf Report*, Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago, IL, p. 203ff.; J. Graf, *Auschwitz – Tätergestandnisse und Augenzeugen des Holocaust*, Neue Visionen Verlag, Würenlos 1994, pp. 213-218.
- <sup>6</sup> In this context Böck's remark should be noted that the truck driven by him was a "producer gas" truck, that is: a poison gas truck, p. 442.
- <sup>7</sup> B. Baum, *Widerstand in Auschwitz*, Ostberlin 1949, p. 34.
- <sup>8</sup> The verdict against Adolf Rögners for perjury became effective, *ibid.*, p. 401.
- <sup>9</sup> Cf. in this regard Carlo Mattogno, *Auschwitz: La prima gasazione*, Edizioni di Ar, Salerno 1992.

## Book Reviews

### Bulldozing the Façade of Israel As Victim

By Francis Dixon

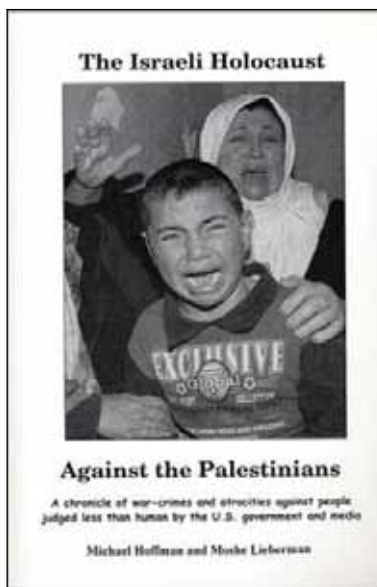
**Michael Hoffman, Moshe Lieberman, *The Israeli Holocaust against the Palestinians: A Chronicle of War-crimes and Atrocities against People Judged Less Than Human by the U.S. Government and Media*, Independent History and Research Co., Coeur d'Alene 2003, 110 pp., paperback, \$12.95.**

During the past several years, the State of Israel has made crystal clear that it will not stand for a Palestinian state. The Israelis have recently been signaling that even a Palestinian homeland in the rump districts West Bank and Gaza, honeycombed as these are by Israeli colonists, is unacceptable. And now it seems as if Israel is gearing up to "transfer" (*i.e.*, expel) the bulk of the Palestinians, perhaps during a future Mideast distraction, from what remains of their ancestral country.

The evidence of these Israeli intentions has been rather more forceful than official statements or diplomatic communiqués: since September 2000 Israeli troops and police have violated Muslim shrines; invaded Palestinian territory; shot down youthful demonstrators; shelled, rocketed, and machine-gunned civilian settlements with U.S.- provided ordnance; cold-bloodedly murdered suspected adversaries and civilian bystanders alike; hauled off thousands of Palestinians to concentration camps, where many of them have been tortured; taken hostages for use as

human shields during their forays into Palestinian towns; blown up or bulldozed the homes of relatives of alleged guerrillas in a *Sippenhaft* policy reminiscent of the latter days of the Third Reich; and destroyed as much of the Palestinians' economy as has seemed practical. All this at a time when Israel's chief sponsor, the United States of America, was becoming embroiled in an international war of terror in which at least appeasing, if not winning, the hearts and minds of a large majority of the world's one billion Muslims is crucial to success. Nonetheless, the facts and the implications of Israel's treatment of the Palestinians have been so expertly spun, and spiked, by America's media that most Americans remain fixated on the sporadic Palestinian terror attacks against Israelis rather than the far bloodier policies that provoke them.

Michael Hoffman, a seasoned journalist, and Moshe Lieberman, a researcher for the late Israeli dissident Israel Shahak, go a good way toward setting the record straight in *The Israeli Holocaust against the Palestinians*. Part compilation of previously published reports by objective journalists from around the world, part sharp and sometimes impassioned analysis, and part historical background, the book provides compelling and graphic evidence in pictures and print of the ongoing atrocity of Israeli policy toward the Palestinians. The authors might perhaps have better organized the medley of different articles and chapters in *The Israeli Holocaust against the*



*Palestinians*. Yet the interweaving of reportage on such specific incidents as the destruction of Jenin and the Israeli shelling of the Church of the Holy Sepulcher in Bethlehem with critiques of how U.S. policy makers enabled these crimes and American media misrepresented the facts makes for a satisfying and often informative texture.

The potential appeal of *The Israeli Holocaust against the Palestinians* is somewhat reduced by the tone of the book, in which justified anger sometimes gives way to shrillness. Chapter titles such as “The Bethlehem Church Fire and Talmudic Lies” and political judgments such as “The Right-wing in America, properly described as ‘kosher conservative’...” (p. 11), as well as passages that breathe a Delphic conspiratorialism (“In this, the Cryptocracy’s Revelation of the Method era...” p. 9),

fairly well assure that this book’s impact will largely be on those already open to informed and forthright condemnations of Israeli brutality and American complicity. Nonetheless, even at its most impassioned, Hoffman’s writing in *The Israeli Holocaust against the Palestinians* is nearly always informed, and above all (so rare a commodity in most writing on this topic!) interesting.

As with most books “mainstream” publishers wouldn’t touch, the design is amateurish, though the covers are arresting and the binding seems strong. While \$12.95 might seem steep for so short a book, all in all *The Israeli Holocaust against the Palestinians* is a bargain at that price and well worth buying and reading.

## Conspiracy – the Umpteenth

By John Weir

**Dr. John Coleman, *Conspirators’ Hierarchy: The Story of the Committee of 300, America West, Carson City, NV, 1992, 267 pp., \$16.95.***

*“Three can keep a secret, if two of them are dead.”*

Benjamin Franklin

One thing that strikes a student of the history of the United States is the trend toward expanding and centralizing the power of the Federal government, particularly since America’s War between the States.

There is no question that the bureaucracy governed from Washington, D.C., has never been larger, better funded, and more powerful than it is today. Taxation and regulations by the central authority have never been more onerous or ubiquitous. The government’s domestic policies are driving jobs overseas, while encouraging the immigration of millions of foreign workers with little education and even less in common with American culture and traditional values.

The question is not whether government actions have brought about these results, but whether they are the unintended consequences of an incompetent government, or the intended outcome of a program to destroy America both economically and culturally.

Dr. John Coleman’s answer is that the situation America and Americans confront today is the result of a conspiracy that dates back centuries, spans continents and implicates thousands of the political and private elite across the entire political spectrum.

His unified field theory of conspiracies includes – but is not limited to – such events as the creation of the United Nations in the 1940s, the invasion of America by the Beatles in the 1960s, the assassination

of President John F. Kennedy; the resignation of President Richard M. Nixon, and the ousters of the Shah of Iran and of Manuel Noriega of Panama.

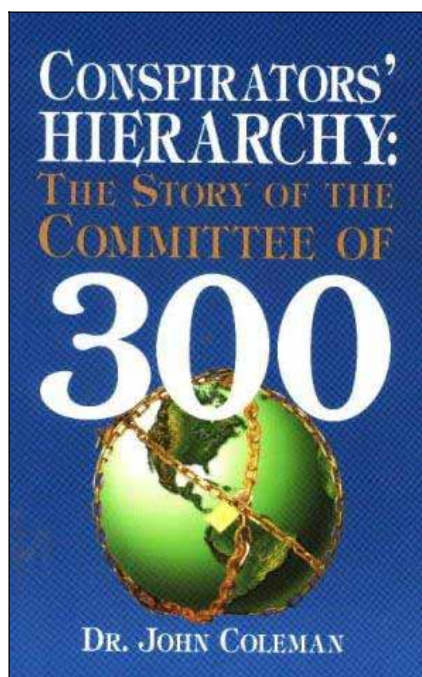
A major source of income for the conspirators in what Coleman calls the “Committee of 300” is the illegal drug trade. The drugs that are the main source of this income are heroin and other opiates, although in the 1980s cocaine started to play a larger role. This means of funding goes back to the eighteenth century and the capstone of the racket is the British monarchy.

Using the money generated by the drug trade and government taxation, the conspirators operate through foundations, political think tanks, and such channels of pop culture as book publishing, television, radio, and Hollywood movies in order to push its political agenda.

The ultimate goal of the Committee of 300 is the control of all the world’s natural resources. Since the Committee views the limited resources of the planet as exhaustible – à la Thomas Malthus – the human population needs to be drastically reduced to a level of “sustainability.” This means that to achieve this goal, 90 percent of the people living on the planet will have to die without leaving replacements.

“Committee of 300” appears to be a term of Dr. Coleman’s invention. How he came to use it is not explained – the conspiracy doesn’t appear to contain a fixed number of three hundred members. Prominent people move in and out of front organizations and government agencies on a regular basis. Yet the conspiracy itself remains constant. That this group has operated for as long as it has, with its constant turnover in lower-level membership, without being challenged or exposed, is incredible.

Despite the amazing size and longevity of the conspiracy, the author’s proof of it is



to be found nowhere in the book. There are no footnotes. There are no specific references to consult. The reader is expected to believe Dr. Coleman based on his word. He claims to have at one time had access to the secret, private papers of the Committee as a member of a government intelligence agency – yet he neither reproduces nor quotes from any of these papers in the book. The best his presentation does is give some historical facts, which he contends are related to describe the big picture.

The book itself is poorly organized. There are no chapters, and the topics covered appear and reappear throughout. Don't expect chronology: Time shifts randomly. This may give some insight into how Dr. Coleman thinks.

Dr. Coleman may be right nonetheless, but as Gertrude Stein wrote “there is no there there” in this book. Or it may be he is partially right in that the picture he presents is a distortion of the truth. Conspiracies certainly exist. People cooperate toward goals all the time. Sometimes groups work in secret. There is nothing outlandish about that. But one has to wonder if some “unintended consequences” of history were really unintended at all.

A case in point is the recent war in Afghanistan. Though this book was written while George Bush the Elder was president, Dr. Coleman explains the importance of the heroin trade to the conspirators. The elder Bush invaded Panama allegedly

to help stem the flow of cocaine into the U.S. Yet the drug trade from South America didn't slow. It simply shifted west, away from Florida. This implies that Panama may be a better cocaine transit hub now than it was under the man ousted by the U.S. invasion. Then, when the Taliban cut the poppy crop by 98 percent (see the 2001 *Drug Enforcement Agency Drug Situation Report for Afghanistan from South America* [www.usdoj.gov/dea/pubs/intel/intel0901.html](http://www.usdoj.gov/dea/pubs/intel/intel0901.html)) they suddenly became intolerable for the West. The attack on New York City and Washington, D.C., on September 11, 2001, was quickly followed by George Bush the Younger's ousting of the Taliban, and the planting of more opium in Afghanistan than had been grown there in years. One has to wonder if that was an unintended consequence or merely an unstated goal of the invasion. Removing the Taliban to resume opium cultivation is all the more convincing as a motive for the U.S.-led invasion since the restoration of the poppy fields is about the only thing that has changed in Afghanistan since the Taliban were removed to Pakistan.

Coleman's suggestive insight into the importance of the trade in addictive drugs to the Conspiracy is one of the few credits that can be awarded to his book. Otherwise, there is little to recommend in *Conspirators' Hierarchy*.

## The Blind Spots of Mainstream 'Holocaust Research'

By Germar Rudolf

**Harry James Cargas (ed.), *Problems Unique to the Holocaust*, University of Kentucky Press, Lexington 2003, pb, 198 pp., \$19.95**

Are there any problems that are unique to the 'Holocaust'? Asking this question in a revisionist periodical seems to be a bad joke. But when mainstream scholars use this question as the title for a collection of essays, hope arises that finally they might understand that there are some unique problems with the 'Holocaust,' indeed.

To cut this review short: no, they don't get it. Rather than addressing any of the real problems of the 'Holocaust' – lack of physical and documentary evidence, evidence refuting or contradicting many claims, unreliability, false, and contradictory witness accounts, suppression of research, researchers, and research results, monopolization of the entire dispute – all the fourteen authors can do is to philosophize over moral dilemmas allegedly experienced by 'Holocaust survivors' who might have made arrangements with their suppressors and 'Holocaust' perpetrators in order to survive, or who made other morally ambiguous decisions. “Can Betrayal Ever Be Legitimate?”, “The Moral Dilemma of Motherhood in the Nazi Death Camps”, “Holocaust Victims of Privilege”, “Suicides

or Murders?”, “Holocaust Suicides”, “Indifferent Accomplices”, “Reflections of Post-Holocaust Ethics”... This excerpt of headlines of some of the papers presented in this volume indicates that moral navel gazing of 'Holocaust victims' and their fan community is the main focus of this book.

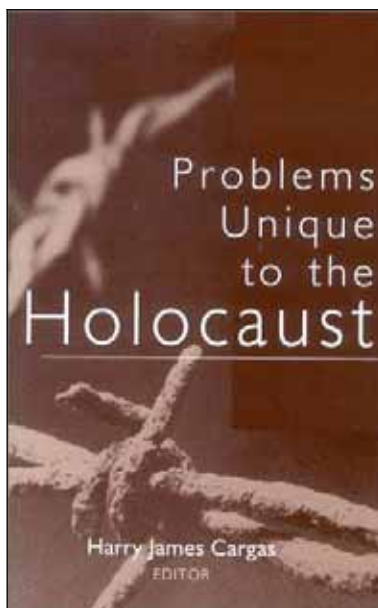
Thus, contrary to what one might hope, this book is not solving any problems unique to the 'Holocaust,' it is actually a part of the problem, and as such it is increasing the problem.

The second paper by David Patterson, for example, spreads lies with its claim that an “order came from Berlin” that “No more Jewish children are to be born.” (p. 11) Of course, there is no evidence for this, and the fact that many babies were born and left alive in Auschwitz is evidence enough that this is not true. But this entire paper is built upon this lie: “in Birkenau maternal love was a capital crime” (p. 13). On pages 15-17, the author tells some atrocious fairy tales about Joseph Mengele. On page 12, Patterson quotes from a Jew's diary:

*“This murderous German nation! That [killing pregnant Jewish women] was their chief joy!”*

This quotation goes uncommented, leaving a stench of anti-Germanism in the air.

The only headline which raised hopes to address a real problem – “Is Objectivity





Morally Defensible in Discussing the Holocaust?” by Robert S. Frey – is also a disappointment. I wrongly hoped to find questions like ‘Is it morally defensible to discuss victim numbers, murder methods, exact circumstances of suffering, credibility of witness accounts, etc.?’ What Frey does discuss in his essay is merely the question if medical experiments with involuntary human guinea pigs should be permissible. Since I cannot imagine anybody answering this with yes, I wonder why this needs to be discussed in the first place.

Dogmatic opposition against revisionism flares up at several instances in this book. For instance, in his essay about “Intruding on Private Grief,” Hunter defends the necessity that non-survivors must be allowed to critically write about the ‘survivors’ experiences:

“*Shoah* [...] needs that common discourse if, for example, the lies of the deniers are to be countered. [...] if we reject our common discourse, [...] we lose the moral grounds upon which to deny the deniers their [...] claim to ‘equal time’ and a ‘fair hearing.’” (pp. 127.)

Isn’t that fantastic? They claim moral superiority due to the fact that they guarantee a discourse with ‘survivors,’ only to take this moral superiority then as a justification to deny the same discourse with those harboring dissenting views, as “fair hearing” is just another word for discourse.

Another morally superior author is Leon Stein, who defends the right of Christians to be ‘Holocaust’ scholars – which seems to be necessary, as most scholars are Jewish and view non-Jews with suspicion, as Stein claims (pp. 135-151). One argument used by him to buy an entry ticket into the prosperous field of ‘Holocaust studies’ runs as follows:

“*Christian participation in Holocaust scholarship and teaching provides a dramatic refutation of Holocaust deniers [...]. Christians are passionately opposed to denial [...].*” (p. 149)

What an academic prostitute! Hence, this book is nothing more than another superfluous waste paper product churned out by screwed-up minds of the Holocaust Industry. A perfect waste of time, money, resources, and energy.

## Jewish Supremacism

By Germar Rudolf

**David Duke, *Jewish Supremacism. My Awakening to the Jewish Question*, Free Speech Press, Mandeville, LA, 2003, hc, 368 pp., \$24.95**

Who would want to associate himself with a former Ku Klux Klan member, a convict currently sitting in a federal prison for (probably constructed) tax charges, a man described as a neo-Nazi, anti-Semite, racist? That being said, the worst that can be said about this book is said.

I received this book as a gift, accepting it a bit reluctantly with a strange feeling in my stomach. After a while, I started reading it, more because I had run out of other literature and got bored during my dinners than due to genuine interest. Once started, I couldn’t put it down anymore. I actually took it with me to the emergency room after I had pulled my right hamstring so badly during beach volleyball that I thought I might have a more serious injury. But the only new insight I got during my stay at the hospital was that you better not take such books with you in public unless you want to either make enemies or embarrass yourself by falsely distancing yourself from a book you actually like.

As in his first book *My Awakening*, this one also has a biographical style, in that Duke describes how he learned about Jewish influence in western societies, Jewish rules and laws, Jewish attitudes, and the way western society reacts to it. His story thus flows naturally and is pleasant to read.

Duke’s central thesis is that Judaism is an ideology based on the ‘racist’ assumption

that Jews are superior to non-Jews, and that they try and greatly succeeded to gain decisive influence – disproportionately large as compared to their percentage of the population – over many important aspects of western societies. These claims are, of course, to be expected from a “neo-Nazi, anti-Semite...” However, Duke is smart enough to almost exclusively rely on mainstream and in particular Jewish sources to support his thesis, and as such his book is convincing to a great degree.

There are a few issues that I personally disagree with, in particular when he endorses the thesis that Jews are, indeed, a distinct race genetically considerably different from non-Jews. Although nowadays promoted by many Jews themselves, the scientific evidence to support this is, in my eyes, too meager to make such a far-reaching conclusion. Such a thesis also prevents the only possible solution that the Jewish question can possibly have, if one wants to solve it at all, that is dissolution by assimilation. It is easier to assimilate a group with merely cultural differences than one which thinks it is genetically set apart from the rest of us (whether it is true or not).

As convincing and worthwhile as Duke’s book might appear to many: A really convincing book on the Jewish question would require a book published by a David Duke together with a Jewish critic of his who is willing to confront Duke’s arguments, if he can. Such a dispute would separate Duke’s chaff from his grain, and would convince the reader that what is left over really is close to the truth. Don’t say yet it is unrealistic! There are Jews who might be



willing to do this, perhaps under a pseudonym, because many Jews are appalled by the conduct of many of their mighty and influential brethren in particular and by Jewish supremacism in general. One just needs to keep looking. Because if we do not get such a dialogue, books like this one will keep preaching to the choir of those not afraid to be labeled “neo-Nazi, anti-Semite, racist...”

Everything could be done better, of course: the layout is a

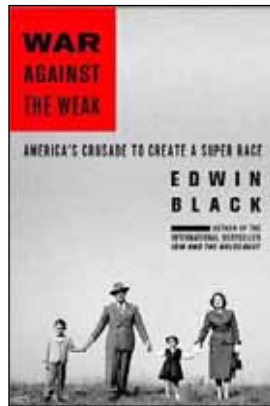
bit poor, and it appears that Duke quite frequently relied on second hand sources or popular literature to support his points, which he should avoid when making such controversial claims. But considering that this book was rushed to the printer shortly before Duke had to start serving his sentence, it can be expected that such flaws might be remedied in a future revised edition.

## Book Notices

By Francis Dixon

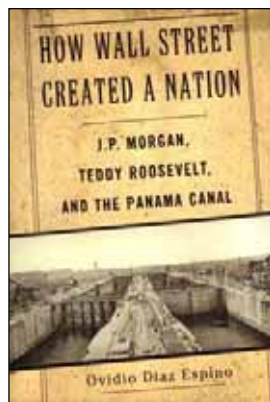
**Edwin Black, *War against the Weak: Eugenics and America's Campaign to Create a Master Race, Four Walls Eight Windows, New York 2003, 592 pp., hardcover, \$27***

*War against the Weak* is a much-heralded attempt to make the American eugenics movement of the early twentieth century the direct inspiration for Hitler's euthanasia program, if not the fanciful gas chambers of Auschwitz. Unfortunately, the journalistic weaknesses of superficiality, exaggeration, and partisanship that Black displayed in his earlier *IBM and the Holocaust* and *The Transfer Agreement* are just as evident in *War against the Weak*. Black's impressive rosters of American supporters of eugenics and depressing catalogs of coercive state measures against the helpless can be found in such standard works as Kevles's *In the Name of Eugenics* – minus his flawed interpretation of the eugenics movement in general and U.S. and German eugenic policies in particular.



**Ovidio Diaz Espino, *How Wall Street Created a Nation: J.P. Morgan, Teddy Roosevelt and the Panama Canal, Four Walls Eight Windows, NY 2003, 276 pp., paperback, \$16***

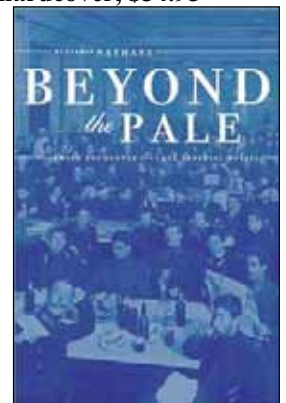
A retelling by a Panamanian historian of the story of how the United States, led by President Theodore Roosevelt, banker J.P. Morgan, and assorted other adventurers, financed the secession of the Panamanian isthmus from Colombia, then proceeded to construct the long mooted canal between Atlantic and Pacific across the newly created state of Panama. Diaz Espino doesn't unearth much that's new, but the details of this hundred-year-old exercise in covert action, preemption, capitalist buccaneering, and full-throttle Yanqui imperialism make enlightening reading for those who believe Uncle Sam's only interest in “aggression” was to chastise it. In fact, the treaty that



created the Canal Zone provided for U.S. control in perpetuity, and the Panamanian constitution authorized direct American intervention to suppress “unrest” – which American troops have done five times in the past century.

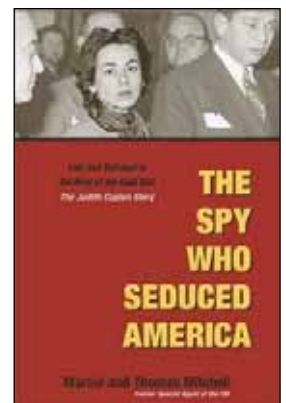
**Benjamin Nathans, *Beyond the Pale: The Jewish Encounter with Late Imperial Russia, University of California Press, Berkeley, CA, 2002, 426 pp., hardcover, \$54.95***

That numerous Jews lived outside the Tsarist Pale of Settlement – legally and illegally – is a little known fact that eventually proved fateful for the Russia of the Romanovs. *Beyond the Pale* is the first systematic study of the presence, power, and influence of Jews in Russia's former capital, St. Petersburg, in the half century before the Revolution. Professor Nathans's thesis of a Jewish integration into Russian political and financial affairs that paved the way for widespread Jewish leadership in the Communist revolution and state has proved controversial among Zionists, but his book is indispensable for serious students of the Jewish role in Bolshevism.



**Marcia Mitchell, Thomas Mitchell, *The Spy Who Seduced America: Lies and Betrayal in the Heat of the Cold War: The Judith Coplton Story, Invisible Cities Press, Montpelier, VT, 2002, 416 pp., hardcover, \$29.95***

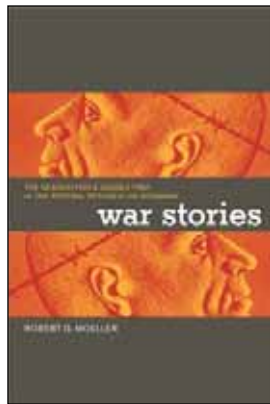
A re-investigation of a once famous legal affair, now long forgotten, that pitted the U.S. Justice Department against one of its own staffers, pretty young Jewish-American Judith Coplton, who was twice tried and acquitted and acquitted as a Soviet spy after her arrest in 1949. The authors Mitchell – Thomas, a former FBI agent and his wife Marcia a writer and administrator – reveal how an array of brass-knuckled tactics, included illegal wiretap-



ping and perjury, by FBI agents and prosecutors failed to make up for missing or mishandled evidence and helped make Coplon something of a heroine and martyr (especially in New York City). The authors' dwelling on the trial transcripts seems overdone, particularly since Coplon is identified as a Red agent in the Venona intercepts gleaned by U.S. intelligence from Soviet radio traffic. The case and the book are still relevant in view of renewed interest in U.S. anti-Communist measures of the late Forties and early Fifties, and today's menacing legal measures against the alleged terrorist threat.

**Robert G. Moeller, *War Stories: The Search for a Usable Past in the Federal Republic of Germany*, University of California Press, Berkeley, CA, 2001, 342 pp., paperback, \$29.95**

American historian Robert Moeller's study of German attitudes to the tragedies of World War II during the formative years of the Federal Republic finds that, in the years before kowtow and *Kniefall* before the Holocaust cult became obligatory in West German public life, there was widespread discussion and concern about such crimes against Germans as the postwar expulsions of millions from east central Europe and the heavy postwar losses among Wehrmacht POWs. Despite obligatory and often intrusive fin-



ger wagging by the author, the ways in which a still vivid memory of the sufferings of the war years was adjusted to Cold War politics (the crimes of the Western allies remained largely ignored until very recently) and the contemporary reemergence of WWII crimes against the Germans as an issue in today's Germany make *War Stories* a book of unusual interest.

**Robert Levy, *Ana Pauker: The Rise and Fall of a Jewish Communist*, University of California Press, Berkeley, CA, 2001, 428 pp., hardcover, \$35**

Ana Pauker, who dominated postwar Romania with an iron fist for Joseph Stalin, continues to be remembered there for her fanaticism and cruelty, above all in persecuting Romanian anti-Communists. Enter historian Robert Levy, who attempts to show that underneath it all Pauker had a warm Jewish heart. Indeed, Ana Pauker was the child of Orthodox parents, and Levy's account of her political career shows that her strong ethnic identification with Jewry shaped her activities in many ways, most noticeably in her cooperation in a large exodus of Romanian Jews to Israel against Stalin's wishes, leading to her later purge. An (inadvertently) valuable contribution to the study of the vexed question of the role of (not necessarily warmhearted) Jews in Communism.



## Letter to the Editor

**Re.: G. Rudolf, "The Moon Landing: Fact or Fiction," *TR*, 1(1) (2003), pp. 75-81.**

Dear Editor:

In The Revisionist #1 you have an article which includes a tidbit about V1 rockets:

*"Mockup of a German WWII V1 Rocket at the Space and Rocket Museum in Huntsville, AL. There is probably no other place on earth where German engineering is more adored and honored than here."*

In San Francisco is a machine performance art group, Survival Research Laboratories (SRL), who has made a working mockup of the V1 rocket motor (sans glider) and uses it in some of their shows of the last 15 years, including Europe (the prodigal rocket returns.) Their mockup is powered by a large turbine turned by a V-8 engine and rides on the ground on a pullcart-like system driven by what looks like a detached forklift truck. Also attached is a 70 or so gallon tank of gasoline that fuels the rocket motor.

The last (?) show that they used the V1 for was in March 1997 in Austin, Texas: <http://www.srl.org/shows/austin/>

Some photos of the V1 in Austin:



*Working V1 Rocket Engine of Survival Research Laboratories (SRL), San Francisco*

- <http://www.srl.org/shows/austin/preshow/austinpre37.html>
- <http://www.srl.org/shows/austin/preshow/austinpre38.html>
- <http://www.srl.org/shows/austin/show/v1-5.JPG>
- <http://www.srl.org/shows/austin/show/v1causeway2.JPG>
- <http://www.srl.org/shows/austin/show/v1subjugator.JPG>
- <http://www.srl.org/shows/austin/show/v1bigarmswave.JPG>
- <http://www.srl.org/shows/austin/show/v1towerfb.JPG>
- <http://www.srl.org/shows/austin/show/v1larmbubbacrane.JPG>

Another recent use of the V1 was on the street in front of a movie theater's premiere of an SRL video in October 1996 in their hometown of San Francisco (this was one of their guerilla performances: SRL didn't forewarn anyone, including the police, about it):

[http://www.srl.org/shows/sf\\_minna96/roxiepics.html](http://www.srl.org/shows/sf_minna96/roxiepics.html)

In a few of SRL's recent email newsletters they have mentioned that they have been working on and have replaced their V1's old flimsy valve bank with an entirely new "solid state" (my phrase) one that should prevent any burned out "flaps" (my phrase) that caused occasional breakdown in the past. (Of course, when the Germans were using the original V1 they were made for a single flight, not repeated use, so burned out "flaps" were not an issue back then.) The next time SRL uses it's V1 should be in November 2003 in Berkeley, California.

I've seen SRL shows for about ten years now and have seen most of the videos of their earlier shows and none of the newer machines that they have made has outdone the spectacle that the V1 provides.

Sincerely,

G.M., San Mateo, Calif.

## In Brief

### Belgian Revisionist Sentenced and Raided Again

On Sept. 9, 2003, Belgian revisionist Siegfried Verbeke (63) was sentenced to one year in prison (suspended) for disseminating literature "minimizing the genocide against the Jews by the Nazis." The Antwerp court also revoked some of Verbeke's civil rights for ten years. Considering that centuries ago dissenters ended up on pyres, Verbeke said that his sentence wasn't that bad after all.

Only three weeks later, the Belgian police raided six of Verbeke's premises in order to confiscate revisionist material and evidence that it had been disseminated. French revisionist Vincent Reynouard, currently residing in Belgium, was one of the individuals 'visited' by the police.

### Austrian Revisionist Jailed

On Sept. 3, 2003, an Austrian 'Holocaust' revisionist was sentenced by a Vienna court to one year in prison, with another two years suspended. Wolfgang Fröhlich, 52, an engineer and expert for disinfection gassings, is notorious for claiming it was technically impossible for the National Socialists to have killed six million Jews in gas chambers. The court said it took into consideration his "multitude of incriminating acts" and the long period of time over which they were committed. (*The New Zealand Herald*, Sept. 5, 2003)

Because all the evidence introduced by Fröhlich's lawyer Dr. Herbert Schaller was rejected by the Austrian court, the audience grew more and more upset about this injustice. As a consequence, the judge excluded the public from the proceedings and sentenced Fröhlich *in camera*. Since Fröhlich was tried only for offenses committed up to 1999, he will have to face another indictment for his dissenting writings between 1999 and 2003.

### German Lawyer Loses Passport for Revisionist Views

German lawyer Horst Mahler, *enfant terrible* of Germany's high society, once more provoked the German authorities by announcing publicly in July that he will organize a demonstration in Auschwitz announcing that the death figures of this

camp will have to be reduced according to recent findings (see *TR* 1/2003) and that "the only path to reconciliation between Germans and Jews is the path of truth." Because this was considered an "outrageous provocation" by the German authorities, they simply withdrew Mahler's passport for the period of time he had announced his visit to Auschwitz. Although this was a clear violation of German law, the administrative court of Brandenburg, where Mahler resides, ruled that this passport withdrawal was legitimate because Mahler was jeopardizing Germany's reputation abroad.

### European-Wide Law against Revisionism

Starting in 2004, a new European-wide law will allow member countries of the European Union to execute arrest warrants in other member countries without any further legal ado. The list of crimes covered by this law has 32 items and includes the publishing or dissemination of "racist and xenophobic" material, including revisionist writings. So far only seven countries within the EU explicitly outlaw revisionism, but the new law would enable those countries to have anybody arrested even if residing in a country without such laws. (*Daily Telegraph*, 2/18/2003) Britain, however, announced recently that it will exempt publishers of 'racist' or 'xenophobic' material from this law. (*Libertarian Socialist News*, 6/30/2003)

### More Jewish Censorship in New Zealand

New Zealand born Elizabeth Laird wrote *A Little Piece of Ground*, a children's book that tells the story of a 12-year-old Palestinian boy, Karim, whose suffering begins when his family is dispossessed of its olive groves and his father humiliated by Israeli troops. Laird rejects the allegation that the book is anti-Israel. Laird said she "toned down" several parts of the book, but that the motivation for suicide bombing had to be tackled. "Suicide bombings are going on in the background, and in one scene I have Karim's uncle questioning his [Karim's] hunger for vengeance after his father is humiliated by the soldiers. He tells him: 'Does that make it right for us to go and bomb them?'" (*The Guardian*, Aug. 23, 2003)

### Australia to Outlaw Criticism of Minorities

There are now precedent cases in the Federal Court of Australia, Jones vs. Scully/Töben, where criticizing Jewish matters, such as the 'Holocaust' orthodoxy, is deemed to be a racial matter and is "regarded by reasonable persons as being, in all the circumstances, offensive". Both cases were not properly defended because it was not possible for Mrs. Olga Scully and Fredrick Dr Töben to get legal representation "for fear of the Jews". The court imposed a gag order on both Scully and Töben, and Mrs. Scully was also presented with a \$150,000 legal bill. Such actions send a clear message to anyone who intends to criticize the behavior and deeds of Jewish individuals in Australia. Mrs. Scully has declared herself bankrupt in order to escape the horrendous debt imposed upon her.

But there is more to come from Australia's financially powerful Jewish lobby. The Federal Government is now looking at ways of criminalizing so-called 'race-hate' on websites, emails, Internet chat rooms, and computer games. Instead of continuing to amend the Racial Discrimination Act (RDA) itself, which contains an explicit non-criminalization clause, the communications minister and the justice minister stated they will amend the Criminal Code Act. The terminology that will catch anyone is couched in familiar vague generalities. A two-year prison sentence awaits those who use the Internet for "offensive and menacing purposes", such as "cyber racism" that "reasonable persons would regard as being, in all the circumstances, offensive".

As with the RDA, truth is no defense in such proceedings because a 'hurt feeling' is enough to prove guilt. The injustice of such proposed legislation has been made glaringly clear in the Ernst Zündel case in Toronto, Canada. Australia is gradually catching up to Canada's legal absurdities where the resurrection of Soviet show trials has become a nightmare for those who believe in truth, honor, and justice for all. (*The Australian Jewish News*, Sept. 5, 2003)

### Forced Commemoration of Lies in Germany

In June 1999, the German parliament approved the construction near the Brandenburg Gate and close to Hitler's former bunker of a national Holocaust memorial in Berlin. It is now anticipated that the memorial will be completed in 2005. The US architect who designed the memorial, Peter Eisenman, says the design will force people to confront the past by evoking feelings of loss and isolation. "You'll feel like what it is to be alone," he said. "You will feel what it is like to be lost in space. I talked to people who walked alone at Auschwitz, who saw their parents taken away, who felt lost to the world." (*BBC*, Aug. 16, 2003)

### Israel-Critical New Zealand Cartoonist Sacked

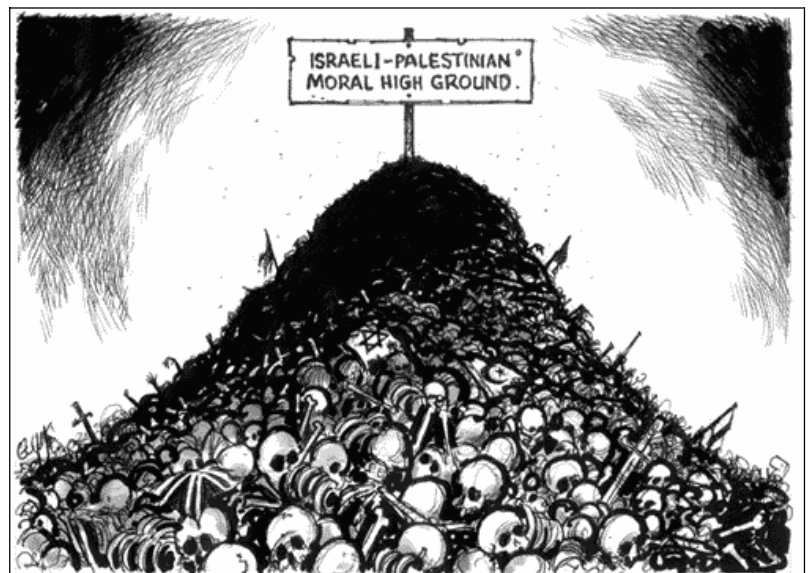
In August 2003, New Zealand was again making news because its leading daily newspaper *The New Zealand Herald* sacked its award winning cartoonist, Malcolm Evans. His cartoons, critical of Israel and its attitude towards the Palestinian Intifada, were consid-

ered to be anti-Semitic, something Evans denies (see illustrations). Public criticism received by the newspaper then moved the editor to sack their cartoonist who had been with them for seven years. Evans said that he will not be dictated to by an editor who wants to tell him what to draw: "I have got to acknowledge in the first instance that the paper had the balls to publish those cartoons, but once they were published and reaction came in, the paper seemed to shrink from association with them and ultimately I received this edict." (*The Sydney Morning Herald*, Aug. 15, 2003)

### Apologies for Praising Hitler's Economic Success

In its July newsletter, Glenview State Bank president Raub reported how Hitler was the only major leader during the 1930s who successfully resuscitated his country's economy when others such as President Franklin Roosevelt could not.

*"The Great Depression of the 1930's saw falling prices, staggering unemployment and shattered stock markets all over the world, and the world's leading statesmen seemed*



Israel-critical cartoons by Malcolm Evans. With friendly permission by the artist himself

helpless to defeat it. Except for one. His name was Adolf Hitler. Unlike France and Britain, and unlike the United States, Germany spent most of the 1930's growing economically, not declining. If we can understand why Depression-era Germany resisted the disease, we may better understand how alarmed we should be today in the 21st century."

After furious complaints, in particular by the local Chicago chapter of the Jewish 'Anti'-Defamation League, the bank pulled this newsletter from its website and issued an apology. The bank also apologized for a remark Raub made regarding Palestine. In the newsletter, he said "America is showing that it stands for something more than its most narrow self-interest by taking on thankless jobs in Palestine, Africa and Iraq." The bank's apology and the Anti-Defamation League's letter are posted at [www.gsb.com](http://www.gsb.com). (*Chicago Sun-Times*, 7/30/2003)

### **Artistic Freedom for Auschwitz Souvenirs**

Polish fine arts graduate, Agata Siwek, 30, [www.siwek.nl](http://www.siwek.nl), is selling her own 'Auschwitz' souvenir creations in the Dutch city of Den Bosch. They range from crematorium fridge magnets and 'Arbeit Macht Frei' (work liberates) key rings to T-shirts with the skull-and-crossbones symbol from the camp's electric fences. She claims that because she grew up near Auschwitz, her creations are designed to remind people of the Holocaust and will help combat discrimination and war. "Taking a souvenir and hanging it on your keys is a way to remember the evil inside all of us. It [Auschwitz] is the symbol of the ultimate evil," Siwek said. Some don't agree with Siwek's sales-pitch because "It's a scandal that they do that. I have one real souvenir from Auschwitz – like all survivors – it's on my arm," said Salomon Zanten, referring to the number tattooed on his arm at the camp. "The survivors have trouble every day. We never forget it. Those things don't help us. It's a bad idea. Where is the border? How far does one go?" said the 81-year-old, who was incarcerated for 18 months in Auschwitz and was the only member of his family to survive the Holocaust. (*Reuters*, Aug. 22, 2003)

### **"Health Nazis" in New Zealand?**

'Denialism' in New Zealand's public health debate is taking a turn for the surreal. When United Future party leader Peter Dunne used the term 'health Nazis' to describe those who seek to legislate for the control of smoking in public places, Leigh Sturgiss – head of the Smokefree Coalition – countered by stating that proponents of tobacco control want to save lives, not destroy them. National Socialist Germany did indeed legislate against smoking in public places. This regime also enacted other 'tyrannical' health measures such as testing for TB and breast cancer, occupational safety laws, the banning of certain pesticides, campaigns against alcohol and against butter dyes, the promotion of nutritional food and the discouraging of additives, and the restriction of tobacco advertising. The "health Nazis" also proved the link between cancer and tobacco. If it wasn't for the banal propaganda that has made National Socialism synonymous with everything evil, which suppressed these findings, I wonder how many lives could have been saved from the tobacco holocaust. (*Newstalk ZB News*, Sept. 18, 2003)

### **Another Witch Hunt against German War Veteran**

The U.S. witch-hunt organization Office of Special Investigations (OSI) of the 'Justice' department announced that it is trying to revoke the U.S. citizenship of Joseph Wittje, 83, of Bensenville (Chicago). Although Wittje admits that he was a member of an SS Death's Head battalion, he denies ever having served as a camp guard. Wittje, a bricklayer by trade, spent much of his time working on construction of air raid shelters and in a military sports program.

Wittje was born in Romania, where he entered the army in 1942. A year later, he joined the German elite troop Waffen SS and later to a SS Death Head unit. When he immigrated to the U.S. in 1950, he did not disclose his membership in the Waffen SS and SS. If stripped of his citizenship, Wittje would be the 72<sup>nd</sup> victim of the OSI. (*AP*, Sept. 10, 2003)

### **'Nazi Hunter' a Fraud**

On August 28, 2003, the District of Columbia Court of Appeals ordered Neal Sher "disbarred by consent effective forthwith" from the Bar Association of the District of Columbia. Sher was accused of having misappropriating 'Holocaust survivor' funds for personal use. To avoid further investigations, Sher signed a statement of consent to be thrown out. Sher is one of the most well-known 'Nazi Hunters' and was also one of those prominent Jews deeply involved in extorting billions of Dollars from Switzerland and Germany over the last decade. (*Forward*, September 5, 2003)

### **Russian City Opposes Atrocity Story**

The city authorities of Mozyr, 370 km (230 mi) south of the Byelorussian capital Minsk, gave orders to level in an old cemetery. The World Association of Byelorussian Jews protested against it, claiming that the remains of some 40 Jews, who locked themselves into a barn in 1941 and set it on fire in order to prevent their capture by the Germans, should still lie there. Yacov Gutman, head of the World Association of Byelorussian Jews, stated:

*"These humans repeated the dead of the Jews at Masada."*

The authorities of Mozyr deny this story of mass suicide and point out that no documentary evidence supports this lore. Sergei Kostyan, representative of Mozyr in the Byelorussian parliament, said:

*"We refuse to accept that this event happened."*

A gas pipeline is supposed to be constructed through the former cemetery. Kostyan:

*"Are we supposed to leave the city without gas because of the Jews? I am not an anti-Semite, but the Byelorussians did not suffer less than the Jews." (The Moscow Times, Sept. 17, 2003, p. 3.)*

### **No Apology from a Genius**

On September 8, 2003, famed filmmaker Leni Riefenstahl died at age 101. Much loved for her pioneering film work, Riefenstahl was also hated by those who pressed her to apologize for having been associated with Adolf Hitler and the National Socialists, something she never did. On October 18, 2002, a German public prosecutor dismissed an allegation of

race hate/Holocaust denial brought against her by the German gypsies' association Rom. What is not well known is the treatment Riefenstahl endured after the war. The American occupation forces confiscated all her money and property, and then threw her into Dachau concentration camp. From there she was transferred to a French military prison, then to Breisach prison. The US military administration then ordered her to receive shock treatment at the psychiatric ward of Freiburg Clinic. Only in 1948 was Riefenstahl released from house arrest. So much for the new US-imposed democracy and re-education for Germany. Until her death, Leni Riefenstahl insisted her films were documentary rather than propagandistic (BBC, <http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/entertainment/3104828.stm>; TR will feature Riefenstahl in the next issue.)

### No Apology from an Admirer

Another woman who refused to apologize for admiring Adolf Hitler was Diane Mosley (see picture), wife of Britain's pre-war fascist leader Sir Oswald Mosley. During the war years she spent three and a half years in prison for her beliefs, and she died at 93 on August 11, 2003, in Paris where she had lived for over 50 years. "They'll go on persecuting me until I say Hitler was ghastly," she said in a recent interview. "Well, what's the point in saying that? We all know that he was a monster, that he was very cruel and did terrible things. But that doesn't alter the fact that he was obviously an interesting figure. It was fascinating for me, at 24, to sit and talk with him, to ask him questions and get answers, even if they weren't true ones. No torture on earth would get me to say anything different." The affection was mutual. Hitler described Diana and her sister Unity as "angels". She claimed, however, that Hitler never mentioned his anti-Semitism to her during many hours of conversation. (*The Guardian*, Aug. 13, 2003)



### Poles in Panic before Joining EU in May 2004

When Poland joins the EU next year, it can expect to receive claims for financial compensation for the property taken at the end of World War Two from Germans made to flee their homes – ethnic cleansing! Poland has also objected to a Memorial for the 12 million Germans who were expelled after the war from their homes in Poland, Czechoslovakia and Hungary. Leszec Kolakowski, an Oxford philosopher, has also criticized the planned center.

*"Thousands of German women were raped by Soviet soldiers: does their destiny not deserve to be remembered? Why are those who are planning the centre not ready to take up the issue of these much worse, much more cruel, much more painful persecutions?"*

The president of the German Refugee Association, Erika Steinbach, 60, also a member of the Christian Democratic Party, has broad support from other parliamentarians for her plan to build a center in Berlin, next to the Holocaust Memorial. She says the memorial is important so that Germans can "mourn and remember those killed and dispossessed". Some

opposition is brewing over the fact that the Holocaust Memorial is dedicated to six million Jews killed, while the German Memorial would remember the memory of 15 million Germans. (*Times*, London, Sep. 24, 2003)

### Jewish Crimes in Poland?

The National Institute of Remembrance is investigating a massacre of about 35 civilians said to have been committed by 50-60 Jewish partisans belonging to a 120-strong Soviet partisan group at Koniuchy in Poland on January 29, 1944. "It is very convenient for the Canadian Polish Congress to raise this issue instead of providing explanations about pogroms of Poles against Jews during and after the war," said Hebrew University historian Dov Levin, who was a member of one of the Jewish partisan units operating under Soviet command in that region and has written several books on the issue. Severin Hochberg, a historian with the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum, said material he had seen suggested that civilians were indeed killed by partisans, a view endorsed by several experts interviewed for this article. "At the time, the Soviets were on the offensive and the Jews fought with them, so I believe something serious took place," he said. "But there is still a lot of research to be done." (*Forward*, Aug. 8, 2003)

### UK Grants Asylum to Russian Tycoon

Boris Berezovsky (picture), former Russian billionaire businessman and political opponent of President Vladimir Putin, has had his second application for political asylum granted. That Berezovsky thereby escapes the charges of fraud leveled against him by Russian public prosecutors is deemed to be irrelevant. Berezovsky claims that he is being wanted in Russia for his political beliefs, but critics argue that the oligarchs – the group around Boris Yeltsin who initiated the switch from a central to a market controlled economy – retarded Russia's economic progress by effectively pillaging state assets and sending billions of dollars overseas, especially to Israel. (*BBC*, Sept. 10, 2003)



### Pulling the Race Card to Point-Score in US Politics

The US national security adviser, Dr. Condoleezza Rice, who claims that bringing democracy and free market economics to Iraq is "the moral mission of our time", has leveled the charge of racism against those who oppose US policy. She compares this challenge with that of the 1960s USA civil rights movement. "Like many of you, I grew up around the home-grown terrorism of the 1960s. I remember the bombing of the church in Birmingham in 1963, because one of the little girls that died was a friend of mine," she said. (*Telegraph*, Sept. 8, 2003)

### George W. Bush 'Haunted' by Auschwitz Visit

The May visit to Auschwitz is still moving the US President, and it entered his considerations when Israeli Prime Minister Ariel Sharon visited the White House. On July 29, 2003, Bush said that seeing Auschwitz "encouraged me" to go on

with a campaign against terrorism and weapons of mass destruction. (*New York Post*, Aug. 1, 2003)

### **Israeli Fighter Planes over Auschwitz**

Three F-15 planes, piloted by descendants of 'Holocaust' survivors, circled over the Auschwitz-Birkenau railway track as 200 Israeli soldiers attended a ceremony below. Israel's ambassador to Poland, Shevach Weiss, said:

*"It's a protest against the inhumanity of the Nazis on the Polish territory. It's a tribute to the ashes of those who were killed here."*

But Auschwitz Museum spokesman Jaroslaw Mensfeld said the museum was not consulted about the fly-past, and he deplored "the demonstration of Israeli military might in this place. It's a cemetery, a place of silence and concentration." It is claimed that up to one-and-a-half million people were killed by the Nazis in the Auschwitz-Birkenau camps between 1940 and 1945, a figure that Fritjof Meyer, editor of the German weekly *Der Spiegel*, reduced to around 500,000 last year. Of those about 300,000 Jews were allegedly gassed, not in the crematories but in outlying farmhouses. (*BBC*, Sept. 4, 2003)

### **Israel Categorically Rejects Right of Return**

A new dispute erupted over the right of Palestinian refugees to return to Israel, with the Jewish state categorically rejecting a Palestinian claim. The prospect was guaranteed in a US-backed peace plan. (*AFP*, Aug. 16, 2003)

### **Aftermath of the UN Durban Race Conference**

The 2001 August-September UN-sponsored Race Conference in Durban was a fiasco for the Jewish delegation that wished to debate the 'Holocaust' and 'anti-Semitism'. Instead, at this conference the pro-Palestinian sentiment turned against Jewish-Zionist delegations. It is thus not surprising that at the September 4-5, 2003, conference in Vienna about 300 delegates from 50 countries discussed 'racism, discrimination and xenophobia', but not 'anti-Semitism'. Although considered a follow-up conference of that convened by the Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe held earlier, in June, where the topic specifically focused on how to combat anti-Semitism, very few Jewish organizations were represented at this September conference. At the June meeting it was found that a new form of anti-Semitism was developing, where Israel is becoming the hate-object because there is now a clear identification of Jews and Israel with the USA, which then combines with anti-Semitism, anti-Zionism, and anti-Americanism.

Pascale Charhon, the director of the Brussels-based European Jewish Information Center told the JTA:

*"The Jewish people and the European Jewish world are definitely part of Europe; we are citizens of Europe. This inclusive Europe will protect the rights of everyone, including Jews. We have a role to play. We have to take part in general battles in order to show others that we care."*

Joseph Moustaki, a member of the Israeli delegation said:

*"I can understand why most Jewish organizations didn't send representatives, since the issue of anti-Semitism was not on the agenda. Still, with the Israeli presence and the organizations that did come, we manifested in a clear way*

*how seriously Israel and the Jewish world are fighting not just anti-Semitism but other forms of hatred and discrimination."* (*JTA*, Sept. 9, 2003)

### **Israeli Pilots Rebel against Air Strikes**

A group of Israeli air force pilots are refusing to carry out strikes against targets in the Palestinian territories. The declaration by 27 pilots, some of whom regularly carry out combat missions, has been condemned by Israeli military leaders. ([http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/middle\\_east/3137392.stm](http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/middle_east/3137392.stm))

### **Collapse of Israeli Society Predicted**

The "countdown to the end of Israeli society has begun", says former Knesset speaker Avraham Burg. "Traveling on the fast highway that skirts barely a half-mile west of the Palestinian roadblocks, it's hard to comprehend the humiliating experience of the despised Arab who must creep for hours along the pocked, blockaded roads assigned to him. One road for the occupier, one road for the occupied," he said. "Having ceased to care about those children who are washed in hatred, Israel should not be surprised when they blow themselves up in the centers of Israeli escapism. "We cannot keep a Palestinian majority under an Israeli boot and at the same time think ourselves the only democracy in the Middle East," said Burg. (*The Guardian*, Sept. 16, 2003)

### **Dangers of Arab Holocaust Revisionism**

The recent awarding by Libyan president Muammar Qaddafi of the International Human Rights Prize to Roger Garaudy prompted Rabbi Abraham Cooper of the Simon Wiesenthal Centre to comment:

*"Qaddafi and Roger Garaudy are members in a brotherhood of hate that knowingly spreads the big lie of Holocaust denial as part of a worldwide effort to demonize the Jewish people."*

Jonathan Eric Lewis stated in the magazine *Israelinsider*:

*"Arab Holocaust denial is both about Jews and not about Jews. It simultaneously seeks to mock Jewish suffering and explain Arab failures. It is employed both to disparage Israel's existence and to present a narrative by which Arabs, not Jews, were the primary victims of Europe. It denies historical reality while simultaneously creating an alternative narrative of twentieth-century history. This line of irrational political thinking lends itself to totalitarianism, not democracy."*

*Jews need not feel guilty for building a vibrant democracy in the Middle East. The Arab world, on the other hand, must examine its flaws in a manner that doesn't blame its failures on Jewish success. The danger that the irrational politics of Holocaust denial represent is so great that it can no longer be seen as solely a problem of anti-Semitism or as a challenge for Jewish groups alone, but rather as a threat to liberal civil society and democracy taking root in the Arab-Islamic world."*

The above does, however, not explain away the Zionist's own apartheid and racist mentality that is the make-up of the State of Israel. (*Israelinsider*, Sept. 19, 2003)

Updated: October 9, 2003



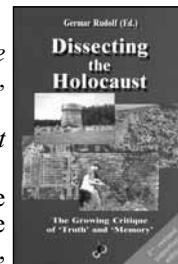
Germar Rudolf (ed.), ***Dissecting the Holocaust. The Growing Critique of 'Truth' and 'Memory'***

"There is at present no other single volume that so provides a serious reader with a broad understanding of the contemporary state of historical issues that influential people would rather not have examined." —Prof. Dr. A. R. Butz, Evanston, IL

"Read this book and you will know where revisionism is today.... revisionism has done away with the exterminationist case." —Andrew Gray, *The Barnes Review*

*Dissecting the Holocaust* applies state-of-the-art scientific technique and classic methods of detection to investigate the alleged murder of millions of Jews by Germans during World War II. In 22 contributions of each ca. 30 pages, the 17 authors dissect generally accepted paradigms of the 'Holocaust'. It reads as exciting as a crime novel: so many lies, forgeries, and deceptions by politicians, historians, and scientists. This is *the* intellectual adventure of the 21st century. Be part of it!

**2<sup>nd</sup>, revised paperback edition! 616 pp. pb, 6"×9", b/w ill., bibl., index: \$/€30.-, £20.-**

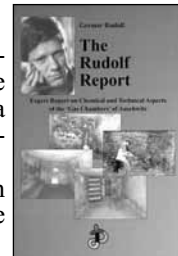


Germar Rudolf, ***The Rudolf Report. Expert Report on the 'Gas Chambers' of Auschwitz***

In 1988, Fred Leuchter, American expert for execution technologies, investigated the alleged gas chambers of Auschwitz and Majdanek and concluded that they could not have functioned as claimed. Ever since, Leuchter's claims have been massively criticized. In 1993, Rudolf, a researcher from a prestigious German Max-Planck-Institute, published a thorough forensic study about the alleged gas chambers of Auschwitz, which irons out the deficiencies and discrepancies of the *Leuchter Report*.

*The Rudolf Report* is the first English edition of this sensational scientific work. It analyzes all existing evidence on the Auschwitz gas chambers. The conclusions are quite clear: The alleged gas chambers of Auschwitz could not have existed. In the appendix, Rudolf describes his unique persecution.

**455 pp. A5, b/w & color ill., bibl., index; pb: \$/€30.-/£20.-; hardcover: \$/€45.-/£30.-**



Jürgen Graf, ***GIANT With Feet of Clay. Raul Hilberg and his Standard Work on the "Holocaust"***

Raul Hilberg's major work "The Destruction of European Jewry" is generally considered the standard work on the Holocaust. The critical reader might ask: what evidence does Hilberg provide to back his thesis that there was a German plan to exterminate Jews, to be carried out in the legendary gas chambers? And what evidence supports his estimate of 5.1 million Jewish victims?

Jürgen Graf applies the methods of critical analysis to Hilberg's evidence and examines the results in the light of Revisionist historiography. The results of Graf's critical analysis are devastating for Hilberg.

Graf's *Giant With Feet of Clay* is the first comprehensive and systematic examination of the leading spokesperson for the orthodox version of the Jewish fate during the Third Reich.

**160 pp. pb, 6"×9", ill., bibl., index, \$/€ 9.95-; £7.-**

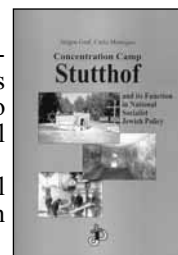


Jürgen Graf, Carlo Mattogno, ***Concentration Camp Stutthof, its Function in NS Jewish Policy***

The concentration camp at Stutthof near Danzig in western Prussia is another camp which had never been scientifically investigated by Western historians. Officially sanctioned Polish authors long maintained that in 1944, Stutthof was converted to an "auxiliary extermination camp" with the mission of carrying out the lurid, so-called "Final Solution to the Jewish Problem." Now, Jürgen Graf and Carlo Mattogno have subjected this concept of Stutthof to rigorous critical investigation based on Polish literature and documents from various archives.

Their investigations lead to unambiguous conclusions about the camp which are radically different from the official theses. Again they have produced a standard and methodical investigative work which authentic historiography can not ignore.

**122 pp. pb, 6"×9", b/w & color ill., bibl., index, \$/€15.-/£10.-**



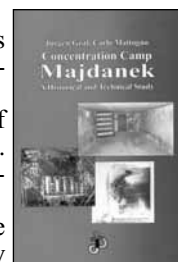
Jürgen Graf, Carlo Mattogno, ***Concentration Camp Majdanek. A Historical and Technical Study***

Little scientific research had been directed toward the concentration camp Majdanek in central Poland, even though it is claimed that up to a million Jews were murdered there. The only information available is discredited Polish Communists propaganda.

This glaring research gap has finally been filled. After exhaustive research of primary sources, Mattogno and Graf created a monumental study which expertly dissects and repudiates the myth of homicidal gas chambers at Majdanek. They also investigated the legendary mass executions of Jews in tank trenches ("*Operation Harvest Festival*") critically and prove them groundless.

The authors' investigations lead to unambiguous conclusions about the camp which are radically different from the official theses. Again they have produced a standard and methodical investigative work which authentic historiography can not ignore.

**320 pp pb, A5, 6"×9", b/w & color ill., bibl., index, \$/€25.-/£18.-**



Don Heddeshimer, ***The First Holocaust. Jewish Fund Raising Campaigns With Holocaust Claims During And After World War One***

We all know that the suffering and death of Six Million Jews during the second world war was an event unparalleled in world history. But do we really?

*The First Holocaust* is an extremely irritating book, because it proves us all wrong. Supported with many publications from mainstream US media, in particular *The New York Times*, Don Heddeshimer provides the evidence to show that between 1916 and the late 1920s, mainly American Jewish organizations were claiming that up to *six million Jews* (!) would suffer terribly in poverty stricken Eastern Europe.

In this context, it was claimed that eastern European Jewry would face a Holocaust if they did not receive massive aid. With such claims, millions of dollars were raised in the United States, which were partly used to finance the Bolshevik revolution in Russia.

This book is a key to understand the much more successful Holocaust propaganda which was unleashed during World War II.

**ca. 140 pp. pb., 6"×9", ill., bibl., index, \$/€9.95-/£7.-**

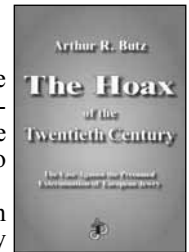


Arthur R. Butz, *The Hoax of the Twentieth Century. The Case Against the Presumed Extermination of European Jewry*

With his book *Hoax of the Twentieth Century*, A. R. Butz was the first (and so far the only) writer to treat the entire Holocaust complex from the Revisionist perspective, in a precise scientific manner. This book exhibits the overwhelming force of historical and logical arguments which Revisionism had accumulated by the middle of the 70s. It was the first book published in the US which won for Revisionism the academic dignity to which it is entitled. It continues to be a major revisionist reference work, frequently cited by prominent personalities.

Because of its prestige, no library can forbear offering *The Hoax of the Twentieth Century*, and no historian of modern times can ignore it. A "must read" for every Revisionist and every newcomer to the issue who wants to thoroughly learn about revisionist arguments. This issue is a revised version with a new preface.

506 pp. pb, 6"×9", ill., bibl., index, \$/€25.-; £18.-

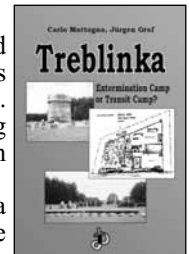


C. Mattogno, J. Graf, *Treblinka: Extermination Camp or Transit Camp?*

Holocaust historians alleged that at Treblinka in East Poland, between 700,000 and 3,000,000 persons were murdered in 1942 and 1943. The weapons used were alleged to have been stationary and/or mobile gas chambers, poison gases of both fast acting and slow acting varieties, unslaked lime, superheated steam, electricity, diesel exhaust fumes, etc. Holocaust historians alleged that bodies were piled as high as multistory buildings and burned without a trace, using little or no fuel. Graf and Mattogno have now analyzed the origins, logic and technical feasibility of the official version of Treblinka. On the basis of numerous documents they reveal Treblinka's true identity: it was a transit camp.

Even longtime Revisionism buffs will find a lot that is new in this book, while Graf's animated style guarantees a pleasant reading experience. The original testimony of witnesses enlivens the reader, as does the skill with which the authors expose the absurdities of Holocaust historiography.

370 pp. pb, 6"×9", ill., bibl., index, \$/€25.-/£18.-

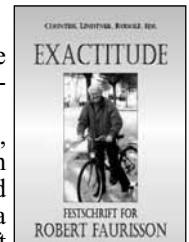


Countess, Lindtner, Rudolf (eds.), *Exactitude. Festschrift for Robert Faurisson to his 75th birthday*

On January 25, 1929, 75 years before this book was published, a man was born, who probably deserves the title of the most courageous intellectual of the last third of the 20th century and the beginning of the 21st century: Robert Faurisson.

With hitherto unheard of bravery and steadfastness, he challenged the dark forces of historical and political fraud, deception, and deceit with his unrelenting exposure of their lies and hoaxes. His method of analytical exactitude in historiography and his striving for clear brevity in presenting the results of his research have become both famous and infamous at once. Over the last 30 years, Robert Faurisson has become a role model of character strength to many, a lodestar for his method to his disciples, an idol for his breathtaking research activities to his admirers. This Festschrift is dedicated to him by some of his closest friends in his struggle for exactitude in historiography and his ongoing fight not only for historical and political, but also for individual justice.

140 pp. pb, 6"×9", ill., \$/€15.-/£10.-



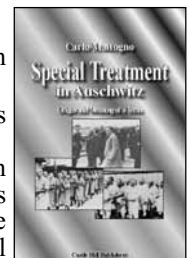
Carlo Mattogno, *Special Treatment in Auschwitz. Origin and Meaning of a Term*

According to official historiography, terms like "special treatment" or "special action," when occurring in German documents in the context of the "Holocaust", were camouflage words which really meant the killing of inmates.

Although it cannot be denied that such terms do mean execution in numerous documents of the Third Reich, this does not mean that such terms always had that meaning.

In this book, Carlo Mattogno has collected a large number of documents, in which such terms occur, and has put them into their proper historical context. Most of these documents were thus far unknown. Mattogno proves that these terms had a broad variety of meanings, all referring to normal aspects of daily life in the Auschwitz camp, but in no case referring to executions. Therefore, it turns out that the 'deciphering' of alleged camouflage words applied by official historiography is untenable.

ca. 160 pp. pb, 6"×9", ill., bibl., index, \$/€15.-/£10.-



**Upcoming Holocaust Handbooks (working titles):**

- June 2004: Carlo Mattogno: *Belzec. Anatomy of a Lie*. Study of atrocity propaganda spread for 60 years about the alleged extermination camp Belzec, including analysis of forensic excavations.
- July 2004: Carlo Mattogno: *The First 'Gassing' in Auschwitz*. The claimed gassing of Soviet prisoners of war in Auschwitz in 1941 is a widespread rumor and the starting point of all other gassing claims for Auschwitz. This analysis debunks the myth.
- August 2004: Carlo Mattogno: *The Central Construction Office of Auschwitz*. Bureaucratic study of an office that is accused of having built gas chambers in Auschwitz. This study shows what this office was really all about.
- September 2004: Walter Post: *The Defamed Wehrmacht*. Collection of evidence proving that the German Wehrmacht was probably the most righteous army of World War Two, always trying to keep a high standard of honor and legality.
- October 2004: Germar Rudolf: *Lectures on the Holocaust*. Probably the best introduction into Holocaust revisionism, written for those who are not familiar with the topic and need a gentle approach.
- November 2004: John C. Ball: *Air Photo Evidence*, revised edition: Analysis of German and Allied air photos of World War II showing sites of alleged mass extermination. There is hardly any evidence that is more convincing than this – that the Holocaust is a hoax.
- Spring 2005: Manfred Köhler, *'Eyewitnesses' for the Holocaust*. So many witnesses confirmed independently and so many perpetrators confessed their crimes without physical abuse – thus, how can we doubt that witches rode on brooms and had sex with the devil?
- Fall 2005: Carlo Mattogno, Franco Deana, *The Crematory Oven of Auschwitz*. An exhaustive technical study – and a refutation of mass murder claims based upon false concepts of those crematoria.
- 2006: Carlo Mattogno et al., *Auschwitz: The Real History*. After analyzing tens of thousands of archival, media, and court documents, these authors dare to write the first ever comprehensive history of the Auschwitz concentration camp.

**For US: Place CC-Orders 24/7 with Archer Ellison: ph: 1(800) 655-8912; fax: 1(800) 366-4086**  
Order per check/MO through Archer Ellison at POB 5795, Winter Park, FL 32792, USA; online: [www.vho.org/store](http://www.vho.org/store)